Chapter 1

Disclaimer

Lorem ipsum dolor sit amet, ligula suspendisse nulla pretium, rhoncus tempor placerat fermentum, enim integer ad vestibulum volutpat. Nisl rhoncus turpis est, vel elit, congue wisi enim nunc ultricies sit, magna tincidunt. Maecenas aliquam maecenas ligula nostra, accumsan taciti. Sociis mauris in integer, a dolor netus non dui aliquet, sagittis felis sodales, dolor sociis mauris, vel eu est libero cras. Interdum at. Eget habitasse elementum est, ipsum purus pede porttitor class, ut lorem adipiscing, aliquet sed auctor, imperdiet arcu per diam dapibus libero duis. Enim eros in vel, volutpat nec pellentesque leo, temporibus scelerisque nec.

Ac dolor ac adipiscing amet bibendum nullam, massa lacus molestie ut libero nec, diam et, pharetra sodales eget, feugiat ullamcorper id tempor eget id vitae. Mauris pretium eget aliquet, lectus tincidunt. Porttitor mollis imperdiet libero senectus pulvinar. Etiam molestie mauris ligula eget laoreet, vehicula eleifend. Repellat orci eget erat et, sem cum, ultricies sollicitudin amet eleifend dolor nullam erat, malesuada est leo ac. Varius natoque turpis elementum est. Duis montes, tellus lobortis lacus amet arcu et. In vitae vel, wisi at, id praesent bibendum libero faucibus porta egestas, quisque praesent ipsum fermentum placerat tempor.

Curabitur auctor, erat mollis sed fusce, turpis vivamus a dictumst congue magnis. Aliquam amet ullamcorper dignissim molestie, sed mollis. Tortor vitae tortor eros wisi facilisis.Consectetuer arcu ipsum ornare pellentesque vehicula, in vehicula diam, ornare magna erat felis wisi a risus. Justo fermentum id. Malesuada eleifend, tortor eros.

Chapter 2

Chapter 1 Orphans

Anyone with a pair of ears has heard of the names Jaded lover Jiang Feng and Yan Nantian, anyone with a pair of eyes would love to see the unsurpassed appearances of Jiang Feng and the ultimate unmatched swordsmanship of Yan Nantian.

Because everyone knows that no young girl can withstand a mere smile of Jiang Feng and nobody can block a simple sword stance of Yan Nantian.

Everybody is certain that Yan Nantian can chop off the head of a field marshal even surrounded by an army of a million soldiers, he can split a mere hair into two halves with ease. And Jian Feng's charismatic smile can crush any girl's heart.

However at this moment the richest and most handsome young man of his time is wearing a rough robe and is driving an old shabby carriage pulled by a horse. He was hasting on an old deserted road, if anyone saw him nobody would believe he was once the young master who rode fine horses and spend gold like it was nothing.

It was now the seventh month of the lunar calendar, high noon. The fiery sun was heating up the earth, both men and horse were dying for air. However he kept whipping the horse to keep running, the carriage was travelling with great speed.

Suddenly he heard the cries of a rooster that broke the silence.

It was now afternoon why would there be a rooster crowing in the middle of

nowhere.

Jiang Feng looked startled and saw a big rooster standing on stam of a broken tree not moving. His feathers and comb looked very shining and pretty.

But the eyes of the rooster looked very sinister and evil. Jiang Feng's face turned pale, he stopped the carriage. The horse neighed loudly and a sweet gentle voice from in the carriage asked:"What is wrong?"

Jiang Feng looked a bit flustered but smiled wryly:"Nothing is wrong, I just took the wrong way."

He turned the carriage around and decided to go the other way back, the rooster was crowing again like it was scoffing at Jiang Feng.

After about another 100 metres another object blocked the road, this road was old and abandoned but now there was a fat pig lying on the road, where did it come from?

When Jiang Feng passed this spot earlier, there was not even one ounce of pork but now there was an entire fat pig lying in front of him.

Jiang Feng looked flustered again and turned the carriage around again, the pig was rolling on the ground. It was cleaned thoroughly and it was shining in the sun.

A voice from inside the carriage said:"Wrong turn again?"

Jiang Feng was sweating now and said stuttered:"I.....I....."

The sweet voice from the carriage sighed:"You don't have to lie to me, I already know."

Jiang Feng exclaimed with surprise:"What...how do you know?"

The sweet voice said:"When I heard that rooster I knew the 12 Zodiacs are on to us. You were afraid I would worry and tried to keep it to yourself. Am I right?"

Jiang Feng sighed deeply and said:"It is very strange, we have travelled with utmost carefulness and caution. How could they follow us? But....but don't you worry, I will deal with this alone."

The woman in the carriage said softly and gently:"You're wrong again. Starting from that day..... I was ready to face all trials with you together through life and death. No matter what or who will come, we.....you and I will face it together."

Jiang Feng retorted:"But you're....."

The woman in the carriage laughed:"Don't worry about me. I am feeling much better now."

Jiang Feng gritted his teeth and said:"Allright, can you walk now? Both roads are seemingly blocked, we will have to abandon our carriage and horse. Let us hope we can make it through these woods and reach the other side via this path."

The woman said:"Why should we abandon our carriage and horse? They are following us anyhow, we cannot escape them anymore. Let us await them here, the 12 Zodiacs may be ruthless but we do not have to fear them."

Jiang Feng stuttered anxiously:"I fear....I am just afraid that you....."

The woman smiled gently:"Don't worry, I am fine."

Jiang Feng's face glared up with love now and said gently:"Meeting you was the most fortunate thing that has ever happened to me."

The sky paled into insignificance beside his charming, loving smile.

The woman smiled sweetly:"I am the fortunate one. I know a lot girls in the

realm envy, hate me. But these girls....."

The horse neighed loudly with fear interrupting her words, both of them felt an icy wind sending shivers down their spines. What has upsetted the horse?

After the wind calmed, the pig has turned over and the rooster could also be heard again. The atmosphere turned gloomy in an instant.

The entire surrounding was covered with an ominous ambiance, the warm sun had made place for icy darkness in this desolate area in the seventh month.

Jiang Feng's face turned pale and said:"They have come."

A voice from behind the carriage said with a laugh:"You're right. We are here."

That laugh sounded awful, it was sharp and out of key, Jiang Feng had never heard such nasty laughter before in his entire life.

He turned around with fright and shouted:"Who is there?"

Slowly seven, eight figures emerged.

The first person was only about 150 centimetres, he wore a long very bright, shinning red brocade making him look riduculous but also sinister and perverted.

The second person was about 2 metres long, he was muscular and big. He wore a yellow brocade and yellow hat. His face was emotionless. The other four figures that followed them had even stranger clothes, their robes were made up from different fabrics and colours with flower motif, they looked like actors who played beggars on Chinese opera.

They all looked different but had one thing in common, that was that they all looked rough and mean and moved the same way and simultaneously.

Following those was another figure, he was slowly walking towards the others.

This man was extremely fat, he may even weigh more than those six strange characters combined. He was so fat that a slow pace was too much for him and he was panting heavily now.

The fatty said softly to himself:"The heat is killing me....."

Sweat was dripping of his fat face, he was really sweating like a [pig].

Jiang Feng composed himself and got off the carriage and faced these strange people, his hands formed a greeting fist and said with a clear voice:"Are you the receivers of dawn and the black-faced lord?"

The man in red robe chuckled:"Young master Jiang has very sharp eyes, but we're just a rooster and a pig....receivers of dawn and black-faced lord..... These nice names were given to us by people in the realm, we don't dare to claim such names."

Jiang Feng's eyes directed to him and said:"Sir, I take it you are....."

The man in the red robe interrupted him:"Red represents the comb and yellow the breast, and as for the flowers the main tail feathers of a rooster. And who he is....well, he looks like what he is."

Jiang Feng said:"What can I do for you?"

The man in the red robe said:"We have heard that young master Jiang has a new darling, we would love to see what this lady has that capture the heart of our "Jaded Lover." Furthermore we want something from you, young master Jiang."

Jiang Feng said:"What is it that you want?"

The man in the red robe laughed:"It must be priceless, otherwise my good black-faced brother would not make such haste to come here."

The black-faced lord chuckled:"Well, if it isn't good why would I bother leaving my comfortable home."

Jiang Feng was shocked but did not show it and said earnestly:"However in my hurry to leave my home I forgot to bring anything valuable with me. What on earth would I have that have caught the attention of so many collectors."

The rooster comb said with a sinster smile:"I know that young master Jiang has sold all of his belongings including land, mansion *etc.* We don't know why and we don't even care why? But we do know that those bag of pearls you bought with your sales are invaluable.....hehehe. Young master Jiang, you must know that we are thieves and robbers who do not return empty-handed. Hand over the pearls, please."

Jiang Feng laughed loudly:"Good! Good! You are very well-informed. I too know that the 12 Zodiacs never return empty-handed. However....."

The rooster comb said:"However what? Are you reluctant to hand over the pearls?"

Jiang Feng sneered:"The only way I will hand them over is....."

Before he could finish a silver object almost reached his chest. The comb was most fast, in an instant he had drawn a strange looking weapon shaped like a small rake but resembling a beak. His movements and stances resembled that of a rooster pecking, he aimed at the major acupoints of Jiang Feng's arms.

Jiang Feng leapt up and made a somersault in mid-air and avoided the seven attacks, at this point another four claws shaped weapons like the feet of a rooster attacked him.

When the comb came into action, the tail feathers followed closely, these four men were as quick as the comb and the claws they used were a formidable external martial arts form. One beak and four claws formed a deadly combination and they matched each other perfectly. They formed an adversary with nine arms and became a dreaded foe.

Although Jiang Feng was not an easy opponent himself, but facing nine strange weapons and mysterious stances he had a difficult time to defend himself. Furthermore the man in the yellow robe---the breast was still standing there emotionless, looking like he was waiting for a window of an opportunity.

The black-faced lord giggled:"My friends, we're not women. Put some strenght into it, we needn't be gentle to him. I will take a look at the beauty in the carriage."

Jiang Feng angrilly roared:"Stop there!"

He wanted to storm over to block the black-faced lord, but he couldn't break free from the attacks from those five men. The black-faced lord walked over casually and opened the door of the carriage.

At this point a beautiful hand stuck out of the carriage, the hand as white and smooth like alabaster, the elegant perfect hand was holding a plum flower between her delicate fingers. A black plum flower. Plum flowers in summer were a rare sight, a black one even stranger. A white alabaster hand holding a black plum flower, it formed a strange combination of beauty and mystery. A clear sweet voice said:"Do you know what this is?"

The black-faced lord's face made funny twitches and his hand remained motionless, it was still holding the door of the carriage, as for the nine weapons attacking Jiang Feng also ceased their attacks.

These seven infamous rogues in the realm were like under a spell, they did not move and their faces were like frozen solid too.

It was after some time the black-faced lord said with a shaky voice:"The Embroided Jade Valley, the Floral Palace."

The voice from the carriage said:"You have good eyes too."

The black-faced lord stuttered:"I.....I....this lowl.....lowly person....."

He was trembling with fear and could not utter a word anymore.

The sweet voice asked:"Do you wish to die?"

The black-faced lord stuttered:"This lowly person doesn't...does no....not....."

The voice said:"Doesn't want to die?"

As soon as she finished this sentence, the red, yellow, flowery and the fat were gone in a flash. The black-faced lord wasn't walking slowly as before and was not panting anymore. He was amazingly fat, but he moved ever so swift. If one did not see this, one would not believe a fat man like him could move this rapidly.

Jiang Feng quickly went over the carriage and asked:"Are you allright?"

The woman in the carriage said with a smile:"I just waved my hand a bit."

Jiang Feng felt relieved and sighed:"I never thought that a mere dark jaded plum flower you took from the palace could scare away evil rogues like the 12 Zodiacs. It seems that everyone fears them."

The woman in the carriage said:"One can imagine how fearful they are, we must hurry. We needn't be afraid of anyone else. but if they....."

She didn't finish her sentence because the people who fled away an instant ago have returned. They went swiftly but came even faster.

The black-faced lord chuckled:"We were almost fooled."

Jiang Feng said with a shocked face:"Are you really tired of living?"

The black-faced lord laughed:"If there really is a disciple of the Floral Palace in that carriage, we would not have the chance to escape in the first place. Since when did you hear that disciples of the Floral Palace showing benevolence."

The woman in the carriage said:"I spared your life and you....."

The black-faced lord shouted:"Get out imposter!"

And with one fist he smashed the door of the carriage.

Sitting in the carriage was a young pregnant woman with a bit chaotic hair and looking sickly. Even though her hair was chaotic and her appearances were pale and sickly, she still looked beautiful and her eyes were filled with elegance. Her nose was not very sharp and she did not have cherry blossom mouth but somehow everything combined made her look really captivating. One look and one would not divert one's eyes of her, especially her eyes were filled with love, compassion, consideration.

Judging by her belly, she was about eight, nine months pregnant now.

The black-faced lord was a bit surprised but soon laughed loudly:"A pregnant woman pretending to be a disciple of the Floral Palace....."

Before he could finish his sentence, the woman advanced forward with incredible speed and slapped him a few times. And in a flash she was seated again and smiled:"What about pregnant woman?"

The black-faced lord roared angrilly:"A sneak attack!?! How dare you!"

He struck out with his fist, he may look clumsy but this fist of his was lethal, quick and powerful.

The young woman was still smiling and used her delicate hands to gently draw and poke in mid-air, not knowing what kind of technique she used the black-faced lord's fist was diverted back to himself. He struck himself on the shoulder and could not break off that attack on himself. The force he used in that attack was formidable and he fell down on the ground and was yelled out in pain.

Both the comb and the main feather tails wanted to try initially but now they

were too shocked to move, they just looked at the young woman with surprise.

The young woman looked at them and smiled:"I take it you know the name of that technique I used?"

The black-faced lord said with a shaky voice:"The Jaded Flower Stealth Substitution. Inconceivable by both ghosts and immortals....."

The young woman said:"Since you know, you must also realizse I am not an imposter."

The black-faced lord said with a trembling voice:"This lowly ....per...person deserves to die....."

He used his hands to slap himself hard a few times, making his face look even more swollen and black.

The young woman said with a sigh:"On behalf of my children, you....you can go now."

This time they fled even faster, one would almost believe that they had seen a ghost.

Jiang Feng felt relieved to see them flee, he turned around and and sighed:"Fortunately you had such a technique up your sleeve to scare them away. otherwise....."

Suddenly he saw that the young woman was in pain and was trembling and sweating, he was shocked and scared and quickly asked:"What is wrong? How do you feel?"

The young woman said with difficulty:"I.....I.....have used too m....much strength.....my water has broken.....now.....I am afraid our children will.....come to th...this wor....world....."

Jiang Feng was frantic when he heard her and was saying to himself:"What shall we do? What shall we do?"

The young woman said:"Drive the carriage to the side of.....the...road. Quick.....quick....."

Jiang Feng did what she said in a frantic manner, the horse kept neighing loudly and Jiang Feng was sweating heavily now.

He kept wiping away his sweat and entered the carriage to help his wife to deliver the babies.

The young woman was panting loudly:”My dear, ……I…..I am afraid….very afraid…..”

“No need to be afraid……I will protect you…..Everything will be fine.”

“I am still very afraid, dear…….please hold my….hand…..Hold my hand tightly……”

“My hands….are weak and trembling too. In a moment the pain will be gone….I promise……”

Suddenly there was the sound of babies crying .

Jiang Feng loudly yelled with happiness:”Two…..twins……”

After awhile he came out of the carriage still sweating and looking very happy and exhilarated, however his happiness made place for shock and fear.

The pig and rooster have returned again and were standing in front of the carriage coldly observing Jiang Feng.

Jiang Feng tried to compose himself but one could still see the fear and shock on his face, he exclaimed with shock:”You….you have returned?!?”

The comb said with an evil smile:”Young master Jiang, are you surprised?”

Jiang Feng said loudly:”Aren’t you afraid to die?”

The black-faced lord laughed:”Die?”

Jiang Feng said sternly:”I know you lot are well-informed about the matters in the realm. The Embroided Jade Valley and the Floral Palace are not new terms to you.”

Jiang Feng was normally a very gentle and carefree person, but now he was filled with anxiety and rage and his eyes were turning red.

The black-faced lord laughed:”Jiang Feng, you can stop pretending now! I know and you know it too that the two princesses of the Floral Palace are after you. They are not interested in our lives.”

Fear struck Jiang Feng in his chest and he broke out in a cold sweat, but he managed to laugh loudly:”I think you’re mad. Why would the princesses of the Floral Palace want my life? Do you realise who is in that carriage?”

The comb said coldly:”She is just a mere servant of the Floral Palace, a traitor who sneaked out of the palace without permission.”

Jiang Feng was stunned and his laughter soon died out.

The black-faced lord laughed:”Young master Jiang, are you surprised? I think you would want to know how we obtained this information. However I am afraid you will never find out.

It was indeed a secret, Jiang Feng leaving his home to escape the fury of the two princesses of the Floral Palace. Besides himself and his wife practically no one knew of this, how is it possible that these thugs know his secret.

Jiang Feng did not know and he did not care now, there was crying coming out of the carriage and in front of him were a group of merciless killers.

Suddenly he moved as quick as lightning and stormed towards the man in yellow robe, the breast of the rooster. The breast used his dual sabres to block Jiang Feng's attack. His dual sabres were made from precious metal and were designed to slice off people's heads in a flash. The breast used the sabres to hack at Jiang Feng's body.

Jiang Feng did not avoid his hacks instead he gritted his teeth and advanced forward, in a flash he grabbed the wrist of the breast and took a sabre from him.

Immediately he kicked the breast away, and blocked the hack of the comb. Then he stormed towards the black-faced lord and hacked at him, avoiding the four claws of the feathers. These attacks on Jiang Feng were lethal, vicious and fast fortunately Jiang Feng was not harmed by them. The black-faced lord quickly moved aside avoiding the hack but broke out in a cold sweat and managed to strike out with two fists towards Jiang Feng. The black-faced lord yelled:"Watch out! He is fighting with everything he has!"

These thugs have wandered the realm long enough to know that if a person is fighting regardless of his own life, he is most difficult to encounter.

The receivers of dawn avoided Jiang Feng's attacks and just toured around him.

Jiang Feng hacked, sliced at his opponents, his every stance was lethal, vicious and regardless of his own life but none of his adversaries were injured. The black-faced lord laughed arrogantly, although the breast only had one sabre left, but the stances of his left hand were very strange and dangerous. Furthermore the feathers combined their attacks were attacking in unison and the comb moved swiftly about lashing attacks on Jiang Feng's acupoints.

Jiang Feng's hair was chaotic now, he was roaring….he was fighting for the woman he loves. This normally gentle, friendly young man had become a beast now. But no matter how hard he fought it was in vain, the lion was trapped, the tiger has been ambushed….he was only prolonging the inevitable.

It was dusk now, the air was awfully gloomy.

This fight was albeit soul-stirring, however the outcome was utmost sad. Jiang Feng was bleeding and sweating, all his efforts were repaid with scorn and mockery of his opponents.

The young woman shouted:"Darling, be careful!.....These thugs are no match against you."

The black-faced lord advanced to the carriage and laughed sinisterly:"Jiang Feng is a very fortunate man.....he's father of twins now."

Jiang Feng shouted angrilly:"You, fiend! Move away from them!"

He wanted to storm over, but was blocked by the rooster, he made several attempts to storm towards the black-faced lord but in vain. His eyes were red with anger and sorrow.

The young woman tightly held on to her babies and yelled:"You, monster.....you.....you....."

The black-faced lord chuckled:"Little beauty, rest assured we won't harm you now. After you're feeling better, I will hahahahaha....."

Jiang Feng roared:"Don't even think about touching her!"

The black-faced lord reached out and stroked the young woman on her cheek and laughed sinsterly:"I have just touched her, what are you planning to do?"

Jiang Feng cried loudly, because of his rage his stances were flawed now. The sabre, beak and claws immediately attacked viciously and Jiang Feng was injured, his chest, shoulders and back were bleeding heavily now.

The young woman called out with worry:"Darling, be careful!"

The black-faced lord laughed:"Your darling will soon become a darling ghost."

Jiang Feng was covered in blood now and shouted:"You bastard! Even if I die, I will come back to haunt you!"

There was the roaring of Jiang Feng, the crying of the babies and the sardonic laughter of the pig and the rooster, the combination of these sounds made the entire atmosphere sad and sorrow.

Blood, Jiang Feng was covered in blood. His face, his entire body.....

The young woman was devastated and shouted:"I'll kill you."

She put down her babies and leapt towards the black-faced lord and her fingers were aimed at his throat. The black-faced lord simply pushed her back and laughed:"Little beauty, where is your strength now? Weren't you were formidable awhile ago? Poor woman, why did you have to give birth?"

During his arrogant laughter, the young woman again stormed towards him. The black-faced lord wanted to use the same method to push her back, but this time she embraced him and bit into the throat of the black-faced lord.

He cried out in pain and blood flowed from the cherry lips of the young woman.

The taste of her enemy's blood made her feel good, the taste of revenge.

The black-faced lord was in extreme pain and used full force to strike the young woman down. She fell hard on the ground and could not get up anymore. But at least she sampled the blood of her enemy.

She smiled tragically and tears welled up in her eyes, she called:"Darling, don't worry about us! Just run.....run....After I am dead the princesses will not trouble you anymore."

Jiang Feng yelled:"You cannot die!"

He wanted to storm forward once again, but all the weapons of his enemies had already struck him down, his body was covered with blood and wounds. Before he could reach his loved one, he had already fallen.

The young woman shrieked and slowly crawled towards him, he did the same thing. Their only wish was to die together. Just when their hands were about to make contact the black-faced lord used his lump foot to step on their hands, almost crushing their hands.

The young woman yelled with anger:"You, monster!"

The black-faced lord laughed:"Now, you realise that I am a monster?"

Jiang Feng roared:"I'll give you anything you want.....anything. I just beg of you let us die together."

The black-faced lord laughed:"It is too late for that now. Just before you were feeling were happy right, when you tricked and hit me. Now I will let you die slowly and painfully and you can forget about dying together."

The young woman yelled:"Why? Why? There are no grudges between us."

The black-faced lord said:"Well, I can tell you that. The reason is we promised someone to torture you and were instructed not to let you two die together."

Jiang Feng said:"Who.....who? Who is that person?"

The black-faced lord laughed:"You can guess for yourself."

The rooster breast returned to his emotionless self and just said coldly:"We don't want their offspring looking for us in the future. We cannot permit these bastards to live."

The black-faced laughed:"Very true."

The rooster breast raised his sabre and was about to hack the babies.

Jiang Feng roared with anger and the young woman was too shocked to say anything.

However suddenly the sabre broke into two halves.

The rooster breast staggered back with seven paces and yelled:"Who is there!"

With the exception of themselves and the heavily injured Jiang Feng and his wife no traces of other people could be seen.

But how could this sabre just break into two halves.

The comb was shocked and asked:"What happened?"

The rooster breast said:"Ghosts! I don't know."

He advanced forward again and used his half a sabre to hack at the infants again, but again the blade broke. All eyes were focussed on the blade this time, but nobody saw how it broke.

The rooster breast turned pale and said with a shaky voice:"Could it really be ghosts?"

The black-faced lord said earnestly:"Let me try."

He picked up the sabre Jiang Feng dropped and walked to the carriage, he raised the sabre and hacked with full strength and speed towards the babies.

However in mid-air his hand trembled and missed the babies. Everyone saw that the blade was chipped now.

The comb said with a shocked voice:"There is someone here."

The black-faced lord could not laugh anymore and said with his trembling voice:"Although we cannot see the projectile, it must be very small. This person is able to use a tiny projectile invisible to our eyes to break the sabres.....what a remarkable strenght....what a formidable power."

The rooster breast said with a trembling voice:"It is impossible for someone to have such martial arts. Could it be.....could it be?"

He trembled and did not dare to say the word [ghosts].

The heavily injured Jiang Feng was also shocked to see this change of events and muttered softly:"Here.....it must be....."

The black-faced lord asked:"Who? Do you mean Yan Nantian?"

Suddenly a voice said:"Yan Nantian? Yan Nantian is nothing."

This voice sounded sweet, clear and lively and filled with naivety, where did this voice come from especially in a desolated place like this. Everyone was shocked.

Jiang Feng and his wife already knew who had came and did not bother to raise their heads, they just looked very pale now. The black-faced lord and others were very much afraid now and suddenly turned around and saw a figure standing in the tall gras behind them. It was a slim young woman, how did she come here without being noticed.

Several metres away from them was the speaker.

Judging from the voice you would expect a very young and naive little girl, sweet and innocent. But instead they saw a young woman in her twenties, she wore an elegant long gown similar to those worn by palace ladies. She had long beautiful hair, she looked sweet and pretty, prettier than most flowers in the

Spring. Her eyes were filled with liveliness and wisdom, but there was also a hint of naivety-----unfitting for her age.

Just looking at her once, you would know that she is a very complex person and nobody can guess what she is thinking.

Furthermore one is immediately captivated by her beauty just by one look but one will soon feel sympathy for her. This peerless beauty is handicapped, she is limped even wearing an elegant gown could not hide her handicap.

When the black-faced lord saw her, he looked very respectful and his fear was somewhat gone.

He bowed and said:"Forgive me, are you the second princess of the Floral Palace?"

The beauty said with a smile:"Do you recognize me?"

The black-faced lord said:"The great name of princess Lianxing is known by all in the realm."

Princess Lianxing smiled:"You're quite eloquent, just choose your words well."

The black-faced lord replied:"I wouldn't dare."

Princess Lianxing smiled softly:"It seems you're not afraid of me."

The black-faced lord bowed again and smiled respectfully:"This lowly person does...."

Princess Lianxing interrupted him with a laugh:"Commiting a series of unforgivable crims and you're still not afraid of me. Most strange, don't you know realise that I want your lives in a moment."

The black-faced lord turned pale but managed to keep his respectful

smile:"Your excellency must be joking."

Princess Lianxing smiled sweetly:"Joking? You injured one of our maids, I cannot let you die too easily. Who is joking with you lot?"

The black-faced lord laughed nervously:"But these were the wishes of princess Yaoyue....."

Before he could finish he was slapped a dozen times, similar to his first encounter with Madame Jiang but much harder. His mouth was bleeding now and did not dare to utter a single word.

Princess Lianxing was still standing there, her hair and gown swaying gently in the wind and looking very careless. But her smile was gone and said coldly:"How dare you mention my sister's name? You're not worthy to utter her name."

The comb, breast and tail feathers were all shocked beyond words.

In the end the comb said with a shaky voice:"But these were really the wishes of princess Yao....."

Before he could finish he too slapped a dozen times, his little body flew up after being slapped and fell down.

Princess Lianxing laughed:"Strange, you really don't believe I will kill you..... (sigh*)."

During her sigh she moved forward and twirled around the rooster breast, everyone could not see what she did or even if she attacked. But the rooster breast slowly collapsed without a grunt.

One of the feathers went over and suddenly yelled:"Dead?!? Old two is dead....."

Princess Lianxing said:"Now do you believe me?"

One of the feathers screamed:"You're too vicious!"

Princess Lianxing said:"What is so bad about his death. You too have killed many people in your days, meeting your end today is just what you deserve."

The comb looked evil and made a gesture with his hands, and three pairs of rooster claws curled towards princess Lianxing.

There was a serie of sounds clung, whoosh and aaahhh. Vaguely they could see a figure moving gracefully and swiftly through the chains of iron.

Three of the feathers were lying on the ground, motionless. One managed to back away for about a metre but his hands were empty, he did not even know how princess Lianxing defeated his partners and how she disarmed himself. It was like he was in a dream, a nightmare.

Princess Lianxing gently shook her sleeve and 5 claws dropped on the ground with a clanging noise, she was holding one and looked at it. She smiled:"Chicken claws, I wonder how they taste like."

She opened her delicate cherry shaped mouth and crunk bit off a part of the iron claw, this claw was made from the finest metal in the realm. This claw was also one of the most feared weapons of the realm, but she was able to bit off a piece of it with ease.

The black-faced lord and the comb were flabbergasted by this rather young woman's martial arts. Other people's martial arts were only focussed on legs, arms, but she----every part of her was martial arts, perfect and excellent martial arts.

The pig and the rooster were too scared to even move.

Princess Lianxing shook her head and said:"Oof, it tastes rather bad."

She gently spat out that piece of claw, the piece of metal flashed through the

sky and suddenly the remaining feather called out in pain. He covered his face and was rolling on the ground, blood was oozing out of his face and rolling a few times he stayed motionless. Now the black-faced lord and comb saw that the face of the feather was shattered by that piece of claw, where his face once was was now a bloody, messy wound.

The black-faced lord knelt down and begged with a shaky voice:"Your excellency, please spare me."

Princess Lianxing ignored him and asked the comb with a smile:"What do you think of my martial arts?"

The comb stuttered:"Your excellency's martial arts.....I....this lowly person has never seen.....this lowly person has never even dreamt that such martial arts could exist."

Princess Lianxing asked:"Are you afraid?"

The comb never thought that someone would ask him such an infantile question, but now being asked this question he obediently said:"Afraid.....very much afraid."

Princess Lianxing laughed:"Since you're afraid, why aren't you begging for your life."

The comb knelt down and begged:"Please spare my life, your excellency....." It looked like he was about to cry.

Princess Lianxing rolled her eyes before she laughed:"If you want me to spare your lives, that will be most easy. All you have to do is hit me with one fist."

The comb said:"This lowly person would not dare."

The black-faced lord said:"This lowly person would dream of hitting your excellency."

Princess Lianxing stared at them and said:"Don't you want to live?"

The black-faced lord and the comb have asked this question to countless of people in their lives, they would ask this question casually and never expect an answer. Even if they did, they would respond with a fist, scorn and chop of the people who were asked this question.

But now they were asked that question and it came from princess Lianxing, so they had no choice but to reply and both said together:"This lowly person wants to live."

Princess Lianxing said:"If you want to live, strike me fast."

Both reluctantly got up and looked at each other.

Princess Lianxing smiled:"That is more like it, go ahead and strike me. The harder the better, I promise I won't counter-attack. But if you use too little strenght (humph*)."

The comb thought: Well, I might as well do as she says. I will attack her with everything I have, if I succeed that would be great. But if I fail no harm will come to me."

The black-faced lord thought: You brought this one to yourself, don't blame me. Even if you have invincible skills and an iron-like body you cannot withstand my powerful fist."

Both of them thought they had hope and were very happy but did not show it and pretended to be very sad.

They said simultaneously:"This lowly person understands."

Princess Lianxing said:"Well, what are you waiting for?"

The black-faced lord generated his power and struck out his fists making a

whoosing sound, furthermore he threw his full weight into this stance. This attack was both grand and powerful, but the position of his fists kept shifting. It was both agile and uncertain, till the very end it was clear he aimed for the bosom of princess Lianxing. This technique, The Celestial Boar Shifting Into Shape, was his best technique and he killed numerous people in Wulin with this stance.

The comb flew up too and the beak weapon was twirled into flashes of light and he was aiming for the two major acupoints on princess Lianxing's bosom. Of course he used his special technique too, normally he would not even consider using this attack unless he was really in danger. This stance was called The Morning Rooster Crowing To The Sun, it was said that with this stance alone he killed eight head armed guards of the Power and Might Armed Guard Agency.

Princess Lianxing laughed:"You really put everything in it."

During her laughter she used her right hand to gently wave about through the rain of fists and claws, at this point the comb and the black-faced lord noticed that they had no control anymore on their aim. They wanted to retract their stances but it was not possible anymore, they wanted to redirect their aim but that too proved to be impossible.

Suddenly both of them called out in pain, princess Lianxing was still standing there smiling. The black-faced lord was lying on the ground, while the comb was thrown away for about 2 metres and stayed motionless.

There were a few moanings but then it died out, the black-faced lord pulled out the claw stuck into his chest and blood was oozing out of his wound.

He stuttered with pain:"You....you....."

Princess Lianxing said:"I did not attack you, why did you two attack each other?"

The black-faced lord looked at her angrilly, his lips moved wanting to say something but not a single sylable could be produced-----never again can he speak again.

Princess Lianxing sighed:"If you didn't want to kill me and used only half your powers, you would still be alive. I did give you a chance to live, right?"

Of course nobody could answer her anymore.

The horse pulling the carriage had died some time ago and the carriage was also pushed over. Jiang Feng and his wife were crawling towards the carriage to pick up their crying sons, just when they are about to reach their babies a beautiful alabaster hand had pushed away the children from their reach.

Jiang Feng yelled:"Give....give them back to me!"

The young woman begged loudly:"Your excellency, please give me back my children!"

Princess Lianxing said:"Good, Yuenu. Very good! You have given Jiang Feng sons."

She was still smiling but her smile was filled with sorrow, melancholy, resent and hate.

The young woman, Hua Yuenu pleaded:"Your excellency, I know I am at fault.....I have commited a grave crime....but the children are innocent.....please spare them....."

Princess Lianxing looked at the babies and softly said:"Children.....adorable babies.....if they were mine I would be so happy."

She turned her look to Jiang Feng filled with hatred, resent but also sorrow. She looked at him for awhile before saying melancholically:"Why Jiang Feng? Why did you do that? Why?"

Jiang Feng said:"Because I love her."

Princess Lianxing screamed:"Because you love her.....My sister is, I don't know how many times better than she is. You were wounded, my sister saved you and took care of you. She had never treated anyone with that much affection but she made an exception for....you.....But you ran off with her maid....."

Jiang Feng gritted his teeth and said:"Since you ask, I will tell you. Your sister is not a living person, she is like fire, a block of ice even a sword. You even can say she is a spirit or an immortal but not a human being.....but she....."

He now looked at Hua Yuenu, his eyes were filled with love and affection and continued:"She is real, she is a real living person. She does not only treat me with affection, she understands me. She is the only woman in the world who loves my being, my soul and not just my face."

Princess Lianxing suddenly slapped him and said:"You dare to say that again!"

Jiang Feng retorted:"Why can't I speak up my mind!"

Princess Lianxing said:"You only know she is good to you, but do you know how I feel for you? If....your face was destroyed....I would still.....would still....."

She did not finish her words.

Hua Yuenu exclaimed with surprise:"Your excellency, you are too....."

Princess Lianxing said loudly:"What!?! Can't I be good to him? Can I not love him? .....Is it because I am handicapped, but being limp does not make me a lesser human. I am a woman too."

She has changed, she was not the superior, high and mighty martial arts expert that controlled life and death. She was now an ordinary woman, an ordinary weak and sad woman.

She was weeping now.

This practically a legend in the realm of martial arts was weeping, both Jiang Feng and Hua Yuenu were shocked and surprised.

After some time Hua Yuenu said sadly:"Your excellency, I am near my end.....from now on he is yours. You can save him, you are the only one who can save him."

Princess Lianxing was trembling the words [from now on he is yours] shot her right into the heart.

Jiang Feng suddenly laughed arrogantly, his laughter was loud but there was no joy on his face only sadness. His laughter sounded like crying, a tragic cry.

With tears in his eyes he looked at Hua Yuenu and smiled tragically:"Save me? Who can save me now in this world? If you're gone, how can I continue to live? Yuenu, Yuenu, don't you understand?"

Hua Yuenu who was crying too, said gently:"Of course I understand you, but if you die what will become of the children....someone has to take care of them."

Her tone soon turned into weeping too and she was holding Jiang Feng's hand tightly now and continued:"This is our fault, we cannot allow the second generation to share our mistakes. Death is not an escape out of this."

Jiang Feng's tragic smile died out and made place for despair.

Hua Yuenu said with a shaky voice:"I know that death is a very easy solution to all problems and that living is much more difficult...But I beg of you for the children you must keep on living."

Jiang Feng was crying too and was completely dazed, he said softly to himself:"I must keep on living.....Do I really have to keep on living...."

"Your excellency, please no matter what you have to save him. If you truly love him you cannot watch him die."

Princess Lianxing said slowly:"Really?"

Hua Yuenu screamed:"You can save him.....You really must save him."

Princess Lianxing sighed deeply:"Yes, I can save him....."

Before she could finish her sentence another voice interrupted her:"Wrong! You cannot save him, no one can save him in this world."

The voice was both elusive and clear, but also cold and emotionless, yet it was sweet, innocent and captivating.

Nobody can clearly describe that voice, why is it both horrifying and sweet. Also nobody can forget this voice in his life after hearing it once.

A simple few words changed the atmosphere again in this desolate area, filled with death, coldness and it seemed that even the setting sun had to make place for the speaker.

Jiang Feng was trembling heavily now and princess Lianxing turned pale.

They did not turn around, but a figure in white was now standing in front of them. Nobody could see where she came from or how she appeared in front of them.

Gracefully the figure stood there dressed in an elegant white gown. She had long beautiful thick hair, her beauty was needless to say matchless. But nobody could descibe her appearances, because no one would dare look her into the face. She had a strange, mystifying threatening charisma which was awesome, making her exceptional, superior and powerful.

Princess Lianxing bowed her head and bit her lip saying:"Sister, you're here."

Princess Yaoyue said casually:"Yes, I am here. You did not expect that, did you?"

Princess Lianxing bowed her head even deeper and asked:"How long were you here?"

Princess Yaoyue said:"Not too late, I could overhear a lot which normally nobody would share with me."

Jiang Feng suddenly thought of something and shouted:"You...you...you were here all along. So you were the one who instructed the rooster and pig to return, is it not? You told them about our secret, right?"

Princess Yaoyue said:"Now you realise that. A bit too late."

Jiang Feng was torn apart by anger and yelled:"Why? Why did you do that? Why were you that ruthless?"

Princess Yaoyue said:"Against traitors I have to be ruthless."

Hua Yuenu could not help but pleades tragically:"Your excellency, this is all my fault. You...you cannot blame him."

Suddenly princess Yaoyue's tone turned awfully cold and stern:"You...you dare to speak in my presence."

Hua Yuenu stuttered:"I....I..."

Princess Yaoyue said:"Very good.....now that you've seen me, you can die now."

When Hua Yuenu saw her, she was even too afraid to weep anymore. Now she closed her eyes and said:"Thank you, your excellency."

Jiang Feng shouted:"She tells you to die! Why do you thank her!"

Hua Yuenu managed to enforce a tragic smile on her face and said:"Because

when I die first I am spared the agony of seeing you and the children suffer before you die.....this....this is the leniency her excellency has bestowed upon me. Of course I have to thank her for it."

She opened her eyes and looked at Jiang Feng and then at her children----that simple gaze was filled with love and said it all.

Jiang Feng's heart was broken and he shouted:"Yuenu, you can't die.....you cannot die."

Hua Yuenu said gently:"I am leaving now.....I will wait for you....."

She closed her eyes one more time, but this time forever.

"Yuenu! Wait, wait....I will accompany you...."

Somehow he mustered all the strenght he had and staggered over to Hua Yuenu but before he reached her a powerful wind blew him back.

Princess Yaoyue said:"Just stay there."

Jiang Feng loudly said:"I have never begged for anything in my life.....but now....but now.....I beg of you just let me die together with her.....that is all what I want."

Princess Yaoyue said:"You will never touch her again."

Jiang Feng stared at her, if eyes could kill or shoot fire this entire place would be set ablaze now.

But princess Yaoyue just stood there not moving.

Suddenly Jiang Feng laughed loudly, his laughter travelled far.

Princess Lianxing sighed softly:"Why are you laughing?"

Jiang Feng laughed:"You think you are so powerful! You think you can control life and death, but if I die I can be together with Yuenu. Can you really stop me?"

During his laughter he rolled aside a few times, and then he stopped his back facing up and his laughter slowly died out.

Princess Lianxing called out softly and quickly moved over, she turned him around and saw that the tip of a sabre was pierced through his chest.

It was night now, the moon lit up the entire area.

Princess Lianxing was kneeling there, not moving only the wind was blowing. After a long time she said softly:"Dead.....he got what he wished for.....but what about us?"

She got up and walked to princess Yaoyue and shouted:"What about us?.....We?..... They have what they wanted. But what do we have?"

Princess Yaoyue seemed to be oblivious to this outburst and said coldly:"Quiet."

Princess Lianxing said:"I will not stay quiet, I want to say this. What have you gained by doing this? You just made them love each other more and made them hate you even more."

Before she could speak again princess Yaoyue slapped her.

Princess Lianxing backed a bit away from her sister and said with a trembling voice:"You....you...."

Princess Yaoyue said:"You just know that they hate me.....but do you know how much I hate him. I hate him so much that my heart is bleeding."

She rolled up her sleeve and said loudly:"Look at this."

Her alabaster arm which was almost perfect was now covered with tiny puncture wounds.

Princess Lianxing was shocked and stammered:"This....this...."

Princess Yaoyue said:"I used a needle to prick myself, ever since they left.....my hatred.....I...I hate.....I used a needle to prick myself. I kept tormenting myself every night, that way I could ease the pain in my heart somewhat. Do you know that! Do you know that!"

Her voice was not cold anymore, but hysterical and emotional and she was shaking all over.

Princess Lianxing looked at the wounds on her sister's arm and was shocked, and soon tears welled up in her eyes. She embraced her sister and wept:"I never.....never thought that you would feel so much pain too."

Princess Yaoyue hugged her sister too and looked at the moon, she melancholically said:"Because I am human too.....I hate being human, I hate having these emotions. But because of these emotions I am perceptive of jealousy and hate."

Both sisters embraced each other.....

In this instant there were not the dreaded female demons of Wulin anymore, but ordinary young women who shared their emotions with each other.

Princess Lianxing said softly:"Sister.....sister.....now I realise....."

All of a sudden princess Yaoyue pushed her away and said:"Stand straight."

Princess Lianxing staggered backwards before standing still, she said tragically:"In more than 20 years, this is the first time you embraced me. Even

just now you pushed me back I am still very happy."

Princess Yaoyue ignored her now and said coldly:"Finish it."

Princess Lianxing asked:"Finish what?"

Princess Yaoyue said:"The children."

Princess Lianxing exclaimed with shock:"The children? ..... But they were just born...do you really want to....."

Princess Yaoyue said:"I cannot permit their children to live! If these children don't die, they will remind me constantly of the betrayal of Jiang Feng and that b-i-t-c-h. Furthermore if they live I will be pursued with agony for the rest of my life."

Princess Lianxing said:"But I....."

Princess Yaoyue said:"You don't want to do it?"

Princess Lianxing said:"I cannot bear to do it."

Princess Yaoyue said:"Fine! I will do it myself."

She waved her sleeve casually and a sabre flew up right into her hand, she hurled the sabre and hacked at one of the sleeping babies.

Suddenly princess Lianxing grabbed the hand of princess Yaoyue tightly, but the tip of the sword had already made a shallow cut on the baby's face.

The baby cried in pain now.

Princess Yaoyue said angrilly:"You dare to stop me!"

Princess Lianxing said:"I....I...."

Princess Yaoyue said:"Let go of me! Have you ever seen anyone who was capable of stopping me?"

All of a sudden princess Lianxing laughed:"Sister, I am not stopping you. I just thought of a better to deal with these children, what do we gain by killing two babies who are unaware of anything."

Princess Yaoyue stared at her and asked:"What do you suggest?"

Princess Lianxing said:"If you can make these children suffer for the rest of their lives, we will have our revenge. Jiang Feng and Hua Yuenu won't be able to rest in peace if they knew what was going to happen."

Princess Yaoyue remained pensive for awhile before sighing:"Tell me what you have planned for them."

Princess Lianxing said:"Now nobody knows that Jiang Feng has twins, right?"

Princess Yaoyue did not understand what she was hinting at and just said:"Right."

Princess Lianxing said:"Not even the children know they are twins, right?"

Princess Yaoyue grunted:"Rubbish!"

Princess Lianxing said:"That self-proclaimed number one swordsman in the realm Yan Nantian is Jiang Feng's best friend. And he was supposed to meet up with Jiang Feng here. Otherwise Jiang Feng wouldn't take this road....."

Princess Lianxing continued with a smile:"If we were to take one child away and leave one behind Yan Nantian will sure take care of the remaining one. Furthermore he will teach that child martial arts and tell him to avenge his parents. All we have to do is leave a palm imprint on Jiang Feng's body, he will

think the Floral Palace is responsible. So when that child grows up, he will be looking for the Floral Palace."

Princess Yaoyue was still looking pensive and said:"You're right."

Princess Yaoyue added:"At that time we will have raised the other child and taught him martial arts too. He will be the only man in Floral Palace and when our arch-enemy will be looking for us he will be our champion. However no one will know that they are actually brothers and that way they will became each others nemeses."

Princess Lianxing clapped her hands now and smiled:"Exactly, by that time the little brother will kill the older brother or vice versa. Because they're twins, so they're bound to be equals so whether they compete in martial arts or intelligence-----it will be a most bloody, interesting fight."

On princess Yaoyue's face there was a faint smile now:"Indeed, a most interesting scenario. Even more interesting and better than killing them now. And we will tell the victor, no matter who he is, the truth. I can imagine the look on his face will be most pleasing."

Princess Lianxing clapped her hands and said:"Very pleasing indeed."

Suddenly princess Yaoyue said coldly:"However if someone would expose this secret before the right time, than the outcome would not be so pleasing anymore."

Princess Lianxing said:"But nobody else knows about this....."

"Except you!" Princess Yaoyue said.

"Me? I thought of this plan, why would I foil it myself? You should know me by now, I am always fond of an pleasing and interesting plot." Princess Lianxing retorted.

Princess Yaoyue remained silent for a moment before saying:"Indeed, nobody

else can think of such a strange idea except you. You wouldn't foil your own masterplan."

Princess Lianxing laughed:"This idea may be strange but it is very useful. The best part is that they are twins, but one of them is wounded now on his face. When he grows up, he will be bound to look a bit different now. So nobody will know the truth behind this, they will become each others enemies."

That wounded baby stopped crying now, it seemed he was scared silent by this evil and maniacal revenge plot. He opened his innocent but startled eyes, he seemed to be aware of his coming disaster and sorrow-----a life filled with misery.

Princess Yaoyue looked at the babies and said softly:"17 years.....I have to wait at least another 17 years....."

End of chapter 1

Chapter 3

Chapter 2 The Peerless Celestial Sword

A simple street, an ordinary house filled with friendliness of men.

It was an ordinary town, the fiery sun brightened up the only street in this town. The sun shone on the banner of a wineshop, which was made from a green cloth. This wineshop was called Taibai Shop.

It was a simple wineshop in an ordinary small town, business was not very good. The waiter leaning over the counter and was yawning, but there was one customer. But he was too lazy to attend to that customer, for the past two, three days that fellow had came here for wine. He only ordered the cheapest wine in the shop and did not even order dishes to go with the wine.

This customer was too poor for words, he was so poor that there were holes in his shoes. Which was quite visible now, since he put his feet on the table. He leant his back to the wall and had his eyes closed, he was very tall almost two metres. He looked like a sleeping tiger in this wineshop.

The sun also shone on his face revealing his thick eyebrows and edgy cheekbones and giving his short beard a greenish colour.

Suddenly he frowned and used his skinny but huge hand to block the sun and with the other hand holding on to his rusty and practically worthless sword, he yawned a few times too before actually falling into a deep sleep.

Noon had just passed and everything remained peaceful and quiet in this little town, till suddenly a group of horses swiftly galloped into town and stopped in front of the wineshop. A lot of passers-by took a look at the horses and riders. It

was a group of men in rather expensive brocades and all of them entered the little wineshop.

First man was a big man with a precious sword stuck in his girdle, he looked very proud and it seems that his pimples were extraordinary too. He laughed loudly:"Taibai Shop.....such a worthless, shabby shop is called Taibai Shop...."

Walking behind him was a rather fat man with also a sword in his girdle, he looked like a proprietor of a big restaurant, smiled:"Brother Lei, you're mistaken. Li Taibai* wrote some wonderful poems in his days, but he was a poor man without any power. So living in a shabby place is his style."

That brother Lei laughed even louder:"Too bad he has been dead for so long, otherwise I would have invited him for a few cups of wine with us. Hey, you! Bring us some fine wine and some fine dishes and be quick!"

After a few cups of wine they laughed even louder, the tall man in the corner woke up from his nap and stretched himself and said softly:"Riff-raff..riff-raff..."

Suddenly he hit the table very hard and yelled:"Bring me some wine to quench the vulgair air here."

That smack and that roar sounded like thunder and all those men jumped up.

Brother Lei's face changed and stood up, but another rider pulled his sleeve and said softly:"The chief will be here shortly, don't create trouble."

This man was rather short but he looked quite tough and smart.

Brother Lei grunted and sat down again, he poured himself another cup and asked:"Third Sun, are you sure that the chief said to meet us here?"

The short man smiled:"I am sure. Second brother Qian also heard the chief....."

The fat man interrupted with a laugh:"Yes, this is the place. The chief is here to

meet a great hero, so he ordered us to bring the presents here first."

Brother Lei asked:"Do you know who he is going to meet?"

Second brother Qian smiled and whispered a name.

Brother Lei immediately exclaimed with shock:"Him!?! So we're going to meet HIM?!? Why would he even go to a place like this?"

Second brother Qian said:"If he wouldn't come, why would our chief hurry over."

Immediately these people quiet down and their laughter also became softer, but they drank more wine now and kept whispering.

"It is said that he holds a sword given by an immortal, slicing metal like butter and it gives light during the night."

"Hm, yes! Without such a sword how can he chop off the heads of the ghosts of Mount Yin in a matter of moments."

At this point all of them removed their swords from their girdles and some even unsheated used their sleeves to polish it.

Brother Lei laughed loudly:"My sword isn't too bad either, but compared to his it is still lacking a bit. If not I would be as famous as he is."

Second brother Qian shook his head and said:"No....no.... Even with the same sword it is impossible to be as famous as he is. Not taking other things in account but just his level of perfection in the lightness martial arts...hah! You've seen the walls of Beijing too, he just casually leapt over the wall."

Brother Lei stuck out his tongue and said:"Really?"

Second brother Qian continued:"Yes.I heard he was still drinking wine in

Beijing in the evening and before dawn he had reached Mount Yin. The ghosts saw a flash of light and all their heads were chopped off.....hah. It was said that the flash of light looked like thunderbolt and everyone in a radius of a few hundred kilometres could see that light."

The poor tall man was drinking his wine too and used his sleeve to wipe the blade of his sword, but when he heard this he laughed loudly:"Impossible! No one is capable of doing that, and where on earth would one find a sword like that!"

Brother Lei looked angry now and hit the table, he shouted:"Who is spouting nonsense here! Come out!"

The tall man did not respond he continued to polish his blade and drinking wine.

Brother Lei was furious now and jumped up and wanted to go over, he was stopped by second brother Qian. He winked at brother Lei and staggered slowly over to the tall man.

He smiled:"My friend, it seems you're a practitioner of the sword too. It is not strange that you would not believe our words, but do you realise who we are talking about?"

The tall man casually and carefree asked with a smile:"Who?"

Second brother Qian said:"The great hero master Yan, Yan Nantian. Celestial Sword Yan.....hahahaha! If you are really a practitioner of the sword you must have heard of him. Now do you believe our words."

The tall man rolled his eyes and smiled in a silly way:"Yan Nantian? ..... Who is Yan Nantian?"

Second brother Qian was laughing loudly now:"You haven't heard of Yan Nantian, you're not a learner of the sword."

The tall man laughed too:"In that way, you must know him! How does he look like and what about that sword....."

Brother Lei could not control himself anymore and rushed over and used his fist to hit the table bamm, he shouted:"We don't know him either. But we do know he is ten times more handsome than you and his sword is also at least ten times superior than that rusty piece of garbage you have."

The tall man laughed:"It seems that you are armed guards, how can it be that you have such poor eyesight. Although I am not handsome, but this sword of mine....."

Brother Lei laughed loudly:"Don't tell me that rusty piece of iron of yours is some sort of treasure."

"This sword of mine is really an invaluable treasure. It cuts through metal like tofu."

Everyone in the wineshop started to laugh now.

Brother Lei laughed:"If that sword of yours is really a priceless treasure, we should at least treat you to a good meal. And....."

The tall man stood up now and interrupted him:"Allright, draw your sword and we will test my sword."

When he was seated, there was nothing seemingly impressive about him. But now he stood up, brother Lei unintentionally backed a bit away from him. Second brother Qian was a fat man but compared to his muscular and big body he looked like a skinny man. His shoulders were very broad and his arms were long and his hands were big.

At this point a pale young man in a green robe entered the wineshop and when he saw what was happening he leaned over the counter and chuckled.

Brother Lei drew his precious sword made from fine metal and mustered his

courage, he roared:"Allright! I will test your sword."

The tall man said:"Use all the strength you have."

Brother Lei laughed arrogantly:"Watch out! Don't blame me if you're injured."

He twirled his sword and hacked at the sword of the tall man.

The tall man was holding a cup of wine in his left hand and casually used his sword to intercept that blow and everyone heard craaannng. Brother Lei backed away with two paces and was holding half a sword now, everyone was surprised and nobody believed their eyes.

The tall man touched his sword and laughed:"What do you think?"

Brother Lei swallowed his saliva and stammered:"A wonderful sword, a true treasure."

The tall man sighed:"Unfortunately such a treasure is wasted in my hands."

Brother Lei's eyes gleared up and said:"My friend.....do...do you have intentions of selling this....magnificent weapon?"

The tall man said:"I have the intention but I haven't met the right buyer yet."

Brother Lei was very happy and one could see it on his face:"I....me....what do you think of me as a buyer?"

The tall man examined him carefully for a moment and said:"Well, you do have somewhat of the grandeur of a hero in you and fit this sword quite nicely....but....but.....your knowledge is only mediocre. I wonder how high your bid is first."

Brother Lei was very happy and said:"We can talk about that.....we can discuss a reasonable price."

He gathered his friends around and were softly discussing this deal, in awhile all of them reached for their money bags. They were seeing how much each could spare.

The tall man did not pay any attention to it and continued to drink wine.

After some time, brother Lei walked over and said carefully:"How about 500 taels of silver....."

The tall man stared at him and said:"How much?"

Brother Lei immediately laughed:"How about 1000 taels of silver, would that be enough? To be honest we have emptied our money bags and this is all we can muster together."

The tall man remained pensive for a moment before saying:"This sword is a priceless treasure, as the saying goes vermillion cosmetics are only fit for a beauty and a good sword only fits a true hero. Allright, it is a deal. I will sell this sword to you for 1000 taels of silver."

Brother Lei never thought he would agree that fast, he was afraid that he would change his mind and quickly gave the tall man the silver and laughed:"Here is your 1000 taels of silver, please count them for yourself."

The tall man put the silver in his bag and laughed:"No need to count it, I believe you. The sword is here, only the chosen one is fit to wield such an immortal sword. Do be humble in the future, otherwise even an immortal sword can turn into a piece of worthless iron."

Brother Lei said happily:"Of course....of course."

He took the sword with both hands and was estatic, like he had found a priceless treasure. Which he did.

The tall man took out an ingot of silver and threw it on the table, he stretched

himself and yawned one more time before laughing:"This round is on me, I'm off."

Without looking back, he walked out the wineshop with big paces.

The young man in green robe looked at brother Lei and his friends and chuckled one more time before following the tall man.

Brother Lei was so happy that he almost forgot his family name.

Second brother Qian smiled:"Now that our brother Lei has such a marvellous sword, he will be practically invincible. The realm will become brother Lei's playing field."

Brother Lei laughed proudly:"Thank you....thank you..... Well, I have thank all my good brothers here for helping out. Hahahahaha, it seems that luck has changed for me, if not how would such a golden opportunity ran up to me."

Second brother Qian said:"With this sword even Yan Nantian will turn pale, I think our armed guard agency will have a new chief soon."

Brother Lei laughed even happier now:"If that really happens, I will not forget my good brothers here."

He was holding his sword tightly, he did not whether to sit or to stand....he was so exhilarated that he had lost all track.

A voice from outside laughed:"Why are all of you so happy?"

A man stepped walked into the wineshop, this man was rather short but looked very tough and intelligent and his eyes were sharp. Furthermore he had an impressive grandeur as he walked and moved, with one look you would know that he is the sort of person who is accustomed to giving orders.

Second brother Qian and others got up and smiled apologetically:"Chief

Shen..."

They were all talking through each other and explained to chief Shen what just happened.

Chief Shen smiled:"Really? Congratulations for acquiring such a splendid weapon.You're most lucky."

Brother Lei laughed too and started to walk over to chief Shen, but suddenly he realised his new status with his new sword and stood still.

He laughed:"Chief...brother Shen is right. I am most fortunate to have acquired this magnificent sword."

He changed very fast and he also changed the way of addressing chief Shen.

Chief Shen did not notice the change and smiled:"To be honest I too would like to admire this weapon. Brother Lei, would you mind?"

Brother Lei laughed:"This is easy! Brother Shen, go ahead."

Chief Shen said:"Brother Qian, could I use your sword for a moment?"

After borrowing the sword of second brother Qian, he rolled up his sleeve and smiled:"Brother Lei, be careful now."

Chief Shen twirled the sword and hacked at the sword of brother Lei, brother Lei imitated that tall man. He too was holding a cup in his left hand now and was about to drink when he saw that the sword was coming at him with quite some speed, he immediately used his sword to intercept.

clang, clang, clang, baafff could be heard. Indeed a sword was broken but not the sword of chief Shen, it was the precious sword of brother Lei which was broken now.

The first clang was met the two swords met, the second clang was when the blade broke and dropped on the ground, the thrid clang was when brother Lei dropped his cup. As for the baaafff sound, that was brother Lei falling.

Brother Lei sat on the floor totally confused and shocked, he did not spoke but was totally flabbergasted.

Chief Shen threw the sword back to second brother Qian and scoffed:"Some splendid weapon!"

Brother Lei put on a pitiful face and stuttered:"But I.....he.....it was....."

Chief Shen coldly said:"Just awhile ago you were deceived."

Now brother Lei leapt up and shouted:"I am going to look for that fiend now!"

Chief Shen ordered:"Stop!"

Brother Lei instantly obeyed and stood still, he asked:"Chief...chief, what are your orders?"

He adressed chief Shen differently again, but chief Shen seemed to be oblivious to that change and coldly asked:"Do you remember how that man looked like?"

Brother Lei said:"Just like some ordinary poor low-life, just a bit tall."

Chief Shen remained pensive for a moment, suddenly he turned pale and asked:"Did he have thick eyebrows? And were his cheekbones edgy? And were his eyes half-closed the entire time, like he was about to doze of into a sleep?"

Brother Lei said:"Yes, chief. Do you know him?"

Chief Shen looked at him for a moment and looked at second brother Qian, then he sighed:"You have been working for me for a great deal of years, haven't you learnt anything in all those years?"

Brother Lei did not dare to look up and only said:"Yes....yes...."

Chief Shen asked:"Do you know who that man was?"

All those men looked at each other before asking:"Who?"

Chief Shen said slowly:"He is number one peerless celestial sword of the realm, Yan Nantian. He also the man I deliberately wanted to pay respects too this time."

After he heard that brother Lei fell down once again.

That pale-looking young man was following Yan Nantian after both of them had abandoned the main street, he said:"Are you master Yan?"

Yan Nantian continued walk grandly and just asked earnestly:"Are you sent by second brother Jiang?"

The young man answered:"Yes, I am. My name is Jiang Qin, I am the page of young master Jiang."

Yan Nantian now turned around and sternly said:"Why are you so late?"

It looked like his eyes shot out fire and Jiang Qin was terrified and trembled, he stuttered:"I....I....was afraid of being followed, so I only travelled after sunset....although I have been working for young master Jiang since I was a small boy, but my lightness martial arts are very bad."

Yan Nantian was somewhat pacified by this answer and had his eyes half-closed again now, he asked:"Your master sent me a letter saying that he will meet up with me here. He did not explain why, but I take it is of great importance. Tell me what has happened."

Jiang Qin said:"Master Jiang has sold all his belongings for some reason, he has

also dismissed all his servants except me. He instructed me to meet up with master Yan first. Master said that he will explain everything to master Yan when he sees master Yan. It seems....it seems that.....the young master is running from....from....some great, formidable enemy."

Yan Nantian was surprised and said:"Hmm? Really! Why didn't he tell me earlier? .....(sigh*) Second brother is a bit too muddle-headed, even if there is some formidable nemesis the two of us can handle it."

Jiang Qin bowed and respectfully said:"Of course."

Yan Nantian asked:"When did your master set out?"

"Judging from the day he left, he should be here in a matter of hours."

"You should have travelled faster! If something would happen....."

Suddenly a voice shouted:"Master Yan.....master Yan....."

A group of people were running towards Yan Nantian, the first man was rather short but looked tough and intelligent. His lightness martial arts were very good, it was chief Shen.

Yan Nantian frowned and asked seriously:"Are you the chief of the united armed guards agency of Zhenyuan, Weiyuan and Lingyuan? The famous Shen Qinghong, Flying Petals Through The Sky And Descending Without A Sound."

Shen Qinghong respectfully bowed and said:"Master Yan, I wouldn't dare to claim such a title, please forgive my guard's ignorance."

Yan Nantian laughed:"I was a bit upset when I heard them saying that they wanted to invite the poem immortal for wine. On your behalf I could not just hit them, but at least I had to let them pay somehow for their insolence."

Shen Qinghong bowed deeper:"Yes, they are too rude and deserve to be

punished severly."

Yan Nantian stopped laughing now and asked:"Are you here to see me?"

"This humble disciple has come to pay his respects to you, master Yan."

Yan Nantian was only a few years older than Shen Qinghong and Shen was also a respected martial artist in the realm. However his own reputation paled in comparison with Yan Nantian's fame, that is why he adressed himself as a junior in front of Yan Nantian.

Yan Nantian sternly asked:"How did you know I was here?"

"This humble disciple was quite frantic when I met up with an elder who directed me to this place. He said that master Yan will come here within these two days, that is why I hurried over."

Yan Nantian laughed happily:"That drunkard has slipped his tongue again....."

He turned around and looked at brother Lei who was still holding half a sword now, he laughed to brother Lei:"I take it you're still confused."

Brother Lei lowered his head and said:"This lowly disciple.....I.....this sword...."

Shen Qinghong chided:"You're a total embarrassement! Don't you know that master Yan without a sword is even superior to all renowned swordsmen with a sword. Any old piece of iron becomes a powerful weapon in the hands of master Yan."

Yan Nantian smiled:"You must have something to ask of me, otherwise you wouldn't flatter me that much with such nice words."

Shen Qinghong sighed:"To be honest master Yan I recently received an order to protect a large treasure, which is practically priceless. Nobody even knew about this order but somehow the 12 Zodiacs got wind of it. They sent me a

[dawn receiving invitation] saying that they will raid my convoy, that is why I do not dare to escort this convoy now."

Yan Nantian said:"Are you asking me to protect the convoy?"

"This humble disciple wouldn't dream of asking master Yan to do that. But I have arranged to meet the 12 Zodiacs nearby, I was wondering if master Yan would accompany me. Master Yan only needs to give a few orders and the 12 Zodiacs won't even consider raiding anymore."

Yan Nantian said seriously:"If you don't have the capabilities to protect the convoy, why did you accept the order in the first place?"

"I deserve to die....I deserve to die.....I just beg of master Yan...."

"The 12 Zodiacs are infamous thugs, and they really know to hide themselves from the outside world. I too have long planned on ridding the realm of them, it is not that I do not...."

Shen Qinghong was very happy and said:"Thank you, master Yan."

Yan Nantian shook his head and said:"Don't thank me, although I would like to help you but I have another pressing matter to attend to right now. That cannot be delayed."

After he finished he turned around and walked away.

Shen Qinghong was startled and called out panickly:"Please wait, master Yan."

He waved his hand and second brother Qian walked up with a chest, Shen Qinghong opened the chest and it was filled with golden ingots.

Shen Qinghong knelt down respectfully and said:"This lowly disciple knows that master Yan is unrestrained when it comes to using money, so I....."

Yan Nantian laughed arrogantly now and said sternly:"Shen Qinghong, even if you put all the gold in the world in front of me I will not delay my meeting with my brother Jiang Feng....."

He tapped on the shoulder of Jiang Qin and said loudly:"I am going first, follow me."

After saying that he was about 30 metres away now.

Shen Qinghong turned pale now, second brother Qian said softly to himself:"A most peculiar man, going through all that effort just to cheat us out of 1000 taels of silver, but when offered a chest full of gold, he just casually goes away....."

In the boundless twilight it was impossible to see Yan Nantian clearly, he was moving with utmost speed and it seemed like a greyish shadow floating through the woods.

He could only hear the wind, no sounds of a horse, carriage whatsoever.

Still travelling with great speed, Yan Nantian thought: Strange, brother Jiang should be on this road by now....

He looked up and saw two birds flying, one was a weak swallow the other was a hawk.

The swallow was tired and weak, and in a moment it would fall prey to the claws of the hawk.

Yan Nantian roared:"Audacious hawk! Just like humans picking on the weak!"

Yan Nantian's family name was [Yan] meaning swallow----so he felt obliged to help out the swallow here.

He was angered and leapt up like an arrow towards the hawk, the hawk spread

its' wings and dove towards the swallow. Hence Yan Nantian missed the hawk and the swallow was injured by the claws of the hawk.

The hawk seemed to be thrilled and had captured the swallow in its claws. And Yan Nantian roared:"Impressive, you managed to escape my attack!"

He roared again and leapt up once more, he powerful gust of energy hit the hawk and the hawk made a somersault and landed on the ground.

Yan Nantian laughed:"Brother, brother....if you could see me now. With my bare hands killing a hawk."

He walked over and freed the swallow from the hawk's claws. The swallow was injured badly and could not fly anymore.

Yan Nantian said softly:"Good little swallow, just be patient. You won't die...."

He sat down on the ground and took out some herbal medicinal ointment and carefully attended to the wounds of the swallow. It took some time but gradually the swallow was able to fly a bit about again.

The medicinal ointments used by this great hero were of course only the superior kinds.

The swallow flew a few times around Yan Nantian before it flew into the twilight again.

Yan Nantian laughed at himself:"10.000 taels of gold could not delay me, but a mere little swallow took up so much of my time."

He was laughing happily and continued to walk forward.

Suddenly he heard cries of a baby from afar.

Yan Nantian was very happy and thought:"Could it be that my brother has a

child now?"

He moved as fast as he could towards the crying sound, when he reached that spot he saw a tragic scene, corpses everywhere.....

Yan Nantian was gone out of sight, even Jiang Qin was gone now. But Shen Qinghong still stood there dazed.

Second brother Qian asked worriedly:"Chief, when will you meet up with the 12 Zodiacs?"

Shen Qinghong answered:"Tonight."

Second brother Qian called out with fear and shock:"Tonight?!? .....Where?"

"Just further ahead."

"H...how many of them?"

"On the dawn receiving invitation, there were the names of the black-faced lord, the receivers of dawn, presenter of fruit and the welcomers."

".....So....so.....the pig, rooster, dog and monkey will all be present....."

"Exactly."

Second brother Qian's voice changed even more now:"Chief, let us get out of here while we still can. We...we cannot...."

Shen Qinghong grunted coldly:"You can leave now."

"But what about you, chief?"

"I have received the order myself to protect the treasure of the customer, I

cannot back away from my responsibility. You....."

He did not finish and started to walk forward.

Second brother stepped forward and called:"Chief....."

But stood still again.

Brother Lei said:"What? Aren't you going?"

Second brother Qian said softly:"Well, let him do the honourable thing! We don't have that responsiblity."

Brother Lei was furious and scolded loudly:"Cowards! All of you are cowards! I, Lei Xiaohu, won't be like you."

Second brother Qian said:"Fine! We're cowards and you're a hero."

Lei Xiaohu shouted:"Cowards! Well, at least I have seen your true natures!"

He continued to curse them and started to follow Shen Qinghong.

Shen Qinghong moved forward with big steps but he was most cautious, he was headed for the twilight.

He heard someone was following him and stopped, he did not turn around and said:"Is it Lei Xiaohu?"

Lei Xiaohu answered:"Yes, chief. It's me."

Shen Qinghong sighed:"I knew you were the only one who would accompany me."

"Chief, just hearing that I will lay down my life for you. Lei Xiaohu may be an

idiot but he's not a coward, but chief, this time...."

"You're surprised why I did not invite any of my friends to join me."

"Yes, I am a bit surprised."

"Each of the 12 Zodiacs have a special skill, only a few people in the realm are able to defeat them. If I have asked my friends to assist me, they will help without any hesistation even if they don't want to come. They will accompany me because of a sense of righteousness, but how can I stand by and see my friends getting killed."

Lei Xiaohu looked up and said with awe:"The chief will always remain the chief! Even if I had your martial arts I can never become the chief of the three united armed guard agencies...."

All of a sudden he was interrupted by the howling of a dog.

It is not strange to hear dogs howling in desolated areas, but this dog sounded awfully eerie.

Lei Xiaohu's face changed and said:"Are they here...."

Suddenly all the dogs in the area seemed to start howling.

Lei Xiaohu was a rather courageous man normally, but now he was trembling, but when he saw that Shen Qinghong was not impressed by the howling. He mustered his courage and said with an enforced smile:"The 12 Zodiacs are quite mysterious...."

Shen Qinghong said earnestly:"The 12 Zodiacs love to terrorize people, scaring them first before attacking. We shan't fall for their tricks."

Lei Xiaohu put up his chest and said loudly:"Who is afraid! There are no cowards here!"

Even though he said that he was quite terrified in his heart. It was dark, dogs howling a desolated area in the middle of nowhere, quite soul-stirring.

Shen Qinghong put his fists together to form a greeting and said clearly:"Where are the 12 Zodiacs? Shen Qinghong of Luoyang City is here to meet you."

He was a short man but his voice travelled far and outvoiced the howling of the dogs, showing that his internal strenght was quite good.

In the dark two figures appeared, looked like a man riding a horse or some sort. On closer look it was just a gibbon riding on a big dog with fierce teeth.

This dog was extremely big, it even resembled a wolf or even a small tiger. It was growling the entire time, intimidating people. The gibbon's eyes were very twinkly even scary. This dog and monkey seemed to have come from the netherworld.

When the dog and monkey stood in front of Shen Qinghong, the monkey presented a peach.

Shen Qinghong scoffed:"Marvellous indeed the divine dog welcomes the guest and the sacred monkey presents fruit! But I am here to meet the people of the 12 Zodiacs not these animals."

The gibbon seemed to understand human tongue and made a somersault and presented a white cloth.

It was written:

If you eat the peach, we will see you.

Shen Qinghong sneered:"If the 12 Zodiacs are really underhanded low-life, Shen Qinghong would not have come.....I trust you, but even if it is poison I do not fear it."

He was about to reach out and take the peach, but Lei Xiaohu beat him to it and gobbled up the peach.

He laughed:"A free peach, such a waste not to eat it."

Now a sinister voice laughed:"Not surprising why the Three Yuan Armed Agency is so famous, you seem to have a few courageous men working for you."

Eight figures appeared from the dark laughing.

Shen Qinghong was a short and skinny man, but this man was even skinnier than Shen Qinghong. He wore a golden-coloured brocade, he had a monkey face. You could say he only resembled a man for 30% and the other 70% was monkey.

The other seven men were black robes and had a cloth covering their faces only revealing their sinister eyes.

Shen Qinghong said:"You must be....."

The man in the golden-coloured robe chuckled:"Judging by our appearances you must know who we are."

Shen Qinghong coldly said:"I was just surprised why the black-faced lord and the receivers of dawn aren't here."

The golden monkey constellation laughed strangely:"They have another appointment, I think we will be more than enough to deal with you."

Shen Qinghong laughed clearly:"I am here by myself, I have no intentions of returning alive. I would be pleased if I could meet a few more of the 12 Zodiacs, I would be somewhat disappointed if I didn't."

The golden monkey constellation laughed evilly:"Well said, I knew you have courage. And it seems your tongue is also not too bad either, no wonder you are

the chief of the three united armed agencies. It would be a shame to lose that position today."

Shen Qinghong said sternly:"I am not here to debate with you!"

"You want to fight?"

"Exactly! If I win, you will have to leave my convoy alone."

"What happens if you lose? Will you leave behind the treasure?"

Shen Qinghong laughed:"The treausure is being protected by the vice-chief of my agancy, dual rods Song Deyang. He is leading the convoy to its' destination as we speak, I am here to distract your attention."

The golden monkey constellation waved his hand and one of the black dog stars handed him a small wooden box, he opened the box and shouted sinisterly:"Take a look at this!"

It was a head, it was the head of the dual rods Song Deyang.

Shen Qinghong's face turned pale now and shouted:"YOU.....YOU....."

The golden monkey constellation laughed:"If we're so easily deceived we wouldn't be feared throughout the realm for so long. We have the treasure, we came here to claim your head."

He waved his hand and ordered:"Attack!"

The gibbon leapt up and stormed at Shen Qinghong, its' claws were aimed for the eyes of Shen Qinghong.

That big dog also leapt towards Lei Xiaohu, Lei Xiaohu tried to avoid that jump. But the dog was very agile in spite of being so big and it had already jumped on Lei Xiaohu. The dog opened its' mouth and was about to bite Lei Xiaohu on the

throat, Lei Xiaohu tried his best to push away the head of the dog. Both man and dog were fighting like beasts now, the dog was growling and Lei Xiaohu was roaring.

Shen Qinghong struck two stances at the gibbon, but the monkey was also very agile and avoided those attacks and was still aiming for the eyes of Shen.

The golden monkey constellation laughed:"What a joke, the armed guards of the Three Yuan agency cannot even defeat a few animals."

After he finished Shen Qinghong reached for his girdle and took out his 3 metre long pliable silver whip, he whirled his whip around and the gibbon was forced back.

Shen Qinghong chided:"Nowhere to run!"

Suddenly ten odd metallic projectiles were shot out, half of them were aimed at the gibbon and the others at the black dog stars and the golden monkey constellation. Although the gibbon was agile, he could not avoid the famous secretive weaponry skills of this skilled martial artist. The gibbon was hit and died on the spot, while the golden monkey constellation and the black dog stars leapt up.

The golden monkey constellation yelled:"Impressive! Worthy of being called [flying petals through the sky]!"

All eight of them attacked Shen Qinghong, even if Shen had three heads and six arms he could not avoid this joint attack. He rolled away from their storm and wielded his whip like a shield protecting his chest, but his eight adversaries had gained the advantage now and there was no escape anymore for Shen Qinghong.

While the big dog had bitten into the shoulder of Lei Xiaohu and he bit the dog in his throat, both were still wrestling in a pool of their own blood.

At this point a loud roar startled all of them, the roar sounded like a big

thunder and a figure descended from nowhere------like a god.

The golden monkey constellation and the black star dogs were too surprised to attack and they saw a tall, muscular man about two metres tall. His eyes were red and furious, his hair chaotic and his face was filled with hatred. One look was enough to scare the living daylights out of anyone, but strange enough he was carrying a baby on his back.

Shen Qinghong who was thrilled and called out with joy:"Master Yan!"

The golden monkey constellation's face changed and called out:"Yan Nantian?"

Yan Nantian roared:"The 12 Zodiacs, prepare to die!"

The golden monkey constellation retorted:"There are no animosities between you and us, why....."

Before he could finish his sentence, Yan Nantian had already reached one of the black dog stars. That man was terrified and raised his fists and struck Yan Nantian twice on the chest bom, bom. However Yan Nantian was not at all affected, but the wrists of that black dog star were broken now. Before he could cry out in pain, Yan Nantian had already grabbed him by his chest, in his anxiety he kicked towards Yan Nantian with everything he had.

He was a practitioner of the northern martial arts school form formless kicks, it was indeed formless and unexpected. Which were the characteristics of this style.

Yan Nantian grabbed his leg without even looking with one loud roar he ripped that black dog star into two pieces, blood splattered all over Yan Nantian's body.

The other six black dog stars called out in anger and stormed towards Yan Nantian.

These seven black dog stars were not first rate martial artists in the realm, but because they have trained together and fought and each others' side for many

years they had developed a sort of attack formation. This attack formation was quite lethal, even with six stars now.

Shen Qinghong could help himself to say:"Master Yan, be careful!"

Yan Nantian stormed towards them, he was like a tiger entering a herd of sheep, those two parts of corpses became two iron maces in the hands of Yan Nantian. There was a rain of blood, it was the blood dripping from the corpse.

In just a matter of seconds there were cries like aaahhhh, cruck, three of them had already died now. One gritted his teeth and stormed towards Yan Nantian, Yan Nantian used one corpse part to strike out and hit that man on the chest. He was killed instantly, all the bones in his chest were smashed.

Another one was too shocked to fight anymore and turned around to run away.

Yan Nantian laughed arrogantly and chucked one half of the body towards him, that body hit the man on the back. The man screamed but his legs continued to walk a few steps, but his upper body fell backwards. His spine was snapped into two.

The remaining one hoped that Yan Nantian did not see him and sneaked behind hoping to use the baby as a hostage.

But it was like Yan Nantian had eyes in his back and shouted:"Stop right there!"

The man was stunned by the roar of Yan Nantian, Yan Nantian used the remaining half of the body to hit him on the head. Blood splattered everywhere including on Yan Nantian's face. The last black star dog was killed too, half his body sank into the ground, it was like he was a nail and Yan Nantian used a hammer to hit him.

Shen Qinhong had goosebumps now and even a thug like the golden monkey constellation who was used to killing was scared stiff.

Yan Nantian roared to him:"Do you want me to kill you personally?"

The golden monkey constellation stuttered:"Why.....why?"

Yan Nantian yelled angrilly:"Why? Do you know that Jiang Feng is my sworn brother!"

The golden monkey constellation exclaimed:"The pig....is...are they..."

Yan Nantian said:"Everyone else is dead, there is no point for you to live either. Die!"

When he finished he had reached the golden monkey constellation and with his iron palms he grabbed the chest of the golden monkey constellation and lifted him up.

But the golden monkey constellation did not move and fight back, Yan Nantian put force into his palms and his fingers penetrated the fles of the golden monkey constellation.

But still he did not cry out in pain nor grunt.

Yan Nantian said:"I am surprised that a small man like you can withstand pain this well. Normally I would spare you, but today.....(*humph)...What do you have to say?"

The golden monkey constellation started to laugh loudly now and said:"I am surprised that a tall, tough fellow like you isn't a real man."

At this point if he would curse Yan Nantian, Yan Nantian would not be surprised and ignore his cursings. But this sentence surprised Yan Nantian and he shouted:"I have roamed the realm for a long time, my deeds are known by all. And it is not strange that people will curse me behind my back, but it is only natural evil and good cannot coexist with each other. But I would like to hear what you mean with that sentence."

The golden monkey constellation sneered:"You're muddle-headed, unclear in who you real enemy is. You call yourself a true man!"

Yan Nantian angrilly said:"I...."

The golden monkey constellation loudly interrupted him:"If you really know how to distinguish right and wrong, you will not kill me."

Yan Nantian asked:"Why can't I kill you?"

The golden monkey constellation asked:"Why do you want to kill me?"

Yan Nantian sternly said:"Because of my brother Jiang...."

Again the golden monkey constellation loudly interrupted him:"Right! If you kill me for another reason I have nothing to say. But if you kill me to avenge Jiang Feng than you are at wrong."

Yan Nantian angrilly said:"So in other words the 12 Zodiacs did not raid my brother Jiang Feng?"

The golden monkey constellation said:"You're right again, we did raid Jiang Feng. But we are robbers, you should know that. We steal and rob from the rich, that is what we do. There is no point debating about that, but you should kill the one who informed us of the route of Jiang Feng. Do you want to know who that is?"

He spoke with boldness and not showing any sign of fear, Yan Nantian was filled with hatred but was still stunned by his words.

The golden monkey constellation laughed arrogantly:"You're not looking for the real killers, but you came looking for us. Even if you killed all the 12 Zodiacs you wouldn't have avenged Jiang Feng."

Yan Nantian looked pensive for awhile before shouting:"The one leaking information to you is that the page of my brother? Is it Jiang Qin, that little bastard! He was the only one who knew the route of my brother."

The golden monkey constellation's face changed a bit and scoffed:"Right! You're not just a simple buff, it seems you do have a brain. Jiang Feng was betrayed by his trusted page, for only 3000 taels of silver."

Yan Nantian almost exploded with anger and cursed:"THE BASTARD!.....THE BASTARD....."

The golden monkey constellation coldly asked:"Do you know where the bastard is now?"

Yan Nantian turned around and asked loudly:"Shen Qinghong, did you see where that bastard went to?"

Shen Qinghong was also flabbergasted by his intimidating grandeur, he knew that Yan Nantian had no bad intentions towards him. But nonetheless he was terrified and stammered:"This...I...I....did not notice where he went off to?"

Yan Nantian lifted the golden monkey constellation even higher and shouted:"You know where he is, right?"

The golden monkey constellation remained calm and said:"If I didn't know, I wouldn't have talked so much."

Yan Nantian roared:"Where is he?"

The golden monkey constellation was still very calm and unaffected by his roar and asked with a smile:"What if I don't want to tell?"

Yan Nantian looked at his calm face and said slowly:"If you don't tell, I will respect you."

If he shouted that he will the golden monkey constellation or cut off his arms, legs *etc.* He wouldn't be afraid, because he knew that Yan Nantian needed his information on the whereabouts of Jiang Qin. But when he heard what Yan Nantian said, he shivered and asked:"What...what if I told you?"

Yan Nantian said:"If you tell me I will only take your eyes!"

Shen Qinghong almost called out with surprise and thought: Yan Nantian is quite unreasonable. If he is speaking he will take away his eyes, this way the monkey will never talk.

But before he finished his thought he heard the golden monkey constellation sigh:"Blind is better than dead, allright I accept your terms."

Yan Nantian shouted:"Talk!"

The golden monkey constellation said:"Even if I told you, you wouldn't dare to go."

"I fear nobody and nowhere."

The golden monkey constellation had his eyes half-closed before saying with a strange grin:"Jiang Qin is no fool either. He knows that the 12 Zodiacs kill without thinking twice. He had the nerve to bargain with us, so isn't he afraid to lose his head."

Yan Nantian said:"Hmm, continue."

The golden monkey constellation said:"The reason for him being so bold is simple, he has found a good hiding-place. The 3000 taels of silver will cover his expenses, even if the 12 Zodiacs combined we wouldn't dare to enter that place."

Yan Nantian laughed sternly:"Floral Palace? That is one of the places I was planning on going anyway."

The golden monkey constellation said:"The Floral Palace isn't the only sacred, forbidden place in the realm."

Yan Nantian shouted:"Mount Kunlun and [the Valley of Evil]....."

When Yan Nantian uttered these few words, Shen Qinghong who was listening attentively was starting to tremble and said loudly:"Master Yan, you...you cannot go there."

Yan Nantian looked at the golden monkey constellation sternly and roared:"Are you telling the truth?"

The golden monkey constellation replied:"I have told you what I know. It is up to you whether you believe me or not."

Shen Qinghong said with a shaky voice:"The valley of evil is the gathering spot of all the most evil thugs in the realm. Rogues who have been forced to leave the realm and seek a new hide-away, the valley is packed with all the most vile and cruel martial artists of the world. Everyone in that valley is hated by all, but because they have consolidated themselves in the valley no one dares to look for them. Even the Seven Swords of Kunlun, the Four Divine Elders of Shaolin and the swordsman of the south Feng Xiaoyu would not....."

Yan Nantian said earnestly:"I am not a Shaolin divine elder, nor am I the swordsman of the south."

Shen Qinghong said:"I know that the swordsmanship of master Yan is matchless throughout the realm, but the valley of evil.....the valley is filled with all kinds of evil monsters from the past and present....."

Yan Nantian said loudly:"It is my responsibility to go there, even if I have to cross mountains of fire I will not be discouraged."

Shen Qinghong said loudly:"But what if the golden monkey constellation is deceiving you, he hates you to the bone. That is why he wants you to go to the

valley of evil to meet ....."

He did not say the last word but it was evident what he was going to say.

Yan Nantian laughed loudly:"Even if the valley of evil is made from moutains of blades and seas of fire, it will not be able to take my life."

Shen Qinghong said:"But...but...."

Yan Nantian said loudly:"My mind is set, you needn't say another word."

Shen Qinghong was stunned and sighed deeply and stayed silent.

The golden monkey constellation sighed too:"Good! Yan Nantian is really a true hero. Not even afraid of the valley of evil, even if you don't return from it you will be respected by everyone in Wulin."

Yan Nantian said:"Do you have anything else to say?"

The golden monkey constellation said:"No, you can take my eyes."

There was a pain of cry and that pair of sharp, shining eyes of the golden monkey constellation were gone. There were just two bloody sockets, Yan Nantian chucked him in front of Shen Qinghong and said:"He is yours."

And with that he left.

That Lei Xiaohu was lying on top of the dog, both were bleeding heavily and were about to die.

Shen Qinghong looked at him and turned his attention to the golden monkey constellation and said hatefully:"The famous intelligent golden monkey constellation has finally made one stupid mistake."

Although the golden monkey constellation passed out when his eyes were removed but now he had woken up and was attending to his wounds. He took out a bottle of herbal medicinal ointment and was smearing it on his sockets.

He said with a shaky voice:"Me, stupid?"

Shen Qinghong said:"Yan Nantian may have spared your life, but now you've fallen into my hands! Do you expect me to let you live? There is not enough ointment in the world to save you now. Why bother attending to your wounds?"

The golden monkey constellation said:"Of course I have to look after my wounds, because I won't die."

Shen Qinghong laughed loudly:"Who will save you now?"

The golden monkey constellation said:"I will save myself."

Shen Qinghong shouted:"I would like to see how you're going to save yourself."

He lifted his palm and was about to strike the golden monkey constellation on the skull.

"Don't you want to find your lost treasure?"

Shen Qinghong immediately retracted his palm.

The golden monkey constellation laughed:"I knew you would not kill me! If you want to retrieve your lost treasure, you will let me live. Unless you don't want the treasure anymore."

Shen Qinghong was hesistating and his palm was trembling. He didn't know whether to strike out or not, finally he sighed deeply:"You've won."

For the sake of the Three Yuan united armed guard agency he had to let him live, he cannot disappoint the clients who entrusted the safe-keeping of the

treasure to him.

The golden monkey constellation laughed:"Shen Qinghong, now you must know! Nobody can easily kill me!"

It was late now, most lights in the town were out now. Even the last few drunkards of the Taibai wineshop were staggering home now. The waiter was rubbing his eyes and was about to close up for the night.

Suddenly a carriage came this way, it was not being pulled by a horse but by a man. It was that tall man who swindled that armed guard earlier.

But he looked different now, his body was covered with blood and he looked as if he was ready to kill. The waiter was scared stiff and wanted to hide, but the tall man stopped in front of the wineshop. The man pulled the carriage like it was nothing, a carriage that would take a strong horse to pull. What an impressive strength.

Yan Nantian took the baby in his arms now and walked into the wineshop, the baby was sleeping.

The waiter mustered his courage and asked:"Sir.....sir....what kind of wine would you like?"

Yan Nantian shouted:"Who said I wanted wine?"

The waiter was stunned and asked:"What do you want, sir?"

Yan Nantian said:"Rice soup!"

The waiter was even more stunned and frowned:"We don't....selll..."

Yan Nantian smacked a table very hard and said:"Bring me some rice soup first and then some wine!"

The waiter was almost scared to death and did not even consider saying no.

After the baby had eaten, he sleapt even deeper. Yan Nantian sat there drinking, with every cup his grandeur seemed to grow. The waiter did not even dare to look at him now.

But he secretly peeked and noticed that Yan Nantian he drank 17 big bowls of strong wine, the waiter stuck out his tongue.

Suddenly Yan Nantian threw two ingots of silver on the table and said loudly:"Go and buy me two coffins!"

The waiter fell down and did not believe his ears, he was too scared to even respond.

Yan Nantian smacked on the table again and two ingots flew up and fell into the lap of the waiter, Yan Nantian yelled again:"Coffins! Two coffins of the best materials! Did you hear me?"

The waiter stammered:"I...heard.....you...."

Yan Nantian shouted:"Well, what are you waiting for?"

The waiter turned around and quickly went out, when Yan Nantian was about to drink his 28th bowl he had returned. The waiter was a clever man and knew that this was not the point to be asking questions or to raise objections.

Yan Nantian carefully took out the bodies of Jiang Feng and Hua Yuenu from the carriage and carefully put them in the coffins. He did everything personally even when he hammered the nails through the lid. The waiter was totally surprised and wondered what this man was.

When he was facing the two coffins, Yan Nantian drank another seven bowls although he was not weeping but he looked so tragic it was worst than crying.

He was holding the last bowl of wine, he looked at that bowl for a very long time for almost an entire hour, the waiter just stood by his side.

In the end Yan Nantian said:"Brother, I want you to accompany me. I want you to see me kill that treacherous bastard!"

It was afternoon now, and in the main street of Taiyuan there was a big banner with shining golden characters:A thousand Kilometre Fragrance

This shop was famous in Shanxi province. The spices and ingredients were indeed very fragrant.

Around dusk some ten workers were eating and the main street was quite busy now. All of a sudden a carriage came this way and the man pulling the carriage roared loudly telling people to make way. His roar was most loud and he stopped in front of the inn.

Those ten workers angrilly walked up and when they saw the tall man all of them felt numb and let him and take those jars of spices away and he put them into the coffin.

When he was about to leave he shouted:"After an hour or so you will be able to move again! I will pay double for the spices I took today in the near future."

Everyone was impressed by the powerful charisma and grandeur of this man, nobody would dare to stop him and the carriage.

It was afternoon and a melon field was emitting a sweet fragrance. A ordinary peasant woman was sitting in the shades. She was breastfeeding her baby and almost fell asleep when a soft breeze provided for some cooling.

In her sleepy state she felt that someone was looking at her breasts. A lot of young and naughty youngsters in the village had peeked at her bosom before. She was never really upset about it, she only had interest in her newborn baby.

But this time she felt that the stare was different and she saw that a tall man

was indeed looking at her bosom. She had never saw him before and looked rather sickly but still very grand, furthermore she notices he was holding a baby too.

The baby was crying very loud, she had just became a mother and was filled with maternal love. When she heard the crying she looked up and saw that the man's eyes were not filled with lust but with request.

She asked with a smile:"Isn't the mother of this child around?"

The man shook his head and said:"No."

She was quiet for a moment before saying:"He must be hungry."

The man nodded and said:"Yes, he is."

She looked at her own baby and suddenly smiled:"Give me your child, I will feed him. I've just eaten two chickens over the past few days, so I have plenty of milk. My little daughter cannot finish it all by herself."

The man looked very happy and handed her the baby and he thanked her.

She saw that the baby was very little and she knew he was only born a few days ago, when she saw the scar on his face she frowned:"You have to be careful when you're taking care of babies. The mother of this child should pay better attention to him, how could she leave the care of her son to a grown man?"

She shook her head.

The man said sadly:"The child's mother passed away."

She was a bit shocked and gently touched the baby's face and sighed sadly:"So young and already motherless. How sad!"

The man sighed deeply too and looked at the baby, his heart was filled with

sorrow but also love for this child.

This baby was born into a nightmare, he encountered horrible death and destruction on his very first day on this world. It is sad that he does not know that and on his face there is now a happy smile.

End of chapter 2

Chapter 4

Chapter 3 The Valley Of Evil

The water of the river He glittered in the radiant sun of the seventh month. When one arrives at the upper reaches of the river, the river branches off into two streams.

The Eastern stream is the famous Jade Dragon Hashen River, the water currents are very dangerous in these parts. If one follows this stream upwards one will enter the legendary birthplace of many heroes------namely the Kunlun mountain area.

Although it was Summer now and the sun has not set yet, but it felt like a chilly Autumn day in the Jade Dragon Pass. The wind was blowing fiercely, but even the strong wind could not scatter the thick fog.

Yan Nantian finally reached Jade Dragon Peak, he looked thin and pallid now and his horse was tired and weak. Even the carriage could not continue anymore when it reached a rugged mountain path.

Yan Nantian drove the carriage and used one hand to hold the baby, there was a strong overwhelming scent coming from the carriage. Quite nauseating. The baby was asleep, he seemed to be accustomed to the harshness at his young age.

Yan Nantian looked at the baby with love and affection, he smiled and said softly:"My good child, on your way you drank the milk from different women through the land, I think you're the only....."

All of a sudden he stopped talking and leapt into the air, at the same moment

he leapt up there was a series of sounds: Tak, tak, tak. Ten types of different secretive weapons hit the place where he just sat, if he was just a fraction too slow, all those projectiles would have hit him.

Yan Nantian made a turn in mid-air and used his left hand to force the carriage to stop and he himself had hid under the horse now. He was not afraid of himself getting injured but he was afraid that the baby would get harmed.

The leap, the turn, the stop of the carriage and the hiding were all conducted in one fluent move. As fast as light and as graceful as a dancing dragon, some of the ambushers could not help themselves and praised:"Excellent martial arts!"

Yan Nantian roared angrilly:"Who dares to ambush...."

Before he could finish the horse neighed loudly, Yan Nantian immediately came out and saw that the horse was injured from several sides by projectiles.

Yan Nantian did not even have time to think, he struck out with his iron palms crassshh, crasssh the yoke was broken into two and the horse ran off alone. Yan Nantian raised his fist and punched a hole into the carriage and used his left hand to gently put the baby into the carriage.

At this point another ten odd projectiles were headed for him, he leapt up again and the projectiles flew under his feet missing him barely. If his reaction was even a bit too slow not only he but also the baby would be killed, furthermore if he did not break the yoke in the nick of time the crazed horse would have pulled along the carriage in its' frantic state.

Now the horse had collapsed and Yan Nantian was still in mid-air, now seven, eight swords came towards him like shooting stars. All the swords came from different sides, from left to right ensnaring him.

Yan Nantian was totally entangled by his attackers' web of swords, however he still has power in him even in mid-air, he raised his arms and his body ascended another 2 metres or so. The swords passed him under his feet, a loud CLAAANNNGG could be heard. The seven, eight swords could not be retracted in time so they collided with each other, as soon as they hit they immediately fell

back and scattered around. Seven, eight persons each stood at a corner quite far apart from each other. In the fog, you could not see their faces clearly but at least four of them were Taoist priests.

Yan Nantian descended and landed on top of the carriage and as soon as he had landed he immediately launched an attack on a Taoist priest wearing a blue robe. He generated his ful internal power to his palms and did not hold back now, these people attacked without any reason and used the most lethal methods needless to say he was merciless too.

The beard and robe of the Taoist priest swayed by the powerful palm energy released from Yan Nantian, he could hardly stand straight and in a flux he raised his sword and counter-attacked.

His stance looked casually and simple, however he could raise his sword under the pressure of tremendous crashing stance which was highly impressive. This Taoist priest had to at least study the way of the sword for at least 20 to 30 years to able to do this.

He knew that this stance would be unable to harm his opponent but at least it was sufficient to defend himself, but before he could finish his stance his sword was gone. It had flown right into the hand of the adversary.

This Taoist priest was a remarkable martial artist and did not panick under such dire situation, he spinned his body around and escaped the palm attacks from Yan Nantian.

Yan Nantian exclaimed:"Good!"

During his praise he had advanced forward and used the sword to attack another adversary. Yan Nantian was proclaimed to be the peerless celestial sword, this attack was omnipotent. This stance looked like a thunderbolt crashing down, the man initially wanted to counter-attack but soon changed his mind and looked pale. He backed backwards and was afraid to even to block, but Yan Nantian's technique kept coming like a serie of waves. Seeing no escape the man gritted his teeth and decided to intercept.

Claaannnnggg, both swords were forged from the same oven but somehow Yan Nantian broke the sword of the adversary into two halves.

The man fell down and started to roll away, Yan Nantian roared and hacked at the man with incredible speed and power. This hack was suffice to say world-shaking.

Suddenly flashes of silver could be seen and another clang could be heard.

He saw three Taoist priests kneeling down with one knee and using their swords to form a cross to intercept Yan Nantian's attack saving that man from that lethal blow. That man had fainted now.

Yan Nantian stood there looking very fierce and sternly asked:"Are you The Three Eagles? Or Four Vultures?"

One of the Taoist priests said:"We're the Four Vultures, but how would you....."

Yan Nantian laughed sternly:"Only a few people in this world can intercept a blow of mine and the Seven Swords of Kunlun belong to that small selected few!"

That Taoist priest replied:"Indeed, in the entire world only master Yan Nantian can force the three of us to block that attack together."

Yan Nantian now stopped laughing and shouted:"But why would the Seven Swords of Kunlun ambush me? That is something I do not understand!"

That Taoist priest laughed wryly:"The four of us were here to prevent a man from entering the Valley of Evil, we never expected that master Yan would come here."

Yan Nantian asked:"So you mistook me for that man?"

That Taoist priest sighed:"Yes, if not we would never dream of attacking master Yan."

It was now that Yan Nantian retracted his sword, the three Taoist priests dropped their swords. They could not lift their ams anymore now.

Yan Nantian asked:"Who are you trying to stop?"

That Taoist priest replied:"Sima Yan."

Yan Nantian said with surprise:"That so-called intestines gutting sword Sima Yan?"

That Taoist priest said hatefully:"Yes, that fiend!"

Yan Nantian asked:"How do you know that rogue will pass here?"

The Taoist priest answered:"The Eight Righteous from Sichuan pursued him to this area, these three benefactors are the three from the eight righteous. This Yang Ping, Hai Changpo and Hai Jinpo....."

The Eight Righteous from Sichuan are famous martial artists in the realm, Yan Nantian turned around and looked at them. Three of them really looked very heroic and impressive, even if they were crawling up from the ground they did not look awkward.

The head of the eight righteous, Yang Ping had a so-called country character face and a exceedingly high nose making him look very outstanding.

He made a greeting fist gesture and said:"We have pursued that fiend to this point and we were afraid that he would enter the valley, so we asked the four reverends here to assist us and setting up an ambush for him.....Little did we expect to find master Yan here."

Hai Changpo added with a wry smile:"Although we saw that master Yan looked

nothing like him, but we knew that Sima Yan is well-versed in the art of disguise. And we utterly hate that fiend, so....."

Yan Nantian nodded and said:"No wonder you attacked so viciously. But when dealing with thugs like that, the more vicious the better."

The head of the four vultures, Cangyi Zi asked:"But why...why are you here, master Yan?"

Yan Nantian said:"I am on my way to the Valley of Evil."

The four swords of Kunlun and the three righteous from Sichuan were shocked and all exclaimed with surprise:"Master Yan is going to the Valley of Evil?"

Yan Nantian laughed:"I am going there not to hide from any enemy! I am going there to look for a certain person."

Cangyi Zi said:"But....but the Valley of Evil...."

Yan Nantian said sternly:"I don't care whether the Valley of Evil is a dragon's den or not, I will enter it anyway."

Cangyi Zi was most impressed and said:"Master Yan's heroic spirit is truly admirable, but the....the Valley of Evil is filled with evil monsters of the past and present. No one has even dared to set foot in that valley, master Yan do reconsider."

Yan Nantian's eyes were burning with anxiety and hate, he was looking into the thick fog and said earnestly:"If one can perform a few tasks which others cannot in this life, one can truly die without regrets!"

The four swords of Kunlun looked at each other and looked embarrassed.

Yang Ping said:"But, ...according to my knowledge four of the most evil ten monsters of the realm in the past 20 years are residing in that valley."

Hai Changpo said:"I think more than four, blood hands Du Sha, a concealed dagger within a smile, the laughing monk Ha Ha'er, neither male nor female Du Qiaoqiao, not eating the head Li Dazui....."

Yan Nantian frowned:"Li Dazui? Isn't he the thug that eats human flesh?"

Hai Changpo said:"Yes, indeed. When others called him [not eating the head], meaning he ate everything except the head. He laughed loudly when he heard this and said he even ate the head."

Yan Nantian said angrilly:"How is it possible that such a thug is even alive."

Hai Changpo said:"According to many people, this Li Dazui does have a rather noble sentiments. And both his literary and martial arts are quite distinguished. The only flaw he has is that he eats people."

Yan Nantian said angrilly:"Isn't that enough?"

Hai Changpo smiled wryly:"That being the case, but the chancellor of the Sanxiang Wulin the admirer of talents Tie Wushuang was somehow impressed by his talents and even arranged for him to marry his own beloved daughter. Hoping he would turn over a new leaf and his daughter would help and keep an eye on Li Dazui."

Yan Nantian sighed:"Tie Wushuang is really an admirer of talents."

Hai Changpo sighed tragically:"However Li Dazui did not take this chance to change and within a short period of three years he killed his wife and had eaten her."

Yan Nantian said with anger:"The bastard!"

Hai Changpo said:"Now old master Tie was furious and assembled his 18 pupils and vowed to kill Li Dazui to avenge his daughter. However Li Dazui was not a fool and had fled into the Valley of Evil."

Yang Ping added:"Old master Tie hated himself for not recognizing the bastard for what he is earlier and he did not want everyone to know that his daughter died this tragically so he said to the outside world that this daughter died of an illness. If we weren't that close to old master Tie, we would not know this too."

Yan Nantian said hatefully:"No wonder nobody knows about this in the realm.....but Tie Wushuang is considered a man who fears nothing. Why does he allow the killer of his daughter to reside in this valley?"

Hai Changpo said:"Master Tie was planning on entering the valley and was not afraid to die doing so. But his 18 disciples urged him not to do so and Madame Tie also begged her husband to reconsider."

Yan Nantian sighed:"After just losing her daughter she naturally does not want her husband to risk his life..... If men did not marry wouldn't that be a more sensible?"

Hai Jinpo said:"Besides these four the self proclaimed number one in the field of lightness martial arts is also in the Valley of Evil. He never fights anyone but just ambushes them when they least expect it------Yin Jiuyou."

Yan Nantian was somewhat surprised and said:"Half ghost, half human Yin Jiuyou is in the valley too? Wasn't he killed by the elders of Shaolin when he killed secular Shaolin disciple Li Dayuan?"

Hai Changpo said:"That is indeed what is said, but there is another story behind it. It is said that the elders trapped Yin Jiuyou in the pits of the netherworld, but he managed to escape. Because this would damage the reputation of Shaolin, so every Shaolin disciple kept this to themselves."

Yan Nantian sighed:"The once leading martial arts school of the realm is slowly degrading. I am afraid it is because the Shaolin disciples place too much emphasis on wordly matters like reputation and fame."

Cangyi Zit said sadly:"It is not easy to protect the reputation of a school."

He said this because Kunlun was gradually degrading too.

Yang Ping said:"Each and everyone of them is most difficult to deal with. Especially Du Qiaoqiao, this monster is most cunning and she has reached the highest level possible in the art of disguise. The closest person to you could be her in disguise. It is said that she entered the valley for other reasons and it was not to escape her enemies."

Hai Changpo said:"Yes, true. With her mastery in the art of disguise she did not have to flee into the Valley of Evil.....no one knows what her true appearances are."

Yan Nantian said:"I don't care what her reasons are for fleeing into the valley and I don't even care how good her disguises are.....I am going to enter the valley on my own, she can't harm me.....hahahaha. Unless she has the ability to disguise herself as an infant of only half a month old."

Yang Ping smiled happily:"Even if she had the ability to fly into the sky and drill through the ground she won't be able to stop master Yan.....but....."

Yan Nantian did not let him finish he made a fist and said:"The information you have given me is most useful. No matter what I have to enter the Valley of Evil.....I take my leave now."

All of them called out:"Master Yan....."

Yan Nantian did not look at them and pulled the carriage along with him and walked away, even with horse the carriage could not move this quickly.

All of them looked at each other and stayed quiet.

Cangyi Zi sighed deeply in the end:"I have long heard of Yan Nantian's exceptionally high martial arts, even to be unmatched in the realm. I was not totally convinced when I heard that, but now.....(*sigh).....(*sigh)."

Yang Ping was very impressed by Yan Nantian and said:"His impressive martial

arts are not enough to make people respect him, but his grandeur, courage and charisma has earned me deepest respects."

Hai Changpo watched as Yan Nantian's figure disappeared into the horizon said softly:"Let us hope he will come out of the valley alive to see us again....."

The roads here were even more difficult to manoeuvre, but Yan Nantian was not bothered by it and continued to walk ahead. It was like he had supernatural strength.

In the thick fog suddenly a lamp appeared.

It was a lantern skillfully placed there where the wind could not blow the candle out, it burnt there like a ghastly fire from hell.

Carved in the rocks there were the characters: Entering the valley is like ascending to heaven, this way please.

Yan Nantian angrilly said:"The audacious thugs, how dare they carve the way to the valley this boldly. Do they really think that no one good has the courage to enter?"

He was actually the first good man to have entered this valley.

The mountain area of Kunlun was a very dangerous place to walk about, but this road easily lead one into the valley.

He was now slowly descending a slope and did not have to use force to pull the carriage along now, in fact he could even sit back and let the carriage gently push him down.

The road was becoming more and more curved and it was difficult to even see beyong a few metres. But suddenly nothing obstructed his sight anymore, in fact afar he could see lights burning. Like stars showing him the way.

He knew that there was the Valley of Evil, even with a heart of steel he was feeling a bit anxious now. He was facing one of the most deadly and mysterious places in the entire realm. He walked over with big steps with no hesitation.

Everyone thought that the Valley of Evil must be a dark place, but the opposite was true. It was very bright, but it did not make the valley less mysterious and frightning. In fact it made look more dangerous, what kind of place is the Valley of Evil?

Yan Nantian felt that his heart was beating faster and faster, he was soon about to unravel one of the biggest secrets which every good man in Wulin wants to know.

Below another lantern there was a slab with another series of characters: Enter the valley, enter the valley.....never be a slave again.

After the slab the road became clear and straight, illuminated by lanterns. Yan Nantian knew that this road was perhaps one of the most dangerous roads in the world, every step is closer to death.

No walls, no gates, no watchtowers. It looked like an ordinary village and every house there was a light burning, it looked very tranquil and peaceful.

But in this seemingly tranquil and peaceful villlage there were uncountable traps and numerous murderers.

Yan Nantian was still pulling the carriage along he noticed that his hands were sweaty, he was in the valley of evil now at any time now dangerous killers could attack.

He could see houses on both his sides, all houses were constructed quite nicely. All the doors were shut and lights were burning, suddenly two men walked towards Yan Nantian.

Yan Nantian's heart skipped a beat, this could be the first of a series of bloody battles to come in this place, the two men wore expensive robes and casually

passed Yan Nantian without even looking at him.

Yan Nantian's eyes turned red, he did not even pay attention to the appearances of those two men. He passed more people as he continued, but none of them looked at Yan Nantian.

Yan Nantian was extremely surprised, he knew that everyone of these men he passed were evil villains who killed without blinking their eyes. He figured that they would attack him relentlesly, but the opposite was true. They seemed to be oblivious to him.

This mysterious place in Wulin was not much different from any other prosper peaceful village in the world.

Yan Nantian was confused and did not know what to do now, he has encountered numerous dangerous trials in his life but none were so strange and confusing as this one. He had entered many so-called dragon's dens, but none of those places were as tranquil and peaceful as the Valley of Evil.

From the carriage Yan Nantian heard the baby crying, he took a deep breath and composed himself. He saw that one door was open ahead and a fragrant aroma came from it. Without any hesitation he walked over.

He entered an elegant room with several tables and chairs, at the two tables a few men were sitting and drinking wine, chatting softly. This place was seeminly a wineshop, but it was more refined and elegant than any wineshop in the world.

Yan Nantian took the baby in his arm and entered the wineshop, he found himself a seat and sat down. It looked like a wineshop, the customers were dressed neatly and smiled to each other. They did not look like chased outcasts or hunted thugs, Yan Nantian was suprised to see this. However the most vile people in the world do not look like evil at all. If they looked threacherous, one would immediately be on their guards. How could they even do evil, but why are men unaware of this?

From behind a fat man with a pleasant smile walked up, he looked like a rich and friendly proprietor. Yan Nantian remained calm and stayed seated.

The fat man came up and smiled:"Sorry for the incovenience, brother."

Yan Nantian just said:"Hmm."

The fat man laughed:"Three years ago I heard that brother had made enemies with the Tang clan I thought you would come. Little would I have known that you would arrive only today."

Yan Nantian just said:"Hmm?"

Yan Nantian now knew he had mistaken him for the intestines gutting sword Sima Yan, he remained quiet.

The fat man waved his hand and a young girl with a sweet smile walked up, she wore a green dress and gave Yan Nantian a meaningful look. She said politely:"How are you, sir?"

Yan Nantian said:"(*Humph)...good!"

The fat man laughed:"Mr. Sima has come from afar and hasn't got the interest to chat with you. Prepare some warm wine for Mr. Sima and also prepare some rice soup for this little friend."

The young girl giggled:"What an adorable baby."

She had very lively eyes and looked at Yan Nantian one more time before gently going back.

Yan Nantian carefully examined the fat man and thought: Could he be the concealed dagger within a smile, the laughing monk Ha Ha'er? Just looking at his friendly smile and his consideration for the baby, it is hard to believe that he slaughtered his teacher's family in just one night. Just because his little martial arts sister called him a [fat pig].

Just about now the young girl returned with wine and a few dishes of food. It was very fragrant.

The fat man laughed:"My friend, you have travelled for a very long time. You must be hungry now, let us eat first and talk later."

Yan Nantian again simply responded:"Hmm."

Although Yan Nantian has more or less agreed to eat and drink, but he did not move his hands to pick up anything. He is here to kill and not to drink nor to eat.

The fat man laughed:"Everyone thinks we are suffering in the valley, but the opposite is true. With so many intelligent people gathered together here, how can we suffer? Not even the emperor could taste this delicious dishes and have this excellent wine. Do you know who prepared these dishes? You could never guess."

The fat man continued:"My friend, have you heard of Tian Chixing (the heaven eating the constellation) of the Beggars Association? Within one hour he poisoned the seven great elders of the Beggars Association....."

He smacked the table and laughed loudly:"That is really a true hero, a magnificent man! He is the one who prepared the dishes."

Yan Nantian was shocked but did not show it and casually said:"Oh."

The fat man laughed louder now:"Brother Sima is really an expert to our liking! Before sorting things out, you would not say anything. But we have considered you one of us even before you came here."

He picked up a pair of chopsticks and sampled every dish, he laughed:"Are you assured now, brother Sima?"

Yan Nantian thought: They think I am Sima Yan, this is a wonderful chance to find out where Jiang Qin is hiding. I will take action as soon as I have confirmed Jiang Qin's whereabouts. If I do not eat, they may become suspicious.

Furthermore they would not put poison in the food, since they think I am Sima Yan."

He thought about it and thought that it would hurt to eat and he picked up a pair of chopsticks and said:"Good." He started to eat and the food really tasted excellent and he finished all the dishes in no time because after he had eaten he could begin.

The fat man laughed:"How is the cooking of Tian Chixing?"

"Good."

"The rice soup for this little friend is almost ready."

"The sooner the better."

"After the little friend has eaten master Yan can attack."

Yan Nantian's face changed and said with surprise:"What....what did you say?"

The fat man laughed:"Master Yan is famous throughout the corners of the world and master Yan has an unique physique. Even if Ha Ha'er is blind I would still recognize master Yan. Hahahaha, I deliberately mistook you for Sima Yan. If not how would you eat these dishes with a special sleeping potion of Tian Chixing."

Yan Nantian roared:"You fiend!"

He kicked the table away.

Ha Ha'er dodged and stood three metres away from Yan Nantian now. He laughed:"Master Yan, I advise you not to use force. If not the potion will only work faster....hahahahahaha."

Yan Nantian did not feel anything strange and thought that Ha Ha'er was just

trying to confuse him. But secretly he took a deep breath as to generate his internal strength and noticed that he could not use his internal strength anymore.

He was angry and shocked, he leapt up and his iron palms striking out.

Ha Ha'er just stood there, not moving and just laughing. But before Yan Nantian reached him he had fallen down, he noticed that his limbs were becoming weak. All his strength left him, he could hear the loud and pleased laughter of Ha Ha'er and the crying sound of the baby.....the crying and laughing became distant.....gradually he could not hear a thing.

A light shone on Yan Nantian's face, he felt that the lamp kept spinning in front of him. He wanted to rub his eyes but he could not move. His head was hurting and his throat felt like it was on fire. He gritted his teeth and focussed, the lamp was not spinning.

Ha Ha'er laughed:"Good! Good! Master Yan has come by. Here are some friends who would like to see the peerless celestial sword's appearances."

Yan Nantian could vaguely see some figures standing in front of him, but the light was hurting his eyes and he could not see clearly.

Ha Ha'er laughed:"Does master Yan recognize these friends of mine? Let me introduce you to them, this is blood hands Du Sha."

A cold voice said:"20 years ago I met master Yan once. Unfortunately I had another matter on my hands and was unable to sample master Yan's martial arts."

The speaker was a tall and skinny man, he wore a long white robe and looked very pale. He practically looked like an icicle.

Yan Nantian tried to forget his headache and laughed arrogantly:"If I didn't see you being injured by the southern heaven hero Lu Zhongda and did not want to have that unfair advantage, you would not have lived till today."

Du Sha's face did not change and coldly said:"I have lived till today and will continue to live. But master Yan is about to die."

Ha Ha'er laughed:"But master Yan is able to laugh in the face of death, we do share some traits, master Yan. This is not eating the head Li Dazui. Have you heard of him before?"

A loud voice said:"I have long heard of master Yan's firm bones and strong tendons. I think your meat will taste very much like dried beef, one has to sample it slowly in order to appreciate it."

Ha Ha'er laughed:"Li Dazui, you always talk about your hobby. Here I am introducing you to master Yan, you should at least show some courtesy. Immediately you start with eating his flesh."

"I just said that master Yan's meat must taste wonderful. That is the best compliment I, Li Dazui, can give. What do you know, you all eat pork."

"Well, pigs are disgusting and smelly. Not as clean as human meat I suppose. I, Ha Ha'er, would like to taste master Yan's meat too. However I am afraid that his meat is a bit too tough for me."

Li Dazui said:"You're wrong there. Every type of meat is different and has its' own delicious characteristic. For example the meat of a Buddhist monk is different from the meat of a Buddhist nun.

A sweet voice asked:"Have you eaten the meat of monk before?"

Li Dazui said:"Ha! Of course, and lots of it too. The most famous one was the monk Tiejian of Mount Wutai. It took me three whole days to eat him.....eating the meat of famous people tastes better."

The sweet voice asked:"How many people have you actually eaten?"

"Can't remember, too many to count."

"Whose meat was most delicous?"

"When we're talking about the most tender meat.....that would be my late wife. Just thinking about her white, delicate flesh makes my mouth water."

Ha Ha'er laughed:"Enough of this, look at master Yan. He is furious."

"We cannot let master Yan get angry. When a man gets angry his meat becomes sour. This is something I've learnt from eating people all these years."

Ha Ha'er continued:"This is neither male nor female Du Qiaoqiao."

The sweet voice said:"I just served master Yan food and drinks earlier, he already knows me. No need for any further introduction."

Yan Nantian was shocked and thought: That young girl was neither male nor female? This monster has been infamous for the last two decades. It is amazing that she can disguise herself as a young girl of 16, 17 years old."

The hands of Du Sha and the cannibalism of Li Dazui were not enough to impress Yan Nantian, but the art of disguise of Du Qiaoqiao made Yan Nantian's face changed.

Suddenly another voice said:"Ha Ha'er enough talking already. Do you want him to get acquainted with everyone in the valley? Ask him what you want to know and send him to the netherworld to accompany me."

The voice sounded distant and yet close, the speaker (deliberately) crackled his voice. Sometimes one could hear him on the left but by the end of the sentence he was on the right. He sounded like someone who is very ill and is speaking weakly, his voice gave one the shivers.

Even Yan Nantian had goosebumps when he heard him speak and thought: This Yin Jiuyou is really something! Even when talking he sounds like a ghost.

Ha Ha'er laughed:"Old Yin is afraid to be alone, can't you wait a bit longer. Master Yan is about to join you."

Yin Jiuyou said:"I cannot wait anymore."

When he finished he put his hand on the back of Yan Nantian, his hand was as cold as ice and Yan Nantian shivered when he just gently touched him.

Li Dazui shouted:"Remove your hand old Yin! How can I eat his meat when it is touched by you!"

Yin Jiuyou laughed coldly:"You can kill him too, but just hurry up!"

Du Sha said:"Stop! I have something to ask him."

Du Qiaoqiao said:"Ask away, nobody is stopping you."

Du Sha asked:"Yan Nantian, are you here because of me?"

Yan Nantian said:"You're not worthy of my attention."

Du Sha was not angered and said coldly:"If I am not worthy who is?"

"Jiang Qin!"

"Jiang Qin? Who has heard of that name before?"

Ha Ha'er laughed:"Hahaha! The Valley of Evil doesn't have a worm with that name."

Yan Nantian gritted his teeth and said:"He may not be famous, but he is more evil than all of you combined. Hand him over and I will spare your lives!"

Ha Ha'er laughed loudly:"Excellent! Did you just hear master Yan? Master Yan

has said that he will spare our lives, let us thank him for that now."

Before he finished there was all kinds of different laughters, each was more horrible than the other.

Yan Nantian said earnestly:"All of you are amused is it?"

Du Qiaoqiao giggled:"We used 13 thick ropes to tie you down and brother Du Sha has sealed four of your main acupoints. You're supposed to beg for mercy and now you tell us that you will spare us our lives? I think it is hilarious!"

Yan Nantian grunted.

Du Qiaoqiao said:"Well, I might as well tell you that there is no Jiang Qin in this valley. You must have been deceived and that person wanted you to seek death here."

Ha Ha'er laughed:"The funny part is that you actually believed that person! Never thought that Yan Nantian is as naive as a child."

At this moment Yan Nantian roared:"The fiend!"

This roar sounded like a thunderbolt and everyone's ears were numb.

Du Qiaoqiao said with fear:"This fellow sounded awfully vital again! Has he managed to channel his sealed acupoints open again?"

Yan Nantian laughed arrogantly:"You're correct!"

While he was talking he stood up and put up his muscles and broke the ropes.

Yin Jiuyou yelled:"The corpse has been revived!"

Just after he finished he was already ten metres away, he has proclaimed

himself to be unmatched in the field of lightness martial arts. Therefore he fleeing ability was quite superior, however the others were less fortunate.

Bang, Ha Ha'er had knocked down the table and he rolled over the floor and was gone in a flash. He had escaped through a trapdoor.

Du Qiaoqiao screamed:"Ladies should not fight with men! I am taking off my clothes!"

She really took off her clothes and threw them at Yan Nantian, Yan Nantian used his palm to deflect the clothes and Du Qiaoqiao was gone too.

Li Dazui was the slowest of them all and he stood up and said with a laugh:"Good! Yan Nantian, let me test your martial arts!"

As soon as he was finished he quickly hid behind Du Sha and said:"But brother Du Sha's martial arts are better than mines. I would not dare to go first."

Although Yan Nantian stood up, but he had not fully accumulated his internal energy yet. If the five of them would work together and stand up against Yan Nantian, Yan Nantian would surely be killed. But he figured that this people would never work together to face danger, they were too selfish and cowardly. It was easy to share fortunes with these people, but it was impossible to ask them to face difficulties together.

All of them had fled away except Du Sha. Now Yan Nantian had fully recovered but he did not attack yet and just looked at Du Sha with his sharp eyes. After awhile he asked sternly:"Why didn't you flee?"

"I have never fled from battles in my life."

"You dare to stand up against me?"

"Indeed."

As soon as he said that he leapt up and dashed forward towards Yan Nantian, his red hands attacking non-stop.

Soul searching Blood hands!

No matter how the other stances were, it seemed most impressive now.

Yan Nantian laughed arrogantly:"Good!"

He raised his fists and aimed for the palms of Du Sha. Du Sha was pleased when he saw this, he had become famous for his lethal blood hands. He was wearing gloves that were dyed with poisonous blood, furthermore there were spikes on the gloves. When his opponent was even remotely injured by his gloves, the poison will take his enemy's life within just an hour.

Yan Nantian had aimed his fists directly at his palms, he was seeking his own death.

There was a load roar and a cry of surprise, followed by a sound of cracckkk.

Yan Nantian had aimed his fists towards the palms of Du Sha, but suddenly he changed his stances during a normally impossible situation. Du Sha dashed forward only to see that his opponent had shifted position, suddenly he felt extreme pain coming from his wrists. Yan Nantian had grabbed his wrists and the cracking sound was when Yan Nantian had broken off his right hand.

Yan Nantiand did not allow him to fall down and grabbed him by his robe and shouted:"Is there a Jiang Qin in this valley or not!"

Du Sha was in excruxiating pain but shouted back:"No, there is not!"

"Where is the child!"

"I don't know! Kill me!"

"I admire your courage, I'll spare you."

After saying that he tossed Du Sha aside.

Du Sha was really a martial arts expert, he made a somersault in the air and landed firmly on the ground with both his feet. His white robe was drenched with his own blood and he was holding his broken hand in his left hand.

He yelled at Yan Nantian:"Although you spared me, but I won't show any mercy later on!"

Yan Nantian laughed:"Yan Nantian doesn't need mercy from others!"

Du Sha said hatefully:"Good!" And he turned around and walked away.

Yan Nantian now roared loudly:"Return the child to me, or else I will destroy this valley!"

His roar travelled loud and far, reaching the sky even. But there was no response. Yan Nantian was furious and kicked the table into pieces and hit a hole into the wall.

As he walked he hit everything in his path, tables, chairs, walls, doors and windows.....everything was smashed into bits by his fists and kicks. What once was a refined and elegant room was now a wreck. But still no one had showed himself, it was like everyone was dead in the Valley of Evil.

Yan Nantian roared:"Let's see how long you can hide yourselves!"

He left this house and advanced forward to the next house and kicked down the door. Two men were inside and when they saw his fierce look they wanted to run.

Yan Nantian had caught up with them with only one step and he picked up one man by his back. This person had quite good martial arts too, but somehow he

could not even move in the hands of Yan Nantian. Yan Nantian roared and tossed him to the wall, the man hit his head on the wall and blood and brains splattered against the white wall.

The other man was too shocked to move and sat down in a daze, Yan Nantian lifted him up too.

Suddenly the man said loudly:"Wait, I have something to say!"

Yan Nantian thought he would tell him where the baby was.

But the man asked:"There are no grudges between us, why do you want to kill me?"

"Everyone in the Valley of Evil are wicked and vile fiends and deserve to die!"

"True! I, Wan Chunliu, was a bad man years ago. But I have turned over a new leaf, what right do you have to kill me!"

Yan Nantian was stunned by his words and said softly:"Why do I have to kill innocent people? Why can't I give people a chance to start over? It is true that everyone in here has blood on his hands, but there are bound to be a few who have turned over a new leaf."

He released Wan Chunliu and said loudly:"Go!"

The man crawled up and staggered out of the house.

Yan Nantian sighed:"Why kill the innocent! Yan Nantian, Yan Nantian! Your sworn brother only has one son, you have to compose yourself and think of a plan to save him. You cannot allow your temper to get hold of you, even if you killed everyone here....."

When he thought about this, he had controlled his temper and discovered something rather strange.

The house he was in was very big and it was filled with all types and kinds of herbal weeds, there were several big furnaces and big bronze pots were on it. A strong herbal fragrance came out of those bronze pots.

Yan Nantian had roamed the realm for a very long time and has learnt some medicine too. In his free time he would collect herbal weeds too and compose new medicine.

But Yan Nantian only recognized only one third of the herbs here.

He was shocked and thought: That Wan Chunliu's knowledge in medicine is amazing! It is good that I did not kill him, if he didn't change why would he only collect medicinal herbs and compose herbal medicine.

The smoke emitted from the pots fogged up the house, suddenly a man walked towards the house. He was tall and wore a black robe, he moved more agile than a cat. His movements were lighten than a cat, his eyes were more sneaky and vile than a cat.

Yan Nantian stayed calm and awaited him. When he entered he came up to Yan Nantian with a small sneaky smile.

He raised his hands and greeted:"My respects, master Yan."

Yan Nantian just grunted.

The man said:"I am Sima Yan, the intestines gutting sword."

"You? So you're already here."

"I was here even before master Yan arrived. Even I have heard what master Yan did, so I take it you will know what my intentions are?"

Yan Nantian carefully observed for some time and sternly said:"Aren't you

afraid that I will kill you? What guarantee do you have?"

"When two countries are at war, one does not kill the emissary."

Yan Nantian frowned:"Whose emissary are you?"

"I came here with the order to ask you one question, master Yan."

Yan Nantian said immediately:"Is it about the baby?"

"Yes."

Yan Nantian instantly grabbed him and shouted:"Where is he?"

Sima Yan did not answer and just smiled at Yan Nantian's hands, Yan Nantian gritted his teeth and let go of him.

Sima Yan smiled now:"Master Yan, we would like to ask you, if we would return you the child what will you do?"

Yan Nantian was stunned and said:"This...."

"Will master Yan leave at once and never come back?"

"Allright for the sake of the baby, I agree."

"Your word?"

"Yan Nantian never goes back on his words!"

"Splendid! Master Yan, please follow me."

Sima Yan lead the way, both of them walked through the peaceful and tranquil

Valley of Evil. Sima Yan lead Yan Nantian to a small house, the door was not closed and there was a light burning inside.

Sima Yan said:"The child is inside, we just hope master Yan will leave with the baby. Your carriage has been repaired and placed outside the valley."

Without hearing him out Yan Nantian had instantly entered the house.

The baby was lying on the table and Yan Nantian went over to pick him up and said sadly:"My poor child!"

Before he finished he threw the baby on the floor and yelled:"The fiends!"

It was not the baby but a wooden doll. When he found out it was too late, from all different sides secret, lethal projectiles were fired at him.

The house was filled with whoosing sounds, the peole who fired were all experts and hundreds of secretive weapons flew towards Yan Nantian. With the soul purpose of killing him.

They figured that there was no escape possible for Yan Nantian.

But Yan Nantian whistled loudly and his body shot up, there was a clattering sounds and he had dashed through the roof.

From all corners out of the house there were no sounds of confusion and panick. About ten people fled in different directions, again Yan Nantian whistled loudly and descended down like a startled and angered dragon.

Series of shrieking cries could be heard, one man was flung across the house and landed on the back, another was thrown on the street, a third one was chucked through the roof.

All three of them had their skulls smashed, brains blood splattered around. The rest still managed to get away from Yan Nantian's fury.

Yan Nantian stood in the middle of the street and shouted angrilly:"A mere ambush like that cannot take my life! If you want my life come out and claim it!"

His voice travelled far but there was no response only his echo.

Yan Nantian walked manly through the valley cursing but nobody came out to face him. Singlehandedly Yan Nantian walked through the Valley of Evil, and all the fiends who lived here hid themselves. The heroic spirit and sentiments of Yan Nantian was awesome. But he was not feeling proud, in fact he was feeling worried, angry and sad. With every step his spirit darkened.

All the lights in the valley were out now, only the stars and the moon provided for some light.

Suddenly from nowhere a flash of light was to be seen, a sabre hacked at Yan Nantian.

Judging from that slash the attacker was an expert, he calculated that he would be able to split Yan Nantian's head into two.

This attack was fierce and accurate, he thought Yan Nantian could not escape from this hack. But all of a sudden Yan Nantian was gone but he could not retract his attack and he hacked at the ground causing sparks.

Yan Nantian who was now standing next to him grabbed his wrist and sternly shouted:"Come out!"

But the man chopped off his own right arm and immediately turned around to run away. He was most tough and did not even grunt.

Yan Nantian was surprised, angry and anxious.

He threw away the arm and picked up the sabre and hacked open a door. He was furious, mad.....but there was nobody in that house. He was mad, but there was nothing else he could do.

His eyes were red and shouted:"Good! I would like to see how long you're going to hide."

He placed a chair in the middle of the street and sat there, the moon shone on his face. His face and body was covered in blood.

If the valley really consisted of evil demons, then Yan Nantian was the fierce slayer of demons.

A voice laughed:"What is so special about this baby! Here take it!"

Yan Nantian immediately leapt towards the sound, the speaker throw something towards Yan Nantian. It looked like the infant and he immediately caught it.

As soon as he touched "it," he threw it back and shouted:"You can have it back, you foul thugs!"

As he said it he used his internal power to push the package away and when it hit the wall, it exploded. It was a bomb. If Yan Nantian did not have fast reflexes, he would have been blasted into pieces. He was not concerned about his own life, he was worried about the baby? He broke out in a cold sweat.

Vicious attacks, evil ambushes.....the entire valley was filled with it. Even a great hero will find death if he is just a bit careless.

Yan Nantian had escaped several ambushes now, but how many trials can he withstand. His strength is bound to end up once. Can he really keep resisting them without sleeping, eating?

Suddenly he thought: They are using the darkness to try and attack me. Why not use the darkness to my advantage and try to find them?

When he thought of this, Yan Nantian refound his spirit and in a flash he disappeared into the night. Fight fire with fire, although he could not find the

baby right away. But those ruffians could not ambush him either.

Nobody could see Yan Nantian now, not even animals with exceptional senses could detect him. With a foe like Yan Nantian, it is not strange that all these rogues have gone into hiding here.

Every house Yan Nantian searched was empty.

And there were many houses in the valley, the entire valley seemed to be abandoned.

After a long time, Yan Nantian heard something talking sounds, Yan Nantian decided to go in that direction. And without a sound he advanced towards the talking.

A voice said:"Little Du, you really keep amazing me. You managed to get that little child to sleep."

Although the speaker was not laughing but it was evident it was Ha Ha'er.

Another person said:"Fortunately we have this child as hostage, if not...."

Suddenly Du Qiaoqiao shouted:"Li Dazui, what are you doing?"

Li Dazui laughes softly:"The flesh of the dead woman here reminds me of my late wife."

Du Qiaoqiao said:"Judging by the bodies, they have been dead for some time now."

Li Dazui said:"If they're well preserved, they're still edible."

"Allright, go ahead. She was the sister-in-law of Yan Nantian. After you've eaten her, you have more or less avenged brother Du Sha."

Yan Nantian was fuming when he heard this and could not control his temper anymore. With one load roar he kicked down the door and stormed in.

There were sounds of shrieking and everyone fled. Li Dazui yelled:"Here you can eat them!" And he threw the coffins at him, the bodies fell on the floor.

In the dark he could hear Ha Ha'er:"Good! Yan Nantian, you managed to find us! But don't forget the infant is in our hands! If you give chase, (*humph, humph). Hahahahaha"

Yan Nantian wanted to storm towards the sound but when he heard what he said, he stopped.

Because he could not control his temper again, he foiled everything again.

The moon lit up the house and the mother of the baby was lying on the ground. Her face was white and swollen, her hair chaotic. She looked very eerie and tragic.

Yan Nantian said sadly:"Brother.....brother.....I have failed you. I.....I could not protect your son and even your bodies....I.....I...."

His voice changed and he could not continue. He picked up the coffin and carefully picked up the bodies and wanted to place them in the coffins again.

He had tears in his eyes, he could not bare to see his sister-in-law like this and he closed his eyes.

He just said softly:"I hope you can rest in peace....."

It was night, cold boundless darkness and a body of once a beautiful woman.

At this point the corpse moved in Yan Nantian's arms.

Tak, tak, tak, tak, four times the body hit Yan Nantian's body. The arms and

feet of the corpse hit the acupoints on Yan Nantian's body.

Even a great hero like Yan Nantian with unsurpassed martial arts and matchless intelligence was not prepared for this.

Before he could speak, his main acupoint on his shoulder was sealed, then his acupoints in his armpit, chest and stomache were all sealed.

He had fallen, the great hero had finally fallen.

The corpse stood up and said:"Yan Nantian, know you how powerful I am."

While she was laughing she rubbed her face a few times. The moon illuminated her face, it was Du Qiaoqiao.

The lights were lit again and Sima Yan, Ha Ha'er, Li Dazui and Yin Jiuyou came in. Their faces resembled that of goblins and demons now in the light.

Ha Ha'er laughed loudly:"Yan Nantian, did you really think you found us? We deliberately lured you over into our trap! Hahahaha, you fell right into it."

Li Dazui laughed strangely:"Yan Nantian, did you really think we were afraid of you? Hahaha, we knew you would not make it out of here alive, that is why we didn't bother fighting you."

They all spoke through each other and laughed through each other.

Yan Nantian sighed and closed his eyes, he knew he would not survive this.

Yin Jiuyou said:"What are we waiting for? Do you want him to have another chance to escape?"

Du Qiaoqiao said loudly:"Wait! I did the most work, I should be the one to kill him."

Yin Jiuyou said coldly:"If you listened to me in the first place, he would have been dead for a long time. There wouldn't be so much effort in capturing him."

Li Dazui said:"Stop, you don't know how to kill someone properly. If you kill someone wrong, his meat will go sour. Then it won't be edible anymore. Let me do it."

All of them were argueing who could have the honour of killing the peerless celestial sword, the number one swordsman of the world. The honour would be magnificent.

end of chapter 3

Chapter 5

Chapter 4 The Spared Little Fish

Ha Ha'er looked at the fallen body of Yan Nantian and laughed:"Stop this argueing! I have a good solution."

Du Qiaoqiao asked:"What is this solution of yours?"

Ha Ha'er laughed:"Hahaha, this idea of mine will prevent us from quarelling and it will be quite amusing."

Yin Jiuyou said:"Well, tell us!"

Ha Ha'er laughed:"If we killed master Yan with one blow, it will be a waste. We should treat master Yan to the joys of torment before letting him die. I mean we as friends of master Yan, we owe him such a treatment."

Du Qiaoqiao giggled:"A wonderful idea."

Ha Ha'er laughed:"So, we all take turns to test our abilities on master Yan. The most vicious one will be the winner, but whoever kills master Yan will be punished."

Yin Jiuyou started to laugh while Ha Ha'er was explaining:"Marvellous! A great idea! I want him to sample my Sinister Wind And Soul Searching Hands, I guarantee that he will remember the pain even after his reincarnation."

Du Qiaoqiao said:"My Dazzling Beauty Skill is not inferior to your hands."

Li Dazui loudly called out:"My Bone Scraping Sabre techniques are not inferior to your skills either!"

Du Qiaoqiao laughed:"And we mustn't forget about brother Du Sha, his Heart Piercing Blood Hands and our brother Ha Ha'er here are keen to have a go too. Ha Ha'er's Brain Cleansing Technique must have improved by a lot. Furthermore master Yan will be most disappointed if he didn't sample those two skills either."

Ha Ha'er laughed:"Allright, who will start?"

Du Qiaoqiao said:"Since it is your idea, you may have the honours."

Ha Ha'er laughed happily:"Very well!" He raised his palm and gently touched the head of Yan Nantian.

Two hours later, it was early in the morning. The sky was dark and there was a cold wind blowing outside.

The once vigorous, powerful Yan Nantian was now tortured beyond recognition, anyone with a heart would not bare to see him in this state.

Ha Ha'er laughed:"I have attacked six times by now, it is brother Li's turn."

Li Dazui said:"No I won't lay a finger on him now."

Ha Ha'er laughed:"If you don't, that means you have lost."

Li Dazui angrilly said:"He's dead for the most part, a child could kill him with one hand. Why do you want me to strike him?"

Yin Jiuyou said coldly:"Not necessarily."

Li Dazui asked:"Do you have a manner in preserving his life but yet inflicting pain on him."

Yin Jiuyou said coldly:"Most easy."

Li Dazui said:"Well, by all means."

Yin Jiuyou said:"When it is my turn I will show it to you."

Li Dazui said angrilly:"You know he won't make it to your turn! You....."

Ha Ha'er laughed:"Not use in quarelling now, let us ask physician Wan to examine him. He will know whether Yan Nantian can last another few rounds or not."

Yin Jiuyou coldly sneered:"It is not difficult to make a diagnosis on Yan Nantian."

Li Dazui said:"I will look for him."

At this moment he had called Wan Chunliu over, Wan Chunliu was a short and skinny man with sharp eyes. His face never revealed a trace of emotion.

Li Dazui must have told him what they wanted him to do, when he entered he just nodded lightly and went over to examine Yan Nantian. After one hour he had examined Yan Nantian from top to toe, but he did not touch him.

Li Dazui impatiently asked:"Well, how is he?"

Wan Chunliu said:"All his main acupoints, tendons, veins and arteries are destroyed. It is amazing that he is still alive."

Li Dazui asked Yin Jiuyou with a smile:"Well, what do you think?"

Yin Jiuyou said:"I think you're wrong."

Wan Chunliu said:"Although my martial arts are not as good as yours, but I

have a lot of confidence in my medical knowledge."

Yin Jiuyou scoffed:"Confidence?!? If it wasn't for your superb knowledge in medicine, how was is it possible that within one night 97 people died in the city of Kaifeng? Who is responsible for their deaths? Have you forgotten?"

Wan Chunliu said coldly:"Although I killed many people in my past, but I have saved a lot of lives too in these years. I remember when you came to this valley, I was already here. And if I wasn't present you would not be alive now."

Yin Jiuyou was fuming with anger, but he could not retort this. When he fled into the valley he was heavily injured and his life was hanging on a thread at that time, it was Wan Chunliu who saved him. The Valley of Evil needed and still needs Wan Chunliu without any doubt.

Ha Ha'er laughed:"Well, I believe we have absolute faith in the expert opinion of physician Wan. If he says so, I can conclude that none of us have lost. Let us all kill Yan Nantian together."

Wan Chunliu said earnestly:"Wait, I would like to ask you to spare him."

Yin Jiuyou said angrilly:"You....you want to save him?"

Wan Chunliu stayed calm and said:"With such heavy injuries and still living is most peculiar. I have never seen this before in my life, he is useless to you but I do have some usage for him."

Li Dazui asked:"You have use for him? How? Do you want to eat him too?"

Wan Chunliu said:"He has been wounded at 30 different places on his body, I want to test my herbal medicines on him. If I succeed all of you can benefit from my findings."

Yin Jiuyou scoffed:"Even if there are any findings, the first one to benefit from it will be Yan Nantian. After he's been healed, while you rescue us from his wrath?"

Wan Chunliu said calmly:"Even if he won't die, he will remain an invalid both phsycically and mentally. You can take his life at any time, why the haste now."

Yin Jiuyou grunted and stayed silent, Sima Yan had not said a word and was just looking at Ha Ha'er. Ha Ha'er was looking at Du Qiaoqiao.

She said:"Well, whatever physician Wan wants....."

Li Dazui loudly interrupted:"I don't agree! He is supposed to be my meal....I....."

Ha Ha'er laughed:"There are enough corpses in the valley now, still fresh. You can have those, why do you insist on eating Yan Nantian."

Li Dazui angrilly said:"I said it before, the meat of a dignitary tastes differently. Ten of those cannot even match one ounce of Yan Nantian. Whoever wants to claim Yan Nantian will have to go through me first."

Ha Ha'er shrugged and looked at Du Qiaoqiao, she shrugged too and looked at Wan Chunliu, she giggled:"I have tried, do not blame me."

Wan Chunliu coldly said:"The 30 wounds on this man's body could at least produce 30 new types of herbal medicine. Of those 30 new medicine one could save your lives someday."

Sima Yan suddenly said:"I think our lives have a bigger priority than the dishes of brother Li."

Li Dazui shouted:"Who do you think you are giving opinions here! Shut up!"

Sima Yan was not angered and smiled:"In my humble opinion, I think the chances of brother Li actually using those new medicine in the future is very big."

Du Qiaoqiao giggled:"I think you're right."

Li Dazui wanted to protest again but he now saw the cold stares everyone was giving him. No one in the world could become angry when one saw those cold looks.

He sighed deeply and smiled wryly:"The cooked goose has flown off again."

Du Qiaoqiao laughed:"Physician Wan, what are you waiting for? Yan Nantian is yours."

Wan Chunliu did not look happy or pleased, he just casually said:"Thank you." He took out a bottle of pills from his robe and put a few pills in the mouth of Yan Nantian.

Suddenly all of them heard the crying of a baby.

Li Dazui glared up and said:"Of course, there is the baby."

Ha Ha'er looked at Yin Jiuyou and asked:"And?"

Yin Jiuyou said:"Kill it."

Ha Ha'er laughed:"Brother Li must be waiting for his meal now."

Li Dazui said with a big smile:"The meat of a child will taste wonderful too, but there isn't too much of it unfortunately."

He walked over with his big smile, suddenly Du Qiaoqiao said:"Wait a minute!"

Li Dazui frowned and said:"What?"

Du Qiaoqiao said:"You can't kill this child!"

Li Dazui said angrilly:"You b-i-t-c-h! Why can't I eat this brat?"

Ha Ha'er laughed:"This time little Qiao is at wrong. This child will grow up to be a threat when we let him alive. Why not give him to brother Li and be done with it."

Du Qiaoqiao did not respond to him but asked:"I would like to ask everyone here a question. We are all evil people, but who is the most evil one in this world."

Li Dazui angrilly said:"What kind of question is that! Ridiculous! What are you up to?"

Du Qiaoqiao smiled:"I am just asking and you might as well just answer me. I can guarantee that the child will not lose an ounce of meat after you've answered."

Li Dazui grunted and angrilly sat in a corner.

Ha Ha'er laughed loudly:"Well, the most evil one must be little Du."

Du Qiaoqiao smiled:"Thanks for the compliment, but...."

Li Dazui angrilly shouted:"What! What does she know! The most evil fiend in the world?!? Just because she knows a few idiotic tricks? She doesn't even have the courage to eat human flesh."

Ha Ha'er laughed:"Since you put it that way, brother Li must be the most evil one."

Du Qiaoqiao giggled:"Well, I agree with him that I am not the most evil one. Fair is fair brother Li isn't either. I mean I once knew a stableboy who could eat a couple kilos of meat too."

Li Dazui asked:"In your opinion who is?"

Ha Ha'er laughed:"I know Yin Jiuyou."

Du Qiaoqiao said:"Well, old Yin is vicious, cruel and ruthless. However you can see right away that Yin Jiuyou is a bad man, so everyone will be on his guard when they see him."

Ha Ha'er said:"So he isn't the most evil one either."

Du Qiaoqiao giggled:"Unless he learns the concealed dagger within a smile techniques. Smiling and calling one brother while reaching for your weapon....."

Ha Ha'er laughed:"Hahahaha, concealed dagger within a smile.....Little Du is talking about me."

Du Qiaoqiao smiled:"Right! Brother Ha Ha has the face of a virtuous monk and nobody will know he is an evil man. His victims won't even know what hit them."

Ha Ha'er laughed and clapped:"Hahaha, wonderful! If I am the most evil man on the world that would be nice. But when I see brother Du Sha I am most afraid, he is much more evil than I."

Yin Jiuyou coldly interrupted:"The only thing he is capable of is killing. What else is he good at?"

Du Qiaoqiao said with a smile:"Exactly. That is why we are standing here, while brother Du Sha is injured. If he was the most evil person around we would be the injured ones."

Ha Ha'er looked at Sima Yan now and said:"Right, how can we forget brother Sima. Hahaha! Who hasn't heard of the venomous intestines gutting sword, slicing people like slicing garlic."

Sima Yan smiled:"Although I have acquired a small, insignificant infamous name in the realm, however how can I compare to the legendary ten great malavolents. I pale in your comparison."

Du Qiaoqiao said:"Right, how about the remaining five malavolents?"

Sima Yan smiled:"In my humble opinion the remaining five are not much better than you. For example the mad lion Tie Zhan should not really be listen amongst the ten great malavolents."

Du Qiaoqiao said:"The mad lion really doesn't hold back when he is insane, he will even fight his own son if he's gone. But only a few have died at his hands and he isn't always mad."

Ha Ha'er laughed:"If the mad lion isn't suitable, how about the lethal enchantress Xiao Mimi. I think the famous filial son would sell his mother to be close to Xiao Mimi."

Du Qiaoqiao said:"Her mesmerizing skills are awesome but truly enchanted by her are only young lads of 17, 18, 20 year old. If she meets up with old Li Dazui here, he will eat her alive."

Li Dazui coldly said:"Of course neither male nor female will not fall for her tricks either."

Ha Ha'er anxiously asked:"Well, it isn't me or you. Who is the most evil one in the world? Don't tell me it is some faithfull old monk in a Buddhist temple."

Du Qiaoqiao said:"All of us are about the same level when it comes to being evil, ruthless, vicious. None of us is more evil than the other."

Li Dazui said in an annoyed tone:"So all this talk was a waste of our time!"

Du Qiaoqiao ignored him and continued:"Although the most evil person has not been created yet, but soon he will be."

When she said this everyone was very curious and asked simultaneously:"Who?"

Du Qiaoqiao blinked her eyes and said:"This crying baby."

Everyone was stunned when they heard her.

The first one to break out in laughter was Li Dazui, he laughed loudly:"You say that he is the most evil person in the world? Hahahaha....."

Du Qiaoqiao ignored him and continued:"This child doesn't understand a thing now, we will teach and tell him everything. He will listen to our every word, if we tell him that crows are white he won't say that is not true."

Li Dazui said:"Rubbish again!"

Du Qiaoqiao said:"He will be raised by us, he will listen to us. Everything he hears and sees will be our words and actions, what will he grow out to be when he is older?"

Li Dazui could not help himself but say:"A true demon."

Du Qiaoqiao laughed:"Not any demon, the world's most evil demon. Think about it, if he can learn every dirty trick of everyone in this valley nobody can be more evil, vicious, ruthless than he is."

Ha Ha'er laughed:"Even real demons would run away from him."

"Right. If real demons would fear him, imagine when he will enter the realm of martial arts."

Ha Ha'er clapped his hands and laughed:"The entire wulin will be in turmoil at that time."

Du Qiaoqiao said:"Exactly! We're forced into this valley and we can't vent our anger on Wulin. This child is a gift, he will avenge us."

At this point Yin Jiuyou had a smile on his face and said:"A good plan."

Ha Ha'er laughed very loud and kept clapping his hands:"Hahaha, only little Du

can think of such a wonderful idea."

Li Dazui bit his lip and looked pensive, suddenly he said:"This idea is not good enough."

Du Qiaoqiao asked:"Why is it not good enough?"

Li Dazui said:"Well, no doubt he will become evil. But he won't look strange, I suggest we chop off one of his legs. So he won't be normal and will take out his frustration on the world."

Ha Ha'er said:"Hmmm....sounds logical."

Du Qiaoqiao giggled:"Don't listen to him, this Li Dazui just wants to taste the meat of this child here. Since he can't have the entire baby, he wants to settle for just a leg."

Li Dazui jumped up and cursed:"Damn you! You filthy androgynous b-i-t-c-h! I have eaten almost everything in my life, but I haven't tasted the meat of androgynous s-l-u-t-. One of these days I will deep-fry one part of you and steam the other part."

"You want to eat me? Aren't you afraid you will die of poison?"

From then on there was a child in the Valley of Evil, everyone calls him Xiao Yu'er; the little spared fish in the net. Gradually Xiao Yu'er grew up, the closest people to him were uncle Du Sha, uncle Ha Ha'er (or better known as the laughing uncle), uncle Yin Jiuyou, uncle Li Dazui, uncle Wan Chunliu and another uncle-----no actually an aunt, auntie Du.

Xiao Yu'er grew up with these uncles and aunt, one month he woud live with uncle Du, the second month with uncle Li and so on.

The strictest one was uncle Du. Uncle Du only had one hand and never smiled, whenever Xiao Yu'er's progress in martial arts was a bit too slow he would spank Xiao Yu'er. In the beginning Xiao Yu'er would often be spanked but later on the

chances of being hit were getting slimmer and slimmer.

Xiao Yu'er had a wonderful time with laughing uncle Ha Ha'er, he loved to laugh and he demanded that Xiao Yu'er would laugh with him. But the awful part is that he had to laugh even when his buttocks were hurting a lot too.

Xiao Yu'er was most terrified when he spent time with uncle Yin. This uncle Yin sort of emit a cold air from his body even in the Summer. Xiao Yu'er would tremble just sitting next to him, the jaws of Xiao Yu'er would hurt when he spent a month with uncle Ha Ha. With uncle Yin he could rest his jaws for awhile, nobody could laugh in the presence of uncle Yin.

Xiao Yu'er had a horrible time with uncle Li, he would also sniff his body making him very uncomfortable. But his most peculiar time would be with auntie Du. Auntie Du would sometimes suddenly turn into a man, he wasn't sure whether auntie Du was actually an aunt or an uncle.

The most special time would be with uncle Wan. Uncle Wan never smiled either but he looked friendlier than uncle Du. And his voice was much nicer too. He would always feed herbal medicines too Xiao Yu'er and made him bathe in medicinal herbal baths, sometimes Xiao Yu'er could not stand it.

In the house of uncle Wan was another uncle. This uncle medicine cabinet would only sit there and eat medicine and nothing else. So Xiao Yu'er called him a medicine cabinet, like a medicine cabinet it just stores all kinds of herbal drugs. Even more than Xiao Yu'er.

Xiao Yu'er felt sorry for uncle medicine cabinet, because he knew the sorrows of only eating those herbal medicine. But the strange thing was that this uncle would never speak, nor move. Furthermore his eyes were always closed.

Besides them there were a lot of other uncles, one uncle made very nice figurines from clay. Xiao Yu'er was very fond of him, but suddenly he was gone one day.

Xiao Yu'er looked for him everywhere and asked a lot of other people but nobody knew where he went. So he asked auntie Du, she pointed at the

stomache of Li Dazui and said:"He is in the tummy of uncle Li now."

"How can a grown man hide in the stomach of uncle Li?"

Xiao Yu'er did not understand.

However uncle Li went missing to once.

At a certain day he yelled loudly:"I can't stand it here anymore!"

And then he was gone.

After half a month he came back and he was covered in wounds, he almost died.

Auntie Du even laughed at him:"I told you not to leave the valley. Now do you believe me why? If we stay in the valley nobody can harm us, because no one dares to set foot in the valley. But if we go out, we will become meek sheep in the hands of butchers."

When Xiao Yu'er was not even five years old yet, he was taken to Du Sha and was given a small dagger and there was also a dog in the room.

Xiao Yu'er was surprised and asked:"Where....where is the knife for?"

Du Sha answered:"The knife can be used to kill people, but it can also be used to kill dogs."

Xiao Yu'er added:"It can also be used to chop meat and vedgetables, right?"

Du Sha said coldly:"This is not a kitchen knife."

Xiao Yu'er said:"I don't want this knife, I want a kitchen....."

Du Sha interrupted:"Stop talking and kill that dog."

Xiao Yu'er said:"If the dog is naughty just kick it, why should we kill it?"

Du Sha said angrilly:"I told you to kill it!"

Xiao Yu'er was about to break out in tears and said:"I.....don't.....want...."

Du Sha said:"You don't want to kil it? Good!"

He walked out of the room and closed the door.

Xiao Yu'er shouted:"Let me out! Uncle Du, let me out! I want to go out....."

Du Sha said from behind the door:"Kill the dog first!"

Xiao Yu'er said:"I can't kill it, I am no match for the dog."

Du Sha said:"If you can't kill it, let the dog eat you alive."

Xiao Yu'er cried and yelled, he cried so long that his eyes were swollen and his voice was hoarse now from shouting. But Du Sha did not open the door and Xiao Yu'er stopped crying and shouting.

If there is nobody around, children will often stop crying. It is as simple as that, however not many parents are aware of this little fact.

Xiao Yu'er looked at the dog and the dog was looking at him. It was not a very big dog, but it looked quite mean and Xiao Yu'er was afraid of it.

He was holding the knife and sat there. It was after a very long time he stomach started to growl, the dog started to bark too. Xiao Yu'er remembered now that he had not eaten yet.

Xiao Yu'er said to the dog:"Little dog, don't bark anymore I haven't eaten too."

The dog barked louder and his red tongue was licking Xiao Yu'er, Xiao Yu'er became even more afraid and clutched tightly to his knife. He said:"Little dog, I am very hungry too but I won't eat you. But you're not allowed to eat me either when you're hungry."

The dog barked one more time and jumped at Xiao Yu'er.

Xiao Yu'er shouted:"I am not tasty..... Don't eat me....."

Du Sha who was standing outside heard the barking becoming fiercer and louder, all of a sudden the barking died out. After waiting for another few moments he opened the door.

He saw Xiao Yu'er lying on the floor with a knife in his hand, like the dog he was covered with blood. But the only difference was he was alive and the dog dead.

Du Sha picked him up and asked:"How many times did you use the knife?"

Xiao Yu'er said:"Ten..... twenty, I don't remember anymore."

Du Sha said:"You were reluctant to kill it in the beginning, right?"

Xiao Yu'er said:"The dog wanted to eat me, I..... I had no choice but...."

Du Sha said:"Exactly, if you don't kill it, it will eat you. If you don't kill, you will be killed. Remember this lesson."

Xiao Yu'er nodded:"Yes."

Du Sha said:"If you attacked first you wouldn't be injured this badly..... If you know you have no choice why wait till the dog attacked you? Are you dumber than a dog?"

Xiao Yu'er answered:"The next time I will know what to do."

Du Sha said:"Very good! Remember, all the people in the world are like that dog. You have to strike first and don't wait till your opponent attacks first. Do you understand?"

Xiao Yu'er said:"Yes."

Du Sha asked:"Are you sure you won't forget?"

Xiao Yu'er replied:"I will never forget this lesson in my life."

Du Sha looked at Xiao Yu'er and smiled.

Xiao Yu'er had to stay at Wan Chunliu for at least ten days before he could walk again, he already had some scars but now there were even more.

After a few more days Du Sha took him him to his place again. There was another dog, this time a much bigger dog.

Du Sha said:"Do you still have that knife?"

Xiao Yu'er nodded and turned pale and could not speak anymore.

Du Sha said:"Good! Kill this dog too!"

Xiao Yu'er stuttered:"This dog is very big....."

Du Sha asked:"Are you afraid?"

Xiao Yu'er nodded heavily and replied:"Very afraid."

Du Sha angrilly said:"Useless."

He turned around and closed the door again.

After awhile the dog barked loudly and for a very long time. Du Sha opened the door and saw the dog was dead, Xiao Yu'er was alive.

Although this time he was again covered in blood but he was standing. There were tears in his eyes and bit his lip, he said loudly:"I killed it and used my knife seven times."

Du Sha asked:"Are you still afraid?"

Xiao Yu'er replied:"No, but earlier....."

Du Sha said:"What was the use of being afraid earlier? You have to kill it anyhow, regardless of the fact whether you're afraid or not. The dog still wanted to eat you. Do you understand?"

Xiao Yu'er said:"Yes, I understand now."

Du Sha asked:"Do you know why you're injured?"

Xiao Yu'er lowered his head and said:"Because I was afraid and did not dare to attack first."

Du Sha said:"Allright! Will you be afraid the next time?"

Xiao Yu'er made two little fists and said:"No, I will not be afraid the next time."

Du Sha looked at Xiao Yu'er and smiled again.

This time Xiao Yu'er recovered faster, but when he was better again Du Sha would take him to his room. The dogs became bigger and bigger and fiercer and fiercer.

However Xiao Yu'er was injured less severe every time and every time he was finished quicker than the previous time.

Till the sixth time, Du Sha closed the door there was no dog. There was a small wolf.

In the end Xiao Yu'er was lying in bed, taking medicine and lots more of medicine.

One day Ha Ha'er came to visit Xiao Yu'er. Xiao Yu'er wanted to laugh but could not laugh.

Ha Ha'er laughed:"Little Xiao Yu'er is lying here. The wolf didn't eat you."

Xiao Yu'er said:"Laughing uncle, don't be angry."

Ha Ha'er asked:"Angry for what?"

Xiao Yu'er said:"I want to laugh, but..... but if I laugh my entire body hurts. I can't laugh now."

Ha Ha'er laughed loudly:"Dumb child, let me tell you something. Sometimes when I am laughing I am in pain too, but the more pain I am in, the louder I laugh."

Xiao Yu'er blinked his eyes with disbelief and asked:"Why?"

Ha Ha'er said:"You should know that laughing is the best cure in the world. Not only that, it is also a powerful weapon, I have never seen a more effective weapon in my life."

Xiao Yu'er stared at Ha Ha'er with disbelief again:"Weapon..... Laughing can kill wolves?"

Ha Ha'er laughed:"Not only can it kill wolves, it can also kill men."

XiaoYu'er looked pensive for a moment and said:"I don't understand."

Ha Ha'er asked:"Do you know why you're hurt every time?"

Xiao Yu'er replied:"I really don't know. I.... I am not afraid anymore, I am really not afraid anymore. It must be that my martial arts aren't good enough and I can't kill it with one stab."

Ha Ha'er asked again:"Why can't you kill it with one stab?"

Xiao Yu'er started saying:"Because my martial arts....."

Ha Ha'er laughed:"It has nothing to do with your martial arts. It is because you don't laugh or smile. Even though dogs and wolves do not talk, that doesn't mean they do not understand our actions. The moment you walk into the room they know you're up to no good and are suspicious of you. So even if you strike first, it is in vain."

Xiao Yu'er was listening attentively and kept nodding:"Yes, you're right."

Ha Ha'er laughed:"So the next time you enter the room, always smile. It doesn't matter whether it is a dog, wolf or even a tiger always maintain your smile. That way it won't be suspicous of you."

Xiao Yu'er said:"So that way I can kill it without being noticed."

Ha Ha'er clapped his hands and laughed:"Good! If it doesn't suspect you and regards you as a friend. You can kill it with one stab, it sounds simple. But it is most effective."

Xiao Yu'er said:"That way I won't be injured anymore."

Ha Ha'er said:"Exactly! No matter if it is a dog, wolf even a human, it won't harm someone who has no ill intentions towards him. Just smile, laugh the entire

time. Even when you stab him maintain your smile, even in his final moments it won't be suspicious of you."

Xiao Yu'er said:"But.... but that isn't the way of a hero...."

Ha Ha'er laughed:"Silly child! It wants to kill you. So you're bound to kill it first, since you have made up your mind to kill it, so it doesn't matter what methods you choose."

Xiao Yu'er smiled happily:"I understand now."

Ha Ha'er laughed:"Good child! Now you're a good boy."

From then on Xiao Yu'er did not get wounded anymore. He had killed five dogs, four wolves, one lynx and a young tiger. He had about 20 scars on his body and he was not even six years old by that time.

This year four people came to the Valley of Evil, but Xiao Yu'er was not interested in them. He felt that he was much stronger than those four newcomers.

After some time.....

At a certain day, he suddenly asked Du Qiaoqiao:"Auntie Du, everyone says that you're a very intelligent person. Is that true?"

Du Qiaoqiao giggled:"Who said that? ..... But that person is very right."

Xiao Yu'er asked:"And is it true that you have a lot of strange but funny objects?"

Du Qiaoqiao giggled:"You little mischief! What are you up to?"

Xiao Yu'er blinked with his bright eyes and said:"If I wanted to stand up for you, will you give me one of your funny items?"

Du Qiaoqiao asked:"Why should you want to stand up for me?"

Xiao Yu'er smiled:"Well, unlce Li often makes you angry, but you cannot think of a way to deal with him...."

Du Qiaoqiao said:"So in other words you have a way to deal with him?"

Xiao Yu'er nodded and smiled.

Du Qiaoqiao asked:"Well, what is that plan of yours?"

Xiao Yu'er said:"Well, all I need is some herbs of auntie Du?"

Du Qiaoqiao said:"Herbs? For herbs you need to go to Wan Chunliu."

Xiao Yu'er said:"He doesn't have those herbs, but you do."

Du Qiaoqiao shook her head and smiled:"You have me totally confused you little brat. Allright, what kind or herb do you need?"

Xiao Yu'er laughed:"A smelly one, the smellier the better."

Du Qiaoqiao stared at him for a moment and suddenly started to laugh loudly:"You, little devil! Now I know."

Xiao Yu'er blinked and asked:"You know?"

Du Qiaoqiao giggled:"You, little brat! Perhaps you can fool others but you cannot fool me. You hate it when Li Dazui sniffs at you, so you want to hide a package of smelly herbs on your body and let him sniff at you. However you're afraid of him, so you come up with a plot to drag me into your scheme. Not only do you have a strong back-up but also you can get into my good books."

Xiao Yu'er blushed a bit and laughed:"Auntie Du is very smart."

Du Qiaoqiao praised:"You're not stupid either."

Xiao Yu'er said:"Compared to auntie Du....."

Du Qiaoqiao giggled:"Xiao Yu'er, think about it. How old are you? If you reach my age, think of your possibilities..... You're a good child, no wonder I cherish you like treasure."

Xiao Yu'er lowered his head and said:"The herbs...."

Du Qiaoqiao laughed:"Of course I have those herbs, it is so smelly that it can kill."

From that day on Li Dazui did not dare to sniff at Xiao Yu'er anymore. He vomitted for about two hours and could not eat for an entire day.

The next day he seized Xiao Yu'er and said:"You stinky Yu'er! Did you get those herbs from Du Qiaoqiao?!?"

Xiao Yu'er just giggled.

Li Dazui said hatefully:"Aren't you afraid that I will eat you up!"

Xiao Yu'er giggled:"My meat is smelly, I taste awful."

Li Dazui scolded and laughed at the same time:"Good! You little demon, I won't eat you and I won't hit you. But I want you to punish Du Qiaoqiao for helping you. If you succeed I have a present for you."

Xiao Yu'er asked:"Really?"

Li Dazui said:"Of course."

At dusk, Xiao Yu'er was having dinner with Du Qiaoqiao. There was a plate of roasted meat on the table. Xiao Yu'er kept putting pieces of meat into Du Qiaoqiao's bowl of rice.

He laughed:"Auntie Du likes this roasted meat, eat some more."

Du Qiaoqiao giggled:"You really know how to curry for favour."

Xiao Yu'er said:"Well, auntie is nice to me. So I am nice to auntie."

Du Qiaoqiao asked:"Why aren't you eating?"

Xiao Yu'er said:"No, I don't want it."

Du Qiaoqiao laughed:"Silly child! Are you reluctant to eat it? It is nothing special, you can have roasted meat every day if you want to."

Xiao Yu'er's eyes twinkled and said:"There is something special about this meat."

Du Qiaoqiao asked:"What?"

Xiao Yu'er said:"I took this plate of roasted meat from uncle Li, I heard that....."

Before he finished Du Qiaoqiao turned pale and stutttered:"Yester..... yesterday.... he killed....."

Xiao Yu'er was smiling like an innocent child and nodded:"I think so."

Du Qiaoqiao said:"You little brat..... "

Before she could finish she was throwing up, she vomitted for about an hour and could not think of food for half a day.

The quarters of Du Sha were at the remote corners of the Valley of Evil, quite desolate. The interior of his home was not too much better either. There was just one bed and that was it. It was the most simple house in the entire valley. Whenever Xiao Yu'er left the house of Du Qiaoqiao and was headed here, he was also quite gloomy. There were always maneating animals waiting for him, but he had to go anyhow.

Today, Xiao Yu'er slowly staggered towards the house of Du Sha. Du Sha was sitting at the corner of the house, not moving. He wore a white robe. There was hardly any sun shining in his house, he looked like a snowman.

Every time Xiao Yu'er saw him, Du Sha would sit at the same spot never different. Furthermore he never dared to speak to Du Sha.

Du Sha coldly observed him for a moment and suddenly asked:"I hear you have a little box."

Xiao Yu'er lowered his head and said:"Yes."

Du Sha said:"I hear that your box is filled with all kinds of items."

Xiao Yu'er said:"Yes."

Du Sha said:"Tell me what you have in that box."

Xiao Yu'er still did not lift up his head and said:"I...I have a package of smelly herbs, a very long stick and it can shoot many spikes out. A bottle of liquid that can turn both flesh and bone into water and....."

Du Sha coldly interrupted:"Li Dazui and Du Qiaoqiao gave you these objects?"

Xiao Yu'er answered:"Yes."

Du Sha said:"I hear you've tricked them many times. You use the items of Du

Qiaoqiao to trick Li Dazui and use the items Li Dazui ,gave you, to make fun of Du Qiaoqiao. Correct?"

Xiao Yu'er said:"Yes."

Du Sha asked:"Aren't you afraid that they will kill you in a fit of rage?"

Xiao Yu'er said:"In..in the beginning I was afraid. However later on I discovered that the meaner and craftier I am the happier they are. Especially auntie Du, she sometimes even allow me to trick her."

Du Sha looked at him for awhile, he turned around and said:"Follow me!"

Before nearing that awful room, Xiao Yu'er could already hear a series of fierce roars. Those roars were very frightening.

Xiao Yu'er said with fear:"A tiger?"

Du Sha grunted and opened the door and roared:"Quickly enter!"

Xiao Yu'er took up the sabre and had no choice but to go in. Du Sha was standing outside the door again, he had a special ability he could stand there for 10 hours without changing position.

But this time Xiao Yu'er was only inside for a few moments and the roaring stopped.

After awhile, Xiao Yu'er called out:"Uncle Du, you can open the door now."

Du Sha was surprised and said:"That fast?"

Xiao Yu'er said:"Thanks to the skills uncle Du taught me."

Du Sha grunted and opened the door.

With a load roar a big tiger leapt out. Du Sha did not see this coming, he was expecting Xiao Yu'er and not a fierce tiger. In a shock he was a bit slow in his evasion and his shoulder was injured by the claws.

The tiger became fiercer after smelling blood and jumped at Du Sha again. This jump was quicker and fiercer than any martial artists could do. But Du Sha was not anybody, he leapt up and landed on the back of the tiger. In his shock he did not forget to yell:"Xiao Yu'er, are you injured?"

If the tiger was not dead, was Xiao Yu'er killed?

However he could hear Xiao Yu'er giggling now:"Xiao Yu'er isn't hurt. I am right here."

Du Sha looked up and saw a cute little boy eating an apple standing on a narrow beam on top of the door.

In a flash Du Sha did not know whether to be happy or angry, because of this distraction the tiger threw him off his back.

Xiao Yu'er yelled softly:"Be careful, uncle Du."

The tiger turned around and attacked Du Sha again.

This jump was a sure hit, Du Sha could not escape from those sharp claws. However he lowered his body and slipped under the tiger. He raised his right arm, and a loud horrific cry could be heard. Blood splattered everywhere around, the tiger wobbled a bit before falling down. It was dead.

All the walls were covered with the blood of the tiger and the room was utterly chaotic. Du Sha stood up and half his body was covered in blood. After Yan Nantian broke off his right hand, Du Sha had replaced it with a metal, sharp hook. He used the hook to rip open the abdomen of the tiger.

Xiao Yu'er dropped his apple and was patting himself on the chest, he was

saying:"What a terrific scene! Almost scared me to death."

Du Sha stood there and looked at him, not showing anger at all. He was as always cold and said coldly:"Come down."

Xiao Yu'er held on both sides of the door and slipped down, he giggled:"Although the tiger was strong, but uncle Du was much stronger."

Du Sha said:"I told you to kill the tiger, why didn't you?"

Half his face was covered with blood and his other part of his face was as white as paper. The wind was blowing through the room and with the body of a dead tiger next to him, the scene was horrifying.

But Xiao Yu'er was not afraid and giggled:"Uncle Du told me to kill the tiger, but I wanted to see how uncle kills the tiger."

Du Sha said:"You wanted to kill me?"

The part of his face, which was drenched with blood, was turing purple. The other part was darkening too. If a demon from the netherworld would come and one would compare their faces, the most horrifying face would belong to Du Sha.

Xiao Yu'er was still smiling and giggled:"I would not dare to plot to kill you. The tiger was caught by uncle Du, therefore uncle Du is bound to be able to kill the tiger..... I already understood that all along."

Du Sha coldly looked at him and did not speak.

Frankly he did not know what to say.

It was summer now, although the valley was in the shadow of the Kunlun Mountains, it was still very warm. And the sun would make one quite sleepy. It was noon now, the only time when the sun shone in the Valley of Evil. The

inhabitants of the valley were not too keen on the sun, so they usually stayed inside when the sun shone.

Only a cat was lying in the sun and some flies were flying about, those were the only active ones in the entire valley. At this point someone from outside the valley was running towards the valley. There was no one near chasing that man at all, in fact there seemd there was not a living soul in a radius of 50 kilometres. But he was still running, like he had seen a ghost. He was panting heavily but did not dare to slow down.

His lightness martial arts were not bad, but his stamina was running out. It could be because of the running but it could also be that he has not eaten for days now. He does not look too ugly, but he has a very sharp nose. One look at him and one would dislike him immediately.

He was wearing rather expensive clothes, woven by the best tailor. But now it looked like rags and it was smelly and dirty now. The sun was shining in his face and sweat was dripping from his face, but he did not care.

When he saw the characters [Valley of Evil], he took a deep breath and felt relieved. But he did not slow down and even tried to increase his speed. When he entered the valley he was walking down the street, the sun brightened the houses but all the doors and windows were shut. He could not see anyone or hear a thing.

He was somewhat surprised and was feeling anxious now, he wanted to call out but was afraid to do that.

Suddenly he heard a voice from his left:"Hey!"

It was not very loud, but it was enough to scare him silly. He saw someone sitting on a bamboo chair under the eaves of that house. It was boy about 13, 14 years old and was narrowing his eyes to take a look at him. The young boy was topless and there were uncountable scars on his body. There was a scar from the corner of his eye to the corner of his mouth, his black hair was casually tied and he was stretching his arms and legs. He looked very carefree and it seemed he would not care even if the sky fell down.

He looked tired like an old man, but his eyes twinkled like a naughty boy with one gaze he looked like a small child. Somehow this lazy, naughty looking boy with uncountable scars had a very strong charisma.

Especially his face, even with the scar. He did not look ugly, the scar added something special, something charismatic to him.

The first impression when one sees this naughty and lazy boy was that he is very handsome. Extremely handsome even.

The man was stunned after looking once at him, he was thinking what would girls do if they saw that handsome young boy.

The young boy seemed to want to wave at him, but seemingly he was too lazy to raise his hand, he smiled:"Why are you lurking about? Come over here."

The man walked over and coughed lightly before smiling apologetically:"My respects, young brother."

The young boy laughed:"Do you know me?"

The man said:"No.... no I don't."

The young boy said:"Since you don't know me, why would you pay respects to me?"

The man was stunned and did not know what to say, he stammered:"I....this..." Normally he felt that he was quite eloquent but now he did not know what to say.

The young boy laughed loudly:"Hahaha! I am Xiao Yu'er and who are you?"

The man said:"I am Ba Shudong, the tiger killing constellation."

Xiao Yu'er giggled:"Tiger killing constellation? Nice name! How many tigers have you killed?"

Ba Shudong was again stunned and stuttered:"Ehh, I...."

Xiao Yu'er laughed:"I have killed many tigers, even I am not called the tiger killing constellation. You haven't killed any tiger at all and you're called the tiger killing constellation. How unfair!"

Ba Shudong was standing were flabbergasted, if this was not the Valley of Evil he would chop off the head of this boy.

Xiao Yu'er said:"Judging by your expression, you must be running away from some enemies with some mediocre martial arts. Tell me who those people are."

Ba Shudong remained silent for a moment before saying:"I have made many enemies, amongst them the Two Swords of Jiangnan, the Ding brothers, the Ill Tiger, Chang Feng, the dragon of Jiangbei, Tian Ba....."

"I thought you had some impressive enemies, these people..... I have heard of them but they're not formidable or anything."

Ba Shudong said coldly:"My young friend, you sound quite arrogant."

Xiao Yu'er laughed:"My old friend, you're too cowardly."

Ba Shudong gritted his teeth and said:"Perhaps these people aren't too great, but one of them is very famous and very much feared."

Xiao Yu'er asked:"Who? Some ghost perhaps?"

Ba Shudong ignored that remark and said softly:"This person is very very famous now."

Xiao Yu'er asked:"What is his name?"

Ba Shudong replied:"She is called Zhang Qing, the little fairy."

Xiao Yu'er said:"Little fairy? Sounding by her name she should be a pretty young woman, everyone would like pretty girls like her. Why should they fear her?"

Ba Shudong said hatefully:"This little wretch looks pretty, but she is very vicious and ruthless. Perhaps even surpassing Du Sha."

Xiao Yu'er said:"That such a girl exits?"

Ba Shudong was gritting his teeth and continued:"My five brothers were all killed by her in one night, the six constellations of the tiger forest, only I have survived."

Xiao Yu'er said:"I would like to meet her, if I have the chance."

Ba Shudong said:"You will regret the moment when you see her."

Xiao Yu'er said:"Tell me how you offended her."

Ba Shudong said angrilly:"You have a lot of questions."

Xiao Yu'er laughed:"It is a rule."

Ba Shudong was surprised and remained silent for a moment, at last he laughed:"Allright! My brothers raped the sister and widow of the deceased chief of the the united armed guards agency of Zhenyuan, Weiyuan and Lingyuan, Shen Qinghong."

Xiao Yu'er gazed at Ba Shudong for a moment and said:"That is an evil deed! What you did is hardly worth mentioning, similar to what ordinary crooks would do! Nothing special."

Ba Shudong angrilly said:"It is nothing special! Although Shen Qinhong lost the treasure he was supposed to protect and has vanished without a trace for many years. But his wife and sister are still very much respected by Wulin, therefore...."

Xiao Yu'er shook his head and laughed:"No matter how you put it, with that deed you're not fit to enter this valley yet. Unless...."

Ba Shudong asked:"What is going on here?"

Xiao Yu'er answered:"It is a rule."

Ba Shudong did not dare to break the rules of the Valley of Evil, especially now he was in it. He laughed and asked:"Unless what?"

Xiao Yu'er laughed:"Unless you present two nice treasures to me."

Ba Shudong said:"I rushed over here and have no presents on me."

Xiao Yu'er said:"Since you have no presents, show me a few of your special skills."

Ba Shudong's face changed and was stunned, after awhile he said:"Very well!"

He pulled out a flexible sabre from his girdle, he shook the sabre and started to display three of his best techniques. Flashes of light could be seen, those three stances were quite good. It was called the three tiger killing special stances. The three techniques were swift, lethal and precise.

Xiao Yu'er shook his head and laughed:"This is what you call your best skills? Exactly like the crime you commited, laughable and low. I think you're not qualified to stay here, you must think of another way if you want to stay."

Ba Shudong asked:"What...what kind of way?"

Xiao Yu'er's eyes twinkled and laughed:"Kneel down and kowtow three times to me. And call me [grandfather] three times and give me your sabre."

Ba Shudong said:"Is this another rule?"

Xiao Yu'er replied:"Yes, it is."

Ba Shudong shouted:"I.... I never heard of such a rule of the Valley of Evil!"

Xiao Yu'er laughed:"Who told you it was a rule of the valley?"

Ba Shudong was flabbergasted and said:"But... but..."

Xiao Yu'er giggled:"It is my rule."

Ba Shudong was so angry he was shaking, he roared:"I will give it to you!"

He hacked at Xiao Yu'er with his sabre.

The lazy looking Xiao Yu'er was not lazy anymore, he smoothly glided away. Ba Shudong's hack missed Xiao Yu'er and hacked the bamboo chair in two halves.

Ba Shudong was surprised and heard someone saying:"I am here, can't you see me?"

Ba Shudong turned around to slice the speaker but missed again, laughter was coming from the roof. Xiao Yu'er giggled:"Don't be hasty, I am right over here."

Ba Shudong was furious and wanted to leap up too.

Suddenly someone called:"Is that second brother Ba?"

A man was running towards Ba Shudong, he was about the same age as Ba Shudong. Somewhere in between 40 and 50 years old, but his movements were

much swifter than Ba Shudong.

The man was tall and skinny, he looked very mean and his right arm sleeve was swaying along with him. He had only one arm.

Ba Shudong looked carefully and said happily:"Is that the silent lightning blade third brother Song? You.... you are really here, I had been looking for you. I came to seek refuge here."

Xiao Yu'er laughed:"So you two blades know each other."

Ba Shudong looked up and was furious again, he said:"Brother Song, this little brat....."

Before he could finish, Song San pulled him away and said with a smile:"Since you're here, I will take you to meet...."

Xiao Yu'er giggled:"Wait, wait! Before you lead him away, he has to pay for the broken chair."

Ba Shudong angrilly said:"You...."

Song San quickly interrupted him and smiled:"Of course, of course he will pay for the chair. But how much will it cost?"

Xiao Yu'er laughed:"Since he is your friend, just tell him to leave his sabre behind."

Ba Shudong shouted:"That broken chair.... you want my ...."

Before he could finish Song San took his sabre and presented it to Xiao Yu'er. Ba Shudong wanted to speak but was again stopped by Song San.

He quickly pulled him away and both of them quickly ran off.

After putting some distance between them and Xiao Yu'er, Song San sighed:"Why did you antagonize that little mischief immediately after you entered the valley?"

Ba Shudong was surprised and shocked:"Brother, why are you that afraid of him?"

Song San smiled wryly:"Don't underestimate him. Who isn't afraid of him in the entire valley? In these recent years, this little mischief has everyone in the valley fretting and worrying. Whoever annoys him will suffer badly within three days."

Ba Shudong was so surprised and did not know what he heard, he said:"That little brat is really that formidable?"

Song San sighed:"Listen to me, being humiliated by this little brat is not a disgrace. Think about it, there are no good men here in this valley. With his young age he was able to run amok freely in the valley, have you considered how lethal he is?"

Ba Shudong stuttered:"I...I can't believe it. I really cann...cannot believe it."

Now he noticed that Song San only had one arm and asked with shock:"Brother, your...your arm... was it...."

Song San sighed:"It is not his doing, but he has something to do with it."

He looked at his own armless sleeve and sighed:"I lost my arm the day he entered the valley. 14 years, it has been 14 years. The awesome martial arts of Yan Nantian, if I did not make a prompt decision I wouldn't have lived till today."

Ba Shudong exclaimed with surprise:"Yan Nantian? That little brat is Yan Nantian....aarrrgggh."

Before he could finish he shouted loudly with pain and fell down. There was a hole in his back, blood was gushing out of the hole.

Song San was terrified and turned around, he saw a ghostly apparition in a grey robe. It was floating about and was looking at him with his deep eyes.

Song San turned pale and stuttered with a trembling voice:"Mr.... Mr. Yin..... Mr.. Yin, you...."

Yin Jiuyou laughed sinisterly:"Nobody in this valley is allowed to speak of the relationship of Xiao Yu'er and that Yan fellow! Have you forgotten?"

Song San said:"I....I didn't have the chance to tell him that."

Yin Jiuyou smiled evily:"Before you could tell him, I already killed him. Are you unhappy about that?"

Song San backed away and stammered:"I....I...."

Suddenly he flew up about eight metres into the air and landed on the ground without a trace of injury, but he did not move anymore.

An old smiling woman was standing where Song San was before, she was holding a cane and could not stand up straight.

She laughed:"Old Yin Jiuyou, were you benevolent to him? The moment he spoke you should have killed him, why did you not kill him instantly?"

Yin Jiuyou said:"I wanted to leave him to you."

The old woman said:"Leave him to me? I haven't killed for a long time, were you afraid that my hands would itch?"

Yin Jiuyou said coldly:"I just wanted to see whether your delicate hands have improved or not?"

The old woman laughed loudly:"Well, did they improve? Do you want to see how delicate they are?" Her voice changed from old to clear, young and

melodious. It was the voice of Du Qiaoqiao.

Yin Jiuyou said sinsterly:"If you want to accompany this ghost, I suggest you would wear better clothes."

Du Qiaoqiao laughed:"I am too old now, how can I keep pretending to be a young girl?"

Yin Jiuyou laughed strangely:"No matter what you say, the next time I see a young pretty girl I will think it is you. If you want to enchant this ghost you still lack the skills."

Du Qiaoqiao said with a smile:"Allright, I know you're clever..... Say, did that little devil hear the conversation of those?"

Yin Jiuyou said:"If you don't know, how should I know?"

Suddenly they heard the singing laughter of Xiao Yu'er coming from afar:"A bottle vinegar, a broken nose. Marry a woman and have baby. But the baby has no nose....."

Du Qiaoqiao laughed:"Old Xi is in trouble again, the little brat is at his place."

Yin Jiuyou said:"If he is at old Xi's, he could not have heard the words of these two."

All of a sudden a man laughed loudly:"What are the two of you talking about? Hmmm, one man and one woman. One ghost and one human-----That makes four of you, isn't that strange?"

Du Qiaoqiao did not turn around and laughed:"Li Dazui, there are two corpses here. Stuff those in your mouth please."

Li Dazui laughed:"I don't have the appetite to eat those who have died at your hands."

Yin Jiuyou asked:"Are you going to see brother Du Sha?"

Li Dazui said:"Yes, I am. Ha Ha'er called us all over, I wonder what he wants."

So the three of them set off to the house of Du Sha, but they kept at least four metres apart from each other. It seems that they were unwilling to stand to close to their companions.

Du Sha as usual was sitting in his corner not moving.

When everyone was assembled, Ha Ha'er laughed:"Hahaha, it has been a long time since all of us have gathered."

Yin Jiuyou coldly said:"I hate gatherings, what is it that you want? If you don't have anything to say, I will....."

Ha Ha'er quickly raised his hands and said:"Don't threaten me, don't forget I am coward."

Du Qiaoqiao asked:"Did you call us over to discuss Xiao Yu'er?"

Ha Ha'er laughed:"Little Du is always the smartest one."

Yin Jiuyou said:"About that little mischief? What is there to discuss? All of us taught him something, to kill, to laugh, to cry.... Well, now he has learnt everything."

Ha Ha'er said:"Because he has learnt everything, I called for this meeting."

Li Dazui asked:"Why?"

Ha Ha'er sighed:"I can't take it anymore."

Du Qiaoqiao laughed:"The always laughing Ha Ha'er is actually sighing, I think he really can't stand it anymore."

Ha Ha'er said:"This little overlord goes anywhere he wants, he eats and drinks anything he desires. Nobody dares to antagonize him, everyone fears him in the Valley of Evil. For the past few months, 30 people have come by to cry their grievances to me."

Intestines gutting sword Sima Yan sighed:"This little mischief is becoming more formidable every day. Every time he talks to me, I have to think about my answer three times in my head before actually replying."

Li Dazui smiled wryly:"Well, at least your situation is better. Every time I see him, I am terrified. If there was one day he doesn't visit me, I... I can finally sleep tightly. Otherwise I will be vigiliant of him even in my sleep."

Ha Ha'er said:"We harm people for a purpose, but he does it for fun."

Du Qiaoqiao said:"Isn't that what we hoped for?"

Ha Ha'er said:"Yes, we wanted him to harm others, but who would have guessed that this little brat is plotting everyone he sees. Friend and foe are his victims, the only one who is better off here would be little Du."

Du Qiaoqiao said:"Better off? Hardly! He has learnt all those specialties of mine, in fact he even surpasses me."

Ha Ha'er asked:"How about you, brother Du?"

Du Sha said:"Hmm."

Du Qiaoqiao smiled:"And what does [hmm] mean?"

Du Sha remained quiet for a moment before saying:"If you lock me and him in one room, the one coming out alive would be him without a doubt."

Du Qiaoqiao sighed:"Well, it seems everyone cannot cope with him anymore. And that is the people in the valley, imagine how the outside world would deal with him? I think it is time to ask him to depart the valley....."

Li Dazui immediately added:"Yes, exactly! We have suffered enough, it is time for others to suffer. Luckily all of us combined can stop him, think of the day when even our combined efforts are useles. That is an awful thought."

Yin Jiuyou said:"If he is to leave, the sooner the better."

Du Sha said:"Today."

Ha Ha'er said:"Hahaha! Friends of the realm... heretic friends, orthodox friends, friends of the water and friends of the mountains, now it is your turn to suffer."

Li Dazui added:"If that little brat is gone, I will not eat human meat for a month."

At dusk, the Valley of Evil became alive again.

Xiao Yu'er was frolicking about, until he ended up at Wan Chunliu's place.

Wan Chunliu was cooking seven types of different herbs and was observing the changes of the cooked juices, when he saw Xiao Yu'er he asked:"What gifts did you receive today?"

Xiao Yu'er laughed:"I managed to obtain a nice sabre."

Wan Chunliu asked:"Where is it now?"

Xiao Yu'er answered:"I gave it to old Xi."

Wan Chunliu used a pair of chopsticks to stir the herbal contraction, the smoke

from the oven made the face of Wan Chunliu look very mysterious. He was silent for awhile and asked:"Where is that little box of yours?"

Xiao Yu'er said:"I threw it away a long time ago and I gave away those objects in it."

Wan Chunliu said:"Why did you give those items away? You went through a lot of effort to obtain them."

Xiao Yu'er said:"Well, they were quite usefull, but if I have to keep them I will have to fret as to where to keep them. I also have to worry about about losing them or being stolen, most troublesome."

Wan Chunliu said:"Good!"

Xiao Yu'er said:"If I give them away, I will also pass those troublesome thoughts to them too. I heard that there are some idiots who love to collect money and treasures, but they are too thrifty to spend. They must be mad."

Wan Chunliu said:"If those idiots they didn't exist, we wouldn't look extraordinary compared to them."

He stood up and said:"Take this pot of medicine and follow me."

A wonderul herbal fragrance covered the entire room, behind the big house there were three seperate small houses connected to this house. There were no windows or other doors, these were the sickrooms.

Nobody disturbed Wan Chunliu when he was busy in the sickrooms. There was a possibility that they were lying in one of those sickrooms one day, so they gave Wan Chunliu the space when he was there.

There was no light in the sickroom, just like Wan Chunliu's face it was filled with mystery. In the corner on a small bed was a figure sitting there, motionless. It seemed he was created for the purpose of just sitting there, it was the living medicine cabinet.

When Wan Chunliu entered the sickrooms he had closed the door, it was as the sickrooms was in a different world. Unrelated to the Valley of Evil.

The expression of Xiao Yu'er also changed, he pulled Wan Chunliu's hand and softly asked:"Is there any change in uncle Yan's illness?"

The cold and mysterious look on Wan Chunliu was gone, it made place for anxiety and care. He sighed deeply and shook his head and added sadly:"For the past five years, I have not seen any changes. I have tried every herb and every medicine I can think of.....I am very tired." He sat down and did not want to get up anymore.

Xiao Yu'er was silent for a minute and suddenly said:"I heard someone saying uncle Yan's name today."

Wan Chunliu was rather shocked and asked:"Who was it?"

Xiao Yu'er replied:"Dead men! The speakers are dead now."

Wan Chunliu got up and held on to Xiao Yu'er's shoulder and asked earnestly:"Did someone know you heard their conversation?"

Xiao Yu'er laughed:"How would they know? When I heard them talk, I immediately ran off and went to pester old Xi. I even deliberately scolded old Xi very loudly, that is why I gave him the sabre."

Wan Chunliu released his grip and was silent for awhile, after some time he said softly:"Not easy, not easy at all. Although you're young, you have managed to keep this secret to yourself. Most admirable."

He looked at Xiao Yu'er and added with a wry smile:"If this secret leaks out, the three of us will be dead within one hour, You... you must be very cautious. Don't take everyone to be a fool."

Xiao Yu'er nodded:"I know. Uncle Wan has gone through a lot of danger to

save uncle Yan, I.... I am most grateful, even if they chopped off my head I won't reveal a word."

After saying this, his eyes turned red.

Wan Chunliu sighed:"To be honest, I should not trust you. But growing up in this environment and not having lost your conscience.... You're a good child!"

Xiao Yu'er smiled happily:"When I am bad, I am really bad. But that depends who I am facing, furthermore when I knew who uncle Yan was.... I..... I became good."

Wan Chunliu smiled happily too:"Five years ago, when you came running to me that night and telling me you knew who the [living medicine cabinet] was, I was extremely shocked."

Xiao Yu'er laughed:"I am sorry."

Wan Chunliu was pensive for a moment before saying with a frowned smile:"Try to remember, who was that person who told you that secret."

Xiao Yu'er said:"I really don't know."

Wan Chunliu asked:"Tell me again what he looked like?"

Xiao Yu'er smiled wryly:"I really don't know, I couldn't see clearly."

He thought about it for awhile, he continued:"That night, I was sleeping in the house near Du Sha's home. During the night, I felt I was lifted from my bed....."

Wan Chunliu asked:"Why didn't you call out?"

Xiao Yu'er replied:"I couldn't cry out. Furthermore, I thought it was another of those tests of Du Sha, I didn't expect it to be someone else."

Wan Chunliu sighed:"Indeed, who would have guessed."

Xiao Yu'er said:"I knew that the movements of that person were extremely fast, I felt like flying through the air and in a few moments we were very far away from the valley."

Wan Chunliu asked:"Weren't you afraid?"

Xiao Yu'er said:"I am not even afraid of tigers, why should I fear men?"

Wan Chunliu said softly:"Later on, you will understand that men are more dangerous than tigers."

Xiao Yu'er said:"That person put me down and asked:[Do you know what your family name is?] I replied:[I don't know.] That person cursed me for being a beast, for not knowing my family name."

Wan Chunliu said:"Afterwards, he told you your family name was Jiang."

Xiao Yu'er added:"Hmm, he told me that my father was Jiang Feng and was killed by people from the Floral Palace. He told me to remember this and told me to avenge my parents when I grow up."

Wan Chunliu asked:"Did he not mention the name Jiang Qin?"

Xiao Yu'er answered:"No."

Wan Chunliu said:"Very strange, because your uncle Yan came here looking for Jiang Qin to avenge your father."

Xiao Yu'er's eyes twinkled and said:"Maybe this Jiang Qin is one of my enemies too."

Wan Chunliu said:"Hmm."

Xiao Yu'er said:"And then, he told me who uncle Yan was. I wanted to ask who he was, but he was gone like a gust of wind."

Wan Chunliu said:"I know what happened afterwards."

Xiao Yu'er said:"It was very dark that night, I saw him wearing a black robe and using a black cloth to cover up his entire head. I remember his eyes being bright and deep. One look at those eyes, you felt fear.... one would never forget thos pair of eyes."

Wan Chunliu asked:"Would you recognize those pair of eyes if you saw them again?"

Xiao Yu'er answered:"Most certainly."

Wan Chunliu asked:"Was it someone in the valley, you think?"

Xiao Yu'er answered:"Impossible, no one in the valley has such beautiful eyes. Although Du Qiaoqiao has bright eyes too, but her eyes pale in comparison to that mysterious person."

Wan Chunliu sighed:"This person could enter and leave the valley, as he pleases. And he knows so many secrets (*sigh). Who could he be?"

Xiao Yu'er said:"He must have extraordinary martial arts."

Wan Chunliu said:"Of course, in the entire realm, with the exception of your uncle Yan, I really don't know who can enter and leave this valley at will."

Xiao Yu'er asked:"Not even one?"

Wan Chunliu answered:"The two princesses of the Floral Palace, but this person wants you to seek out people from the Floral Palace. It cannot be the two princesses."

All of a sudden, Xiao Yu'er clapped his hands and said:"Yes, I remember now."

Wan Chunliu immediately asked:"What do you remember?"

Xiao Yu'er said:"That person is a woman."

Wan Chunliu was surprised and said:"A woman?"

Xiao Yu'er said:"Although, she covered her face and deliberately made her voice hoarse. But from her movements I can tell she is a woman."

Wan Chunliu asked:"What kind of movements?"

Xiao Yu'er said:"For example..... She had her head covered, but sometimes she would use her hands to stroke her hair. She was holding me in her arms, but she would not let me touch her breast."

Wan Chunliu stamped his foot and said:"Why didn't you tell me this before?"

Xiao Yu'er blushed now and laughed:"I....I.... didn't really pay any attention on who was male or female before."

Wan Chunliu was stunned for a moment and said:"Yes, of course.You were a child then, in the eyes of children there are only adults and children. There is no distinction between male an female in the world of children."

Xiao Yu'er added:"There is also only half a female in this valley."

Wan Chunliu said softly:"I used to suspect it was the most famous busybody of Wulin the hero of the southern heaven Lu Zhongda. But now we know this mysterious person is a woman, that makes everything different."

Xiao Yu'er asked:"Are there other female top martial artists in Wulin, except the Floral princesses?"

Wan Chunliu sighed:"If she is a woman, I have no idea. In the entire Wulin only princess Yaoyue and princess Lianxing have the skills to enter and leave the valley freely. I can't think of any other."

Xiao Yu'er said:"But there is. Firstly, she must know my father and know uncle Yan. Secondly, she knows exactly how my father died."

Wan Chunliu said:"Indeed."

Xiao Yu'er continued:"Point three; she is also aware of the animosities my family has and is very concerned about it. Point four; she must be a top martial arts expert. Point five; she must have something against the Floral Palace and number six; she has brilliant, beautiful eyes. Almost unique."

Wan Chunliu sighed:"Amazing that you deducted this much at your young age."

Xiao Yu'er said:"With these six points, I can surely trace her down."

Wan Chunliu said:"I hope so."

Xiao Yu'er said:"However.... however, I have to leave the valley first in order to find her. When can I leave this valley? When will they let me go?"

Wan Chunliu sighed:"Difficult to say, I just hope..."

Someone from outside the house was calling:"Physician Wan, is Xiao Yu'er with you?"

Wan Chunliu's face changed and said:"Du Qiaoqiao is looking for you, go out quickly."

When they left the sickrooms, their expressions changed. Wan Chunliu became the ever so cold and strange physician again and Xiao Yu'er became the naughty and clever boy again.

Du Qiaoqiao was standing at the door, she laughed sweetly:"What are you two up to?"

Xiao Yu'er made a funny face and said:"We were discussing how we're going to plot against you."

Du Qiaoqiao laughed:"You, little mischief! You two should try to find a new smelly herb to foil Li Dazui's nose for good."

Li Dazui giggled:"Unlce Li is too easy to fool, tricking him is no fun."

Du Qiaoqiao laughed:"Listen to the arrogance, be careful Li Dazui might eat you."

Wan Chunliu coldly addressed Du Qiaoqiao:"Are you here to joke around with Xiao Yu'er?"

Du Qiaoqiao said:"Look, physician Wan is angry."

Xiao Yu'er asked:"Is there something you want from me, auntie Du?"

Du Qiaoqiao said with a smile:"I have some good news for you."

Xiao Yu'er asked:"How good?"

Du Qiaoqiao said:"Your laughing uncle has prepared some dishes, uncle Li has brought over a few bottles of good wine. I... I roasted some meat for you, we are inviting you to a feast."

Xiao Yu'er's eyes were twinkling and asked:"Why?"

Du Qiaoqiao said:"You'll know when you've arrived."

Xiao Yu'er shook his head and laughed:"If auntie Du doesn't tell me, I won't attend that feast of yours. Otherwise I might have diarrhoea and vomit for three days."

Du Qiaoqiao cursed and laughed at the same time:"You, little brat. Aren't you paranoid?"

Xiao Yu'er laughed:"I learnt that from you, auntie Du."

Du Qiaoqiao said:"Well, I will tell you. We're preparing this feast for you, because we're going to see you off."

Xiao Yu'er was really surprised this time and leapt up and exclaimed:"See me off?"

Du Qiaoqiao laughed:"You little brat, you didn't expect that, did you?"

Xiao Yu'er asked:"Why....why do you see me off?"

Du Qiaoqiao said:"Because you're leaving tonight."

Xiao Yu'er opened his mouth and looked at her with disbelief:"I.... I am really leaving tonight? Where am I to go?"

Du Qiaoqiao said:"Outside! It is a big world out there. Don't you want to see it?"

Xiao Yu'er was touching his head and said:"I.... I...."

Du Qiaoqiao giggled:"Besides, you're old enough now. You should be looking for a wife....(*sigh). A little mischief like you will dazzle many girls."

She took Xiao Yu'er's hand and laughed:"Physician Wan, will you join us?"

Wan Chunliu stood still for some time and said coldly:"Forgive me for not wasting my time on these matters. You may go now."

He turned around and walked back inside.

Du Qiaoqiao pouted:"He only thinks about his herbs and roots. He wouldn't see his own father off."

Xiao Yu'er said:"Never mind him! Let us go and have some wine! I haven't had wine for some time now."

Du Qiaoqiao asked:"How long is some time now?"

Xiao Yu'er laughed:"A very long time, half a day now."

Within two hours several bottles were empty, Li Dazui's face was becoming redder and redder. The face of Du Sha was becoming paler and paler, while the laughter of Ha Ha'er became louder and louder. The more Du Qiaoqiao drank the more she resembled a woman.

Only Xiao Yu'er remained the same after drinking many cups.

Ha Ha'er laughed:"Hahahah, Xiao Yu'er really knows how to drink. He is drinking wine as if it was water."

Xiao Yu'er said:"Well, if this was water I wouldn't drink that much of it."

Yin Jiuyou sneered:"What is so wonderful about drinking one or two cups of wine!"

Du Qiaoqiao laughed:"Ghosts stay away from wine, but every man likes a cup or two. Except for one bad thing, you have mastered every bad skill there is."

Li Dazui angrilly said:"What bad skills! They are all good skills."

Xiao Yu'er blinked his eyes and asked:"What haven't I learnt?"

Du Qiaoqiao chuckled:"This skill... well, after one or half a year.... Nobody needs to teach you that, after seeing you. I think you will learn faster than anyone else."

Xiao Yu'er asked:"What...what is it?"

Du Qiaoqiao said:"Little brat, are you really ignorant or are you pretending?"

Xiao Yu'er giggled:"I am pretending."

Li Dazui laughed:"If you're really ignorant.... Well, you should know that with normal people, it takes to people to do it. However your auntie Du can do it by herself."

He was very pleased by his remark and wanted to drink another cup. But suddenly his cup broke into pieces.

Yin Jiuyou said coldly:"You cannot drink anymore."

Li Dazui angrilly shouted:"Why can't I drink anymore! And why did you break my cup!"

Yin Jiuyou said:"If you continue to drink Xiao Yu'er won't be able to leave anymore."

Li Dazui hatefully looked at him and kicked down the table with wine, he gritted his teeth:"One of these days, I will pour litres and litres of wine in your stomach!"

Xiao Yu'er was chuckling at this sight:"Why are all of you in such a hurry to see me off?"

Du Qiaoqiao said:"You're so paranoid! Who told you we're in a hurry to see you

leave?"

Xiao Yu'er laughed:"Well, it is fine with me if you don't want to say it. I know the reason."

Du Qiaoqiao asked:"You know? Well, tell us."

Xiao Yu'er said:"It is because I am becoming badder and badder every day. And all of you cannot cope with me anymore, so you want to see me leave and harm others instead."

Du Qiaoqiao laughed:"Well, that last bit sounded good."

Xiao Yu'er said:"You want me to leave, no problem. You want me to harm other people, no problem too. But everything works out for you, what do I gain?"

Ha Ha'er laughed:"Hahaha! A good question! A worthy question, you have learnt a lot. Well, if there is nothing to gain, I wouldn't even lift a finger to help my father."

Xiao Yu'er laughed and clapped his hands:"Uncle Ha Ha'er spoke my words."

Li Dazui said:"Rest assured, we will give you something."

Xiao Yu'er giggled:"Show it first, if I don't like it I might decide to stay."

Du Qiaoqiao said:"Little brat, you're really formidable! Brother Du, show him."

Du Sha took out two parcels, one contained a beautiful expensive brocade, one red cloak and one beautiful hat with a golden fish embroided on it and there was a pair of boots.

Xiao Yu'er immediately wore his new clothes and was looking at himself in a bronze mirror, he laughed:"Well, this robe is just mediocre but when it is worn

by me, it becomes magnificent."

Du Qiaoqiao said:"Don't you feel embarrassed? Praising yourself."

Xiao Yu'er laughed:"If you don't praise yourself, who will praise you?"

Ha Ha'er laughed:"Hahaha! Well said!"

Xiao Yu'er asked:"What else?"

Du Qiaoqiao laughed:"And there is this. Take a look!"

She opened the other parcel, and it was filled with a heap of golden leaves. Not many people can see that much gold together.

Xiao Yu'er frowned:"What is this? I can't use this, if I am hungry, will it fill my stomach. If I am thirsty I can't drink it. It is heavy.... I don't want it."

Du Qiaoqiao laughingly scolded:"Little fool, it may not serve those purposes but with it you can have anything in this world. Do you realize how many people would throw away their lives for this?"

Xiao Yu'er shook his head and said:"I am not a fool, I don't want this."

Li Dazui used his fingers to hold one golden leave and laughed:"Do you know, that with this leave alone you can buy three, four expensive robes similar to the one you're wearing? A normal household could live two years on this."

Ha Ha'er said:"Don't you like horses? With that leave you can buy the best horse there is. If this isn't a wonderful invention, nothing is."

Xiao Yu'er sighed:"Since you say it is that good, I will reluctantly accept it. What else is there?"

Du Qiaoqiao said:"My word, you want more? You really are terrible, think about it, you already took away our best treasures for the past few years. We don't have anything anymore."

Xiao Yu'er looked pensive and took the parcels and stood up and left.

Li Dazui asked:"What are you doing?"

Xiao Yu'er said:"What am I doing? I am leaving."

Li Dazui said with surprise:"Just like that?"

Xiao Yu'er said:"Why should I wait? There is no wine anymore, there is nothing else to receive...."

Li Dazui asked:"Where are you going?"

Xiao Yu'er said:"Outside the valley, I will head south-east and I'll see where I end up."

Li Dazui asked:"What do you want to do?"

Xiao Yu'er said:"Nothing. If I meet someone who pleases I will drink with him. If I dislike him, I will punish him for annoying me."

Ha Ha'er laughed loudly:"Hahah! Wonderful! That is the way of a true man!"

Du Sha suddenly asked:"Will....will you come back?"

Xiao Yu'er giggled:"After I have made everyone outside miserable, I will come back. Come back to torment you."

Ha Ha'er said:"Hahaha! Good! If everyone is miserable outside, we would happily welcome you back. We will even let you make us miserable."

Xiao Yu'er put his hands together and said:"Goodbye, I will return very soon."

He was really gone and did not even look back.

Du Sha saw him off to the door and said:"He is really very determined."

Ha Ha'er said:"We wanted him to be that tenaciously determined."

Du Qiaoqiao said:"Wulin has been too quiet for too long, it is time that someone like him would create havoc.....It is a shame that we can't see it."

Xiao Yu'er in new clothes and a big parcel was walking out. He was wearing his new boots and was walking over the street.

While he was walking he shouted:"Listen everyone! Xiao Yu'er is now leaving, you can sleep tightly now!"

All the people opened either the windows or doors to look at Xiao Yu'er.

Xiao Yu'er said:"After doing such a wonderful deed, you should applaud me..... If you don't applaud I will not leave."

Before he finished everyone applauded.

Xiao Yu'er laughed happily, when he walked by Wan Chunliu's house, he stopped laughing. He just looked at Wan Chunliu-----just one look.

Wan Chunliu did not speak, some things need not be said.

Xiao Yu'er had finally left the Valley of Evil.

All the starts glittered in the sky, it was still very cold in the nights here even in the Summer now. Xiao Yu'er put his cloak on and was walking towards the stars.

He was a bit stunned and he did not know what he felt, he had seen such nights before. But somehow tonight everything seemed different.

But he was about to enter a new, strange world. Is he afraid? No, he is not afraid! His heart is just filled with a strange emotion, an emotion he could not describe.

But he did not look back and continued to walk forward.

end of chapter 4

Chapter 6

Chapter 5 Life outside the valley

It was dusk now; the landscape was coloured dark blue. A fog gradually came up on the mountainside. The sky was grey; the greyness enwrapped the entire prairie. The wind was blowing through the grass and the cries of cows, sheep and horses were mixed in the wind producing a melancholic sound. Then great herds of horses, sheep and cows moved by, encircling the mountain. It was just a beautiful and grandiose picture, and the sound resembled a sad but yet touching love song. Black cows, yellow horses and white sheep marching greatly through the green grass, it was like an army of 100,000 pushing forward without fear.

Xiao Yu'er looked at the entire scene from afar, his face lightened with excitement and his eyes flashed with enthusiasm, such an impressive scene…the world is an impressive place!

He stood there dazzled till darkness came; he suddenly felt his heart had opened up.

The herds of animals disappeared into the distance, and Xiao Yu'er could hear singing from afar. The singing was clear and melodious, but Xiao Yu'er did not understand what these people sang. He could make out that every part began with the characters [Allah]; he did not know that [Allah] was the god the nomadic people in Xinjiang believed in. He walked towards the singing. The light of the stars illuminated the prairie, the moonlight made the grass resemble waves in a clear blue sea.

Xiao Yu'er did not know how long he walked, but after some time he saw several white tents in this boundless prairie. The contrast with the lights of the tents and the light emitted from the stars looked very small and insignificant, but it produced a very poetic ambiance.

Xiao Yu’er ran towards the tents, there was a campfire and several girls were singing. They wore long, colourful gowns with long sleeves. Their long beautiful hair was braided into little pigtails. They were petite and they wore numerous pendants, emitting a radiant glow of gold and silver and they wore exquisite small hats with bright colours.

Xiao Yu’er was mesmerized and walked over to the girls completely dazzled.

All those girls stopped singing when they saw him and swarmed towards him. They were touching him and talking to him in a language he did not understand.

The girls in Xinjiang were more naïve, sincere and full of affection.

Xiao Yu’er could help but smile and said:”What are you saying?”

The girl with the longest braids, the biggest eyes and the sweetest smile all of these girls said:”We speak Tibetan, are you…. A Han Chinese?”

Xiao Yu’er blinked his eyes and said:”I think so.”

All the other girls giggled.

The girl with the sweetest smile asked:”What is your name?”

Xiao Yu’er replied:”Xiao Yu’….no! My family name is Jiang, I am Jiang Yu.”

The girl laughed:”Xiao Yu (little fish), I have heard that the fish in the rivers taste very good. Unfortunately, I have never tasted fish before.”

She translated what she said in Tibetan to the other girls and the girls started laughing.

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Apart from you, don’t they know how to talk?”

The girl smiled:”They know how to talk, but do not know Han Chinese.”

Xiao Yu’er asked:”Why can’t they speak Han Chinese and why can you?”

The girl replied:”My father was a Han Chinese.”

She looked proudly now and smiled very confidently and said:”In the entire tribe, my Han Chinese is the best. That is why this time everyone asked me to represent them when doing business with all the Han Chinese.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”You’re not only pretty but also very capable.”

She blushed and the in light of the campfire she looked even more ravishing.

She said, still blushing:”You really know how to talk. Aren’t you travelling with them? Why have you arrived here first? They are….”

Xiao Yu’er interrupted her:”I came here on my own.”

The girl was surprised and her exclaimed with shock:”On…your own? You….you are very brave.”

Xiao Yu’er asked with a smile:”What is your name?”

The girl giggled sweetly and said:”If my name was translated to Han Chinese, I would be called Peach Blossom. And a lot of people say that my face….resembles a flower of a peach tree.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Peach Blossom? I have never seen that before, but I am sure you’re prettier.”

Peach Blossom giggled:”I’ve never had fish from the river before, but I am sure you taste sweeter.”

At this point a lot men walked about the tents, all of them stared at Xiao Yu’er. They were not very tall, but were all quite muscular.

Xiao Yu’er said:”I have to go now.”

Peach Blossom said:”Don’t be afraid! Although they are staring at you, they have no bad intentions.”

Xiao Yu’er smiled:”I am not afraid, but I really have to leave now.”

Peach Blossom blinked a few times and bit her lip before saying softly:”Don’t leave, tomorrow morning many Han Chinese will arrive. There will be lots of fun and joy.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”A lot of people? On my way here, in total I haven’t seen even ten men.”

Peach Blossom said:”It’s true, I won’t lie to you.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”But, tonight…”

Peach Blossom lowered her head and smiled:”Tonight you can sleep in my tent, you can talk to me the entire night.” She was taller than Xiao Yu’er, the wind blew strands of her in his face, and her eyes were brighter than the stars.

The tent was warm and cosy and there was the aroma of milk.

When Xiao Yu’er took off his clothes, Peach Blossom stared at him.

She gently caressed his scars and said softly:”Poor you. How come you have so many injuries? But somehow those scars look good on you. You look more handsome with those scars.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Although I was injured, but the wolves and tigers that wounded are dead.”

Peach Blossom exclaimed with surprise:”You…. You killed tigers?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Not too many, just four or five.”

Peach Blossom looked at him completely mesmerized.

Xiao Yu’er said:”Don’t you believe me?”

Peach Blossom replied:”I believe you, why shouldn’t’t I believe you?

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”But why should I believe what I say?”

Peach Blossom was a bit surprised by that comment, but said sweetly:”Because you’re my young brother. When I first say you, I just wanted to have a younger brother just like you…”

Xiao Yu’er laughed heartily:”Having a brother like me is not a good thing.”

This night, Xiao Yu’er deliberately slept very tight. Normally he is a light sleeper, but tonight he would not be disturbed by any noises. When he woke up, Peach Blossom was gone, but she left a bottle of sheep’s milk next to his pillow.

Xiao Yu’er drank the milk and put on his clothes and walked out of the tent. He saw that eight metres away, new tents were set up. People from here walked to the new encampment.

From afar saw Peach Blossom standing between a group of Tibetans and Han Chinese, she was smiling sweetly and was chirping like a bird.

Her braids swayed in the wind, the sunlight shone on her pretty face. She really looked like a peach blossom, however no peach blossoms in the world could be prettier than her.

Every time after she spoke, a Tibetan and Han Chinese would shake their

hands. A transaction was made and with each transaction she smiled even sweeter.

Xiao Yu’er walked over, but did not call her. He was looking about and saw that outside every tent all sorts of merchandise were displayed. A group of tall or short and fat or skinny men would stand next to the merchandise, and another group of tall or short and fat or skinny Tibetan merchants would look at the merchandise and select what they wanted.

Xiao Yu’er was interested what these people were doing, even though he thought they were quite ignorant. Suddenly he understood that most people in this world were ignorant.

A tall and skinny man pulled a spirited horse for a walk; the horse was as white as snow. The manes of the horse danced in the wind attracting Xiao Yu’er’s attention.

Xiao Yu’er could not help himself and asked:”Is this horse for sale?”

The tall and skinny man observed Xiao Yu’er carefully and said:”Do you want to buy? Tell your parents to come and we will talk.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Why should I call my parents? With money I am an adult.”

The tall and skinny man laughed:”Do you have money?”

Xiao Yu’er patted himself on his waist and said:”Not money, but I have plenty of gold.”

The skinny man laughed even louder now, he kept his eyes on the bundle around Xiao Yu’er waist. He gently stroked the manes of the horse and laughed:”This is a wonderful horse, it will cost you a lot.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”I don’t care what it cost, name your price.”

The skinny man blinked his eyes and stuttered:”This horse is at least worth….a hundred…a hundred and ninety taels of silver.”

Xiao Yu’er thought for a moment before shaking his head and said:”The price you name is not correct.”

The smile on the skinny man’s face was gone and had made place for an earnest expression, he said:”Why is it incorrect? How would you know? This is a good horse, it is worth at least…”

Xiao Yu’er smiled:”I know it’s fine horse, therefore I think the price should be 380 taels of silver. 190 taels of silver do not do the horse justice.”

The skinny man was puzzled at first; suddenly he burst out in anger:”What is the idea?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”I never joke about gold, one tael of gold is worth 60 taels of silver. So seven of these leaves made of gold should cover it, here you are.”

The skinny man was stunned, and confusingly accepted the gold and dumbfounded handed over the horse. Fortunately he had tight grip, otherwise he would have dropped his gold.

Xiao Yu’er smilingly pulled the horse along and continued walking about.

He noticed that there were more dumb people than smart people in this world. He also observed that ugly people were also in the majority and good-looking people in the minority.

He saw a young man in white, who was very different than the rest.

That young man kept a distance from the rest, like he was too good to mingle with this lot.

He put his hands behind his back, and his white clothes swayed in the wind like

floating from Mount Kunlun. His eyes were as bright as the stars last night.

Xiao Yu'er unintentionally observed that young man for a short while, the young man looked at Xiao Yu'er too. Xiao Yu'er smiled to him, but he did not respond. Subsequently, Xiao Yu'er made a funny face to him; the young man turned his face away from Xiao Yu'er.

Xiao Yu'er muttered to himself:"Aren't we conceited? Since you ignore me, why should I pay attention to you? It is not like I crave for you attention." He deliberately raised his voice, hoping that young man would hear him.

But the young man did not hear him.

Xiao Yu'er walked towards the nearest stall where that young man stood and looked at the merchandise and jewellery. The jewellery shone brightly, like it wanted to lure people to buy it.

He picked up a pearl ornament shaped like a flower looking at the young man; he said:"Is this for sale?"

The young man naturally would not respond, a short and fat man with a big hat replied with a warm smile:"This young master really has taste. A pearl ornament like this is very rare on the market."

He was looking at the bundle hanging from Xiao Yu'er's waist, he saw Xiao Yu'er buying that horse earlier.

Xiao Yu'er asked:"How much?"

The fat man replied:"Forty… Fifty….No, seventy taels of silver."

Xiao Yu'er repeated:"Seventy taels of silver?"

The fat man was a bit flustered and said:"Seventy… seventy taels of silver is not expensive, right?"

Xiao Yu’er said:”The pearl is fake!”

The fat man said:”A fake? Who says that? It is….it’s an insult.”

When he is not laughing all the fat flesh on his face look like a lump of dead meat.

Xiao Yu’er smiled:”Since I was two years old, I have started to use real pearls as marbles. I just have to smell it and I can tell the difference between the real thing or not.”

The fat man exploded with anger and thought [How is possible that is brat has become smart now?], but he put on the face of being unjustly wronged and said:”How….how about 60 taels?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed loudly:”You’re wrong again. Real pearls have to fish from the sea, while fake pearls have to be made with a lot effort. And you have to make them look real, so fake pearls are much more expensive.”

The fat man was confused and stuttered:”This…. That…”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Real pearls cost 70 taels of silver, but imitations should cost double. So, two taels of gold….”

He is hoping that the young man would look at him and smile to him.

However, the young man did not look at him and had walked away.

Xiao Yu’er hurriedly threw down the gold and said:”Here are three taels of gold.”

He did not even bother to look at the fat man, who was flabbergasted. He quickly gave chase, but the young man was gone.

Xiao Yu’er was a bit disappointed and bit his lip thinking. Suddenly a hand pulled him away and started to run, the hand was delicate and warm. It was Peach Blossom, who pulled him away.

They ran back to Peach Blossom’s tent hand in hand, her face was red and she was panting. She stamped her feet lightly and pouted:”You, little fool. If you wanted to buy things, come to me. Those merchants have tricked you. That is horse is not even worth 80 taels of silver and that pearl ornament is not even…”

Xiao Yu’er interrupted her and said:”It’s not even worth 10 taels, is it?”

Peach Blossom was surprised and said:”You know this?”

Xiao Yu’er replied:”How would an intelligent person like me not know?”

Peach Blossom asked:”But how come you were swindled by them?”

Xiao Yu’er blinked his eyes and smiled:”Being swindled is sometimes gaining an advantage.”

Peach Blossom looked at him, like she saw some strange creature, she never saw such a strange boy before in her life.

Xiao Yu’er put the pearl ornament in the hair of Peach Blossom and laughed:”Good sister, don’t be angry! Look, with that pearl, you look just like a princess. Unfortunately, there isn’t a prince to match the princess.”

Peach Blossom laughed and said:”Aren’t you that silly prince?”

Xiao Yu’er blinked his eyes and said:”You’re saying that I am silly? Well, you’ll soon find out that I am not silly. Furthermore, I get even with those merchants who swindled me.”

Peach Blossom asked with surprise:”Are you planning on tricking them?”

Xiao Yu’er shook his head and smiled, he just patted the head of his horse. He said:”Good horse! Just stand here and attract those who want to swindle me.”

The horse neighed softly and went outside the tent, Xiao Yu’er pulled his tail making sure it would not run off too far.

Peach Blossom sighed softly:”You are one strange boy. Everything you say or do is so confusing. Nobody understands what you’re planning.”

Before Xiao Yu’er could answer, he heard a group of people calling.

A hoarse voice sighed:”Is the young master who purchased the horse in here?”

Xiao Yu’er made a funny face and laughed softly:”The fools have arrived.”

He suddenly pushed Peach Blossom over and used the blankets to cover her up, he said:”Stay there! Don’t move or talk.”

Peach Blossom was full of doubt but before she could say anything, Xiao Yu’er said loudly:”Yes, I am here. Come in.”

Ten men came in, the leader of this bunch was the skinny man who sold Xiao Yu’er the horse.

All ten of them had parcels big or small, the one with the biggest parcel was the fat man of earlier. He looked even fatter now, with that big bundle in his hands.

Xiao Yu’er deliberately frowned and asked:”What do you want? You have brought a lot of goods with you…”

The skinny man bowed respectfully and smiled:”Fine goods should only be sold to a true connoisseur. All of them heard that young master is a true connoisseur. So they came over to show their goods to you.”

Xiao Yu’er chortled:’Do you want me to be deceived again?”

The skinny man quickly said:”No such thing! No such thing. Come, show your products to this young master.”

Before he finished everyone had already opened their packages.

There were many nice goods, like jewellery and other treasures. But some even had animal hides, antlers and musk. They just bought these goods from the Tibetans.

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”I like everything here, I will buy everything.”

All the ten men laughed happily and said simultaneously:”Young master, it is wonderful that you want to buy everything.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Please wrap it up for me.”

A few of those men wrapped everything up into one big bundle, the bundle was even bigger than Xiao Yu’er. No ordinary man can lift that.

The fat man cautiously asked:”But how about the….”

Xiao Yu’er interrupted him:”You want to be paid now? That is very easy, just tell me how much you are asking?”

Seven, eight men spoke at the same time revealing the price of their products, somehow everything cost 7, 8 times more expensive than normal.

Peach Blossom could not take it anymore and wanted to come out, but Xiao Yu’er pushed her head down and she could not get up.

She heard him say:”How much in total?”

The skinny man was the best in arithmetic and said:”A total of 6600 taels of silver.”

Xiao Yu’er shook his head and said:”That is not right.”

The skinny and the fat man heard Xiao Yu’er say something like that before and knew he had the habit of raising the price himself. The others had of course heard of this marvellous habit.

All of them smiled and said:”Yes, the price is incorrect. Young master, would you be so kind to tell us what the correct price is.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Me? Are you sure? Won’t you object?”

A few immediately replied:”We won’t have any objections. We will abide by your wishes.”

Xiao Yu’er chortled:”If that’s the case, let’s see how much I am going to give you….”

He opened the bundle tied around his waist again, and the merchants had their eyes fixed on that bundle of gold.

Xiao Yu’er took out one leave and smiled:”This is all I will give.”

A few of those men were dumbfounded, the skinny man stuttered:”Young…. Master, are you joking?”

Xiao Yu’er looked very seriously and said:”I told you before that I never joke about gold. Furthermore, you said that you will abide by my wishes. Do you wish to go back on your words?”

He threw the leave of gold on the ground and picked up the bundle of goods, although the bundle was bigger than him but he had no problems lifting it.

Peach Blossom could not hold back her smile anymore, and she saw that all of those men were looking furiously and gave chase.

She could hear some of them yelling:”The little swindler, return our goods!”

She heard Xiao Yu’er saying:”Who is a swindler? You’re the swindlers!”

Afterwards she could hear some painful moans and cries for help, and some loud thud sounds.

She was shocked for awhile, finally she could not help herself and ran outside to have a look. All ten of those fellows were lying on the ground. Xiao Yu’er had easily defeated the entire lot, they had bruises and some even had broken legs and they could not get up.

Peach Blossom was surprised, she knew that these merchants were quite strong and had learnt martial arts. She never thought a boy like Xiao Yu’er could defeat them.

She was flabbergasted for a few moments, when she turned her head around…. The sun shone very brightly today, but the strange boy and the horse were gone.

The horse carried the big parcel and Xiao Yu’er pulled the horse. Both man and horse ran about 2,5 kilometres, Xiao Yu’er laughed heartily every time he thought of the expressions of those merchants.

Around noon, the sun was getting hotter and hotter. Although Xiao Yu’er was not unaffected by but his horse was feeling tired. In the prairie there was hardly anything, let alone a cool, shady spot.

Xiao Yu’er thought about something for a moment and then opened the big parcel, he took out the antler’s of antelope and watched for awhile. He laughed and then threw the antler away as far as possible.

While he was walking he threw this and that away, every item was worth a

fortune but he did not care. He was laughing happily and throwing everything away.

When almost everything was chucked away, he patiently packed the items in smaller bundles and threw the bundles in the long grass. When he was done, he clapped his hands and shouted:”That felt good!”

Suddenly a sweet voice yelled:”Xiao Yu’er! Jiang Yu, don’t go! Wait for me!”

A horse swiftly galloped towards him, the rider wore a beautiful, colourful gown. The girl had beautiful, dark hair in braids and her face was all red now. It was Peach Blossom.

Xiao Yu’er clapped his hands and praised:”Excellent riding! And most pretty!”

When the horse was almost near Xiao Yu’er, Peach Blossom stood on the back of the horse and made a somersault. Xiao Yu’er was shocked and before he knew it, Peach Blossom was standing in front of him.

She bit her lip and stamped her feet gently, her eyes were watery. It seems that she just cried or she was about to cry. She was panting and pouted:”Why did you leave without saying anything to me?”

Xiao Yu’er smiled:”I made a mess of things, I did not want to implicate you.”

Peach Blossom pouted:”But why did you have to deceive those men?”

Xiao Yu’er answered:”They deceived me in the first place, why shouldn’t I return the favour?”

Peach Blossom was a bit shocked and asked:”Where are the goods?”

Xiao Yu’er answered:”I threw them away.”

Peach Blossom was really shocked now and exclaimed:”Threw away? Why did

you do that?”

Xiao Yu’er chortled:”I let those things ride the horse and I had to walk the entire way in the burning sun. I was such a fool, so I decided to throw those things away.”

Peach Blossom was dumbfounded and said:”Those things cost a fortune, don’t you care?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Why should I care? Those things were not the only valuables in the world, and if I really wanted those things I can get anytime I want.”

Peach Blossom exclaimed with shock:”You are really a little idiot.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed heartily and said after awhile:”I threw those things away, someone is bound to find sometime. If the finders are good people, they will be very happy. And I will be happy too, when I imagine their faces finding all those treasures. Even happier than when I am cracking my head open on how to spend those valuables.”

Peach Blossom asked:”If bad men would find it?”

Xiao Yu’er replied:”If bad men would find it, they would fight over how to divide it and kill each other over it.”

Peach Blossom asked:”Will you be happy about that?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Why shouldn’t I be happy about that? In fact I will be ecstatic if that happens.”

Peach Blossom said:”You’re really wicked.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Furthermore, if lazy people would find one parcel or one item, they would stop doing anything else and will want to find more treasures. They will search and search till they drop dead from starvation.”

He added with laughter:”You see, by just throwing away a few items I might change the fates of I don’t know how many people. I think this is very funny.”

Peach Blossom stood there not knowing what to say or what to do, finally she sighed softly:”You are really a little demon king.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Fine, earlier you called me a fool, now I am an idiot, a wicked person and a little demon king. If I am all of the things you say I am, why do you come after me?”

Peach Blossom lowered her head and said softly:”I just… I just wanted to ask you something…Why did you leave without saying goodbye.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Since I am set on going, why should I say goodbye? What is the use? If I said goodbye and you can forget about me, I will gladly say it. But I am afraid you won’t be able to forget about me.”

Peach Blossom raised her head defiantly and said loudly:”Why can’t I forget about you?”

Xiao Yu’er chortled:”Anyone who meets me cannot forget about me.”

Peach Blossom just looked at him and tears were running over her cheeks.

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Why are you crying? Besides I am too young, I can’t be your husband. And you’re pretty, so you should not worry about not finding a husband.”

Peach Blossom screamed:”You’re…..You’re a…..”

She could not think of any terms to name this [monster], she turned around and mounted her horse and rode away. She used whipped her horse maliciously.

Xiao Yu’er sighed and shook his head:”Women….(sigh*). They’re all mad.”

He stroked the manes of his horse and said to himself:”Horsy, if you’re as smart as I am, you should get close to women. And never let women ride you, otherwise you’ll only have bad luck. If they are angry, they will vent their anger at you and your behind. The behind of her horse must be red and swollen beyond recognition.”

He mounted his horse and wanted to ride away, but suddenly he was blocked by someone.

Under the sun, he saw a man in white clothes looking sternly and his face was filled with anger. But somehow he did not look angry but cute.

Xiao Yu’er recognized him as the conceited young man in white, he was surprised and asked with a smile:”Oh, it’s you, are you enjoying the sun?”

The young man answered coldly:”I am here to waiting for you.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Waiting for me? You just ignored me earlier, why….”

The young man rudely interrupted:”Enough nonsense! Hand it over!”

Xiao Yu’er was surprised and asked:”Hand what over?”

The young man answered:”The thing you swindled!”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Oh that! Well, if I knew you wanted those goods, I would have left them for you. But now…. (*Sigh), I have thrown them away.”

The young man angrily said:”Thrown away! Are you trying to deceive me?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Why should I lie to you? And why should I keep those useless objects in the first place?”

Xiao Yu’er added with a laugh:”Hey! Did you know that when you’re angry your face is all red? You look very pretty; you look just like a girl. I met a girl earlier, whose face would also turn red when she is angry and she is very pretty too. You and her really look like a couple, should I introduce her to you?”

The young man’s face was even redder now, he wanted to look even angry but he could not. He was just staring at Xiao Yu’er and said sternly:”If you really lost those goods, you have to pay.”

Xiao Yu’er asked:”Do you really want me to pay?”

The young man answered:”Of course!”

Xiao Yu’er asked:”And the reason why you came after me is because of those goods?”

The young man loudly answered:”Yes, of course!”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”I don’t think so. You don’t care whether those foolish merchants are alive or dead, why would you be concerned if they’re deceived. Furthermore, they deserved to be tricked. So I think you’re not here for those items, but you’re here because of me.”

The face of the young man was even redder now and he shouted:”Indeed! I am here because of you; I have noticed that you’re the troublemaker at such young age. I fear what will happen what you grow older.”

Xiao Yu’er touched his own head and laughed:”Do you want to kill me?”

The young man scoffed:”Killing you wouldn’t be injustice. However, you’re still young, you could be saved. The first thing you have to do is become my disciple. I will teach you the right way and you might be saved.”

Xiao Yu’er looked at him for a while before bursting out in laughter, he was laughing so hard that he could not stand straight and said:”You want me to

become your pupil?”

The young man angrily said:”What is so funny about that?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”There is nothing wrong of having a handsome teacher like you, but what can you teach me? Are you really stronger than me? I think…..You should become my pupil.”

The young man sneered:”Do you wish to learn martial arts?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed loudly:”Do you really think your martial arts are better than mine?”

The young man angrily said:”I am the best expert of the entire Sichuan province.”

Xiao Yu’er calmly said:”If you’re really the number one expert of Sichuan province, you would not flee to these parts, would you? You’re not here to do business or to have fun, so you must have come here to flee from your adversaries?”

The expression of the young man changed, it seems that Xiao Yu’er had perceived his actions. He looked hostile and roared:”Who are you? Where do you come from?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Don’t ask who I am and don’t you mind where I came from. If you think that you are stronger than me, let us have a small duel. Whoever loses shall have to become the pupil of the victor.”

The young man scorned:”Very well, I would like to see where you learnt your martial arts.”

Xiao Yu’er chortled:”Whoever loses shall have to become the pupil of the victor, you agreed to this, so no backing out later on….”

Before he finished, he dismounted from his horse and kicked towards the eyes of the young man in midair.

The young man did not expect that Xiao Yu'er would attack that fast and was taken by surprise. But the martial arts of this young man were not bad, it seems he had a lot of fighting experience too.

Although flustered he did not back away, instead he advanced forward and manoeuvred behind Xiao Yu'er's back. Without turned his head around, he struck his palm out, that attack was both swift and beautiful, he could also accurately recognize the acupoints of his adversary without looking.

Originally, Xiao Yu'er thought he would gain the upper hand if he could attack first, however now the tables have turned. He made a somersault forward and landed 1,5 metres away. He laughed:"Wait a moment!"

The young man stopped his advancement and asked:"Wait for what?"

Xiao Yu'er asked:"Can you really see who my teacher is?"

The young man scoffed:"Within ten stances."

Xiao Yu'er shook his head and smiled:"I don't believe you."

His smile became even more enchanting now, and suddenly he made two fists and attacked without notice. His smile was most charming and friendly, but his hands were lethal. This was a typical trait of Ha Ha'er.

Xiao Yu'er tricked the young man now, the advantage he had earlier was lost now. He even backed away a few steps.

Xiao Yu'er chortled:"I think you…."

Before he finished the young man advanced forward, risking being hit by the two fists of Xiao Yu'er but his elbow was aimed at the chest of his opponent.

This time Xiao Yu’er was shocked, he did not want to be struck at the chest, he waved arms and fell over and avoided that blow. The young man would not leave it at that and followed tightly, his fists attacked fiercely and the stances were very lethal.

Xiao Yu’er retaliated his hands would turn into fists and palms randomly. The stances he used were suddenly dangerous or strange, powerful and suddenly soft.

Neither Yin nor Yang, neither aggressive nor calm.

He was integrating the lethalness of Du Sha’s, the treacherousness of Yin Jiuyou, the aggressiveness of Li Dazui, the softness of Du Qiaoqiao and Ha Ha’er’s aspects into one.

With martial arts like that, he was able to roam the realm without facing too much opponents, but the fist style of that young man was similar to a violent storm. He attack ferociously and Xiao Yu’er was panting now.

The young man was also shocked; he never imagined that this boy’s martial arts would have so many changes. He could not tell whom his teacher(s) was/were.

Suddenly Xiao Yu’er yelled:”Stop!”

The young man said:”Fine, I will stop.”

While he was talking he attacked with six fists.

Xiao Yu’er stunned and dodged and managed to retaliate with three palms and called out loudly:”This is called stopping!”

The young man scoffed:”I won’t be deceived this time.”

Xiao Yu’er was both fighting and talking:”Ten stances have already passed. Can you tell me what school I belong to? If not, hear me out.”

The young man slowed down a bit, giving Xiao Yu’er the chance to back away and he laughed:”Well, can you tell me?”

The young man stopped too and sneered:”Of course not, you belong to no school.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”It is not that I do not belong to any school, but I just belong to too many schools. That is why you cannot recognize my style.”

The young man asked:”To what schools do you belong?”

Xiao Yu’er answered:”Well, to tell you the truth. I learnt martial arts from five different persons. And the martial arts of them consist of a lot of schools too, each of their style is complex and strange….”

The young man interrupted:”I am familiar to all the martial arts styles of all the famous martial artists of entire China. You do not belong to any of those styles and schools, I think your teachers were just ordinary practitioners of martial arts who sell their lowly skills on markets hoping people will buy their medicine.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Ordinary practitioners of martial arts! The names of those five you scare the living daylights out of you. But it is that when the five of them retired you were still in your nappies.”

The young man angrily said:”How can compare the martial arts of heretics with mine!”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Your martial arts are quite good too, I never thought that someone so refined looking would use the martial arts of a madman.”

The young man retorted:”What do you know? My 108 Frenetic stances are ranked very high in the various boxing styles of all martial arts schools.”

Xiao Yu’er clapped his hands and laughed:”108 Frenetic Stances? All the madmen would use martial arts like that; it’s a shame that you’re too handsome. It is such waste that you learnt something like that.”

The young man said:”It seems to be a shame, but those suffering from a hit will know the real power behind it.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”I don’t want to learn it, but I also don’t want to suffer a hit….”

After he finished he threw himself towards the young man, his palms made a whooshing sound.

The young man had anticipated that and struck out with two fist attacks to block the two palms of Xiao Yu’er.

Xiao Yu’er did not engage the young man head on; he kept changing positions and would strike out a palm and fist.

This set of 108 Frenetic Stances was quite powerful, frenetic was the word here. It proved to be more effective than the lethalness, treachery, aggressiveness and softness of Du Sha, Yin Jiuyou, Li Dazui and Du Qiaoqiao. Xiao Yu’er was really quite tired out by it.

After another ten bouts, Xiao Yu’er shouted:”Stop! Your boxing style is quite good, I am willing to learn.”

The young man twirled away for a metre or so and was panting; he thought that this boy was not easy to deal with.

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”No wonder people say that sane people should never fight with madmen. You can never defeat insane people. Now, I know why.”

The young man asked:”Have you finally realised how good I am?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”It’s a shame that you’re not insane. Otherwise, your boxing

style would be even more impressive. However, I do fear the longer your practice this style, the chances are big that you will end up being mad."

The young man frowned and said:"Since you're willing to become my pupil, you should not be rude."

Xiao Yu'er laughed:"I only want to learn your boxing style, I never said I would become your pupil. Teachers can also learn styles from their disciples, don't you agree?"

The young man angrily said:"Do you want to fight again?"

Xiao Yu'er laughed:"No, of course not. If you launch another attack, you will cough up blood and die. I am telling for your own good, you must believe me."

The young man was furious but laughed coldly:"You little brat! Do you really think I will fall for your lies!"

Xiao Yu'er said:"Why should I lie to you? I won't lie to you, haven't you heard of a secret skill in the realm called the [Icy wind palms of seven steps]. In other words anyone who has suffered a blow from this palm style will die after walking seven steps."

The young man said:"Rubbish! There is no such martial arts in the realm."

Although he said he did not believe Xiao Yu'er, he was feeling weak in his legs now.

Xiao Yu'er looked at him and said:"Although this style has vanished for over a hundred years, however I had the luck to learn this palm technique. And I…."

The young man scoffed:"And you used it on me?"

Although he said he did not believe Xiao Yu'er, but he would not move another step now. No matter who asked him to walk, the name was quite scary already.

Xiao Yu’er clapped his hands and said:”You’re right. I gently patted you with this technique, if you will become my student I can save you.”

The young man sneered:”If you think I will be tricked by you that easily, you are dead wrong.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”You don’t believe me? Touch the third rib on your left side, if it hurts that means you suffered a blow from the Icy wind palms of seven steps.”

The young man just scoffed.

During his sneering, he touched his third rib on his left side and suddenly his face changed.

Xiao Yu’er looked at his own shadow and asked:”Does it hurt?”

The young man’s hand was trembling and said loudly:”Of course it hurts, that is because that particular spot is easily hurt.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”This pain is different, this pain is greater. Like being pierced by needles and burnt by fire. The pain feels like burning.”

He looked at the hand of the young man and said:”Touch this spot, not there…… A bit more to the left, lower.”

The young man did what he was asked.

Suddenly Xiao Yu’er said loudly:”Yes, that is the spot. Press it.”

The young man did what he was instructed.

Suddenly he felt numb and fell down and could not get up.

Xiao Yu’er clapped his hands and laughed:”Well, even if you’re as cunning as a fox, now you are mine. Finally, you have fallen for my trap, do you know how you were subdued?”

The young man looked at him hatefully but did not speak.

Xiao Yu’er said:”I will tell you, there is no such thing as Icy wind palms of seven steps. Even if there was I would not know of it. However, there is a secretive skill that does exist and it is called Sealing blood and Arteries technique.”

He ran off to pull his horse back, which had ran off quite far by now. The young man carefully observed Xiao Yu’er and it seemed he wanted to hear the further explanation.

Xiao Yu’er continued:”Sealing blood and sealing acupoints are practically the same concept. But with sealing acupoints is sealing fixed positions on someone’s body, but sealing blood is different.”

He casually sealed the Qimen and Qixue nong acupoints of the young man, he laughed:”You see what I mean.”

After demonstrating that, he patted the young man beneath his ribs and said:”Sealing blood means stopping your blood from circulating, when your blood doesn’t circulate, you can’t move and will fall over. With sealing blood you have to seal off the right arteries, veins at the right moment. Do you understand the basic difference now?”

The young man had never heard of this before and listened attentively and replied:”Yes, now I understand.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”You can’t seal someone’s blood off too long or else he will die. So that is why I allowed your circulation to continue and that is why you can talk now.”

Although the young man was still fuming, he could not help himself to ask:”So that is why you were looking at your shadow, you were calculating where and

when my blood was circulating and told me to press that particular spot.”

Xiao Yu’er clapped his hands and laughed:”Very smart! You starting to learn.”

The young man gritted his teeth and said:”Although you have learnt that method, but you just know the basic. If not you would not trick me into sealing my own blood circulation, you could have done it yourself.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed loudly and said:”Very true! You’re absolutely right. Because the teacher, who taught me this, is the best physician alive. But his martial arts are quite low, he knows the entire human physiology like the back of his hand and can calculate the blood circulation of anyone. Unfortunately, he does know how to seal blood. That is also the reason why I asked you to do it for me.”

He paused for a moment and continued:”Because you were ready to fight at any time, so your internal energy was flowing through the tips of your fingers. And when I told you to use force, your energy flowed out through your fingers. Naturally, I would not ask you to seal your own acupoints and that is why even asked to press a region with no acupoints at all. That is why you did not notice anything wrong.”

The young man angrily said:”That is just underhanded trickery!”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Do you even realise how much knowledge and insight is needed to perform such trickery? First, I have to make sure you are on your guard; otherwise your energy will flow out of your fingers by itself. Secondly, I have to come up with something icy wind palms of seven steps to confuse you.”

The young man sighed:”Those two steps alone were enough.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Not enough, I had to some basics on sealing blood and so. I had calculate your blood flow and take into account that you would not be suspicious too.”

Xiao Yu’er patted himself on the chest and said:”This is the perfect combination of martial arts and intelligence. If my martial arts weren’t high, you

would not be on your guard. And if I weren't smarter, you would not be that cautious either. I had to make sure you would first be on your guard and later on I had to make sure you would drop your guard. So, you see I am superior to you in everything. You should be happy to have a teacher like me."

The young man shouted:"You will never be my teacher!"

Xiao Yu'er said:"We both agreed to the terms before we fought, how can you go back on your words."

The young man's face became red and said:"Just kill me!"

Xiao Yu'er laughed:"Why should I kill you? If you won't keep your word, I will just cut off your noise, poke out your eyes and cut off your tongue. And then…."

The young man yelled:"I am not even afraid of dying, why should I be afraid of that."

Xiao Yu'er blinked his eyes and said:"Are you really not afraid?"

The young man scoffed.

Xiao Yu'er chortled:"Alright, since you're not afraid I will change tactics."

The young man said loudly:"I am not afraid of anything!"

Xiao Yu'er said:"I will hang you on a tree remove your trousers and spank your buttocks. Are you afraid?"

He knew that some people are not afraid of death and pain, but when they are faced with the fact their trousers will be removed and being spanked they will simply die.

The face of the young man changed, first from white to red.

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”You’re finally afraid, call me [master] now!”

The young man was trembling and shouted:”You’re a monster!”

Xiao Yu’er said:”You’re not calling me [master], but you’re calling me a monster. Fine.”

He moved forward to pull the girdle of the young man.

Suddenly the young man shouted:”Master, master!”

After calling two times [master], tears were running over his cheeks.

Xiao Yu’er immediately wiped away the tears and said softly:”Why are you crying? With a teacher like me you should feel proud. Since you have acknowledged me as your teacher, there is really no point in crying…you’re still crying, if you don’t stop I will still have to spank you.”

The young man bit his lip and tried his best to stop crying in a few moments, he stopped.

Xiao Yu’er said:”That’s a good boy! Right, tell me your name.”

The young man said:”I am Tie Xinnan.”

Xiao Yu’er blinked his eyes and smiled:”Sorry, Tie Xinlan was it? The character [lan] (orchid *) as in flower?”

The young man said loudly:”No, the nan character as in man.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Alright, Tie Xinnan, it is. A good name! Although you have some feminine features, but you really have a name of a true man.”

Tie Xinnan lifted his head and said:”You!”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Although I am tougher than you are, my name is not that tough. My name is Jiang Yu. Someone told me that the fishes of the river are very good, have you ever had some?”

Tie Xinnan said hatefully:”Yes, I really would like to eat some.”

She wanted to eat something, but not fish but the flesh of Xiao Yu’er.

Xiao Yu’er laughed and put his arm near his mouth and said:”If you want to, you can have a bite.”

Tie Xinnan was stunned.

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Do you want to have a bite? To tell you the truth, I know every thought of yours.”

Tie Xinnan sighed; he did not know what to do except sighing.

Xiao Yu’er asked:”How old are you?”

Tie Xinnan replied:”At least two years older than you.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Say, that is true, but you can still learn from someone younger than you.”

Suddenly Xiao Yu’er was interrupted and he heard someone calling:”Xiao Yu’er! Xiao Yu’er!”

A horse sped by and the rider was Peach Blossom, but her face was not red but pale. It was like she had seen a ghost. She quickly dismounted and hugged Xiao Yu’er and panted:”Thank you Allah, I have finally found him.”

Xiao Yu’er was a bit surprised.

Peach Blossom said:”Please come with me now! You can do with whatever you want when this is over.”

She was crying as she spoke.

Xiao Yu’er sighed:”Another one in tears, how troublesome.”

He used his sleeve to wipe away her tears and said:”Don’t cry. Your eyes are all swollen. If you don’t stop crying you have to change your name into Peach, because your eyes will look like peaches.”

Peach Blossom smiled, Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Crying and smiling….”

Before he could finish, she started to weep again; she pulled the sleeve of Xiao Yu’er to wipe away her tears and said while crying:”When I was angered by you, I did not want to go back immediately. So rode around for some time, when I decided to return I saw that something had happened at home.”

Xiao Yu’er asked with a smile:”Someone smeared tears on your new clothes?

Peach Blossom did not hear him and said:”I heard the men shouting frantically and the women crying. I could also hear whipping sounds and several hoarse voices shouting to form a row or else he would kill.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Good imitations!”

Peach Blossom said:”Originally I intended to go over, but I decided to dismount and crawl over to observe what they were doing. Fortunately, the grass was long and they could not see me. But I noticed that a group of men had surrounded us. They had whips in their hands and looked very mean, they looked like robbers.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Interesting, robbers have come.”

Peach Blossom continued:”These robbers rounded up our people and the Han

Chinese, I saw them using whips to hit my people. I was heartbroken."

Xiao Yu'er commented:"The robbers in the prairie are quite nasty."

Peach Blossom said:"The prairie has robbers too, but this is a different group."

Xiao Yu'er laughed:"How would you know? Do they usual robbers know you?"

Peach Blossom said:"The robbers of the prairie are Han Chinese too, but out of habit they wear clothes similar to ours. These robbers wore different clothes and their horses are not from Tibet. Tibetan horses have longer legs, they were riding horses from Sichuan, those horses have shorter legs."

Xiao Yu'er stopped laughing now, he frowned and said:"These people travelled 100 of kilometres and more, it is only natural to assume they are not here for simple cattle and goods."

Peach Blossom said:"They are not here from goods, but for people."

Xiao Yu'er looked at her and said:"For people? For who? You?"

Peach Blossom bit her lip and said:"Han Chinese girls are prettier than me and Tibetan girls…. They are looking for a Han Chinese, they followed him here. According to their spies, they saw him walking about near our tents. Now, they are forcing us to hand over that man."

Xiao Yu'er asked:"Did your people hand him out?"

Peach Blossom said:"Who don't even know who he is. And they have searched the tents themselves and found nothing. So they said we must have hidden him and they gave us one hour to hand him out…..Or else they would rape the women and kill the men."

When she finished her story, she was in tears again.

She was crying out on Xiao Yu'er's shoulder:"I am begging you to rescue them, I know you are very capable. You even killed tigers, although those robbers are mean they are still humans and cannot be fiercer than tigers."

Xiao Yu'er sighed:"You're wrong there, men can be fiercer than tigers."

Peach Blossom said:"But you have to go back and save them…..You have to!"

Xiao Yu'er asked slowly:"Do you have any idea who they want?"

Peach Blossom said:"Initially, I thought they were after you. However, afterwards I heard them saying that they were after a boy with the family name Tie. Do you know who that is?"

Xiao Yu'er smiled:"Family name is Tie….I haven't heard of him….I."

Tie Xinnan heard the entire story and loudly said:"My family name is Tie, they are after me."

Peach Blossom stared at him with shock.

Xiao Yu'er touched his head and smiled wryly:"Little fool, why did you have to talk."

Tie Xinnan ignored him and asked loudly:"Is there a girl amongst those robbers?"

Peach Blossom stuttered:"No…No…"

She never imagined that those mean robbers were after a handsome and elegant young man; she was surprised and stopped crying.

Tie Xinnan said loudly:"Fine! Since they've found me, I will go back with you."

Peach Blossom said:”No, you can’t go back.”

Tie Xinnan said:”I am going back and that is the only way I can rescue your people.”

Peach Blossom lowered her head and said melancholically:”But you will be killed if you go back, I can’t stand by to see you get killed. Please run away now.”

Tie Xinnan sneered:”Do you think I am afraid of them? Even if there are a hundred of those fools, they are no match for me.”

Peach Blossom asked:”But if you’re not afraid, why have fled all the way to Tibet?”

Tie Xinnan said a bit taken by that remark and stuttered:”I….I…”

Peach Blossom said:”It is because you’re only afraid of that woman. When you heard there were only men, you’re not afraid anymore.”

Tie Xinnan’s face turned red and said:”Never you mind!”

Xiao Yu’er laughed loudly:”You’re not afraid of men, but only afraid of women! That is a trait I have too, every time I see a woman my head hurts.”

Tie Xinnan said:”Release me and I will go.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”If you get killed, I will lose my pupil.”

Tie Xinnan said:”I can promise you, I will return.”

Xiao Yu’er tilted his head a bit and thought for a moment, he laughed:”Peach Blossom, do you think this student of mine is a hero?”

Peach Blossom just gazed at Tie Xinnan full of admiration and folded her palms

together and said:”May Allah protect you.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”A hero saving a beautiful maiden, it will be a wonderful tale. I won’t be in your way. Fine, you can go.”

He patted her twice on her body and Tie Xinnan jumped up.

Peach Blossom said:”You….”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”You already found your hero. I will wait for you here.”

Peach Blossom said hatefully:”People who are unwilling to help others, cannot expect help themselves.”

She did not look at Xiao Yu’er and leapt up on her horse, she said:”Tie….Climb on!”

Tie Xinnan looked at Xiao Yu’er and said:”I…I…”

In the end he said nothing and mounted the horse, they rode off with great speed.

Xiao Yu’er stared at the dust cloud the horse was making and said softly:”Girls full of love won’t love the same boy for too long. Well, she is in Tie Xinnan’s hands now, I wonder how long Tie Xinnan will be stuck with her.”

He gently patted his white horse and said:”Horsy, let us go back and watch the fun. But if you see an attractive young mare, you must keep your distance. We are still young, if we are caught by women we will never be able to get away from them.”

End of chapter 5

Chapter 7

Chapter 6 The little fairy punishing the evil

Peach Blossom whipped her horse, her long hair was blown into the face of Tie Xinnan, but he was unmoved by it. Peach Blossom felt his breath in her neck, she felt weak and warm all over. She tightened her grip on the reins, she turned around and asked:”Hold on tight, if not you fall of the horse.”

Tie Xinnan just grunted.

Peach Blossom said:”Hold on to me, if not you might fall off.”

Tie Xinnan grunted and held on to Peach Blossom.

Peach Blossom almost fainted and said:”If you can rescue my people….I will give you anything you want.”

Tie Xinnan merely grunted again.

There was an excited sparkle in her eyes and she rode faster and faster, the road back was quite long. But somehow Peach Blossom felt it was too short.

They could hear cries coming from the yellow tent. Peach Blossom asked:”Are we going to storm in like that?”

Before she had finished her question, she saw a white flash flying over her head. Tie Xinnan had already dismounted and was standing metres ahead.

Peach Blossom was both surprised and happy, she halted her horse. She saw

Tie Xinnan standing there, although her clothes were a bit dirty, but in the radiant show it looked clean and suave. Tie Xinnan looked like the ideal lover for any girl now.

Peach Blossom was mesmerized and almost forgot everything.

The crying, shouting continued, Tie Xinnan suddenly loudly yelled:”I am here. Who is looking for me?”

Suddenly the shouting and crying stopped, only the wind could be heard. The clothes were swaying in the wind.

An arrogant and loud voice from the tent laughed:”Good! You have courage, Tie Xinnnan! The Li Brothers have not waited in vain.”

Tie Xinnan scoffed:”I could have guessed it was you. Since you came for me, come out and face me!”

He turned around and walked away.

Suddenly a series of loud roars could be heard and horses galloped out of the tent. The trembling sound of the hooves and the roars were ear deafening and were very terrifying.

But Tie Xinnan continued to walk, he did not even blink.

Peach Blossom was watching this from afar; she was both worried and happy. Happy, because Tie Xinnan was really a brave hero. Worried, because how could someone so frail looking defeat all these men.

About ten horses surrounded Tie Xinnan, but Tie Xinnan remained calm. The riders had sabres in their hands, but did not attack.

After walking for another metres or so, Tie Xinnan stopped and he scoffed:”Alright! What is it that you want from me?”

A tall man with a thick beard and one eye ride forward, he said sternly:”My brothers and me would like to ask you if you have the item with you?”

Tie Xinnan scoffed:”Yes, I have. But you and your brothers are not worthy enough to claim that map! If you think I came here to escape you, you are sadly wrong!”

The man with one eye roared:”Rubbish!”

The man rode forward and his horsewhip whizzed through the air. Tie Xinnan shouted:”Come down!”

He waved his hand and the handle of the whip was in his hand, and he shook the whip, he lifted the heavy one-eyed man and chucked him away. The man landed metres away.

The horses neighed and suddenly two flashes of light could be seen. Two robbers decided to sneak attack Tie Xinnan. They raised their sabres and hacked towards the neck of Tie Xinnan.

Tie Xinnnan did not look back, he ducked a bit and the sabres missed him. He used the handle of the whip to poke into the ribs of the two robbers. The two robbers fell off their horses, one was trampled by his own horse and yelled out of pain and rolled away for metres. During his rolling he also accidentally used his own sabre to cut off half his head and died.

In a few moves, he defeated three robbers without any effort, the rest of the robbers were afraid of him now.

Tie Xinnan smiled:”The martial arts of the Li brothers are just mediocre. If anyone else wants the map, they might stand a chance, but the you are just too overbearing.”

Before he finished laughing, he heard a cold voice saying:”If the Li brothers are not worthy, how about the Mao brothers?”

The voice was weak; it was like someone spoke very distantly. Because you could not hear him speak, you would pay more attention to the voice. But when you listened attentively, you will notice that the voice sounded disgusting. Like millions of small caterpillars crawling in your ear, the first thing you would do is cut off your own ear.

Tie Xinnan's face changed colour and exclaimed with shock:"The three hairs of Mount E Mei…."

The voice behind him interrupted him:"Men and ghosts will flee from them….So you have heard of this saying too." His voice was shrieking, it felt like needles piercing your ears when you heard him talk.

Tie Xinnan slowly turned around and saw a big horse; on the saddle there were three men.

The first one was very small; he was as tall as a child of five, six years old. However, he had a beard, his beard was white and thin similar to the fur of an ape.

Besides having a beard, he had hair everywhere. On his cheeks, arms, hands, eyelids, *etc.* Every spot that was not covered by his clothes. He had all the regular features, but all of them were asymmetrical. He did not look human, it seemed that when heaven created him, heaven was not pleased with the outcome and threw him into a pool of muck. However, somehow he made it into this life after all.

Tie Xinnan got goose bumps just by looking at him.

He looked at Tie Xinnan and laughed:"I am the [eating hearts and chewing lungs] hairy caterpillar. Well, I suggest you should stop looking at me, you might have a tummy ache if you watch too long."

She did want to listen to him, but she could not help herself. Because another look she would even feel sick in her stomach.

So she looked at the second man, this man was not better looking than the first one. At least he was much taller than the first one. He had a very long neck and a very small head. His head was full of hairy spikes and his mouth was shaped like a tout.

Tie Xinnan gritted his teeth and asked:”Are you the hairy rooster?”

The man laughed:”Don’t grit your teeth? Everyone who sees me grit their teeth.”

Tie Xinnan wanted to cover up her ears; his voice sounded awful, even the death cries of roosters sounded more pleasant.

He really did not want to look at the third person, but he was curious and looked. He thought no matter what he cannot be uglier than the other two.

However, the first two at least resembled men. But the third person did not look human at all; he looked like a big ape.

The hairy rooster was twice the size of the hairy caterpillar, but this ape was four times the size of the caterpillar. The hairy rooster had a very long neck, maybe a bit too long. But this ape did not have a neck at all. The caterpillar had white thin fur, but this ape had thick black hair everywhere. You could not even see his nose and mouth, just his bright and shiny eyes.

The pair of eyes was watching Tie Xinnan and said:”I am the hairy ape.”

Hiding in the long grass was Xiao Yu’er, and he too was looking at the three men.

He could not stop himself from laughing; he could not imagine what kind of a mother could give birth to these three. He shuddered to think.

He did not know that these three brothers were one of the most lethal and dangerous characters in the realm for the past ten years. Whoever saw them

would never dream of laughing, nor would they even cry in their presence.

Xiao Yu’er had spied on them for some time, he saw that the Li brothers were chasing Tie Xinnnan and the Mao brothers were following the Li brothers. The steed of the Mao brothers was swift and silent, so the Li brothers did not notice them.

The Li brothers had noticed them now, the tough robbers of earlier were trembling and terrified.

Xiao Yu’er thought: [That is strange; the Mao brothers are not after them. Why are they afraid? It seems that those three monsters will kill anyone.]

The Li brothers were all trembling, all of them could ride excellently and although they were trembling, they secretly commanded their horses to back away slowly.

The hairy caterpillar laughed:”Strange, that Tie Xinnan has not left yet, but why are the Li brothers retreating.”

One of the Li robbers managed a smile and said:”Sir, we do not want that item anymore. It belongs to you, sirs. So that is why we will be on our way, if you don’t mind, sirs.”

The hairy rooster laughed:”The instant you saw us, you want to leave. Could it be you think we are too ugly?”

That Li robber quickly said:”No, of course not, sir.”

The hairy rooster said:”So, why do you want to leave?”

The hairy caterpillar laughed:”Old rooster, you’re wrong! They are not moving, but their horses are moving.”

The hairy rooster said:”So in other horse, their horses are disobedient.”

That Li brother quickly said:”Yes, it is the horses…It’s the horses….”

The hairy rooster said:”Those horses really should be killed for being disobedient.”

When he finished the hairy ape dismounted, he looked like a barrel but his arms were long and strong. He looked stupid but his movements were very fast.

In one move he had reached one horse, he used his fist to hit the horse on the head. Without even neighing, the horse fell down and its’ head was shattered.

Even Xiao Yu’er was shocked and thought: [That fellow is really strong.]

That hairy ape had killed three horses now in an instant; the other horses were neighing in fear. In a matter of moments, more than ten horses were all killed. All the horse heads were crushed.

All the Li brothers jumped off their horses before their steeds were hit, they look terrified. One of them started to run away as fast as possible.

The hairy rooster said:”Another disobedient one.”

He flew up, head first legs behind… He shot out like an arrow. His head collided with the back of the runaway robber. The man was running very fast, but when he heard a whooshing sound he did not have the time to turn around and he was hit in the back. His spine was broken into several pieces, he slowly caved in. The hair rooster lifted him up and yelled:”Old caterpillar, here is your dinner!”

He threw the man over the Li brother’s heads, the hairy caterpillar laughed:”A delicious warm bun.”

When the dead man flew towards him, he stretched out his small monkey arms and hands and he gently grasped at the chest of the man.

The man kept flying away and landed several metres away, but blood was gushing from his chest. There was a big hole in his chest.

And the hairy caterpillar's hand was covered with blood and holding a human heart. It looked like as the heart was still beating slightly.

The hairy caterpillar laughed:"Who wants a hot, steamy bun?"

All the Li brothers were as white as paper now, Tie Xinnan's face turned pale too.

The hairy caterpillar laughed:"Since nobody wants it, I will have to enjoy it by myself."

And he took a bite and was chewing on half a heart. His mouth was covered with blood and his was making a disgusting chewing noise.

The Li brothers could not stand up anymore and Tie Xinnan covered her mouth if not he would throw up.

Even Xiao Yu'er thought it was revolting.

Li Dazui ate humans too, but at least he ate people in a "sophisticated " manner, he cooked them in several different ways and knew how to prepare his human dishes.

But the way this hairy caterpillar ate was just plain repulsive. Xiao Yu'er never saw something like that, and he looked down on this manner too. He thought this fellow was ignorant, barbaric and does not know how to savour life. If you really want to eat people, you should follow Li Dazui's example.

The strength of the hairy ape was incredible, the hairy rooster was very fast too and the palm techniques of the hairy caterpillar were lethal too.

This Xiao Yu'er had to admit, especially the technique, the accuracy of how he

removed the heart was incredible. Even Xiao Yu'er was impressed by it, he decided to keep low and observe awhile longer.

In a few moments the hairy caterpillar had finished the heart, he was licking his lips and fingers. He laughed:"Autumn is near now, and we have to eat some healthy food to strengthen ourselves. The human heart is very healthy, you see I feel regenerated again."

He really did seem to look stronger now, his voice was louder, his eyes shone brighter and he had a healthy reddish colour in his cheeks.

Tie Xinnan sneered:"Should I be impressed now?"

The hairy caterpillar said:"There is a healthy heart in your chest too, if you don't want me to eat that as well. You should hand over that item. I don't want to exhaust myself and having to eat your heart."

Tie Xinnan said:"Don't even think about it!" He did not want to engage them and wanted to run away.

But the hairy ape had already blocked his path, he spread his arms and because of his size Tie Xinnan could not pass.

The hairy ape laughed strangely:"A handsome face, it is shame to destroy it."

While he was talking, Tie Xinnan launched 14 attacking stances on the hairy ape. All the stances hit the hairy ape's body, but the hairy ape just stood there not moving. He seemed not to be affected by those stances.

After 14 stances, Tie Xinnan was pale and he did not launch the 15th stance anymore.

The hairy ape asked:"Are you finished?"

Tie Xinnan gritted his teeth and said:"Finished!"

The hairy ape said:”Now, it is my turn.”

He made a fist and struck out to Tie Xinnan. Tie Xinnan could not cope with such a blow, so he dodged and emerged behind his fist attack. He used his foot to trip the feet of the hairy ape and added a palm on the back of the hairy ape. The hairy ape struck out with all his might, with he tripped and was pushed over.

He felt down and Tie Xinnan did not bother to look at him anymore. He ran as fast as he can, suddenly he noticed something emerging in front of him. It was the hairy rooster. He turned around and saw that the hairy ape got up now and was smiling strangely to him.

To his left a small hand stretched out and said:”Hand it over!”

The three Mao brothers were not weak, Xiao Yu’er knew from their movements and stances that Tie Xinnan could not escape from them nor defeat them.

Xiao Yu’er sighed and thought: [It seems I have to intervene now. Even if a teacher does not necessarily need to aid his disciple in combat, he cannot allow a valuable item of my disciple being stolen.]

Tie Xinnan was surrounded and he was readying his fists, ready to fight. Suddenly from afar soft bells could be heard and the sounds became clearer and clearer. Before long a reddish figure rode towards them.

It was like ball of fire, the horse was fiery reddish, and the rider wore fiery red clothes. They came at incredible speed; it was like the horse could fly.

When they heard the bells, the Li brothers, Mao brothers and Tie Xinnan were shocked. When they saw the fiery red presence, they were all stunned.

The rider said in a melodious voice:”19 in total! Nobody is allowed to leave!”

Both rider and horse arrived at the scene in a matter of moments, the rider

whizzed his whip and a few of the Li robbers were hit and were rolling on the ground in pain. But they did not dare to run, block or even cry out. The horse galloped around and all the Li brothers' robbers were down.

Xiao Yu'er praised her in his heart: [Marvellous technique! And well hit! I never thought Tie Xinnan would have a friend like that. It seems I don't need to interfere anymore." He did notice that Tie Xinnan's face was the palest, because the rider in red captivated him.

The Mao brothers were too ugly, but this rider was too beautiful. The Mao brothers looked like animals, but this rider looked like a fairy.

She wore a red gown and her face was red. Her whip was like an evil serpent; her eyes were like the stars in the sky.

Xiao Yu'er sighed and thought: [If you can only look at her for just a few moments, it does not matter if she hits you. But the techniques of her whip are quite vicious; perhaps that is why people say that beautiful women have vicious hearts.]

The girl did not stop her whip and continued to hit those robbers; she had a cold expression on her reddish cheeks.

Tie Xinnan suddenly shouted:"They have done nothing to you! You're very vicious."

The girl in red said coldly:"I have a vendetta with everyone evils in the realm."

Tie Xinnan shouted:"Stop!"

The girl red said:"I won't stop! I will continue to these people!"

After another ten hits, she stopped and turned around to face the Mao brothers. Her eyes shone and she sneered:"Good, you haven't left. Very smart, but I haven't forgotten you."

The hairy caterpillar smiled:”Since Miss wants us to stay, we will stay.”

The girl in red said:”Do you know what I did not use my whip against you?”

The hairy caterpillar smiled:”I don’t know.”

The girl in red said:”Those I whip might live, those my whip spare will certainly be killed.”

The hairy caterpillar said:”Miss, do you know why we stay behind?”

The girl in red said:”Do you have the courage to leave?”

The hairy caterpillar laughed:”The reason why we stay behind is that others may fear you, we certainly do not!”

The three of them leapt up like they had already planned this.

The hairy rooster aimed his head at the waist of the girl, the hairy ape wanted to strike down the horse of the girl, the claws of the hairy caterpillar went for the eyes of the girl.

The three brothers were fast and coordinated their attack flawlessly, they aimed at the top, centre of the girl and one attacked her steed. Every point was covered.

Xiao Yu’er could not think of a way that the girl could block this attack, if she could block her eyes, she could block her waist, if she could block her waist, her horse will be hit.

The girl in red sneered:”Die!”

She whistled softly and her horse suddenly stood on two legs and used his forward legs to crash down on the hairy ape. Even if the hairy ape could withstand a blow from a man, he wanted to dodge but it was too late. He

suffered two blows and fell down and rolled away.

Xiao Yu’er almost applauded; he knew that this girl must have spectacular martial arts. But he did not expect his horse to be skilful too.

When he looked at the hairy rooster and hairy caterpillar, both landed on the ground. The caterpillar’s hands were broken and the hairy rooster had lost half a head.

Although Xiao Yu’er had keen eyes, he had just pair and he missed out on how the girl defeated those two. Xiao Yu’er was most impressed by the way the girl defeated these three monsters.

However, Tie Xinnan knew what the girl was capable of and she knew what fate awaited the Mao brothers. He was not surprised at all. He just stood there, not moving, completely calm. But calm was not the right word, one should say he was scared stiff.

The girl ignored him for now, she kept whipping various people. In the end no one was standing except Tie Xinnan. All 19 of them were dead.

Days are short here, in the setting sun the girl’s face became even redder. The sun also shone on the bodies of the 19 dead men, a girl in red slowly rode through the corpses. It was a very bizarre scene.

Tie Xinnan stood there, he did think of running, he just stared at her. His face had the same colour as those who lied on the ground.

The girl in red finally stopped in front of him, Xiao Yu’er could not see her face. But he thought she must be smiling now, He thought she looked pretty enough when she was not smiling, so her smile must be lovely. Unfortunately, he could not see it. He also thought that this girl was probably in love with Tie Xinnan, so that is why she would use such lethal methods to dispose of Tie Xinnan’s adversaries.

However, the girl scoffed:”Alright, Tie Xinnan! I must say you really have some

abilities. You're the first who could run from me for so far and so long."

Tie Xinnan just looked at her and did not speak.

The girl in red said:"You can't escape now!"

Tie Xinnan responded:"So I don't want to run."

The girl in red said:"You're smart. Smarter than a lot of people, but if you are really smart you will hand over that item."

Xiao Yu'er understood now, the girl was after the item that Tie Xinnan has.

He thought for a moment and took out something and carefully crawled forward. The wind was blowing hard through the grass, covering his crawling sound.

He heard the girl saying:"Will you hand over or not!"

Tie Xinnan replied:"I don't know what you're talking about."

The girl in red angrily said:"I've asked you nicely! Stop pretending!"

She raised her whip and struck out.

Tie Xinnan did not dodge and the whip hit Tie Xinnan, but the girl did not use a lot of force. Tie Xinnan was not moved by that whip and said casually:"Even if you killed me, I still won't know what you're talking about."

The girl in red shouted:"Very well, you forced me! Don't forget when I start to fight I won't stop. You should know my temper, are you really…."

Because she was getting angrier and angrier she did not notice Xiao Yu'er. He had crawled up to the tail of her horse and he held something in the wind and a

flame fluttered and the tail of her rouge horse caught fire. Although her horse was an intelligent animal, it was still an animal. All animals are afraid of fire and it neighed frantically immediately ran off. Before the girl in red could finish, her horse had rode off for metres now. If she would have jumped of her horse, she could still catch Xiao Yu'er and Tie Xinnan. But she loved her horse too much and could not just leave abandon her horse. Xiao Yu'er anticipated that much and that is why he came up with such a plan.

The horse kept running.

The girl shrieked:"Cherry, stop! Don't be afraid!"

She tightened her grip on the reins, but riding a horse gone mad is very difficult. That [Cherry] of her was very fast, in a few moments they were out of sight.

Xiao Yu'er pulled Tie Xinnan along and ran the opposite direction. When his white horse saw him, he quickly followed his master. Xiao Yu'er ran and ran, he was afraid to stop.

Tie Xinnan was afraid to stop too and both young men were panting and sweating heavily.

They ran till it was dark, both Xiao Yu'er and Tie Xinnan never ran this hard and far before. They kept running and finally saw an old broken wooden house ahead. Xiao Yu'er could not care whether it was abandoned or not, he immediately entered. Both of them fell down, panting heavily. Xiao Yu'er accidentally put his head on Tie Xinnan's chest and he could hear her heart beating very rapidly.

Fortunately, the house was abandoned, there were cobwebs everywhere. When they came in they ran into some too. Xiao Yu'er wanted to wipe away the cobwebs, but suddenly Tie Xinnan pushed him away as hard as possible.

Xiao Yu'er looked at him and said:"I saved your life. Is this your way of saying [thank you]?"

Tie Xinnan blushed and said:”I am sorry! Thank you very much!”

Xiao Yu’er laughed and started to sing a nonsense song:”Apologizing, make a friendly gesture and then break the wind….”

Tie Xinnan actually broke the wind, Xiao Yu’er laughed so hard that he was rolling on the ground.

Tie Xinnan became even redder now and wanted to find a place to hide.

Xiao Yu’er crawled up and laughed:”Breaking wind is nothing. Some people might even wet their trousers when they are really afraid. You’re just like a girl, blushing almost every time.”

Tie Xinnan stuttered:”I….I….”

His voice became very soft.

Xiao Yu’er said:”You’re not the only one to be afraid. Even I…I am afraid of that girl. I never imagined a sweet girl like that could be that ruthless.”

Tie Xinnan smiled:”Most people in the realm are afraid of her.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”I would not be surprised, even a courageous man like me is afraid of her. Who can’t be afraid of her? Tell me, what is her name?”

Tie Xinnan said:”Her family name is Zhang, everyone calls her the Little Fairy Zhang Qing.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”I heard of this name before….”

Suddenly he remembered, that day when he left the valley that Ba Shudong mentioned this name too.

That Ba Shudong was terrified of her, but at that time Xiao Yu’er never thought that such an infamous person would be a mere pretty young girl.

Xiao Yu’er imagined how she looked like riding her horse roaming the realm. Anyone who saw her would bow before her…..Xiao Yu’er was dreaming about that sight.

After awhile, Tie Xinnan said softly:”You managed to save me from her, it was very difficult what you did. But I think she will hate you very much from now on, you must be careful.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”I am not afraid, she never saw me and does not recognize me. Furthermore, in a real fight I may not be inferior to her.”

Tie Xinnan laughed:”You can’t defeat her. I don’t know who taught her martial arts, but in one year she defeated about 50, 60 martial arts experts.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Those martial arts experts who sell their arts on the market?”

Tie Xinnan said:”Some of them are really good, for instance…..”

Xiao Yu’er said loudly:”That is of no concern now. I would like to see that priceless item of yours.”

Tie Xinnan trembled a bit and said:”What item?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”The item which everyone wants so desperately. The item which you hold more precious than your own life and will rather die than hand it over to those people. Now do you know what item I am talking about?”

Tie Xinnan said:”I don’t know.”

Xiao Yu’er pulled his clothes and said loudly:”I saved your life, I just want to have a look. Are you really that heartless? I just to look, I don’t want to keep it.”

Tie Xinnan said:”Let me go and I will tell you!”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Very well.”

Tie Xinnan sighed:”This is a secret, you can’t tell anyone else.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Who am I going to tell? You, fool. I like you very much; I will protect you from whoever wants to harm you. I won’t tell anyone.”

Tie Xinnan blushed; he raised his head and said softly:”I don’t have the item.”

Xiao Yu’er looked at him for some time and suddenly burst out in laughter.

Tie Xinnan asked:”Why are you laughing?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Do you think I am stupid? Don’t lie to me?”

Tie Xinnan said:”I swear I am not lying.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”If you don’t have the item, why would they come after you? And why are running away from them?”

Tie Xinnan sighed:”The item is in the possession of someone very close to me, I am afraid those people will go after him. That is why I pretend that I have it and lure these people away from him.”

Xiao Yu’er was a bit surprised and said:”Hmm, a diversionary tactic.”

Tie Xinnan said:”Yes.”

Xiao Yu’er sighed:”I never thought you were such a heroic person.”

Tie Xinnan lowered his head and said:”I am not, but that person is my own

brother.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”I understand now, but tell me that is that item everyone wants.”

Tie Xinnan lowered her head even further and said:”It is treasure map.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”A treasure map. If I knew it was something that worthless I would not bothered to ask about it? If I wanted riches I could get it anywhere, why all this trouble.”

He stood up and walked around and frowned:”It is strange that there is a house here.”

Tie Xinnan said:”We have run so long and hard, we must be near a village. This must be a guard house for soldiers to keep watch, but now there is peace in the land there is no need to post guards here anymore.”

Xiao Yu’er walked to the door and smiled:”There is a well.”

Tie Xinnan said:”There are a few bowls in that old cabinet, I will get some water.”

Xiao Yu’er looked at him and said:”Will you run away?”

Tie Xinnan replied:”Why should I run away?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”I know you won’t run off.”

Tie Xinnan did not run away, she came back with a bucket of water. That conceited look on his face was gone, he looked very gentle. He was even willing to do jobs like getting water, washing the bowls and such, tasks which most men will not do and he was doing very accurately.

Xiao Yu’er was very amused, but then he heard the hooves of a horse. Both of

them were startled, fortunately Xiao Yu’er had sharp eyes and saw it was his own white horse. The horse had ran off earlier when the two of them were running, and now it came back to look for its’ master again.

Xiao Yu’er was surprised and happy; he quickly went outside and hugged the head of his horse. He said:”Horsy, you’re a good horse. Tomorrow I will feed you cabbage. Hmm, I have to give you a name too. Her horse was called Cherry, I will name you White Cabbage.”

He looked into the house, but it was very dark and he could not see anything. After a few moments, Tie Xinnan came out with two bowls of water, he was smiling happily:”I have tasted the water, it is very refreshing.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Horsy, should drink too. Give him these two bowls first.”

Tie Xinnan anxiously said:”No…No! I…I have just cleaned these two bowls. Let it drink from the bucket.”

He put one bowl near the well and handed the other to Xiao Yu’er. He hurried inside.

When he came back, Xiao Yu’er was still standing there. Tie Xinnan blinked her eyes and smiled:”Drink, the water is very refreshing.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”I am afraid that the water in the well is poisoned.”

Tie Xinnan laughed:”Impossible! If the water is poisoned I will be dead by now. I just drank a bowl earlier, I am going to drink another bowl now.”

He picked up the bowl near the well and drank it up.

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”I feel safer now.”

He picked up his bowl and drank the water, and poured bowl after bowl.

Evening came and the sky was full of stars now.

Suddenly, Xiao Yu'er yelled out:"Something is wrong! I feel dizzy."

Tie Xinnan looked at him and said:"Just sit down, you will be fine."

Xiao Yu'er said:"There is definitely something wrong, I feel weak all over."

After he finished he fell down and shouted:"Poison….The water is poisoned!"

Tie Xinnan back away with two steps and coldly said:"Don't be afraid. There is no poison in the water, just some sleeping powder in it. You can stay here and have a good long nap, tomorrow morning you will be able to walk again."

Xiao Yu'er panted:"Why did you put sleeping powder in the water?"

Tie Xinnan said:"I can't take you along to where I am going."

Xiao Yu'er said:"You…..You….."

But fatigue took over and he did not speak anymore.

Tie Xinnan laughed:"You're a smart boy, but…."

While he was talking he turned around and wanted to walk away, suddenly his legs felt weak and he fell down too.

His face changed, he got up and tried to walk but after two steps he fell down again. He did not even have the strength to crawl anymore, he said in a crackling voice:"What is going on here?"

Xiao Yu'er said:"Could it be that you put sleeping powder in your own water too?"

Tie Xinnan said:”Impossible! I just put….”

Xiao Yu’er laughed loudly and leapt up.

Tie Xinnan was shocked and said:”You…But…”

Xiao Yu’er clapped his hands and said:”You’re a smart boy too, but compared to me you have still a long way to go. Do you really think I did not see you putting sleeping powder in the water? Let me tell you something, my pair of eyes were washed with top herbal elixirs, I can even find a needle middle in the night.”

Tie Xinnan said with fear:”You switched the bowls?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Yes, I did. But you did not see it. I will tell you something else; I learnt tricks like this when I was two years old. The people who raised me are the patriarchs of using sleeping powder and other substances like that.”

Tie Xinnan tried her best to stay awake and shouted:”What….What do you want to do with me?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”I don’t want to do anything with you. But I just don’t believe what you told me. First I will have to search you thoroughly and see if you really don’t have the map.”

In the beginning Tie Xinnan’s face was as white as paper, but now it turned red, he shouted:”I beg of you don’t…..”

His voice was cracking, his body was trembling too. He tightly held on to his clothes. He kept begging:”Please, I beg of you…..Don’t…..”

Gradually his voice died out and her grip loosened.

Xiao Yu’er looked at him and chuckled. When he stopped moving, Xiao Yu’er knelt beside her and thought the more you plead the more I want to search you.

At this moment, the wind was blowing and a figure appeared. Although the figure did not make a noise and stood behind Xiao Yu’er like a ghost. In the corners of his eyes he could vaguely see that the figure wore red clothes.

Xiao Yu realised who came.

The mysterious figure just stood there, she was very slender and loveable.

She raised her hand and her manner was so refined and beautiful. Like a fairy distributing happiness and love to mortals.

But this hand only distributed death and that hand could take Xiao Yu’er life any time.

Xiao Yu’er seemed unaware of that and said to himself softly:”This man is really strange, why would he sleep here? And he won’t wake up. Hey! Hey, wake up! You will catch a cold sleeping here!”

The hand that wanted to pat down stopped.

Xiao Yu’er was talking to himself:”What should I do? Since I saw him I cannot just leave him here like that. Just my luck to see that well when I was thirsty, and now I am stuck with this fellow.”

The girl in red said:”Don’t you know this man?”

Xiao Yu’er jumped up like he was stuck by needle in his behind. When he turned around he gazed at the figure with big eyes like he saw a ghost.

Xiao Yu’er already knew who came, he saw a reflection in the bucket of water and knew the Little Fairy, Zhang Qing had come. But Xiao Yu’er really had her fooled with his brilliant acting, he looked at her for some time and stuttered:”Little Miss, when did you came in? I…”

Before he could finish, Zhang Qing slapped him in his face. Xiao Yu’er wanted

to dodge but he could not, he was rolling on the ground now.

Zhang Qing coldly said coldly:”How dare you call me [little Miss]!”

Xiao Yu’er covered his mouth and put on a long face, he crawled up and said:”Yes, I understand, honourable Miss….I..”

Before he could finish, he was slapped again.

Zhang Qing sternly said:”I don’t like the way you call me.”

Xiao Yu’er stuttered:”Yes, auntie. I won’t do it again.”

Zhang Qing coldly said:”That is more like it.”

She still sounded very cold, but at least she was not so hostile anymore. She did not understand why she was less hostile now, but one look at Xiao Yu’er she could not stay angry with him.

Xiao Yu’er blinked his eyes and said:”Auntie, don’t be angry. I have an uncle who said that if a person becomes angry his flesh will turn sour. No….No! When people become angry they will become old and ugly. Auntie, you’re so pretty, it will be a shame if you would become old and ugly.”

Surprisingly, Zhang Qing heard him out.

She looked at this boy and thought he was most strange.

She asked:”Do you really think I am pretty?”

When she asked that question, she realised that she became too friendly and immediately slapped Xiao Yu’er again. Her pretty eyes looked stern again and said:”Even if I am, you should not talk about it.”

Xiao Yu’er chuckled to himself and thought this slap was much softer, but he still looked like he was crying and said:”Yes, auntie is very pretty, but I won’t speak of it again.”

Zhang Qing asked:”Tell me, how you came here?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”I came here with a few uncles to do business. Today an uncle bought a new horse for me, and told me to ride and play with it. Although the horse was young, it was very fierce. It ran off and I could not control it and finally it stopped. Now, I don’t know where I am.”

He did not even have to think about making up this story; it just flew out of his mouth. It was such a convincing lie.

Zhang Qing nodded and said:”True, even the most obedient horse can be difficult to ride when it is out of control. And you’re just a small boy.”

She knew from her own experience, that is why she was a bit sympathetic towards the little brat. But she did not know that it was this brat who was responsible for her painful experience.

Xiao Yu’er almost exploded with laughter, but he just said:”Yes, yes. I was riding a wild horse and finally it stopped, when I saw the well I wanted to have a bit of water and that is when I saw sleepyhead here.”

Zhang Qing looked at Tie Xinnan and scoffed:”Do you think he is sleeping?”

Xiao Yu’er exclaimed with surprise:”But what is he doing if he isn’t sleeping.”

Zhang Qing said:”Little brat, let me tell you he is been drugged by someone. Strange, who could have drugged him? Never mind that, I can now search him.”

She did not suspect Xiao Yu’er anymore and talked to herself in his presence. Xiao Yu’er became anxious when he saw her searching Tie Xinnan, but he could not do a thing.

However, she could not find anything after an extensive search. Xiao Yu’er thought: [It seems that the map really isn’t in his possession, but why was he so afraid when I said I would search him.]

Suddenly, Zhang Qing called out:”Darn! The item must be taken by the one who drugged Tie Xinnan. Who could that be? Little brat, get a bucket of water and pour it over him. I want to question him.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Yes, don’t worry. I can even carry ten buckets of water.”

But he pretended to have trouble carrying even one, and when he came back he was panting heavily. He muttered to himself:”How come the bucket is so heavy? I…”

Suddenly he tripped and fell down; the water was splashed on Zhang Qing.

She scolded:”You worthless pig!”

Xiao Yu’er turned pale of fear and crawled up, he took of his clothes clumsily and used it to wipe Zhang Qing’s clothes.

He kept saying:”Auntie, please forgive! It was an accident.”

Zhang Qing angrily said:”You look like human, but you are as useless as stupid pig. If you ruined my clothes, I will kill you.”

She stamped her feet and shook her clothes. Xiao Yu’er hurriedly crawled down to wipe. She was muttering to herself and wanted to kick the stupid pig away.

But before she could lift her leg, the Yinling Quan acupoint of her felt numb. She could not move half her body anymore, she was shocked and yelled:”You, little brat!”

Xiao Yu’er kept saying:”I am sorry, it was an accident. I am very sorry….”

While he was talking, he sealed her Zhongbi, Liangqiu, Pailing acupoints; he sealed all her major acupoints of her leg, with that she fell down.

Zhang Qing may be young, but she had encountered some formidable people in her life. Some of them were infamous rogues, but she never thought that this little brat was ten times more dangerous than those thugs. She never saw through him and was already defeated; she was fuming but could not do a thing.

Xiao Yu'er chortled and deliberately looked at her closely:"Oh, are you ill? Did you catch a cold? Why did you suddenly fall over? I never thought you would be that sickly, a little bit of cold water and you are ill."

Zhang Qing was fuming and said angrily:"Good! Very good! I never imagined you would be so good."

Xiao Yu'er laughed:"I am sorry, it was not my intention. I wanted to give your horse some water, since I burnt his tail and behind I feel a bit remorseful about that. Since you horse is almost completely healed, there is no need for the water. I thought I might as well give it all to you."

Zhang Qing shouted:"So it was you who burnt Cherry's tail."

Xiao Yu'er laughed:"Burning Cherry, drowning Little Fairy, this stupid pig is not that stupid. Let me teach you something, never underestimate anyone and never overestimate yourself. A little girl wanting to be an aunt, always wanting to be superior can only lead to downfall."

He did not care whether Zhang Qing was about to explode with anger; he carried Tie Xinnan in his arms and put her on his white horse. It looked like he was about to leave.

Zhang Qing gritted her teeth, she knew it was best to keep quiet or else she might suffer bigger humiliation.

However, Xiao Yu'er turned around and laughed:"Right! If I have to return

those three slaps you gave me earlier. Seeing that you are a girl, I will settle with returning three slaps back.”

Zhang Qing said with fear:”How dare you?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”I would not dare, I would not dare…”

And then he swung out his palm and slapped Zhang Qing in her face, her cheek was all red. She had never suffered so heavily before in her life.

She yelled:”You….You! You remember this!”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Rest assured! I won’t forget anything. Your first slap was very hard, so I had to return that hard slap back. Your second slap was not so heavy anymore.”

After the second slap, Zhang Qing tried to hold back her tears but in vain. From the day she was born, nobody had ever hit her before.

She was crying and looked at Xiao Yu’er resentfully and said:”I will never forget you! Never! Never!”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”I know you will never be able to forget about me. Women always remember the men who hit them for the first time. And I will feel very happy being remembered by a girl like you.”

He laughed loudly and said:”But I cannot just forget about the third slap, but your third slap was very light. I cannot bear to strike you hard. What do you think I should do?”

Zhang Qing roared:”Drop dead!”

Xiao Yu’er blinked his eyes and laughed:”Well, like this we will call it even!”

He looked into Zhang Qing’s eyes and bent his head forward.

Zhang Qing was trembling now and shouted:”What do you want?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”You used your hand to slap me, I will use my mouth to hit you. I will be much lighter than your hand.”

Zhang Qing shouted:”You, monster! How….”

She could not say the word [dare] anymore, because Xiao Yu’er gently lifter her chin and kissed her softly on her lips.

She stopped yelling and was totally stunned.

Xiao Yu’er sighed:”You’re just 15, 16 years old. How can you be my aunt? You could be my wife; you have a sweet little mouth. I would like kiss your mouth ten times a day, I would still like it.”

Zhang Qing looked at him and said slowly:”If you touch me again, I will kill you…. I will kill you….”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Don’t worry! I will never touch you again; I will never want a bad-tempered girl like you. I wonder who the unlucky fool is who will become your husband.”

Zhang Qing shouted:”Kill me! You would be smart to kill me, if not I will hunt you down and kill you slowly, bit by bit!”

Xiao Yu’er laughed loudly; he turned around and walked to his horse.

Zhang Qing shouted:”Why don’t you kill me? Why? One of these days, you will regret it. I swear you will regret it!”

Xiao Yu’er laughed and pulled his horse along as he walked.

Zhang Qing looked at him walking away till he was out of sight, she could not

hold back her tears anymore and cried.

She could hear Xiao Yu'er sing a song:"Poor little fairy…. Weeping and crying! If Xiao Yu'er hears it, he will clap his hands and laugh heartily."

As he walked he kept singing, he noticed that his singing voice was quite good. At least it sounded better than the weeping sounds of Zhang Qing.

He stopped singing when he could not hear Zhang Qing's crying anymore. He rubbed his face and sighed, but suddenly he started to laugh loudly again.

That little tigress was really fierce, his cheeks still ached. But her lips were sweet and soft, it seemed that delicious taste was still in his mouth. He started to run forward again, his white horse followed. But soon his horse began to pant and then it stopped, it lied down to rest. It was too tired to continue. The sky was vast in the prairie, the stars were bright and the evening wind was cool, Xiao Yu'er soon fell asleep. He dreamt he was holding Zhang Qing in his arms, and she told him:"Every day you can only give a hundred kisses. Just a hundred and no more, but I expect at least a hundred a day."

When he was about to kiss Zhang Qing, she leapt up and slapped him. But something is wrong, someone really slapped him. Could it be that Zhang Qing had returned? He woke up startled and saw Tie Xinnan. It was Tie Xinnan who slapped him; he also poured water on Xiao Yu'er.

Under the stars, the beautiful eyes of Tie Xinnan were filled with anger, he bit his lip and said:"You, brat! Like everyone else, you have to sleep too! You have finally fallen into my hands now."

Xiao Yu'er wanted to jump up, but he could not move anymore. His acupoints were sealed, but he was neither angry nor anxious. He chortled:"I was having such a nice dream, you disturb my beautiful dream you have pay now. I was about to kiss someone a hundred times, you have to let me kiss you a hundred times."

Tie Xinnan was trembling and said:"What did you do to me?"

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Nothing special. I just searched you from top to toe and covered every spot of your body.”

Tie Xinnan trembled even harder now, her face was so red it was showing even in the dark. She was so upset now, that she could not speak.

Xiao Yu’er blinked his eyes and sighed:”Why didn’t you tell me that you were a girl? If I knew I would not have searched you. You should know that although I am young I am still a man, how could I control myself…”

Tie Xinnan shouted:”Shut up! Shut up! If you say another word, I will kill you!”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”I have done it already, does it really matter if I keep quiet about it.”

Tie Xinnan gritted her teeth and she burst into tears.

Xiao Yu’er made a funny face and said:”It seems that you have no choice but to marry me. I have to take an older woman as my wife. (*Sigh) When I am 30, you will be an old hag.”

Tie Xinnan pulled a dagger from her shoe and said in a shaky voice:”What last words do you have? Say it now!”

Xiao Yu’er exclaimed with surprise:”You really want to kill me? I don’t mind if you want to marry someone else, I won’t object. Why do you have to kill me?”

Tie Xinnan gritted her teeth and said:”If you have nothing to say, I will….”

Xiao Yu’er wanted to burst out with laughter, but he could not. He could almost cry, because she really believed that lie of his.

Women?!? Are they smart of dumb?

Xiao Yu’er smiled wryly:”I beg of you marry someone else. I don’t care who you

want to marry, as long it isn't me. I really can't stand it."

Tie Xinnan shouted:"Are these your final words? Good!"

She tightened her grip on her dagger and was about to stab Xiao Yu'er in the chest.

Xiao Yu'er yelled:"I have something to say! Wait! Wait!"

Tie Xinnan stamped her feet and said:"Be quick about it!"

Xiao Yu'er sighed:"I have something to say, I hope you can tell it to all the men in the world. Tell them never to save anyone and especially women. If they see a woman about to be killed, never burn the tail of a horse. Instead set fire to their own arses and run in the opposite direction."

Tie Xinnan said:"Yes, you did save my life. But….I…"

She sat down and started to weep, she wept and said:"What can I do? What should I do?"

Xiao Yu'er gently said:"Don't worry, just kill me. Don't let the worries get to you, let me die. If I can die at your hands I will be happy too."

Although he said that he was secretly watching Tie Xinnan, she was crying harder and harder. Xiao Yu'er felt smart and thought: [I finally know how to deal with women. You have reach their hearts, and when you have succeeded, they will listen to you and be obedient."

While he began to feel proud, Tie Xinnan stopped crying and leapt up and ran away.

Xiao Yu'er was shocked and shouted:"You cannot leave me behind like this! What will happen if wolves or tigers come? Even worse, what if Zhang Qing catches up with me? Do you know that I saved you again earlier?"

He shouted loudly, but Tie Xinnan could not hear him.

The wind was cool; the sky was filled with beautiful, shining starts. But Xiao Yu’er was certainly not enjoying it.

In fact he was angry and muttered to himself:”Jiang Yu! Who can you blame but yourself. Why did you have to antagonize women? It is your own fault if you’re eaten by wolves or killed by Zhang Qing.”

His white little horse walked next to him and started to neigh.

Xiao Yu’er said:”Little Cabbage, my words are true. The next time if you see a man trying to strangle a woman with a rope, get a longer and thicker rope for him. Or if you see a man about to kill a woman with a knife, help him to sharpen the knife.”

His white horse neighed and ran off.

Xiao Yu’er smiled wryly:”Even you are not reliable, you must be a mare.”

He noticed that White Cabbage ran towards a person, that person just stood there not moving. It was Tie Xinnan, she came back.

Xiao Yu’er was surprised and happy, but he stayed silent. White Cabbage went over to her and neighed softly. She slowly walked over; in the blowing wind she looked very elegant.

Xiao Yu’er sighed and thought: [I should have seen that she is a woman. Only women walk that elegantly.]

Tie Xinnan stood next to him; Xiao Yu’er closed his eyes deliberately.

She said melancholically:”I know you’ve done nothing to me.”

Xiao Yu’er finally laughed:”You only found out now?”

Tie Xinnan said:”I thought you….That is why….”

Xiao Yu’er said:”For the love of heaven, please speak up.”

Tie Xinnan lowered her head and said earnestly:”Are you willing to accompany me to a certain place?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Of course I am willing, but first you have to unseal my acupoints. I don’t suppose you will carry me on the way to that place of yours.”

Tie Xinnan’s face became redder and laughed; she bent over and gently patted Xiao Yu’er a few times and unsealed his acupoints. It seemed that she was afraid to hurt Xiao Yu’er.

Xiao Yu’er smiled wryly:”When you sealed my acupoints, you were most harsh. But now you’re all weak and meek. Women, women….”

He got up and spat on the ground.

Tie Xinnan turned her back to Xiao Yu’er and said softly:”Originally, I did not want you to go with me. But now, but now I know you’re very kind to me.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”You did not know it earlier?”

Tie Xinnan said:”I did not want you to go with me, because the place where I am going is very secretive…”

Xiao Yu’er asked:”Where do you want to go anyway?”

Tie Xinnan slowly said:”It is near Mount Kunlun…”

Xiao Yu’er exclaimed with surprise:”The Valley of Evil? Are you planning to go

to the Valley of Evil?”

Tie Xinnan turned around and said with shock:”How did you know?”

Xiao Yu’er hit himself lightly on the head and muttered to himself:”Oh heaven! This girl asks me about the Valley of Evil, I know everything about the Valley of Evil.”

Tie Xinnan looked at him completely surprised and asked:”How come?”

Xiao Yu’er answered:”Don’t ask me that first. Please tell me, why you want to go the Valley of Evil. You don’t look like the sort to go to the Valley of Evil.”

Tie Xinnan said:”I…I am going there to look for someone.”

Xiao Yu’er asked:”Who?”

Tie Xinnan said:”You would not know even if I told you.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”You should know, that I know everyone in the Valley of Evil.”

Tie Xinnan was surprised and said:”You…”

Xiao Yu’er interrupted her:”I grew up in the Valley of Evil.”

Tie Xinnan’s expression changed and said:”I don’t believe you.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”You don’t believe me? Well, only a place like the Valley of Evil can produce someone like me. Can you think of any place else?”

Tie Xinnan was a bit dumbfounded for a moment, but soon she smiled sweetly:”I can’t think of any place else. I should have known.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Can you now tell me who you are looking for?”

Tie Xinnan lowered her head and stayed silent for a moment, she then slowly said:”I am looking for someone who has the same surname as me, Tie. He is very famous.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Could it be that you’re looking for one of the Ten Great Malevolents, the Mad Lion Tie Zhan?”

Tie Xinnan lifted her head and exclaimed with shock:”Do you know him? Is he really there?”

Xiao Yu’er smiled:”You are very fortunate to have meet me, otherwise you would have gone there in vain. Who told you that the Mad Lion was there? You should really beat that person up.”

Before Tie Xinnan could respond, she had passed out.

Tie Xinnan rode the horse and Xiao Yu’er pulled the reins and walked. Both of them did not speak.

It was night now, it was cold and quiet and the vast prairie seemed limitless but it was not.

After a long journey, they finally left the prairie behind. The wonderful, simple but mesmerizing prairie had left a deep impression behind in Xiao Yu’er’s heart.

But Xiao Yu’er did not look back, what he left behind was over. No point on dwelling on it. Tie Xinnan looked very pale, but she was still very pretty. Ever since Xiao Yu’er found out she was a girl, he noticed that she was prettier than most girls. Furthermore, he noticed she was more fragile than he imagined. Ever since she heard Tie Zhan was not in the valley, she did not speak or moved. If the white horse were not here, she would not have been able to travel either. Xiao Yu’er could not help it but sigh and think: [Women, women. They cannot cope with setbacks, the ugly ones cannot and the pretty ones cannot either.]

But he did not speak out his thoughts; he could not be bothered by it.

Suddenly, Tie Xinnan spoke softly. She still had tears in her eyes, but she did not look at Xiao Yu'er:"Why won't you talk?"

Xiao Yu'er said:"Since you do not speak, why should I talk?"

Tie Xinnan asked:"But don't you have questions?"

Xiao Yu'er answered:"Why should I ask questions? I know everything."

Tie Xinnan said:"You know everything?"

Xiao Yu'er smiled casually:"You were forced to flee from your home, so you decided to look for your father. Although you do not really like him, perhaps you even left him when you were young. Or even abandoned by him, but he is still your father."

Tie Xinnan's eyes glared up and looked at Xiao Yu'er, she asked:"My father? Who is my father?"

Xiao Yu'er answered:"The Mad Lion, Tie Zhan."

Tie Xinnan exclaimed with shock:"Who? Who told you that?"

Xiao Yu'er yawned and said:"I told myself! I know that women won't confess the truth even if they are confronted by it. So, I don't need you to acknowledge it."

Tie Xinnan stared at him, like she never saw him before. This boy is not human, he is a little demon. He is an oracle.

After some time, she finally asked:"How…How did you know?"

Xiao Yu’er continued:”I also your name is not [nan] as in “man.” But it is actually Tie Xinlan, [lan] as in orchid. That should be a name that is worthy of you.”

Tie Xinnan stuttered:”Yes, …you’re right. My name is Tie Xinlan.”

Xiao Yu’er smiled:”I know you must be quite flustered now and you do not know where you should go now. That is why I did not speak, I wanted to give you some peace to think things over.”

Tie Xinlan smiled wryly:”How old are you? Sometimes I am quite frightened, I don’t know if you’re a boy or some….”

Xiao Yu’er interrupted:”Demon?”

Tie Xinlan sighed softly:”I sometimes think you are the personification of an oracle, how else can you guess the thoughts of other people?”

Xiao Yu’er seriously said:”Because I am smarter than anyone in the world.”

Tie Xinlan said melancholically:”Perhaps you’re right…”

Xiao Yu’er asked:”Have you thought it out?”

Tie Xinlan asked:”What do you mean?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Do you know what you are going to do?”

Tie Xinlan lowered her head and said:”I….I…”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Well, you should hurry up. I can’t stay here and keep you company forever.”

Tie Xinlan lifted her head and her face was whiter than paper and exclaimed

with shock:”You…you can’t?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Of course I can’t.”

Tie Xinlan said softly:”But….But…”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Yes, initially I wanted to accompany you. We could have roamed the realm together, but since you’re a girl this plan cannot go through. I can’t have you as my disciple anymore.”

Tie Xinlan shrieked:”You….You…You…”

Xiao Yu’er said:”We’re not related, we’re not really friends. Why should we keep each other company? Furthermore, I have a lot of things to do, I can’t be stuck with a woman the entire time.”

Tie Xinlan felt like she was horsewhipped, she was stunned and trembled. After a long while she smiled sadly:”We’re not friends nor are we related….You can go now…”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Are you…”

Tie Xinlan turned around and sneered:”You have your own places to go, you don’t have to worry about me.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”I am afraid you are not fit to walk, I will give you this horse.”

Tie Xinlan bit her lip and said:”Thank you, but I don’t need your horse. I don’t need anything from you….You…”

She dismounted and immediately turned her head around. She did not want to look at Xiao Yu’er, because she did not want him to see her tears.

Xiao Yu’er pretended not to see that, he took the reins and laughed:”It is good that you don’t need a horse. Because I’ve grown to like my horse. I would be

saddened if I should part with White Cabbage.”

Tie Xinlan said in shaky voice:”I…I…” She wanted to say: [I am even inferior to a horse? Aren’t you saddened if we should part?]

But she did not say that, her heart was shattered.

Xiao Yu’er said:”Very well, I am off. Take good care of yourself.”

Tie Xinlan did not turn back, she heard him mount the horse, whip it and riding off. He left, just like that.

Xiao Yu’er could not keep quiet anymore and shouted:”Of course I will take good care of myself. I don’t need your hypocritical care. I would rather die than to see you again.”

She fell down and started to cry.

Xiao Yu’er did not hear her crying. In any event, he at least pretended not to hear her. He patted the head of the horse and muttered:”You see how smart I am, like that I have freed myself from a woman. You should know that women are not easily dealt with.”

As he rode on, he did not look back. After a long time, he muttered to the horse again:”White Cabbage, can you guess where she is off to? You don’t know, do you? To tell you the truth, I don’t know either. Shall we wait and spy on her?”

White Cabbage could not talk back, although he could disagree.

Xiao Yu’er dismounted and muttered again:”Just knowing a few secrets of a girl won’t do any harm. And we have no urgent matters at hand. There is no harm in waiting, is it?”

White Cabbage could not talk back; Xiao Yu’er was just looking for reasons for him to wait. The good thing about horses or other animals is that at least they

cannot expose you or betray your true intentions.

Tie Xinlan did not come this way, could she have taken another direction? But this is the only way, could it be that she lost her way? Or could it be….

Xiao Yu’er suddenly mounted his horse and shouted:”Go! White Cabbage, we’re going to see what she is doing? You should know that I am not worried about her well-being. I don’t have feelings for anyone in this world.”

While he was talking, White Cabbage had already taken off faster than he came. In a few moments, they returned to where they parted with Tie Xinlan. Xiao Yu’er saw Tie Xinlan.

She was lying on the ground, not crying nor moving.

Xiao Yu’er flew down from his horse and yelled:”This is not the place to sleep!”

Tie Xinlan trembled and crawled up yelling:”Go away! Who told you to come back? Why have you come back?”

In the dark, Xiao Yu’er saw the face of Tie Xinlan was all red a bit too red, almost purple. Her slender body was trembling and every word she said took a lot of her energy.

Xiao Yu’er exclaimed:”You’re ill!”

Tie Xinlan scoffed:”Even if I am, that is none of your business. We’re not friends, nor related, why should you care?”

She managed to stand up, but was about to fall down again.

Xiao Yu’er said:”I want to care now!”

He held her up and touched her cheek with his other hand. She was burning.

Tie Xinlan was pushing away Xiao Yu’er’s hand and said in a weak voice:”Don’t touch me!”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Too late, I am not letting go.” With that he lifted her in his arms.

Tie Xinlan shouted:”Let me go! Don’t touch me!”

She was resisting and yelling, but she could not break free from his grip and her voice became weaker and weaker. She used her fists to hit Xiao Yu’er, but even her hits were soft and weak.

Xiao Yu’er said:”You’re very ill, you could die! If you don’t listen to me, I will remover your trousers and spank you! You should know that I am not joking now.”

Tie Xinlan yelled:”You….you….”

She put her head on Xiao Yu’er chest and started to weep loudly.

The end of chapter 6

Chapter 8

Chapter 7 Shock and Fear

Tie Xinlan was seriously ill. When they arrived at Haiyan, Xiao Yu’er found the best inn and asked for the best room. The best room was already occupied by someone else, Xiao Yu’er just said:”If you leave, this ingot of gold is yours.” With that he put an ingot of gold on the table.

All he said were nine words; the occupant took the gold and left as soon as he could. Gold cannot speak, but it is more useful than saying a hundred or thousand words.

Because Tie Xinlan endured disappointment, fear, sorrow, anxiety and the cold wind of the prairie made normally very healthy and strong Tie Xinlan ill. She had a high fever and slept for an entire day.

When she woke up, she saw Xiao Yu’er boiling some herbal medicine. She tried to get up but Xiao Yu’er pushed her down. Tie Xinlan groaned:”Why? Why have…?” Xiao Yu’er said loudly:”Don’t open your mouth!”

She saw bags under Xiao Yu’er’s eyes, it seemed he did not have a proper night of sleep for some time now. She started to cry again.

Xiao Yu’er walked over to her with a bowl of herbal medicine soup and said:”Don’t cry and drink this up! This is a very good prescription and this is best herbal soup. After drinking it, you will feel better again. Stop crying like a child, or else I will spank you.”

Tie Xinlan asked:”Who prescribed this?”

Xiao Yu’er answered:”I did.”

Tie Xinlan said:”You’re a physician too? Are there things you don’t know?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Keep your mouth shut and drink up!”

She smiled sweetly:”If I am not allowed to open my mouth, how I am going to drink your soup.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed; he suddenly noticed that girls could be very cute too. Especially, when they are smiling sweetly to you.

At dusk, Tie Xinlan was sleeping again.

Xiao Yu’er walked around in the inn aimlessly and muttered to himself:”Jiang Yu! Don’t forget, when girls smile to you they want to harm you! The gentler they are, the more dangerous your situation is. If you’re not careful, your life will be over.”

His white horse was in the stables eating grass.

Xiao Yu’er walked over and caressed his head and said:”White Cabbage, don’t worry! I won’t fall for their tricks, when she is better again I will leave at once.”

He suddenly heard horses coming this way from and stopping in front of the inn. The inn was small, but it had everything even a fine wine house.

Xiao Yu’er heard that these people came here in a hurry and decided to have a look.

From afar, he could see four, five muscular men entering the inn. They were not talking to each other and found a table and sat down. The proprietor was afraid to ask and immediately put a bottle of liquor and cups down at their table. These people just sat there, dumbfounded.

They wore expensive brocades and had swords hanging from their girdles, they looked quite impressive. But their cheeks were red and swollen, like they were slapped numerous times by someone.

After some time, two more men came in. They looked even worse, their cheeks were red and swollen too but they also had no ears. There was bloody bandage tied around where their ears supposed to be.

The first five men stared at the two newcomers totally surprised. When those two noticed the other five, they wanted to leave but it was too late. They had been seen.

Xiao Yu'er was amused and decided to hide and watch what was going on here.

Could the two groups be enemies? And they were so unfortunate to meet each other here and were going to fight each other. Xiao Yu'er did not want to go in and be involved in this.

But they were not fighting; they just looked at each other.

A muscular man of the group of five with pimples, although you could not see his red pimples clearly now due to the redness and swelling of his cheeks, he looked at those two men for a moment and laughed:"Protecting silver peacefully into Anxi…. I have heard that the two great escort guards of the Anxi guard agency never lose anything. How come you have lost your ears now? Most peculiar!"

When he laughed his cheeks hurt incredibly, but he could not help himself. Later on he covered his mouth with his hands and it looked like he was crying more than laughing.

The two men were fuming and their eyes were red now, the man on the left with a scar said coldly:"You should not laugh when your face has been slapped red and swollen. The pain will ruin the laughter."

The man with pimples slammed his hand on the table and shouted:”What did you say?”

The man with the scar sneered:”We should make fun of each other, we’re both in the same predicament now.”

The man with the pimples jumped up and wanted to go over, the man with the scar stood up too. Xiao Yu’er thought: [They are going to fight now.”

But before they could fight, their companions to pulled them down.

The one who pulled down the man with pimples was an elderly man with a long beard. His face was not that red and swollen as the rest. He shook his hands and said with an enforced smile:”The Anxi and the Dingyuan guard agency have been rivals for a long time. Competing with each other and trying to snatch away each other’s businesses, but that is just business rivalry. We are all martial artists in the realm, let us not fight now and create more problems.”

The companion who pulled down the man with scar was a skinny man, he said with an enforced smile too:”Brother Ouyang is right. We’re all sent here to this forsaken place by our guard agencies, that is already very unfortunate. We should create even more problems now.”

The elder man with the surname Ouyang sighed:”Furthermore, we all suffered at the hands of the same person. We should unite ourselves instead of fighting each other.”

The skinny man said with surprise:”Were you assaulted by her too?”

The Ouyang elderly man smiled wryly:”Who else could it be? Who else could be that lethal and vicious? We really suffered terribly at her hands.”

With that he and the other six men sighed deeply and sat down again.

All seven of them had a different facial expression, but all had anger and hatred in their eyes.

The man with the pimples slammed his fist on the table and said angrily:”If we did something wrong and that little wretch would punish us, we would have nothing to say. But for no reason she just beat us up.”

The Ouyang elder sighed:”The weaker will be bullied by the strong, which is the universal rule of the realm. I am not looking down on us, but our martial arts are nowhere near the level of her. Even if we are unhappy, what can we do about it.”?

The skinny man suddenly laughed:”But looking at that wretch it seems that she suffered a bit too at the hands of someone too. Her eyes were red; like she had been weeping bitterly and even her precious horse is gone. We just had the sheer luck of meeting her when she was furious, and she used us to vent her anger.”

The man with the pimples laughed:”Brother Xu is right. That little wretch must have met someone more formidable than her, or she could have met a handsome young fellow and lost her heart and horse to him.”

All of them laughed, even if their cheeks hurt a lot. But at least they felt a bit better and happy again.

Xiao Yu’er immediately understood that they met the Little Fairy, Zhang Qing. He too experienced her slapping methods at first hand. But these people suffered even harder than he did, she must have taken out her frustration and anger out on them.

Xiao Yu’er wanted to laugh too, but suddenly he noticed that the seven men stopped laughing. He took a look and saw that their faces were all frozen and their eyes gazed at the door, they broke out in a cold sweat.

Zhang Qing was standing at the door and slowly:”I told you to look for someone, why are you here drinking?”

Xiao Yu’er’s heart skipped a beat, he remained calm and slowly backed out. He knew very well, he was the person Zhang Qing was looking for.

Fortunately, it was dark now. Only lamps inside the rooms were lit and it was very dark outside. Xiao Yu'er drew back along the corner of a wall, he continued to back away to the stable.

He could not be seen by Zhang Qing, his horse could not be seen by her either. Unfortunately, his horse was a bit too white.

There was pool of mud near the stable, Xiao Yu'er grabbed some mud and smeared it on his horse. His horse wanted to neigh; he quickly stuffed his mouth with hay. He patted his horse and said softly:"White Cabbage, don't make a sound! I am sorry, but it is your own fault for being so white. You're even whiter than the skin of Tie Xinlan."

While he was talking, his white horse was all dirty and muddy. Xiao Yu'er laughed when he saw this and wiped his hands on the tail. He quickly returned to the room.

The lamps were not lit and Tie Xinlan was awake. She looked at Xiao Yu'er with her pretty, shiny eyes, she immediately grabbed Xiao Yu'er arm and screamed:"Where are my boots?"

Xiao Yu'er said:"Your boots? Those old boots of yours?"

Tie Xinlan panted:"Yes, that pair of boots."

Xiao Yu'er said:"The soles were almost gone, so I threw them in the sewer canal."

Tie Xinlan was trembling and repeated:"Threw away?"

Xiao Yu'er laughed:"Even beggars won't want those old, worn out boots of yours, why are you so anxious about them? I bought you a new pair, a hundred times better than the old ones."

Tie Xinlan jumped off the bed and said with a shaky voice:"Where did you

dump them? Take me there….”

Xiao Yu’er said pulled her arm and said:”You need not go.”

Tie Xinlan stamped her feet and said:”You, idiot! I want to look for those boots, I have hidden…”

Xiao Yu’er blinked his eyes and asked:”What have you hidden?”

Tie Xinlan said:”That item! That thing…. I almost list my life for it and now it is gone. I wish I was dead.”

Xiao Yu’er asked:”Didn’t you say that you did not have it?”

Tie Xinlan was weeping and said:”I lied to you.”

Xiao Yu’er sighed:”Who told you to lie to me? Now, you’ve done it. I just chucked it away and I don’t remember where I threw it away.”

Tie Xinlan fell on the bed and could not move anymore, she stuttered:”Everything is gone now….”

Xiao Yu’er smiled:”It is just a piece of wrinkled, old paper. What is the fuss about it? Don’t let the anxiety make you ill again.”

Tie Xinlan immediately got up and asked:”How did you know it is a piece of paper?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”If you’re talking about that piece of paper, I already took it out of your boots. Not only is it old and wrinkle, it is smelly too. It smells like sweat.”

Tie Xinlan threw herself into his arms and hit him on the chest, she smiled and yelled:”You’re horrible! Why did you trick me?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”You lied to me first. I already guessed that it was hidden in your boots. But, I never thought you would hide it there, you are quite clever.”

Tie Xinlan said:”You’re the clever one, nothing can deceive you. You really scared the living daylights out of me.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Are you not afraid now? I have the map now.”

Tie Xinlan lowered her head and said:”Why should I be afraid when it is in your possession?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Are you not afraid I won’t return it to you?”

Tie Xinlan said:”I am not afraid.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Alright, I am not giving it back.”

Tie Xinlan said gently:”I am giving it to you.”

Xiao Yu’er looked at her with surprise and said:”But you were willing to die for it than seeing other people take it”

Tie Xinlan said:”You’re different from the rest.”

Xiao Yu’er did not understand why, but he felt happy and a sweet feeling overwhelmed him.

But immediately he convinced himself: [Jiang Yu, be careful! This sweet feeling is dangerous.]

He wanted to push her away, but he could not bear to do that.

Tie Xinlan slowly asked:”Where did you go earlier?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Outside and I saw someone.”

Tie Xinlan asked:”Who?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”You know her too, unfortunately I know her too.”

Tie Xinlan exclaimed with fear:”Zhang Qing?”

Xiao Yu’er nodded and said:”Yes, it’s her.”

Tie Xinlan said with a trembling voice:”Where is she now?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Open the window and you might see her.”

Tie Xinlan felt cold all over and said:”She…she is outside. How can you joke at a time like this?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Even if she stood in front of me I would still joke.”

Tie Xinlan bit her lip and said:”You….What shall we do?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Now, the only thing we can do is run. We….”

Before he could finish, he heard a loud voice yelling:”Open up! When we tell you to open the door, you should open! Don’t ask questions about what we want!”

With that they heard a door being kicked open.

Xiao Yu’er sighed:”We can’t run anymore.”

Tie Xinlan looked pale and said in high voice:”It seems Zhang Qing is going to search every room. She must have found out that we were staying in the area. But they have not found us yet, let us run while we still can.”

She pulled Xiao Yu’er arm and wanted to jump out of the window.

Xiao Yu’er shook his head and said:”That won’t work, they will immediately know it is us. Zhang Qing will come after us and we can’t escape from her.”

Tie Xinlan broke out in a cold sweat and said:”What can we do?”

Xiao Yu’er smiled:”Don’t worry, I have a plan.”

Suddenly they heard a female voice shouting:”Get out! Get out now! How dare you barge in without knocking!”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Perhaps that woman was taking a bath.”

He was not anxious at all, he was chuckling and too out small old bag.

Tie Xinlan asked:”What is that?”

Xiao Yu’er answered:”One of my treasures, I stole this from someone with someone with the surname Du.”

He took out a pack of things; sticky, soft. It looked like a combination of dried bean curd and human skin.

Tie Xinlan looked at it and suddenly said:”Is it human skin?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Good eyesight!”

He took out two pieces gently and said:”Take off your outer clothes, stuff them anywhere. And then put on this mantle….Good, now come here with your face.”

She close her eyes and felt her face was cool and her body got goose bumps all over. When she opened her eyes, Xiao Yu’er face had changed too.

He had wrinkles all over his face but he did not have a beard.

Tie Xinlan could not help herself but to laugh softly:”You really are something. You turned into a short old man.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”A short old man and an old woman.”

The footsteps and voices were nearing their room.

Xiao Yu’er was not flustered and took out a beard from the bag and attached it on his mouth. He took a bottle of silver powder and sprinkled on the hair of Tie Xinlan. Both of them had greyish hair, Xiao Yu’er then took out some pens of different sizes and began to draw something on Tie Xinlan’s face.

The footsteps were getting very close now; they were almost at their door.

Tie Xinlan was feeling cold and her limbs were weak.

Xiao Yu’er remained calm and kept saying softly:”Don’t be afraid, don’t be afraid. My art of disguise is not perfect yet, but it is sufficient to deceive them.”

Now, the footsteps could be heard outside their door.

Xiao Yu’er cleaned everything up in a go and held Tie Xinlan’s arm and said:”We’re leaving now. We’re going to through the main door.”

Tie Xinlan exclaimed with fear:”The main door?”

But her voice had gone hoarse now; Xiao Yu’er calmly opened the door.

In front of them stood the men with the red and swollen cheeks, they had just arrived at their door. Zhang Qing stood behind them in her fiery red dress.

Xiao Yu’er did not lift his head and said:”Sirs, please make way. My wife has eaten something wrong and is terribly ill. If we don’t see a physician soon, I am afraid she will die.”

His voice sounded old and hoarse, he sounded like an old, anxious man. Tie Xinlan was trembling and looked like a sickly old woman.

All the men made way at once, they were afraid to infected by the old woman. The man with pimples covered his nose and frowned:”Suddenly falling ill in the 6th Month, it must be malaria. Why else would she tremble in cold?”

Xiao Yu’er sighed and walked slowly through them. Tie Xinlan almost fainted, she wished she had wings and could fly off now. She did not understand how Xiao Yu’er was able to keep calm at such a time.

When they finally passed Zhang Qing and were in the main courtyard, Zhang Qing carefully looked at them. It seems that she was not suspicious for a bit.

However, after a few more steps, they heard a clang sound. Zhang Qing drew a sabre from one of the men and hacked at the head of Xiao Yu’er.

Tie Xinlan was so shocked that she went numb, but Xiao Yu’er did notice that hack. He allowed it the sabre to reach his head and the possibility that his head could be split into two. He continued to walk slowly through the courtyard. The sabre halted a few centimetres from his head.

All those men sighed with relief and thought: [The little wretch is very paranoid, she even wanted to kill an old harmless man.]

Xiao Yu’er seemed to be unaware of everything, when he reached the stables he pulled out his disguised horse and stuttered:”I can’t leave you even if the old woman has fallen ill.”

Tie Xinlan was so tensed and her sight was blurred, her clothes were soaked with sweat. She wanted to pinch Xiao Yu’re very hard, for even going to get the horse instead of running off.

Now, Xiao Yu’er and Tie Xinlan were on the main street. Tie Xinlan still did not realize how they escaped, it was like a dream. She let Xiao Yu’er help her mount the horse and Xiao Yu’er was stilling pulling the reins and slowly pulled the horse along.

Tie Xinlan said anxiously:”Please, I beg of you. Let us leave as fast as possible.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”No, we can’t do that. They might still be watching us. If we run, we will be uncovered. Look at this beautiful night, let us enjoy the scenery. It is most idyllic.”

Tie Xinlan sighed deeply; she was totally bemused by Xiao Yu’er. He wanted to enjoy the lovely night scenery now, it seemed there was no end to the street.

They reached the outskirts; they had left the lights of the lamps behind them.

Tie Xinlan sighed deeply and smiled wryly:”You…You…. I can never guess what is going on in your heart.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Heart? I don’t have a heart. I have everything else, but I don‘t have a heart.”

Tie Xinlan bit her lip and smiled at him:”But when she did not stop that hack, you would be dead by now.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”I knew al along that she only used that sabre to test me. If she really saw through my disguise, she would have drawn her own weapon and attacked me.”

Tie Xinlan sighed:”You’re right. You are really remarkable that you can think of that in such a dire situation. Are you never afraid?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Do you think I am not afraid? Let me tell you something, I am very afraid of dying. I think only madmen are not afraid of death.”

Tie Xinlan smiled sweetly:”Where are we going now?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”We can go anywhere, no one recognizes us. However, you’re still ill….”

Tie Xinlan smiled:”I broke out in a sweat when I was scared by them earlier. I think I am better now; I have some strength in my limbs now. Strange, isn’t it?”

Xiao Yu’er asked:”Can you walk?”

Tie Xinlan said:”Yes, I can. If you don’t believe me I can dismount and walk a bit for you.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Very well, dismount. Because I have to go now.”

Tie Xinlan’s body shook and exclaimed:”What are you saying?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”We already parted earlier, didn’t we? It was because you were ill, I had to take care of you. Now you’re better, we should go our separate ways.”

Tie Xinlan’s face turned pale, even paler and scarier when she heard Zhang Qing came. She started to tremble again and tears welled up in her eyes, she screamed:”Are you…are you going to leave? Really….”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Of course. You already gave me the map and I saved your life. We’re even now.”

Tie Xinlan was crying and bit her lip:”Haven’t you got a heart? Have you really lost it? Did wild dogs ate your heart when you were young?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Yes, you’re right.”

Tie Xinlan said:”You….You….”

She raised her hand and slapped him very hard.

Xiao Yu’er did not dodge and looked at her, he said casually:”Fortunately, my heart was eaten by wild dogs. I should thank those dogs, if the hearts of men are captured by women they will suffer a fate worse than death.”

Tie Xinlan was weeping bitterly and fell down from the horse, she continued to cry:”You’re not a human! You’re awful!…”

Xiao Yu’er pulled her up and smiled:”Goodbye! It does not matter whether I am a human or not. At least I am not an idiot who will be moved by women’s tears.”

A cold voice from behind said:”You’re not an idiot, you’re very intelligent. Perhaps a bit too intelligent.”

The voice sounded both cold and beautiful, it was the voice of the Little Fairy, Zhang Qing.

Tie Xinlan immediately stopped crying, Xiao Yu’er trembled for a moment. But he did not turn around, he just sighed:”My good wife, why are you crying? You won’t die, let us see the physician first, if we’re too slow he close up.”

Zhang Qing coldly said:”Are you finished? Yes, your disguise is excellent. But it is too late for you to find a doctor, no doctor in this world can save you know.”

Xiao Yu’er stood there, not moving, Tie Xinlan did not move either.

Zhang Qing asked:”What do you have to say?”

Xiao Yu’er suddenly turned around and laughed:”Very good! I saw through my disguise, but how did you do that? Could you tell me?”

Zhang Qing sneered:”When I hacked at you, even if a deaf man can hear the whooshing sound of the blade. If you really were an old feeble man, you would

roll on the ground out of fear. It was improbable for an ordinary old man to walk away that casually."

Xiao Yu'er tilted his head and thought for a moment, he sighed:"You're right! You're smart too, smarter than I thought."

Zhang Qing said:"You found that out a bit too late."

Xiao Yu'er laughed:"Don't be conceited either! I deceived you at least for a while. You found out a bit too late too, if I wasn't dragged behind I would have been gone a long time ago. And you would not have the chance to catch up with me now."

Zhang Qing was not angered and scoffed:"If you are really that clever, you would be able to think of a plan to escape. If you can't, your head is useless and you might as well cut if off."

Xiao Yu'er chortled:"Why should I think of a plan? Do you really think I can't defeat you? I was just lazy to fight you earlier on. People say that men should not fight with women, I…."

Before he could finish, Zhang Qing's palm was almost in his face. It was a normal palm technique, but it was very fast. Incredibly fast, if you did not see it you won't even believe that someone could be that swift.

Xiao Yu'er was watching her as he spoke, being on guard. But he could not avoid that palm, he twisted his body but he was still hit. Three fingertips hit him on the face and left three red imprints.

Zhang Qing had attacked now with her second stance.

Xiao Yu'er shouted:"Stop! Good men should not fight with women! Stop!"

Zhang Qing ignored his shouts, she hated to awful boy. Her face was white and in a matter of moments, she attacked him with 20, 30 stances.

Xiao Yu’er could not see the brilliance of her stances; Xiao Yu’er could easily every attacking technique.

But when her technique actually came, Xiao Yu’er had to avoid that attack most awkwardly. He changed a dozen movements, even groping the chest of the opponent. But he noticed that he could not retaliate in time. Every time he wanted to retaliate, Zhang Qing’s new stance had already come. With great difficulty he could avoid the attack, and when he wanted to counter-attack her third attack had begun. It was simply dodging and avoiding for Xiao Yu’er.

Tie Xinlan looked at the fight and all she saw was red flashy figure moving about. She could not see the stances, moves of Zhang Qing; she could only see a pair of hands that looked like a white line.

That while line zigzagged through that red flashy figure like a whip. Xiao Yu’er was dodging every whiplash, but wherever he went the whip would follow closely.

Tie Xinlan could not see the brilliance of her techniques either; she had never seen such fast stances in her life. It was like a demon or a ghost was guiding the hands of Zhang Qing.

Xiao Yu’er felt that Zhang Qing had a dozen hands; whenever he avoided one hand another hand would follow.

In the end Xiao Yu could only see the white, flashy palm figures of her, he was feeling dizzy and shouted:“Stop! I poisoned you! You…”

He wanted to use this old trick again, but Zhang Qing did not even listen. Tie Xinlan was very anxious and became paler and paler, but she was still too weak to help and fight.

Xiao Yu’er was sweating heavily and said:“Don’t you believe it? Do you have any idea how powerful my poison is?”

Zhang Qing scoffed:”No one is capable of using poison when fighting with me!

Especially, a little brat like you. You can't trick me!"

Xiao Yu'er said:"I am not lying, I…."

He suffered a hit on his face and flew away; he landed 2 metres away and rolled on the ground.

Tie Xinlan screamed:"Xiao Yu'er! Are you…."? Xiao Yu'er jumped up and wiped away the blood from the corners of his mouth, he grinned:"Don't worry, she can't kill me. As long as she is incapable of killing me, I have a chance to defeat her."

Zhang Qing laughed coldly:"I would like to see how tough your body really is."

With that she stormed forward and attacked with another seven stances.

Her stances were not exquisite nor were they vicious, but she was too fast for words. She did not give people the chance to recover. If her opponents cannot fight back, how can they defeat her?

Xiao Yu'er gritted his teeth, he was decided to be ruthless. No matter what, he had to hit her twice.

He saw a flaw in her palm techniques and decided to attack relentlessly.

But when he attacked, Zhang Qing had already covered up her flaw. His attack was only launched and already he suffered a palm in his stomach.

Tie Xinlan shouted sadly:"Stop, please stop! Just give her the map!"

Xiao Yu'er made two somersaults and jumped up again. His face hurt very much, but he gritted his teeth and laughed:"She will have to kill me first in order to…."

Zhang Qing angrily said:"Do you really think I can't kill you?"

And she attacked with another five, six stances.

This time Xiao Yu’er would not allow himself to be hit, he changed strategy again. Forego attack, concentrate on the defence. He twirled his pair of small fists hoping it would block all coming attacks.

But Zhang Qing was able to punch through his defensive stances.

Stance after stance, like she was using an axe to chop wood, and finally she managed to chop her away through his defences.

Tie Xinlan called out:”Watch out!”

But Xiao Yu’er flew up again and rolled on the ground.

Tie Xinlan pleaded:”Stop! I beg of you, you can’t defeat her. She is too fast.”

But Xiao Yu’er stood up again and had a painful smile on his face and said:”Because she is too fast, she can’t kill me. If she is fast, she can’t use too much force. Don’t you understand?”

Zhang Qing’s face changed, she did not thought that this little brat would be that brave. He could still stand up, she knew herself that her palms were quite powerful.

Anyone else would be dead or seriously wounded after three palms, but this brat was able to get up and ready to fight again.

Zhang Qing bit her lip and said:”I know your body is tough, but let’s see how many attacks you can still endure.”

Her attacks became faster and faster, Xiao Yu’er stances became slower and slower. He fell and got, he fell and got up again….

Tie Xinlan with tears flowing from her eyes and pleaded:”Little Fairy, please spare him. He can’t take anymore.”

Xiao Yu’er shouted:”Shut up! She hit me seven times, I have to hit her back seven times too.”

Zhang Qing scoffed:”You’re dreaming.”

He jumped up for the seventh time, but soon he fell down again. However, he would crawl up every time he was thrown on the ground.

Zhang Qing looked at him, her facial expression was very strange. It looked like she was angry, hatred, pity or even pain.

She coldly said:”If you admit defeat, I will spare you.”

Xiao Yu’er said loudly:”Rubbish! Who needs to be spared by you? I want you to beg to me, I want to tear your clothes to shreds and hang you on a tree and hit you severely.”

He staggered somewhat before standing again.

Zhang Qing stormed over and kicked him down, Xiao Yu’er rolled over the ground.

Tie Xinlan closed her eyes; she could not watch it anymore. Her heart was broken; she did not know why she would care so much for this hated enemy.

Xiao Yu’er was panting on the ground and could not move anymore.

Zhang Qing’s chest moved up and down, she was breathing heavily too. She panted:”Little brat! You, rascal! You, little demon! Can you still stand up now? Can you still fight?”

Xiao Yu’er clutched the grass and slowly crawled up, he said with a shaky

voice:”You’re the brat, rascal! You’re a thug….a thug!”

Zhang Qing angrily shouted:”How dare you to insult me!”

She rushed over and kicked Xiao Yu’er again, sending him rolling again. Tie Xinlan shouted:”You’re ruthless! How can you hit someone who is down.”?

Zhang Qing said hatefully:”It is his own fault, he should not have insulted me.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”I love to insult you! You’re a thief, you kill for riches! You’re a ruthless thug, you’re not a fairy you’re a shrew!”

His voice was very weak but he kept swearing at her. Zhang Qing was trembling with anger; she put a foot on his chest and said:”Continue to swear! Go on! I will make sure you will never be able to swear again. I didn’t want to kill you, but you’ve forced me to do this….”

She gritted her teeth and was about to strike out her palm, Tie Xinlan screamed with fear and crawled over. But at this point Xiao Yu’er held embraced Zhang Qing’s legs. He did not know where he got the strength, but he held her slender body up now and kicked her in the waist. Zhang Qing did not expect a dying person capable of fighting. Her legs felt numb and her head span, before she understood what went on she was kicked in the waist and fell on the ground.

Xiao Yu’er immediately dropped himself on her and quickly sealed all major her acupoints. Tie Xinlan was surprised and happy, she said with a shaky voice:”Xiao Yu’er, what just happened?”

Xiao Yu’er panted and laughed:”I told you before, she can’t kill me….I bathed in herbal medicinal water when I was a child. When other children drank milk, I was drinking herbal soups instead. Even people who use ten times more force than her can’t keep me down from getting up.”

Tie Xinlan said:”But you were…..earlier….”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”I was putting up a show, hoping she would drop her guard.

I deliberately sweat at her, making her mad. When she is fuming with anger, I will have the last laugh."

Tie Xinlan broke out in tears of happiness but was still a bit worried, she asked:"Are you alright?"

Xiao Yu'er laughed:"I am tougher than iron and bronze. How can she injure me with those white delicate hands of her? Her fists feel like cotton."

Although it was cotton, it must have been heavy cotton. He felt pain almost everywhere, every bone felt dislocated.

He looked resentfully at Zhang Qing and said:" What do you have to say now?"

Zhang Qing kept her mouth shut, but tears welled up in her eyes.

Xiao Yu'er laughed:"Tears won't do you any good. I have said that I will return the blows you dealt on me….."

With that he dealt a blow at her, in one go he used his fists to deal four blows. Four heavy blows.

Zhang Qing closed her eyes and gritted her teeth, she did not make a sound.

Xiao Yu'er said:"Beg and I might forget a few blows."

Zhang Qing shouted:"You despicable fiend! Kill me!"

Xiao Yu'er slapped her face. Tie Xinlan pleaded:"Let her be."

Xiao Yu'er said:"Let her be? Why should I spare her? Did she show mercy earlier? I said I would tear her clothes to pieces and hang her on a tree….."

Zhang Qing yelled:"You dare?!? If you do that, I will come back to haunt you

even when I am dead.”

Xiao Yu’er grinned:”I was not afraid of you when you were alive, why should I fear you when you’re dead.”

He pulled her up by her hair and he slapped her four times in her face. He laughed:”Now, we are even. The interest will follow in awhile.”

Tears ran from Zhang Qing’s cheeks, she said:”You’re ruthless…..”

Xiao Yu’er said with indignation:”Me, ruthless? Aren’t you ruthless too? You perceive what others do to you as ruthless. But, have you forgotten how merciless you are when you’re dealing with your adversaries.”

He was getting angrier with every word he said, he tore her clothes apart revealing her white shoulders.

She shouted:”Demon, monster! Bastard……..!”

She cursed with every word she thought of.

Xiao Yu’er just grinned and listened, he shook his head and said:”If you knew how to swear, I might even listen and be amused. But your cursing methods are really crude, I see no other alternative but to shut you up.”

He took some mud from the ground and wanted to stuff it into her mouth.

Zhang Qing now showed signs of fear and wept:”Please, spare me….Please, spare me….”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Good, you finally know to beg for forgiveness. Don’t you forget that.”

Zhang Qing wept bitterly, she was still a girl. She was still very young and for the first time in her life she knew how it felt when you’re bullied and she finally

knew fear.

Xiao Yu’er laughed and threw her on the ground, he said:”Good, I will spare you.”

He did not look at Zhang Qing again; he turned around and helped Tie Xinlan up. He whistled and yelled:”White Cabbage, White Cabbage….”

That white horse really liked him and came immediately.

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”White Cabbage, sorry to trouble you but you have to take us both on your backs. If we have put some distance, I will let you rest a very long time and let you drink.”

He helped Tie Xinlan mount the horse and he leapt up too, although the horse was small he was quite strong. It neighed and galloped forward.

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Little Fairy, goodbye! I hope we will never meet again.”

With that he left, leaving behind a Little Fairy who could not move and was just lying there on the ground. The only thing she could do was cry, but Xiao Yu’er did not hear that.

They sat closely together; Tie Xinlan felt her body was light and soft. She thought she was floating in the clouds and would not move nor talk.

After some time, they could not hear the crying of the Little Fairy anymore.

Tie Xinlan sighed softly:”You are really the bane of the Little Fairy.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”It’s her bad luck that she should run into me.”

Tie Xinlan remained quiet for a while, she said casually:”I did not expect that you could fight that fiercely and savage. You were totally oblivious to death….”

Xiao Yu’er laughed loudly:”I may be a rascal, but I am definitely not a coward. You can expect a lot from me, but don’t expect me to beg for my life.”

Tie Xinlan smiled sweetly and said gently:”You’re right, you may be a rascal but you are a real man.”

After another long silent moment, Tie Xinlan said:”Do you know why Zhang Qing is after the treasure map?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”She is probably greedy.”

Tie Xinlan said:”You’re wrong there, she might be cruel but she is not an evil person.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”She doesn’t look like a good one either. A good person tried to kill you, but an evil person saved your life. That is very strange.”

Tie Xinlan said:”I am serious now. She wants the treasure map, because her mother has a very close relationship to the owner of the treasure.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Hmm, she is quite fierce, her mother was be an old shrew.”

Tie Xinlan smiled:”Her mother is not an old shrew at all, she was once a beautiful maiden in the realm. Any men who saw her would be mesmerized by her.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”I would like to meet someone like that.”

Tie Xinlan bit her lip and said:”If you were born at least ten years earlier you might have seen her when she was young. She is old now but the elder generation of the realm will still be flustered when they hear the name of the [Jade Maiden] Zhang Sanniang.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Why didn’t you say that she was born ten years too early, and could not have met me? Who is the father of Zhang Qing?”

Tie Xinlan said:”This….I don’t know.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”True! The children of a beautiful woman have a lot of missing fathers. One of the reasons could be that there are too many possible fathers in the game.”

Tie Xinlan laughed when she heard this and continued:”Don’t be that rude. That Jade Maiden was very pretty but she was a cold and strict woman. She attracted a lot of suitors, but she did not even look at them. She only had eyes for one.”

Xiao Yu’er asked:”Who is the lucky man?”

Tie Xinlan said:”The owner of the treasure, Yan Nantian.”

Xiao Yu’er’s body shook and exclaimed:”Yan Nantian?”

Tie Xinlan asked:”Have you heard of this name before?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”I…I think I’ve heard it once, but I can’t remember.”

Tie Xinlan said:”When you’ve heard this name, you should not forget it. He was the most famous swordsman of the realm, even till now nobody can match his swordsmanship.”

Xiao Yu’er only said:”Hmm.”

Tie Xinlan said slowly:”Although he was not very handsome, he really looked heroic and valiant. Unfortunately I was born too late too, so I will never have the chance to meet him.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Do you want my help to look for him?”

Tie Xinlan sighed:”You can’t find him anymore, no one can. According to the

stories of the realm, he entered the Valley of Evil for some reason more than ten years ago and never came back. His swordplay might be invincible, but there are so many evil men in there. How could he survive?”

Xiao Yu’er stayed silent for some time, he just said:”Hmm.”

Tie Xinlan said:”It is said that before he entered the valley, he knew he would not survive. So that is why he hid his numerous treasures and his manual of invincible swordsmanship in secret place. Without the map, you can’t find it.”

Xiao Yu’er nodded his head in agreement:”Those riches are not the driving factor, but that manual is. Whoever obtains that manual can become invincible. No wonder so many people want to claim it.”

Tie Xinlan said:”The Little Fairy does not want the manual, she just wants to comfort her mother….”

She turned around and she swiftly glanced at the ground, her entire body shook and exclaimed:”Did you…Did you see that? This….”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”I have noticed that some time ago, there is an extra shadow.”

If you looked at the ground, you would notice there was an extra shadow. It seems that someone was standing on the rear of the horse. But the horse continued to gallop forward, totally oblivious to the extra passenger.

Xiao Yu’er stayed calm, but Tie Xinlan was flustered. She held on to a hand of Xiao Yu’er. She pulled the reins of the horse, the horse neighed and Tie Xinlan almost fell down.

The voice said coldly:”Why are you afraid? If I really wanted to kill you, you would be dead by now.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”I was afraid, I would have leapt off the horse by now.”

The voice laughed too:”You’re a funny person. I immediately saw that you are an interesting person, I came here to make friends.”

The voice sounded clear but hoarse, you could say that his voice sounded metallic and cold. However, you could hear that the voice belonged to a young man.” Tie Xinlan was afraid; she looked around and saw a short but skinny person dressed in black. He stood there like he was glued to the horse nevertheless he seem to be able to float away at any time.

He wore tight shining clothes and he had used a black mask to cover his face. You could only see his pair of eyes, his pupils were as dark as ink and his irises were as white as paper. In the night, it looked very scary whenever he blinked.

Tie Xinlan was startled and exclaimed:”Are you the Black Spider?”

That strange person laughed:”Yes, I am. I am surprised that you recognize me.”

Tie Xinlan said:”Why…Why are you here?”

The Black Spider said:”I am not here because of you, when I saw that boy I was quite amused by him. He is even more interesting than the treasure map, I want to make friends so I have to forget about the map.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”I never imagined that I would be more important than a treasure map. I want to make friends with you too. Black Spider, what is your real name?”

The Black Spider coldly said:”You are really ill-informed, almost everyone in the realm has heard of me. How can you roam the realm if you do not have sufficient information.”

Xiao Yu’er asked:”When did you start to follow us?”

The Black Spider said:”When I saw you colouring your own horse.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”That is strange, why didn’t I see you?”

The black spider laughed coldly:”When I want to follow someone for the rest of his life, he won’t even feel my presence. If I don’t reveal myself, no one can see my shadow.”

Xiao Yu’er turned around to look at the Black Spider and laughed:”You look young, but you sound arrogant.”

The Black Spider angrily said:”Who said I was young!”

Xiao Yu’er said:”I can tell from your voice. Can’t you hear it yourself?”

The Black Spider stayed silent for a while and grinned:”I may be young, but I am still old enough to be your uncle. I just came here to make friends and not to impose my age on you. You can call me, older brother.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Older brother? You’re shorter than me, I should be the older brother.”

The Black Spider looked at him angrily and said:”I don’t know how many people in realm would beg for a chance to call me older brother, but I just ignore those people. I want you to call me older brother, and you are refusing.”

Tie Xinlan gave Xiao Yu’er a look not to antagonize the Black Spider.

Xiao Yu’er pretended not to see it and laughed:”Very good, younger brother Black Spider. You’re very capable….”

The Black Spider angrily shouted:”What did you call me?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Younger brother, shall we go for a drink?”

The Black Spider laughed:”You don’t know that calamity will fall upon you soon. Only I can save you, if you would call me older brother, it will be of great

help to you.”

Tie Xinlan was very anxious and could strangle Xiao Yu’er now, how hard can it be just call him [older brother] and be done with it? However, Xiao Yu’er grinned:”Younger brother, what can I trouble will I run into? Tell me a bit about it.”

The Black Spider looked at him for some time and scoffed:”Fine, I wanted to help you but since you want to be the older brother I will have nothing to do with you anymore.”

With that he waved his hand, in the moonlight you could see a silver line of some sort shooting out of his sleeve.

Xiao Yu’er wanted to see what that was, but when he blinked his eyes the Black Spider shook his hand and flew away.

And then he disappeared and his silver line too.

Xiao Yu’er was a bit stunned and sighed:”No wonder he sounded arrogant, his lightness martial arts is quite good.”

Tie Xinlan sighed:”Not just quite good, his personal secretive lightness martial arts [The Flying Celestial Spider] is unmatched in the realm.”

Xiao Yu’er asked:”What is so special about this skill?”

Tie Xinlan said:”He has hidden some special lanyard made from the silk spun by a thousand year old rare spider in Nanhai. It is very strong, not even swords and sabres can sever it. The lanyard is put in a mechanized tube, when he waves his hand the lanyard will shoot out. It can reach about 40 metres and at the end of the cord there is a sharp silver needle that can puncture anything. He will go with the line and that is why he is so swift, he also makes him very secretive.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”He is not only strange and funny, but his martial arts are funny and strange too. But I wonder how old he really is, why is he so fixated on

being other people's seniors."

Tie Xinlan said:"No one has ever seen his real face and nobody knows his true age. He hates when people call him young. Whoever makes that mistake will suffer dearly."

Xiao Yu'er said:"Why am I not suffering?"

Tie Xinlan laughed sweetly:"That is strange, he really likes you. If not he might have cut out your tongue for calling him younger brother."

After laughing some time, she sighed:"But he never lies, so there could be trouble ahead. I am afraid that we will really have a calamity at our hands."

Xiao Yu'er laughed:"Don't listen to him! How many calamities could there be?"

His voice became softer and softer, almost like a whisper. He looked at the rear of the horse like he saw something. Tie Xinlan wanted to look too, but Xiao Yu'er said:"Let's go!"

Tie Xinlan asked:"What did you see?"

Xiao Yu'er laughed:"Nothing….Hahahaha! What could there be?"

Tie Xinlan lowered her head and stayed quiet, she then said sadly:"Every time you laugh, you are lying."

Xiao Yu'er was a bit taken back, he laughed:"You saw through me, I took up this bad habit from one of my guardians. I can't shake this habit."

Tie Xinlan did not know that the guardian Xiao Yu'er mentioned was the ever-lying Ha Ha'er. She did not want to ask, she only anxiously asked:"What did you see?"

Xiao Yu'er said:"Nothing special, there is no need for you to look too."

Tie Xinlan laughed:”I know you don’t want me to worry. But if you won’t let me have a look I will be even more worried.”

Xiao Yu’er smiled wryly and shook his head:”Women…Women… Well, have a look.”

Someone managed to print a small snake figure on the croup. The snake figure was printed on with blue ink; under the moonlight it looked greenish and ugly. It looked like it could move and was about to bite.

Xiao Yu’er knew it could not move, but he felt uneasy when he saw it. He got goose bumps all over.

Tie Xinlan’s face changed and stuttered with fear:”Snake….The Blue phosphorous snake….The spirit of Qinghai…..The Deer Eating Celestial Lord….”

Xiao Yu’er blinked his eyes and laughed:”What are you saying?”

Tie Xinlan was pale again and said with a trembling voice:”You don’t understand….you don’t understand…”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Just a little snake, what is all the fuss about?”

Tie Xinlan said:”This is a great disaster!”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Why?”

Tie Xinlan took a deep breath and said:”The blue phosphorous snake is the sign of the spirit of Qinghai, the deer eating celestial lord. If you can see his symbol that means his is in the area. With him around, disaster will come.”

Xiao Yu’er frowned:”What is this dear eating celestial lord?”

Tie Xinlan asked:”Have you ever heard of the 12 Zodiacs?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”I think so, but I am not sure.”

Tie Xinlan said:”The 12 Zodiacs are the most diabolical, evil and ruthless robbers of the realm for the last 30 years. Normally, they keep a low profile. But when they have their sights on something or someone, no one and nothing can escape them. In the past 30 years, they only failed once.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”That snake is one of the 12 Zodiacs.”

Tie Xinlan said:”Yes, that deer eating celestial lord is the most vicious and diabolical one of the 12 zodiacs. He always dwells near Qinghai. I should have guessed that he would want me and my map.”

Xiao Yu’er asked:”Why do you say that?”

Tie Xinlan said:”The only time the 12 Zodiacs failed was when they encountered Yan Nantian. How can they not want to have the treasure and manual of Yan Nantian.”?

Xiao Yu’er blinked his eyes and smiled:”You’re very knowledgeable for your age.”

Tie Xinlan said sadly:”I had to roam about on my own when I was very young. It is not strange that I would know a bit more about the realm. When you start to roam the realm, you will learn these things too.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”The more you know, the more you fear. Ignorance is a bliss, no matter who we encounter we will fight him with everything we have.”

Tie Xinlan smiled:”But we already know now, what shall we do now?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Since we can’t overcome him, we might as well run.”

Tie Xinlan muttered:”Run? Where can we run to?”

The end of chapter 7

Chapter 9

Chapter 8 The Azure Serpent Lord

They both rode the same horse; they were travelling intensively and were sweating heavily washing away their disguises.

The white horse was foaming at the mouth; Xiao Yu’er took a handkerchief to wipe away the foam. He patted him and said softly:”White Cabbage, I am very sorry. But we have no choice….”

Tie Xinlan looked at him and suddenly smiled:”Strange, you are nicer to the horse than to humans.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”That is because the horse is nicer to me than anyone else.”

Tie Xinlan sighed and said sadly:”Who is unkind to you? I…”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Are you kind to me? If I can’t walk, will you carry me on your back and walk several kilometres? When I am feeling down, can you keep quiet and let me be?”

Tie Xinlan was a bit taken by that and smiled wryly:”Why are your words also so be perplexing?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”That is why I am inferior to a horse too. If you’re really good to a horse, it won’t abandon you. And it won’t say things to make you uncomfortable.”

Tie Xinlan bit her lip and really wanted to bite Xiao Yu’er.

Up ahead was a small mountain village; they could only vaguely see houses. However, they could see the smoke emitting from the kitchen chimneys.

The greying green smoke blended in beautifully with the blue sky, it looked like a beautiful painting. No artist could paint should a wonderful scene.

Tie Xinlan smiled:”Look at the smoke….”

Xiao Yu’er interrupted:”It looks dirty, what is so nice about it?”

Tie Xinlan said:”Can’t you see the beauty of it?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”The only good I see in that some is that up ahead we can get something to eat.”

They were near the borders of Qinghai and Sichuan; there are more Han Chinese here.

They saw an old man standing outside a house, and smoke a pipe. He looked at the sky and muttered:”It looks like a sunny day today, I will put the cotton blankets in the sun.”

Xiao Yu’er dismounted and walked over, he smiled:”Old sir, can we have something to drink and to eat? My sister and me are quite hungry.”

The old man looked at him and Tie Xinlan for a while and laughed:”You’re very polite, young master. If you don’t find my house too dirty, please come in.”

Xiao Yu’er smiled and thanked him; he helped Tie Xinlan dismount and said quietly:”These peasant people can be quite friendly.”

Tie Xinlan smiled:”How can they not be after seeing a lovable and polite young boy like you.”

She blushed when she said this.

Xiao Yu’er laughed when he saw her reed cheeks:”Maybe, he saw that you are a pretty young girl. He may be old but he is not blind.”

Tie Xinlan smiled sweetly and put her hand on his shoulder and they entered the house of the old man.

The old man had cleaned the table and put two bowls and two pair of chopsticks, he smiled:”Please wait, I will see if my wife is done with cooking.”

When he entered, Tie Xinlan and Xiao Yu’er could smell the fragrant rice scent. Xiao Yu’er’s stomach rumbled and eagerly looked at the door of the kitchen. They just heard some clanging noises from the kitchen.

An old woman finally came out of the kitchen with two big bowls of coarse rice with some salted vegetables and meat in her hands.

She limped over the table and put the food down, she bended her waist and smiled:”Please eat first. Don’t be polite, don’t let the rice get cold.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Alright, we will.”

He did not wait till the old woman left the room; he took a pair of chopsticks and was about to eat. Suddenly, he heard a clang sound, Tie Xinlan had just picked up a bowl of rice put it down again and said:”Very hot.”

Xiao Yu’er immediately used his chopsticks hit Tie Xinlan’s hand and she dropped her chopsticks. She looked at him surprised and asked:”Why did you do that?”

Xiao Yu’er did not speak; he emptied the bowls of rice on the table. The dry and coarse rice filled the table, but a small green snake was crawling through the rice.

Tie Xinlan exclaimed with fear:”Snake…..The 12 Zodiacs!”

Xiao Yu’er stormed into the kitchen, Tie Xinlan followed closely. They saw the old man lying on the ground, his face was all black. An old woman lied on the ground next to the furnace, her face had a green, black colour. But her hair was black; she did not look like the woman who brought the food.

The old woman with white hair was gone.

Tie Xinlan said in a trembling voice:”Utterly ruthless…..How very dangerous.”

Xiao Yu’er gritted his teeth and said bitterly:”These people are ten times more evil than I am. How can they just kill two poor elderly people like that!”

Tie Xinlan said:”I knew we could not escape.”

Xiao Yu’er took out an ingot of gold and threw it on the ground, he took up a piece of charcoal and wrote on the wall: [Bury these two properly, or else I will come back for your life.]

Suddenly the white horse neighed frantically; Xiao Yu’er stormed outside and saw a snake crawling up the shank. The tore off a piece of his robe and brushed off the snake and stamped it to death. He stroked the manes and said:”White Cabbage, don’t be afraid! Those evil people can’t harm you and can’t harm me either.”

She pulled Tie Xinlan up and rode off as soon as possible.

The white horse knew there was danger around and really galloped very hard, in a few moments they ran passed the mountain village.

Tie Xinlan was still trembling and muttered:”That was very dangerous, if we took half a bite we would be dead now.” Xiao Yu’er laughed:”But we are still alive.”

Tie Xinlan asked:”How did you find out?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”When you lifted the bowl you immediately put it down again, because it was hot. But that old woman held the bowls in her hands with no pain at all, she must have learnt some sort of poisonous sand palms or such.”

Tie Xinlan said:”Nothing can deceive your eyes.”

Up ahead was a carpet of green grass, but on further examination that carpet of grass could move, a hundred green small snakes.

Tie Xinlan shrieked, Xiao Yu’er directed the horse to head towards another path, this path was smaller and narrower, and it was a forest path.

Xiao Yu’er had never travelled through on such a clean and picturesque road before, he was a bit suspicious. Unexpectedly, a snake hung upside down from a tree, it was a big azure coloured snake and its’ body was as thick as the arm of Tie Xinlan. It hung in front of Tie Xinlan, the horse was startled and Tie Xinlan screamed.

Xiao Yu’er yelled:”Don’t be afraid! Catching snakes and hitting dogs are my specialties.”

He swiftly seized the snake’s head and threw it against a tree. That grasp and fling was both fast and beautifully, the snake was knocked out.

Tie Xinlan sighed with relief and said:”Luckily you’re not a woman. Most women are terrified of snakes.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Give me your dagger.”

Tie Xinlan handed him the dagger and said:”Be careful! Don’t let the blood splatter on you.”

Xiao Yu’er grunted, Tie Xinlan saw that Xiao Yu’er was as white as paper. He

used the dagger to cut himself in the arm.

Tie Xinlan exclaimed with shock:”What are you….”

She could finish her sentence, because it was like someone took the air out of her lungs, she saw black blood flowing out Xiao Yu’er’s wound.

Xiao Yu’er was very pale and shouted:”I am finally deceived once.”

He opened his palm and drops of black blood formed. Looking at the snake, it was still stiff and motionless. Near its’ head, the snake glimmered. Tie Xinlan exclaimed with shock:”The snake was already dead, that monster hid a bendable sword in the snake and when you grabbed the snake you were cut by that poisonous blade.

Xiao Yu’er smiled tragically:”You’re so clever, a true prodigy.”

Tie Xinlan said:”Fortunately, you discovered it on time. You’ve released the venomous blood from your body. Are you alright now?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Fine, but after one hour I will be no more.”

Tie Xinlan trembled and fell down the horse, she said in a shaky voice:”You’re joking?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”There is no cure for the venom, if I didn’t cut myself to release the venomous blood I would be talking to the old man we met earlier now. But now I can still live for another hour.”

She ran into his arms and wept:”There must be a cure, you don’t know…”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”I grew up with experts in using poison, if I don’t know, nobody knows.” Even now he was smiling and feeling proud.

Tie Xinlan said:”But you can make an antidote, right?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Yes, I can.” Tie Xinlan was very happy and said loudly:”You were teasing me again.”

Xiao Yu’er slowly said:”It takes three months to make an antidote.” Tie Xinlan’s smile disappeared, she sat down and wept:”How can you joke at a time like this! Tell me, what can I do! Tell me!”

She sobbed bitterly:”I hate you! You’re not human, how can you make jokes at a time like this. Don’t you know how I will feel? I hate you!”

Xiao Yu’er ignored her; he took out the parchment and waved it in his hand, he shouted:”Stupid snake! Can you see? This is the treasure map, do you want it?”

He shouted the same words twice, and from a tree a cold, sharp and revolting voice coldly laughed.

That man sneered:”It will be mine sooner or later, there is no rush.”

The man wore azure brocade; he blended in with the leaves. He was skinny and tall and he curved his body to hide in the tree, it seemed that he did not have a bone in his body. Those beady little eyes of his stared at Xiao Yu’er, he really resembled a snake, a venomous snake.

Tie Xinlan looked up and felt numb, it was like a snake was crawling up her clothes. Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Is this map yours sooner or later?”

That Azure Serpent Lord laughed evilly:”If you present it to me now, I spare your life.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Of course, I believe you.” Tie Xinlan screamed:”Hand it to him! We….we don’t need it anyway.”

The Azure Serpent Lord said:”The girl is smart.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”She is smart and I am stupid.”

He abruptly put the parchment in his mouth and began to chew on it.

The Azure Serpent Lord slithered down from the tree and lifted Xiao Yu’er from the horse, he angrily roared:”Spit it out!”

Xiao Yu’er allowed him to throw him down the horse and swallowed the parchment, he opened his mouth and laughed:”I can’t spit it out anymore.”

The Azure Serpent Lord roared:”You just sealed your fate!”

Xiao Yu’er grinned:”There is only one map in the world and I am the only one who knows the contents. If you kill me, you will never find the treasure.”

The Azure Serpent Lord was stunned and loosened his grip.

Xiao Yu’er said casually:”If I were you, I would present the antidote now. If I live I might be able to draw another copy of the map, a corpse cannot draw.”

The Azure Serpent Lord looked at him madly, suddenly a sinister smile appeared on that bony face of his. He smiled evilly:”Do you really think I will be threatened by you?”

Xiao Yu’er lifted his head and grinned:”Really.”

The Azure Serpent Lord said slowly:”The parchment is light but strong, it must be still in your stomach in one piece. I just have to cut you open and retrieve it.”

Xiao Yu’er kept his smile, but a chill ran through his heart. Tie Xinlan screamed:”You can’t do that! You can’t…” The Azure Serpent Lord laughed sinisterly:”Why can’t I? Just watch me.”

He drew a bendable sword from his girdle and shook it straightening it out.

Xiao Yu’er might be very intelligent but he could not think of plan of escape. Tie Xinlan struggled up to attack him, but she was still recovering from her illness. The Azure Serpent Lord raised his palm and struck her down in one go. He laughed evilly:”You might be specialized in hitting dogs and catching snakes, but cutting open people’s chests and stomachs are my specialities. Don’t worry, this stab won’t kill you yet.”

Xiao Yu’er was sweating and said with a smile”Thank you!”

The Azure Serpent Lord said:”Even if I have cut you open and retrieved the parchment, you will still be alive. I will let you die slowly and painfully.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”But you should be careful before you start. I ate the patriarch of snakes this morning and it still not digested. Do be careful that you won’t cut your own father.”

The Azure Serpent Lord angrily shouted:”You, little dog!”

When he was about to stab Xiao Yu’er, there was a sudden clang sound that pushed away his sword.

Xiao Yu’er had secretly picked up the dead snake with the sword; he used it to block the blade of the Azure Serpent Lord. He raised the sword and stabbed at the Azure Serpent Lord.

The Azure Serpent Lord gently avoided that attack, he laughed maliciously:”If you use force, the poison will only travel faster and you will only die quicker!” With that he counter-attacked and Xiao Yu’er blocked four of his stances but his arm was beginning to feel weak and could not lift his arm anymore.

Tie Xinlan had fainted, a chill went up Xiao Yu’er’s heart.

The Azure Serpent Lord laughed:”What other tricks do you still have?”

He pointed his sword at the chest of Xiao Yu’er and slowly moved the tip down to the abdomen. Xiao Yu’er chest was bleeding now and laughed

arrogantly:”Being cut open is such a happy event! I am lucky that I can enjoy such treatment….”

While he was laughing, he could hear a series of clanging sounds; the sword of the Azure Serpent Lord was broken into four parts.

He made a somersault backwards and clutched to a tree, he shouted:”Who is there!”

A sweet and beautiful female voice said:”You should know who I am.” The voice sounded like Zhang Qing’s voice. Xiao Yu’er was happy that he was saved, but when he heard that voice his hope was gone again. There was not much difference whether he fell into the hands of the Azure Serpent Lord or Zhang Qing.

The face of the Azure Serpent Lord turned pale, he said:”Oh, it is you, Miss.”

The voice said:”Even if you don’t know who I am, you should know where this road leads to. How dare you to behave audaciously here!”

Xiao Yu’er almost could clap in his hands, he had hope again. Because it was not the Little Fairy, Zhang Qing. Her voice was very similar to Zhang Qing’s, but this voice talked much slower than her. A girl in a green dress holding a flower basket walked between the trees. She was very graceful and slender, it seemed that she could be blown away by the wind at any time. Her elegant eyebrows were knit and her eyes were filled with melancholy. She was not an absolute beauty, but she was very exquisite and you would immediately take a liking to her. Behind her was a young man with thick eyebrows, he looked quite tall and muscular. But he still looked very naïve, he respectfully followed her and he did not even dare to lift his head. The girl looked like a daughter of a wealthy prominent family, and the boy looked like the son of a family with stern upbringing.

The Azure Serpent Lord’s face changed when he saw those two young people, he lowered his head deeply and said with an enforced smile:”It is you, ninth Miss.”

The girl said casually:”Very good, you seem to remember me. But you seem to have forgotten whose property this is. How dare you cut people open here!”

She did not look callous, but her voice was cold and indifferent. It was not like she did not want to care, but she was just inattentive to everyone. Nobody is important or worthy of her attention.

Xiao Yu’er could not guess who this girl was, she looked like a princess but she is not. She is obviously a girl with a martial arts background. She should be filled with hope, happiness like most girls her age, but she seems to be tired of all worldly affairs.

The Azure Serpent Lord lowered his head even lower; he said with a trembling voice:”I thought I haven’t entered the restricted part yet….”

The girl said:”Now, you know.”

The Azure Serpent Lord said:”Now, I know.”

The girl said:”Now, you know. So you also know what to do?”

The Azure Serpent Lord smiled sadly:”Yes, I know.” He used his broken blade and slashed off his left hand. Even Xiao Yu’er was surprised by that action. This [ninth Miss] was very casual about it and just waved her hand saying:”Good, you can leave now.” With that the Azure Serpent Lord quickly left.

Suddenly Tie Xinlan shouted:”No, you can’t let him go! Don’t let him go!” She had woken up, and crawled up but soon fell down again.

The girl looked at her and said:”Why?”

Tie Xinlan pointed at Xiao Yu’er and said:”He is poisoned by him, only the Azure Serpent Lord has the antidote. If he doesn’t give the antidote, he won’t make it through the day.”

The girl said plainly:”Why should I care?” Tie Xinlan’s body shook and she fell again.

The young man smiled:”Ninth sister, let us help them.”

The girl said:”If you want to save them, go ahead. I won’t interfere.”

She turned around, and walked away without looking at anyone again. The young man looked at Tie Xinlan who was lying on the ground, he lowered his head and said:”I am sorry….” With that he quickly followed the girl.

Tie Xinlan shouted:”Miss, I beg of you….Miss….”

Xiao Yu’er blinked his eyes and suddenly laughed loudly:”Let’s go, no need to beg.”

Tie Xinlan said:”But you….”

Xiao Yu’er said loudly:”Life or death, it is all the same. Besides, she is too young, how can she help us. Stop pestering her, you will only make things difficult for her.”

He walked over and helped Tie Xinlan up, and they started to walk.

The girl said coldly:”Stop.”A smile formed at the corners of Xiao Yu’er mouth, but he just said loudly:”Why should we stop? If I die here, I will only tarnish your clean road.”

He continued to walk and did not turn around. All of a sudden he saw a flash and the girl was standing in front of him. She said coldly:”You won’t die! But don’t think I don’t know you’re provoking me. I am saving you, because I want you to know that the Murong sisters can do almost everything.”

Xiao Yu’er scoffed:”I never wanted your help! It is my own decision if I want to die or live happily, I don’t need your concern.”

The ninth Miss said indifferently:”I have decided to save you, you have nothing to say about your own fate now.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”This is your own decision, right? I have never begged for your help, even if you saved me I won’t thank you for it.”

The ninth Miss did not reply, she turned around and said:”Follow me.”

The end of chapter 8

Chapter 10

Chapter 9 Trapped in ice

At the end of the road was a manor; it was not a very grand manor. But every brick, every tile, every room was built with care and flawless. After walking through the courtyard they came into the main hall, it seemed that there were no servants, but everything looked very tidy. Xiao Yu'er was panting and staggering now, the young man secretly supported Xiao Yu'er.

Xiao Yu'er gratefully smiled:"Thank you, what is your name?"

The young man's face turned red and said:"My name is Gu Renyu."

Xiao Yu'er asked:"You're not a Murong?"

Gu Renyu's face was still red and said:"I am their cousin."

Xiao Yu'er smiled:"You're very nice, but a bit too honest. You look like a girl, blushing all the time."

Gu Renyu stuttered:"I…I…."

If he did not have thick eyebrows and was not that tall and muscular, he did not look like a man. Xiao Yu'er would have mistaken him for a girl.

The ninth Miss did not stop and walked through the main hall and through the corridor, but they could not see anyone here. Finally she walked to a small garden with two, three elegant gates on both sides, she stopped there and said:"Enter." With that she turned around and walked away again.

Gu Renyu said:”Please…please go inside. This is…this is my room.”

Tie Xinlan smiled too:”I think this is the only room suitable for men.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Hmm, with the exception of you, only women live here.”

Gu Renyu stared at Xiao Yu’er with some disbelief and said:”Haven’t you heard of the names of the nine Murong sisters before?” Tie Xinlan was sitting and had closed her eyes for a moment, but when she heard this she opened her eyes again and exclaimed:”You mean the [Nine elegant ladies of the realm]?”

Gu Renyu blushed again and said softly:”Yes, you’re right.”

Xiao Yu’er looked at Tie Xinlan and smiled:”You know this too, tell me how formidable these Murong sisters are.”

Tie Xinlan sighed:”These nine sisters are excelled in every field of martial arts, from lightness, projectiles and so on. All of them are both beautiful and intelligent. They almost know anything, so a lot of people in the realm would like to have a Murong sister as spouse.”

Xiao Yu’er blinked and laughed:”Are they all married now?”

Tie Xinlan said:”All of them are married with the exception of the ninth sister, the other eight are either married to young masters of prominent Wulin families or famous young heroes…”

Xiao Yu’er laughed loudly:”No wonder everyone fears them in the realm, even if people are not afraid of the Murong sisters, they should be afraid of the eight accomplished husbands.”

His face gradually became black and breathed quite heavily now, but it did not stop him from laughing and joking.

He patted Gu Renyu's shoulder and laughed:"Just stay close to her and pay a lot of attention to her, sooner or later she will notice you."

Gu Renyu's face turned even redder now, he lowered his head and looked secretly at Tie Xinlan. He said:"It is really my mother's wishes that I would…."

At this point, that ninth Miss of the Murong family appeared, he scoffed:"Yes, these are auntie's wishes. You're not too keen on being treated coldly."

Gu Renyu could almost crawl under a table and stuttered:"I didn't…I did not mean it that way…."

Murong Jiumei said coldly:"Young master Gu, nobody invited you over and nobody will ask you to stay. Auntie thinks you're very special, but nobody here shares that idea."

She did not look at Gu Renyu anymore; she threw a black jaded bottle on the table in front of Xiao Yu'er. She coldly said:"Take half and smear the other half on your wound, in six hours you will be healed. And by then I want you to be gone."

Xiao Yu'er grinned:"I have never begged for your help and I don't want you to become my wife. There is no need for you to act conceited and such, you may think that you're special but I don't share that idea."

Murong Jiumei turned around and looked at him coldly.

Xiao Yu'er pretended not to notice that, he opened the bottle swallowed half the contents, licking his lips and said:"Very sour."

And then he smeared the remaining half on his wound. He was an intelligent man; although he was nitpicking it did not stop him from using the medicine.

Murong Jiumei hatefully looked at him, in her cold eyes there was almost a spark of fire, she slowly said:"Although I saved you, I can still kill you."

Xiao Yu’er stuck out his tongue and laughed:”You won’t, because you look vicious but deep in your heart you are very kind.” Somehow, Murong Jiumei blushed now, and then sternly said:”Leave now! Don’t let me ever see you again! Or else I will poke out your eyes, cut off your tongue and then kill you.”

Gu Renyu was terrified, he never saw the always cold and cool Murong Jiumei being furious. He had certainly never heard her say such bitter words before.

Xiao Yu’er still grinned:”I will leave, but don’t beg me to return when I am gone.”

Murong Jiumei was trembling with anger and said:”You…..You….”

Suddenly from afar someone shouted:”Murong Jiumei, where are you? Your little sister has come to see you.”

The speaker was very fast before she was finished, she was standing outside, and Murong Jiumei bit her lip and gracefully walked outside.

When Xiao Yu’er heard that voice, his smile was gone. Tie Xinlan’s face turned pale and said:”Is it the Little Fairy Zhang Qing?” Gu Renyu said:”You’re…you’re right. She is a good friend of the ninth Miss.”

Xiao Yu’er slowly sat down and smiled wryly:”What a small world…..”

He heard Zhang Qing laughing:”Well, aren’t we arrogant nowadays? Don’t you come out to greet friends anymore?”

Murong Jiumei said:”Who knows where you wander off to? I haven’t scolded you for forgetting about me for such a long time, you have a lot of nerves to lecture me first.”

Zhang Qing laughed:”Ha! Our ninth Miss really knows how to talk, her cheeks are all red, and you’re becoming more beautiful by the day. Tell me, how many people have come asking for your hand.”

Murong Jiumei said:”Stop being so annoying.”

Zhang Qing said:”I don’t think your heart finds this question annoying.”

Murong Jiumei coldly said:”I will never marry anyone in my life.”

Zhang Qing said:”You’re right! All men are despicable and deserve to die! Especially those who look quite handsome and have a sharp tongue.”

It was like she was talking about Xiao Yu’er, judging by her tone she deeply resented and hated Xiao Yu’er. Tie Xinlan’s limbs felt cold and asked softly:”What shall we do?”

Xiao Yu’er sighed:”We can’t run, we can’t fight. I can’t think of anything.”

After he was finished, Zhang Qing had entered. She exclaimed with shock:”How come you’re here too?”

Xiao Yu’er grinned:”Long time no see, how are you doing?”

Murong Jiumei frowned and asked:”Sister Qing, do you know him?”

Zhang Qing hatefully said:”I know him, of course I know him. But…but why is he here?”

Murong Jiumei casually said:”He was injured just outside, I….”

Xiao Yu’er loudly interrupted:”Don’t ask anymore. I am neither friend nor relative of the Murong family. I am injured now, if you want to kill me go ahead. You don’t have to give face to anyone and I will not fight back.”

Zhang Qing sneered:”Can you fight back?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”If I can fight back, you would be lying on the ground now.”

Zhang Qing slapped him and angrily said:”Stop talking!”

Xiao Yu’er did not move, and laughed:”I will keep quiet, what else can I say. You fell into my hands twice, I should blame myself for taking pity on you and sparing your life twice.”

His words were righteous and fair and quite moving, but he did not mention how he managed to defeat Zhang Qing those two times.

Murong Jiumei could not help herself but to ask:”Sister Qing, did you really fall into his hands twice?”

Zhang Qing was furious now, but she did not know how to retort Xiao Yu’er. When Murong Jiumei saw Zhang Qing’s anger, her expression changed awfully strange too.

Xiao Yu’er saw that and said with an astounded tone:”Miss Murong, let her kill me. Even if I am killed in your home, I know you look down upon her and I won’t blame you.”

Zhang Qing was boiling with anger and laughed:”You really think I won’t kill you!”

Xiao Yu’er said:”I know you can and will, the famous Little Fairy Zhang Qing is not afraid of anyone. And especially not afraid of a person who can’t fight back.”

Zhang Qing roared and her fingers looked like swords and were aimed at the temples of Xiao Yu’er. Xiao Yu’er did not move, but Tie Xinlan was scared stiff.

Suddenly a figure stood in front of Xiao Yu’er, Murong Jiumei blocked Zhang Qing. The fingers of Zhang Qing almost made contact with Murong Jiumei, she quickly retracted her attack.

She angrily shouted:”Are you siding with the enemy?”

Murong Jiumei said casually:”If it was somewhere else, I would not care who you would kill. However, she should show some respect here, sister Qing.”

Zhang Qing said:”I will apologize to you after I have killed him.”

Murong Jiumei said:”Ever since this manor was built, blood was never spilled here, nor allowed to be spilled. If you really want to break this rule, I suggest you do it now.”

Zhang Qing stamped her feet and said:”You don’t know how horrible, this little brat is.”

Murong Jiumei said:”That can be true, but you just have to wait till he…”

Zhang Qing shouted:”I can’t wait any longer.”

She changed movements seven times, hoping to evade Murong Jiumei, however Murong Jiumei quickly adapted every change she made. Even if Murong Jiumei did not block Zhang Qing and allowed her to pass, Zhang Qing would not have killed Xiao Yu’er. However, when she saw that Murong Jiumei kept blocking her, she became angrier and angrier and really wanted to kill him. She stretched out her hand and her fingers attacked Murong Jiumei seven times. Murong Jiumei avoided those seven stances and coldly said:”Sister Qing, you attacked me first, don’t blame me for being rude.”

Zhang Qing did not stop her attacks and said coldly:”Whenever I set my mind to something nobody can stop me! Not even you, just use her famous Murong needles on me…..”

She was interrupted with a powerful blast. Zhang Qing shifted her body to avoid that fist, she shouted:”Little sister Gu! You’re joining the fight too.”

Xiao Yu’er chuckled: [So he has the nickname little sister Gu, it really suits him. He is too honest, but his martial arts are very solid, worthy of a descendant of prominent martial arts family. That conceited Zhang Qing can’t defeat him.]

He did not know that Gu Renyu looked very shy and honest, but his martial arts are quite good. He is known in the realm as the Jade-faced Divine Fists Gu Renyu.

Zhang Qing looked at them and put her hands on her waist and said:”What are you waiting for?”

Xiao Yu’er was thinking the same thing: [What are you waiting for? Fight!]

But Gu Renyu just stood there not moving, he lowered his head and said:”If Miss Zhang will stop fighting I would dream of lifting my finger against you.”

Zhang Qing sneered:”The heir of the famous Divine fists of the Gu family is a useless coward. The only thing you can do is flatter up to Miss Murong here.”

Gu Renyu just stood there, not saying another word.

Zhang Qing stamped her feet and said:”Alright! Murong Jiumei, show me what you have in that seven exquisite pouch of yours.”

Murong Jiumei coldly said:”As long you won’t try to kill people here, I won’t fight you.”

Zhang Qing first looked at her and then at Gu Renyu, one was standing in front of a window the other stood in front of the door. With or without intention they had surrounded Zhang Qing.

Xiao Yu’er grinned:”No good looking around, you can’t overcome them. The famous Little Fairy is surrounded.”

Zhang Qing looked at him for a while and laughed:”You want me to fight them and then you can watch and enjoy the fight.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”If you’re too afraid to fight just leave. No need to find an excuse.”

Zhang Qing said:”I am leaving now, if you can hide in here for the rest of your life….My respects! If not the moment you leave this place, I will kill you at once.”

She turned around to Murong Jiumei and smiled:”Unless you marry him and will stay at his side, otherwise I will make sure he dies at my hands. There is no reason why I should fight you, people might say that I am bullying you.”

She took three steps back and disappeared with a sweet laughter. Xiao Yu’er did not expect her to leave like that.

He was stunned and smiled wryly:”Women….women….. The hearts of women….truly mysterious.”

Murong Jiumei sighed softly:”No one can guess the thoughts of her, nor can one perceive her character. I am the only one in the realm who can match her…”

Xiao Yu’er blinked his eyes and asked:”In other words, only you and her are worthy of being called heroes?”

Murong Jiumei said:”Yes.”

Xiao Yu’er asked:”Who should be number one?”

Murong Jiumei said after some thinking:”She handles her affairs most strangely, her temperament keeps changing. Even I cannot guess what she is thinking, she is definitely the most lethal person in the realm.”

Xiao Yu’er asked:”How about you?”

Murong Jiumei said coldly:”I don’t interfere in the affairs of the martial arts realm.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”If you would take an interest in the realm, she would be number two, wouldn’t she?”

Murong Jiumei just grunted. Xiao Yu'er said very seriously:"Yes, you are really number one…." He paused for a moment; Murong Jiumei actually smiled a bit.

However, Xiao Yu'er continued:"You're self absorbing skills should really be ranked number one in the realm."

Murong Jiumei's mood changed again, Xiao Yu'er busted out in laughter:"I only thought men were capable of being self absorbed, but women are capable of that too and are even better than in that. You should really go out and have a look, and then you will see that there are countless of people who are just or even more capable than you. Just by closing your own doors and proclaiming to be invincible is just plain stupid, but I can't help it if you do that."

Murong Jiumei said:"You….You…." Xiao Yu'er laughed:"You have saved my life twice, but you did that out of your own will. I never begged for it and I won't you show gratitude. I will certainly not flatter up to you."

The only thing Murong Jiumei could say was:"Good….Very good…."

She wanted to look at cold and refined, but in vain. She was shaking with anger. She was a cold and not easily aggravated person, but somehow Xiao Yu'er could get to her with just a few sentences.

Gu Renyu said slowly:"She is very kind to you, why do you have to anger her?"

Xiao Yu'er grinned:"I am doing it on purpose, she is much prettier when she is angry. And that cold façade of her is quite annoying."

Gu Renyu could not help himself but to look at Murong Jiumei. He saw her red cheeks and really made her more attractive than usual. After a look he was completely dazzled and shook his head saying:"You're right. Much prettier."

Murong Jiumei looked at him and said:"How dare you say such things in my presence! What do you take me for?"

Gu Renyu was shocked and quickly lowered his head, he said:"You're not

pretty, you're ugly when you're angry." Tie Xinlan was very worried and pensive, but when she heard that she had to laugh too. Without saying Xiao Yu'er was rolling on the ground laughing.

Two young girls ran through the woods, they giggled and called:"Ninth Miss, Ninth Miss…."

Murong Jiumei was still fuming and did not know how to vent her anger, she angrily shouted:"Why are you shouting? I am not deaf!"

The two maids lowered their heads and said:"Yes, ninth Miss."

They secretly looked at Xiao Yu'er and said:"The room is ready, Miss. Are you now…."

Murong Jiumei said:"Of course now, I am going to have a look like always."

The two girls never heard Murong Jiumei talk like this; they only muttered a soft:"Yes."

They immediately left again. Murong Jiumei coldly said:"Young master Gu, if you have nothing else to do please watch these two here. If not you can go too."

Gu Renyu said:"I am fine, I will…."

He stuttered some more, but Murong Jiumei had already left. Xiao Yu'er looked at Tie Xinlan for a moment and then followed Murong Jiumei. Gu Renyu looked at her absentmindedly, Tie Xinlan also looked at Xiao Yu'er a bit surprised. Gu Renyu sighed, Tie Xinlan sighed too:"You're very kind to her, perhaps a bit too kind."

She was talking about Gu Renyu and Murong Jiumei, but she thought of her and Xiao Yu'er. Why was Gu Renyu so nice to Murong Jiumei? What about Xiao Yu'er…..she was very confused and was caught in her own thoughts, she did not hear what Gu Renyu said. After a while, she said melancholically:"Do you love her?"

Gu Renyu said a bit dumbfounded:”I don’t know.”

Tie Xinlan smiled kindly and said:”How can you not know?”

Gu Renyu sighed:”Everyone thinks that I should love her, even I think I should love her. But….but I don’t know if I love her. I just know that I am afraid of her.”

Tie Xinlan smiled pleasantly:”You’re a very good man.”

Gu Renyu looked at her and then lowered his head saying:”You…you’re a very good person too.”

When Murong Jiumei was in the garden, she turned around and said coldly:”Why are you following me?”

Xiao Yu’er grinned:”I don’t to follow you, but I don’t kill Zhang Qing might find a chance to kill me. I don’t mind dying, but I don’t want to disgrace you.”

Murong Jiumei looked at him for a while not saying anything, then she turned around and walked away again.

Xiao Yu’er followed, he was panting and said sensitively:”I can’t walk anymore. Can you hold my hand?” Murong Jiumei ignored him and even walked even faster.

Xiao Yu’er said:”Let me die of fatigue, you can present my body to Zhang Qing when I am dead. She won’t cause anymore trouble for you when I am dead.”

Murong Jiumei did not look back, but she started to slow down. Xiao Yu’er said:”Some girls just need to look tougher than men. But when they actually meet a man, they will be useless. Hey! Have you ever seen a girl before who is afraid to hold the arm of a man?”

Murong Jiumei could not take it anymore and sneered:”Afraid? I am just….”

Xiao Yu’er interrupted:”You’re just not willing. Nobody likes to admit that they are afraid and not willing is just a better sounding excuse.”

Murong Jiumei turned back and actually held his arm.

Xiao Yu’er followed her again, he grinned:”Your hands are very small, mine should be at least twice…..”

He was talking to her, but he was also carefully observing the gardens, corridors, chambers they passed. They reached a very nice looking garden with beautiful porches, and there were a series of different chambers with different sizes, colours and designs. Xiao Yu’er counted nine chambers in total; they must be the rooms of the Murong sisters. The first chamber was cream yellow, Murong Jiumei pushed open the doors and entered. The curtains, tablecloths and bedding with all cream yellow. The room was simply decorated, but it looked very smart and sophisticated.

Murong Jiumei examined everything carefully, she inspected if there was any dust. Xiao Yu’er looked at her and asked:”Is this the room of your oldest sister? Is she coming back?”

Murong Jiumei said:”Is it alright to let her room covered in the dust when she is not here?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Right, even if she isn’t coming back everything has to be tidy too. It seems you have a good bond with your sisters.”

Suddenly he did not spout nonsense anymore, Murong Jiumei could not guess his intentions and merely grunted.

Xiao Yu’er said:”Your eldest sister must be a very sophisticated, refined and tranquil person. Not to mention gentle and beautiful. There are not many women like her in this world, who is her husband?”

Murong Jiumei finally looked at him and said:”Nobody is good enough to be

her husband, but if one should look the closest match would be my eldest brother-in-law.”

Xiao Yu’er asked:”How are his martial arts?”

Murong Jiumei said coldly:”Have you ever heard of the Splendid Jade Swordsman?” Originally, she intended not to speak to this annoying brat anymore. But somehow, she started a conversation with him. The brat talked to her about something she loved to discuss. Xiao Yu’er could aggravate her with just a few sentences, but he could also pacify her again with another few sentences.

The second room was all pink, on the walls hung short swords, long bows even the scabbards of the swords were red. Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Your second sister must be very different from your eldest sister. She is a very frank and open person and has quite a temper. But she is a very nice person and is also very considerate.

Murong Jiumei stayed quiet for a while, but in the end she asked:”How did you know?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”The secretive weaponry of the Murong family is renowned in the realm, but your sister seems to love using bows. That would point out that she is a rather open and frank, loving simplicity instead of complex projectiles and such.”

Murong Jiumei said:”Hmm and what else?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Users of long swords are usually stable, calm. Users of short swords are usually turbulent, dangerous. Your second sister’s swords almost look like daggers, meaning whenever she gets angered she will go all out and will not hold back.”

Murong Jiumei nodded in agreement and said:”The swordplay of my second sisters is renowned for being turbulent and dangerous throughout the realm.”

Xiao Yu’er smiled:”But your second brother-in-laws’s martial arts are not very high, are they?”

Murong Jiumei was surprised that he said that, she looked at him for a long time and nodded. She said:”My second brother-in-law is the only son of the famous Nangong family. The martial arts of the Nangong family are good and high, but my brother-in-law has always been sickly. That is why…(* sigh).”

Xiao Yu’er clapped his hands and laughed:”That explains it all.”

Murong Jiumei asked:”What do you mean?” Xiao Yu’er said:”When she married to your brother-in-law, she left all her weapons at home. Meaning that her husband’s martial arts are clearly beneath her own and because she is a considerate person she deliberately left her own weapons back. She did not want to harm the feelings of her husband, she is truly a kind and considerate woman.”

Murong Jiumei silently looked at him for a while, and then they went to the third room.

The walls of the third room were covered with black wallpaper; the room was a bit dark. However, the room was decorated with style and elegance. There was a go board, a painter’s accessories and painting of lady painting hung at the wall. There was an inscription [Murong Lady]; it must be her own work.

Xiao Yu’er looked around and smiled:”Your third sister must be a literary talent, but she is a bit of a loner. She must be a rather melancholic person, but most literary women are like that.”

Murong Jiumei said slowly:”She does not like sunshine, she likes rain and she always paints or plays the qin* when it rains. It sometimes seems that she does not belong to this mortal world. Her music sounds so celestial, unfortunately… unfortunately I haven’t heard it in a long time.”

Xiao Yu’er asked:”What about your third brother-in-law?”

Murong Jiumei said:”He is a true prodigy of the realm, he is excelled in the literary fields. And at the age of 29 he became the Wulin chancellor of the provinces Guangdong and Guangxi.

Xiao Yu’er smiled:”A perfect match.”

Xiao Yu’er followed Murong Jiumei to each room and after walking out of the eighth room, Murong Jiumei looked very calm and gentle. She suddenly thought this brat was not that annoying anymore, they finally arrived at the ninth chamber.

The room was light blue, it was the most magnificent and beautiful of all the rooms. Every item in this room was precious and exquisite. Murong Jiumei looked at Xiao Yu’er, as if she asked: [Do you know that this is my room? Can you tell me what kind of person I am?].

Xiao Yu’er looked around for a while, he suddenly laughed:”The owner of this room is different from the others, she is entirely different.”

There was a faint smile on the face of Murong Jiumei, but she still looked cold and indifferent. She just casually asked:”What is different?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Blue means that she is quite self absorbed and pretentious. All those antique just prove that she is childish, prestigious and very common….”

Murong Jiumei could not endure to hear the rest and stormed out the room, she looked very white. She was boiling with anger and did not look at the awful little monster again.

Xiao Yu’er laughed loudly:”If I am wrong, why should you be angry? If I am right, you should not be angry at all.” Murong Jiumei did not look back and continued to walk, Xiao Yu’er just followed. After making a few turns here and there, they came on a brick road that lead to a big bronze door. Xiao Yu’er could not look beyond that door, but somehow that door had something mysterious and terrifying. He could not explain that feeling, he just saw Murong Jiumei taking out a key and used it to open the door. Without a sound the door opened, a cold air escaped gushed out from the door. Xiao Yu’er felt that this room

looked very much like the house of uncle Wan Chunliu. There were all sorts of jars, bottles with herbal medicine. There was also a big copper cauldron for cooking and composing different medicinal herbs or herbal extracts. But the house of Wan Chunliu was built with normal bricks, but this room looked like it was built out of one giant blue stone. The house of Wan Chuliu felt warm and comfortable, but this room was eerie looking and cold.

Murong Jiumei had closed the door again; her normal white face looked a bit greenish in here.

Xiao Yu'er laughed:"Miss Murong is a female physician. You are really a talented girl, why have you brought me here? Do you want to examine me?"

Murong Jiumei said:"Yes, you're right."

Xiao Yu'er said:"The poison in my body is gone, what else would you like to examine?"

Murong Jiumei said:"You have something in your body which is very annoying, if I cut that off you will be a much better person."

Xiao Yu'er laughed:"What would that be?"

Murong Jiumei said coldly:"Your tongue."

Xiao Yu'er stuck out his tongue and quickly backed away from her, he said:"Do my words really aggravate you that much? If so, I feel very flattered."

Murong Jiumei turned around and sneered:"These herbal extracts are all very expensive, don't touch them." Xiao Yu'er laughed:"Do you think I will touch them?"

Murong Jiumei smiled coldly:"Go ahead and touch them if you want to. Some of the extracts could prolong life and restore vitality, but there are some extracts that are very poisonous. One mistake and no one can save you."

Xiao Yu’er stuck out his tongue and said:”Don’t frighten me! I don’t have a lot of courage, I get scared very easily.”

Murong Jiumei said coldly:”If you just stay here and don’t move, no one can harm you.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”With you near me, nobody can harm me.”

Murong Jiumei said:”I have to practise my martial arts, I must leave now.”

Xiao Yu’er asked:”Where are you going to? I will follow you.”

Murong Jiumei sternly said:”If you keep following I will kill you myself.”

Xiao Yu’er sighed:”A beautiful girl like you just have to smile and everyone will be at your mercy. Why should you study martial arts, if you reach the desired level you will probably be very old.”

Murong Jiumei did not pay any attention to him and went to another bronze door and used a golden key to open it, she turned around and said:”Don’t enter this room if you do you won’t be able to get out.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”If you lock the door how can I get in.”

Murong Jiumei scoffed:”Yes, you cannot find a way in.”

She passed through the door and the door was closed it again and locked. Xiao Yu’er was not anxious to find out what was on the other side. He stretched himself and muttered:”Women…. Women…..really have a lot problems. Do you think that all the men in the world are fools? And do you think I cannot tell the difference from poison and medicine? I grew up with herbal medicine, I probably know more about it than you do.”

While he was muttering to himself, he was looking about. He said:”No wonder she tried to scare me, most of the extracts here are of good quality. Even uncle

Wan could not find some of these herbs and here there are three, four of them. Time to eat something."

He chose three, four types of herbs and put it in his mouth and started to chew on them. If Murong Jiumei would see it, she would probably go mad with anger again. Some herbs are so rare that even Xiao Yu'er had never seen them before; he just recognized them from the books of Wan Chunliu. Wan Chunliu had been searching for some of those herbs for several decades, but he was unable to find them. These herbs are invaluable; if these herbs boiled into an herbal extract it can even save people with terminal diseases. But Xiao Yu'er just put them in his mouth, similar to a cow eating ginseng; a total waste. In a few moments it was all gone.

He rubbed his tummy and said:"You really had a good meal today."

He walked around opening some bottles and drinking or eating the contents, or he would put some bottles in his clothes. What he could not take away anymore, he would mix the extracts up. He made a funny face and laughed:"Since you have nothing to do, let me create some chores for you." If Murong Jiumei had to clean up this mess, she would be busy for at least five, six days.

But Xiao Yu'er was not feeling to comfortable either, eating all those things together made his stomach uncomfortable. He felt like he was on fire, he sat down and thought for a while. He took a copper thread from his clothes and poked into the lock of the other bronze door. He grinned:"Do you really think you can keep me out?"

He put his ear near the lock, he poking the lock with the copper thread, a smile gradually appeared on his face and he muttered:"Yes, that is it…..Right, here is it."

With that the door opened and cold air gushed out. Xiao Yu'er took a deep breath and said:"Feels wonderful."

His body felt on fire earlier, but with the cold air gushing out this room he felt much better again. He opened the door and laughed loudly:"Miss Murong, I am

inside. I just want to look at your martial arts practice, I won't disturb you."

After he was finished, he was flabbergasted. He saw a room made of stone, there was a basement packed with huge cubes of ice. Murong Jiumei sat on an ice cube, her both hands grasped her two legs, her index fingers were pointed at the centre of her feet. She was completely naked. Xiao Yu'er had seen many things in his young life, but he had never seen a naked young woman before. He was never afraid of anything, but to this he was completely taken by surprise.

Murong Jiumei opened her eyes and saw him; her eyes were filled with shame, anger, shock, and humiliation. No words could describe her expression, but she did not move. Xiao Yu'er was stunned for a while, he turned around and looked all around but did not dare to look at Murong Jiumei anymore. He deliberately said:"Where are you, Miss Murong? Why can't I see you?"

This little brat could perceive the thoughts of girls; he said that just to calm Murong Jiumei a bit.

While he was talking, he turned around and was walking away. He was almost through the door, but then he saw nine drawings on the wall. He could not resist having a look.

On the first drawing was a picture of a naked girl standing upside down on a piece of ice. Next to the drawing were some small characters: [Modulating Stone Craft, only virgins can study this. This is the first step op this craft, within three years success is at grasp.]

The formula is: [Craft of Modulating Stone, when the craft is mastered rotate your energy nine times through your body. Your skin hardens like stone, impervious to wounds. After nine rotations, invincibility is yours….]

Xiao Yu'er was stunned and exclaimed with surprise:"This idiotic skill wants people to become zombies, no wonder Murong Jiumei is such a cold and unfriendly woman."

He quickly looked at the second drawing, the picture showed a girl standing upside down again and there was another line of characters: [When this level is

mastered, rotate your energy twice. First go against the…..]

Xiao Yu'er did not read on, he was absolutely not interested in such an idiotic craft. If a person could turn as cold and hard as a stone, what good will that do even if you become invincible.

The position of the girl on the third drawing was similar to Murong Jiumei's. Xiao Yu'er felt relieved and muttered:"Fortunately, she has just reached the third drawing. If she had mastered this skill, she would be some monster now. A danger to herself and others."

He did not bother to look at the other drawings; he tore them of the wall. Murong Jiumei was looking at him, her anger was gone, and she was now begging him with her eyes.

Xiao Yu'er did not look back, he loudly said:"Miss Murong, don't hate me! I am doing this for your own good. You're a lively girl, you should live your life to its' limit and not punish yourself with this martial arts."

If Murong Jiumei could speak now, she would either curse him or beg him. If she could move, she would eat him up.

But she could not move nor talk, she could just see Xiao Yu'er walking off with those nine drawings. Tears were forming in her eyes now.

Xiao Yu'er threw the nine drawings in the furnace and quickly locked the door. He left and did not look for Tie Xinlan and jumped over the wall.

Xiao Yu'er does things as he pleases, sometimes he is right and sometimes he is wrong. It does not bother him whether it is right or wrong. What he did earlier made him feel good and he did not care about the consequences.

He was not feeling very comfortable now; he was feeling stuffed and warm. He ran through the woods as fast as he could, he felt cooler walking in the shades of the trees.

Xiao Yu’er could not move anymore and was resting under a tree. He was hoping that Zhang Qing would not come now and he also hoped that Murong Jiumei would not come either. He felt warm, stuffed, and itchy all over his body, he muttered:”I wish there was a pond here, I jump into it. All I want is water now…”

A cold voice said:”What you need is a coffin.”

Xiao Yu’er felt a chill running up his spine and a sword was pointed at his neck. He was shocked and smiled wryly:”Women are truly formidable, if men are pursued by women they cannot and never escape.”

The voice said coldly:”That is something you found out too late.”

Xiao Yu’er asked:”Who are you? Are you Miss Murong or the Little Fairy?”

The voice said:”Do you think that Murong Jiumei can save you now? You’re dreaming.”

Xiao Yu’er suddenly laughed and muttered:”Good! It’s you! I am very fortunate.”

Zhang Qing did not know that Xiao Yu’er was terrified of Murong Jiumei at this moment, she sneered:”You’re right. You’re very fortunate to pick this path and I was waiting for you right here.”

She just wanted to antagonize Xiao Yu’er; even if Xiao Yu’er took a different path he could not escape her.

Xiao Yu’er said:”Your sword is very fast.” Zhang Qing said:”It is not too fast, but I think I can cut off your hand and while your mouth is still speaking.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”I really mocked you those two times, killing me with one blow is not sufficient. If I were you, I would think of a way to torture me first.”

Zhang Qing said:”You like to be tortured. That can be arranged, what do you have in mind?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”At least beat me up severely.”

Zhang Qing said coldly:”Do you think I am afraid to hit you.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Well, I think you can’t bear to hit me.”

Suddenly he felt a blow to his neck and another to his back. Zhang Qing gritted his teeth and said:”Very good! Take this….”

She hit him twice and kicked, Xiao Yu’er was sent rolling over the ground, but he laughed loudly:”That feels great.” He was really enjoying it, because his body was itching all over and Zhang Qing was actually giving him a massage. Zhang Qing angrily said:”Feeling great! If you like it so much, take some more.” She put more force in her fists and struck Xiao Yu’er heavily on the back. Xiao Yu’er said:”Too soft, try again harder.”

Zhang Qing almost exploded with anger; she saw that Xiao Yu’er did not show signs of pain. She was shocked and could not guess that after eating all those herbs made Xiao Yu’er very resilient. Even an iron hammer could not inflict much damage on him. Zhang Qing’s hands felt tired now; Xiao Yu’er was still shouting:”It feels great, harder please…”

Zhang Qing remembered that fight of earlier; he could withstand all those hits to his body. She really wondered how it was possible that Xiao Yu’er was not afraid of pain.

She was wondering whether she should hit him again or just stop. All of a sudden a cold voice said:”Are you done?” Zhang Qing turned around and saw Murong Jiumei. Zhang Qing saw that Murong Jiumei’s hair was messy and her eyes were red, her hands were shaking too. Zhang Qing did not expect her to look this; she replied loudly:”I am not done, what are you planning to do?”

Murong Jiumei said:”Then continue.”

Zhang Qing angrily said:”What will you do when I am done.” Murong Jiumei said:”When you’re done, I want him.” Zhang Qing scoffed:”We are not on your property anymore, don’t try to stop me. I….”

Murong Jiumei interrupted her:”Did you think that I am here to save him?”

Zhang Qing was stunned by that question and said:”Of course you’re here to save him, why else would you be here? Don’t tell me you want to kill him too?”

Murong Jiumei said:”Yes, I am here to kill him too.” She moved over to Xiao Yu’er and drew a dagger and wanted to stab him. When Xiao Yu’er saw them both here, he was not afraid anymore. Death was inevitable, why be afraid? He took a look at the dagger and suddenly he saw a flash and heard a metallic clang sound. Zhang Qing used her short sword to intercept the dagger. Murong Jiumei angrily said:”You wanted to kill him too, why are you stopping me?”

Zhang Qing sneered:”You were trying to protect him earlier, why do you want to kill him now?”

Murong Jiumei shouted:”That is none of your business.”

Zhang Qing said loudly:”I will make it my business.”

Murong Jiumei twirled her wrist and attacked with seven stances, she said:”No matter what, I have to kill him.”

Zhang Qing used her short sword to intercept all seven stances and said:”You did not allow me to kill him earlier, so I won’t allow you to kill now.” Murong Jiumei jumped away and said coldly:”Fine, you can kill now. I will just stand here and watch.” Zhang Qing was surprised, she raised her sword but then lowered it again, and she said coldly: ”I won’t kill him now because you want me to do so.” Murong Jiumei said:”What is the meaning of this?”

Zhang Qing said:”Why should I listen to you?”

Murong Jiumei said:”Just a while ago, you had to kill him. But now you’re trying to save him…..What is wrong? Are you…Are you…..with him…” Zhang Qing knew what word was left out, her face turned red and said loudly:”You were trying to rescue him from me earlier and now you’re trying to kill him. Are you in ……in….with him too?”

Murong Jiumei’s white face turned red and shouted:”How dare you talk to me like that!” Zhang Qing shouted back:”You started!” Both of them exchanged stances now, and their hands felt numb after the exchange of one stance. She backed away from each other ad suddenly both yelled.

Xiao Yu’er was gone. Zhang Qing stamped her feet and blamed Murong Jiumei:”This is all your fault!”

Murong Jiumei blamed Zhang Qing and said:”This is all your fault!” They said the same words simultaneously and when they both turned red. They looked at each other, and both lowered their heads when their gazes met.

Zhang Qing lifted her head after a moment:”He can’t be far.”

Murong Jiumei lifted her head too and said:”After him!” They wanted to smile to each other, but they really could not smile now. Zhang Qing bit her lip and said:”If we find him this time, we will kill him at the same time.”

Xiao Yu’er knew that with his lightness martial arts he could not escape, so he did not try to run away. Instead he ran back to the Murong Manor. He jumped over the same wall and went back to that stone house of earlier. He picked up the lock and quickly went inside. He stretched himself and rested on a block of ice, he started to laugh now. When he thought of the looks on Murong Jiumei and Zhang Qing he laughed even louder. Other people might think of them as heroines, literary female prodigies and such, but in his eyes they were just two women. In Xiao Yu’er’s heart men consisted of several hundreds of different types, but women consisted of only one type. His body still felt warm and he started to break some pieces of ice and ate that, he felt much better after consuming some ice and decided to sleep for a while. He was not an ordinary person, because not many people can sleep at a time like this. He slept for some time, suddenly he heard the outer door opening and was aroused. He did not move and even held his breath. He could hear Zhang Qing saying:”It’s very cold.”

Murong Jiumei said:”When my late mother ordered the construction of this ice cellar, it was because my late father did not like the hot weather. And a few ice cubes in the certain cold soups taste extra good in the summer. Furthermore, the ice house is also useful for another reason.”

Zhang Qing asked:”What other reason?” Murong Jiumei stayed silent for a moment before sighing:”Well, that does not matter now. It is too late for that.” She sounded disappointed and angry. Xiao Yu’er was really afraid now; he knew that Murong Jiumei really hated him. If they would lock him inside he could never escape.

Zhang Qing asked:”Were you afraid that he would hide in here?”

Murong Jiumei replied:”Hmm.” Zhang Qing laughed:”You are really too careful. He would not hide in here, that would be suicidal.” Murong Jiumei said:”I really don’t know, where else could he have disappeared to?” Zhang Qing sighed:”That rascal is really slippery and clever, the next time we catch him and I won’t even talk to him anymore and I will immediately kill him and be done with it.”

Her voice gradually became softer meaning that she and Murong Jiumei left the icehouse and Xiao Yu’er heard the door being locked. Finally, they have left. Xiao Yu’er thought: [Fortunately, women are too careless, if they had searched this place they would have found me.] He remained for a while longer and his body began to feel the cold in here. If he had cultivated his internal strength earlier instead of sleeping, his body would have absorbed the essences of those herbs and extracts. However, he just slept and wasting that precious time to absorb the essences. After resting for some time, he looked through the keyhole he saw Zhang Qing and Murong Jiumei standing in the outer room. Zhang Qing leaned against a wall, thinking of something. Murong Jiumei was looking very pale. Tie Xinlan was also in the outer room; she sat in front of the cauldron. She was picking up the pills that Xiao Yu’er threw on the floor; she was separating them and putting in separate bottles.

She was weeping while she was picking up those pills. Xiao Yu’er frowned when he saw that and thought: [I just wanted to aggravate that Murong Jiumei, but Murong Jiumei must vent her anger on her and told her to do all sorts of hard jobs to compensate.] But where is Gu Renyu? Gu Renyu must be not allowed to

enter this room. Zhang Qing recomposed herself and walked over to Tie Xinlan, Tie Xinlan was a bit startled and dropped all the pills she had in her hands. Xiao Yu'er could hear Zhang Qing talking to Tie Xinlan:"Don't be afraid. I won't harm you. We are all deceived by that awful little fiend, we should help each other."

Tie Xinlan lowered her head and tears flowed.

Zhang Qing smiled:"Let me help you. If we don't clean up this mess, ninth Miss won't let us have dinner." Murong Jiumei just stood there looking at them coldly not smiling. Xiao Yu'er thought: [Little Fairy looks very fierce, but she is really a nice girl…But all women are like that, you just need to flatter up to them and they will be appeased.] After some time, Zhang Qing asked:"That map….Did you really let that rascal trick you out of the map?"

Tie Xinlan stayed quiet for a moment before saying:"He did not trick me, I gave it to him." Zhang Qing asked:"Why did you give it to him?" Tie Xinlan lowered her head and just said:"I….I…."

Zhang Qing said:"You must be deceived by him, you…."

Tie Xinlan stood up resolutely and said loudly:"It is my business to whom I give that map, nobody has any say about that."

Zhang Qing was shocked and exclaimed:"Why are you angry?" Tie Xinlan said sternly:"Your martial arts are better and higher than mine, but I will not stand it that you laugh at me!"

Zhang Qing shook her head and sighed:"Nobody is laughing at you, nobody is."

Xiao Yu'er chuckled and thought: [The Little Fairy looks tough from the outside but is soft on the inside, but Tie Xinlan looks weak from the outside but is tough on the inside. Their personalities are very different from each other. Murong Jiumei has started to learn that idiotic martial art ever since she was a child. She is like a cube of ice; her heart must be frozen too. Of the three girls she was the most dangerous and lethal.]

After some time, Zhang Qing asked:”Are you still angry?” Tie Xinlan lowered her head and it looked she was a bit embarrassed. If someone was threatening her, she would never give in, but if someone treated her nicely she did not know how to react.

Zhang Qing asked:”You must have seen the map too.”

Tie Xinlan said:”Hmm.” Zhang Qing asked:”Do you still remember it?” Tie Xinlan said:”I can’t….can’t remember.” Zhang Qing said:”I don’t want that treasure, I swear I don’t want it. But I…I think that the brat must have gone there. If you can remember where it is we could find him and teach him a lesson.”

Tie Xinlan lowered her head and said:”I really don’t remember, I am not lying.”

Xiao Yu’er looked through the keyhole; he noticed that Tie Xinlan blinked her eyes a few times. He chuckled and thought: [She already knew where the location is. But she won’t reveal it, she may look like honest but she knows how to tell a lie and does quite a good job too.]

But then he thought: [Why does she lie? Is it because of me? But why I treated her quite badly. But she has not said one single bad word about me and when Zhang Qing attacked me she immediately defended me and became angry, why is that?] He was thinking about it but got confused by his own trail of thoughts, in the end he just thought: [Why should I care what her reasons are? All women are a bit mad.]

All of a sudden, Murong Jiumei walked away, Xiao Yu’er was a bit surprised and then he saw her come back. She was holding a lead ladle and a small urn. Zhang Qing asked:”What is in there?”

Murong Jiumei replied:”Lead.” Zhang Qing was surprised and asked:”Lead, what do you want to do with lead?”

Murong Jiumei did not answer, she put the urn on the furnace, there was a sinister glow in her eyes. She said:”This room has become redundant, I will stuff the keyhole so no one can leave or enter it again.”

Xiao Yu’er saw her evil smile and knew something was wrong. When he heard her, he was terrified. This Murong Jiumei was very vicious; she wanted to trap Xiao Yu’er in here. She had noticed Xiao Yu’er’s presence inside, but did not say a word she knew that Tie Xinlan and Zhang Qing would try to save him.

Xiao Yu’er was shocked and wanted to open pick the lock and storm out. But Murong Jiumei was faster than he was and poured liquid lead on to the keyhole. With that Xiao Yu’er could not see nor hear anything anymore. He could vaguely hear someone knocking on the outer door. Murong Jiumei was afraid that Xiao Yu’er would bang on the door and Zhang Qing, Tie Xinlan would hear him. Nobody could hear Xiao Yu’er anymore. He was afraid, shocked, he stamped his feet and cursed:”Murong Jiumei, you b-itch! You disgusting, horrible wretch! What have I done to you? I haven’t killed your parents nor have I raped you! Why do you have to use such a cruel method to kill me! It was because I was not interested in that skinny body of yours; otherwise you would be my woman now! If that had happened you would not try something like this!” He cursed and cursed, he used every expletive he knew. He was a boy who grew up in the Valley of Evil; his cursing technique was really superb.

If Murong Jiumei could hear these words, she would probably cough up blood. Unfortunately, because of the thick walls, no one could hear a single word.

After cursing for a very long time, Xiao Yu’er knew that cursing was useless. He was walking up and down, thinking of a way to escape this place. But this ice cellar was practically airtight for obvious reasons a bit of warm breeze and the ice would melt. This place was prison; Xiao Yu’er could not even dig a small hole in here.

He smiled wryly:”Who says that this room is redundant? It can be used to lock people up, much better than other prisons. It seems that I will soon become a frozen fish.” He was shivering, he sat down cross-legged and generated his internal power to fight the cold, and before soon he was not feeling cold anymore. Xiao Yu’er was not a very diligent martial arts practitioner, which is why he did not feel bad about that missed opportunity when he could absorb the essence of those herbs he ate. He thinks he is the most intelligent person alive, and never placed a heavy emphasis on his martial arts. Because he is of the assumption that no matter how powerful his adversary is, he cannot compete with pure intelligence. But in situations like this, he has to rely on martial arts. He

now feels a bit sorry for wasting such an opportunity earlier.

However, there is still a part of the essence of herbs left in his body, he was cultivating his internal energy and his energy grew due to the herbs. He gradually entered a state of nothingness.

He did not know or realise how much had passed, a few hours a few days even. When he felt hungry he would take out those bottles of medicine or herbs he hid in his clothes and took some. It helped him fight the cold and hunger. But there was no way he could he escape, it seems that he accepted that he was going to die in here sooner or later. What good would mastering invincible martial arts be in here? He felt depressed when he thought of this, but if he did not cultivate his internal energy he would feel cold. He was not afraid to die, but he did not want to suffer too much. He was not an immortal and soon he felt very hungry, internal energy could stop the cold but it could stop the hunger. He knew death was near. He did not understand that the most intelligent person in this world would die here and at the hands of a woman. He also understood that women are not that easy as he thought they would be. He was blaming himself and muttered:"It never pays to be a good person, if I had killed both Murong Jiumei and Zhang Qing I would not be in this mess…."

He also started to blame Wan Chunliu; if it wasn't for him he would a true evil person. Utterly ruthless and cruel, he would be hated and cursed at but at least he would stay alive. He was shivering and he felt dizzy, the cold and hunger had caught up with him. He muttered:"Everyone has to die once, at least I won't be bothered by women anymore when I am dead."

All of a sudden, he did not feel the cold anymore. Instead he felt warm, he noticed that the ice was melting. He was surprised and when he touched the wall, it was scorching.

Xiao Yu'er jumped up and said:"What is happening? Does she want to burn me and freeze me to death? That is not right, she treasures the rooms of her sisters as much as her own life. Why would she set fire to the manor?"

He kept walking back and forth; only one wall was a bit cool. So he leaned back against that wall to find some coolness. Suddenly it dawned to him, he muttered:"Enemies of the Murong family must have come, not only have they

come to kill but also to burn the Murong Manor to a crisp. Those idiots can burn ten Murong Manors for all I care, but they do not know that I am stuck in this accursed manor too. He was cursing those enemies of the Murong family now.

In a matter of moments, the ice had melted and Xiao Yu'er was drifting in the water. He could not escape now; the water is quite warm now. Xiao Yu'er could not think of plan to escape so he took off his clothes and took a bath.

He is the type that will never be afraid of death unless he is confronted with it. Nobody can force him to be afraid or worried. But now he has reached the point of no return, the water became hotter and hotter. Xiao Yu'er was like a fish that was about to be boiled.

He was hoping the walls would give in before the water boiled him, but there was not even a crack in the walls. He was gradually becoming weak and swallowed some water in. Xiao Yu'er smiled wryly:"This will be a large bowl of fish soup, it's a shame that I should enjoy it alone…."

Suddenly he heard a series of [ting, tang] sounds, someone was knocking at the door.

Xiao Yu'er found hope again and thought: [Good, this way someone can enjoy the soup too.]

He knew that the fire could not destroy that bronze door, but the keyhole and the lead should be destroyed. If someone would use a mallet and chisel the door could surely be opened.

And surely it did not take long and the door was opened, the water gushed out and Xiao Yu'er allowed himself to be carried out by the water.

The two men outside did not anticipate that there would be so much water inside and they were drenched. Little did they expect to someone would be riding on the rapids of the water. The water flushed Xiao Yu'er quite far away; he just stayed down and did not move. He was starved to death and soaked to death, how could he move?

He narrowed his eyes and focussed, he secretly saw that the fire outside was out. But there was burnt wood, rubble and smoke.

When Xiao Yu'er looked at those two men, he saw that one was tall, muscular and fat. He also had a big beard, he was still looking quite valiant and tough even he was soaked now. Xiao Yu'er suddenly felt that this man resembled an ox. He felt assured again, he thought that this man looked tough but did not look too bright. One or two small lies, he will be tricked.

The other one looked more difficult to handle, he wore a white robe and was much shorter than the other man. He bended his waist all the time and had hunchback, his face looked like it was gourd hanging upside down, and he had a long white beard. If he would walk among a herd of sheep, no one would recognize him from the sheep. It was clear that he was the more dangerous one of the two. Xiao Yu'er immediately deducted that they were two of the 12 Zodiacs. Probably the white sheep and yellow ox. He gradually understood that that all the 12 Zodiacs did not look like humans, they really resembled animals. It was amazing that there exactly 12 of such characters in the world. The two men looked at Xiao Yu'er and were stunned. The Yellow Ox said:"I should have never listened to you, years ago I promised myself that I would never listen to you again. But, why did I listen to you this time."

The White Sheep said:"Listening to me is the smart thing to do."

The Yellow Ox laughed strangely:"Smart? I am soaking wet now. You said that this icehouse was full of treasures, well where are those treasures?"

The White Sheep said:"This brat is the treasure." The Yellow Ox said:"This brat has fine flesh. Brother Li could prepare a nice meal if he was here. But you only eat grass."

Xiao Yu'er was a bit worried when he was the White Sheep, but when he hear their conversation he knew what to do. He grinned:"Old ox and sheep, how have you been doing lately?"

The Yellow Ox was surprised and said:"This brat knows us."

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Well, sometimes brother Dazui would tell me that the bravest of the 12 Zodiacs is the ox and the sheep is the smartest. I am happy to see you today.”

The Yellow Ox laughed loudly:”Thank you, thank you. You’re too kind…” Suddenly he stopped laughing and carefully watched Xiao Yu’er, he said:”How….How is it possible that you know old brother Li?”

He addressed Li Dazui as old brother Li this time instead of brother Li and he was stuttering now. Xiao Yu’er immediately knew what to do. He said:”Brother Dazui told me that the Yellow Ox of the 12 Zodiacs is his junior. Could it be that you are an uncle of the Yellow Ox?”

The Yellow Ox’s faced turned red and said:”I am the Yellow Ox.” Xiao Yu’er said:”If that is so, you should call me uncle too. If you carelessly address people, the gap between generations will become very muddled. And brother Dazui won’t be pleased either.” The Yellow Ox laughed apologetically:”Yes, little brother. But please don’t tell master Li.”

Xiao Yu’er looked stern and said:”You should not address me as [little brother].”

The Yellow Ox stuttered:”Yes….I….I…”

The White Sheep sneered:”If you were not travelling with me, you would probably be sold off and you would not even know who sold you.”

The Yellow Ox looked at him and asked:”What do you mean?”

The White Sheep said:”Do you really believe that this brat is a brother of old master Li? He is even too young to be the son of old master Li.”

The Yellow Ox touched his head and said:”But, his words do make sense.” The White Sheep said:”You, idiot! He heard what you said earlier and is trying to deceive you now. Let me ask you, why would a brother of old master Li do in the Murong Manor?”

The Yellow Ox said:”He is probably imprisoned by that Murong wretch.”

The White Sheep scoffed”Are you blind? Don’t you realize what the purposes are of that house? That Murong wretch is not an idiot, why would she imprison someone in the room where she stores treasures and valuable medicinal herbs. This brat must know where the treasures are, that is why I said that this brat is the real treasure.”

The Yellow Ox rubbed his head and said to Xiao Yu’er:”You, little brat! I was trying to defend you, but here you were lying to me.”

Xiao Yu’er sneered:”Does this room have to be the place to store treasures and herbs? When there is nothing stored inside, it could serve as a prison. That Murong wretch is not an idiot, why would she flood that house if it was filled with treasures.” The Yellow Ox clapped his hands and said:”Yes, very true. For instance this hand of mine could caress the face of a woman but it could also slap her. The same theory could apply for this room.”

The White Sheep sneered:”If there is a man who has lived for almost 50 years can still be tricked by a mere boy, that man must be you! If he wants me to believe his lies, he should come up with some proof! For instance…”

Xiao Yu’er clapped his hands and smiled:”Come here and I will show you something.”

He was lying on the ground enjoying the sun, the White Sheep walked over and stood in front of him. All of a sudden the body of Xiao Yu’er slid and his hands and legs attacked the White Sheep. He struck out four fists and kicked at him three times. He performed this series of attacks in one short instant, there was only one person who had studied and created such stances and that man was Li Dazui. This soft of technique looked formidable but is not really useful, why would someone lie on the ground when he is fighting. Unless he was pretending to be ill or injured and wants to launch a sneak attack. Furthermore, there are not too many people who look honest like Li Dazui and have such a vile heart and the tenacity to create such martial arts. If he was not vile, he does not need to pretend to be ill or injured and could not devise such stances. And if he did not look honest, people would not believe him even if he were pretending. So this

attack was unique in the realm, it was a trademark of Li Dazui.

The White Sheep was shocked and leapt up; he did not look like a sheep but like a rabbit. If Xiao Yu'er was not too tired now, the White Sheep would be a dead sheep now.

Xiao Yu'er sat down cross-legged and grinned:"Do you believe me now?" The White Sheep was still recovering from the shock, but the Yellow Ox bowed to Xiao Yu're three times and said:"Little exalted uncle, I don't care how old you are even if you were just three days old if you're a brother of Li Dazui you will be my exalted little uncle."

Xiao Yu'er said:"How about the old sheep here?"

The White Sheep's eyes flashed and he lifted his head, saying slowly:"How is old master Li doing in the valley?"

Xiao Yu'er said:"Good people die early, he is still around."

The White Sheep laughed sinisterly:"Everyone in the valley will live at least to be a hundred years. Old master Li will stay there and enjoy the rest he deserves, he won't come out and be troubled again by worldly affairs."

Xiao Yu'er rolled his eyes and laughed:"Normally, he wouldn't."

The White Sheep was startled and said:"How about now?"

Xiao Yu'er said slowly:"Now. Well, not only is he out but brothers Du and Yin and sister Du are also around. If not how would I dare to walk about on my own."

The White Sheep's face turned white and said:"But they…."

Xiao Yu'er said:"They have been trapped in that valley for too long now, and they have all mastered some incredible new martial arts which nobody has seen

before. If you were them, would you not do the same thing.”

The White Sheep lowered his head and said:”Yes….do you….Does young master know where they are now?”

He had lowered his head, but Xiao Yu’er could see that his eyes were still flashing and had a something sinister in them. Xiao Yu’er saw that and just smiled:”They always like to be mysterious, even I do not know where they are now.” The White Sheep was relieved to hear that, but Xiao Yu’er continued:”But who knows? They could be standing behind you now.” The White Sheep was scared again, but he did not dare to look back.

The Yellow Ox laughed happily:”It would be wonderful if uncle Li would come, we would not have to fear that Murong wretch and her wrath.”

Xiao Yu’er casually asked:”Have you let her escape?”

The Yellow Ox sighed:”We are invited by the snake, but we had longed for the treasures of the Murong Manor for a long time.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”The mere thought of the herbal extracts of the Murong Manor just water your mouth.”

The Yellow Ox smiled wryly:”Unfortunately, that Murong wretch is really clever. Somehow she knew that we would attack and had already left before we came.”

Xiao Yu’er was shocked and exclaimed:”She ran off?”

The Yellow Ox hatefully said:”Not only that, she took everything valuable with her. She did not even bother to lock the door. She just left a note [Trespassers, die]. Arrogant little b-itch!”

Xiao Yu’er agreed:”The arrogant little b-itch!” He guessed the motive why Murong Jiumei had left. Zhang Qing and Tie Xinlan must think that Xiao Yu’er had escaped and they are eager to find him. Murong Jiumei knows that they

have a weak spot for Xiao Yu'er and will obviously not reveal where she hid Xiao Yu'er. She would naturally go along with them so she won't give herself away.

When he thought of this, he cursed:"That b-itch is not only but she is also vicious. It is a good thing that you burnt her manor down. Who started the fire, I have to buy him a drink….two drinks even."

The Yellow Ox said:"The people who started the fire have already left, but we can…"

Xiao Yu'er laughed:"Yes, we can still drink. We will only stop after drinking a few hundred cups. We can drink while we are on our way. I will take you to see Li Dazui, and when we see someone we like we can even ….well, we will find out what we will do then."

The Yellow Ox clapped his hands and said:"Marvellous!"

Xiao Yu'er asked:"What about you old sheep?"

The White Sheep stuttered:"I….I…."

Xiao Yu'er said:"If you don't want to go, I am not going to force you. When I see brother Dazui, I will just tell him that you were not too keen on seeing him again."

The White Sheep said loudly:"Who said that? Old ox, did you hear me say that?" He pulled the Yellow Ox and said:"Let's go, why are we still standing here."

And indeed the three of them travelled together, drinking along the way. Xiao Yu'er noticed that he was a talent in drinking liquor too, he could never become intoxicated. He sometimes wondered what happened to all that wine he drank, it did not even affect a bit. And his belly did not grow.

The Yellow Ox and the White Sheep obeyed his every command, Xiao Yu'er never had to worry about eating, drinking and sleeping arrangements. They took

care of it for him. While they were travelling, the two of them did not even question where Xiao Yu'er was taking them. These two demons of the 12 Zodiacs were totally obedient to this young boy; nobody would believe this if they did not see it.

On their way they saw a lot of Wulin people, whenever those Wulin people saw them they would turn around or evade them. Some of these people did not recognize whom they met, but they quite taken by the strange looks of the ox and sheep and nobody dare to mess with them.

After entering Yanmen Pass, Xiao Yu'er noticed that some people were following them but kept a noticeable distance. Wherever they went, they would follow. But they all looked respectful and did not speak; it is obvious that they were not here to trouble them.

Xiao Yu'er looked at the ox and the sheep to see if their faces changed. But there was nothing on their faces; Xiao Yu'er did not say anything. After arriving at Jiange, they found an inn and lodged there.

Xiao Yu'er said:"Qu wine and spicy hot chicken, excellent!"

The Yellow Ox agreed and laughed. Normally, if Xiao Yu'er would say something they would immediately bring it over. But today they just sat there. After some time Xiao Yu'er said:"If it is good, why won't you get some for us?" The Yellow Ox laughed:"From today onwards, we won't have to get things personally."

Xiao Yu'er said:"Do you expect me to do it?" The White Sheep said:"We wouldn't dare to trouble young master to do such lowly jobs." Xiao Yu'er said:"But if we don't do it and we don't notify the proprietor who will bring the dishes of food and bottles of wine. It won't drop from the sky."

The Yellow Ox chortled:"Just wait and see."

Xiao Yu'er walked up and down in the room a few times, suddenly someone knocked three times on the door. When they opened the door nobody was there but on the floor there was platter with a plate of spicy hot chicken, a plate of

deep-fried pork, a plate with some small cold food, a plate with to fish cooked with tofu and a large bowl of chicken soup and one big bottle of wine, it was fragrant and it was the Qu wine Xiao Yu’er mentioned before.

Xiao Yu’er blinked his eyes and laughed:”The two of you know magic.”

The Yellow Ox laughed:”This isn’t magic, but really filial sons showing proper respect to their elders.” Xiao Yu’er said:”Hmm?” The White Sheep said:”On our way here, did young master see all those people respectfully following us?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”I thought you just ignored them.” The Yellow Ox said:”Those are our filial sons and grandsons.” Xiao Yu’er said:”They are your disciples.”

The Yellow Ox laughed:”What useless disciples! We don’t even know them” Xiao Yu’er asked:”But why do they follow you?” The Yellow Ox laughed:”Everyone knows in the realm that whenever the 12 Zodiacs appear, they will be after something invaluable. These sons and grandsons are afraid to do something grand. We, 12 Zodiacs, are only interested in the most valuable items and will usually leave the gold and silver alone. And those scavengers can pick some rather valuable assets here and there.”

The White Sheep said:”Wherever the 12 Zodiacs go, we are always welcomed by friends of the bandit world. If they receive any news, they will even report it to us.”

Xiao Yu’er applauded them and laughed:”No wonder that the 12 Zodiacs are so wealthy and feared, you have eyes and hands everywhere.”

The Yellow Ox laughed:”But this time they are barking up the wrong tree, this time they will gain nothing.”

The White Sheep laughed too:”But they are bringing food over out of their own free will. So, we don’t need to be polite.” Their laughter was loud but their voices stayed low.

They travelled very comfortably, no matter what they wanted they just had to say it loudly and it would be presented to them. After passing the pass earlier, Xiao Yu'er did not travel east anymore he changed direction to the southwest. They passed through Mianyang, Longquan, Mount Mei and finally they were near Mount Emei. Xiao Yu'er seemed to know the way and wherever he went he just needed to know the name of the place and then he would know what road to take. The scenery of Sichuan province was different from the prairie. Xiao Yu'er was rather happy here; he loved the spicy food and the fine wine.

When they arrived at Emei, he snuck out when the ox and sheep were not paying attention. He would come back when it was very late in the night, the ox and sheep did not ask him where he went. And he did not tell them anything either. He did the same thing the second day and came back late at night. He did the same thing three days in a row. The two of them were very obedient and did not dare to say a word, it seemed that they feared Li Dazui a lot even after all these years.

The Ten Great Malevolents were not to be trifled with.

On the third day, Xiao Yu'er was wandering about in the market; there were Wulin people in almost all the inns, restaurants and such. All of them sat at their tables drinking and eating silently.

Xiao Yu'er did not know what the names were of these people, or if they were bandits or members of orthodox schools. They could even be famous heroes or unknown characters.

From time to time, Xiao Yu'er would see Taoist priests carrying swords. They carried long and thin swords and looked very conceited, it seemed that they looked down upon everyone. Sometimes they would carefully observe people, it did not seem that they were just taking a stroll in the city. They all looked a bit worried. Xiao Yu'er knew that these Taoist priests must belong to the Emei School. The Emei swordsmanship is renowned for being swift and vicious, the disciples of the school would of course be quite arrogant. Besides, this is their terrain, the foot of Mount Emei. It was only natural that they would feel proud and carefully watch people here; nobody would question their motives here.

Xiao Yu'er bought a fragrant pouch, half a catty of pork tendons, and half a

catty of beef before returning to the inn. When he returned he fought the table full of food, the ox and sheep were waiting for him. The food was getting cold but still they waited for the return of Xiao Yu'er. Xiao Yu'er laughed:"The two of you are very attached to this room, you haven't left the room for two days now. It is quite nice outside."

The Yellow Ox said wryly:"We know that it is nice outside, but with our reputation and seeing that is Mount Emei we cannot go out."

Xiao Yu'er asked:"Are those damned Taoists of Mount Emei really that formidable?"

The Yellow Ox sighed:"Let us not talk about that, let me pour you a drink first."

Xiao Yu'er took out what he bought and laughed:"The proprietor of the shop where I bought this has a secret recipe of preparing this beef and tendons. He would soak the meat with wine several decades old and that is why it tastes better than normal dried beef and such. Have some."

The Yellow Ox laughed:"Those so-called sons and grandsons have sent a lot of food over, my exalted uncle did not need to waste your money."

Xiao Yu'er said:"I just wanted to taste something else." The White Sheep said:"In that case, thank you " He helped himself to some beef and praised it. Well, the Yellow Ox had already eaten five pieces.

Xiao Yu'er drank two cups of wine, although he was not drunk he was feeling euphoric and laughed:"It seems that Emei swordsmanship is really quite good, all those Wulin people were very silent and looked very pensive. Sooner or later I would like to see how good it is."

The Yellow Ox laughed:"All those accursed Taoists will run away when they see you."

The White Sheep looked at the pouch, he said:"Do you really want to go up Mount Emei, sir?"

Xiao Yu’er said:”I wanted to go up with the two of you, but since you cannot go I will have to go alone.”

The Yellow Ox asked:”When will you depart, sir?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Tomorrow morning.”

The Yellow Ox sighed:”It is a shame that your plans have changed, sir.”

Xiao Yu’er frowned and asked:”What change?”

The Yellow Ox laughed at him, his laugh was very strange.

The White Sheep smiled evilly:”You little bastard! Don’t you know yet?”

The [sir] was dropped now and he called him a little bastard instead. Xiao Yu’er was shocked, but he got up and slammed his hand very hard on the table, he angrily said:”You old goat! How dare…”

But soon he sat down again, his body felt weak all over. The White Sheep laughed:”Little bastard, do you now know why?”

Xiao Yu’er fell down on the floor and said:”There was poison in the wine.”

The Yellow Ox proudly laughed:”We were afraid that we could not trick you, so we drank with you and from the same bottle. The only difference is that we took an antidote before drinking.”

Xiao Yu’er asked:”Why did you this?”

The White Sheep said:”Why do you think we went to the Murong Manor? Do you really think those useless herbs of theirs can interest us? The herbal medicines of the Murong family cannot attract the attention of the 12 Zodiacs.”

The Yellow Ox said:”To tell you the truth we came for you.” The White Sheep said:”In the world you are the only one who knows the location of Yan Nantian’s treasure. Old snake had posted a number of spies near the Murong Manor. He alerted us via carrier pigeons and when we arrived that Murong wretch had already left.”

The Yellow Ox said:”We looked everywhere for you but we could not find you, in our anger we set fire to the manor.” The White Sheep said:”When the manor was burnt down, we saw the stone house. We thought that you might have offended that Murong girl and was locked inside.”

The Yellow Ox said:”Offending is quite easily with her strange temper….”

When Xiao Yu’er heard this he sighed and asked:”But why were there only you two?”

The Yellow Ox laughed:”We knew that you were a diabolical, cunning little bastard. If we forced you, you might even think of a few cunning plans to escape or even spout nonsense to confuse us. What is worse would be if you managed to escape us.” The White Sheep said:”Our good friend the Yellow Ox deduced that the first place you would go to was the location of the Yan Nantian treasure. So he came up with a good plan to lead you on.”

Xiao Yu’er carefully looked at the Yellow Ox and asked:”Was it really you?”

The Yellow Ox said:”Surprised?”

Xiao Yu’er was drugged by them and could not move anymore, he just sighed:”You really cannot judge a man by his looks. A stupid ox can be as cunning as a fox, that is something I never imagined could happen.”

The White Sheep chuckled:”Uncountable people in Wulin have been tricked by him. You, little bastard are not the first one. Why all the sighing?”

Xiao Yu’er asked:”But how did you know….”

The Yellow Ox asked:”I know that you travelled together with the daughter of Tie Zhan, so he had to know the Ten Great Malevolents. I just randomly picked a name of them and you took the bait.”

Xiao Yu’er smiled wryly:”A luck hit and I must be lucky these days.”

The Yellow Ox said:”When you saw that we were that easily tricked by you, you were very proud of yourself, weren’t you? Fortunately, you are diabolical little monster that is why our plan worked perfectly. You did not suspect a thing.”

Xiao Yu’er sighed:”I was surprised to see you all so obedient and friendly, because the 12 Zodiacs are ruthless thugs. Unfortunately, I was still deceived by you….”

The Yellow Ox laughed:”You think you’re very smart, but you still have a lot to learn before you can roam the realm.”

The White Sheep said:”The 12 Zodiacs are not fools. If we did not have our motives, we would not play along with you. Even if Li Dazui was here, we would not fear him.”

The Yellow Ox said:”Initially we wanted to dispose after we have found the treasure. But you are too slippery, so we had to use other means of incapacitating you.”

The White Sheep said:”Since we now know that the treasure is on Mount Emei and we are not far from it, we are not afraid of your little feeble tricks.”

The Yellow Ox laughed evilly:”If you will tell us where the treasure is we might even spare your life. You’re a smart boy, you will make the right choice, won’t you?”

Xiao Yu’er looked at them for some time and then started to laugh very hard. It looked like he was very happy and pleased.

The White Sheep angrily said:”You little bastard, do you really think we have no

means to make you talk!”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Old bastard, do you really think I have fallen for your trick?”

The Yellow Ox laughed:”What devious plan do you still have? Tell us.”

Xiao Yu’er sighed:”Well, I am willing to tell you. But I am afraid when I am just in the middle of my story, you are dead.”

The Yellow Ox laughed:”Really?”

Xiao Yu’er grinned:”Not true, there was no poison on the beef you ate earlier. No poison at all.”

Before Xiao Yu’er finished his sentence, the Yellow Ox could not laugh anymore. The White Sheep’s face changed and he grabbed his Xiao Yu’er’s jacket, he said:”You little bastard, what did you say?”

Xiao Yu’er smiled:”I just said I was a fool. I knew I was going treasure hunting tomorrow and I did not want you to follow me, but I could not bear to poison you two. Instead I put the poison on those tendons and beef.”

Before Xiao Yu’er had finished, the White Sheep was terrified. He shouted:”Give us…us the antidote!”

Xiao Yu’er grinned:”Yes, of course. I should really give you the antidote. I really should even if you tried to dispose of me. Don’t forget, you need me to find the treasure, I don’t need you. The effects of immobilizing drugs can wear off, but poison is lethal.”

The Yellow Ox suddenly laughed and pulled the White Sheep up, he grinned:”Yes, we are the fools. We don’t know anything, you have to tell us that we are poisoned and then we really are poisoned.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Of course, don’t believe me. But if you would press the spot next to your Rugen acupoint under your fifth rib, you won’t find anything wrong. Don’t even try to press it.”

When Xiao Yu’er said [Don’t even try to press it], the ox and the sheep had already pressed that spot. And when they did, their faces became whiter than paper. They looked at each other back and forth and did not move.

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”It is nothing, it just feels a bit numb. You won’t die anytime soon, you can always kill me first.” He told them to kill him first, but they would never do something like that now. Who would give them the antidote if Xiao Yu’er died? Xiao Yu’er laughed:”If I were you, I would first give me the antidote of the immobilizing drug. And if you would listen carefully to my words and stay obedient…..”

The Yellow Ox protested:”But after you have your antidote, how do we know you will give us our antidote.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Yes, you don’t need to the antitoxin. I will give you your antidote first.”

The White Sheep and the Yellow Ox looked at each other; suddenly they walked over to Xiao Yu’er.

Xiao Yu’er slowly said:”Some types of venom cannot be cured with conventional methods. Besides, apart from the user no one knows what the poison can do. But if you don’t believe, try and see if you’re lucky.”

Both of them stopped walking, their lives were at stake now.

They both thought: [We could always kill him after taking the antidote, making false promises or swearing is what we do best.]

The two of them knelt down and swore that they would obey Xiao Yu’er no matter what, and then they respectfully fed Xiao Yu’er the antidote to the immobilizing drug. Everything else can wait, but not their lives. After some time,

Xiao Yu’er could get up he dusted away the dust on his clothes and laughed:”The drug and antidote of the 12 Zodiacs are very effective.” The Yellow Ox laughed:”I think your antitoxin must be very effective too, sir.”

Xiao Yu’er asked:”What antitoxin?”

The two of them felt that someone punched them in their stomachs. Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Don’t worry, I was just joking.” He smiled and took out a small bottle, saying:”The antidote was on me all the time, if you just searched me earlier…(* sigh). Sometimes you must not blindly believe the words of others.”

The two of them were furious and could strangle this brat, but first they had to save their own lives. The Yellow Ox grabbed the bottle and immediately poured some of the antitoxin in his mouth.

The White Sheep’s face changed and said:”Why do you have take that much?” The Yellow Ox grinned:”I am bigger than you, so I have to take a bit more.”

The White Sheep angrily took the bottle and poured the remaining contents down his throat. They both stared at Xiao Yu’er and were thinking: [There is nowhere to run now, you little bastard].

Xiao Yu’er looked back at them and asked:”Does that spot still hurt?”

They both pressed and the numbness was gone.

The White Sheep laughed:”It is very effective.” The Yellow Ox laughed sinisterly:”Where do you….”

Xiao Yu’er loudly interrupted him with laughter:”The spot I told you to press was where your blood flows make contact, even a slight pinch pain and numbness can occur. Now your blood flows have moved on, it is natural that the pain is gone.”

They were furious and shocked when they heard that.

The White Sheep roared:”You lying little bastard!”

Xiao Yu’er grinned:”Yes, I lied to two old bastards. You have to think here, I did not cook the beef how could I have put poison in it. And if I did, why should I save you.”

The Yellow Ox laughed loudly too:”You’re clever, but we’re not complete idiots either. Although you have taken the antidote of the immobilizing drug you cannot fully use strength for another hour. We can kill you right now.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Really?”

The Yellow Ox laughed evilly:”No, we won’t kill you. I just want to cut off your ears, half your nose and chop off one of your hands and legs.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Hmm, I am really afraid.”

The Yellow Ox said:”No need to be afraid, we are not Li Dazui. We will just feed your flesh to dogs.”

With every word he said, he moved one step forward towards Xiao Yu’er.

Xiao Yu’er did not look at him and just counted softly:”1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, …..”

When he reached seven, the huge palm of the Yellow Ox hacked at him but Xiao Yu’er did not move.

Before his palm made contact the Yellow Ox’s body swayed and his face changed colour. He suddenly fell down and was foaming at the mouth.

The White Sheep was shocked and said:”What is going on?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”The beef was not poisoned but the so-called antidote is poison. He ate most of it, so he noticed the effects sooner than you.”

The White Sheep angrily roared and leapt up, but in midair his body dropped like a brick. And when he fell down he bumped his head very hard, a lump was forming.

Xiao Yu'er laughed and clapped his hands:"Now you've turned into a goat."

He was still laughing loudly when someone outside sighed:"It is an utter disgrace that two full grown men can be deceived this easily by a mere boy. How can you face your peers afterwards?"

Xiao Yu'er saw that the window was opened and a man looking a snake slithered in. He looked slimy and smooth; it was the Azure Serpent Lord.

Xiao Yu'er rolled his eyes and laughed:"Long time no see, how are you doing? Take a seat and have a drink." The Azure Serpent Lord smiled evilly:"I created that immobilizing drug, nobody in this world knows the effects better than me. It is futile of you to think you can stall time, even if you managed to speak a hundred words to buy some time it is still not possible for you to use your internal energy."

Xiao Yu'er sighed:"It seems that I cannot escape my fate today. Most unfortunate."

The Azure Serpent Lord replied:"Very true." He looked at the ox and the sheep; they only managed to make some humming noises. Their limbs and muscles have gone stiff and they could not blink their eyes. This poison was more lethal than the venom of the Azure Serpent Lord. When he saw this, his face changed a bit and exclaimed:"The zombie powder of Yin Jiuyou."

Xiao Yu'er laughed:"Excellent deduction! These two good brothers here did not take enough of it. After an hour they will be as stiff as zombies, they won't die but they can't walk about anymore. A sheep and an ox jumping around in the market, that must be a hilarious sight."

When the White Sheep and Yellow Ox hear this, they broke out in a cold sweat

and hummed even harder. The Azure Serpent Lord said:”Do you want me to save you?”

The two of them tried to nod very hard, but it just seemed that they just moved their heads slightly.

The Azure Serpent Lord smiled sinisterly:”One treasure divided by three, everyone will only have a small portion. Furthermore, I could remember that you two promised me to leave some secret markings behind so I can follow you. But somehow I could not find those markings. Fortunately, I know you too well and arranged some of my own people amongst those so-called sons and grandsons of yours if not I could not catch up with you.”

The White Sheep and The Yellow Ox sweated even harder now, there was fear in their eyes. The Azure Serpent Lord laughed:”Since you always like to pretend to be ghastly, it is only fitting that you will become real zombies.”

He stopped laughing and walked over to Xiao Yu’er.

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”If you want to seal my acupoints, I suggest you would be gentle. I can’t use my internal strength now so if you use too much strength I might die and then it is all over.”

The Azure Serpent Lord laughed sinisterly:”In that case I won’t seal your acupoints. I will just tell my [azure silk] to bite you and I promise it won’t hart. It will feel like you are being hugged by a woman.”

While he was talking, an azure small snake crawled out of his sleeve. The snake was almost the size of a worm, but it was very fast and its’ tongue was fiery red, it looked very scary.

Even Xiao Yu’er was a bit startled. The brocade of the Azure Serpent Lord was like a nest full of snakes; in a short while ten odd little azure snakes as thin as worms and as long as chopsticks crawled out. They all crawled up Xiao Yu’er’s body, some were around his neck, others crawled around his face, back, in his clothes and even in his boots. They feeling of a dozen cold snakes crawling up and down your body is really disgusting and repulsive.

Xiao Yu’er felt numb all over and did not dare to move.

The Azure Serpent Lord raised his thumb and middle finger and said:”All I have to do is snap my fingers all you instantly be hugged and kissed by these little maidens. Except for you nobody in this world can have the luck of being kissed by these lovely beauties all the same time.”

Xiao Yu’er sighed:”If being hugged women really feels like this, no wonder that smart people become Buddhist monks of Taoist priests.”

The Azure Serpent Lord smiled evilly:”You haven’t even…”

Xiao Yu’er loudly interrupted:”Please stop, I really can’t take this.”

The Azure Serpent Lord asked:”Are you begging me now?”

Xiao Yu’er smiled wryly:”Where do you want to go, I will lead the way.” The Azure Serpent Lord’s eyes glittered and he was so happy that he could hardly speak:”The….Is the treasure really on Mount Emei?”

Xiao Yu’er replied:”Yes, it is.” The Azure Serpent Lord swallowed his saliva, he said:”So, tonight I could see the treasure with my own eyes?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Not only that, you can even take it away.” The Azure Serpent Lord leapt up and said:”Let us go now.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”What…what about these snakes?”

The Azure Serpent Lord laughed:”I will allow these beauties to keep you company, don’t you feel honoured?”

Xiao Yu’er looked wryly and said:”But how can I walk with these beauties on me?”

The Azure Serpent Lord said:”I know I don’t have the ability to watch you the entire time. So they will do it for me, if you’re obedient they will stay friendly too. But if you move about too much or try to run, they might bite you….one small bite….hahahahaha!”

He started to laugh very loudly, his laughter sounded hideous. Xiao Yu’er had no choice but to obey, he would not even cough if it were not allowed. He has never been more obedient than this in his life.

When they left the door, the White Sheep and Yellow Ox were humming very loudly. It sounded like begging, crying or even cursing, anyone with a heart would feel sorry for them. Unfortunately, the Azure Serpent Lord had no heart and Xiao Yu’er was in dire straits himself, he did not have the ability to save himself now let alone others. A waiter smilingly walked over and said:”Young master, what….”

Before he was finished he saw Xiao Yu’er and screamed loudly and then fainted, he thought he saw a ghost.

Xiao Yu’er smiled wryly:”I must look very handsome now, a snake hanging from each ear. Another two snakes around my neck and another two around my wrists. I should give these beauties to Murong Jiumei.”

He was muttering to himself and the Azure Serpent Lord did not pay any notice to it.

Xiao Yu’er said:”The map was very detailed, it took my two nights to fully calculate its’ position. I did not anticipate that you would end claiming the treasure.”

The Azure Serpent Lord asked:”Is the entrance at the front or at the back?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”At the back…” Before he finished, the Azure Serpent Lord had covered his head with a black cotton sack.

The Azure Serpent Lord said coldly:”From now on, you don’t need to lead the

way. If you're smart you will just follow me and not try to attract someone's attention."

Xiao Yu'er sighed in his heart, but he laughed:"Why should I attract someone's attention? I only have enemies in this world, I don't have friends."

The Azure Serpent Lord shouted:"Silence!" Xiao Yu'er sighed:"Can't I even talk?" He was like a blind and mute man now, he could only follow silently. If the Azure Serpent Lord increased his speed, he had to follow and if he walked slowly Xiao Yu'er had to do the same thing. Xiao Yu'er did not know how long they walked and where they went.

Suddenly, Xiao Yu'er was pulled away into the bushes by the Azure Serpent Lord. Xiao Yu'er thought: [Could he have seen some powerful adversaries?]

The Azure Serpent Lord whispered into his ear:"Don't make a noise or else…"

Xiao Yu'er could no hear voices several ten metres away:"How could Tie Xinlan just disappear like that?"

The voice was very lovely, but Xiao Yu'er was startled when he heard that voice, it was Zhang Qing. Why was she here? Another voice said:"Maybe she noticed us."

That voice was cold and lovely, it belonged to Murong Jiumei. Xiao Yu'er's heart skipped a beat and hoped they would come over, normally he would run away as fast as he could if he saw or heard them. He felt that although they were his enemies but they were also very close to him.

Zhang Qing said:"We followed her here, and she did not even notice us. How could she have detected anything now? She looks all confused and woozy, she must be thinking of that rascal. She would not even detect an entire crowd behind her."

Murong Jiumei said indifferently:"So, why are you afraid that we can't find her?"

Zhang Qing said:”I am just afraid….afraid…”

Murong Jiumei scoffed:”You’re just afraid that you can’t find that rascal, right?”

Zhang Qing said:”You’re right. I am really afraid that I can’t find that rascal and that I can’t rip out his heart and see what colour it is.”

Murong Jiumei said coldly:”No need to look, it is bound to be black.”

The voice slowly died out, they have moved on.

Xiao Yu’er could almost call out, but if he did the snakes would bite him and that will be the end of him.

He could only be patient. From their conversation, Xiao Yu’er understood that they deliberately let Tie Xinlan go, so that they could follow her. It was a simple but good plan, which is very effective. But where is Tie Xinlan now?

Tie Xinlan is not interested in the treasure; she just wants to wait for Xiao Yu’er. She knew that Xiao Yu’er would come to Mount Emei, so she would await him here. But Murong Jiumei knew that Xiao Yu’er was still trapped in the stone icehouse, why would she come here too? Was she interested in the treasure? But that is very unfitting for a cold woman like her. Xiao Yu’er rolled his eyes but he could think of the reason. The Azure Serpent Lord said sternly:”Did you tell others about the location of the treasure?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Do you think I will tell others?”

The Azure Serpent Lord said:”But who else could know about this place except you?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”That Yan Nantian should probably know too.”

The Azure Serpent Lord felt relieved and said:”This is the back of Mount Emei, you can lead now.”

Xiao Yu’er could see again and the sack was gone, it was night now but it was good to see the stars again after being blind for an entire day.

Mount Emei is famous for its’ dangerous cliffs and if you would look down your heart will skip a beat.

This was one of the more desolate and high places of Mount Emei, there were fog everywhere here. Xiao Yu’er wanted to climb as fast as he could and leave the Azure Serpent Lord behind, but with all those snakes on him he would not dare to do so. And with more than ten snakes crawling about, how could he climb fast. After climbing for two hours, both of them were panting heavily. The Azure Serpent Lord panted:”Are we there yet?” Xiao Yu’er said:”Are you complaining now? If it was not for me, you would not find the treasure even if you knew it was in this area.”

Suddenly the Azure Serpent Lord laughed:”You’re a very clever boy, even more clever than me.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”You’re right about that. Before we find the treasure you might as well flatter up to me. After finding the treasure you can kill me and chop me up in small pieces.”

The Azure Serpent Lord said friendly:”Don’t worry after finding the treasure I won’t kill you. I will treat you nicely….”

All of a sudden he roared:”Come out, you little bastard!”

While he was feeling mighty proud, Xiao Yu’er had disappeared. The Azure Serpent Lord broke out in a cold sweat and shouted:”Come out now, if you don’t I will whistle and the snakes will instantly bite you. You can’t run, come out now!”

But in the darkness, there was no sign of Xiao Yu’er. The Azure Serpent Lord

was jumping up and down, saying:”Those snakes of mine only obey me, without me you can never remove them. Think carefully about that.”

Suddenly he heard someone laughing behind him:”I am here, why are you so anxious?”

The Azure Serpent Lord looked for some time and finally saw an entrance to a cave.

Xiao Yu’er crawled inside and laughed:”Crawl inside too, this is the entrance to the treasure.”

The Azure Serpent Lord was fuming but now his anger was gone. He crawled in and felt the cold air in the cave, he shivered and sighed:”It is remarkable that Yan Nantian could find somewhere like this to hide his treasure.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Only places like this can safeguard a treasure.”

The Azure Serpent Lord laughed happily:”Only with the map of Yan Nantian could one find such a secretive place. Otherwise, no one can find it. Yan Nantian, Yan Nantian. You wasted so many energy and time to find this place but in the end your treasure has been found.”

It was a very secret place here and the Azure Serpent Lord was thinking about the treasure he was about to find. He felt very happy and did not feel the cold anymore.

But the cave was very dark, the Azure Serpent Lord took out a paper flint, the flint was small but the fire was very bright.

He laughed happily:”Do you see this flint? To tell you the truth, I have been preparing for this journey for a long time now. I used 300 taels of silver to buy this flint of the hand so the Fire Crow. It can be lit for an entire day and won’t go out.”

However, the fire did go out. Xiao Yu’er laughed very loud:”Some special flint!”

The Azure Serpent Lord angrily said:”That Fire Crow has a lot of nerves to deceive me!”

Xiao Yu’er said:”You can’t blame him, perhaps the fire could not withstand your arrogant breath.”

Suddenly Xiao Yu’er stepped on something and tripped. The Azure Serpent Lord made a small cry of surprise too, the flint was lit again and both cried out of shock and stared at the ground. On the ground were three corpses, the three men in expensive brocades and holding sharp swords that shone brightly in the fire. The bodies were all curled up, it seemed that these three men died a horrible death.

Upon touch they felt cold, they were dead for some time now. But their limbs were still flexible, meaning that they could not have been dead for more than two hours.

The Azure Serpent Lord turned over the bodies and looked at the face, the three men looked alike and the hand of the Azure Serpent Lord began to tremble. Xiao Yu’er asked:”Do you recognize them?”

The Azure Serpent Lord said:”The Three Swords of Jinlin, united they stand!”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Hmm, they are famous martial artists.”

The Azure Serpent Lord said:”Not only famous, but they are first rate martial arts experts. But if the location of the treasure has not leaked out how come that they came here.”

Xiao Yu’er frowned too and said:”That is strange.” The Azure Serpent Lord sternly said:”What is strange?”

Xiao Yu’er shrugged and explained friendly:”These three are dead, why worry?”

The Azure Serpent Lord angrily said:”They are dead, but their killer could be around. This killer was able to kill the Three Swords of Jinlin, he must be a terrible opponent.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Who could that be? And who did he find out about this place?”

The Azure Serpent Lord gritted his teeth and said:”How can you now know? You must have told them. Yan Nantian went through all this effort to bury his treasure and there is only one map. And the only map was….”

All of a sudden the flint went out again.

The Azure Serpent Lord now knew someone was responsible for putting out the fire, he took three steps back and leant against a wall, he shouted:”Who is out there!”

In the dark a voice said:”You’re right, the killer is still here. And I am the killer.”

The voice sounded calm and was slow; there was nothing strange to it. But because the sound sounded too normal, it sounded extra eerie in this cave.

Even someone like the Azure Serpent Lord’s face changed and shivered, he said:”Who…who are you?”

The voice said:”Do you really want to know who I am?”

The Azure Serpent Lord gritted his teeth and picked up the flint, in the light he could see a man in a grey robe walking in the cave. His face was greyish; you could not see his eyes, nose. His face looked like a dried up lemon, and looked hideous. Xiao Yu’er knew that this man wore a mask, but even so he felt frightened. But why did he cover his eyes as well, but he could move about like nothing was wrong. Being blindfolded is not very pleasant; Xiao Yu’er experienced that just a while ago. The Azure Serpent Lord broke out in a cold sweat and said:”You’re the Grey Bat?”

The man in grey smiled faintly:”Have you taken a good look?”

The Azure Serpent Lord said:”The Owl must….”

Suddenly he stopped talking and stood still, he did not move. It was like he was turned into a statue holding a flint, but he was still sweating heavily.

Xiao Yu’er saw someone walking up to him from his behind; there was nothing strange about this man except for his eyes. His eyes were hideously big and very bright.

The man in grey smiled:”If the Grey Bat is here, the Owl cannot be far away. Remember to watch your rear when you’re talking to someone in front of you.” With that a palm ended the life of the Azure Serpent Lord.

The Owl looked at Xiao Yu’er and chuckled:”I would like to ask you, how did you find this place?”

His voice really sounded like an owl, no wonders this man’s nickname was the Owl.

Xiao Yu’er blinked his eyes and said:”It was you who told us.”

The Owl said with surprise:”Me?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”There is only one map to the Yan Nantian’s treasure. If you did not tell me how would we find this place? And you needed our help to dispose of the Grey Bat and claim the treasure for your own. Why do you go back on your words? Have you asked the help of others?”

He put his hands on his waist and stared at the Owl, his lie was very convincing.

The Owl was furious and his face had turned red, he angrily shouted:”How dare you make such false accusations! You have a powerful forked tongue like your teacher at a young age, what will become of you when you grow up!” He

was of the impression that Xiao Yu’er was the student of the Azure Serpent Lord.

Xiao Yu’er said:”Yes, kill me now! So no one will know about your evil plans!”

The Owl roared:”I will rid the world of this little monster right now.”

He raised his hands and his fingers formed claws like an eagle and he aimed at the throat and chest of Xiao Yu’er.

Xiao Yu’er did not move, he was a bit afraid of the snake’s bite than those eagle claws. The claws were almost at him when suddenly stood in front of him. It was the Grey Bat, saying:”How can you kill a mere boy?”

The Owl retracted his attack, his face changed and said:”Why do you stop me? Do you believe the lies of this boy?”

The Grey Bat said casually:”I thought it was strange why so many people could find this place, since we have the only map.”

The Owl shouted:”We have known each other for 20 years, don’t you trust me?”

The Grey Bat said:”Blind people are often deceived by people, we are a bit more paranoid than others.”

The Owl stamped his feet and said:”Very well! I think you want to have the treasure for your own, you’re just finding an excuse to attack me. People told me that blind people are difficult lot, it is a shame that I did listen…”

The Grey Bat put out the fire with his palm. Xiao Yu’er took three steps back and heard the Owl shout:”You really want to kill me!”

There was a series of fist and palm exchange.

Xiao Yu’er thought: [Owl, you will not survive this fight.]

The Grey Bat was blind and was accustomed in the dark, although the Owl could see in the dark he was still in a disadvantage.

And then Xiao Yu'er heard a cracking sound, like bones being shattered. He heard the Owl say:"You will…will regret this one day!"

With that his voice died out.

The Grey Bat said calmly:"Little child, where are you?"

Xiao Yu'er covered his breathing and did not move, he knew that after killing the Azure Serpent Lord and the Owl he would be next.

The Grey Bat breathed normally and said friendly:"Little brother, why won't you talk? You exposed his evil plans I would like to thank you."

While he was talking he was walking towards Xiao Yu'er, blind people can sense better than others. Xiao Yu'er had covered his breathing, but the Grey Bat could feel the body warmth coming from Xiao Yu'er. His steps were closer and closer, Xiao Yu'er was sweating heavily.

The Grey Bat said friendly:"Here you are, why aren't you running?"

Xiao Yu'er saw the hand of the Grey Bat reaching out to him, Xiao Yu'er did not move.

The hand of the Grey Bat were almost at his throat and slowly said:"I won't let you suffer, just a gentle press and you will die very peacefully and without pain. Don't blame me, but the treasure cannot be divided into two."

All of a sudden he yelled and took two steps back, he said with a shaky voice:"Your neck….Your neck…"

His fingers were almost at the throat of Xiao Yu'er and the snake around Xiao

Yu’er’s neck bit his fingers. And the Grey Bat was blind and could not see the snakes.

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Great having snakes on your body, isn’t it? How can a mere blind fellow like you kill me.”

The Grey Bat shouted:”Snake….Snake….”

He shouted loudly and stared to run, but after taking the tenth step he fell down.

Xiao Yu’er was both happy and shocked. He was happy because his adversaries are dead now, he was shocked to see how lethal those snakes were.

He took a deep breath and muttered:”Grey Bat, if you were not that vicious and wanted to grab my throat you would not be dead now. The snakes that wanted to harm me have saved me now, the world is filled with contradictions.”

He sat down now, he was totally exhausted. Only Xiao Yu’er was capable of turning the tables around in such situations.

He found the flint of the Azure Serpent Lord, but he did not dare to move too frantically those snake beauties were deadly. He sighed:”Maggots attached to the bone! How do I get rid of these snakes? I might as well die.”

All of a sudden there was some light and a tall man in expensive brocade with a big beard walked this way. He looked very tough and proud. Xiao Yu’er was shocked and the man was also surprised to see Xiao Yu’er surrounded with corpses. He took three steps back and raised his palm in front of his chest, he said sternly:”Who are you?”

Xiao Yu’er rolled his eyes and asked:”Who are you?”

The man in the expensive brocade said proudly:”Don’t you even recognize me? How can you roam the realm?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”In other words, you must be rather famous.”

The man said loudly:”I am the leader of 17 joint guard agencies. Also named the [Power that moves mountains and rivers, copper fists and iron palms shaking China] Zhao Quanhai. You must have heard of this name before!”

Xiao Yu’er smiled:”An impressive and long name, but do you know who I am?”

That Zhao Quanhai scoffed:”Who are you, why should I know who you are?”

Xiao Yu’er sneered:”I am [the Saint of 10,000 serpents, the sage of 10,000 swords, the king of kings, undefeated throughout the 63 provinces of China, earthshaking “Yu Wangzi”]. Have you heard of this name?”

He said that long nickname in one go and Zhao Quanhai was really quite shocked by that name and said:”I have never heard of that name before.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Even if you haven’t heard of my name, your teacher must have. He must know who I am, most of the older generation in realm al show great respect when they see me.”

Zhao Quanhai angrily said:”You little brat, how dare you spout nonsense like that!”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”Do you think I am very young?”

Zhao Quanhai said:”You’re even too young to be my son.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Do you know when you’ve reached the ultimate level of perfection in martial arts, you will be able to rejuvenate?”

Zhao Quanhai was a bit stunned and looked at Xiao Yu’er; he did not know what to believe.

Xiao Yu’er said:”I have already killed too many today, I really don’t want to

engage anymore people. You look like a good fellow, I will let you go.”

Zhao Quanhai angrily shouted:”I will not be chased away by a few words!”

Xiao Yu’er sneered:”Take a look at the bodies and see if you can recognize them.”

Zhao Quanhai bent down to have a look, suddenly he was extremely startled and said:”The Three Swords of Jinlin? The Grey Bat, the Owl? And…..and…?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Don’t you recognize the Azure Serpent Lord of the 12 Zodiacs?”

Zhao Quanhai shivered and asked:”Were they all killed by you?”

Xiao Yu’er said calmly:”That is nothing. I just want to ask you how are your martial arts compared to them?”

Zhao Quanhai was stunned for a while and said valiantly:”I have gone through a lot of troubles to get here. If old master wants me to leave I will, but I cannot leave in peace.”

He told Xiao Yu’er he did not want to go, but he had changed the manner of addressing Xiao Yu’er.

Xiao Yu’er smiled:”What do you want?”

Zhao Quanhai said:”Old master, I would like to see your martial arts so I can leave in peace.”

He looked crude, but he was quite a careful man. He did not become the leader of the 17 joined guard agencies by pure luck.

Xiao Yu’er remained calm and said:”You would like to see my martial arts, that is very easy. If you can manage to kill all the snakes on me without harming you, I

will let you have the treasure.”

Zhao Quanhai’s eyes glittered and asked:”Really?”

Xiao Yu’er said:”An old master does not lie to young ones.” Zhao Quanhai walked over with big steps and looked at the snakes. Xiao Yu’er was pleased, he hoped this man had good martial arts and could kill all those snakes. However, suddenly they were interrupted by a series of sword and sabre clashing. There were people fighting up ahead, normally there would be pauses between the clashing sounds but here the sounds did not stop. The fighters must be very swift wielders of the sabre and the sword.

Zhao Quanhai turned around and his face changed colour, he said:”Another group of people? Very swift swordplay.”

Xiao Yu’er blinked his eyes and said:”Don’t be afraid, stand behind me. Nobody will be able to harm you.”

Zhao Quanhai looked at him for a moment and saw all those snakes on him and felt eerie. He really believed that he had met a senior Wulin dignitary.

He looked at him for another moment and said:”Thank you.”

The clanging sounds came closer, a while ago they came from the entrance and now they were near where Xiao Yu’er stood.

A cold and unfriendly voice said:”Snow Sabre, do you really wish to fight to the death?”

The other voice said:”I have long heard that your swordsmanship is very swift, the swiftest of outer regions. Now is a good chance to see it for myself. I don’t know how you found out about the treasure, but let us first fight to determine who is stronger and who can survive.”

The voice was sharp and high, it was a woman.

Xiao Yu’er asked:”Is this Snow Sabre a woman?”

Zhao Quanhai sighed:”She was one of the three famous and feared Luo Sha*. Her sabre techniques are miraculous, even famous Peng disciples of the famous school with a long history like the Five Tiger Slashing sabre have been defeated by her.”

Xiao Yu’er asked:”Who is the other?”

Zhao Quanhai said:”Judging by what the Snow Sabre said, that must be the dignitary of the Changbai Sword school, the [Dragon Sword of the Outer regions], Feng Tianyu. His swordsmanship is unmatched in the outer regions.”

Xiao Yu’er sighed deeply:”I am old, I am oblivious to all the famous martial artists of the younger generation.”

Zhao Quanhai frowned and said:”The location of the treasure should be a secret, how come so many people know of it. This is very strange.”

The fighting came closer and they could see that the sparks lit the dark cave; the flashes of sword and sabre were magnificent. One was a skinny and tall wearing black tight clothes, the other wore white and was very slender and her stances of the willow leaved sabre were very fast.

Zhao Quanhai became a bit uneasy now.

Xiao Yu’er said calmly:”They have good martial arts, but there are too many flaws. If I would attack they will be defeated within ten stances.”

The heard a loud clang and then the fighting stopped, and looked at Xiao Yu’er.

The Snow Sabre was a middle-aged woman who still looked very beautiful, her figure was very slender and her eyes were pretty too. She suddenly exclaimed with shock:”Quanhai, you’re here too?”

Zhao Quanhai put up an enforced smile and said:”After all these years, you still look the same.”

The Snow Sabre smiled sweetly:”Thank you, I never imagined I would see you here…..11 years now, almost 12 years. Why have you not looked for me? Do you only want fame and fortune, don’t you want anything else?”

Zhao Quanhai coughed and said:”I….I….”

That Feng Tianyu suddenly sneered:”Good, old lovers meeting up with each other again! But I do not fear Liu Ruyu and Zhao Quanhai even if you team up.”

The Snow Sabre, Liu Ruyu just ignored him seeing that she has found help, she looked at Xiao Yu’er and said:”Have you brought along your pupil? Why does he look so strange?”

Zhao Quanhai said:”This is old master Yu.”

Xiao Yu’er listened with disbelief and repeated:”Old master Yu?”

Zhao Quanhai said loudly:”Old master Yu had just killed the Three Swords of Jinlin, the Grey Bat, the Owl and the Azure Serpent Lord, their bodies are here.”

After he said that, both Feng Tianyu and Liu Ruyu were shocked. Feng Tianyu took a few steps back and raised his sword at Xiao Yu’er. He carefully observed Xiao Yu’er and tightened the grip on his sword.

Xiao Yu’er almost burst out in laughter, but stayed calm and serious. He said:”Miss Liu, do you have a map too?”

Liu Ruyu nodded and said:”Hmm.” Xiao Yu’er looked at Feng Tianyu and said:”And you?”

Feng Tianyu said coldly:”Without a map I could not have reached this place.”

Xiao Yu’er eyes flashed and said:”Up till now, there are six maps. One treasure and six maps, that is very strange.”

Feng Tianyu raised his sword and said sternly:”No matter how many people will come, the last standing will be the owner of the treasure.”

Xiao Yu’er coldly said:”If you want to die that is fine. But it would be a shame to die before actually seeing the treasure, don’t you agree?” Feng Tianyu was taken by this remark and lowered his sword. Zhao Quanhai said:”Old master Yu is right. It is better that we will take a look first. After finding the treasure we can still fight to the death.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”The leader of the joined guard agencies is more sensible.”

He turned around and started to walk, suddenly he turned around and said:”Would you be so kind to see what the Azure Serpent Lord has hidden in his clothes?”

There were three small boxes hidden in his clothes, all of the same shape and size. But there were different labels on each, on the first box there was label: immobilizing drug. On the second label there were the characters: antidote and on the third were the characters: snake grain.

Xiao Yu’er took the boxes and could almost jump in the air with happiness. With the box of snake grain he could lure those snake beauties away. But thought about it for a while and decided to put those boxes away first.

He discovered that with these little snakes he could scare and fool a lot of people and this was a time when he needed to fool and scare others.

The end of chapter 9

Chapter 11

Chapter 10 Unexpected Turn

The cave was deep and there was a cold and eerie atmosphere. Xiao Yu’er lead the way, Zhao Quanhai followed with a torch. Liu Ruyu deliberately let Feng Tianyu follow her, Feng Tianyu put his hand on the hilt of his sword and he had a scornful smile on his face.

After walking for some time, the cave widened and up ahead was light. It was very strange, there were five men standing there. Three of them were standing and the other two sat down and exchanged palms. They were competing internal energy. One was a Buddhist monk wearing a yellow robe; the other was a skinny old man.

Their eyes bugged out and were sweating heavily now. The other three looked a bit worried, when Xiao Yu’er and others came the three men just ignored them.

Xiao Yu’er looked around and saw that Zhao Quanhai, Liu Ruyu and Feng Tianyu turned pale. It would seem that they recognized these five men and were very much afraid of them. These five men must have higher martial arts and status than them.

Zhao Quanhai muttered:”How come these five freaks are here too?”

Xiao Yu’er smiled:”Freaks? Tell me about them? Are they famous?”

Zhao Quanhai sighed:”They are very famous.” Xiao Yu’er said:”Hmm?”

Zhao Quanhai said:”Old master, you must have heard of the Wang family of

Huai Nan and their [Invincible Eagle Claws], this skill has been renowned for almost 70 years."

Xiao Yu'er said:"Hmm, yes I have heard of that."

Zhao Quanhai said:"That old skinny man is the head of the Eagle Claw family. He is called [Regarding people like chickens] Wang Yizhua."

Xiao Yu'er said:"Regarding people as chickens? What kind of name is that?"

Zhao Quanhai smiled wryly:"He created that name for himself. He sees everyone as chickens and eagles catch chicken with ease, meaning he is invincible."

Xiao Yu'er laughed:"An arrogant and funny man…."

He looked at the Buddhist monk, he was tall and muscular. He was at least a head taller than Wang Yizhua.

The two of them still exchanged palms and compared to that monk Wang Yizhua looked like the chicken and the monk like an eagle.

Xiao Yu'er laughed:"Who looks more like a chicken in your opinion?"

Zhao Quanhai wanted to laugh he did not dare to, so he tried his best to keep his laughter inside. But he looked very silly by doing so, he coughed clearing his throat and said:"That Buddhist monk is reverend Huangji (translated yellow chicken) of Jiming (chicken cackle) Monastery on Mount Wutai."

Xiao Yu'er burst with laughter:"The chicken wants to be the eagle, but eagle is called a chicken! These two are destined to be enemies of each other…..!"

Suddenly a voice interrupted:"Silence!"

The voice did not sound to loud but it was very deep. Xiao Yu'er's ears felt

numb and saw that the person shouting was an old man in a blue robe. The old man did not turn around and was observing the palm clash between Wang Yizhua and Huangji.

Xiao Yu’er asked Zhao Quanhai:”Who is that brat?” Zhao Quanhai looked pale then red, he looked at the old man first and then looked at Xiao Yu’er’s snakes. He finally whispered:”This gentleman’s internal energy is unmatched. He is called [One roar to open a mountain], the Xiaoyun hermit. He is an old friend of reverend Huangji.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”Why won’t he help since they are old friends.”

Zhao Quanhai whispered even softer:”Wang Yizhua is not here alone, those two men standing next to him are his friends. One is the leader of the Tiannan Sword School, Sun Tiannan, renowned for his sword and palm techniques. The other is the leader of the Zhejiang Qiu family; this family became famous for their excellent spear skills, seventh master Qiu Qingpo. The Wang and Qiu family have been friends for many years.”

He took a deep breath and continued:”Furthermore, with the reputation of reverend Huangji and Wang Yizhua they will not allow people to help them."

Xiao Yu’er sneered: “What reputation! If that Wang Yizhua came alone that Xiaoyun hermit would have attacked Wang Yizhua a long time ago.”

He made a friendly gesture to Qiu Qingpo and smiled:”How are you doing seventh brother?”

Qiu Qingpo looked quite handsome, fair and solemn; he looked at Xiao Yu’er strange looks and asked with a frown:”Whom are you calling seventh brother?”

Xiao Yu’er smiled:”Don’t you recognize me? I have brought Zhao Quanhai, Feng Tianyu and Miss Liu Ruyu with me to help you. You and brother Sun Tiannan can get rid of that Xiaoyun hermit without fear, I will deal with that Buddhist monk.”

Qiu Qingpo was dumbfounded, the Xiaoyun hermit's face changed. He made a sharp and loud cry making the fires sway. Wang Yizhua and Huangji were both disturbed by that cry and their palm contact was severed.

These five men were famous martial artists; their reactions were very fast. Immediately, all of them presented their weapons. Buddhist monk Huangji leapt up into the air and glided several metres away.

The Xiaoyun hermit roared:"The Wang and Qiu families have a good reputation, do you really want to ruin that good name!"

Xiao Yu'er lifted his head and laughed loudly:"You are all prominent dignitaries, but your actions are no different from ordinary thugs. Everyone has his ulterior motive."

The Xiaoyun hermit looked angrily and said:"What do you want?"

Xiao Yu'er said:"Don't get excited first! We're not here to help either side. I just wanted to save you from dying at each other's hands before finding the treasure."

Wang Yizhua looked at him with his sharp eyes and said deeply:"Who are you?"

Xiao Yu'er laughed:"Don't you know me? Ask him?" He pointed at Zhao Quanhai. All their eyes were staring at Zhao Quanhai.

Zhao Quanhai lowered his head and stuttered:"This old master Yu, he is known as [the Saint of 10,000 snakes, the sage of 10,000 swords, the king of kings undefeated throughout the China, the earthshaking Yu Wangzi.]"

Xiao Yu'er nodded and smiled:"You forgot a few words, but that is about it. If you haven't heard of this name before you are really ignorant."

Wang Yizhua angrily said:"You little brat, how dare you use such a name!"

Zhao Quanhai said:”Old master Yu has superb martial arts, he had just killed the Three Swords of Jinlin, the Grey Bat, the Owl and the Azure Serpent Lord.”

When those five men heard that they were shocked.

The Xiaoyun hermit looked at Zhao Quanhai and sternly asked:”How did you know that they died at his hands? Did you see him killing them?”

Zhao Quanhai said:”I…I…Of course, I saw it. Their bodies are still there.”

Although he did not see it, but he truly believed that Xiao Yu’er killed those martial arts experts. Furthermore, he had put himself in an awkward position and really could not say [No, I did not see it.]

Those five men looked at Xiao Yu’er, but this time they looked at him differently. These five men looked down upon Zhao Quanhai’s martial arts but they did not doubt the words and the name of the 17 joined guard agencies of the two rivers.

Xiao Yu’er looked around and smiled:”There was only one treasure, but somehow there are several maps. Don’t you find that a bit strange? Isn’t it more sensible to find the treasure first?”

If he said the same words just a few moments ago, no one would have listened. Even if they listened they would not pay attention to it. But now his status had gone up and his words carried a lot of weight, Wang Yizhua and Buddhist monk Huangji were beginning to think that something was amiss.

Xiao Yu’er looked up and saw a gap, suddenly the moon moved and moonlight shone through the gap.

Everyone said with surprise:”It is time.”

The Xiaoyun hermit blew out a torch and Wang Yizhua waved his palm to extinguish the other, the moonlight revealed a stone path, the way to the treasure.

Wang Yizhua was first to move forward, the Buddhist monk Huangji used his sleeves to whisk at him. Wang Yizhua's hands formed two claws and were about to engage the sleeves. Qiu Qingpo took out his spear and aimed at the Xiaoyun hermit. Liu Ruyu's used her sabre to hack at Feng Tianyu three times; Feng Tianyu used his sword to counter-attack twice. They were all starting to fight again.

Xiao Yu'er stood quite far away from them and sneered:"Why are you so excited? We don't even know if there is a treasure. We can all fight to the death after finding the treasure."

All of them stopped fighting.

The rock that blocked the path could be pushed away and a tunnel appeared. Wang Yizhua, Buddhist monk Huangji, Qiu Qingpo, the Xiaoyun hermit, Sun Tiannan, Zhao Quanhai, Feng Tianyu, Liu Ruyu entered in this order. They were watching each other and looked very solemn, like they could face their greatest enemy.

Xiao Yu'er was the last one, he was smiling. But he too was excited and curious; he could not guess what could happen at any moment.

All of a sudden, Wang Yizhua and Buddhist monk Huangji cried out in surprise. Both of them were leaders of a leading martial arts school and had profound insight and knowledge, so something must have caught their attention. Soon the others hurried for and cried out in surprise too and were a bit stunned.

At the end of the tunnel they could see about ten coffins and there was no trace of a treasure.

In the dark, those coffins looked very eerie, every coffin had an ancestral plaque above it. The wind was blowing quite hard here, the robe of Buddhist monk Huangji swayed in the wind. Liu Ruyu moved closer to Zhao Quanhai. They counted a total of 13 coffins, there were several ceremonial candles burning in here. Their torches were extinguished before they entered so it was very dark in here. Xiao Yu'er carefully looked around and he saw a plaque that wrote: [The

ancestral resting place of the patriarchs].

Xiao Yu’er was a bit scared now and asked:”Where are we?”

Qiu Qingpo said deeply:”Perhaps this is the ancestral resting place of the previous Emei leaders. If it is, this is a sacred place.”

When Buddhist monk Huangji heard the word [sacred], he frowned and said:”If this is a sacred place, we must leave here at once.”

The Xiaoyun hermit agreed:”Trespassing on someone’s sacred property is a serious offence.”

Wang Yizhua’s eyes glittered and interrupted:”If that is the case, you should all leave.”

Buddhist monk Huangji thought for a moment and then turned around.

Feng Tianyu suddenly said loudly:”Reverend, please wait. Don’t be deceived.”

Buddhist monk Huangji said:”Deceived? What do you mean?”

Feng Tianyu said:”A coffin is good place to hide a treasure, won’t you agree?”

Buddhist monk Huangji stopped walking, the Xiaoyun hermit and Wang Yizhua moved to a coffin.

All of a sudden eight doors were opened around them, eight very strong lights illuminated the room. The light stunned everyone and the light shone in their eyes causing them close their eyes for a moment.

When they opened their eyes they saw swords.

A deep voice spoke from behind the lights:”Who are these audacious thugs!

How dare you trespass on Emei sacred grounds!”

Another voice said sternly:”Trespassers, die! No need to ask for their identities!”

His voice was powerful and threatening.

Buddhist monk Huangji suddenly exclaimed:”Are you reverend Shenxi?

The voice only grunted.

Buddhist monk Huangji said:”Reverend, don’t you recognize me? I am Buddhist monk Huangji of Mount Wutai.”

That voice said solemnly:”Old friendships are irrelevant on sacred ground. Go!”

When he said [go], swords as fast lightening stabbed towards the throats and other vital spots of Wang Yizhua, Huangji and others.

Xiao Yu’er did not dodge when he saw those swords, those swords may be lethal but the bites of those snakes were even more lethal. Xiao Yu’er lifted his head and laughed loudly.

When he laughed, those snakes of his stuck out their tongues and shook their little heads. Everyone was surprised and shocked to see snakes on Xiao Yu’er’s body.

The two swords aimed at Xiao Yu’er retracted; the wielders of the swords were two Taoist priests in purple robes and a moustache.

The Taoist priest on the left raised his sword and said sternly:”Little child, why are you laughing?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed:”I only laugh at the arrogance and ignorance of the Emei School.”

All the Taoist priests around started to shout angrily.

That Taoist priest stepped forward and shouted:”What are you saying?”

The Taoist priest spoke with a heavy Sichuan accent.

Xiao Yu’er blinked his eyes and said:”Let me ask you this, how did you know that we trespassed on sacred grounds?”

That Taoist priest sneered:”How can we allow intruders walk about freely on our sacred grounds, how can we not know that there are intruders!”

Xiao Yu’er sneered back:”If we were discovered by you after we invaded the sacred grounds we have nothing to say. But it seems that you were awaiting us. I find it hard to believe that Emei could predict our coming.”

That Taoist priest said loudly:”That is none of your business.”

Xiao Yu’er said:”It is my business, because you were informed of our coming. And how did that informer know we were coming? Have you thought about that?”

Zhao Quanhai loudly shouted:”Very true! The informer has set us up against each other! He wants us to battle each to the death…..”

Suddenly he shouted painfully, it seemed that he was injured.

That Taoist priest frowned and said deeply:”Set up? There is no set up!”

Xiao Yu’er said loudly:”If you would stop fighting, I will explain what is happening here.”

Another Taoist priest said:”Don’t be deceived by them.”

That Taoist priest said loudly:”Yes, let us capture them first and interrogate them.”

Xiao Yu’er regretted that he did not lure away those snakes first, because he knew that he would be bitten if he tried to avoid the attacks of those two Taoist priests.

In his fluster he threw the small boxes of the Azure Serpent Lord at the Taoist priests, but the Taoist priest twirled his sword and the boxes were sliced into two. The antidote, snake food, *etc.* all fell down on the ground, the Taoist priest now aimed his sword at Xiao Yu’er.

Xiao Yu’er sighed and smiled wryly.

All of a sudden the lights were extinguished and Xiao Yu’er felt someone holding his hand.

A voice said softly:”Follow me.”

Xiao Yu’er felt that the hand was very cold and soft and the voice was sweet and familiar. He felt warm and comfortable hearing that voice and whispered:”Are you Tie Xinlan?”

The voice whispered back:”Yes.”

Xiao Yu’er followed her and sighed softly:”You’re much better than me in the field of secretive weaponry. Even I cannot put out all those torches at once.”

Tie Xinlan said:”I did not put out those lights.”

Xiao Yu’er was a bit shocked and asked:”Who did?”

When the lights were out there was a dead silence, but soon people started to shout and yell again.

Many people shouted:”Who is there?”

“Are there more intruders?”

“Light the torches, quick!”

Before Tie Xinlan quick tell Xiao Yu’er what had happened, the lights were lit again. The Emei disciples were standing with their backs against a wall and Wang Yizhua and others had gathered around.

Another two people had entered the room; they wore white gowns and were very pale. But they had beautiful long black hair and pretty eyes.

Xiao Yu’er had wondered what martial arts experts had put out the light; he was surprised to see two beautiful young girls here.

All the people gathered here were top martial artists even those Taoist priests in purple robes were experts of the Emei School, but these girls looked rather conceited and showed contempt.

Their arrogance silenced everyone.

The Xiaoyun hermit scoffed:”Mere girls can barge into the sacred grounds of Emei, and the Emei disciples can only watch. This is truly laughable.”

While he was talking he glanced at reverend Shenxi and the Emei disciples, everyone looked surprised and angry.

Two girls in white were not impressed by the anger and surprise of the Emei disciples. The girl on the left was a bit shorter; she had a long oval face, eyebrows like sharp willow leaves. There was a hint of naughtiness in the conceited look of her.

The girl on the right was a bit more slender; she had big eyes and some freckles on her nose. She looked cold but yet sweet.

The girl on the right scoffed:”Sister Helu, did you hear that? This is the sacred shrine of the Emei School, we are not allowed here.”

That Helu said coldly:”We can go anywhere we please, who dares to stop us? And who can stop us?”

Reverend Shenxi was angered now and said sternly:”Where did you come from? How dare you to be this insolent!”

After saying that, the Emei disciples attacked. Two swords were aimed at the chests’s of the girls.

The two girls did not pay any attention to it and when the swords were near them, they waved their hands and redirected the swords. Nobody could exactly see how they did that, but the swords were redirected back. The Taoist priest on the left stabbed his sword into the shoulder of the Taoist priest on the right and the Taoist priest on the right side had hacked off the hair bun of the Taoist priest on the left.

They could not lift their hands anymore; they were too terrified and shocked.

Even Wang Yizhua, Buddhist monk Huangji were stunned.

Reverend Shenxi leapt forward, his face was pale and exclaimed:”Is that the [jaded flower stealth substitution]?”

Helu said indifferently:”Good eyesight!”

The other girl said coldly:”Do you know now where we come from? Do you still think we are too arrogant?”

Reverend Shenxi looked awfully pale and said:”Misses, Emei and Floral Palace have no connections. May I enquire why you are here?”

Helu said:”We just here to look at the treasure of Yan Nantian. We don’t want it, we just want to have a look at it.”

Reverend Shenxi repeated with surprise:”The treasure of Yan Nantian?”

The girl on the right said:”Stop pretending! Just hand over the treasure and give us a look. Or else….”

Reverend Shenxi said:”Yan Nantian has no ties with Emei, why should there be a treasure of Yan Nantian on Mount Emei?”

He looked around and suddenly he understood, he smiled sadly:”All of you have come here to look for a treasure.”

Wang Yizhua, Buddhist monk Huangji and others kept quiet. They were afraid to talk; with the disciples of the Floral Palace present it would be wise to keep silent.

Reverend Shenxi shouted:”It is a trap, we are all deceived. If we start to fight now, we will be falling into the traps of that mastermind.”

Xiao Yu’er had backed away from everyone, he was thinking: [When I said that, you did not believe me. Why should they believe you now.]

He looked at the two girls, and was thinking of something.

The girl on the right said:”In other words, you claim that there is no treasure here.”

Reverend Shenxi sighed:”I have never heard of a treasure being hidden here.”

The girl on the right asked Helu:”Sister Helu, shall we believe his words?”

Helu said indifferently:”I never believe other people’s words.”

Reverend Shenxi said:”I can’t help it if you don’t believe me, Miss.”

The girl on the right said:”You can’t help it, but we can. We will search this place.”

Reverend Shenxi said earnestly:”Search!?!”

The girl on the right said:”Yes. We will look through those coffins. Those seem like a good place to hide a treasure, why don’t you open up those treasure so we can have a look.”

Before she finished her sentence all the Emei disciples were furious.

Reverend Shenxi was shaking with anger, he restrained his anger and said solemnly:”The late leaders of Emei are resting in those coffins, no one can open those coffins.”

The girl on the right sneered:”If there are only corpses in those coffins, would a look really be harmful? They won’t lose a bone by opening the coffins, could it be that you’re trying to hide something else. Let’s say a treasure!”

Reverend Shenxi shouted angrily:”Nobody is allowed to open those coffins, anyone who tries will have to kill all the Emei disciples first.”

The girl on the right said:”I don’t have the time to wait till all of you are dead. I will open it myself.”

Reverend Shenxi roared furiously:”The Floral Palace has gone too far! Emei will fight you to the death!”

He drew out his sword with extreme speed and aimed at the larynx of the young girl.

Chapter 12

Chapter 23

(Notes: Due to Change of translator, the naming of chapter changes but the story still continue. just name change.)

(Wubbles takes over from here and the chapter naming convention changes)

In his anger, this stroke contained the strength of years of training, and was truly as fast as lightning, as powerful as thunder; everyone was stunned.

The young girl was, after all, still inexperienced and, faced with such a stroke, did not dare to counter his blade. She repeated the [jaded flower stealth substitution?], and avoided him.

But now the Emei disciples drew their swords and attacked. The girls could not hope to escape.

Tie Xinlan suddenly released Xiao Yu'er's hand, and said, "Stay here and don't move. I …"

Xiao Yu'er stared at her and asked, "What are you going to do?"

Tie Xinlan said, "When I was lost in the wilderness, fortunately they took care of me. When you were in danger, again they intervened. Now that they are being attacked, I cannot stand by and do nothing."

Xiao Yu'er laughed, saying, "Well, if people of the Floral Palace are in danger, do they really need other people to save them?"

He had hardly finished speaking, when behind him a voice declared: “Well spoken!”

The sound of the voice was loud and clear, but died away quickly; as soon as the voice registered in their ears, someone stepped out from Xiao Yu’er’s side. In the firelight, Xiao Yu’er could not see if the person was male, female, or even what they looked like. Even the colour of the speaker’s clothes was not clearly discernible.

In his life, Xiao Yu’er had never seen someone move so rapidly, nor could he have imagined such a lightning attack. A silhouette flashed by him, into the light cast by the swordplay.

It happened in a split second-clashing swords ringing in his ears, then a dozen blades landed on the ground as one. Although none among the onlookers could see clearly how the swords had been wrenched free, the Emei disciples themselves had felt a sudden irresistible force on their weapons. Each person’s sword, still in his grip, clashed against the clenched sword of a fellow disciple. Each person in each pair felt a terrifying strength from the opposing sword. Their wrists went numb, and the blades fell from their shocked hands. The disciples cried out in alarm as they stumbled backwards. They held their injured arms, their thoughts wild and confused, as if in a waking nightmare(?).

Although his hand still gripped his weapon, Reverend Shenxi had also been caught off guard and retreated a pace. He swept his gaze in all directions, but no one was there except for the two girls in white. And though all was visible by the firelight, and no one moved, still, the dozen blades lay, horrifyingly, on the ground.

Reverend Shenxi stopped short and gritted his teeth. He finally raised his eyes heavenward and sighed. “It’s over.” With a flick of his wrist, he slashed his sword across his own neck. Under the amazing power of this mysterious attacker, the reputation of the Emei sect was now ruined. The only thing left to do was to end his own life.

At that moment a hand snaked out from behind him to gently grasp his arm. Another hand reached around to lightly seize his weapon.

Reverend Shenxi always carried this sword with him. It had accompanied him through countless trials and dangers and never left his side. Now to find it so easily taken from him, was something he would never have dreamed of.

Reverend Shenxi was startled at this, and angry. A youth clothed in white, slowly came out from behind him and stepped forward. He held the Reverend's sword in both hands. His demeanor was respectful; he smiled and said, "May the Reverend forgive my discourtesy. Had your esteemed sect not attempted to use force on women, I would never have dared to intervene."

Under the torchlight, you could see that the youth was no more than 13 or 14 years of age. Yet his abilities clearly surpassed even the dreams of the various assembled experts in martial arts. He was only clothed in a plain white robe, but his air of nobility could not be matched by most men clad in brocade.

Until this moment, he had only spoken a few sentences, yet his charisma and charm were apparent. Even the Snow Sabre Liu Ruyu, whose eyes had appraised many men, felt her heart racing. Seventh Master Qiu Qingpo, who had been much admired and sought after in his younger days, felt a twinge of inadequacy, having met this young man.

Without being aware of it, everyone had fallen silent just staring at him.

Although Reverend Shenxi was furious, somehow he seemed to be intimidated by this person's demeanour, and he found himself returning the young man's salute. He asked, "Would you be from the Floral Palace?"

The white-robed youth replied, "My name is Hua Wuque, I am indeed from the Floral Palace. It has been many years since my people have roamed abroad, and thus we are unfamiliar with some of the formal courtesies. We beg forgiveness for any offence we may have given."

His words were humble and polite, and yet somehow the situation resembled that of a master gently extending a courtesy to his servant. Although the master was being sincere, the servant would still feel uneasy. Some people are naturally born to be proud and noble. Although such a man would try to put the pride

behind him and feel that it is wrong to be proud, others would see it and feel that he should be as he should be.

The smile on his face was peaceful and warm, yet the others still felt somehow that he was above them. Although his actions were courteous and friendly, they still found it hard to accept.

Reverend Shenxi, Buddhist monk Huangji, Wang Yizhua, Qiu Qingpo, Sun Tiannan, Feng Tianyu, Zhao Quanhai and the others were all leaders of their respective sects. But for some reason, in front of this youth, none of them could find any proper response to give.

Helu rolled her eyes and couldn't help laughing. She said in a loud voice: "Now that my master is here, I take it we may view the contents of the coffins?"

Reverend Shenxi's expression darkened. Before he could say a word, Hua Wuque said slowly: "The matter of the treasure will (?)… I just hope that no-one is deceived by the evil intentions of others. From now on we will never mention this day's events again."

The Buddhist monk Huangji murmured, "Amitaba, the young master is gracious."

Wang Yizhua said loudly: "Whoever wanted to continue fighting would wind up being the laughingstock of everyone. Only a fool would be that stupid."

Qiu Qingpo, Sun Tiannan and the others said in unison: "Young master, you have spoken wisely. We will take our leave now."

Reverend Shenxi said: "Thank you young master!" What should have resulted in a bloodbath, this Hua Wuque had, with merely a few words, brought to a peaceful resolution.

Throughout all this, Liu Ruyu's eyes had never left his face. As Tie Xinlan watched him, the corners of her mouth lifted unconsciously in a smile of admiration.

With a “hmph”, Xiao Yu’er abruptly turned and ran towards the entrance of the cave. Tie Xinlan was startled, paused briefly, then eventually ran outside and followed him.

Xiao Yu’er heard Zhao Quanhai call out to him from behind: “Hero Yu, Hero Yu…” [[I think earlier Xiao Yu’er had told Zhao Quanhai that his name was Yu Wangzi…the long nick name starting with…Saint of 10 000 serpents etc.]]

Helu also called out: “Hey, young lady, where did you go?”

Reverend Shenxi called to him: “Young man, please stay behind and have some tea with me.”

Xiao Yu’er could not understand what they were shouting, and even if he did, he would not turn back. He ran straight outside of the cave.

Outside, there was a thin fog, yet the bright moon in the sky lit the ground; the evening was beautiful.

Xiao Yu’er had no eyes for any of this; he only stared straight ahead and kept running. After a while, he stopped, found a big stone and sat down.

Tie Xinlan took a deep breath, and said, “Who knew that the treasure hunting would turn out like this, I could never have guessed.” Xiao Yu’er said, “As if you could ever guess anything.”

Tie Xinlan was startled. She lowered her head and said quietly, “For this worthless treasure I have endured so many dangers and nearly lost my life. This is really not worth it.”

Xiao Yu’er said, “You’ll live.” (?)

Tie Xinlan bit her lips, her head even lower, and said, “At the Murong Manor, I know it was only because you were in a lot of danger, that’s why you left me behind. I don’t blame you, but you…”

Xiao Yu’er cut in: “And so what if you did blame me?”

Tie Xinlan suddenly raised her head in surprise: “You…you…why are you saying such things…”

Xiao Yu’er said, “I’ve always talked like this. If you don’t like it, then don’t listen…hmph, someone else’s words are much nicer, why don’t you go and listen to him?”

Tie Xinlan’s eyes were now red. After a brief silence, she mustered up a smile and asked, “When did you arrive at Mount Emei?”

“Hmph!” was the only response.

Tie Xinlan coaxed gently, “How did you get so many snakes on your body?”

Xiao Yu’er ignored her again.

Tie Xinlan stamped her foot, then also sat down. The two of them sat back to back and ignored each other. No one moved and no one spoke.

After a short while, Xiao Yu’er couldn’t stand it any more. He spat loudly and said: “Ha, that little rascal(?) really has an arrogant air(?) about him!”

Tie Xinlan didn’t respond, as if she hadn’t heard him at all.

Xiao Yu’er kept quiet for a bit but then couldn’t restrain himself. He nudged her with his back and said, “Hey, are you deaf? Didn’t you hear what I said?”

Tie Xinlan replied: “How could a deaf person hear someone talking?”

Xiao Yu’er was confused: “But…you answered me; you clearly heard what I just said. If you couldn’t hear someone talking, then how did you hear me…that means you aren’t…deaf…” His words became muddled, he couldn’t stop himself

and laughed out loud.

Tie Xinlan had already been giggling secretly; at this point she let out a big “ha ha” and started laughing even harder.

In the midst of their laughter, the two of them unconsciously wound up sitting side by side. Neither could tell; was it Tie Xinlan who came closer first, or was it Xiao Yu’er who moved over?

After laughing some more, Xiao Yu’er abruptly said again: “That rascal really is too proud(?)!”

Tie Xinlan said softly, “Actually he’s not the proud one, it’s just the reactions of people around him that make him seem so.”

Xiao Yu’er sneered: “Of course he’s proud, look at him-what an actor. Others think he’s so humble and courteous, but he actually-Hmph, what dog crap!”

Tie Xinlan laughed: “One could say that the Floral palace is one of the meccas of wulin. Since he is the only descendant of the Floral Palace, if he is proud, that is only natural.”

Xiao Yu’er merely said: “Hmph.” “Hmph hmph…..hmph. Hmph.”

Tie Xinlan smiled charmingly and lightly touched his hand. She saw the snakes on his wrist and quickly drew back. Winking at Xiao Yu’er, she said, “Did you notice, his eyes, they really look like yours, they’re practically identical. A stranger would have thought you were brothers.”

Xiao Yu’er retorted: “If I was born looking like that sissy(?), I’d rather die.”

Tie Xinlan held back her laughter and stared at his eyes, without a word.

Xiao Yu’er cocked his head to one side, and laughed coldly: “The funny thing is, someone actually likes this pretentious, sissy man.”

Tie Xinlan said, “I…who likes him?”

“You.”

Tie Xinlan broke into stunned laughter: “I, like him? You’re crazy!”

Xiao Yu’er said, “If you didn’t like him, why would you stare at him with those bright eyes of yours? If you didn’t like him, why would you hang on his every word?”

Tie Xinlan’s face was flushed with anger; she gritted her teeth and said, “Fine. So what if I like him? It’s none of your business, we’re neither friends nor family, remember?”

She stamped her foot and turned her back on him again.

Xiao Yu’er sat down on the ground, and mumbled, “Pretentious, overacting like an old man(?), that’s the most annoying type.”

Tie Xinlan said without turning around: “Didn’t you just call him a sissy? Now he’s like an old man?”

Xiao Yu’er said, “I…I meant to say he’s like…an old sissy.”

Tie Xinlan suddenly burst out laughing.

Xiao Yu’er raised his eyes questioningly: “Why are you laughing?”

Tie Xinlan slowly and clearly pronounced each word: “You are jealous.”

Xiao Yu’er jumped up and cried out: “I, am jealous?.....What a joke….give me a break…”

Suddenly he sat back down and sighed, “That’s right. I do seem to be getting a little jealous…”

Tie Xinlan smiled sweetly and was about to snuggle into his arms, but suddenly jumped up and screamed: “Snakes….why don’t you get rid of these poisonous snakes?”

Xiao Yu’er said sadly, “If only I could.”

Tie Xinlan exclaimed in surprise: “Even you can’t get rid of them yourself?”

Xiao Yu’er sighed: “Now that the Azure Serpent Lord is dead, I’m not sure that anyone can get rid of them. They’ll bite whoever touches them.”

Tie Xinlan said anxiously, “Then…then what are we going to do? You can’t carry them around for the rest of your life.”

Xiao Yu’er said nothing for a while, discouraged. Then suddenly he made a face, smiled and said, “It’s not so bad. With the snakes all over me, girls won’t dare to touch me.”

Tie Xinlan stamped her foot and shouted: “I’m being serious, and you’re still joking around.”

She turned her back in a huff, but then turned around instantly, smiling: “I have an idea.”

Xiao Yu’er asked happily, “What idea?”

Tie Xinlan said, “Starve them to death. Once they’re dead, they’ll fall off.”

Xiao Yu’er appeared to think it over, then nodded his head: “Not bad, not bad. That is a pretty good idea.”

Tie Xinlan said, “Thank you, thank you.”

Xiao Yu’er winked at her: “Only you forgot one thing.”

“What?”

Xiao Yu’er said, “Although these snakes are hairless, it doesn’t mean they’re monks.”

Tie Xinlan was confused: “What is that supposed to mean?”

Xiao Yu’er said, holding back his laughter: “If they’re not monks, they eat meat…”

Tie Xinlan was still confused, then suddenly she jumped up and cried out: “They….if they really get hungry, they’ll eat your flesh and drink your blood.”

Xiao Yu’er sighed: “You really are a brainchild. You didn’t get it till now.”

Tie Xinlan was so worried that she wanted to weep. She stamped her foot and said: “So what do we do? What do we do? The only way is…the only way…”

As for what “the only way” was, she couldn’t say. She was so anxious, she was turning in circles. By about the seventh or eighth circle, she heard voices approaching.

Someone said, “How did that girl disappear so suddenly. That is really strange.”

Someone else chimed in coldly: “She can escape today, but can she escape tomorrow?”

As soon as they heard these two voices, Xiao Yu’er and Tie Xinlan’s expressions changed.

Tie Xinlan whispered, “Zhang Qing!” Xiao Yu’er said: “And Murong Jiumei!”

Tie Xinlan said, “Let’s escape.”

It was only at this point that they noticed they were at a dead end. They were surrounded on three sides by mountain slopes(?), and the only way out was the direction from which Zhang Qing and Murong Jiumei had come.

Tie Xinlan’s feet and hands were icy cold. She said, “This…this…”

Xiao Yu’er said, “Let’s just hide for a bit and see.”

They had just settled in their hiding places when the two girls arrived.

Zhang Qing said, “Mount Emei is a really strange place. Aside from the caves where monkeys live, the only shelter we’ve found is this place.”

Murong Jiumei said, “There’s no point in searching the entire mountain randomly. Why don’t we rest here tonight and start again tomorrow.”

Zhang Qing had sat down already, on the exact same stone that Xiao Yu’er had previously occupied. The two of them relaxed and closed their eyes.

Xiao Yu’er and Tie Xinlan suffered in silence; at this rate, who knew how long they would have to wait before being able to escape?

After a while, Zhang Qing opened her eyes and asked, “Are you cold?”

Murong Jiumei said mockingly, “You are quite the spoiled princess. Even if we were in an icy snowstorm I wouldn’t complain of cold.”

Zhang Qing shrugged, and closed her eyes again.

Xiao Yu’er thought inwardly: “Of course you’re not cold. Consider the type of martial arts you’re practicing. Even if you were naked as a dog’s butt and sleeping on ice, you wouldn’t mind. Other people however, haven’t practiced

such witchcraft.”

After another pause, Zhang Qing suddenly stood up and said, “You’re not cold, good for you. But I can’t take it.”

Murong Jiumei replied, “Even if you can’t handle it, you must still endure.”

Zhang Qing smiled and said: “Please Jiu Guniang, come with me to find firewood.”

Murong Jiumei stood up slowly. They glanced in all directions, but finally decided, of all places, to approach the spot where Xiao Yu’er and Tie Xinlan were hiding.

Xiao Yu’er thought to himself: “Why did I have to pick this spot of all places? And why did this spot have to have firewood, of all places! This is really the worst luck.” Who could have guessed that they would choose to hide behind some dried rattan wood (?). And this type of wood just happened to be the best type to start a fire. Coincidence upon coincidence, this was not Xiao Yu’er’s lucky day.

Tie Xinlan’s palms were already drenched in cold sweat. Her body began to tremble.

Zhang Qing and Murong Jiumei came closer. The closer they got, the more Tie Xinlan shook. The firewood began to shake from her trembling.

Zhang Qing suddenly stopped moving and said, “Listen, what’s making that noise?”

Murong Jiumei said coldly, “Don’t worry, there are no ghosts here.” Xiao Yu’er, suddenly inspired, messed up his hair, and secretly laughed to himself, who knows what he was laughing at?

Tie Xinlan, seeing him laughing at a time like this, was both furious and frightened.

Zhang Qing approached a little further, mumbling, “Even if there were no ghosts, even snakes would be enough to scare me out of my wits.”

Murong Jiumei said coldly, “I’m here, there’s nothing to worry about.”

Before her words were finished, a monster suddenly sprung out from the darkness.

Zhang Qing jumped and screamed, cold sweat pouring down.

Murong Jiumei calmly said, “Who’s playing at monsters and ghosts?”

The monster shrieked: “Murong Jiumei… Murong Jiumei, you made me die a horrible death. Murong Jiumei…I want you to pay with your life!”

End of Chapter 23

Chapter 13

Chapter 24

Under the moonlight, Murong Jiumei could clearly see the face of the monster, who else could it be but Xiao Yu'er? And wasn't it the very same Xiao Yu'er whom she had indeed caused to die a horrible death?

In the deep night and the mountain wilderness, the dark wind blew in gusts. In such a place, and so unexpectedly meeting a freak with wild hair and snakes slithering all over his body, whom she recognized as a victim murdered by her own cruel hand.

No matter how brave Murong Jiumei was, this was something she could not handle.

She pointed a trembling finger at Xiao Yu'er, her voice quavered: "You…you…"

Upon speaking the second "you", she had already fainted dead away from fright.

Zhang Qing, although she didn't understand the underlying details behind Murong Jiumei's reaction, she could certainly see the many snakes writhing around Xiao Yu'er. Seeing Murong Jiumei in a frightened swoon on the ground, she herself was scared out of her wits. With a scream of fear, she turned and ran. In a moment she was out of sight.

Xiao Yu'er laughed loudly and said, "My snake brothers, no matter if you harm me in the future or not, I still have to thank you. After all, you have saved my life at least twice now."

Tie Xinlan was the most bewildered of all. She sprang out from the darkness and stared at Xiao Yu'er. She couldn't help asking, "When were you killed by Murong Jiumei? I don't get it, you're confusing me."

Xiao Yu'er said, laughing, "It's better when girls are a bit confused; the more they know, the more troubles occur. All you need to know is that I'm damn good."

Tie Xinlan paused, then sighed: "You are good…you even scared Murong Jiumei into a faint, and frightened Zhang Qing away. Even if we told other people about this, no one would believe us."

Looking down at the unconscious Murong Jiumei, Xiao Yu'er mused: "What do you think, how should I deal with her?"

Tie Xinlan thought for a bit, then said, "Just let her lie here, and we'll leave." She looked at Xiao Yu'er's expression, then continued: "Or perhaps, perhaps you could use the rattan reeds(?) to tie her up. Wait till she comes around, then beat her a few times to get even."

Xiao Yu'er said coldly: "Women are really too soft-hearted."(?) Tie Xinlan asked, "Even this method is not cruel enough?"

"Of course not."

Tie Xinlan's voice shook: "Unless…unless you mean to kill her?"

Xiao Yu'er said, "So you'd rather I let her live to return and kill me instead?" Tie Xinlan stamped her foot: "I never thought you…. You are really cruel-hearted."

"Well, now you know," Xiao Yu'er retorted. "Just go somewhere far off if you don't want to watch me kill her."

Tie Xinlan stamped her foot once more and ran off.

Xiao Yu’er ignored her, his gaze still focused on Murong Jiumei. He murmured, “You evil woman, if I don’t kill you, how could I face myself.” Then he laughed coldly: “I should get my snakes to bite you, then we’ll see who’s more poisonous, you or the snakes.” He grasped Murong Jiumei’s hand as if to feed the snakes on his wrists.

At this moment the moonlight in the skies happened to shine down on her face. He saw her thin and pale face, her long eyelashes. Although she was still in a swoon, her appearance would make anyone feel pity. Her hands were cold and soft. To feed such hands to the snakes, would take a very ruthless person.

Xiao Yu’er’s hands also softened slightly, but then he thought of himself imprisoned in the ice cellar, Murong Jiumei leaving him to freeze and starve to death. His anger flared up again, and he gave a sinister laugh: “Whatever happens, you can’t blame me. If you hadn’t tried to kill me, I wouldn’t be avenging myself.”

Suddenly he heard someone slowly criticizing: “Using this kind of tactics to threaten a girl? You should be ashamed to call yourself a man.”

Xiao Yu’er’s head snapped up in surprise: “Who’s there?”

On the word “who”, he could already see a person standing before him. It was the elegant and refined Hua Wuque. Three people stood behind him. Two were the girls in white, and the third was Tie Xinlan. The three girls stared at Xiao Yu’er with huge eyes, as if wanting to devour him whole.

Xiao Yu’er was furious, but he merely smiled and kept his grip on Murong Jiumei’s hand: “You mean I can’t kill her?”

“A man should be more courteous when dealing with girls,” Hua Wuque responded evenly. “No matter how she may have wronged you, you should still be gentle, because she is a woman.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed out loud: “What a perfect gentleman! A man like you is truly the good fortune of women everywhere, they should make you an embroidered flag.(?)”

Hua Wuque smiled faintly and said, “Well said.”(?)

Xiao Yu’er went on: “But say the women wish to kill you, what should you do then? Should you close your eyes and await your death by their hands? You wouldn’t even return a single blow?”

“If I have wronged a woman,” Hua Wuque slowly said, “even if she wished to kill me, I would have no complaints.”

Xiao Yu’er persisted: “And if the woman wronged you? Would you kill her?” Hua Wuque said, “Men should always be gentle with women.”

“Where did you learn such a strange way of thinking?” Xiao Yu’er laughed bitterly. “According to you, all men everywhere deserve to die, we should all just drown ourselves in the Yellow River.”

“Not necessarily.”

Xiao Yu’er stared at him, torn between anger and amusement. Xiao Yu’er could not tell if Hua Wuque honestly didn’t understand him, or was merely pretending not to. He couldn’t decide if Hua Wuque was intelligent or an idiot.

Hua Wuque looked at him, smiling, without a trace of anger or anxiety. If he had truly been the gentle scholar type he seemed, Xiao Yu’er would have given him a beating a long time ago.

But his martial arts were truly shocking, as Xiao Yu’er knew. He could only sigh, and say: “What you want is for me to release her?”

Hua Wuque smiled and said, “Even to release her would be a deed worthy of a hero.”

Xiao Yu’er retorted, “If I release her today, and in future she returns to kill me, what then?”

Hua Wuque paused, then said, “Who can predict what will happen in the future?”

“Fine. If I want to kill her, I’m not a hero, nor a man, and I deserve to die. But if she wants to kill me, this is her natural right, and I should obviously let her murder me, is that it?”

Hua Wuque laughed, “That’s not what I meant to say. It’s just that…”

Xiao Yu’er shouted at him: “I don’t care what you meant. Today I am not your match. Even if you farted I’d have to pay attention. But, if ever I gain the upper hand, I swear I will slaughter some women in cold blood for your viewing pleasure.”

He heavily slapped away Murong Jiumei’s hand, saying, “Take her away.”

Hua Wuque was not angry at all; in fact he smiled slightly and said: “Thank you.”

The girls in white darted over like swallows and lifted Murong Jiumei into their arms.

The round-faced girl stared at Xiao Yu’er and gave a cold laugh: “If my master weren’t here, I would have killed you, to teach you a lesson about respecting women.”

Xiao Yu’er sneered, “Go ahead. Scold me as you wish. You’re a woman, you have a natural right to scold men, isn’t that right, young master Hua?”

Hua Wuque smiled: “A man who is scolded by a woman is actually lucky. Certain types of men, are not even worth a scolding.”

Xiao Yu’er barked out a mirthless laugh. “Ha ha…ha, so then, I must be really lucky. To make you feel better, some day I’ll have to find some women to give you loads of luck.”

“At that time, I’ll certainly be all ears,” Hua Wuque said, laughing.

Xiao Yu’er rolled his eyes; he felt as if he would explode with frustration.

He saw Helu tugging at Tie Xinlan’s hand, urging her: “Young lady, come with us.”

Tie Xinlan murmured, head bowed, “But I….I…”

Although her head was lowered, her gaze had never left Xiao Yu’er.

The round-faced girl said harshly, “Why should you care about this kind of man? Come with us.”

Helu smiled and added, “My master wishes to speak with you.”

Xiao Yu’er hollered: “Go, go! Leave with them then. I’m having a bad day already-with you around, my luck will get worse.”

Tie Xinlan’s head lowered still further, tears already brimming at the corners of her eyes.

The round-faced girl pulled at her hand, saying, “Ignore him, let’s go.”

Hua Wuque smiled and bowed, then turned to leave. Murong Jiumei, in Helu’s arms, suddenly moved and mumbled woozily, “Xiao Yu’er….Jiang Yu, let me go… let me go.”

Hua Wuque’s expression changed slightly. He swiftly turned to stare at Xiao Yu’er, and said, each word distinct: “You are Jiang Yu, and you are also Xiao Yu’er?”

Quite unconsciously, Xiao Yu’er began to grow alarmed, but he only said: “Why, is my name famous or something?”

Hua Wuque still stared at him for a brief moment, then lightly sighed and said, “I am very sorry.”

Xiao Yu’er opened his eyes in surprise: “Sorry? For what?”

Hua Wuque slowly said: “Because I’m going to kill you!”

These words shocked everyone.

“Is your head messed or something?” Xiao Yu’er cried out. “Why do you want to kill me all of a sudden?”

Hua Wuque answered, “Because you are Jiang Yu. In the entire world there is only one person I must kill. That person is Jiang Yu, and that means you.”

Xiao Yu’er sat in stunned silence. Then he sighed, “I see. But there must be someone who sent you to kill me.” Hua Wuque replied: “It was an order from my master.”

Tie Xinlan screamed, “Why would your master want you to kill him? Why?”

She tried to rush to Xiao Yu’er’s side, but the round-faced girl held her tightly.

Xiao Yu’er and Hua Wuque faced each other. Neither cast even a glance at Tie Xinlan.

A pause. Xiao Yu’er suddenly laughed aloud: “Very well. I had wanted to kill you already, but I only held back because my martial arts were inferior. But now…”

He raised his arms and rushed toward Hua Wuque. He was certainly not Hua Wuque’s match but as long as he could get near him, then his snakes would deal with him. No one could escape his snakes. They would not only take Hua Wuque’s life, but also his own.

But suddenly his arms shook. His chi(?) suddenly went awry, and both his wrists went numb. Before he had even reached Hua Wuque, the world turned to black.

Xiao Yu'er awoke. In front of him was an incense burner(?). The scented smoke permeated throughout and wafted towards Xiao Yu'er's nose. He could not identify the scent. He sniffed…perhaps it was the fragrance of flowers, but no, now it smelled like herbs, maybe. He sniffed carefully a third time and thought maybe it was the scent of a lady's cosmetics.

He didn't care what it was, as long as it smelled wonderful, that was good enough for him.

Then he saw a knife.

It was a short dagger, with a jewel-encrusted handle. It was hung above the head of the bed. Its sheath appeared to be made of sharkskin; this was probably an ornamental blade.

These were the only decorations. The rest of the room was very plain, but neat and tidy(?), and meant to make its occupants comfortable.

Xiao Yu'er could not figure out where he was. He thought perhaps this was a bamboo hut built for Hua Wuque's temporary use while on Mount Emei.

But how did he get here?

Had he not just been bitten by those lethal snakes? Why had he not succumbed to the poison? Unless it was Hua Wuque who had saved him. But why would he, didn't he want to kill Xiao Yu'er?

He turned his head. His eyes instantly met Hua Wuque's.

Sunlight streamed through the window. Under the light, Xiao Yu'er saw his eyes, his face, his elegant and refined demeanour, his clothes white as snow. He had to admit, Hua Wuque was a rare example of an extremely handsome young

man.

Hua Wuque seemed to have been sitting there for quite some time. But he did not appear at all impatient or annoyed. Indeed, he seemed prepared to go on sitting there quietly, for a long while yet.

Xiao Yu'er could not help but admire this. He himself would not have been able to sit still for even fifteen minutes. Xiao Yu'er secretly tried a few movements and found that he was not in any pain. Furthermore, the lethal snakes on his body were entirely gone.

He inwardly relaxed. "Hey," he called out, "was it you who saved me?"

Hua Wuque calmly replied, "It was me."

Xiao Yu'er continued: "And it was you who cured me of the snake poison?"

Hua Wuque explained, "The Fairy Incense (?) and the Lady Pill (?) that you took, they are strong antidotes to many poisons."

"But weren't you trying to kill me just now?" Xiao Yu'er asked.

Slowly, Hua Wuque said: "I am still going to kill you. But I must do it myself; I can't allow you to die from other causes."

Xiao Yu'er blinked. "Why must you personally kill me?"

"Those were my orders."

Xiao Yu'er was silent for a bit. Then: "I must die by your hand, and I must not be killed by anyone or anything else? So…Don't you think that's odd? You've never asked why?"

Hua Wuque said, "I don't need to ask." Xiao Yu'er deadpanned: "Looks like you're quite obedient."

“No one may disobey the decrees of the Floral Palace.”

“Seems like you’re quite honest too,” Xiao Yu’er mused. “Whatever questions I ask, you answer.”

Hua Wuque said, “No matter who asks me anything, I will always answer truthfully. I still must kill you. But killing you and answering your questions are two utterly unrelated matters.”

“You must kill me yourself?” Xiao Yu’er repeated. “What if I kill you?”

“You won’t be able to kill me,” said Hua Wuque. “You dare to fight to the death?” challenged Xiao Yu’er.

Hua Wuque declared, “I will take your life fairly and honestly!”

“Fine then, “Xiao Yu’er said. “Just move back a bit first, let me get up.”

Hua Wuque stood up and retreated eight or nine steps accordingly.

Xiao Yu’er slowly got up, and mumbled to himself: “You’re too honest a man, but I’m not sure if you’re really honest, or just so confident that you don’t care what I do.”

While he was speaking, he abruptly drew out the ornamental dagger from its sheath, and dropped to the ground.

Hua Wuque calmly watched him. His peaceful and noble air was enough to shame many who called themselves martial arts experts.

Xiao Yu’er suddenly burst into loud laughter: “It’s a simple thing if you merely want me dead. But to kill me yourself, that will never happen.”

Swiftly he flipped the blade around to point at his own heart.

Hua Wuque's expression changed slightly. He asked: "What…what are you doing?"

Laughing, Xiao Yu'er made a face at him: "You make one move towards me, and I'll stab myself. Then you'll never get to kill me."

Hua Wuque stood there stunned. He didn't move. He never could have imagined that Xiao Yu'er would use such a strategy.

In martial arts, of course Hua Wuque was superior by far. But as for improvisation and adapting to danger, how could he even compare to the unpredictable and wily Xiao Yu'er?

This disparity, of course, was due to the two men being raised in entirely different environments. The lofty Fairies of the Floral Palace (?) could not hope to match the denizens of the Valley of Evil in craftiness. As for this trick of Xiao Yu'er's, Hua Wuque would never have been able to execute it, even in his dreams.

Xiao Yu'er laughed like crazy: "If you still want to kill me, show a little patience. Don't move…Not even one little move."

His eyes were fixed on Hua Wuque, and he retreated step by step. Hua Wuque had no idea how to deal with such a situation, and could only stand still, helplessly watching Xiao Yu'er back out the door.

Xiao Yu'er did not dare to make a single mistake; although he had exited the door, still his eyes stared at Hua Wuque without blinking. He did not dare to relax even a bit.

Outside the door, the morning mist surrounded nameless flowers on the mountain. Although the sun had already risen, its light still had not yet dispersed the early morning fog on Mount Emei.

Step by backward step. He backed across a small path strewn with mountain

flowers.(?) Unless he made sure Hua Wuque would not pursue him, Xiao Yu'er could not turn his head around. His steps were slow and his footfalls firm…

Hua Wuque was suddenly reminded of something, and called out: "Jiang Yu, don't move!" As he shouted, he began to run out the door.

Xiao Yu'er threatened: "Stop right there! If you step one foot outside the door, I'll immediately…"

Hua Wuque stopped dead at the threshold, beads of anxious, cold sweat on his forehead. He shouted loudly: "I said don't move, you can't go any further. Behind you…"

His warning was in vain; Xiao Yu'er's left foot stepped backward onto thin air. By the time his shout of surprise could be heard, he had already fallen off the path. Behind him was a precipice; the fog and clouds made it hard to judge its depth. Hua Wuque saw Xiao Yu'er disappear over the edge, and could not reach him in time to pull him back.

Xiao Yu'er's shout was sharp and brief; yet its echoes from the surrounding mountains continued to ring. Hua Wuque's body seemed drained of strength-he clung to the door, slumped against it. He stared into the fog, sweat rolling down drop by drop.

By now Tie Xinlan had dashed outside, followed by four or five white-robed girls. She ran up to Hua Wuque and demanded, "Who was screaming just now? Was it him…tell me, was it him?!"

Hua Wuque nodded.

"Where…where is he?"

Hua Wuque sighed and shook his head.

Tie Xinlan saw his expression and stumbled backwards, her voice shaking: "You-you killed him…you killed him!"

She suddenly flung herself onto Hua Wuque and started hitting him with her fists. Her blows fell like rain upon him.

Hua Wuque still had not moved. He neither dodged nor defended himself. Tie Xinlan kept hitting him with all her strength, yet it was as if he didn't even feel it.

The white-robed girls all cried out in surprise and anger, and simultaneously advanced on Tie Xinlan. Hua Wuque, unexpectedly, shielded her from their attacks, and said gently, "I did not kill him. He actually tripped himself and fell off the cliff edge."

Tie Xinlan's body shook. She drew back, and asked, "You…you really didn't kill him?"

Hua Wuque said, "I have never lied in my life."

"Then why did you not defend yourself?" she cried out.

Hua Wuque gazed at her with gentle eyes, and sighed: "I knew that right now you must be suffering greatly in your heart. Even if you hurt me, I wouldn't blame you."

Tie Xinlan was stunned by his words. Emotions clashed in her heart so that she no longer knew what she felt: tenderness, sorrow, bitterness, and anger. Hua Wuque was truly a kind and gentle man. But Xiao Yu'er…that rough and sly Xiao Yu'er, why was he the one who had left a deeper impression on her heart? He, above the other, was the one she always missed, the one she could neither forget nor leave behind. (1)

Hua Wuque looked at her kindly, and said: "Tie Guniang, you should rest now."

Tie Xinlan agreed: "You're right…I should go to rest…I should go…"

She suddenly made a mad dash towards the cliff edge, crying out hoarsely: "Xiao Yu'er, wait for me! I'm coming, to rest together with you…"

But before she reached the edge, Hua Wuque grabbed her hand and stopped her short. Tie Xinlan struggled furiously with all her might, but could not break free.

Tears flowed freely down her face. She screamed: “Let go of me…let go, why won’t you let me join him? He’s dead, down there by himself, he must be so lonely…”

They heard someone calmly say: “Who’s dead down there? He must be so lucky, to be left alone to rest forever in peace and quiet.”

In the milky white fog, they saw a feminine(?) silhouette slowly step out and approach them. It was Murong Jiumei.

Her face was even paler than the fog. Her once beautiful and lively(?) eyes had lost their brightness. In fact, they now seemed a little crazed.

Tie Xinlan gritted her teeth and shouted: “Xiao Yu’er is dead now, are you satisfied? He fell off the cliff, why don’t you go down and see how he’s doing?”

Murong Jiumei lightly shook her head back and forth. She said slowly, “He would not have died here. The dead person here could not be him!”

Suddenly she laughed out loud a few times. She said, still laughing, “He already died at the Murong Manor, by my hand…One person cannot die twice. What… are you talking about…?”

Her long hair, unbound, danced and flew about in the wind, just as wild as her crazed giggles.

Hua Wuque looked at her, sympathy in his eyes. He said softly, “Helu, this young lady must not have yet recovered from fright. Please help her back to the house to rest.”

Helu grasped Murong Jiumei’s hand, but Murong Jiumei continued to laugh: “I

killed him myself, I saw his ghost with my own eyes! Ha, ha! Have you ever seen a ghost? How could you have killed him(?)?”

A fierce laughter suddenly joined her giggles. Tie Xinlan declared: “None of you could ever kill him. The only person who could do that…is himself.”

Her laughter dissolved into tears, as her voice cracked and she sobbed, “He has finally died by his own hand…he has destroyed himself. Why do clever people always destroy themselves?”

Tie Xinlan spoke truly. Clever people will sometimes place too much faith in their own intelligence. Intending to harm others, they wind up hurting themselves.

Xiao Yu’er, of course, had much more sense than that. That critical moment, when he stepped backward into thin air, had been staged for the benefit of Hua Wuque.

He had actually already assessed his surroundings and the situation to the smallest detail, even down to the strength he would need to break his fall(?). As his body plummeted, he stabbed his dagger into the cliff face with his right hand. The left immediately grasped onto some reeds(?) growing on the side of the mountain, plastering his body to the cliff wall.

This stunt alone would naturally demand a fast pair of eyes, an attentive, sharp mind and a brave heart. But in order to actually fool an onlooker, especially one of Hua Wuque’s caliber, the risk would be far greater, would it not?

Throughout the anguished cries of Tie Xinlan, the wild screams and laughter of Murong Jiumei, and Hua Wuque’s soft and gentle words, Xiao Yu’er had remained pressed against the cliff face. As he heard their speech, thoughts and emotions mixed in his mind to produce an indescribable feeling. But he managed to restrain himself and did not react, as if not a single syllable had reached his ears.

Finally, as the voices of the onlookers faded away and receded, Xiao Yu’er was able to relax. After a while, he quietly climbed upwards, his eyes turning from the

cliff face to look outward. Just as he thought. No one there. He was just about to start upwards again, when, from beside him, someone spoke!

End of Chapter 24

Chapter 14

Ch. 25

In surprise, Xiao Yu’er whipped his head around. He found himself staring at some monkeys. Dozens of monkeys, who knows where they came from. They began aping his expression and movements, bodies pressed to the cliff wall, heads turning to look outwards. Xiao Yu’er had heard of these Mount Emei monkeys, that they were numerous, and they loved to mimic people.

But now, upon his first real-life encounter with them, he couldn’t help feeling both angry and amused. He wasn’t sure quite how to get rid of them; he pursed his lips: “Hey…get out of here…”

The monkeys made faces at him, and copied his lip movements, screaming and yammering. Some of them had really red cheeks, making their expressions quite scary. Xiao Yu’er worried that these monkeys would draw the attention of Hua Wuque, and he began to get nervous. Without thinking, he put out a hand to hit and shoo them away. At once he realized his mistake.

The monkeys suddenly surrounded him like a nest of angry bees. Together they thrust out their paws.

Normally Xiao Yu’er wouldn’t even be concerned. But right now his body hung from the cliff wall and his arms were not free to exert any sort of strength. As the monkeys swarmed him, he could only tumble straight down.

He was fearful, and anxious, and he did not even dare to call out. His arms scratched and grasped wildly at the cliff face. His knife fell from his grasp and also plunged downward. Only after a long interval did he hear a “pok” sound.

The cliff wall happened to slope inward(?) and thus the blade was able to fall straight to the bottom. The echo took a long time to reach his ears; the precipice must be terrifyingly deep.

Xiao Yu'er's entire body was slippery with sweat. His hands could no longer grip properly. At the point where the cliff face began to slope inward(?), he would also plummet straight to the bottom, where inevitably his body would shatter to pieces.

The most intelligent man in the world, succumbing to a troop of monkeys…at this thought, Xiao Yu'er didn't know whether to laugh or cry.

The monkeys were also falling downward, but unexpectedly, as they chattered away, each one grabbed the hand of another. Dozens of monkeys, hand in hand, used their feet to climb the slope. They hung in a chain down the side of the cliff, like a string of gourds(?). Not a single one fell off.

Xiao Yu'er, unfortunately, did fall, and his hands couldn't grasp anything!

He could only close his eyes tightly, and laugh bitterly: "It's over, Xiao Yu'er dies at the hands of apes…"

At this moment, unexpectedly, a hairy monkey's paw flew out from nowhere and grabbed his shirt at his chest. This monkey's grip was frighteningly strong, but the pull of gravity was stronger. Although the paw still clenched the shirt, it ripped, and Xiao Yu'er continued to fall. Without warning, another monkey paw snatched out like lightning, and seized his hair.

Although the pain made tears stream from his eyes, Xiao Yu'er's body had finally stopped. He saw the chain of monkeys still there, watching him, making faces and shrieking. And then he saw that the pair of paws grasping him had reached out from a small cave within the cliff face.

Xiao Yu'er thought to himself, "Probably the one who saved me is the monkey king, otherwise how could it be so strong? Monkeys most likely bear no good will toward humans; surely this one wants to torture me once it has pulled me up into the cave."

Xiao Yu’er was indeed a rapidly decisive man. Upon this thought, at once he secretly gathered his chi(?) and prepared to immediately ascend and secure himself to the cave entrance. Then he could deal with the monkey.

Before he could even make a move, a person’s voice issued from the cave. Its thin and shrill tones warned him: “Don’t move – a single movement and I’ll let you fall!” This voice sounded seven tenths ape-like, but clearly it spoke human language. Was it possible that on Mount Emei, monkeys could converse with words?

As Xiao Yu’er listened, his body grew clammy with perspiration. In a trembling voice he asked, “Who…what are you?”

The voice cackled, “Whatever you are, so am I.”

“You…you are human then?” Xiao Yu’er demanded.

The voice teased: “Take a guess.”

Xiao Yu’er sucked in a breath before asking: “What do you want?”

“Lower your hands and don’t move.”

Xiao Yu’er could only let his hands fall accordingly. His body was tugged straight up through the air, like riding clouds or floating through fog. All of a sudden the monkey’s paw tapped once on each of his shoulders, squarely on his acupoints. Xiao Yu’er could no longer lift his arms.

Consequently, as he was pulled into the cave, Xiao Yu’er did indeed resemble a fish.

The mouth of the cave was not big, yet its interior could not be considered small. Xiao Yu’er’s entire body was sore and hurting from the dragging. His head felt dizzy and close to fainting. He opened his eyes to find a monkey looking at him, its mouth split wide in laughter.

The monkey was quite large, not much shorter than Xiao Yu'er himself. Upon further inspection, the monkey was actually dressed in material which, although ragged and tattered, was indeed human clothing. Certainly, the monkey's body was covered in long hair. Undeniably, its bottom was also sprouting long hair. But those eyes, that nose, definitely resembled a man's. The strangest thing was, the monkey not only had long body hair, he also had a lengthy beard.

The monkey screeched with laughter: "Do you see now? Which do I resemble?"

Xiao Yu'er swallowed hard, then said: "You seem three tenths human."

The monkey finished for him, "But still I look seven tenths an ape, right?"

"If it weren't for hearing you speak words with my own ears, you wouldn't seem human at all," Xiao Yu'er admitted. In such a weird situation, it never occurred to him not to be honest-thoughts of life and death were entirely forgotten. Consequently he did not worry about what this creature might do to him.

Oddly enough, the monkey was not angry at all and instead laughed loudly: "Let me tell you, I am an ape among people, but yet, among the apes, I am the most human. If you called me a man you would be correct, but to label me a monkey would not be wrong either."

Xiao Yu'er cried out, stunned: "An ape among humans, but a human among apes. Could it be…you are…"

Abruptly someone's voice said coldly, "Don't listen to him, of course he is a man. It's just that he was born looking like a monkey, and after having spent so much time living among them, he seems even less like a human."

The cave was huge. Sunlight streamed through the small entrance, leaving the back of the cave largely dark and poorly visible. The voice came from this area, and it sounded entirely human(?). Xiao Yu'er jumped again: "And what are you?"

A person stepped out slowly from the shadows. Thin and withered, his entire head covered in hair and fur, at first glance he also appeared barely human. But his eyes were very clear(?), and seemed to be full of intelligence. Other than man, there was no other animal with eyes like these.

Xiao Yu'er released his breath. "That's right. You are a man…but who are you exactly? And exactly how did you wind up here? And how did you become like this?"

This man let out a long sigh: "You'd better ask him."

Before he had finished speaking, the monkey jumped up and started yelling: "Ask me? If it wasn't for you, why would I be trapped in this place like a living ghost? And how would I have become like this, not even recognizable as a human?"

The man sneered, "Did you ever look human from the day you were born? Of the Twelve Zodiacs, who even resembled a human?"

Xiao Yu'er's eyes had been darting back and forth between the two speakers. Although he had felt frightened, this was also mixed with amusement and curiosity. Upon hearing these last words, however, he stared in shock and fear at the monkey: "You…you really are one of the Twelve Zodiacs?"

The monkey straightened his back and proudly declared: "That is correct. I am the Lord of Monkeys(?)….of the Twelve Zodiacs!"

Xiao Yu'er unconsciously recoiled , his back against the wall. Turning to the man, he said, "And…you are?"

The man smiled bitterly: "At your young age, of course you've never heard of my name…" He, too, drew himself up straight. From his eyes shone a sudden light, and he thundered, "But fourteen years ago, if you mentioned the name "Countless blossoms in the sky, soundlessly descending(?)", who wouldn't know you meant Shen Qinghong?"

The Lord of Monkeys barked out a sarcastic laugh: “Dog crap, you were never more than a mere protection agency guard. Upon hearing the name of the Twelve Zodiacs, you would have been cowering in fear.”

Shen Qinghong laughed mockingly: “Is that so? If the Twelve Zodiacs were really that powerful, why weren’t you able to take a single penny from me? And how did I trap you in here fully fourteen years?”

As the two ridiculed and jeered at each other, Xiao Yu’er listened in astonishment; only thus did he know that these companions of fourteen years were hardly friends and in fact were bitter enemies. He could not imagine how they had passed all this time, and still survived.

The monkey and the man glared at each other. Both tensed up like arrows on the drawn bow, ready to go off at the slightest touch. But before either made a move, the Lord of Monkeys burst into ferocious laughter: “But you forget, now this little pipsqueak is here, I’m not afraid of being alone anymore. I could care less if I killed you right now.”

Shen Qinghong snapped coldly: “It’s only because you loathe me, you resent me so much that you couldn’t bear to let me die first. That’s why you’ve lasted so long. If I really died, heh, you’d be following me soon after.”

Before he could stop himself, Xiao Yu’er blurted out: “You mean that it was only the mutual hatred that has sustained you for so long? That you even had to compete at living the longest?”

The Lord of Monkeys growled through gritted teeth: “How could the Twelve Zodiacs allow this lowly guard to die first?”

Xiao Yu’er repeated, “And these long fourteen years, you have spent bickering and fighting with each other all the while?”

“Without that, how could we have endured the passage of time?” Shen Qinghong retorted.

“Otherwise, I would have slaughtered him a long, long time ago!” the Lord of Monkeys agreed.

Xiao Yu’er asked, incredulous: “But why didn’t you both try to think of a way to escape out of here?”

The Lord of Monkeys explained, “If I could think of a plan, wouldn’t I have left a long time ago, instead of waiting here for this pipsqueak to suggest it?”

“But if you can’t leave,” Xiao Yu’er persisted, “then how did you get here in the first place?”

The Lord of Monkeys said fiercely: “Only because those goods(?) were hidden here, I forced him to bring me here! At the time I almost didn’t believe it, so I made him enter first. I then followed…obviously we came down by rope.”

Most likely it was due to his long abstinence from normal conversation, or perhaps it was hatred that had made him overly emotional. In any case, his words made no sense.

He blinked his eyes, thinking to himself, then slowly continued: “He originally was a guard assigned to escort a pile of goods. I knew this and tried to steal it. But who could have guessed, he pulled the “cicada shedding its husk” strategy, first hiding the goods here.(1) If I had tried to make my move, I would have stolen a whole lot of nothing!”

The Lord of Monkeys ground his teeth again and muttered: “His mother must be a real b*tch for sure.”

Xiao Yu’er said, barely containing his laughter, “I think it was only because your martial arts were too strong for him, so he had no choice, yet he was smarter than you and eventually trapped you in here.”

“Yes, although there were certain other twists and turns, in general you have the story right, “admitted Shen Qinghong.

Xiao Yu’er, continuing to think through the tale, said to the Lord of Monkeys, “The two of you descended on a rope together. Of course he would have been in front, and you behind, since you would be afraid of him cutting the rope.”

The Lord of Monkeys concurred: “That treacherous protection agency mongrel, I wouldn’t put it past him to do anything. Of course I had my guard up.”

“But what happened to that piece of rope?” Xiao Yu’er demanded curiously.

The Lord of Monkeys ground his teeth –scrunch, scrunch-and snarled: “I was so happy to see the pile of goods that I forgot to keep my eye on him. How would I know that the scoundrel would set fire to that rope?”

Xiao Yu’er sighed, “Of course you wouldn’t know. This plan was too clever for you to figure out; he must have already planned for you to die trapped in here. And he must have prepared himself beforehand to die with you, otherwise why would he bring you to the treasure’s true hiding place?”

Shen Qinghong sighed as well: “Amazing, that at such a tender age, you could know me inside and out. At the time, I kept thinking and thinking, and could only settle on this method to ensnare him. Otherwise I’d rather die than lead him here.”

Xiao Yu’er was still puzzled on one point: “But during all this time, what food did the two of you live on?”

The Lord of Monkeys boasted loudly: “Of course, that all depended on me…”

Unexpectedly bursting into laughter, Xiao Yu’er said, “Yes, yes of course it would. You are the Lord of Monkeys, of course you would have ways to make the monkeys bring food to you.” (2)

His words were sarcastic, perhaps even scornful, but the Lord of Monkeys, was paradoxically pleased and laughed, “The temperament of monkeys, no one understands better than I. I just need to throw a stone from the cave; when it

hits them, they will try to hit me back, and wind up pelting fruit into the cave…”

“And what if they cast stones instead, and not fruit?” Xiao Yu’er interrupted.

The Lord of Monkeys cackled twice before replying: “Outside, the steep precipice is so deep, where could they conveniently find stones?”

Xiao Yu’er smiled and nodded in agreement: “That makes sense, it would be a lot easier for the monkeys to pick fruit rather than searching for stones. But… but, are such small amounts of fruit enough to sustain you?”

“Whatever the monkeys eat, is good enough for us,” the Lord of Monkeys declared. “Although the monkeys don’t eat a lot, then again, we don’t need to eat that much either.”

Xiao Yu’er glanced at their thin and withered bodies. Suppressing his laughter, he said: “Indeed, I can certainly see that.”

The Lord of Monkeys bared his teeth in a grin: “Don’t get smug yet, little pipsqueak-from now on you’ll be eating like this too. But don’t worry! You’re the first new person I’ve seen in years, I won’t let you starve.”

Shen Qinghong said, “I’m so sick of looking at that monkey’s face, even if he wanted to starve you to death, I wouldn’t permit it.”

Xiao Yu’er paid no attention to him; instead he stared out of the cave, lost in thought.

The Lord of Monkeys laughed: “From now on we’ll be family. Who knows, we could be living together thirty, fifty years. Hey, what’s your name? You should tell us that first.”

“Jiang Yu,” Xiao Yu’er answered automatically. After a pause, he asked, “Where is the pile of treasure now?”

Shen Qinghong said, “You want to look at it?”

“After all, it’s treasure, who wouldn’t want to?” replied Xiao Yu’er.

“Very well. Follow me…” Shen Qinghong started to say, but was cut off by the Lord of Monkeys: “The treasure is mine-you touch it, you die!”

He glared at them for a while, but eventually relaxed. With a smile, he said, “But perhaps we’ll let this little fish see it, and let him see the might of the Twelve Zodiacs.”

As he spoke, he pulled out two chests from a corner in the darkness.

Although the dark metal(?) chests were covered in rust, their contents shone with the light of jewels and treasure. Their brightness stung the eyes; the Lord of Monkeys was so dazzled that his eyes had become slits in the dark. With mad glee he giggled: “Do you see now, Xiao Yu’er?(3) All this is mine; I would only need to bestow a thousandth of it on you for you to live comfortably the rest of your life.”

Xiao Yu’er took no notice of him. He ruminated, his eyes fixed on the gleaming hoard. A long pause. Unexpectedly he gave a deep sigh and lamented, “What a pity. A pity, I say!”

He spoke again slowly and wistfully: “It’s a shame that you two have only met me now, a bit late.”

“And so what if we had met you earlier?” the Lord of Monkeys asked, startled.

“If you had met me one year earlier, “ Xiao Yu’er stated, “at this moment you would have savoured one year’s worth of freedom in the wide, wide world. Had you met me a decade before now, you would have escaped for ten years already.”

The Lord of Monkeys, just like a real monkey, blinked over and over while saying, “You mean…”

Xiao Yu’er chimed in, “I mean that the sooner you met me, the earlier I would have rescued you.”

The Lord of Monkeys stepped backward three paces. He stopped blinking. He stared open-eyed at Xiao Yu’er, as if flowers had suddenly started sprouting on Xiao Yu’er’s nose.

Recovering himself, he hooted loudly: “You crazy nut, you madman, how could you get us out?”

He grabbed Shen Qinghong, he was laughing so hard that he could hardly catch his breath. He went on, “Did you hear that? This buffoon said he could get us out of here! Who does he think he is, a god?”

Shen Qinghong focused his gaze on Xiao Yu’er. He saw the other man’s clear, bright eyes. He saw the smile playing at the corners of his mouth. The words fell one by one from Shen Qinghong’s lips: “He might just have a way. It is possible.”

Disbelievingly the Lord of Monkeys cried out: “You…you actually believe the words of this little runt?”

Xiao Yu’er smiled slightly: “It is only because my brain was built just the tiniest bit different from yours.”

Infuriated, the Lord of Monkeys shouted: “What, you’re saying your brain is more useful than mine?”

“Not at all. My brain might not be too much superior to yours, only about ten or twenty times,” Xiao Yu’er smiled soothingly.

The Lord of Monkeys jumped: “Bull sh*t.”

“But there’s no need to get upset,” Xiao Yu’er continued. “Your type of brain probably isn’t bad at all. As for my kind of brain, you probably couldn’t find a second one like it on this earth.”

Emitting a strange screech, the Lord of Monkeys yelled, “All right, in that case, if you don’t come up with an idea, I’ll murder you.”

Xiao Yu’er wagered: “If I can’t get you out of this godforsaken place within three months, my head is forfeit.”

The Lord of Monkeys echoed, “Three months…ha, ha ha! I think your head must be deranged, even three years…”

“Three years won’t be necessary,” Xiao Yu’er cut in. “I only need three months. And if in three months time, I really do manage to lead you away from here, how will you repay me?”

The Lord of Monkeys said, “I wouldn’t care if I lost my head to you.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “Well, your head is too cumbersome to carry, and even Li Dazhui wouldn’t want to scavenge it. Even one head would be too much; if there were eight, I’d be crushed under all the dead weight.”

He held up a hand to prevent another outburst from the Lord of Monkeys. Smiling, he said, “If you lose, I just want you to turn a few cartwheels(?) for me to see, that will be enough.”

The Lord of Monkeys sprang up, his face like thunder. “You dare insult me… fine. If I lose, I will do as you wish. But if you lose, I must have your head.”

“You have my word,” Xiao Yu’er agreed. “But, as long as I can get you out, you can’t object to any method I may use.”

The Lord of Monkeys replied, “Whatever, you could use your mother, it’s entirely up to you.”

“All right then,” Xiao Yu’er declared, “three months. We will commence our wager now.”

Without warning, he snatched up the largest piece of deep green jade, and flung it out of the cave.

End of Chapter 25

Chapter 15

Chapter 26

The Legendary Siblings

The piece of brilliant jade was still able to dazzle the eyes as it flew through the darkness. Shen Qinghong, who had looked at Xiao Yu'er with a suppressed smile throughout all this, felt a shock at this point. The Lord of Monkeys appeared to have been driven mad-he grabbed Xiao Yu'er and screamed wildly, "You…you idiot, do you even know what you've done?"

"How could I not know?" Xiao Yu'er returned with a laugh.

The Lord of Monkeys hopped around frantically: "You knew that you just threw out a piece of imperial jade(?), which is equivalent to destroying a big house with smooth walls, completely tiled (?)…it's worth three hundred big, fat oxen."

"Of course I also know that," Xiao Yu'er said.

"You…you consider this rescuing me?" cried the Lord of Monkeys. "You may as well kill me now."

Xiao Yu'er sighed, "Well, if you desire riches above your own life, then forget it."

The Lord of Monkeys protested, "But you…you…what is the point of this?"

"I already knew that you wouldn't see my point," Xiao Yu'er laughed

mockingly. “But even you don’t understand?”

Those last words, of course, were meant for Shen Qinghong.

Shen Qinghong’s face lit up. “I think I understand a little, but still not entirely.”

Xiao Yu’er explained, “Once I cast out all these pieces of treasure, the monkeys will, of course, scramble to catch them. They would naturally, like my monkey brother here, not even dream of throwing away such curious and pretty objects.”

“But of course.” Shen Qinghong agreed, smiling.

“If I throw out one hundred pieces of treasure,” Xiao Yu’er went on, “at least fifty pieces will be caught by them. Then the monkeys would take the various pieces to different places, to play and catch the light with them.(?) Even if only a single piece caught someone’s attention, that person would be hooked into investigating the origin of the treasure.”

Shen Qinghong concurred: “If it were me, I would be just the same.”

Xiao Yu’er further postulated, “The discoverer of the treasure would not trust in his own solitary abilities. He would find a companion to help him. With this type of secret, as soon as you let a second person know, then instantly a third person will know as well. Once a third person hears of the treasure, then the third hundredth person will be aware of it too. As soon as the rumour leaks out, people will come, never you fear.”

Clapping his hands, Shen Qinghong laughed: “Exactly. Even if the initial finder was a totally inept person, when tempted with a treasure, he would suddenly become resourceful. Besides, when the news spreads, all sorts of talents and treasure hunters will appear.”

Xiao Yu’er sighed again: “So now you understand, we just need people to find this place, and then we’ll be sure to find a way out. The fact that neither of you managed to think of this simple strategy, is exceedingly strange.”

The furious expression had long vanished from the Lord of Monkeys, and at this point he actually leapt up and hugged Xiao Yu'er, and began giggling crazily like a madman: "You are truly, indeed, the cleverest man alive."

In this way, many baubles and precious objects, the value of which most people could not earn even over a lifetime, were thrown out by Xiao Yu'er like so many rotten peaches or banana peels. Throughout all this, the Lord of Monkeys looked as if he was being gutted by knives; he didn't know whether to laugh or cry.

From then on, as Xiao Yu'er discarded more and still more treasure, the Lord of Monkeys turned blue in the face and his eyes bulged. He ceaselessly muttered and yammered aloud: "Clever one, oh clever one, do you realize how much riches you have thrown away? If we converted them into money, we could have physically filled in this entire pit of a precipice."

Xiao Yu'er paid no attention to him.

By the seventh day, the Lord of Monkeys began to constantly wipe beads of sweat from his forehead, his fists clenched. He hissed, "Intelligent one, oh intelligent one, if your brilliant plan does not succeed, do you know how horribly you are going to die?"

Xiao Yu'er replied indifferently, "If, by the time I have used up the treasure, no one has come, then you may dispose of me as you wish." In reality he himself was also beginning to get worried. The treasure had already diminished by half, and not even a curious ghost was to be seen.

Eventually the Lord of Monkeys seized the chests and sat on top of them, howling: "No more, don't even think about touching them!"

"So you really value treasure above your own life?" Xiao Yu'er asked.

The Lord of Monkeys ground his teeth: "I have suffered fifteen long years for the sake of this treasure. If it all goes to waste at the hands of a runt like you, what's the point of living?"

Xiao Yu’er rolled his eyes: “What you say is not entirely unreasonable. But think, it might just take one more precious item to bring some rescuers. It’s a shame to go so far and waste our efforts now.(?)”

The Lord of Monkeys rubbed his head, thinking, “This…”

Xiao Yu’er looked at him, smiling, and leisurely added, “Perhaps it just needs one more…only one…”

At last the Lord of Monkeys gave a screech, and sprang aside: “You little pipsqueak, you’ve got quite a tongue. All right, you’ve convinced me.”

If it needed one more item, then perhaps it needed two. And if it took two pieces, then maybe three…days passed like this, and still not a soul could be seen.

Now the Lord of Monkeys seized Xiao Yu’er’s clothes, teeth grinding –grr grr- and hissed: “What does the pipsqueak have to say now?”

Xiao Yu’er said, “You never know, it could just take…”

“It could just take one more, right?!” the Lord of Monkeys screamed.

“Precisely,” Xiao Yu’er laughed.

The Lord of Monkeys stamped his foot: “Dog crap on your mother! You’ve made me suffer enough, and you still want to…want to…” Two hands, like monkey paws, reached out to wring Xiao Yu’er’s neck.

At that moment Shen Qinghong let out a “hey”, then whispered, “Someone’s coming!”

By the side of the cave, a person’s head half peeked out.

It was indeed someone's head, which had been combed into a (?) style, but the hat that should have been sitting on it was gone, apparently swept off by the wind.

This person's eyebrows were thick and dark, he looked quite threatening. But the eyebrows were drawn together in the middle, as if he was troubled by something. Even if he had many troubles, it was not apparent from his eyes(?).

His eyes bulged out from his face, almost as if the eyeballs were growing out of the sockets. His pupils were fixed and motionless, while the whites were crisscrossed with blood vessels. Those bloodshot eyes stared at the three people in the cave, empty and expressionless.

Although these were clearly the eyes of a person, they somehow were not. Such large eyes, and yet no signs of life in them! Xiao Yu'er, Shen Qinghong and the Lord of Monkeys were all looking back at those eyes. Stare as they might, yet for some reason, their hearts all felt a chill.

Those expressionless and lifeless eyes seemed so cruel, so cold and so terrifying. The motionless pupils carried an inexorable air of death.

The Lord of Monkeys couldn't help shouting, "Who the h*ll are you?"

His cry was cut short-the head flew through the air towards them!

No hands, no chest, no body…no nothing. This was definitely only a head, one solitary, human head.

The Lord of Monkeys stood there, stunned. From outside the cave there floated the sounds of eerie, threatening laughter, as a few monkeys showed their laughing faces.

Xiao Yu'er let out a breath, and smilingly scolded them, "So it was you who were playing tricks!"

But this head could not have been severed by the monkeys.

Shen Qinghong picked up the head, and looked at the eyebrows, the bulging pair of eyes. He muttered, “But who killed him?”

Xiao Yu’er glanced outside at the setting sun, and said slowly, “The killer should arrive shortly.”

But no one arrived, killer or otherwise.

The sunset stretched into the long, deep night, which also exhausted itself. During this long while, the Lord of Monkeys could neither sit nor stand still. The misty colours of dawn gradually penetrated the darkness of the cave…Without warning, a hand reached in from the outside of the cave!

The five fingers on this hand resembled hooks, as if they wished to grasp something. But the hand was empty. The hand somehow looked sinister in the early morning light. The Lord of Monkeys flew over with the speed of wind, and seized the wrist. Without using much force, however, the entire hand was wrenched into the cave!

Once again, this was a single, solitary hand. And as before, it had been completely cut off. The blood at the wound had already clotted and congealed into a miserable red colour. There was a scar on the back of the hand, long and deep, with twists and turns like the writhing of a snake. Presumably, many years ago this hand had also been chopped at and narrowly missed an amputation.

The faces of the monkeys with their sly smiles swayed outside the cave, red as if painted with fresh blood.(?) The Lord of Monkeys ground his teeth audibly, and hissed: “The head precedes, and then the hand follows. Heaven forbid, the next body part will be a stinky foot.”

Xiao Yu’er declared, “The head and the hand do not belong to the same person.”

“How would you know? Did you ask him?” the Lord of Monkeys laughed coldly.

Xiao Yu’er observed: “The skin on the face was delicate and soft. On the hand, however, it was like sandpaper. Even if you can’t see it, you should be able to feel the difference.”

“Hmph!” the Lord of Monkeys retorted. After a while, he couldn’t help admitting, “Then perhaps the hand belongs to another person…”

“Correct,” Xiao Yu’er said. “Furthermore, it was this hand that chopped off that head!”

The Lord of Monkeys said, surprised: “What, you know that too? Did you witness it?”

“Take a look at the hand,” Xiao Yu’er explained. “A single glance, and you should know that this hand is a strong one. Only a hand with this kind of strength could achieve a clean decapitation with one stroke.”

“Hmph!” the Lord of Monkeys said once more.

Xiao Yu’er elaborated further: “If you note the markings on this hand, you can tell that just before it was amputated, it must have been tightly gripping a blade. And not just any blade, but the weapon must have been a rare, precious one. Therefore, as soon as the hand that held it was chopped off, the blade was wrenched from its grasp… A strong hand gripping a keen blade, this must have made it much easier to cut off someone’s head. What doesn’t make sense is, how exactly was the hand severed?”

Shen Qinghong suddenly let out a long sigh: “You speak truly; this is indeed a strong hand, and it was indeed gripping a valuable weapon.”

The Lord of Monkeys laughed mockingly, his eyes flashed: “Ha, and all of a sudden you are sure of this too?”

“Of course I do,” Shen Qinghong retorted. “The head I might not know, but the hand I certainly recognize.”

Xiao Yu’er raised his eyebrows, and guessed: “Is it the scar you recognize?”

“Precisely.” Shen Qinghong confirmed. “I was the one who injured the hand and made this scar. And it was I who applied healing herbs to this wound. Judging from the way it healed, I(?)…how could I forget?” His voice betrayed much sadness.

The Lord of Monkeys scratched his nose, saying: “First you wounded him, then you gave him medicines… are you mentally ill or something?”

Xiao Yu’er blinked his eyes, thinking aloud: “That cut must have been an accident. Thus, at once you felt regret and applied the medicines to the hand, is that it?”

“Exactly,” Shen Qinghong agreed with a sad smile.

“In that case, this person must be your friend?” Xiao Yu’er asked.

Shen Qinghong sighed deeply once again: “In former days, this person was known in wulin as “Boss Tie, the Golden Blade”. Tie Yulong and I were certainly good friends, but it was only because we were competing for the position of protection agency boss that I…I accidentally sliced his hand once. Afterwards I wished to make amends, but he…he had left without saying goodbye. This was roughly twenty years ago now. Who could have guessed that today, he…” Shen Qinghong turned his head away.

The Lord of Monkeys mused, “ ‘Boss Tie, the Golden Blade’ …hmm, I have heard of this name before. Apparently he not only had more guts, but his martial arts were also superior to yours. What a pity that he wasn’t as devious as you, and so he suffered that blow.”

Shen Qinghong gloomily agreed, “I am far from his equal.”

The Lord of Monkeys drew his eyebrows together, and anxiously said: “This person’s martial arts were quite good in the first place. In these twenty years, he must have trained hard, to make up for his injury. Thus his martial arts must

have improved quite a bit. Yet even at that advanced level, his hand was cut off. The perpetrator must be very skilled; we must therefore be very cautious."

After this speech, he said nothing more, but would only sit cross-legged(?) in the darkest corner of the cave, breathing evenly and cultivating his chi(?), staring at the entrance to the cave.

Outside the cave, it began to brighten, a tiny breeze was carrying the fragrance and warmth of summer. Occasionally the queer howls of laughter from the monkeys sounded back and forth(?).

The sunlight, the scents and the warmth, such unfettered freedom… tears suddenly streamed from Shen Qinghong's eyes. He turned his head and said hoarsely, "Do you…do you honestly think someone will come? Will someone really find this place?"

Xiao Yu'er responded: "They will."

Shen Qinghong asked, "But who will come? And will they rescue us or not?"

The Lord of Monkeys gave a ferocious laugh: "Of course they will. No matter who, I don't care, I just need them to lower a rope, that rope…"

"But if what they want is not you, but your treasure, once they come in here they will kill you, what do they care?" Shen Qinghong interrupted.

Cackling wildly, the Lord of Monkeys replied, "They can't kill me, no one can kill me…before they even saw me, I would have killed them first."

Shen Qinghong persisted: "And what if it was a friend, you would still kill…"

The Lord of Monkeys hooted with laughter: "Friend? On this earth, who is my friend? From the age of seven I have been friendless. When I hear the word "friend" I want to vomit."

Shen Qinghong slowly blinked his eyes and said: “Very well then.”

The Lord of Monkeys instructed them, slowly and clearly pronouncing his words: “The two of you, if you want to live to get out of here, don’t do anything stupid. In fact, it doesn’t matter if you don’t do anything. Just when the person enters, distract him, otherwise…”

Suddenly with a “sough” sound, a sword flew straight into the cave. Without waiting for it to hit the cave wall, Shen Qinghong had already seized it in his hand. He saw a blue light shimmer along the blade; although it was not a rare treasure, it was still certainly a well-crafted weapon(?).

The Lord of Monkeys shouted: “Where is the swordsman?”

“The swordsman?” Xiao Yu’er slowly repeated. “Doubtless he is also dead. This weapon was flung into the cave by your monkey brothers. If the sword’s owner were still alive, how could he permit such a well-made weapon fall into the hands of apes?”

“But of course. While the man exists, so does the sword; when the man dies, the sword also is no more…” sighed Shen Qinghong.

He lightly stroked the intricate and elegant sword, and found that exact sentiment carved into the blade in eight golden words like glittering thread: “Man and sword live and perish as one.”

“To match this sword, its owner must have been a superb swordsman,” Xiao Yu’er remarked.

Shen Qinghong thrust the sword before Xiao Yu’er, saying: “Examine the sword; are there any further markings besides these eight words?”

There were three golden circles also inscribed on the blade.

Xiao Yu’er blinked: “Nothing much, merely three circles…”

Shen Qinghong heaved a sigh: “You are correct in what your eyes observe. But these mere three circles… did you know what serious meaning these would have among the heroes of wulin?”

“What do they mean?” Xiao Yu’er asked.

“With these three circles alone,” explained Shen Qinghong, “you could procure vast quantities of silver and gold. You could change the lives of a thousand people. (?) You could make bitter rivals shake hands and vow peace. And you could also turn sworn brothers into lifelong enemies.”

Laughing, Xiao Yu’er said, “There must be some devilry in these circles then.” Shen Qinghong replied: “They contain no devilry, but these three circles are the mark of “Hunter of spirits, raider of lives, Three-Ring Swordsman” Shen Yang. By using those three circles, a task could be accomplished as easily as crossing a river.” (?)

“Oh, I see,” Xiao Yu’er said. “This Shen character truly has such influence and power?”

Shen Qinghong continued: “This Three-Ring Sword is one of the ‘Famed Seven Swords’. As for his stroke “Three Rings Envelop the Moon”, when Shen Yang executes it, it is truly…”

Shen Qinghong fell silent for a while, then with a long sigh he said, “The Three Ring Swordsman, dying in this fashion, is really something I could not have imagined. From this we can see, the caliber of the experts you have lured here with your treasure, must be great indeed.”

Xiao Yu’er said, amused: “At the top of the precipice, they must be fighting like mad right now. Only too bad we couldn’t see it.”

Moodily, Shen Qinghong commented: “True. At this moment, up above, there must be so many of our wulin peers and friends shedding blood and taking lives. This is all as a result of your doing, you should be regretful and sorrowful, instead of…”

Laughing even harder, Xiao Yu'er pointed out to him: "The sort of people who would, for mere metal and baubles (?), take others' lives and risk their own, should not be calling themselves heroes of wulin. To my mind, they're nothing but a herd of idiots; who deserves to be mocked if not them?"

A brief pause. Shen Qinghong fell silent, and slowly lowered his head. With a sigh he spoke again: "Fighting so ruthlessly for such superficial gains…on second thought, it really does seem stupid. But I…how could I claim to be different from them?"

Xiao Yu'er told him, "If you start talking with me more often, who knows, in the future you may just get a little smarter."

This day also was spent in nervous anticipation. The Lord of Monkeys opened his already wide eyes even further. The day slowly faded, and his eyes became like two lanterns for some intense, brilliant ghost lights(?).

It was close to midnight,(?) and not a soul was visible outside the cave entrance. But just when they had waited until the long, long night had almost exhausted itself, from the endless outer darkness, there suddenly came a burst of loud noise. Earsplitting and devious cackles; it was the monkeys laughing again.

His eyebrows drawn together, Xiao Yu'er scolded, "Monkeys, it's the middle of the night, why are you making all this racket?"

Shen Qinghong said heavily: "The monkeys dislike the night. If they are making so much noise now, there must be a reason for it."

He had barely finished speaking, when "ding dong, wa-la" –a stream of clattering noises announced that the monkeys had hurled about ten or so objects into the cave. The cave interior was pitch-black; no one could see what these objects were. The monkeys' laughter gradually faded, as if they had accomplished some obscure mission and had left.

Xiao Yu'er felt around blindly, and grasped an object. He said, "This feels like a sickled(?) sword."

Shen Qinghong said glumly, “A sickled sword? In recent years this type of weapon has become rather rare in wulin, and its strokes have gradually been lost to the common repertoire. Anyone able to use this type of sword, must be a top-notch practitioner.”

“Then it seems, once again, that a top-notch practitioner has just lost his life,” Xiao Yu’er quipped.

He again searched with his fingers, and fished up another object. Shen Qinghong asked, “What is that?”

“It is round, smooth, and has a chain attached(?),” Xiao Yu’er noted. “Seems like a morningstar, yet not exactly. (1) I can’t really tell what it is.”

Shen Qinghong repeated, mumbling: “Round? And smooth…ah, perhaps it is the most poisonous weapon of the Five Great Sects(?) of wulin, ‘the Pearl of Thunder and Five Poisons’!”

Xiao Yu’er said, “Pearl of Thunder and Five Poisons, this name sounds quite powerful.”

“When you use it,” Shen Qinghong explained, “you use the same technique as with ordinary morningstars, but in the copper sphere there lies some hidden projectiles. When an enemy encounters it, the hidden projectiles will fly out. Even a high-level martial arts expert would be hard pressed to avoid injury. In this way, the possessor of this weapon, Yang Lu, became quite feared throughout most of wulin.”

Although Shen Qinghong had been gone from wulin for fifteen years, his knowledge of its inner secrets was as detailed as though they were his household heirlooms.(?)

Xiao Yu’er laughed: “Well apparently this Yang fellow didn’t get to show off his special technique this time before he was killed. The killer undoubtedly must be an expert of the highest quality.”

“Take another look, do you see anything more?” Shen Qinghong prompted. “But be careful, since there are experts here from the Five Sects, these objects here must be reeking of poison.”

Laughing, Xiao Yu’er reassured him, “Do I look like the type of person who would fall for another’s poison? Of course I covered my hands in cloth first. Hmm, there’s a sword here that resembles a Nine-Ring sword.” He made a thrust with his hand; an ear-numbing noise thundered forth.

“Judging from that sound,” Shen Qinghong observed, “this sword sounds extremely heavy.”

“It is indeed,” Xiao Yu’er agreed. “About fifty catties, I’m afraid.”

Shen Qinghong said, “The noise alone from such a sword would be lethal. Presumably its owner had incredible arm strength and martial arts, definitely not below Golden Blade Tie Yulong. Indeed, it could be ‘Evil-Cleansing Sword’ Zeng Lun!”

Xiao Yu’er continued searching: “Here we have a Judge’s Pen. It’s very heavy too. To be able to use this pen to seal acupoints, the user’s abilities must also be quite superb.”

“Pass it over, let me see it,” Shen Qinghong said.

“See it?” joked Xiao Yu’er. “Don’t you mean-let me touch it? I don’t think you could see anything right now.”

Shen Qinghong’s finger ran lightly over the cold and strong brush. Where he gripped the brush, he thought he felt many engraved words. He blindly spelled them out with his fingers moving down the brush.

At the top were carved the four words: “Those without righteousness die”.

Shen Qinghong cried out: “Indeed, it is the ‘Judge of Life and Death’ Zhao Gong, he…how did he die as well?”

“All people die, what is so strange about that?” asked Xiao Yu’er.

“But…but the “Judge of Life and Death” was the foremost expert alive in wulin with respect to sealing acupoints. His martial arts were unsurpassed in the central plains. Who killed him? In fact, who could have killed him?!”

Xiao Yu’er hypothesized, “It is possible that he didn’t die, but was merely parted from his weapon.”

Shen Qinghong disagreed: “All martial arts experts everywhere, without question, view their esteemed weapons as their lives. Since these weapons have fallen into the hands of monkeys, their owners must have lost their lives as well!”

By this time, a faint light had started shining into the cave. Although it was not strong, it was enough for the keen eyes of Shen Qinghong and the others to perceive clearly the state of the lost weapons.

They saw that besides the sickled sword, the Pearl of Five Poisons, and the Nine-Ring sword, there were also two other swords, a spear, a pair of tiger’s head hooks(?), three steel projectiles(?) and two bags of stealth projectiles.

Shen Qinghong picked up one of the other swords. It was light and skillfully crafted, its blade thin as paper. He said, “This is from the pair of swords called ‘Dragon and Phoenix in Twin Flight, Mandarins’ Swords’ – it is the ‘Skyward Phoenix’ sword. Where is its partner ‘Divine Dragon”? Perhaps they were forced apart…ai!”

He continued, “The Dragon and Phoenix, what a pair…throughout wulin, they were considered to have wings-they could soar and glide the skies for nine days straight, who could have guessed that in the end, they would be separated by a cruel hand!”

Sighing, he put down the “Skyward Phoenix” sword. His eyes swept from the spear to the tiger’s head hooks and across the other weapons. His sighs became heavier, and he muttered: “All of these people died for the same reason, this I could never have dreamed of. Certainly the fierce fighting and violent conditions

under which they perished, we will not see again in a hundred years.”

Xiao Yu’er said, “These people not only died, but evidently they died at the same time. To be able to kill so many experts simultaneously, this killer’s abilities must be unimaginable. Can you guess who it was?”

Shen Qinghong mused, “The people who could slay so many experts at once, are definitely few in number. However, I would say there are about seven or eight. Among them, the ones who have the most skillful martial arts and who use the cruelest tactics, are the two princesses of the Floral Palace!”

The tone of his voice changed somewhat on uttering the final two words. He glanced about in all directions, as if afraid that the two princesses, beautiful as fairies yet monster-like in their brutality, might suddenly appear out of the darkness.

Xiao Yu’er smiled and reassured him, “Don’t worry. They would never appear in such an uncouth place.”

Shen Qinghong released his held breath, and said, “You’re right. Those two are like lofty fairies, why would they kill for such earthly treasures? They are assuredly not the murderers.”

“Besides them, who else is there?” Xiao Yu’er pressed.

“Among the “Ten Evils” of old,” Shen Qinghong declared, “the ones with the highest martial arts were “Bloody Hand” Du Sha and “Mad Lion” Tie Shan. I’m afraid they would also be capable of such cruel tactics.”

Xiao Yu’er rejected the idea: “Neither of them is a possibility.”

Shen Qinghong corrected himself, “That is right. The first one, no one knows his current whereabouts. According to rumour, he has taken shelter in the “Valley of Evil”. What about “Mad Lion” Tie Shan? Ai…if these people were killed by him, even their weapons would have been torn to pieces; they would never escape intact like this.”

“Who else is there?” Xiao Yu’er repeated.

Shen Qinghong replied, “There are a few, but their names are not worth mentioning.”

“Why is that?”

“Because although their martial arts are indeed first-class, they are honourable and righteous, truly the heroes of our generation, and would never stoop so low as this kind of act. For example, the Peerless Celestial Sword, Yan Nantian! Although this esteemed swordsman could easily kill those people, he would not, unless they were evildoers. He would rather endure suffering himself than wrongfully commit a murder. “

Xiao Yu’er had been waiting for him to name Yan Nantian; now, upon hearing Shen Qinghong’s description, his blood rose in his chest, warm and rushing. He cried: “Well spoken! Truly a man! If a man lives on this earth, he should live like Yan Nantian, so that at the mere mention of his name, one would raise a thumb in admiration.”

Shen Qinghong stared at the Lord of Monkeys, and said loudly, “Not only those who have benefited from him, praise him to the skies both openly and behind his back, but even his enemies would not dare speak ill of him outside of his presence.”

The Lord of Monkeys sneered coldly: “Ha, you think I wouldn’t dare mock him?”

Without warning, Shen Qinghong was on his feet. He shouted: “How dare you?”

The Lord of Monkeys sighed, saying: “Although I do wish to curse him, I don’t even know exactly how I should.”

Shen Qinghong burst into loud laughter: “Did you hear that? Of course there

are people who want to curse him, but they don't even know how. This is because he has never in his life done anything to be ashamed of. Although I haven't seen him in fifteen years, but this kind of man, who has no regrets under heaven or on earth, must still be alive and well, wouldn't you agree?"

Xiao Yu'er echoed, "Definitely, he must be alive and well! He must be living a good life right now…" As he spoke, his eyes moistened. He lowered his head, and hurriedly picked up one of the bags of stealth projectiles, spilling its contents on the floor.

They saw that there were thirteen poison needles, seven clusters of black metal projectiles (?) , and also one big pile of poison sand. Shen Qinghong's face changed colour. He said, "The River (?) sect also sent people here!"

Xiao Yu'er said, "The perpetrator could not be in the list of people you just named. Yet the person also could not be from among the few you said weren't worth mentioning. In that case, do you have any idea who it is?"

Shen Qinghong sighed, "I honestly don't think I would be able to guess."

Xiao Yu'er stretched out his cramped waist. He said, "Well, it doesn't matter anyway. He'll definitely come soon, let's just wait and see."

The fear and wariness was apparent in the Lord of Monkeys' wide, round eyes, even though he was indeed confident in his own martial arts, and that they would be able to overpower the killer in the darkness. But the martial arts of the approaching, unfathomable enemy were truly too strong! It was enough to chill one's courage. If he were to miss on the first stroke, he may not have another chance to attack.

A breeze gently stirred. Outside the cave unexpectedly there appeared a hand. It was delicate, beautiful and graceful. Each finger seemed carved from white jade. Even the most critical person alive would not be able to pick out a flaw from this hand.

But here, in this kind of place, to suddenly see such a captivating sight, seemed extremely eerie and strange. To the eyes of Shen Qinghong and the others, this

perfect and elegant jade hand, truly seemed to have a sad, mysteriously bewitching air. You could not help but wonder if this could really be a human hand. Right now the Lord of Monkeys appeared to have stopped breathing; he was speechless.

They saw the hand lightly knock on the stone at the cave entrance…the hand had moved, and so had the fingers, this could not be a dead person's hand!

Then a gentle and sweet voice laughed, like a silver bell: "Is anyone home?"

At this moment and in such a place, they could hardly believe such words could be spoken, by such a soft voice. It sounded as if a neighbour's young wife had dropped by on a casual social visit. The hair was raised on their skin as the Lord of Monkeys and Shen Qinghong listened. They looked at each other, not knowing whether to laugh or cry. Neither could find any words to say.

Xiao Yu'er rolled his eyes and replied, laughing: "Oh yes, there certainly are, and quite a few of us!"

The speaker teased, "Well then, if you are home, you should come out and open the door!"

"Unfortunately yesterday I ate somebody's sweets(?) without paying for it, so they came and confiscated my door," Xiao Yu'er joked back.

He was answered by another silvery peal of laughter: "I have been waiting outside so long that my legs are getting weak, may I come in and sit for a while?"

"Of course you may," said Xiao Yu'er. "But be careful when you enter. The threshold is quite high, you wouldn't want to tear your new dress."

The voice replied, "Many thanks to you."

End of Chapter 26

Chapter 16

Chapter 27

A young girl, clad in a light blouse and green dress, with a sprig of fresh mountain flowers tucked into her hair, stepped elegantly into the cave. Her steps were delicate, her waist was slender and graceful. Although she had obviously just climbed in out of a steep and dangerous precipice, she truly looked as if she were nothing more than a young woman stepping over a threshold. Even the flowers at her hair were firmly tucked into place, and not crooked a bit.

In the darkness, the Lord of Monkeys flew at her wildly like a forceful wind- straight towards the delicate and tender girl. It appeared she was about to be thrown out, but then, inexplicably, her waist twisted aside slightly, and there she stood still, gracefully, behind the Lord of Monkeys.

The Lord of Monkeys spun around in shock, and was about to strike a second time. The maiden in a green dress threw him an enchanting smile, and said softly, “Sir, if you wish me to leave, I will leave of course, there is no need for you to waste so much energy and get so upset.” The smiling face was as beautiful as a living flower, sweet as honey.

The Lord of Monkeys fumed: “You…you…”

Although he feared no-one, and was a cruel and devious creature, when faced with such a gentle, and pretty girl, his heart was moved in spite of itself. He found he could no longer hurl insults at her.

The maiden in a green dress said, “If this kind sir desires it, I will stay here, and cook for you. I will clean for you, mend your clothes…”

During all this time, Xiao Yu'er had stared at her with wide, steady eyes. Now he suddenly gave a happy laugh: "I have a better idea-why don't you be my little wife."

The girl clad in green smiled demurely, "If you really want me to be your wife, that would be my happiest wish. Such a clever and handsome husband like you, I couldn't find in ten years of searching-unfortunately…"

"Unfortunately what?" Xiao Yu'er interrupted.

She continued softly, "It's just that I'm too old for you, when you're thirty, I'll already be an old woman. By then, you would want to cast me aside, yet you wouldn't have the heart to. Wouldn't that be placing a burden on you? How could I bear to do that?"

Xiao Yu'er clearly knew that she spoke not one word of truth, but somehow, when her words sang in his ears, his heart felt very warm and soft. He couldn't help smiling: "Instead of complaining that I was too young, you instead claimed that you yourself were too old. Any girl like you, who has such a way with words, it wouldn't matter if she were a bloodthirsty, murdering pig, I would still like her."

"No matter whether you are sincere or not, these words I will forever keep in my heart," the maiden in a green dress said tenderly.

"And what if I don't want to stay?" the Lord of Monkeys cut in harshly, changing the subject.

She replied, "If you, sir, find this place too confining, and wish to roam outside, I've already set up a ladder, you may exit at any time."

"Really?" the Lord of Monkeys whispered.

The green-skirted girl reassured him, "Sir, if you are still worried, you may go up first, and then we will follow. Leave this young gentleman to carry the chest with him last. In this way, you may relax, and we will rest assured also."

In his heart were a million voices telling him not to heed her; yet her words did indeed sound reasonable, and were just what he wanted to hear. So the Lord of Monkeys couldn't help but be convinced. Even Shen Qinghong, who was certain that this girl must be a cold-blooded monster, seemed to have fallen under her spell; he nodded as he listened.

The two of them thought hard and searched their minds, and still failed to find any evil intent in her actions. What she said made sense, she had considered others as well as herself.

Xiao Yu'er clapped his hands: "This is indeed the best way. If anyone else climbed up first, my monkey brother would certainly be anxious. Since we're letting him ascend first, he must wait until finally the treasure chest comes up too. This way he won't cut the rope."

The Lord of Monkeys stared hard at the young girl, and couldn't restrain himself from asking: "You…you did this entirely with good intentions?"

The maiden gently protested: "But why would I have any malicious intent?" The Lord of Monkeys cried out: "Are there truly people as good as you in this world?"

"I was born with this nature," she lightly sighed. "I only think of others, and do things for them, without thinking for myself."

The Lord of Monkeys' eyes flashed, and darted back and forth, but he could still not figure out why he should mistrust her. He stamped his foot and declared, "Very well. I don't care if you're good or evil. Let's just get up there first!" His heart long ago had been bursting with impatience. The sunlight, the warm wind, the free world outside, beckoned to him invitingly.

He peeked his head out. As she said, there indeed was a long rope dangling down from above, as thick as an arm. If this rope were somehow rigged to break under a weight, the maiden in a green dress herself would be trapped here with them. So therefore, if the rope were safe, there must be some other trick here. But he'd deal with it after he climbed up first.

The Lord of Monkeys pondered and reflected, but still could not come up with any sound strategy. At last he decided to ignore his suspicions, and sprang forward to grab the rope. Laughing gleefully, he cried, “Shen Qinghong, you follow me…”

His laughter was abruptly cut short as his body twisted and plunged straight down the vertical cliff face, thousands of feet down. All that could be heard now were screams of agony.

Shen Qinghong’s face went white. In alarm, his voice cracked: “This, this…”

The maiden in green had also turned pale. She said in a trembling voice, “How...how did this happen?”

Shen Qinghong whipped around to face her. He thundered, “I think we should be asking you this question!”

She said, “Perhaps…perhaps he was too aged and could not grip the rope properly?”

“I want the truth,” Shen Qinghong demanded. “Just how did you tamper with the rope?”

She looked at him with eyes clearer than autumn springs, innocent like a child. Softly she insisted, “There is nothing wrong with the rope. It didn’t break; didn’t I just come down on this rope a short while ago? If you don’t believe me, give it a tug.”

Accordingly Shen Qinghong reached out his hand, when Xiao Yu’er stopped him dead with a laugh: “Let’s say the rope had a few poison needles hidden within it, that wouldn’t feel very nice when you tugged it, would it?”

Instantly Shen Qinghong’s hand snaked backwards like lightning. In a loud voice he declared, “You are right. This rope must have contained poison needles, otherwise the Lord of Monkeys would not have loosened his grip. What a vicious

woman you are-my eyes are indeed opened today!”

The tears shone brightly in the girl’s eyes. She said sadly, “If you insist on being suspicious, I can say no more. In that case, I…I can only pull it myself for you to see.” Upon those words she began to ascend the rope.

Shen Qinghong watched her go up with wide eyes. Her body, graceful as a dancer’s, began to recede upwards into the sky. He began to get anxious, and slightly regretful. He really didn’t dare to climb up on the same rope as this possibly evil, potentially blameless young girl. Yet to just helplessly watch this opportunity escape, would be heartbreaking.

He struggled with his doubts, unsure whether to take the chance. At this moment, this enigmatic young girl came lightly sliding back down again. Xiao Yu’er laughed: “Oh, I knew you would come back.”

She softly sighed: “Well, I was thinking of leaving you, but really I couldn’t bear to. Ai! Why is my heart always so tender, I don’t even know myself.”

She lightly swept her eyes over to Shen Qinghong, then said to him, “Whether the rope can be trusted or not, you should know by now.”

By this time, Shen Qinghong no longer knew whose words to believe. He even began to wonder if the Lord of Monkeys hadn’t in fact accidentally lost his grip on the rope and fallen.

The green maiden said leisurely, “If you still have doubts, why not use cloth to cover your hands first?”

Shen Qinghong looked at the rope. Then he gazed outside the cave, at the blue skies and clear heavens. Finally he glanced at the gloomy, dark interior of the cave, and he brooded on the long, hard fifteen years he had spent here.

This kind of chance was not easy to pass up.

He gritted his teeth, and eventually looked at Xiao Yu’er. Xiao Yu’er himself had

his eyebrows drawn together tightly, and said, “Don’t look at me, I’m also out of ideas. And yet…I think this rope shouldn’t break, otherwise she would not have been able to descend on it.”

Shen Qinghong expelled a long breath. Then: “At this point, I must give it a try no matter what.”

He leapt up, and gripping the rope he started to climb.

Xiao Yu’er’s spirits also lifted as he saw him ascend. One foot, now two…he had reached thirty or forty metres. Xiao Yu’er released his held breath. He smiled and teased the young girl: “I still can’t figure out whether you’re a good or bad person...”

His words were cut short-the rope snapped.

Shen Qinghong screamed, he struggled, and fell past the cave entrance straight down. In the blink of an eye he was out of sight. All that remained of him was the echo of his shocked cries reverberating off the surrounding cliffs.

Xiao Yu’er stood there stunned, eyes wide open. For a moment he was speechless. Finally he mumbled, “You…you…you truly are a monster, tricking these people to their deaths!”

The girl smiled captivatingly: “Oh? Really?”

“You placed venomous needles in the rope to poison the old monkey,” Xiao Yu’er grimly accused her. “Then you cut the rope across half its thickness, to trick Shen Qinghong. But with your skill in martial arts, you never needed to use such devious methods to kill them!”

Pleasantly, she explained: “There’s not much point in killing them using skills in violence. Never in my life have I lifted so much as a finger to kill a single person. All of them died voluntarily and of their own free will.”

“But I still don’t understand,” Xiao Yu’er said. “Since the rope is now severed,

how are you going to get back up?”

The girl in green said, “This place is nice and comfortable, I like it here; I don’t intend on leaving.”

Xiao Yu’er scratched his head in surprise, then smiled wryly, “A girl saying something that I can’t figure out; you are indeed the first.”

She gazed at him steadily, then said softly, “Your friends died by my hand, aren’t you going to avenge them?”

He sighed: “I can’t beat you with my martial arts, and I’m not skilled enough to trick you either, how am I supposed to avenge them? Besides, as you said, you didn’t force them, they willingly let themselves be fooled.”

“You’re not angry or upset at all?” she asked.

Xiao Yu’er said, “Of these two, one of them deserved to die a long time ago. The other one was ready to die fifteen years before. Their deaths today are therefore appropriate, why should I be upset?”

Her eyes darted back and forth, then she said, giggling: “You little kid, I’ve never met anyone like you.”

Joining in her laughter, Xiao Yu’er said, “Right then, you can start tricking me. Go ahead, lure me to my death.”

The maiden in green said, “If I did that, I’d be pretty lonely all here by myself…”

Xiao Yu’er said, wide-eyed, “You…you mean you’re really not going back up there?”

“I don’t have wings, and I can’t fly,” she replied.

He was silent for a while. Finally he smiled: “You really are a monster among

women!”

She joked back: “If I was a girl monster, you would be a baby monster.”

Xiao Yu’er sighed: “That’s actually quite right. A girl monster and a little monster, spending their lives in this ghostly cave. Perhaps in the future we’ll spawn a whole brood of tiny monster babies…” Before he had finished, she was laughing so hard she was doubled over.

Unexpectedly, a wave of crazed laughter floated over from afar.

A demented voice cackled, “Xiao, you wench, you can’t run from me, your old man knows where you’re hiding. He’s waiting for you here, you can’t wait forever down there!” (1)

The voice clearly came from somewhere in the mist and mountains, but it sounded like it was madly screaming right in your ear. Instantly the girl’s expression changed; now it was whiter than paper.

Xiao Yu’er asked, “Who is he?”

She answered, “He…he isn’t human, he’s an old fiend!”

“Are you really that afraid of him?” Xiao Yu’er demanded.

The maiden in a green dress shook her head and sighed, “You don’t understand, you don’t…the things he does to you, no one could imagine.”

They heard the voice cry out again: “Xiao, you’re really not coming up?”

She bit her lip and made no reply.

After a pause, the voice called out, “All right then, your old man is going to count to ten. If you don’t come up by then, and you wait for me to catch you, I swear I will keep you in a living hell for ten days and ten nights straight. If I let

you suffer less a minute, I won't call myself a man!"

Xiao Yu'er blinked his eyes, then sighed, "It appears that he has the ability to torture people beyond the point of being able to die."

The voice howled, "We're counting down now! One!"

The strength seemed to drain from her entire body; the green maiden collapsed onto the floor, unable to move. The flowers that were tucked into her hair shook uncontrollably.

"Two!"

Xiao Yu'er's eyes flickered. "Could it be that he is one of the 'Ten Evils'?"

The girl sighed, "The 'Ten Evils', when compared with him, would be obedient little children."

Xiao Yu'er cried out, shocked, "You mean he's worse than the 'Ten Evils'?"

"Three!" the voice shouted.

"What's his name?" Xiao Yu'er asked her after a pause.

She answered, "You wouldn't recognize it."

He said, "Well if he's more vicious than the 'Ten Evils', his name should be exceedingly famous."

The girl in green let out a long sigh: "Don't you know that dogs who give the most vicious bites, are usually the most silent? The nameless ones are the most to be feared. Even if he committed the most unimaginable horrors, no-one would know."

“Four!” the voice hollered. “Fine, it appears that you’re not coming back up. Would you like to hear how your old man will torture you when he does catch you?” It seemed the speaker was in the throes of a paroxysmal rage. He screamed, “When I get you, I’ll poke out one of your eyes, then start filling its socket with salt water. Ten days later, your entire body will be a hunk of salted pork.”

Xiao Yu’er chuckled bitterly: “What a demon-such a style of salting meat alive, I don’t think even Li Dazhui has tried it.”

Abruptly she asked him: “You know Li Dazhui?”

Blinking, he answered her with a question of his own: “Why, do you know him?”

The girl in green paused, then said slowly, “Throughout wulin, who wouldn’t know him?”

Now the voice screamed shrilly from above: “Five! You heard it, five! Five more counts, and you’re dead. If you think your old man won’t be able to catch you, you’re making a big mistake!”

Suddenly she stood up and gave a long, despairing sigh: “It’s over. Rather than waiting for him to torture me, I may as well kill myself properly first.”

Xiao Yu’er asked: “You…what are you scared of? Let’s just wait here and not go up, he’s not going to come down.”

The girl clad in green sighed again: “You don’t understand. This person has never made an empty threat. If he claims to be able to capture me, then I don’t doubt that he can.”

He protested, “You can’t die just like that. If you die, then I’ll be left all alone here.”

She gave a melancholic smile: “Do you still want to live?”

“Why wouldn’t I? My life has just started to become interesting.”

She shook her head. “He won’t let you go either…” she said, sighing.

“Six!” the voice threatened. “I’ve counted to six now!”

The girl in green said, “He’ll be able to catch you somehow. If I die, he’ll vent his anger on you. At that time you’ll really be in trouble!”

As she spoke, she slowly stepped toward the cave entrance.

Xiao Yu’er asked, “You’re going to jump?”

She replied, “If you ask me, I think you’d be better off coming with me.”

His voice cracked in surprise: “You want me to jump with you?”

Unexpectedly she turned back towards him. Gazing at him, she slowly said, “If I die by myself, I would also feel terribly lonely. Would you be willing to come with me?”

Xiao Yu’er rubbed his head. He muttered to himself: “Asking someone to die with her so she won’t feel lonely…ha! This is certainly a rare type of request.”

Slowly she spoke again: “The only reason I ask is because I am fond of you. Otherwise…I wouldn’t care if you lived or died.”

“Seven!” the voice cut in from above.

Xiao Yu’er looked back at her. He gazed at her for a long time. Finally he said, “You are fond of me?”

“You are a clever person, couldn’t you tell?” she slowly replied.

Still he stared at her for a while. Abruptly he cried: “Fine! I will come with you!”

In shock, the girl said hoarsely, “You will?”

Xiao Yu’er told her, “Not only will we go together, but I will hold you in my arms as well.”

Again her eyes were fixed on him. Eventually she said, “Very well. You are very good to me.”

“Eight!” the voice interrupted. “Still holding out, are you, you little wench? You won’t be living much longer!”

Xiao Yu’er did indeed jump up and bound towards her. He held her tightly to him, and even laughed, murmuring: “You smell wonderful…dying with you in my arms, is not bad at all.”

She suddenly laughed with him: “You are really an adorable little boy. Dying while being held by you, doesn’t feel bad at all.”

“Nine!” the voice screeched. “Nine! Did you hear me, you wench? Your old man has counted to nine!”

She asked him, “Are you holding on tight? Hang on firmly now, I am going to jump!”

“Go ahead!” he replied. He closed his eyes tightly. He took a few deep breaths, and reflected: “To die, I wonder what it feels like.”

She said ironically, “Well, you’ll find out shortly.” With that, she really did leap into the air, and they began their rapid plunge into the invisible depths of nothingness.(?)

He heard the rapid whistling of the wind by his ears, (?) and his body continued

to descend. At this moment, you could have said he felt afraid; yet he was also fascinated, and comfortable at the same time. No matter what, you had to admit that not many people had had the experience of jumping down through a depth of a thousand metres.

Or perhaps it was that the word “frightened” had already been frightened from his thoughts. Or maybe he had never believed that the girl in green would really jump to begin with.

The deeper the fell, the faster they went. He felt as though his lower body would split apart from his upper half. Now he thought to himself: “Am I really clever? Or incredibly stupid?”

Then with a “foong” sound, his body was stunned; their descent began to slow down. He heard the girl clad in green softly laugh in his ear: “How does it feel to die?”

He joked back: “Not bad, not bad at all…”

Xiao Yu’er opened his eyes. He looked left, then right. On both sides, the mountain slopes were covered in forest, giving a peaceful and calm feeling, as if one by one each tree were floating upwards. From this you could tell that the speed of his fall was very slow indeed.

His companion laughed: “You know, you are one very lucky person. You have tasted death without really losing your life.”

“How…how is this possible?” Xiao Yu’er asked.

“Lift your head, take a look,” she replied.

Upon raising his head, he saw a bizarre contraption. It looked like an umbrella and yet was not. It was larger than an umbrella by at least ten times.

This odd device had actually burst out from the back of the girl in green. Apparently she had used a lot of thread and rope to make a multi-coloured, giant

umbrella. This ‘umbrella’ caught the wind, therefore their descent naturally slowed down.

Xiao Yu’er felt as if he were riding downwards on a cloud. This feeling was very fun and interesting. He couldn’t help but laugh out loud: “This little toy isn’t bad, how did you come up with it?”

Unexpectedly another shock hit his body-they had landed on the ground. The huge ‘umbrella’ began to roll away in the wind, tugging at them.

The girl in green pulled out a small dagger and started cutting the ropes. She smiled sweetly: “Little flirt, you can let go of my hand now.”

Instead, Xiao Yu’er squeezed her hand tighter: “No, I won’t. You really tricked me good, I almost went mad. Now you should let me hug you for a bit, to make up for it.”

“You little flirt, are you really clever, or an idiot?” she asked laughing.

He replied, amused, “I just asked that myself a while ago. Even I couldn’t come up with an answer.”

“Well, if you ask me, you’re just a little bit of an idiot,” she teased.

Xiao Yu’er suddenly sprang to his feet. His eyes flashed; staring at her he said, “You really think that you deceived me?”

She looked back at him with an enchanting smile: “You haven’t figured it out?”

He laughed loudly: “Let me tell you, I already knew you wouldn’t let yourself die. That’s why I agreed to jump with you. You don’t seem the sort to kill yourself.”

The girl blinked a few times: “Oh? Really?”

Xiao Yu’er drew himself up and declared loudly: “I tell you, no one in this world can fool Jiang Yu.”

She looked at him, then softly said, “Indeed then, I find now you are truly a man, no longer a child. I have never met a man like you.” Her eyes were warm and kind. Xiao Yu’er puffed out his chest and thought to himself that he agreed with her. He had grown up and was now a man.

The girl clad in green looked around in all directions, then abruptly sighed: “Although I haven’t died, but now at this point, I’m really out of ideas. Now…I really have to rely on you, please don’t leave me.”

Xiao Yu’er thought he had never felt more strong or brave than at this moment. He felt that he must really be quite capable, or this girl would never have wholeheartedly put her faith in him.

He said firmly, “You can rely on me, I won’t regret it.”

She smiled gratefully: “You are so good, I know I haven’t picked the wrong person.” He laughed: “Of course you haven’t, you’ve chosen the best.”

The girl in green relaxed and said, “Good, now if you could think of a way out of here, we’ll be able to leave this godforsaken place.”

“Certainly,” agreed Xiao Yu’er. Although the word came readily from his lips, in his heart he felt anxious, because he had already surveyed this ‘godforsaken place’ and truly could not see a way out.

This place resembled the bottom of a wine bottle. Even with as many legs as a centipede, and the strongest will to live, it was impossible to climb out.

The strangest thing was, the place didn’t seem as damp as they might have imagined. There wasn’t the slightest bit of humidity, in fact it was warm and rather dry. The dense fog and clouds from above were very far away.

Below his feet, instead of thick and sticky mud, (?) was refreshing grass. It was

soft, springy, and green, like a large colourful blanket. Under the bright shards of sunlight, the air was filled with a delightful fragrance.

Everywhere there was thick and dense forest. In between the trees would peek some grass and flowers. Xiao Yu’er felt as though he had landed in a paradise.

The only disturbing part about this paradise was, there was an endless silence and stillness. No breeze, and no sounds. Every blade of grass, each leaf, was motionless. There was no breath of life anywhere.

This terrible stillness was enough to drive a person mad. Such a beautiful paradise was actually a place of death.

The girl in green softly interrupted his thoughts: “Have you thought of a way out yet?”

Xiao Yu’er could no longer force a smile to his lips. He could only keep mumbling, “There must be a way, of course there is.”

She said, “All right then, you lead and I’ll obey your instructions.” She looked at him gently and fell silent.

With his hands behind his back, Xiao Yu’er began to turn in circles. By about the seventeenth or eighteenth circle, he suddenly cried out: “Something’s wrong, something’s not right here!”

“What’s wrong?” the girl asked.

He asked her, “What’s missing here?”

“Something’s missing? What’s missing?” she echoed.

Xiao Yu’er said worriedly, “Where are the old monkey and Shen Qinghong? Flown up to heaven?”

She said, “Didn’t…didn’t they fall to their deaths?”

He said excitedly, “Right, exactly, they did. But where are the bodies? I’ve looked everywhere, and I can’t find a single bone. Even if they were devoured by wolves, they couldn’t have been eaten that fast. Furthermore, there’s not even a kitten to be found here, let alone a wolf.”

The expression on the girl’s face changed. She said anxiously, “You really couldn’t find their corpses?”

“No, I didn’t, not even a bone,” he repeated.

Even as he said it, Xiao Yu’er still couldn’t believe his own words. As he spoke, he continued his search. The girl in green followed along, helping him. The area was not large, and very soon they had already finished two or three complete searches. They had looked in every corner, under every tree, and over all the patches of grass.

Not only were even the bones missing, but not even a single bloodstain was visible. There was no evidence at all of the two others having died here.

Suddenly Xiao Yu’er began to grow afraid. He said, “Maybe there are ghosts here.”

The girl shrank back, but forced herself to laugh, “Ghosts, how could there be ghosts?”

Xiao Yu’er said, “If it weren’t for ghosts, how could they have disappeared? Even if they weren’t killed by the fall, they should still be here. Besides, there is no way they could still be alive.”

He added, “There is something weird about this place. I must get to the root of this mystery.” As he spoke, he began to search for clues again. But the trees remained just trees, and the grassy patched yielded no further clues.

Firmly he concluded, “There must be someone else in this place.”

“How could there be anyone else in this place?” she asked.

Xiao Yu’er explained, “If this were a natural and freely growing patch of grass, how could it be so neat and tidy? Therefore, there must be someone here, someone who regularly tends the grounds.”

Her puzzled expression cleared: “Ah, you are right. Not only is your brain clever, but your eyes are observant…since someone lives here, I’m a little more relieved.”

She jumped up, her eyes dancing, but then drew her eyebrows in worry and said, “But…where are they then?”

Xiao Yu’er said, “They…they…”

He looked around, but not a soul could be seen, let alone a living human.

A mystery. A puzzling, unsolvable mystery.

The girl in green said, “I can’t even bear to think of it, it’s too creepy.”

Xiao Yu’er said steadfastly: “Don’t you worry about it, you can leave the thinking to me.”

In reality he couldn’t figure it out either, he was starting to get a headache.

The light was beginning to fade, and quickly too. Xiao Yu’er ceaselessly walked, here and there, back and forth. He was so hungry he was sure his stomach would start to leak acid.

He was starting to go crazy.

He always used to say, “There is nothing impossible in this world.” At this point, he was beginning to feel that anyone who could say that was either a

madman or a simpleton.

He didn't dare look at the girl in green. She had said that she would leave everything up to him. If she had chosen the right person, well, perhaps her eyes were a little blind.

Eventually Xiao Yu'er began to feel faint. He mumbled, "I'll rest for a bit, then we'll see. If only I could sleep and never have to wake up…"

Suddenly the girl cried, "Come over here…come!"

He turned his head in her direction, but had already lost sight of her. He shouted, "Where are you? Have you learned the art of invisibility or something?"

"I'm here, over here!" she called back. Her voice could be heard from behind a tree. The tree was thick in diameter, and large. Its leaves were especially green. Xiao Yu'er had been suspicious of it a long time ago, but had not been able to pinpoint anything specific.

Xiao Yu'er flew over to her side, and found her kneeling on the ground behind the tree, as if praying.(?) She made no move, but her eyes were huge.

He drew his eyebrows together, frowning: "What are you doing? Praying?"

She beckoned him with her hand, urging him: "Come quickly, take a look at this spot."

Accordingly, Xiao Yu'er crouched down beside her and looked. After a while he said, "There's nothing there, only…whoa, wait, there is something!"

He had suddenly noticed that the bark on the lower part of the tree was different from its upper half. It was thick and rough above; below it was shiny and smooth.

The girl pointed out, "Look here, the bark appears to be regularly touched by

people. And why should they touch this spot? Clearly there is only one explanation…there must be a door in this tree.”

Xiao Yu’er’s face lit up. He returned her compliment from before: “Not only is your brain clever, but your eyes are observant.”

She teased back, “Thank you, thank you.”

He winked at her, then knocked on the tree a few times, laughing: “Is anybody home?”

End of Chapter 27

Chapter 17

Chapter 28

The Legendary Siblings Chapter 28

Xiao Yu’er had an odd habit. He liked to make jokes at any time, and no matter where he was. But this particular joke wasn’t exactly purposeless either; he wished to see if the tree was hollow or solid.

Never in his dreams would he have guessed that he would get a response. Indeed, no one answered him, but the piece of bark suddenly moved aside, and in the middle of a live tree, there unexpectedly appeared a doorway!

This was quite a shock to Xiao Yu’er. He was so startled that he flew backwards out of the doorway. The girl in green was also surprised; she fell to her knees, unable to move.

The tree was indeed hollow. Xiao Yu’er stared into the black hole and called loudly, “Is anyone in here? Ghost or human, I want you to come out right now.”

Not a sound or reply. He advanced step by step. His fists were clenched so tightly that the knuckles were white. (?) His eyes, already wide, grew even bigger and rounder.

The girl in green said to him in a trembling voice, “Don’t go in, we don’t know what’s in there.”

Xiao Yu’er said firmly, “What’s there to be scared of? Anything that’s sneaking around is nothing to be scared of, otherwise it wouldn’t be hiding from us!”

She asked, “You…are you going in?”

His body shrank back a bit. He stuttered, “Go…go in…” But then he coughed and shouted, “Of course I’m going in, this is the only lead we have. How could I not investigate it properly?”

Suddenly, a wonderful fragrance wafted outside from within.

It smelled like chicken cooking in a pot, simmering in sauces and fragrant spices.

Xiao Yu’er’s nose twitched. Right now to him this was the best smell in the world. He drooled and swallowed a few times, then cried out: “There must be people inside, ghosts don’t eat chicken. Monsters might eat chicken, but they wouldn’t cook it…therefore there’s nothing to be scared of.”

These words appeared to be spoken to reassure the girl in green, or maybe they were for his own sake. Her voice shook: “Please be careful if you insist on going in.”

He said loudly, “Of course I’ll be careful, I’m careful in all things, otherwise how would I have lived this long?” As he spoke, he scooped up a stone from the bottom of the tree and flung it into the opening.

They heard a “kwa” sound as it hit something. Xiao Yu’er observed, “This hole isn’t very big.”

The girl in green gently praised him, “You really are the most cautious person I’ve met.”

Xiao Yu’er unconsciously puffed out his chest and said: “You stay here and wait for me. I’m going to take a look.”

In a quavering voice she protested, “No…no wait. How could I wait outside all alone? I’d be scared to death. I’m coming with you, with you by my side, I’ll feel

safe.”

Xiao Yu’er looked into her eyes. Finally he said, “Ai, women, women…all right, follow me then. Hold on tight and don’t stray.”

She murmured, “I wouldn’t stray if you beat me with a whip.” Xiao Yu’er felt as if he were floating on air as he stepped inside.

The interior of the tree was indeed hollow. Although it was not large, it was quite dark.

The girl in green clung tightly to Xiao Yu’er. Her voice shook: “Strange, there’s not a single person here.”

“No, there must be someone here,” Xiao Yu’er insisted.

She said, puzzled, “This place can only be so big, where could they be?”

The tree’s diameter only spanned five metres. There wasn’t a single place to hide in it.

Xiao Yu’er drew his eyebrows together. “That’s really odd. Where did that chicken smell come from?”

“It seems to be coming from below,” the girl in green realized.

Upon her words, the ground beneath their feet began to sink. The girl in green threw herself into Xiao Yu’er’s arms. In a trembling voice she whispered, “What’s happening? What are we going to do?”

Xiao Yu’er’s eyes were wide. He cried out loudly, “Don’t be scared, we may as well go down and take a look.”

They continued to descend. They were surrounded by blackness. Apparently they were standing in some sort of tube, one that could go up and down. The girl

in green clutched Xiao Yu'er's hand tightly. Her hand was damp and cold. This cold blooded killer, reduced to such a state, was actually quite surprising.

The 'tube' finally stopped. Xiao Yu'er opened his eyes and saw a door. A few rays of light shone from behind it into the tube.

He crouched down, and with a "shhh" he squirmed out. Outside there was a tunnel. On either side the stone walls were intricately carved, and there were bronze torches set into the walls.

Xiao Yu'er muttered, "This bastard sure knows how to treat himself. What a luxurious place. The owner of this place is no monster, but to call him a monster would be quite fitting."

He turned his head to tell the girl in green to come out. Just then she screamed in pain. The door to the metal tube had suddenly shut itself, and the tube was going down. Her cries could be heard coming from the tube as it descended.

Xiao Yu'er heard her scream: "Fire…help me, save me…fire…." He quickly tried to pull, but there was no way he could stop that big metal tube from moving. He decided to jump in after the tube, but at that moment it stopped moving. He could still hear the girl in green shrieking: "Fire…oh I beg you, save me…fire…"

Her yells made Xiao Yu'er break out in a cold sweat. He struck out with his fists and legs, trying to break through the roof of the metal tube, but it was made of well-tempered steel. He exhausted his energy in vain.

Her cries grew weaker and weaker. "Please…I'm going to die…help me…" Suddenly the sounds stopped. Then, a deathly silence.

Xiao Yu'er's fists also stopped. He stood there stunned. The girl in green had been burned to death in the metal tube!

Although she had been vicious, and they were not related in any way, she had still fully trusted her life to him. Having ended up like this, one could only say that she picked the wrong hero, she had chosen poorly indeed…

Xiao Yu’er’s eyes were damp. He suddenly yelled, “Listen to me, I don’t care who you are. You can’t scare me, and you won’t kill me either. I am going to murder you!”

No answer came from the tunnel. Xiao Yu’er gritted his teeth and boldly advanced.

The tunnel was short. At its end was another door, engraved with a scene of people and flowers and grass. This underground tunnel must have taken a lot of time, effort and money to create. The owner must be a strange person, to want to build such an elaborate structure underground.

The door was unlocked. With one hand he pushed it open.

He didn’t know why he was being so bold. Perhaps he felt he was invincible. If he was going to die, he would have been burnt to death just now like the girl in green. He felt somehow that the owner of this place didn’t want to kill him. He had no idea why.

He didn’t think much more beyond that. This was the secret to his thinking. Just focus on one thought, and don’t worry too much about other things. Otherwise you just got mixed up.

A hall lay beyond the door. Since even the tunnel was fancy, the hall was naturally even more lavish. Aside from not having windows, this underground hall was more than comparable with the houses of the gentry above ground. Luxurious though it was, no one was in it.

Xiao Yu’er remarked, “Well the owner might be a monster but he sure knew how to live the life. If he let this place be all dark and cold, it would scare off enemies, but he wouldn’t be enjoying it either.”

A peal of laughter suddenly sounded: “How well you know the master of this place.”

The voice was male, but the slow, gentle tone was very feminine. Xiao Yu'er turned around but still saw no one. He shouted: "Who are you? And where are you?"

The voice answered, "You can't see me, but I can certainly see you."

Although Xiao Yu'er couldn't see anyone, he did see another door. He crossed over in huge strides and pushed it open. Yet another hall.

In the centre of the hall was a long table. The table held a large blue bowl, which was the source of the fragrance that had attracted him here. In the bowl, there was indeed cooked chicken, young and tender.

His eyes grew round. The voice said slowly, "Jiang Yu, this chicken is very nice, it was especially prepared for you."

Xiao Yu'er shook. He cried out: "You…how do you know my name?"

The voice laughed, "The master of this place knows everything."

"Who are you exactly?" Xiao Yu'er asked again.

The voice replied, "How do you know we are human?"

Xiao Yu'er stepped backward in alarm. Finally he said, "What do you want from me?"

The voice said, "Fine, we will show ourselves. Put on the blindfold in front of you first."

Xiao Yu'er did as instructed, then said, "Hmm."

The voice teased, "How do you know you are living and not dead? A person or a ghost? Now, open your eyes and look."

As he spoke, torches flared up everywhere. Suddenly Xiao Yu'er saw that there were seven or eight people in chairs sitting around him.

They were dressed in large, flowing robes. Their ages seemed to be about twenty years old or so. Each person was elegant and refined in appearance.

All of them were men, but somehow they seemed feminine as well. They all lounged on their chairs as if draped across them, and smiled lazily at Xiao Yu'er.

He asked, "You are the masters of this place?"

They shook their heads simultaneously. All of them seemed to be delicate and soft, not a bone in their bodies. Although they were alive, they weren't far off from being dead.

Xiao Yu'er hollered in frustration: "Who is your master? Why won't he come out and see me? If he's like you androgynous freaks, half alive and half dead, I'd rather not meet him."

One of them said, "I wouldn't be mocking us if I were you. In three months time, you'll be just like us."

Xiao Yu'er jeered, "I don't think so."

The speaker smiled and retorted, "You don't think so? You have a strong body, but you can't beat her."

Xiao Yu'er echoed, "Her? Who is she?"

"She is our empress."

He heard a ripple of laughter like a silvery bell: "I am, indeed, the empress of this place!"

That particular laugh was very familiar to Xiao Yu'er. He turned, and saw her.

The girl in green, who apparently had been burned alive.

Xiao Yu'er stood there, stunned, his staring eyes larger than a chicken's egg.

The girl in green laughed "ge ge" while gazing at him. She quoted him, "Oh, the most intelligent man in the world, no one can fool you, can they?"

His eyes were still fixed on her in shock. "No wonder the two bodies disappeared. No wonder you found the tree entrance so easily. Because you are the master of this place…you…you have really tricked me this time."

"Now do you respect me?" she teased.

He sighed, "I do indeed…like I said before, you can lure people to their deaths. What I didn't know was that you came from the underground."

She spun around in a circle, her arms apart, and laughed, "What do you think of my palace?"

"Not bad, not bad at all," he complimented her.

Her eyes flickered over to his, and asked, "And what do you think of my concubines?"

Xiao Yu'er's eyes widened at her words.

She giggled sweetly, "If a man can have three wives and four brides, why can't a woman?"

He smiled wryly, then suddenly grasped her meaning, and said with wide eyes, "You mean…you mean that I am also to be one of your concubines?"

The girl in green looked at him, and smiled: "Wrong."

Xiao Yu’er sighed in relief, but stopped short as she said, “I want you to be my queen.”

Xiao Yu’er stood there stunned, then broke into laughter. He laughed until he became quite breathless, he had never laughed so hard in his life before.

The girl in green said, “Aren’t you happy?”

He laughed even louder, “Oh, I’m happy, I’m thrilled to death! I have imagined all manner of crazy possibilities, but I would never have dreamed that one day I would be a queen.”

“Why, you are not willing?” the girl in green teased.

Xiao Yu’er opened his eyes wide and said, “Why wouldn’t I be willing? How many men on this earth could be a queen?”

He suddenly leapt up, sat on the table(?), and commanded in a loud voice, “Hey, aren’t you all going to come over and bow to your new queen?”

The youths dressed in light robes looked at each other, hesitated, then finally shuffled over. Xiao Yu’er said, “Oh, about three kowtows each should be sufficient, not too many.”

The youths all looked over at the girl in green, who just smiled and nodded encouragement. At this point they had no choice but to kowtow.

Xiao Yu’er joked, “Well, now you’ve finished paying your respects, you may leave. Go on now, I’ve got to have a few drinks with the king…I hope none of the royal concubines are thinking of competing for his affections, because the queen will get jealous and chop your heads off.”

The youths all stared at him as if he were a monster. Without a word they all fled as one and disappeared.

Xiao Yu’er clapped his hands and laughed, “Fantastic, being a queen feels pretty good after all.”

Doubled over, the girl in green was laughing so hard that she could not lift her head. Still giggling she said, “Oh, you little flirt, you entertain me. I have been here for over ten years and never have I been more amused.”

Laughing with her, Xiao Yu’er said, “Well from now on, every day I’ll amuse you, until you die of it. Yes, you are called “the Siren, luring men to death with impunity”, and for good reason, but I still intend to charm you to your death.”

The laughter died in her throat. Her eyes wide, she looked at him and stammered: “How…how did you know my name?”

“Not only do I know this name of yours,” Xiao Yu’er went on, “I know that you are also called Xiao Mimi, of the ‘Ten Evils’. (1) You appear to be graceful and tender, but actually you are already four or five decades old. But don’t worry, I won’t be repulsed by your age. The older the ginger, the more bite it has; the more mature a woman, the more I appreciate her.”

He went on and on like a machine gun, while the girl in green stood motionless in her shock.

“Don’t just stand there,” Xiao Yu’er teased her. “One moment in a spring evening is worth a thousand pieces of gold, you should come over and show your queen just how intimate you can be.”

Still, she stared at him. At last she said slowly, “But you were inaccurate regarding one thing.”

“What’s that?”

“I am only thirty seven.”

Xiao Yu’er replied with amusement in his eyes: “It doesn’t matter if you are seventeen. ‘Never debate with a woman about her age’ – I’ve understood this

since I was young.”

The girl in green retorted, “It doesn’t matter if you make any other mistake. But if you get a woman’s age wrong, she will never forgive you.”

Her hands were soft and tender, as was her smile.

Yet somehow a murderous expression shone through her smile. Those soft hands, could, in a flash, cruelly take someone’s life. Xiao Yu’er, of course, knew this well.

However, he insisted on playing dumb, and laughing he asked, “I know who you are, but do you know who I am?”

Her eyes darting back and forth, Xiao Mimi realized: “You…”

Xiao Yu’er declared, “If the ‘Ten Evils’ had one friend, it would be me, Jiang Yu.”

She said, “You dare to call yourself a friend of the ‘Ten Evils’?”

He laughed, “What, you think I am a person of upstanding and moral character?”

Xiao Mimi smiled sweetly: “Well, that you are certainly not. But you are far too young to be that smart. I think you…you must be sent here by that old monster, are you not? Otherwise how could you know who I am?”

Xiao Yu’er admitted, “Well, I do indeed know quite a few monsters.”

“Quite a few?” she echoed.

He winked at her, and then laughing he said: “ ‘Ha ha, this little monk here never follows evil, amitaba. ‘Those who follow evil must die.’ ‘When you kill, be careful, don’t spill too much blood, or the meat will not taste fresh.’ ‘Under the

gates of hell, there are too many hungry ghosts. The ghosts would eat even unfresh meat.' 'Oh you, silly, you are definitely a wicked one.' ."

As he quoted these phrases, there appeared the impressions of Ha ha'er, "Bloody Hand" Du Sha, "Not eating the head" Li Dazhui, "Half human, half ghost" Yin Jiuyou, "Neither male nor female", Du Qiaoqiao. The tones and articulations were exactly identical to each of the original speakers. It was as if they had appeared and were speaking in person. (?)

Xiao Mimi widened her eyes, then laughed sweetly, "Little flirt, you know all of these people?"

"I grew up in the Valley of Evil," Xiao Yu'er told her.

Xiao Mimi lowered her hands and relaxed. She applauded him and laughed, "Well no wonder that you are a little monster then, you grew up with these people. Do they mention me often?"

He smiled at her: "They told me that when I met you, to be extremely careful and not be tempted to my death. No matter who, friend or family, you would try your siren tricks on them."

Xiao Mimi giggled a few times, then said, "And do you believe their naughty words?"

Xiao Yu'er stared at her as if enthralled: "To be able to meet someone like you, I wouldn't care if I really were lured to my death."

Another enchanting laugh. "Oh, little flirt, it is you who are charming me; at this rate, I won't be able to kill you at all."

He laughed back: "Now, are you going to drink with me or not?"

Surprisingly, the winebearer was a young boy. His eyebrows were elegant above clear, clear eyes. And yet he was jaundiced and emaciated, as if his growth spurt had been inadequate. He appeared to be older than Xiao Yu'er, yet his

body was quite a bit smaller.

He shrank his neck into a hunched back and carried the platter with both hands, trembling all the while. But his two eyes would constantly flicker back to rest on Xiao Mimi's bosom.

Xiao Mimi laughed and called, "Little pervert, what are you looking at?"

The boy's face reddened and he lowered his head. "Nothing, nothing at all."

With a tempting smile, she said, "You wanted to kiss me, is that it?"

He went a deeper shade of red as she said, "Come then, if you want to kiss me then come, what are you afraid of?"

The boy then set down the platter, and embraced her.

All of a sudden she slapped him with the back of her hand, so hard that he rolled on the floor a few times. Xiao Yu'er raised his head in time to see a murderous expression on the boy's face as his back was turned. The hate on his face was terrifying.

Yet when he stood up and faced her, only a pitiable expression could be seen. His cheeks flushed and head down, step by step, he slowly limped out, as if even walking were a difficult task.

"Is that boy one of your concubines?" Xiao Yu'er asked.

Xiao Mimi smiled: "Jealous, are you?"

He merely said, "Ai, this is like destroying a tender young plant."

She bit out, "I insist on torturing him, until he dies." Xiao Yu'er said in surprise, "Why do you hate him so much? He's only a kid!"

Xiao Mimi explained, “He is, but his father…ha, in the whole world, there is not another as vicious and cruel.”

“Oh?” Xiao Yu’er laughed. “He is crueler than Yin Jiuyou? More vicious than Li Dazhui?”

She pointed out: “So Yin Jiuyou is cruel. Li Dazhui is indeed vicious. But they at least do not hide their brutality. That brat’s father, however, would commit the most evil crimes, and people would still praise him as a hero.”

Xiao Yu’er rolled his eyes and laughed: “If even you call him evil, this person must really be unforgivable.” What his heart was really thinking was: [If she considers him bad, he probably is quite a decent sort.]

He deliberately refrained from asking the father’s name. To his surprise, Xiao Mimi did not mention it either, and merely watched the boy come in again with a fresh platter.

Xiao Yu’er suddenly said, “Before we drink, I just need to freshen up a bit.”

“Useless thing,” she scolded him while sipping her wine.

He teased, “When the queen relieves herself, she must have servants to attend to her.”(?) He tugged at the boy’s hand and ordered, “Come, lead me there.”

Xiao Mimi called after him: “Hurry up, or I’ll be done eating before you’re done. (?) The wine and food are waiting here for you.”

The young boy went ahead of Xiao Yu’er, his head lowered and neck shrunk into his shoulders like a turtle. Xiao Yu’er, looking at his profile, seemed to be thinking of something.

The underground palace was clearly designed with care. There was not an inch of excess or waste. He realized that the places for relieving oneself must be in the twists and turns of the long tunnel.

Abruptly he asked the young boy, “Hey, what’s your family name?”

“Jiang.”

Xiao Yu’er mused, “Your last name is Jiang? What a coincidence. And what’s your first name?”

The boy replied, “Yulang.”

Xiao Yu’er scrunched his eyebrows together. His eyes darted back and forth. Suddenly he laughed aloud. “Strange, this is the underground, but where do all the human wastes go? Is there some sort of tunnel underneath?”

Jiang Yulang answered, “Under here is not a tunnel, but a grave.”

“A grave?” Xiao Yu’er repeated. “Whose grave?”

“Supposedly the grave of the workers who built this place,” Jiang Yulang responded.

Xiao Yu’er couldn’t help frowning. Hurriedly he stood up and remarked, “You know quite a bit, you must have been here for a long time.”

“One year,” said Jiang Yulang.

“A year…how did you get here?”

Jiang Yulang answered him, “And how did you get here?”

Xiao Yu’er snorted a laugh: “Hmm, that’s right, Xiao Mimi would definitely find a way to get you here.” He spoke again: “There must be some sort of underground opening to the surface…would you know?”

“No.”

“You haven’t tried to find one?” Xiao Yu’er inquired.

“No,” Jiang Yulang said again.

Xiao Yu’er asked him, “Don’t you want to leave here? You don’t want to go home?”

Jiang Yulang said, “This place is very nice, it’s good enough for me.”

Suddenly Xiao Yu’er gripped his shoulder and said in a low voice, “You little trickster, I know you’re thinking about it, you’re always thinking of ways to escape. You can’t fool me. If you work with me, we can think of a way out!”

End of Chapter 28

Chapter 18

Chapter 29

Jiang Yulang's face was expressionless. Flatly he said, "If you are finished, please return to enjoy your wine."

Xiao Yu'er stared at him. For quite some time. Finally he said, each word distinct, "Remember what I said, don't you forget a word!"

Jiang Yulang remained impassive, and led him back, with his head lowered and back hunched. Once again Xiao Yu'er stared at his back, as if contemplating something.

The two of them re-entered. Xiao Mimi laughed: "It appears you had a lot of business to do."

Xiao Yu'er rubbed his stomach, and gave a laugh: "Well, this stomach of mine…"

Jiang Yulang abruptly cut in: "He was lying about relieving himself. He wanted me to conspire with him. He wanted me to tell him a way out of here, and even asked me to escape with him."

Xiao Mimi opened her eyes wide. Coldly she laughed, "Did you really want to leave, Jiang Yu? Forget asking him; I would have easily told you."

Xiao Yu'er did not react, but merely burst into laughter. He said, "I have lived in the Valley of Evil for over a decade. How could this place be harder to escape from? I was only testing this little devil here, do you really believe him?"

She slowly replied, “Actually, it doesn’t matter if you lied or not. It would still be useless to ask him. No one knows the exit to this place, except for me.”

She patted Jiang Yulang on the head, smiling: “I didn’t know you were so honest.”

Jiang Yulang blushed. With eyes on the ground he murmured, “I only wish to be by my lady’s side. I don’t want to go anywhere else.”

Xiao Mimi laughed, pleased. “You little pervert, go to bed and rest, don’t think of silly things now.”

He glanced at Xiao Yu’er, protesting: “But he…my lady…”

“You want me to kill him?” Xiao Mimi asked.

Jiang Yulang said, “He…he’s too…” Xiao Mimi teasingly tugged his earlobe, and chuckled, “I don’t think you should be the one to be jealous. Get out of here.”

He lowered his head, turned around, and obediently left. Xiao Mimi didn’t spare him another glance; this little devil was nothing to her. No matter what tricks he tried to play, she could see right through him. She only had eyes for another little devil.

With a smile on his face, Xiao Yu’er said, “What a little rascal he is.”

Xiao Mimi countered: “If he’s a little rascal, you must be even worse.”

“You think I can’t compare to him?” Xiao Yu’er asked.

Xiao Mimi’s eyes crinkled in amusement: “Do you know why I haven’t killed you?”

“Because you can’t bear to,” he teased.

With a peal of laughter, she admitted, “That’s right. I can’t bear to kill you right now, I want to see just how good you are. Du Qiaoqiao must have taught you some devilry, and I…I want to try it.”

She slowly slid across the soft couch.(?) Desire flushed across her cheeks and forehead. Gently she murmured: “Won’t you come over? Are you waiting for me to teach you?”

Xiao Yu’er’s eyes darted back and forth, a smile on his face.

Xiao Mimi said in a low voice, “Well? What are you waiting for?”

He said, “It’s just that…”

Before he could finish his sentence, he was interrupted by Jiang Yulang rushing in. His face was drained of colour. In a trembling voice he said: “My…my lady, something’s wrong!”

“What are you doing?” Xiao Mimi snapped crossly.

Jiang Yulang stammered, “Dead…they are all dead.”

Her expression changed. “Who is dead?” Jiang Yulang could only say: “You… please come quickly…they…they…” He collapsed on the floor in a dead faint.

Corpses. Everywhere there were dead bodies. The crowd of youths dressed in light robes, not one of them remained alive.

Upon turning their faces, they found that some had exsanguinated from the seven orifices,(1) and some had been mutilated beyond recognition(?). Even Xiao Yu’er, normally calm and collected under most circumstances, felt a chill seep into his heart.

Xiao Mimi stamped her foot in shock and anger: “How…how did this happen?”

Xiao Yu’er’s eyes flickered back and forth as he realized: “Perhaps the old monster has secretly arrived.”

“Impossible, that is not possible!” Xiao Mimi declared. “No one knows about this place.”

Although her lips said “impossible”, she had already dashed outside. Suddenly she turned back and screamed: “Don’t you dare follow, or I’ll kill you!”

Xiao Yu’er laughed sarcastically, “Don’t worry, of course I know I won’t live long if I eavesdrop on your secrets. I still wish to live a while yet…”

No sooner had she rushed out the front door, Xiao Yu’er had reached the back entrance. Although he knew that Xiao Mimi was leaving by the secret entrance, he did not follow to find out where it was. The only reason was because he wanted to spy on another person’s secret!

He crouched on the floor, and opened half an eye. He saw Jiang Yulang suddenly arise from his swoon on the ground, and open an eye to survey his surroundings. He did not see Xiao Yu’er hiding there. Xiao Yu’er quietly breathed and did not move.

Suddenly Jiang Yulang called out, “Young master Jiang, Jiang Yu, you can come out now.”

Xiao Yu’er’s heart jumped. But he gritted his teeth and did not make a sound. Jiang Yulang waited a while, then jumped up. Unexpectedly he became swifter than a swallow in his movements, more slippery than a fish, livelier than a fox. With a flash, he darted into a small door to the side.

The small door was the place where he had taken Xiao Yu’er to relieve himself. Xiao Yu’er had oriented himself properly, and as soon as Jiang Yulang disappeared into the door, he followed and stared at that little door with half an eye.

He saw Jiang Yulang trying to squirm headfirst into the toilet. Xiao Yu’er, also

swallow-like in his speed, crossed over. Jiang Yulang had lifted the lid of the toilet and plunged into it.

Suddenly his waist went numb, and the waistband of his pants was grasped by someone. He heard Xiao Yu'er laugh mockingly: "Well well well…trying to escape by yourself, that won't do."

This time his face was truly pale from fear. His voice shook: "Please…please don't kid around with me."

Xiao Yu'er burst into cold laughter: "Who's kidding? Seriously now, what do you think you're doing?"

Jiang Yulang stammered, "I…I just had to use the toilet."

"Dog crap," Xiao Yu'er said flatly. "You don't need to dive into the pile of crap to relieve yourself!"

"I…I wanted to…"

Suppressing his laughter, Xiao Yu'er guessed: "You wanted to eat sh*t?"

Jiang Yulang mumbled, "I heard that feces could be used to cleanse poisons from the body. I am poisoned, so therefore…" Xiao Yu'er chuckled mirthlessly: "You little devil, you've got quite a tongue, but don't think you can fool me. If you don't tell me the truth now, I'll drag you in front of Xiao Mimi. And I'll tell her that you killed all these people!"

Jiang Yulang began to involuntarily twitch, all over his body. "No…no I didn't…"

Xiao Yu'er said: "You killed them to divert Xiao Mimi, then you planned to hide in a secret place. When she finally gave up searching for you, you would then sneak out!"

"You…you…" was all Jiang Yulang could say.

Xiao Yu’er added, “What a little fiend; you really deserve to drink the used water from my footbaths. Tell you the truth-I saw through you a long time ago – if you want to escape alive, you’d better be a good boy and co-operate with me.”

Jiang Yulang let out a sigh, then said, “All right, you win. You were right, my hiding place is in the pile of crap. I wasted an entire year to dig it.”

Xiao Yu’er whistled: “Amazing, that you could have a hiding place here. You’re not afraid of the stink?”

“It’s not too smelly that I can’t use it to save my life,” Jiang Yulang retorted.

“I’ve seen many villains in my time,” Xiao Yu’er remarked, “but one so patient and ruthless, I have never met before, little devil. I have to say, I can’t help but admire you.”

Jiang Yulang interrupted him, “Quick, we’re running out of time. Let me go, I’ll lead you!”

Smiling, Xiao Yu’er let go of his hand and said, “If you clean it up a bit, I’ll…”

His words were cut short, Jiang Yulang suddenly kicked out with his two feet. His kicks were truly vicious and accurate; which was surprising since he didn’t appear to have such advanced martial arts.

Unfortunately, Xiao Yu’er had already accounted for that possibility. As soon as Jiang Yulang kicked again, the acupoints on his waist were all sealed. The entire lower half of his body was effectively paralyzed.

Xiao Yu’er sneered again: “Didn’t I already tell you, you can’t trick me. Be a good boy and crawl along now.”

Jiang Yulang’s voice trembled: “But I…I can’t move.”

“That’s all right,” Xiao Yu’er said. “You can’t move your legs, but you can pull yourself with your hands!”

Jiang Yulang fell silent and obediently scrabbled along with his arms.

The toilet was already designed with an underground drainage tunnel of sorts. What Jiang Yulang had done was scrape out a little tunnel branching out from it, large enough to accommodate his body. He moved along like a young snake.

Xiao Yu’er plugged his nose and followed. Luckily the stench disappeared after a short distance. He could only smile ironically and say: “And they call me a little monster. I think the little monster is you. Unbelievable, that you could think of this, and do such work in such a place.”

The small tunnel was only seven or eight feet long, and at its end there was a tiny room, which was only about seven or eight square feet in size. But inside, Jiang Yulang had set up four or five blankets, two tubs of water, one jar of wine, and a big pile of salted meat, preserved sausages, cakes, and there were also about ten books.

Xiao Yu’er looked and looked. He couldn’t help repeating himself: “You sure put a lot of effort into this, you’ve thought of every detail.” Jiang Yulang crouched in a corner, peering at him. His eyes were like those of a snake, they flickered with a poisonous, hateful, and devious light.

Xiao Yu’er looked back at him. He didn’t care if Jiang Yulang was a snake or a fox or even a slippery fish. Xiao Yu’er had never been afraid of evil people; the more evil they were, the more interesting he found them.

It was so still and lonely here underground, which was hard to bear, but at least it was safe. He leisurely flung himself onto a blanket and grabbed a sausage for himself. He sniffed at it and took a bite. The taste was pretty good, not bad at all.

Xiao Yu’er joked, “Hiding in a pile of crap, eating sausages in a pile of crap… Jiang Yulang you are really a genius.”

Jiang Yulang lowered his eyelids. He mumbled to himself, “Genius! Genius…”

“Carving out a hiding spot from a sewage drain is a pretty brilliant idea, only a really smart person would have thought of it,” Xiao Yu’er praised, laughing. “No matter how close an eye Xiao Mimi kept on you, she would never follow you around when you went to the bathroom.”

Jiang Yulang said glumly, “That’s right, it really is a genius idea. But after coming up with such an intelligent plan, do you know what price I had to pay, what agonies I had to suffer, could you even imagine?”

“Go ahead, tell me,” Xiao Yu’er said. “I enjoy hearing of others’ miseries.”

“All you would know about is the need for secrecy while pretending to defecate and digging this place,” Jiang Yulang spat out. “But could you imagine how many times I would have to sh*t in order to dig this kind of a hole?”

Xiao Yu’er agreed, “Hmm, it would take quite a few times.”

“Have you ever counted how many times a person goes in a day?” Jiang Yulang went on. “How many chances I would have in a year? If you crap too often, wouldn’t that make others suspicious?”

Scratching his head, Xiao Yu’er mused, “Mmm…that would…”

Jiang Yulang continued, “Just think of a person, digging like crazy while he was supposed to be crapping. But where would his crap go? Would he just hold it in forever and never go?”

Xiao Yu’er scratched his head again. He could only laugh wryly: “Hmm…that would be quite a difficulty. If you really took a sh*t while you were excused to go to the bathroom, you wouldn’t have time to dig your tunnel. But if you spent all your time digging, you wouldn’t be able to crap. So what did you do?”

Jiang Yulang laughed bitterly. He said, “What I did, you could never imagine. A fancy lord like you, could never dream of what a slave like me had to go

through.”

His eyes widened, and he gritted his teeth. The words fell one by one from his lips: “I became like a dog. I crapped as I worked. I couldn’t waste a second in the toilet. I learned to strip off my clothes in the shortest time possible, once inside the bathroom. I almost froze to death half the time, but I had to stay there naked. I couldn’t dirty my clothes with the sh*t and mud, and arouse suspicion. But my body was covered in it.”

His lips stopped moving, and trembled, as if he wanted to vomit. Xiao Yu’er felt a strange emotion in his heart, and he tossed aside his half eaten sausage. He wanted to say something, but after a while, no words came out.

Jiang Yulang’s eyes were fixed on the piece of discarded sausage, and slowly said, “Do you know why I’m so scrawny?”

Xiao Yu’er said, “You…ummm…you…”

Jiang Yulang ground his teeth and snarled, “I’m skinny because I was forced to starve myself. To reduce the amount of crap I had to sh*t out every day. To save up food for this place.”

His teeth flashed white behind his lips as he gave a shrill laugh: “This was the life of a genius for a year. One whole year living like a dog, to get this place. And you! You haven’t done a thing, and you’re lying here ever so comfortable.”

Xiao Yu’er was still rubbing his head. Suddenly he smiled. “You want to know why?”

“Tell me,” Jiang Yulang hissed.

“Let me tell you,” Xiao Yu’er said, laughing, “this is because you are a genius. But I am a genius among geniuses. Someone as brilliant as me, would never be reduced to suffering like this.”

Jiang Yulang stared at him for a long while. Finally he lowered his head,

muttering, “You’re right, I am definitely not your equal. You are brilliant!”

What should have been a compliment, somehow cast a chill through Xiao Yu’er’s body when he heard it. It sounded like he was spitting out a vicious curse. This stunted and pale youth, although perhaps not as clever as Xiao Yu’er, was far beyond him in terms of spitefulness and hatred.

This was especially true with respect to patience. Xiao Yu’er could never compare to this child. Patience was a virtue, but sometimes, if used the wrong way, it could be quite horrifying. Xiao Yu’er said no more.

He thought to himself: [If anyone in the world could be considered a rival for me, it would be this little fox.] But immediately he knew he was wrong. There was still another rival, and quite a formidable one at that!

Before his eyes flashed an image of an elegant, gentle and courteous figure. An ever considerate figure who never lost his temper.

Hua Wuque, a flawless gentleman. (2) He was not the least bit vicious, nor devious in any way. He seemed to be without evil intent. Aside from his martial arts, there appeared to be nothing worth fearing. But the type of person who seemed to have nothing worth fearing, was actually the one you should be most wary of. Hua Wuque was like an ocean, deep and vast, unfathomable.

Xiao Yu’er secretly sighed, and mumbled to himself, “That rascal is really an enigma. Anyone who can puzzle me, is not bad quality at all.”

Jiang Yulang looked at him, as if wanting to say something, but he restrained himself.

Xiao Yu’er saw him and laughed: “No, I wasn’t talking about you, I was thinking of someone else.”

“Oh,” said Jiang Yulang.

Xiao Yu’er mused, “The thing is, he doesn’t seem intelligent at all. But no

matter how smart you are, or what tricks you use, it's all useless against him. Because whatever strategy you try, he'll never fall for it. In the end, you somehow wind up the loser."

Jiang Yulang laughed indifferently: "I've never met that kind of person before…"

With a chuckle, Xiao Yu'er said, "Just you wait, as long as you live to get out of here, you will."

Despairingly, Jiang Yulang echoed him, "If only I live to get out of here…"

Suddenly his expression changed. His voice cracked: "Oh no."

Xiao Yu'er knew that if he was frightened, it must be something serious. Despite himself, his face also began to drain of colour. He said, "What is it?"

Jiang Yulang stammered, "You…did you replace the cover on top of the toilet after you entered the tunnel?"

With wide eyes Xiao Yu'er admitted, "Oh no, I didn't, I forgot."

His face pale, Jiang Yulang moaned, "When she finds us missing, Xiao Mimi will search everywhere, if she sees this…"

Xiao Yu'er smiled comfortingly, "Maybe you're too obsessive, do you really think she would look for us in the toilet?"

Jiang Yulang countered: "Of course I'm obsessive. Even a little mistake could cost me my life. Have you any idea of the depth of Xiao Mimi's martial arts?"

Xiao Yu'er laughed sarcastically: "It's precisely because I don't know how good she is, that's why I've never dared to cross her…when dealing with someone stupid, it doesn't matter how good their martial arts are. But she, on the other hand, she is a monster."

Sighing, Jiang Yulang explained, “You couldn’t even imagine the height of her abilities. According to rumour, she has had more than seven hundred lovers. Among them were disciples of the Famed Seven Swords. If each lover merely taught her a single stroke, that would be enough to make her terrifying.”

Xiao Yu’er’s eyes darted back and forth. Finally he said, “In that case, we should probably be very careful. I’ll sneak out and cover the lid back up.”

Jiang Yulang cut him off: “Wait.” As he spoke, he was listening with his ear pressed against the dirt wall. After a pause, he turned to Xiao Yu’er, ashen-faced. “Sh*t. She’s come back.”

End of Chapter 29

Chapter 19

Chapter 30

The Legendary Siblings

Xiao Yu’er pressed his ear to the dirt wall as well. Quietly he listened for sounds up above.

Xiao Mimi was indeed raging up there. Her yells of anger and curses were clearly audible, although he couldn’t make out her exact words, he could imagine.

Jiang Yulang said, “I’ve planned for this for so long. I figured that she would never figure out my hiding place. She would think I had escaped somehow. But that toilet cover…”

Xiao Yu’er comforted him, “She’s so mad right now, if I were her, the last thing I’d notice would be if the toilet lid was on or not.”

“Let’s hope that’s true,” Jiang Yulang said. He paused, then said, “As long as she doesn’t find us, she won’t stay long here. And if everyone’s dead, why would she stay in this place?”

Xiao Yu’er agreed: “Right, she would surely leave.”

“We’d just have to hide here at most for half a month,” Jiang Yulang guessed. “By that time she’ll have left for sure. Then we can walk out of here, free men, not worrying about her chasing us.”

“So you know about the secret exit?” Xiao Yu’er asked.

Smiling calmly, Jiang Yulang said, “There’s not a secret in the world that can be kept from everyone.”

Laughing, Xiao Yu’er said, “Good. We’ll wait our half month. Living underground for half a month, would be rather interesting. I dare say not many people have enjoyed such an experience.”

He flung himself down again, winked and laughed: “Only…I do apologize, but I cannot unseal your acupoints.”

“You…you really insist on this?” Jiang Yulang said.

Xiao Yu’er explained, “I can’t. You and I will be living together day and night, I really have some misgivings. I have to be on my guard.”

With a smile he went on, “By the way, I almost forgot to tell you, I sealed your acupoints in such a way that you will not be able to independently unseal them.”

This little hole was like a snake’s lair, and Jiang Yulang was the snake itself. Sleeping with a snake in its home; most people wouldn’t be able to get a wink.

Xiao Yu’er, however, did it easily. He gobbled up his preserved sausage, wolfed down some cake, and washed it all down with a bowl of wine. Cheeks red and belly full, he settled down nicely into a sweet slumber.

There was a torch set into the wall. Its light showed Xiao Yu’er’s pink cheeks clearly. Jiang Yulang stared at them for a while. He was secretly counting Xiao Yu’er’s breaths. He had already reached four thousand. Xiao Yu’er’s breaths were even and deep.

Jiang Yulang had already examined the meridians (?) on his own legs. The bastard wasn’t lying, he must have used some bewitched sealing technique from some d*mned sect. Now he was just lying there, sleeping happily, precisely because he knew Jiang Yulang wouldn’t dare kill him.

But Jiang Yulang quietly reached out his hands. Xiao Yu’er continued to sleep, and even began to snore lightly.

With eyes fixed on Xiao Yu’er, Jiang Yulang kept stretching his hands forward. Xiao Yu’er’s sounds grew louder.

Jiang Yulang’s hands suddenly found a book, and rapidly flipped its pages. There was a piece of folded paper sandwiched within the book. Jiang Yulang let out a breath, and took out the paper.

Lightly he set the book back, and carefully folded the paper even smaller. He thought for a bit. In the boots? No. Finally he settled on tucking it into his topknot. Now his pale face shone with a light.

Then he let out another breath, closed his eyes, and fell asleep.

On the instant, Xiao Yu’er’s eyes popped wide open. The torch in the wall showed Jiang Yulang’s pale cheeks clearly. Xiao Yu’er’s face betrayed a mocking smile.

His eyes seemed to say: [You cannot fool me, there is nothing in which you can fool me.]

Jiang Yulang’s breaths also grew even and deep. Silently Xiao Yu’er stood up. He also reached his hands out, and waved them about ten times in front of Jiang Yulang’s face. Still Jiang Yulang breathed steadily. He hadn’t noticed at all.

The little fox was very exhausted, and had truly fallen asleep. Xiao Yu’er slowly and lightly extended two fingers to pull at Jiang Yulang’s hair. However, he had not yet reached the hair when he changed direction. Now the fingers were aimed at Jiang Yulang’s “sleep” acupoint.

The sleeping Jiang Yulang suddenly sighed: “If you want to take it, go ahead. There’s hardly a need to seal another acupoint.”

Xiao Yu’er blinked, then burst into stunned laughter: “Ah, so you weren’t asleep.”

Jiang Yulang morosely pointed out: “Being with someone like you, how could I sleep at all?”

“But your acting abilities are superb,” Xiao Yu’er complimented him with a laugh. “Even I was tricked by you.”

“You’re not bad yourself,” Jiang Yulang snorted.

Xiao Yu’er laughed out loud: “Excellent! Well then…are you going to let me peek at what’s in your hair?”

Jiang Yulang smiled bitterly: “How could I refuse?” Meanwhile he drew out the long piece of paper. His fingertips shook. Obviously the piece of paper was very important to him, but still he took it out. With respect to matters in which he had no choice, Jiang Yulang never tried to resist.

He tossed it to Xiao Yu’er, then sighed deeply: “I must have been really evil in my former life, to be running into you.”

Xiao Yu’er’s heart was full of curiosity. What secret could be on that paper? By the way Jiang Yulang was acting, this could be no ordinary secret.

His heart hammering, he flipped open the paper. It took no more than a glance-he burst into giggles.

Jiang Yulang stared at him: “Smug, aren’t we?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed even harder, “Oh yes, certainly.”

“To be able to view this secret, of course you would be smug,” Jiang Yulang growled through gritted teeth. “Otherwise, you would never in one lifetime be able to see the treasures this paper has hidden.”

Xiao Yu’er gasped, “Oh yes, this paper is truly valuable indeed…” As he spoke, he tore the paper into shreds. Jiang Yulang got the shock of his life. His face went even paler, making him look terrifying. His voice trembled: “You…do you know how much this piece of paper is worth?”

Slowly Xiao Yu’er said, “Of course I know. I’ve seen this before. Not only that, but I had a copy of my own.”

Jiang Yulang was stunned. He repeated, “You…you also had a copy?”

“Not only did I possess a copy, I’ve also been to the hiding place of the treasure!”

Jiang Yulang’s valuable piece of paper, naturally, was identical to the one Tie Xinlan had given to Xiao Yu’er, the treasure map which had cost many lives.

Of course, Jiang Yulang could not know these details, and right now could only stand there in shock. “You…you are telling the truth? You have been there?”

“Why should I lie to you?” Xiao Yu’er retorted.

Jiang Yulang’s breathing became rapid and shallow. He stammered, “Then…the treasure…who has it now? Where is it?”

His eyes gleaming, Xiao Yu’er said, “You tell me how you got this map, and I’ll tell you.”

Jiang Yulang’s hands twisted tightly on his own clothing. He said, “If I tell you, you will really tell me?”

Xiao Yu’er reassured him, “If you tell me and I don’t tell you, then I’m a turtle.”

Sighing in relief, Jiang Yulang told him, “I stole the treasure map from my father’s study.”

“And where did your father get it from?” Xiao Yu’er persisted.

“This I really don’t know.”

“Hmm, that’s right,” Xiao Yu’er muttered, “I heard your father is quite a famous man. This map was probably a gift to him. Little did he guess what a good son he had.”

Sighing and shaking his head, he laughed, “Stealing even your father’s possessions, this type of filial son is rare indeed.”

Jiang Yulang’s face did not redden in the slightest. He said, “This is nothing, I…”

Xiao Yu’er cut in: “You wanted the treasure all for yourself, so you stole out secretly, and reached Mount Emei. Who knew you would then fall into Xiao Mimi’s hands. Luckily you did, or you may have been dead at this point.”

“Why?” Jiang Yulang asked curiously.

Xiao Yu’er went on, “Indeed, it was fortunate that your father had you for a thieving son, otherwise he would have fallen for a big trick.”

“Trick?” Jiang Yulang repeated.

“To tell you the truth,” Xiao Yu’er said, “the treasure map was a fake. It is worthless. The maker of the map merely wished any treasure seekers to kill themselves while fighting each other for it!”

Jiang Yulang was completely stunned. After a pause, he mumbled, “And who is the mapmaker?”

Xiao Yu’er said spitefully, “I don’t know either. But I will find them. Not for the sake of any greater good, but because this person has tricked me, and so I will make them pay.”

Jiang Yulang muttered, “No wonder you asked me where I got the map from, no wonder…”

Suddenly, sounds came up to them through the underground tunnel.

It was Xiao Mimi’s voice. She was hollering: “Jiang Yulang, Xiao Yu’er, you little rotten eggs, are you down there?”

Their hands turned to ice. Neither could move.

They heard her peals of laughter: “It doesn’t matter if you don’t make a sound, I already know you’re down there.”

Jiang Yulang said, trembling: “She…she’s trying to trick us.”

Xiao Yu’er disagreed: “I don’t think so. Right now she’s speaking directly into the toilet hole, or we wouldn’t hear her so clearly.”

“I told you that toilet cover would get us in trouble,” sighed Jiang Yulang.

Xiao Yu’er also sighed, “That woman is too much.”

They heard Xiao Mimi laughing again: “Jiang Yulang, what a genius, what an idea to escape using a sh*t hole.”

“Did you hear that, she called you a genius,” Xiao Yu’er teased.

Jiang Yulang asked, incredulous, “How can you even be laughing right now?”

“Think about it,” Xiao Yu’er said. “Why shouldn’t I be laughing?”

Jiang Yulang said: “Because…because you aren’t afraid of her?”

“That’s right,” Xiao Yu’er said. “No matter how powerful she is, as long as we stay here, she won’t dare to come in. And with her temperament, she won’t be waiting around out there either.”

After reflecting on it, Jiang Yulang also laughed: “Ah, that’s right, she doesn’t know what we’ve got in here. She won’t take the risk. Even if she waited out there, she won’t wait for very long. Eventually we’ll get a chance to escape.”

Xiao Mimi coaxed: “Come out, you little rotten eggs.”

Xiao Yu’er yelled back: “Why don’t you come in, you old rotten egg.”

She said, “So you’re really not coming out?”

“How about you coming in?” he replied.

“You’d rather stink yourselves to death?” Xiao Mimi said.

Xiao Yu’er laughed loudly: “Don’t you worry, we won’t die of the stench. It’s so nice and comfy here, there’s sausages, wine, are you sure you won’t join us for a drink or two?”

She joked back: “Even if you don’t care, I can’t bear the smell.” In a low voice she added, “Besides, I don’t even want you to come back up.”

“Really now?” chortled Xiao Yu’er.

Xiao Mimi explained, “If you come back up, I might kill you in a fit of anger. That would be too easy a death for you; I need you to die in a slow agony.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed even louder: “And how are you going to make us slowly…” His laughter suddenly died.

She was laughing now: “Go ahead, laugh, little rotten egg, why aren’t you laughing?”

Jiang Yulang's expression also changed. The two men yelled together: "Xiao Guniang, Miss Xiao…"

No response came up the tunnel. They looked at each other, their faces the colour of ash.

They heard a rumble, then a "wa la la" clattering and banging cacophony up the tunnel.

Jiang Yulang stammered, "It's over…"

Xiao Yu'er muttered: "Incredible…hell hath no fury like a woman scorned, I should have known she would do this."

"Well, now we don't have to worry about that toilet cover anymore," Jiang Yulang groaned.

Xiao Yu'er said loudly, "Well, she may have sealed up the entrance to the tunnel, but we could still dig our way out."

Sighing, Jiang Yulang said despairingly, "She meant to trap us in here. She would surely have fixed a metal barrier onto the toilet, or a stone lid or something..."

"So we'll just dig upward in another direction," Xiao Yu'er stubbornly insisted.

Jiang Yulang pointed out, "When this place was first constructed, it was designed to be water-resistant. Between us and the surface, there is a layer of stone about a foot thick."

A pause. Then Xiao Yu'er released Jiang Yulang's sealed acupoints with a flick of his wrist. He said, "I suppose you won't be trying anything funny…"

Jiang Yulang could only mumble: "Half a month…after that, we'll starve to

death in here.”

Xiao Yu’er slapped him heartily on the shoulder, then laughed loudly: “Come on, don’t give up, we’ve got at least half a month’s life to live then…I should have died so many times before now, this half a month is practically a gift.”

Although he was laughing, his laughter was harsh and grated on their ears.

Jiang Yulang had not moved for three hours.

He was just sitting there, staring at nothing, in a daze, thinking about he knew not what. Xiao Yu’er opened the wine jar, and called to him eight times, but was ignored.

So Xiao Yu’er had to drink by himself. He drank a mouthful and laughed. Another gulp, then a sigh. He muttered, “Refusing to drink when at death’s door, that person must be an idiot.” Jiang Yulang stared at him without a word.

Xiao Yu’er continued to rant: “My only regret is, we’re dying a bit too soon. In fact I really regret it now, I should have enjoyed that body of Xiao Mimi’s. Ai, to not enjoy the fairer sex, what a positive waste of youth…”

Swaying, he got to his feet, and went to swipe another link of sausage.

Jiang Yulang snapped coldly: “You’re drunk.”

Laughing, Xiao Yu’er shot back: “Well, drinking yourself to death is a much better way to go than dying of starvation.”

Suddenly Jiang Yulang sprang up, and struck out with a palm. His body was light, and his hand was quick-this stroke was meant to take Xiao Yu’er’s life!

End of Chapter 30

Chapter 20

Chapter 31

The Legendary Siblings

The torchlight flickered before Xiao Yu'er's eyes. Instantly he shifted and parried Jiang Yulang's palm. Both of them were flung against the earthen wall from the shock.

Xiao Yu'er cried out with bulging eyes: "You…you want to kill me?"

"Of course."

"If you're going to die anyway," Xiao Yu'er protested, "why bother…"

Jiang Yulang explained, "These supplies would only last me a month. With you, I have one less half month to live. By killing you, I save half a month."

Incredulously Xiao Yu'er sputtered: "You would kill me for one more day of life?"

"I would kill you for one hour's worth!" hooted Jiang Yulang.

Xiao Yu'er snickered: "I knew you were a bad one, but I had no idea just how evil. You have got to be number one when it comes to being evil."

"And you?" Jiang Yulang retorted.

“Compared with you,” Xiao Yu’er asserted, “I’m like an old granny on a vegetarian diet.”

He had hardly finished speaking, when his hands flashed before Jiang Yulang. Because this cave was so small, he hardly needed to move before he had reached Jiang Yulang’s face.

Perhaps Xiao Yu’er had struck out too quickly, or maybe Jiang Yulang had not anticipated an offensive move from him. In any case, Jiang Yulang had no time to dodge at all before he was soundly smacked. With a “pak” sound, half of Jiang Yulang’s face turned crimson, and he crumpled to the floor.

Xiao Yu’er laughingly mocked him: “You might seem quite scrawny, but your cheeks are rather well padded. If I hadn’t seen clearly that I had slapped your face, I might have thought I was spanking a cheek from a woman’s ***.”

His hand on his injured cheek, Jiang Yulang’s voice quivered: “You…what are you going to do?”

“Since you want to kill me, can’t I kill you?” Xiao Yu’er barked. With the back of his hand, he slapped Jiang Yulang again.

Jiang Yulang’s face was now beginning to resemble the underbelly of a dead fish. He trembled: “You and I, we’re going to die anyway, why are you…”

Xiao Yu’er laughed out loud. “You’re right, but you just reminded me, if I kill you, I’ve got an extra half month to live.”

Jiang Yulang lowered his head, whimpering: “I…I deserve to die…it’s all my fault…” Without warning he lashed out like a morningstar and launched his head toward Xiao Yu’er’s abdomen. Although his head might not be that hard, it certainly had to be a lot harder than a stomach.

Although Xiao Yu’er had been tracking Jiang Yulang’s hand and leg movements all along, it was true that he had not been keeping an eye on that little ball of a head. He was knocked into a corner, rather like a baby shrimp, with a curved out

middle(?). Clutching his stomach, he could not catch his breath for a few minutes.

Laughing coldly, Jiang Yulang sneered, “I think you know now who deserves to die.” He used his full strength to smash his foot onto Xiao Yu’er’s chin.

Xiao Yu’er lay there as if unable to raise his head. But when Jiang Yulang Jiang Yulang’s foot had just reached his face, Xiao Yu’er’s hand which had been clutching his own tummy, flew up. Together his hands reached, as if they were snatching at the embroidered silk ball flung into the air by the minister’s daughter. (1) He grabbed Jiang Yulang’s right foot, and wrenched it sharply to the left.

Jiang Yulang shrieked in pain, and flipped over his entire body like a fish. He collapsed on the floor, blood pouring out from his nostrils.

Xiao Yu’er immediately jumped on his back and laughed: “Now I really do know who deserves to die.”

Wheezing and puffing, Jiang Yulang dragged himself on the floor, panting: “All right, you win, you are stronger than me in all things. But I know you won’t kill me. If you had really wanted to, you didn’t need to wait until now.”

The little rascal was actually trying for pity, trying to flatter Xiao Yu’er. Although this should have been easy to do, Xiao Yu’er was not pleased at all and in fact felt uneasy(?). He knew that Jiang Yulang would love nothing more than to plunge a sharp dagger into his throat, or some other place, some other more vulnerable place. But at this moment he had no dagger, and even if he did it would be useless. When someone else is riding on your back, it’s impossible to stab them in the throat.

He was merely waiting for an opportunity, when he could take his time to stab slowly, over and over.

You might not be able to consider Xiao Yu’er the most evil and ruthless person. But at least you could say he was extremely clever. He knew exactly how Jiang Yulang felt. And yet, although he knew Jiang Yulang wanted to kill him, he would

still give the rascal chances to kill him. He wanted to see just how Jiang Yulang would try it.

This would certainly be a fun thing to see. And with regard to curious and interesting things, Xiao Yu'er would never pass up an opportunity. Especially when he didn't have long to live.

As he pondered in fascination, he seemed to have forgotten his imminent danger of dying.

Just as he was getting really excited, Jiang Yulang vaulted his body back into an upright position, and flung Xiao Yu'er off his back. Normally, this would hardly be a problem at all, but such a confined space now made it dangerous.

With a "dong" sound, like a drum being struck, Xiao Yu'er's head hit the roof of the cave. Then his body fell to the floor.

Jiang Yulang took a long while to get up. He grabbed Xiao Yu'er's neck and sneered coldly: "I know you won't really try to kill me, but I am really going to kill you."

His fingers dug in forcefully, but Xiao Yu'er did not react.

Jiang Yulang's grip relaxed. He did not wish to kill Xiao Yu'er while he was unconscious. He wanted to see him struggle, wanted to see his expression while he was unable to breathe.

Xiao Yu'er, irritatingly, refused to regain consciousness. Jiang Yulang reached out one hand and grabbed the wine jar which had rolled off to one side. He dumped all of the leftover wine straight onto Xiao Yu'er's head.

Before he was done, Xiao Yu'er's hands suddenly reached in between Jiang Yulang's arms. One fist sailed into Jiang Yulang's throat. Jiang Yulang's face contorted in pain, but he still managed to remember to smash the wine jar on Xiao Yu'er's head.

Of course Xiao Yu’er had predicted this maneuver. He rolled his body to one side, then his foot lashed out and kicked Jiang Yulang in his private parts. The wine jar was smashed to bits. Jiang Yulang was curled up in exquisite agony, unable to move or breathe.

This kick was certainly effective, but also clearly not sportsmanlike. In fact you couldn’t really consider it a real martial arts move. Indeed, from beginning to end, neither of them had used proper techniques. Because they were confined in this rat’s nest-sized cave, they were unable to use proper martial arts at all. Luckily they weren’t fighting for other people to watch, nor were there any spectators.

The torchlight appeared to gradually dim down.

Xiao Yu’er suddenly sprang up, and said, “Oh no.”

Jiang Yulang snarled, “What, we aren’t in enough trouble, that something more could go wrong?”

Sighing, Xiao Yu’er explained, “Even before we starved to death, we would die from suffocation in here.”

Since the tunnel entrance was blocked up, the oxygen in the air was slowly thinning out. The light from the torches would soon extinguish. He felt that his breaths were become stifled, that his eyelids were growing heavy.

Jiang Yulang said in a trembling voice, “I thought of everything, except this…”

Xiao Yu’er said, “Now even if you killed me, at most you would only gain an extra half hour.”

Jiang Yulang mumbled repetitively, “Half an hour, half an hour…” His teeth began to chatter. Xiao Yu’er’s expression was also despairing, he mumbled to himself: “Suffocating…I wonder how it feels?”

“I’ve heard that suffocating is the worst,” moaned Jiang Yulang. “Before

suffocating, people go crazy, they even claw out their own faces!” The only reason why he was going into such detail, was because he didn’t like being scared alone, he wanted Xiao Yu’er to share in his misery.

Xiao Yu’er was silent for a bit, then broke into a laugh: “It’s all right! I only fear dying too ordinary a death, now at last I have found a unique way! The number of people in this world who have suffocated to death must not be many.”

Jiang Yulang disagreed, saying slowly, “It might not be many, but it’s also not a small number! The builders of this place, were also buried alive.”

Xiao Yu’er winked at him: “Even at this point, you are still thinking of ways to upset me?”

“You are far too calm and happy, I want to see how long your happiness can last,” snarled Jiang Yulang.

“You really hate me that much?” Xiao Yu’er asked in surprise. “Hmph!” retorted Jiang Yulang.

“You hate me, because I am better than you in every way, isn’t that right?” Xiao Yu’er said.

Jiang Yulang said, “Perhaps you and I were born to be enemies!” When he said this, he had no idea how accurate his words were.

The firelight had weakened still further. Xiao Yu’er saw it grow dim, and mumbled, “Wine! That d*mn wine, was wasted by that d*mn fool.” He glanced about. The smashed pieces of the wine jar were quickly drying out on the floor. The odd thing was, the spilled wine itself was not seeping into the earth.

The ground was uneven, of course the wine would flow towards the lowest level. Xiao Yu’er suddenly jumped up, and spilled a tub of water on the floor. The water also followed the wine. He screamed wildly: “Wai, look…look!”

Jiang Yulang mumbled, “What’s there to look at.”

Xiao Yu’er said: “The water…it’s flowing…”

“Of course water flows, and it flows downward,” Jiang Yulang said.

Xiao Yu’er jabbed his finger at a corner of the cave, so excited that he could not speak properly. He stuttered, “Look. The water is flowing in that direction, yet it is not pooling in here.”

He continued excitedly: “The water is not pooling here! That means it’s flowing outside, where there must be a hole. But we are already underground, how could there be another exit for water to flow outside?”

He stopped talking and snatched up a broken piece of wine jar. He started digging at the corner as though his life depended on it. Jiang Yulang watched him in a daze, his hands shaking.

It was getting even harder for the two of them to breathe. The weak light suddenly went out. They were surrounded by blackness, so complete that you could not see your fingers in front of your face. Jiang Yulang could not see what kind of progress Xiao Yu’er was making, he could only hear him panting for breath. He himself was also panting.

Unexpectedly, there was a “ping” sound, as if a wooden board had split apart. Then Xiao Yu’er cried: “I’ve dug a hole…it’s empty out there!”

His voice trembling, Jiang Yulang said, “You…you’re sure?”

Xiao Yu’er ordered: “A flint, light a torch. In the name of heaven, don’t tell me you don’t have a flint.”

But what use was a flint? Xiao Yu’er looked as though he would faint.

However, the torch was lit. Xiao Yu’er’s body could not be seen, and in the cave there was suddenly a gaping hole.

Gusts of a damp, stinking breeze was blowing out from the hole.

Jiang Yulang felt his breathing relax and become more easy. He cried out in delight: “Jiang…young master Jiang, brother Jiang.”

Xiao Yu’er’s voice echoed through the hole: “Quickly, get over here.” His voice sounded surprised and wildly happy. Jiang Yulang half rolled, half dived into the hole. Then, he stood there stunned.

They stood in an octagonal room. The eight walls were constructed differently; one of steel, another of bronze, one was stone, and there was even a wall of solid gold.

Thank heaven that the wall they had been facing was made of wood. Otherwise they would most likely have suffocated to death.

In this octagonal room, there were no tables or cupboards. Because they were underground, there were also no spiderwebs. The air came from an unknown source.

The room only contained a collection of knobs(?). Large and small, or different designs. Some were made of metal, others of stone, and of course, some were made of solid gold.

Jiang Yulang could hardly catch his breath. He wailed: “Oh heaven! Heaven… what is this kind of place. You could kill me and I wouldn’t come in! And…”

Xiao Yu’er had made several circuits around the room, and was still unsure of what to do next. Indeed, what kind of a place was this? And for what purpose were those knobs intended? He looked and looked, but could not figure out any special purpose. The knobs were lined up one after another, and who knows how much work it took to make them.

Jiang Yulang moaned, “Have you figured it out yet? What kind of a place is this?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed bitterly: “I think the only ones who know are ghosts now.”

Jiang Yulang dashed over and wiped at a wall with his sleeve. After a while, he cried out: “Oh my, this wall really is made of gold.”

Xiao Yu’er said, “That’s not too surprising. What’s strange is, this place is ventilated somehow. Unless the maker were crazy, there must be a purpose behind this.”

“What purpose?” Jiang Yulang repeated.

Heaving a long sigh, Xiao Yu’er said, “This purpose may be the biggest secret you and I have ever encountered.” With one hand he pressed down on a knob.

Jiang Yulang said, “You’re going to move it?”

“Could you bear not to?” Xiao Yu’er retorted. He winked at Jiang Yulang, joking: “Maybe this is the gateway to hell, if I twist this knob, I may release its demons.”

Gritting his teeth, Jiang Yulang said, “What a good joke, this joke is very funny indeed.”

Together they shivered, as with a “jee!” sound, the knob twisted. The stone wall suddenly turned and a door was revealed.

Xiao Yu’er chuckled: “Look, the gateway to hell appears.” His chuckles sounded shrill and full of fear, and he knew it.

Jiang Yulang returned to their cave and grabbed a lantern. Xiao Yu’er went ahead with the torch. As they advanced, gusts of a rotting stench floated towards them. Xiao Yu’er had never smelled such decay, and never wanted to again.

Bravely, they continued on. Corpses, inside the doorway dead bodies lay

everywhere! Jiang Yulang's hands began to tremble and wouldn't stop. The way they died, and the way they looked, this writer would rather not say. Besides, I don't think I could properly express it, and neither could anyone else.

On closer examination, these were skeletons covered in clothes. Xiao Yu'er trembled and sneezed-before him, a skeleton's clothing had suddenly crumbled to dust.

Xiao Yu'er felt a chill creep through his back. He said, "I'm afraid these people have been dead here for more than ten years."

Jiang Yulang stammered, "I think they…starved to death. Look at them, they must have gone crazy before they died, look at their hands."

Xiao Yu'er thought he would go crazy himself. He looked, and suddenly could not resist the urge to vomit. He threw up all the wine and meat he had eaten earlier.

"I wonder what kind of people these were?" Jiang Yulang mused.

Xiao Yu'er coughed up a final mouthful of spit before he panted: "It seems their clothing was quite rough and common, they must have been the construction workers."

Jiang Yulang sneered, "What a pack of idiots." "Idiots?" Xiao Yu'er echoed.

"If they weren't idiots, why would they build such a secret place? They must have known that after they built it, their lives would be in danger."

Xiao Yu'er asked in disbelief, "You see these people and the horrible deaths they died, and you feel not one bit of pity?"

"Who will pity me if I die?" Jiang Yulang retorted.

Sighing, Xiao Yu'er said, "Wow, I'm really impressed. I have been raised and

taught in a gathering place for the villains of this earth, and I can't even compare to you. In fact I think I need to learn from you."

Jiang Yulang ignored him and said, "The strange thing is, Xiao…"

Before he had finished speaking, footsteps sounded from above. They were very slow, yet heavy, as if carrying a huge load.

The hairs shot up on Xiao Yu'er's skin. Even if he were the bravest man alive, at this moment, he could not help being afraid.

Jiang Yulang's hands, of course, were shaking. He said, "This…this…" Although he was spiteful and vicious, his courage was lacking, and he was speechless with fear. With a "dong" sound, the lantern in his hand hit the floor. The footsteps came nearer and nearer.

Xiao Yu'er felt his arms and legs weaken. His torch had also fallen to the ground. Everywhere was darkness, all this d*mned darkness.

The heavy footsteps seemed to crush their courage. They wanted to escape, but could not lift their legs!

Suddenly, an opening appeared from above, and a thread of yellow light shone through. The two of them held their breaths and did not dare to move.

They saw a pair of feet. The feet were small and delicate, and were encased in a pair of embroidered shoes. Above the feet was a green dress. Above that no more could be seen.

They stole a look at each other-almost unable to keep from crying out: "Xiao Mimi!"

This was not a female ghost, but indeed was Xiao Mimi.

They heard her mutter: "You can rest a bit here, this place is not bad, but a bit

quiet…”

A person fell down into the room. Who else was that monster trying to kill?

With a chill, they realized this person was already a dead body. One by one, bodies were dropped in.

Xiao Mimi continued speaking: “To be able to rest in such a luxurious grave, I don’t think you could have any complaints. Farewell, all of you…I will think of you sometimes.”

With a “peng” sound, the opening closed, and once again all was blackness.

Jiang Yulang and Xiao Yu’er stayed motionless for a long time, before they relaxed and took a deep breath. Xiao Yu’er suddenly laughed out loud: “Jiang Yulang, these bodies belong to the people you killed. Aren’t you afraid they’ll seek revenge?”

Jiang Yulang shot back: “I never feared them when they were alive, why would I start now!”

Xiao Yu’er felt around and found the flint and torch by his feet. He struck up a light. Jiang Yulang’s face hardly seemed human. Xiao Yu’er giggled: “If you’re not afraid, why does your face look so funny?”

Jiang Yulang snatched up the lantern and dashed back into the cave. Xiao Yu’er hurriedly followed, he did not want Jiang Yulang to seal him inside the octagonal room.

What Xiao Mimi had labeled as a “luxurious” place, Jiang Yulang could not tolerate. He stood off to one side and began to vomit. Mouthful after mouthful.

Xiao Yu’er reflected: “I suspected from the beginning that this place was not made by Xiao Mimi. Women, how could their designs be so grand…now we know that my suspicions were correct.”

Jiang Yulang could only say, “Hmph.”

Xiao Yu’er went on, “By some odd chance, she stumbled onto this place. But upon seeing all the dead bodies, she did not dare to explore further. She did not know that she had only discovered a part of this underground palace. It could have been the worst part, in fact. The best part may be yet to come.”

He sighed, then added: “But then who did construct this place? Who could have been this ambitious?”

Laughing coldly, Jiang Yulang sneered, “At the very least, it wouldn’t be you.”

Xiao Yu’er made a face at him, and said: “Don’t forget, my martial arts are better than yours, I could kill you at any time.”

Jiang Yulang sprang backwards a step. His expression changed. “You…you…”

Xiao Yu’er laughed merrily, teasing: “But you don’t need to get quite so worried, I just want you to have some manners when speaking.”

Jiang Yulang stared at him for a while. With his head lowered, he said, “I’m young and I don’t know anything. If I have offended you, please forgive me, I…in my heart, I see you as my older brother.”

Laughing, Xiao Yu’er said, “Fortunately you aren’t really my younger brother.”

Carrying the torch, he made another circuit around the octagonal room. With one hand, he touched here and knocked about there, his eyes darting back and forth. He said, “Of these eight walls, only one is made of earth. Seven left, and two are stone and wood. That leaves gold, silver, bronze, steel, and tin.”

Jiang Yulang commented, “To use eight different kinds of material to construct eight walls, there must be some kind of meaning.”

“Precisely,” Xiao Yu’er agreed. “And what kind of meaning would that be?”

Smiling, Jiang Yulang said, “I’m sure I don’t know, that’s why I’m deferring to you, big brother.”

Xiao Yu’er looked at him for a while. Slowly he said, “Listen to me, I want to tell you two things.”

“Your wish is my command.”

With a fixed stare, Xiao Yu’er declared: “First, never call me big brother again. I find it disturbing.”

Surprised, Jiang Yulang lowered his head, and said, “Yes.”

“Second,” Xiao Yu’er continued, “you will never again play dumb in front of me. I know you are an intelligent person, very clever, there’s no point in pretending to be stupid.”

“Yes.” Jiang Yulang obediently nodded.

With a smile, Xiao Yu’er spoke again, “Now, what were you saying about the maker’s intent?”

Jiang Yulang said falteringly: “I’m not sure if my guess is right…in making these walls, one reason would be to signify that there is something different behind each wall.”

“Not bad,” Xiao Yu’er said. “And another reason?”

“Another reason,” Jiang Yulang added, “would be related to the knobs. The stone knob was made to control the stone wall. Therefore the golden knob must control the gold wall.”

“Excellent,” Xiao Yu’er smiled. “Go on.”

Jiang Yulang continued: “The wall of wood was where we came from, so there’s nothing special behind it. Behind the stone wall was a mass grave, we don’t need to go there again. As for the earthen wall, it seems to be solid, so probably there’s nothing of interest there. The only remaining choices are the walls made of gold, silver, bronze, steel and tin.”

“Just so,” agreed Xiao Yu’er. “There must be something interesting behind these five walls.” He winked and added, “Here, you choose, which wall shall we explore first?”

“Gold,” Jiang Yulang replied at once.

“Very good,” Xiao Yu’er approved. “This time you were honest. I also wanted to try to the gold wall first. Who wouldn’t?”

He reached towards the gold knob.

End of Chapter 31

Chapter 21

Chapter 32

The Legendary Siblings

The gold knob began to turn. The golden wall began to shift, and indeed revealed a doorway. Before they had even started to enter, a sliver of glittering brilliance was already visible. Behind this golden wall, naturally there must be all sorts of treasure, countless precious items, beyond anyone's dreams!

Jiang Yulang stood there, stunned. On his sheet-white face suddenly there appeared a flush of crimson. His fingertips betrayed a fine tremor.

Xiao Yu'er's eyes, on the other hand, merely swept a casual glance across the hoard. His gaze came to rest on Jiang Yulang's face which was trembling with emotion. With a slight smile Xiao Yu'er asked him, "You like all this?"

"I…I…" was all Jiang Yulang could get out. His Adam's apple began to move up and down(?), and he forced a casual laugh: "I mean, who wouldn't, in all the world?"

Xiao Yu'er snorted, "If you want it, go ahead, it's yours!"

Jiang Yulang stared at him in surprised delight, then abruptly lowered his head. He smiled, "Well, you found this treasure first, of course it should be yours, I…I… even if I could have a little share, I would be most grateful."

"I don't want it," Xiao Yu'er stated flatly.

Jiang Yulang's head snapped up, his voice cracked: "You don't want it?" But then he lowered his head again, and laughed: "My life is already a gift from you, even if you didn't want to share the treasure, I have no complaints."

Xiao Yu'er laughed. He said, "You think I'm trying to test you, trick you? You can't eat these objects, they're no good to drink. They're heavy and tiresome to carry, and you always have to worry about them being stolen. Why would I want them?"

Jiang Yulang was shocked into silence and could find no words to reply.

Xiao Yu'er paid no further attention to him, and instead began circling the room. He sighed and murmured, "Another dead end, the exit surely would not be here."

Suddenly Jiang Yulang's laughter broke into his thoughts. He kept giggling and giggling.

"What, did you see a ghost?" Xiao Yu'er said.

Still laughing, Jiang Yulang said, "All these things, I don't want them either."

In surprise, Xiao Yu'er asked, "Oh, that's strange, why not?"

Jiang Yulang pointed out, "I don't even know if I can make it out alive, why should I bother with them?"

Xiao Yu'er applauded him, saying: "I guess you're not so hopeless, after all. You are a clever person. I have seen others who have lost their lives because they could not bear to forsake these riches. Don't you think they must be a little sick in the head?"

They left. Next, Xiao Yu'er tackled the bronze knob.

In this way, he was able to see more weapons than he had viewed before in his

lifetime. Every kind and every type of weapon, and even many styles of hidden projectiles. Some specimens were definitely familiar to Xiao Yu'er. But there were yet some types of weapons that he had never seen before, and he did not even know their names.

The air of steel, so cold it seeped into the bones…the weapons threw off a chilling light, and reflected off their faces so that they had a metallic glow about them(?). Despite himself, Xiao Yu'er could not help drawing his neck into his shoulders.

They looked at the spears. The longest exceeded four metres(?), and the shortest did not reach three feet in length. Next the swords. The longest span resembled that of a tree branch, and the shortest were like chopsticks(?). Long spears and short swords, were all arranged neatly in rows. Although these were not living beings, they all exuded an aura of death, and urged a man to kill(?).

It really did seem as if all the different types of weapons and instruments of violence in the world, were all gathered in this room.

Xiao Yu'er chose a sword at random, and drew it out. It sounded with a sharp ring and its deathly air caused him to flinch involuntarily(?). He cried aloud: "This is a good sword!"

Jiang Yulang said glumly, "It is a good weapon, but in this room, it's nothing special." He grasped another weapon, and said, "Do you know what this is?"

At first glance, this appeared to be a golden dragon. Its horns(?) stretched out to the right and left, and its mouth was open, revealing a brilliant green tongue.

"Hmm…I'd say it was a Gold Dragon whip," Xiao Yu'er surmised.

"Correct," Jiang Yulang said. "It is a Gold Dragon whip. But this Gold Dragon whip, is different from ordinary whips. It is also called 'The divine dragon takes nine forms, bane of the spirits' (?). This one weapon has nine different uses."

Xiao Yu'er said, "Sounds interesting, tell me about it."

Jiang Yulang went on, “The whip is covered in barbed dragon scales(?), which can attach to an attacker’s weapon and pull it out of their hands. It can also grip onto hidden projectiles as well.

The forked horns can neutralize all sorts of soft weapons (1). The outstretched tongue of the dragon is used to seal acupoints. The open mouth bites down on an enemy’s sword easily. Furthermore, the pair of dragon’s eyes contains explosives and flammable materials(?). From within the dragon’s mouth, the user can fire thirteen ‘Heart Withers at Noon’ darts (?). Once you see the blood bubbling from the throat, the person will not live another twelve hours(?). And, if needed, the dragon scales can also be fired as projectiles.

If you didn’t know all the background of this weapon, even a god would not be able to escape unscathed.”

The words came fluently from his lips, as if he were describing a familiar family heirloom.

Xiao Yu’er sighed, “Aptly named, Bane of the Spirits, what a weapon.”

Jiang Yulang went on, “Alas that in the entire world, there are only two copies of this weapon. I wonder how this one ended up here.”

“There is another replica?” Xiao Yu’er asked.

“This weapon has vanished from wulin for so long, that the whereabouts of the other one are unknown…if it appeared in wulin once again, who knows how many people would lose their lives to it!” Jiang Yulang said.

Smiling faintly, Xiao Yu’er remarked, “Despite your young age, you seem to be quite familiar with ancient, long-vanished weapons.”

Jiang Yulang’s eyes darted back and forth, as if he suddenly realized that he had said too much. With a false laugh he said, “Oh, I was just repeating the words of others. You know how my father had many social contacts, among

them were some savants and wise men.”

Still Xiao Yu’er looked at him with a slight smile. Slowly he said, “Well then, I suppose you would know how to use this weapon properly!”

Jiang Yulang laughed along and protested, “If…if only I knew.”

His entire attitude seemed to be indifferent, and he casually laid down the weapon. But in reality, his eyes were staring at Xiao Yu’er’s hands without blinking. Xiao Yu’er also seemed to be laughing and chatting in a carefree manner, but he too was ceaselessly watching the Bane of Spirits in Jiang Yulang’s grasp.

Although you could still consider these two to be children, but their craftiness and caution went well beyond that of three hundred and eighty seventy year old men put together(?).

Xiao Yu’er spoke again, “According to you then, no matter what weapon I chose from this room, I could instantly make a name for myself in wulin. Especially this Bane of Spirits. Ai, I wouldn’t even know how to use it, you may as well take it.”

Jiang Yulang hadn’t even waited for him to finish speaking before he quickly distanced himself from the weapon. Laughing, Jiang Yulang said, “Such a vicious weapon, I wouldn’t want it.”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “Actually, weapons are dead, while men are alive. As long as you are strong, it doesn’t matter which weapon you use. It’s probably better not to use this type of weapon.”

Suddenly he drew out a sharp sword, so keenly forged that you could blow a hair onto its edge and the hair would be severed. Light shimmered down its length, and in a flash, the Bane of Spirits, most vicious of unorthodox weapons, broke asunder into useless fragments (?).

Of course Jiang Yulang was smiling. He said, “Wonderful, it’s best to destroy it,

we wouldn't want it to fall into the wrong hands and harm people…" As he spoke, he turned his head, and his eyes flashed as though he could spit fire.

Xiao Yu'er gently stroked the sword in his hand, and smiling he murmured, "Sword, good sword, I originally intended to bring you out of here by my side, but on second thought, I'd better leave you here. People like me, even empty-handed, could…"

"Look!" Jiang Yulang's shrill cry cut him off. "Over there…"

Under the cold glow of the metal weapons, a skeleton could be seen bobbling gently in a corner. Not only had its clothes rotted away, but its bones which should have been white, were as black as a raven's feathers. Seen under the metallic light, this was truly a disturbing sight.

Jiang Yulang muttered, "That's odd. How did this person die here, and avoid getting thrown into the mass grave?"

Xiao Yu'er mused: "Well, anyone who could enter this room, must have been one of the masters of this place. The masters must have been top martial arts experts."

His brow wrinkled, he said, "But why would the master die here? Was he killed by someone? He doesn't look as if he were in a struggle. Perhaps he was killed by a single stroke!"

Jiang Yulang added, "Judging from the colour of his bones, I'd say he was poisoned to death."

Xiao Yu'er said, "I agree."

Their eyes roamed the scene. Suddenly they cried out together: "So he was killed by a stealth projectile!" They noticed that the skeleton's blackened bones were impaled by countless tiny silver needles. It was quite surprising that such small needles could pierce through skin, flesh and still embed themselves deeply in the bone.

Xiao Yu’er said, amazed, “What a brutal and vicious style of weapon.”

Jiang Yulang cried aloud: “This is…I…I wonder what did it.”

Xiao Yu’er fixed him with one eye and growled: “You don’t need to pretend. You’re not the only one who recognizes this weapon. I know it as well.”

Hastily smiling, Jiang Yulang said, “These ‘Destroying Heaven, Obliterating Hell, Heart-Piercing and Bone-Penetrating’ needles, are indeed the number one stealth projectile on earth…” From the corner of his eye, suddenly he recognized a weapon from among the pile. It was golden and glittering, a small round tube. Immediately he shifted his body slightly to block it from Xiao Yu’er’s view. As he coughed, he subtly moved toward it.

Xiao Yu’er laughed: “If you keep coughing much longer, I’ll be infected by you.” He suddenly did break into a fit of sneezing, and doubled over. Jiang Yulang waited for his waist to bend over, then swiftly snatched up the small round tube. He could not know that Xiao Yu’er had simultaneously appropriated something gently from the skeleton’s grasp and hid it in his sleeve.

The object was merely a bamboo tube. Xiao Yu’er had in fact not figured out its use, but felt that if the dead person had grasped it tightly with his dying breath, there must be something important and useful about it.

Jiang Yulang was having trouble suppressing his joy. He drew his brows together on purpose and grumbled: “If this person was the master of this place, how could he succumb to a sneak attack here? And yet if he were not the master, he could not be in here either.”

Xiao Yu’er agreed, “Mmm, if you weren’t the master of this place, you could not enter this place.”

“So what happened?” Jiang Yulang wondered.

“Presumably there are still many secrets to this place,” Xiao Yu’er said.

Jiang Yulang sighed, “Yes, and many terrifying secrets.”

Laughing, Xiao Yu’er joked, “There are no such things as terrifying secrets on this earth. All secrets are interesting…”

Side by side, they exited that terrifying yet interesting room. Both of them intentionally used both hands to carry their torches, to show that they hadn’t taken anything from the room.

Now the steel knob shifted and the torchlight showed a chilling steel room.

Jiang Yulang went ahead first. His roving eyes suddenly stopped and he gave a horrified yell, then stumbled backward. His expression resembled a rabbit that had been shot by an arrow.

His brow furrowed, Xiao Yu’er asked, “Now what?”

Jiang Yulang stammered, his face pale, “Have you ever seen a skeleton that could stand upright by itself?”

Laughing aloud, Xiao Yu’er cried: “A skeleton that can stand by itself, now here’s some fun.”

With big strides he crossed over. Then his laughter died on his lips. He noticed that the steel room was especially large and high. The four walls contained nothing. If you stood in there, you would feel like you were standing alone in a wasteland(?).

In this empty room, two solitary skeletons stood alone. Two deathly white shapes tightly embraced each other. Although their flesh and blood had long ago decayed, still they stood erect.

Looking at them, Xiao Yu’er actually felt the hairs raise up on his skin. But he only smiled and said, “I suppose this is a man and a woman, look at them, even unto death they can’t bear to let go! Their affection for each other must have

been deep.”

Jiang Yulang disagreed: “If their relationship was so close, they wouldn’t be standing like this.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, amused: “Ah, I didn’t think of that. In this area, your experience is definitely superior to mine. But if these two people are male, why are they holding each other?”

As he spoke, he wandered over, and stood in front of the two skeletons, as if in a daze. After a deep sigh, he said, “These two are indeed male.” (2)

Jiang Yulang suddenly laughed. He joked, “Well, sometimes the affection between a male and a male can be quite strong.”

Xiao Yu’er said, “How do you know?”

Jiang Yulang said, “Come over here and you’ll know.”

In actual fact the pair of skeletons were not embracing each other. The one on the left had penetrated the other’s ribcage with his hand. To break through bone with his bare hand, this person’s martial arts must be terrifying, what strength! But his own ribs had been broken in seven or eight places, and his neck had been snapped by his opponent. His skull hung floppily to rest on the other’s shoulder.

The two people had died together from lethal injuries inflicted on each other during violent combat!

Jiang Yulang cried out hoarsely, in awe: “What a fearsome Eagle’s Claw; what impressive strength! I see that these two must be superb martial artists, I wonder how they came to die in this place.”

He had hardly finished speaking, when with a “wa-la-la” sound, the two skeletons shivered into fragments from the mere force of his voice. Two superb martial artists, now turned into a pile of bones.

Xiao Yu’er muttered, “Judging from their martial arts, these two should also be among the masters of this place. Since they were living together here in this secret place, away from the rest of the world, their relationship must be very close. But then why did they try to kill each other? Perhaps we will never know.”

As he spoke, he picked up two objects from the pile of bones.

Jiang Yulang wondered aloud: “But what about the other original occupants of this palace? Where did they go, did they all die?”

Xiao Yu’er postulated, “Not only did they die, but they must have all died together, or else their skeletons would not have remained here until now.”

Jiang Yulang persisted: “So even if they all died together, who could have killed them?”

Sighing, Xiao Yu’er said, “As I said before, there must be some big secret behind this.”

Jiang Yulang mumbled, “And a very interesting secret.”

“Ah,” Xiao Yu’er teased him. “Very good, you are finally learning.”

It was only then that they noticed five short tables, on which were piled books, brushes and ink.

“There is even a study in this place,” chuckled Xiao Yu’er. “Interesting, indeed.”

He went over, and casually flipped through the books. Instantly his expression changed. Noticing this, Jiang Yulang also hurried over to pore over another of the books.

Upon a single glance, his face also transformed. Inside the soft, handbound pages, were recorded complex and brilliant martial arts techniques.

Although both of them had been trained by talented teachers, at this moment cold sweat ran down their bodies. They knew, all of a sudden, that compared to this, all the martial arts they had learned in their lifetime, were worthless. They gripped the texts in their hands, unwilling to let go.

After a long while, Xiao Yu'er took a breath, and said: "I know. There must have been five extraordinary martial arts experts here. They trained here together. And when they got an idea, they would rush to a table to write down the inspiration(?)."

Jiang Yulang said, "That sounds right. If they trained here, no wonder the room is so huge."

Xiao Yu'er went on, "Of the five, three we have already found dead. If I am not mistaken, the remaining two rooms should contain the bodies of the other two masters."

"I think that must be so," Jiang Yulang agreed.

Xiao Yu'er said, "Come then. Let's go see."

Jiang Yulang raised his eyes from the books, and cried in disbelief: "Go? You… want to leave?"

"When did you lose the ability to understand what I said?" Xiao Yu'er said.

"But these…what about these martial arts texts?" Jiang Yulang sputtered.

Xiao Yu'er said, "Leave them here, they can't run."

With his head down, Jiang Yulang said: "Fine. Whatever you say…"

Suddenly he drew out the gold-coloured tube from his clothes, and laughed wildly: "Do you know what this is?"

Xiao Yu’er appeared shocked. He said, “The ‘Destroying Heaven, Obliterating Hell, Heart-Piercing and Bone-Penetrating’ needles.”

“That’s right,” sneered Jiang Yulang. “Your eyesight isn’t bad. I originally wanted to wait until we had escaped outside, before using it on you. But now, I can no longer tolerate you!”

Xiao Yu’er asked him, “If you kill me, wouldn’t you be scared all alone here?”

Cackling loudly, Jiang Yulang answered: “Here there are unimaginable martial arts for me to learn, riches beyond compare, and they all belong to me. When I find the exit, I will instantly be the foremost person in the world, what else would I fear?”

Xiao Yu’er sighed, disappointed. He said, “Very well. If you insist, then kill me.”

With a hideous laugh, Jiang Yulang said, “You aren’t afraid?”

Suddenly Xiao Yu’er also began to laugh. He declared, “Your blow-tube is empty, why should I be afraid?”

Jiang Yulang’s expression changed. He cried: “Empty!”

“Didn’t you bother to wonder,” Xiao Yu’er said, still chuckling, “if this blow tube were not empty, why would someone drop it on the floor…the Bone-Penetrating needles inside it were used to kill that person. After the murdering his enemy, the user just carelessly tossed it aside. Such simple reasoning, how could you not figure it out?”

“You…you…” Jiang Yulang hissed.

Xiao Yu’er added, “Earlier you faked that coughing spell, and swiped that blow tube. Of course I noticed it; if I didn’t know that the blow tube was empty, how could I let you take it?”

He snickered again, then went on: “Besides, these ‘Destroying Heaven, Obliterating Hell, Heart-Piercing and Bone-Penetrating’ needles, are extremely difficult to make. In ancient times, the only one who could make them was ‘Divine Hands Craftsman’. He has been deceased for a long time. Your empty tube is thus nothing but rubbish….ha ha, it is worth even less than rubbish.”

Jiang Yulang’s face was covered in chilly sweat. He stuttered: “I…just now I wasn’t really trying to…to kill you…only…” With a “dong” sound, the blow-tube in his hand hit the floor.

Xiao Yu’er laughed heartily. “I know,” he said, “you were only pulling a prank.”

Jiang Yulang said hurriedly: “I have always thought of you as an older brother, I can swear to it.” His words sounded so sincere, his face did not even contain a hint of red.

Xiao Yu’er smiled at him, amused. He said, “Now, I presume we may leave?”

“Of course,” Jiang Yulang replied. He went out with his head down.

Xiao Yu’er laughed loudly, “Jiang Yulang oh Jiang Yulang, what a good boy you are!”

End of Chapter 32

Chapter 22

The Legendary Siblings Chapter 33

Now Xiao Yu’er was moving the knob made of tin.

He reflected: “The stone room was a grave. The steel room was a training room. The gold room stored treasure, and the bronze room held weapons. All this is logical, now as for the tin room, can you guess what it contains?”

Blinking a few times, Jiang Yulang proposed: “Could it be their private chambers?”

Xiao Yu’er chortled loudly: “Sleeping in a tin room, that would be strange indeed.”

As he spoke, the tin wall moved aside. Before his words had finished, suddenly a fierce lion sprang out from within, almost landing on Jiang Yulang who was standing right outside the entrance. He leapt backward seven or eight feet.

They took another look. Although the lion had retained its fur, its flesh was gone, with only a skeleton to keep its terrifying shape. Xiao Yu’er chuckled in relief: “This lion must have been really hungry, it wanted to escape but had died of starvation upon reaching the door. Alas that it gave our young master Jiang quite a scare.”

He then strolled inside. Abruptly he cried out: “So this was the reason!”

Jiang Yulang approached, and the ashy-white room filled with colours and

scattered baubles everywhere, so that they bewildered the eye. It seemed that this was another treasure room.

Upon closer examination, however, he could only see many different colourful objects, which were not necessarily treasure. There was a multitude of different small vials and bottles. And the appearance of each bottle was strange and unusual.

Xiao Yu'er said to Jiang Yulang, "Surely you should know what are in these bottles?"

Jiang Yulang took a deep breath: "Poisons!"

"That is correct," Xiao Yu'er agreed. "And this lion was meant to guard the poisons."

Unexpectedly he bent his waist, then said, "The fourth person's body is indeed here!"

Jiang Yulang watched him pick up some bones. Jiang Yulang thought further and his face paled. He said, "His…his body, was it eaten by the lion?"

Xiao Yu'er sighed, "This person was really unlucky; not only was he murdered here, but even his corpse was devoured by a lion…"

Jiang Yulang suddenly broke into a fit of cackles- "ge ge".

"Why are you so happy?" Xiao Yu'er asked him.

Still giggling, Jiang Yulang told him, "Turn your head and look."

In his hand, who knows how long it had been there, he held a dark object which resembled a bamboo tube. He chortled, "Well my luck is certainly not bad, I've managed to find a real treasure."

Blinking, Xiao Yu'er asked, "What is it?"

Jiang Yulang retorted: "If you can't recognize this, you must really be ignorant. The foremost swordsman of ancient times, 'Reverend Jue Chen', died with this object in his hand."(1)

Xiao Yu'er said, amused: "I still don't recognize it."

With a mocking laugh, Jiang Yulang sneered: "Let me tell you, this is the 'Celestial Dew of the Five Poisons', from the ancient 'White Water Palace'; you merely place a drop of this on someone. No matter who it is, within half an hour, they will die from generalized whole-body necrosis."

Laughing lightly, Xiao Yu'er quipped, "Well then, you'd better put that far away somewhere, you wouldn't want to spill it on me."

Jiang Yulang hissed: "Don't even think about escaping this time. I have already checked it and I know it is full, a full vial of 'Celestial Dew'. I only have to move my hand and you're finished."

Xiao Yu'er smiled bitterly: "You really must kill me no matter what?"

"If you had minded your own business just now," Jiang Yulang spat out, "and left me free to take that martial arts text, I could have left you to live a while longer yet. But now you must die!"

"Don't forget," Xiao Yu'er reminded him, "I could have killed you before, but I didn't." Suddenly he laughed: "But, why don't you take a look at what I have in my hand first?"

In his grip, was the blow-tube for the 'Destroying Heaven, Obliterating Hell, Heart-Piercing and Bone-Penetrating' needles which Jiang Yulang had discarded earlier. Jiang Yulang giggled: "I see that you have been scared to the point of madness, you're even trying to threaten me with that empty blow-tube…"

Smiling, Xiao Yu'er said, "Empty blow-tube? Who said it was empty?"

With a shock, Jiang Yulang stuttered, “You…didn’t you just say…”

Xiao Yu’er interrupted him with a laugh: “Oh yes, I did claim that the tube was empty just now. That was merely a lie; think about it-what else could I do? You should know that because it is so time-consuming to craft them, every blow-tube contains three sets of Bone-Penetrating Needles.”

With another laugh, he added: “If each blow-tube could only be used once, after each use you would have to find the ‘Divine Hands Craftsman’ again. If it was this bothersome, who would value these Bone-Penetrating Needles? Could you not figure out such a simple concept as this?”

Jiang Yulang’s hands once again began to shake. He stammered, “You…don’t think you can trick me again, you don’t even know…”

Laughing coldly, Xiao Yu’er repeated: “I don’t know? I was raised in the Valley of Evil. When it comes to this sort of vicious stealth projectile, would I not know more than you?”

Jiang Yulang’s hands became soft and weak. He laughed, and said in a trembling voice: “Big brother, of course you would know far more, little brother here is not your equal.”

As he spoke, he returned the ‘Celestial Dew’ back to its original place.

Xiao Yu’er said slowly, amused, “If I don’t kill or hurt you, then I deserve whatever comes to me, right?”

Jiang Yulang said, “Little brother here is young and ignorant, speaking nonsense. Big brother, please…please forgive me.” During his speech he slowly backed away.

Sighing, Xiao Yu’er said, “You are indeed an intelligent person. You know a lot, but alas that you are not as clever as I. You are just inferior by a tiny bit…”

With a light flick of his finger, the blow-tube in his hand made a “hack” noise.

Jiang Yulang’s entire body went soft, and he started to swoon from fright. But nothing had been fired from the blow-tube.

At that point Xiao Yu’er had the vial of ‘Celestial Dew’ in his grasp. Laughing - ‘ha ha’- loudly, he cried: “Let me tell you, that blow-tube is in truth empty. ‘Destroying Heaven, Obliterating Hell, Heart-Piercing and Bone-Penetrating’ needles-with one shot there are one hundred and thirty needles. In such a small tube, how could you fit three sets of needles? Such a straightforward principle, how could you not have thought of it?”

With a thump, Jiang Yulang really did fall over unconscious. This time he collapsed from anger, rather than fear.

The fuel in the bronze torch was almost used up.

Jiang Yulang obediently crawled back to his cave and added more oil to it. He also brought back more clean water and food, and subserviently placed these in front of Xiao Yu’er. Only when Xiao Yu’er had finished eating did he begin to devour the leftovers. His own father, if he had been there to witness it, would have died in a fit of anger-because Jiang Yulang had never served even his father in such a filial way.

Xiao Yu’er wiped his mouth. He murmured, “Only one room left. The exit must lie in this room. Mmm…right, to put an exit in their private chambers, this makes sense.”

At last, he twisted the silver knob. Behind the silver wall, there lay an entirely different world!

Here was the true underground palace. Xiao Mimi’s section was certainly extravagant, but when compared to this area, it was practically a pit in a coal mine.

The tunnel beyond the silver wall had a floor covered with a thick and soft

carpet. On either side of the tunnel there was a total of six doors covered in jewels and precious stones. The two of them passed through the tangled beams of light shining off the walls, as if they were walking in a paradise.

Xiao Yu'er hardly even glanced at all the splendor. He merely muttered to himself: "Strange…five people, but why are there six rooms, perhaps there was a sixth person here? There must be a sixth person, who probably didn't practice martial arts. Otherwise, why would there only be five tables in the training room?"

As he thought aloud, he had already entered the first room.

The interior décor clearly identified this as the private chamber of a lady. The dressing table to the side held a complete set of cosmetics and grooming paraphernalia. In fact there was even a chamber pot behind the bed.

Upon seeing this, Xiao Yu'er was truly stunned. His eyes grew wide and his voice cracked: "A woman's room? This place has a female master…you can kill me, I still won't believe it."

An embroidered curtain swished down. Xiao Yu'er drew it open and saw a skeleton lying on the bed. Hair, jewelry, all lay neatly on the pillow. Clearly this was a female.

They saw that the next room belonged to a woman as well. On the bed lay its female owner. In the third, and also the fourth, it was the same.

Throughout all this, Xiao Yu'er could only shake his head, laughing and bemused: "So in this place there were more than five people, or even six. The martial arts experts had brought their wives here too. When they were murdered, the wives were naturally killed as well."

Jiang Yulang suggested, "It appears that these women all had their acupoints sealed, and then were left to slowly die of hunger."

Sighing in agreement, Xiao Yu'er commented, "This kind of death, would be

about the most tortured way to die. The perpetrator presumably would have been even more heartless than you, and his methods far crueller."

Although Jiang Yulang lowered his head, his cheeks did not redden in shame.

Jiang Yulang went into the fifth room and whipped aside the bed curtains. He sighed: "People are really bizarre; you know that on the bed there will be a woman's bones, and yet you still can't resist opening the curtains to look…"

His words were cut short as he realized his mistake. The bed contained two corpses. One male, one female. They looked down and saw that the man's spine had been shattered. Clearly he had died under a single stroke.

Xiao Yu'er quickly expelled a breath, then said, "This one is actually the fifth person."

Jiang Yulang said, "The sixth room, could it be his…"

Xiao Yu'er pushed aside the door to the final room. One look was enough to freeze his body in shock.

Under the light, wearing a jeweled cap on his head, sat a man with an impressive beard all over his face. His hand pressed down on the table, as if he would break it. His brow was furrowed, and his eyes glared, his entire attitude was violent and threatening. Fresh blood had seeped out of his eyes, nose, and all of the other seven orifices, except that now the stains were old and dried and indistinct.

Once again, Xiao Yu'er sighed. "This person is dead after all."

Jiang Yulang had taken down one of the jewels and threw it at the bearded man. They heard a "duk" sound-the precious stone had bounced off the body.

This person's body was hard as stone.

Xiao Yu’er said: “Maybe this is only a wooden statue.”

“No,” Jiang Yulang argued, “this is a person. A dead person.”

Sighing, Xiao Yu’er said, “No, definitely he is a person, but if he is, then how could he be so much like a piece of wood?”

Jiang Yulang made no reply, but instead crossed over to flick aside the bedcurtain.

On the bed, there indeed was a person. A woman, and an exquisitely beautiful one. Her body was exactly the way she must have looked while alive, not one bit of decay. If it weren’t for her deathly pallor(?), you could without exaggeration call her one of the rare beauties of this earth.

In fact, Jiang Yulang had never in his life laid eyes on such a lovely creature. From her colour, he knew she was dead. But having had a single glance, he involuntarily fell into a dazed dream.

Sighing, Xiao Yu’er broke into his thoughts: “When this woman was alive, she must have had countless men under her spell. Next to her, Xiao Mimi is almost an ugly pig. I don’t understand how her body could still be intact…”

“These two people died in a different manner from the others,” Jiang Yulang said in a low voice. “They succumbed to a strange sort of poison which was able to preserve their bodies indefinitely.”

He took a breath, then slowly added: “Apparently, her beauty was really important to her…this naturally was worth cherishing.”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “You mean that she killed herself on purpose?”

Jiang Yulang pointed out: “If someone else killed her, why would they bother to use such a valuable poison on her?”

Nodding his head, Xiao Yu'er agreed, "That makes sense. Only…what about this man? Even ten or more years after his death, this man still has such a noble air. In life, he must have been really important."

"Perhaps he was the true master of this place," Jiang Yulang guessed.

Once again, Xiao Yu'er concurred: "Right, he appears the type to have had such great ambition."

Jiang Yulang began to think aloud: "Let's say the other five people were killed by him. Then how did he die? And what drove his wife to suicide? I wonder what his relationship with the other five people was, and why he wasted so much effort and riches to create this underground palace. Why did he have to hide here so secretly?"

With a wry laugh, Xiao Yu'er said, "When you talk like that, you give me a headache."

The two of them were certainly extremely clever. Yet after thinking and thinking, they could not penetrate the mystery of this palace. By this time their eyes were huge. But still neither of them had glimpsed the book by the side of the pillow. If they had missed this book, then they would never have figured out this puzzle, not in their lifetimes.

Luckily, Xiao Yu'er did eventually catch sight of it.

He flipped a couple of pages, and suddenly cried out: "In here…all of the secrets are in here!"

On the light yellow pages, there were words in delicate and elegant script. It was definitely written in a lady's hand.

These, indeed, belonged to the beautiful lady now lying on the bed-her entire life's tragedies and woe. Her miseries were almost impossible to believe. While dying, she unraveled the secrets of the underground palace.

Of course, her thoughts were not written for Xiao Yu'er to read, nor anybody else, for that matter. She had merely wished, in her final moments, to vent her sorrows. Only, when she died, there was no one left alive. Thus she could only express herself on ink and paper.

This is what she said: Her name was Fang Lingji.(2) Her family was from one of the dying tribes of Jiangnan. They had four generations living together under one roof, and their days were originally peaceful and happy. As for herself, however, she would never enjoy such fortune.

At four years of age, her mother brought her to Suzhou to visit relatives. When they returned, her family's entire property had been laid waste. More than three hundred people, old and young, had all been slaughtered.

Their enemies would of course pursue all survivors. (3) She and her mother were forced to flee for their lives, wandering everywhere in fear. Although Fang Lingji did not describe this part of her life in detail, one could imagine that it was full of hardship and bitterness.

In the midst of such troubled and anxious times, she eventually managed to discover the name of her nemesis!

Ouyang Ting.

'Hero among men', Ouyang Ting! Her enemy, of all people, was one of the heroes of wulin, a man of solid reputation and upstanding character. (4) He was one of the strongest martial artists of his time, and his family was among the richest as well.

Abandoned and alone, mother and daughter sought revenge despite not knowing a shred of martial arts. Plagued by hatred and anger, her mother eventually fell ill and lost her life.

Three years later, she actually plotted a way to marry her enemy. The only thing left that she could use as a weapon of vengeance was her undeniable beauty.

However, Ouyang Ting, an eminent hero of his generation, would naturally be hard to trap in a sneak attack. Fang Lingji therefore had to endure much agony and suffering, bitterly awaiting her opportunity.

Unfortunately Ouyang Ting had one fearsome habit. He would never fall asleep with another person. Although they were husband and wife, she never knew where he slept.

At this point, Xiao Yu'er's eyes darted over to the bearded man. He remarked, "I bet this rascal must be Ouyang Ting."

Jiang Yulang sighed: "This man must truly be a hero of his time. Even though Fang Lingji hated him to the bone, you can read between the lines. Despite herself, she did grudgingly admire him."

Xiao Yu'er teased him: "Oh, give it time, and eventually you too will become an Ouyang Ting."

Not daring to respond to that, Jiang Yulang changed the subject. "The odd thing is, since this Ouyang Ting had such a great reputation and influence, why did he need to construct this underground palace? What drove him to spend the rest of his life hiding from the light of day?"

"Well, read on, and no doubt you'll find out," Xiao Yu'er said.

They continued to read.

She had written: [To build this underground palace, you could say Ouyang Ting spared no expense or effort. He took three months to plan and oversee the construction(?).

Next, by methods unknown to me, he lured the top five martial artists in wulin to his palace. He claimed that he admired them, and together he wanted to create an earth-shattering set of martial arts, never seen before and that would never be surpassed. He told them that once they passed on this set of martial arts, they could, through this legacy, leave a name through the ages.

The words ‘Leave a name through the ages’, clearly rang through to their hearts. The five of them combined their accumulated wisdom and experience to explore the most complex mysteries within martial arts.

But none of them had imagined that the moment of their success would also mark their execution date.]

She had written this description of it: [Once we settled into the ‘Diling Palace’, he no longer slept alone. Because he had no suspicions toward me whatsoever, he could never have imagined that I was, in reality, his sworn foe. Although I did have chances to kill him, I did not make my move, because I still had to wait.

He had another ambition. In the records and annals of wulin, from ancient times to now, there have been many ephemeral heroes, valiant though they were. But never has there been one person whose martial arts could truly dominate all others. He wished to be a hero with an everlasting name, ‘never seen before, and never to be surpassed’!

It was a shame that those five experts known throughout wulin as ‘the Five Ultimates of Heaven and Earth’, would be sacrificed on the altar of his ambition. Each of them had their own weak points, and taking advantage of someone’s weak points was precisely Ouyang Ting’s specialty. The five of them would never have fallen for his plan, if it weren’t for the fact that he had the noble air and reputation of a true hero.

He had long ago crafted a plan to murder them all. Although I did not know the details of it, Ouyang Ting’s schemes have always been seamless. I had a mind to expose his vile plot, but I could find no evidence. If I voiced my accusations, no one would believe me. Thus I had to be careful.

But I also had long ago made my own preparations to kill him. I only waited for him to succeed in his plan.

At this moment, the date of his success is fast approaching, he will soon reach the pinnacle of what no one before him has achieved.

And now…there is a cup of poisoned wine awaiting him, to be drunk for our celebratory toast…]

It appeared that Xiao Yu'er's eyes were slightly wet. Suddenly he flung the book far away from himself. He cried: "Why did she have to write these things down and make others suffer by reading them? Women…oh d*mned women!"

Jiang Yulang seemed to be in a daze, and mumbled: "… 'pinnacle of what no one has achieved'… 'never seen before, and never to be surpassed'…ai, what a shame, a real pity!"

Gazing at Ouyang Ting's body, Xiao Yu'er said, "After he killed the 'Five Ultimates', he was just settling down for a drink with his beloved wife. Little did he know that the wine meant for toasting his success was actually laced with poison….ha ha, amusing, what a laugh!"

"That Fang Lingji was quite an impressive character as well…only, after avenging herself, why did she then follow him in death?" Jiang Yulang wondered with a sigh.

Xiao Yu'er eased into a long stretch at the waist. He replied, "I've already told you, the hearts of women are the hardest to fathom. Whoever wastes his efforts to guess at their inner thoughts, is a madman if not an idiot. Ai…women…"

Jiang Yulang mused, "She could not avoid killing him. But afterwards, her heart was also in agony, and she could only join him in death. She had not thought of how she would live her life alone."

With a long sigh, he went on slowly: "Fang Lingji and Ouyang Ting, they are rather like Xi Shi and the king of Wu. (5) Ai, rivalry between nations, or romantic love, which should be more important? I'm afraid not many people would be able to tell."

Peering at him, Xiao Yu'er suddenly smiled. He joked, "Sometimes you are really strange; I wonder if you are a man or a woman?"

Jiang Yulang broke into startled laughter: “What, you don’t know if I’m a man or a woman?”

Xiao Yu’er observed: “Sometimes you are cruel and vicious, you would hurt even your own family. At other times you would become melancholic, or full of sympathy. Men are rarely like this. Only a woman’s heart can change so quickly from moment to moment, and from one extreme of passion to another.”

He added, laughing loudly, “If I didn’t hear Xiao Mimi call you ‘little pervert’ with my own ears, I would really think you were a girl disguised as a man.”

End of Chapter 33

Chapter 23

The Legendary Siblings Chapter 34

Their conversation was interrupted by a gentle laugh: “That is correct, I can attest to it. Every inch of his body is male, not one bit otherwise.”

To whom could this wonderfully tender voice belong, if not Xiao Mimi?

Xiao Yu’er felt his bones go weak. He tried to turn, but felt a sharp, cold object probing into the base of his skull.

In warm and soothing tones, Xiao Mimi murmured, “Be good now, don’t move, and don’t turn around.”

With her hand she beckoned to Jiang Yulang and said: “Yulang, why don’t you come over too…mmm, that’s a good boy. Now, turn around, and stand beside him.”

Xiao Yu’er could only hope that Jiang Yulang wouldn’t be too compliant. If only he would resist, even a little, then Xiao Yu’er would be able to take out his ‘Celestial Dew’ and use it.

But that d*mn Jiang Yulang, infuriatingly, had become an exemplary model of co-operation. With head down and hands lowered, he approached. Xiao Yu’er tried to signal him with his eyes, but Jiang Yulang didn’t see it. Xiao Yu’er was so frustrated that his teeth began to grind, but he could do nothing. With a sword-tip aimed at your brain, even if you had ten thousand strategies, you would not be able to use them.

However, Xiao Yu'er did not despair, but continued to wait for a chance. All he needed was to be able to take out that 'Celestial Dew', or the blow-tube, and Xiao Mimi would be finished.

Unfortunately it seemed that instead of Xiao Mimi being finished, Xiao Yu'er would be the one whose life was over. She suddenly reached over and removed some objects from his shirt. She laughed sweetly: "Ah, little flirt, it appears that you two have acquired some very nice things. 'Bone-Penetrating Needles', 'Celestial Dew'. Lucky for me that I was careful, otherwise I'd be in a lot of trouble."

Xiao Yu'er heaved a long sigh: "Now it seems I'm the one who's in a lot of trouble."

She giggled, "Not too much, I think. I will let you live for now."

Unexpectedly, she pulled Xiao Yu'er's right hand and Jiang Yulang's left one together. Laughing, she teased, "You two seem to be good friends, why don't you hold hands?"

Xiao Yu'er noticed that Jiang Yulang's trembling hand was icy, and slick with cold sweat. Of course, his own hand was just the same. With a 'guk' sound, their hands were locked together with a pair of heavy black cuffs.

Her laughs tinkling like a silver bell, Xiao Mimi finally came from behind their backs to stand before them. Her beautiful eyes looked at them in merriment. She said softly, "Now you can really be good friends. You will live together, and die together. And neither will leave the other behind."

Xiao Yu'er joked bitterly: "Now I really do wish he was a girl."

Xiao Mimi said to him appreciatively: "I really like you. Under these circumstances, you still have your sense of humour. There aren't many people like you around."

Changing the subject, Jiang Yulang asked, “You…how did you get in here?”

“You are surprised by this?” Xiao Mimi laughed, rolling her eyes.

Xiao Yu’er sighed, “If we hadn’t been surprised, that would have been strange.”

“Clever little boys,” Xiao Mimi said, “how did you become so stupid all of a sudden? Think about it. You are so good to me, how could I bear to let you die of suffocation?”

Puzzled, Xiao Yu’er said, “I still don’t understand.”

Xiao Mimi explained, “At the time, I knew of course that you were hiding down below. But I didn’t dare come down, because I knew nothing else about the situation. If I came down, you would surely have killed me.”

She sighed and went on: “And your welcome of me obviously would not be quite as hospitable as the way I have treated you.”

Xiao Yu’er retorted, “Indeed, you were too hospitable, trying to suffocate us to death.”

She laughed prettily, then said: “I thought, even this might not truly manage to suffocate you two. But at least it could get you to lower your guard. Once you believed that I was using this method to kill you, you thought I would not come back to look, isn’t that right?”

“Only now do I understand,” Xiao Yu’er sighed, “that a man who has gone through a near suffocation is already very unlucky. If, on top of that, he meets a girl who really likes him, then his fortune has truly worsened indeed.”

Xiao Mimi giggled ‘ge ge’- and teased: “You are hilarious, oh, I’m dying of laughter! Next time, I’ll have to explain that it’s not so bad for someone to hate you, that being suffocated is actually quite fortunate.”

She appeared to pay no further attention to Xiao Yu'er's words, but instead began to focus on the contents of the room.

Xiao Mimi searched methodically through all the rooms to such a degree that you would think she was a jealous wife going through her husband's possessions(?).

And then her face shone, her eyes were alight. She had finally found what she was looking for.

It was the pale yellow book which naturally contained the essence of all the five experts' labours.

Xiao Mimi hugged the book to her chest. She pressed it to her face, and dropped kisses on it, giggling all the while. She murmured, "Oh my precious, I have you now, I don't need to worry anymore! From this day forth, who will be number one in wulin? Don't you know? That would be me, Xiao Guniang."

Jiang Yulang's eyes were locked on the book in her hand; he looked as if he would spit fire.

Xiao Mimi stroked his head and laughed, "Come to think of it, I should be grateful to you two. Without you, how would I have my precious?"

Happy and carefree, she spun around in a circle. In her delight, the years fell away from her and she looked more than a decade younger.

Smiling, she added, "Now I need you to lead me. Take me everywhere so I can look. This must be a gift from heaven, how could I refuse it?"

In fact, Xiao Mimi had never imagined that her 'gift from heaven' encompassed so much riches and treasure. Her eyes were dazzled from it all.

She looked at everything, poked around everywhere.

When they were finished, she looked at Xiao Yu’er and Jiang Yulang. Her eyes were so warm and tender, her smile was so enchanting.

She smiled and said softly: “Good little children, do you know why I haven’t killed you yet?”

Xiao Yu’er’s eyes were fixed on the earthen wall, as if he hadn’t heard her words. Jiang Yulang’s face was completely bloodless-he had been rendered speechless from fear.

Xiao Mimi said: “To tell you the truth, if I were to explore this place by myself, I would be a bit afraid. So of course I had to leave you two alive to accompany me.”

Jiang Yulang gnawed at his lip, and turned even paler.

With a glance at Xiao Yu’er, Xiao Mimi laughed: “Now your purpose is fulfilled. Since you’re now chained together, it would be impossible to crawl out through the tunnel. In that case, you may as well stay here.”

Jiang Yulang’s lips were already raw from biting. Now tears began to course down his face.

He suddenly fell to his knees and pleaded in a trembling voice: “Please, I beg you, don’t kill me. As long as you spare me, I will be your slave for life. No matter what you want, I can…”

She cut him off: “I’m very sorry, that is the only thing I cannot do. Other than that, whatever method of death you wish, I will certainly grant.”

She looked at Xiao Yu’er again, and said, “Xiao Yu’er, did you hear me?”

His eyes were still on that earthen wall. “Mmm,” he responded distractedly.

Xiao Mimi proposed, “There’s a very unique and comfortable way to die, if I

might recommend it. Would you both be willing to try?”

“Mmm.”

“How about I bite you both to death?” she suggested.

Her white alabaster hand reached forward, and caressed Xiao Yu’er’s throat. She whispered, smiling: “I only need to lightly bite you once, that should suffice.”

Xiao Yu’er still stared ahead without blinking, and mumbled, “Mmm.”

Xiao Mimi drew her eyebrows together, and snapped, “What is so interesting about that wall? What are you thinking?”

Heaving a sigh, Xiao Yu’er said, “If I’m going to die anyway, then it doesn’t matter.”

“I still want to hear it,” she demanded.

He replied, “Don’t bother, why don’t you just kill me and get it over with.”

She said, “The more you don’t want to say it, the more I insist on hearing it.”

With another sigh, Xiao Yu’er said: “Since you insist, I can only obey.”

He said: “I was thinking, since there is something wonderful behind every wall, the room behind that earthen wall surely cannot be empty. What is behind that wall then?”

Xiao Mimi’s eyes lit up. She said, “Right, what could be there?”

Her eyes darted back and forth. She muttered: “It’s too bad there’s no earthen knob, I wonder how you move that wall.”

Xiao Yu’er blinked and said, “Well there’s no knob, but up above there’s a ring hanging down(?), that we haven’t tried pulling on.”

Xiao Mimi said excitedly: “Ah, that must be it. Go and pull it then. How could I sleep well without knowing what lies behind that wall?”

Accordingly, Xiao Yu’er went over in a very reluctant manner. But actually, he was feeling very happy. Of course he didn’t know at all what was on the other side of that wall. He would guess that it was nothing special. Right now, though, whatever it was certainly couldn’t make his situation any worse. If he had to die, he didn’t really care if there were monsters or ghosts!

The only one with anything to lose, was Xiao Mimi.

The copper ring was hanging from a tall height and took a lot of strength to pull. Xiao Yu’er tugged at it and apparently just could not even get it to budge one little bit. But with Jiang Yulang there using all his might, together they pulled. Suddenly the ring descended completely.

Then there was a crash of sounds ‘dong long long’, as if a mountain were collapsing. The entire wall came crashing down.

A flood of water smashed towards them, as if a mountain had fallen into the sea.

Xiao Mimi’s expression changed and she screamed in terror. Although normally she was dramatic and her expressions always varied, this time she was very different from usual.

She acted like a young girl encountering a big rat. She leapt onto the rack containing the knobs(?), but the water was really pouring in too forcefully. Soon the water would rise above the rack too.

At this moment her only thought was of escape. She was even willing to leave aside Xiao Yu’er and Jiang Yulang. But alas, the remaining exit, the tunnel, had also filled with water.

Coincidentally this section was on an even level with the ‘toilet’ tunnel from which they had come. Therefore, although the tunnel was filled with water, there was no way for it to drain.

Right now Xiao Yu’er and Jiang Yulang were also floating in the water. Jiang Yulang’s swimming abilities were fantastic; he treaded water as easily as if he were moving on solid ground.

As he saw the miserable state that Xiao Mimi was in, an evil grin began to spread over his face. He cackled: “So that monster doesn’t know how to swim, how wonderful, that’s perfect.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “She deserves what’s coming to her.”(?)

Suddenly Jiang Yulang turned to face him. He asked, “And how’s your swimming?”

Although Xiao Yu’er’s hand was still chained to Jiang Yulang, he did not react, but merely laughed and quipped: “Did you forget my name? Since when have you found a fish that couldn’t swim?”

His words seemed to be convincing and honest. Jiang Yulang stared at him a while longer, then finally smiled and said, “Good, that’s great.”

The water level continued to rise. Soon the entire room would be full.

Not only had Xiao Mimi never learned how to swim, she was very afraid of water. Her limbs shook and she flailed about. The more she moved, the faster she sank.

Jiang Yulang commented in a low voice, “Although she doesn’t know how to swim, if she could hold her breath, and not thrash about like that, she wouldn’t sink. Besides, she has excellent martial arts skills. Even if she did sink a bit, she wouldn’t choke on the water.”

He gave a sly laugh or two before adding, “But the way things are going, she’ll choke for sure. Once she gets one or two mouthfuls down the wrong way, all the martial arts in the world will be useless.”

On the other side, Xiao Mimi had already sputtered on two or three gulps of water. She cried out shrilly, “Save me…are you two really going to stand by and watch me die?”

Jiang Yulang replied in a voice just as tender as hers: “Of course we couldn’t bear to let you die from drowning. As long as you hand over that martial arts text, I will save you myself.” Naturally, he had not dared to swim over before this, because as soon as Xiao Mimi got her hands on him, he’d lose his life.

By now, the book had been floating in the water for quite some time, and the inked words were starting to become indistinct.

It was now Xiao Mimi’s turn to become docile. She immediately grabbed the book and flung it over, then yelped, “Quick, hurry up!” Then ‘gu du’, she swallowed yet another mouthful of water.

Jiang Yulang deftly caught the book in his hand. Xiao Yu’er decided not to fight him for the book, since Jiang Yulang carried the torch in his free hand and grabbed the book in the hand that was chained to Xiao Yu’er. He laughed wildly: “Stupid girl, you really thought I would rescue you?”

Xiao Mimi called to him in a trembling voice: “Please, I beg you…”

Jiang Yulang laughed even harder. “I am going to watch you choke mouthful by mouthful…by the time you die, your belly will be as swollen as a balloon. That’ll be a sight to see.”

“You bastard,” Xiao Mimi cursed him.

She struggled to reach them, but the more she flailed, the more she choked on water. The fear of a non-swimmer in water is quite unimaginable to those who have never experienced it.

Now it was Jiang Yulang's turn to laugh: "From this day forth, who will be number one in wulin? Xiao Mimi, don't you know? Let me tell you, it would be me, Master Jiang."

Xiao Yu'er sneered coldly: "Not necessarily."

Jiang Yulang hastily corrected himself: "Of course, there would also be big brother Jiang Yu."

Sighing, Xiao Yu'er pointed out, "I don't think the two of us should be dreaming just yet. Right now the only exit is filled with water. Unless we can really swim like fish, we will also drown here."

Stunned, Jiang Yulang's face instantly turned ashen in colour. Grabbing Xiao Yu'er's hand, he said, "You…you must think of something."

Xiao Yu'er reflected, "I was thinking: gold, silver, copper, steel, tin, all of these were dead ends. In the stone grave there was a door leading upwards, but that door opens from the outside."

Jiang Yulang laughed sarcastically: "Well of course the door to a grave would open from the outside. The dead people wouldn't need to go out…oh, do we really have to die in this place?"

"Perhaps," Xiao Yu'er mused, "we have another way out."

"What way?" Jiang Yulang cried excitedly.

"We haven't tried moving that wooden knob over there…"

Jiang Yulang's hopeful expression vanished like smoke. He said angrily, "Did you forget, we entered this place from behind the wooden wall."

Slowly Xiao Yu'er answered: "But we crawled up here from below. What about

above?”

Instantly Jiang Yulang became happy again, and said, “Right, why didn’t I think of it!”

Xiao Yu’er grinned and said: “That’s because I’m much smarter than you.”

Jiang Yulang sighed. He admitted, “At such a time, still being able to think of these details…other than you, not many people would be able to manage it.”

They noticed that Xiao Mimi had stopped moving in the water, except for her hair which was floating on the surface.

Jiang Yulang dived down and turned the wooden knob. He had been holding the torch all along, but as he dived, the room suddenly became black.

With a “chi” sound, water suddenly began gushing out. Xiao Yu’er and Jiang Yulang were also inexorably swept outwards by the force of the water. And suddenly, it seemed as if their hearts would burst free of their chests.

Beyond the wooden wall, there indeed lay the exit. About a hundred or so stone steps stretched upwards, and a sliver of sunshine streamed down from above. Jiang Yulang cried out in delight, and once again tears streamed down his face.

They saw the top of the stairs bathed in sunlight. This was quite startling.

Jiang Yulang felt surprised in the midst of his happiness. He said, “This kind of exit is rather strange. Wouldn’t the makers be worried that it would be discovered? With such a need for secrecy, the exit should have been quite well hidden.”

Smiling, Xiao Yu’er said, “From our perspective, the exit seems rather obvious. But I think it must be well hidden, otherwise, someone would have discovered this place sometime during all these years.”

Unexpectedly, the sound of voices floated down to them from above.

Despite themselves, they were surprised, and quickened their steps. Faster, and faster, they dashed upwards and found that the exit was actually hidden by a stone cover, which was flanked on either side by cracks about half an inch wide.

The sunlight was, of course, spilling through the two cracks. The voices could also be heard through them. Scared but curious, the two of them ventured a peek outside.

Outside, they could see a tiny temple. As for which god the temple was dedicated to, they could not tell. This was because the statue for worship was sitting on top of the stone cover above their heads. Who could have imagined that under the resting place of an idol at a small temple, there would be such a mysterious, wondrous and impressive underground palace? Who could deny that this exit was thus well concealed?

Of course, there was an altar, but there were no incense or candles on it. Instead, oddly enough, there was a pair of legs. The legs were firm, and covered with thick black hair. Pant legs were rolled up to the kneecaps, and the filthy feet wore a pair of grass shoes. Above that, they could not see further.

There was also an unusually large gourd containing wine on the altar, as well as half a smoked chicken. Beside that was a huge slab of beef, a string of preserved sausages, a heap of beancurds, and a pile of peanuts. The fragrance of wine and food mixed with the stink of the feet-it drifted over with the breeze. Smelling this, Xiao Yu’er really didn’t know what to feel.

His first impulse was to break out and run outside, but then he noticed five people standing directly facing the altar. At once he was scared stiff, and even almost cried out in surprise.

The person on the extreme left was dressed like a rich merchant. His belly had started to get fat in his middle-aged years. A fragrant pouch hung from his body(?).

Beside him, was another well-dressed man, with a strong and energetic appearance. But on closer inspection, he gave off the air of being the merchant's bodyguard or servant.

On a glance, the other three people were clearly 'Regarding people like chickens' Wang Yizhua, Sun Tiannan, and seventh master Qiu Qingpo.

Normally the three of them were extremely confident and insolent. But now they stood with lowered heads and gloomy faces, their expressions full of fear.

Squatting on the altar was the man with the filthy feet. Someone who could reduce those three people to such a state, was not anyone that Xiao Yu'er had heard of.

Xiao Yu'er observed the situation carefully, not daring to make a false move. Jiang Yulang of course, would be even more scared at this point.

They saw a pair of hands descending, covered in thick and coarse black hair. The right hand was normal, but the left had only the thumb and index fingers intact.

The pair of hands ripped off a chicken leg and pointed it at the rich merchant. The voice shouted: "Get over here!"

The merchant's normally well-groomed and healthy-looking face was now completely drained of colour. He wobbled a few steps forward, and stammered in a trembling voice: "The lowly one pays his respects to you, my lord."

The voice boomed like a huge bell: "Bastard, your old man clearly knows, you son of a turtle, that you are the rich boss in the city, Wang Lingchuan. (?) Wang Baiwan, don't even try to fool your old man, you son of a turtle."

In just one breath he had already used the profanities 'your old man' four times, and 'son of a turtle' twice. Although he was speaking fluently in the native Szechuan dialect, the words came out muffled and indistinct. Presumably this was because he was devouring the leg of chicken.

Wang Baiwan threw himself on his knees and said with a pitiful expression: “The lowly one does not have much money on his person at the present moment. However, he is willing to give it all to you, my lord, as long as…”

The voice roared and cursed: “Bull sh*t, who wants to take your money, you son of a turtle. Your old man heard that you gamble better than the gods. So I specially arranged for you to be brought here, now I can see for myself.”

Wang Baiwan exhaled a breath, and laughed, saying: “My lord, if you wish to play, whether it be at dice, dominoes, mahjong, the lowly one would be happy to join you. The only problem is a lack of gambling equipment. Once I return to the city, I will make ready to properly and comfortably gamble with you, my lord.”

A hand slammed down on the altar and the voice growled, “Who would want to play at such silly games with you, son of a turtle! Your old man here wants to bet on coins. Heads or tails?”

Wang Baiwan mumbled, “Unfortunately the lowly one did not realize that my lord wanted to gamble; he has not brought much money to bet with.”

The voice declared: “Your old man will accept one of your arms, and a leg as gambling chips.”

Wang Baiwan had just begun to rise from his kneeling position. Instantly his legs went soft and they buckled, toppling him to the ground. Gritting his teeth, he asked, “And if my lord should lose?”

The voice replied, “If your old man loses, I’ll chop off a finger for you.”

Wang Baiwan objected, “But this…this…”

A furious holler cut him off. “ ‘But’ nothing! One finger from your old man is worth much more than all four of your limbs!”

The teeth began to chatter inside Wang Baiwan’s head. He said, “The lowly

one would…would prefer not to play."

"Bastard, you must play," the voice ordered.

In a loud voice Wang Baiwan shouted: "People can rape women, force them to have sex. But who ever heard of forcing someone to gamble?"

The voice chuckled, "If your old man ever committed one sin, it would be forcing people to gamble. You son of a turtle, since you love gambling so much, you should count yourself lucky to meet the "Devil Gambler" today."

Wang Baiwan's eyes immediately widened. He said in a hoarse voice: "You… you are Xuanyuan Sanguang?"

"Your old man is indeed Xuanyuan Sanguang. Do you know me, son of a turtle?"

Wang Baiwan said glumly, "Everyone who gambles, within the city and outside of it, invokes your name as a curse. Whoever cheats at gambling, we'll condemn him to run into Xuanyuan Sanguang. But…but I have never cheated anyone before, how could heaven let me encounter you?"

Xuanyuan Sanguang rumbled with laughter: "Since you know your old man, you should also know that I play true. I have never denied a loss or shirked a debt, so what are you worried for?"

They saw a copper coin flip over in the air countless times before landing on the altar with a "guk" sound. Xuanyuan Sanguang covered it up with his meaty hand, then cried out: "Heads or tails? Guess, hurry up!"

Xiao Yu'er sucked in his breath sharply. He would never have dreamed that this ogre with the dirty feet would be Xuanyuan Sanguang, the 'Devil Gambler' of the 'Ten Evils'!

And never, not even in a fit of mad ravings, would he have thought that, having just barely escaped the clutches of one of the 'Ten Evils', he would immediately

encounter another one of them.

Furthermore, the way things were going, as he met more members of the ‘Ten Evils’, each one seemed more malicious than the last!

Just now he had quickly glimpsed the copper coin; it had landed heads up. He would guess that Wang Baiwan had seen it too. In that case, the ‘Devil Gambler’ was destined to lose.

He saw that Wang Baiwan was so pale, even his lips were bloodless. He opened his mouth a few times, but yet could not utter a single word. The tendons on Xuanyuan Sanguang’s hand tightened and popped up, as if he too were tense with excitement. He thundered: “Quick! If you don’t speak now that means you lose.”

Wang Baiwan finally breathed: “Heads. It’s heads!”

At once Xuanyuan Sanguang flipped his hand over. He barked out a laugh and announced: “Son of a turtle, you lose.”

Wang Baiwan closed his eyes. Xiao Yu’er was also in shock.

He had seen with his own eyes that the heads side was face up. How could it have changed? Unless Xuanyuan Sanguang purposely let Wang Baiwan peek and see that it was heads, then changed it when his hand covered it up again!

Technically speaking, this could not be called cheating. No-one forced Wang Baiwan to peek when he wasn’t supposed to look. Xiao Yu’er secretly sighed, and laughed sarcastically to himself: “This ‘Devil Gambler’ is really impressive!”

Xuanyuan Sanguang laughed and said again: “You lose. Now hand over the arm and leg as your forfeit.”

Wang Baiwan choked out: “The lowly one…I would willingly give my lord the deeds to my ten pawn shops in the city…and also my three rice shops north of town. I only beg that my lord spare the lowly one his life this one time.”

Xuanyuan Sanguang chuckled, “You greedy animal, did you really think your old man was after your pig’s leg? Your old man is certainly evil, but what annoys me most is you stealing off the backs of the poor!”

He soundly smacked the altar, and yelled loudly: “I will confiscate your pawn shops and your rice shops. Get your turtle shell back to the city and get everything ready. I don’t think you’ll try to shirk your debt, you son of a turtle.”

Wang Baiwan gasped: “Yes, yes…” Half tripping, half crawling, he hurried away as quick as he could.

While he escaped, his servant was already groveling on the ground. He pleaded: “This lowly one is merely a servant, my lord wouldn’t deign to gamble with me. I beg you my lord, please release me.”

Xuanyuan Sanguang chortled: “Wrong, you son of a turtle. Didn’t you know, your old man has another nickname: ‘Whom He Sees, He Gambles With’. I’d gamble with the Emperor if I met him.”

The servant hardened his heart, and asked: “What would my lord like to gamble at?”

Xuanyuan Sanguang answered, “Your old man bets that you don’t know how many buttons you’re wearing. If you lose, your old man will hack off your nose. If you win, I’ll give those ten pawn shops and three rice shops to you.”

In his shock, the servant’s face had turned a grayish dirt colour. Unconsciously his hand went to his nose.

Xuanyuan Sanguang burst into loud laughter: “Think about it. By yourself, you could never earn such wealth in a lifetime. Uh-uh, no looking down, or your old man will poke out your eyeballs.”

Accordingly the servant could only fix his gaze straight ahead. He said, “But those pawn shops and rice shops are now in old master Wang’s possession.”

“Don’t worry, you son of a turtle,” Xuanyuan Sanguang laughed. “As long as you win, your old man will make sure he gives them to you!”

The servant suddenly broke into a smile, and declared: “This lowly one has had a strange habit since childhood. I love to swallow my buttons. Thus my mother never used buttons when making my clothes. She used belt and string to fasten my clothes. To this day my clothes are still made this way!”

End of Chapter 34

Chapter 24

The Legendary Siblings Chapter 35

The servant got up, and patted his clothes in demonstration. He repeated, “So whenever this lowly one goes out of doors, he has not a single button on his body, from head to toe.”

Xuanyuan Sanguang was stunned into silence. Wang Yizhua, Qiu Qingpo and the others, looking on, wanted desperately to laugh, and yet could not. If Xiao Yu’er had not forcibly controlled himself, his belly would have exploded in laughter by now.

A pause. Suddenly Xuanyuan Sanguang’s laughter rumbled loudly: “I guess it’s your lucky day, you son of a turtle. Get out of here, and be a big boss!”

The servant bowed to him and smiled: “The lowly one is called Wang Dali. In future, if my lord should be in the city, please don’t forgot to visit my shops. I will be certain to properly play the role of host.” He raised his fists in farewell to the others, then walked away, laughing.

Chuckling, Xuanyuan Sanguang muttered, “Wang Dali, you son of a turtle, you really haven’t got a single button from head to toe…” In the blink of an eye, he had won incredible riches, and then just as quickly had entirely lost them. Yet he seemed not in the least concerned, and in fact looked quite amused.

Abruptly, Qiu Qingpo’s entire body stiffened up most unnaturally. Of course this was because Xuanyuan Sanguang’s gaze was now upon him. Slowly his face began to blanch.

Qiu Qingpo said loudly, “If you want to gamble, I can certainly join you. Otherwise…”

Xuanyuan Sanguang cut him off with a laugh: “That’s right. Young master Qiu, of course you have been raised knowing the best ways to eat and drink well, womanize and gamble. What do you want to play? The choice of game is yours, your old man will definitely play. However, I will choose the stakes!”

With a smile, Qiu Qingpo said, “I only hope you will not raise the stakes too high. As you just said, I am an expert in food and wine, women and certainly gambling. You may not necessarily win.”

Xuanyuan Sanguang burst into loud laughter. “You son of a turtle, trying to bluff your old man! Your old man started gambling at the age of six. No matter what the game, your old man will be at least more skilled than you.”

Qiu Qingpo said coldly: “Every game can be rigged, except for one.”

“And which game would that be?” Xuanyuan Sanguang asked.

Qiu Qingpo replied, “There are gold ingots in the embroidered pouch at my waist. Is the number odd or even?”

Tearing off another chicken leg, Xuanyuan Sanguang casually mentioned while chewing: “I hear that your wife is the prettiest woman throughout the whole of Suzhou.”

With that sentence, Qiu Qingpo’s entire expression changed. His voice cracked: “You…what do you want?”

“I’m going to bet with you on your wife,” Xuanyuan Sanguang said. “If you lose, your wife goes to me. If your old man loses, I will give you mine. All three wives would be yours; I think you’re getting the better odds.”

Qiu Qingpo’s face was now the colour of cold ashes. He whispered: “You… you’re mad…”

With a wide grin, Xuanyuan Sanguang said, “Oh no, your old man is most lucid!”

Qiu Qingpo shouted, “I refuse. This will never happen.”

Xuanyuan Sanguang reminded him: “You decided how we would gamble. At this point you have no choice. Anyway, I may not necessarily win, right?”

Qiu Qingpo drew himself to his full height. Tremors shot through his whole body. If he really did forfeit his wife in a bet, he would never be able to face his friends and relatives.

Having been born and raised in upper class society, this was not the sort of face he could afford to lose.

Slowly, Xuanyuan Sanguang said: “Your old man wants to bet now. The number of gold ingots inside is…”

“Wait!” Qiu Qingpo screamed wildly.

“What for?” Xuanyuan Sanguang asked.

“Must you force everyone to gamble with you?” Qiu Qingpo yelled.

Laughing, Xuanyuan Sanguang said, “Upon meeting the ‘Devil Gambler’, you must gamble, even against your wishes.”

“But there is one kind of person you will never be able to coerce,” Qiu Qingpo declared with a mocking laugh.

“Oh? And who would that be?” Xuanyuan Sanguang asked.

“A dead person!” Qiu Qingpo cried. With a sudden flip of the palm, he struck down at his own ‘Tianling’ acupoint.

Killing yourself in order to avoid losing your wife, this was certainly a surprise to everyone. The scions of the upper classes, who could know what they were thinking sometimes? Who could comprehend it?

Xuanyuan Sanguang was naturally stunned. His chicken leg fell unnoticed onto the altar. Right now he only had eyes for Qiu Qingpo's dead body. Of course he would not be keeping an eye on Wang Yizhua. But Xiao Yu'er watched as Wang Yizhua and Sun Tiannan caught each others' eye. Perhaps Qiu Qingpo's death had suddenly kindled their courage.

Without warning, the two of them flew up into the air, towards Xuanyuan Sanguang.

Xiao Yu'er had a clear view, and saw how swiftly they advanced, and how ruthlessly they attacked. Wang Yizhua's two hands appeared to have become black through and through.

He made no preamble, since they obviously wanted to take Xuanyuan Sanguang by surprise.

To Xiao Yu'er's mind, there weren't many people in the world who could avoid an all-out attack by the two of them. In fact you could say there were only a few.

If you asked Jiang Yulang, he'd say Xuanyuan Sanguang was in mortal danger.

They heard Xuanyuan Sanguang roar in fury. Two fists flailed out.

They could not see what moves he used. With a "ping, ping" sound, Wang Yizhua and Sun Tiannan went flying backwards.

Using only two casual punches, he managed to neutralize two martial arts experts. Their vicious techniques were useless against him.

Xiao Yu'er sucked in a cold breath. He had seen Sun Tiannan fly out the window like a kite whose string had suddenly snapped. He fell to the ground

some distance away.

And he had seen Wang Yizhua do a flip in the air, and float to the ground. Surprisingly, he was still standing. His normally withered face, however, was now even more frightening to behold.

Xuanyuan Sanguang laughed in admiration: “Well well, you son of a turtle, you’re pretty good.”

“Hmph,” said Wang Yizhua.

“Now are you going to gamble, or not?” Xuanyuan Sanguang said.

Gritting his teeth, Wang Yizhua muttered: “Yes!”

Xuanyuan Sanguang proposed: “Your old man is betting that all of Sun Tiannan’s ribs are broken. If there is a single one left intact, I lose. You may take my head!”

Wang Yizhua said, “Mmm.”

“And, your old man is also betting that he can kill you with a single fist,” Xuanyuan Sanguang went on. “If you survive, you can use your d*mned claws on my throat any way you want. Carve out a few holes, I don’t care.”

Wang Yizhua was silent for a moment. Then his lips cracked into a bitter smile. He said: “I have lost!”

During this short dialogue, even the brief words he had uttered had used his remaining energy(?). With that last phrase, a spray of fresh blood burst from his throat. His body toppled to the ground.

Jiang Yulang’s feet and hands were cold as ice. He saw the dirt-covered feet on the altar slowly get up and walk away. Then the person’s back appeared.

Xuanyuan Sanguang was dressed in ragged and tattered clothes. His body was tall and huge; one shoulder was fat enough to be the size of two normal ones. His head was also twice the normal size.

They heard him mutter to himself: “What a shame. I never intended to take lives today, but those sons of turtles forced me to kill them. All I wanted was to gamble, and they couldn’t even humour me that much.”

He picked up his wine gourd and shuffled outside. At the door, he slowly stretched out his waist and sighed. He said, “These days, people who gamble like that Wang Dali are becoming rare indeed...”

Only now did Xiao Yu’er dare to release his held breath. He stuck out his tongue and said: “That old devil’s martial arts are incredible.”

“Shouldn’t we get out of here as fast as possible?” Jiang Yulang said.

Xiao Yu’er snickered while doing an impression: “Bastard, we’d be sons of turtles if we didn’t.” He had already picked up these two obscenities so quickly. When you learn a foreign language, the words you learn fastest are the ones used to curse people.

With a heave and a lift, they eventually got rid of the stone cover over their heads, and wriggled out into the open. At this point they could see that the deity being worshipped was Zhao Xuantan (1).

Xiao Yu’er casually scooped up the chicken, and laughed as he chewed: “Too bad we couldn’t see the Devil Gambler’s face, I wonder if he looked like Lord Zhao. Perhaps he’s a bit darker though.”

Jiang Yulang pleaded, “I beg you, let’s just leave.”

“So you would prefer to catch up to him then?” joked Xiao Yu’er. Jiang Yulang, after a moment, realized his point, and sighed.

Xiao Yu’er said, “Ah, chicken, mmm…if you don’t finish it, you may as well not

eat it.” (?)

He noticed that Jiang Yulang’s eyes had suddenly gone rigid. He turned his head and there before him was ‘Whom He Sees, He Gambles With’, ‘Devil Gambler’ Xuanyuan Sanguang.

His face was grey like tin, and a beard flowed over his whole chest. His eyebrows were like two bristling brushes, and his eyes resembled a copper bell(?). He only had one eye left, in fact. The left eye was covered by a black patch, which gave him an air of courage. His menacing appearance only added to his mysterious charisma.

At this moment that remaining eye was locked on Xiao Yu’er.

Xiao Yu’er’s face cracked into a smile. He gave a laugh or two before commenting: “This chicken tastes pretty good. It’s a pity there’s no wine to go with it.”

Xuanyuan Sanguang’s eye gleamed, as if he were amused. He actually shoved his unusually large wine gourd over to Xiao Yu’er and with a chuckle, said: “This wine’s quite good.”

Xiao Yu’er tipped his head back and with a ‘gu du gu du’ sound, swallowed ten gulps of wine in a single breath. He wiped his mouth with the back of his hand. Remarkably, his expression had not changed at all-indeed, he merely smiled and said, “You call this bland stuff ‘good’? You must think I’m a kid.”

Xuanyuan Sanguang laughed: “You little devil, you amuse me. Where did you come from?”

Winking at him, Xiao Yu’er said: “Where? Of course I climbed in through the window.”

“Sneaking in through the window to steal my chicken, and you admit this so boldly?” Xuanyuan Sanguang said in disbelief.

Xiao Yu’er quipped: “If a dead person can fly out through the window, why can’t a live one climb in through it?”

Xuanyuan Sanguang’s expression became serious and he said: “You must have been here for a while then?”

“And why not?” Xiao Yu’er laughed.

Xuanyuan Sanguang opened his eyes and fixed Xiao Yu’er with a stare. He said sternly: “Such a young child, what are you doing here in these forsaken mountains?”

“What else?” Xiao Yu’er said calmly. “To find a gambling partner, of course!”

Still Xuanyuan Sanguang stared at him. Finally he laughed ‘ha ha’- and said, “Interesting, most amusing…” He grabbed the wine gourd from Xiao Yu’er’s hand. ‘gu du gu du’- he also drained ten mouthfuls in one go.

Xiao Yu’er used both his hands to snatch the gourd back. He then took another dozen swallows or so. He laughingly chided, “Don’t be so stingy; wine and smokes are meant to be shared.”

Xuanyuan Sanguang’s eyes flashed again with amusement. He grinned: “You little devil, you really aren’t afraid of me?”

Xiao Yu’er also looked at him. With bared teeth he laughed: “Bastard, I don’t have any wine shops, nor any wives to lose to you. The worst that could happen is I lose my head to you. What’s to be scared of?”

“You dare to bet your head with your old man?” Xuanyuan Sanguang burst into loud laughter.

“Why wouldn’t I dare to?” Xiao Yu’er answered. “However…I wouldn’t want your head. It’s too big for me. I can’t fit it in my mouth, and it’s too heavy for me to carry.”

A voice slowly said, “I will take his head!”

It was as if this person’s voice had sliced through Xuanyuan Sanguang’s laughter like a knife. Involuntarily Xiao Yu’er’s eyes widened, and he stayed silent.

Although the words were spoken slowly, and only five had been spoken thus far, they were enough to reveal the speaker as a strong and powerful presence. (?)

With his back to the door, Xuanyuan Sanguang still had not turned around. This was because he had felt a deadly aura emanating from this person. If he moved, he would lose the chance to strike first!

The only thing he did was to say slowly: “And who dares to seek Xuanyuan Sanguang’s head? As long as the seeker is a real hero, a true man, I would be more than willing to give my head to them!”

The speaker slowly replied: “Xuanyuan Sanguang is truly a straightforward man!” A Taoist with dark black hair, wearing white stockings and blue robe stepped out. His right hand tightly gripped a sword that hung from his left waist. The blade was already unsheathed four inches!

These mere four inches of metal were already enough to impress one with the deadliness of the weapon!

Xuanyuan Sanguang said loudly, “You would be the leader of the Emei sect?”

Xiao Yu’er, of course, instantly recognized the man in the blue robe as Reverend Shenxi. But Xuanyuan Sanguang hadn’t even turned his head around, how was he able to identify the speaker?

Did the ‘Devil Gambler’ have a pair of eyes in the back of his head?

Reverend Shenxi also seemed to be surprised, and said heavily: “And how do you know me?”

Xuanyuan Sanguang laughed loudly: “If not the leader of the sect, who could have a sword with such a deadly aura!”

Reverend Shenxi said slowly, “Xuanyuan Sanguang, you’re quite impressive!”

Xuanyuan Sanguang’s laughter stopped immediately. He said, “However, Reverend, don’t you think that entering here with your sword already unsheathed is beneath your dignity as the leader of an entire sect?”

Reverend Shenxi did not change expression, and merely replied, “When facing the famed Xuanyuan Sanguang, I have to be careful to the utmost of my ability.”

“Well then, it appears that you are set on having my head!” Xuanyuan Sanguang declared.

“This is a sacred area of the Emei sect,” Reverend Shenxi explained sternly. “Anyone who commits murder here must pay with their life.”

Xuanyuan Sanguang laughed wildly and echoed: “ ‘Anyone who commits murder here must pay with their life’! Quite the edict. Do you, Reverend, honestly expect me to lay down my life for that bunch of riffraff and scum?”

The reverend reiterated, “I am not here to seek revenge for any particular person. But the responsibility of defending this mountain cannot be shirked.”

“Very well,” Xuanyuan Sanguang roared loudly. “My head is right here, only I’m not sure that the Reverend will be able to claim it so easily!”

Reverend Shenxi countered, “You have loved to gamble all your life, Xuanyuan Sanguang, and have won the heads of many people. The idea of losing your own head to me this time should hardly be disturbing to you.”

Xuanyuan Sanguang started chuckling: “I take it then, that you are proposing a bet, Reverend!”

“Your guess is correct,” was the reply.

Xiao Yu’er looked at the Reverend. He noticed the blue robe, so washed and faded that it was almost white. He saw the thin figure standing erect, the gnarled and slim fingers tightly gripping his sword.

And he saw Xuanyuan Sanguang standing there, not daring to turn around. Because of this person. What an impressive aura and heroic air!

Xiao Yu’er thought to himself: [I may be the world’s most intelligent man. But even if I were a hundred times smarter than him, could I instill such fear and awe in other people? It seems that I should properly hone my martial arts, otherwise I will never, in my lifetime, be as inspiring and glorious a figure.]

Such an impressive aura in a famed martial arts expert, was truly worthy of admiration. Even the words he spoke would carry much more weight compared to an ordinary person.

As soon as the four words ‘Your guess is correct’ were spoken, not a trace of a smile could be seen on Xuanyuan Sanguang’s face. He said belligerently, “And how shall we gamble?”

“We are both from the world of wulin,” Reverend Shenxi answered. “What could be more natural than gambling on our martial arts!”

Xuanyuan Sanguang gave a strange laugh, as if surprised: “If we fight, how could that still be considered gambling?”

Reverend Shenxi responded, “We play the game with our bodies. Our lives are the stakes. Of all the grand gambles in the world, what could compare to this? How could you say this is not gambling?”

“Fine!” Xuanyuan Sanguang cried loudly. “Now what will you bet against my head?”

“My own, of course.”

“That won’t work,” Xuanyuan Sanguang said. “That would be too much to your advantage.”

Reverend Shenxi said coldly, “I have entered the priesthood since I was six. At present I am the head of the Emei sect, one of the Famed Seven Sword schools. Under the aegis of my sect, there are three generations of disciples, which total two thousand seven hundred and thirty two people. When the leader’s bronze talisman is displayed, not only must the disciples of my sect obey it, but even members of other sects will respect and acknowledge it.”

His voice was stern, and he went on, “You are saying that a head like this, is not worth betting against yours?”

Xuanyuan Sanguang argued: “Your head is perfectly good. Unfortunately it is useless to me. On the other hand if you capture my head, you gain more glory for the Emei sect, as well as strengthening your own personal reputation!”

He let out a booming laugh: “As you can see, I have too much to lose, and nothing to gain. This kind of bet, I will not make.”

Reverend Shenxi laughed coldly: “I am afraid that the decision is no longer yours.”

Xuanyuan Sanguang responded with a laugh of his own: “Those words I have spoken to many people, countless times. I did not think that today I would hear them thrown back at me. The only thing is, you might want my head, but I don’t want yours. What if I just escape?”

“You believe that you have the ability?” Reverend Shenxi asked.

“Why can’t I?” Xuanyuan Sanguang shot back.

A pause. Then the Reverend said slowly, “What do you want?”

“Unless you can propose a forfeit that can match my head, I will not gamble

with you.” Xuanyuan Sanguang stated.

Reverend Shenxi mused: “In all the world, what kind of object could be worth Xuanyuan Sanguang’s head?”

Xuanyuan Sanguang said slowly, “I admit, there wouldn’t be many. However, by your side, there is one that could grudgingly be counted.”

Something faintly flickered across Reverend Shenxi’s face. He said, “What could that be?”

“The sect leader’s bronze talisman!”

“The leader’s bronze talisman?” Reverend Shenxi repeated in disbelief.

“Precisely,” Xuanyuan Sanguang confirmed. “If you beat me, feel free to decapitate me. If I defeat you, I will spare you your life, but I will amuse myself in the role of the Emei sect leader.”

The Reverend’s expression became deadly serious. He said slowly, “Other than this…”

Xuanyuan Sanguang cut him off: “Other than this, I can accept nothing. However, I am willing to grant you another concession.”

“What is that?” Reverend Shenxi asked.

Xuanyuan Sanguang said, “I will stand here as I am. I will permit you three strokes of the sword. If, within three strokes, you injure me, I will admit defeat. If my feet leave the ground, or I shift position, I also lose.”

Never could Xiao Yu’er have guessed that he would make such an arrogant wager. He racked his brains, yet still, he could only conclude that there was not a shred of hope with these kind of odds.

To stand there with feet motionless, was equivalent to becoming a wooden statue. Reverend Shenxi had been the leader of Emei, a sect prominent in sword arts, for thirty years. Beneath his blade, even a bird in flight could hardly escape.

How could he miss this wooden statue with his sword?

Xiao Yu'er chuckled to himself: [To propose this kind of a bet, the 'Devil Gambler' must have taken the wrong medicine.]

But Reverend Shenxi did not say a word, as if in deep thought. A silence, then he said, "You would not lift a hand in retaliation?"

"Of course not!" Xuanyuan Sanguang sneered coldly.

Up until this point, the Reverend's expression had been exceedingly grim. Now finally he allowed the ghost of a smile to flash across his face. Loudly he declared: "Then yes, I will take this gamble!"

Xuanyuan Sanguang asked, "Where is your bronze talisman?"

Reverend Shenxi thought a bit, then said: "The bronze talisman is here at my waist. Might I trouble the little fellow here to bring it to him for a look?" (2)

His words were obviously directed at Xiao Yu'er. The Reverend had been gathering his strength for quite a while now, like an arrow on the bowstring, tensed for release. If he relaxed his hands to take out the bronze talisman, his strength would dissipate.

Furthermore, if he loosened his hand which was grasping his sword, and if Xuanyuan Sanguang turned around at that moment, the situation could change dangerously.

Xuanyuan Sanguang let out a knowing laugh: "Reverend Shenxi is indeed brilliant. But this little devil is very tricky, are you sure you trust him?"

Reverend Shenxi responded sternly, “This little fellow may be of tender years now, but in future he will gain much glory for wulin, and his achievements will be unmatched. Such a person, his desire would hardly be moved by a mere trinket.”

Despite himself, Xiao Yu’er could not help laughing: “To run a little errand for the Reverend is nothing; I hardly deserve such praise.”

Although these words flowed from his lips, in reality his heart involuntarily filled with satisfaction. At once he darted over from behind Reverend Shenxi, and detached the bronze talisman from his waist.

Reverend Shenxi said earnestly: “Please keep it safe.”

Xiao Yu’er replied with a smile: “Rest assured, Reverend. I won’t even bother giving him a peek, since it won’t be his anyway.”

Chortling loudly, Xuanyuan Sanguang teased: “Now that you’ve lapped up someone else’s flattery, you’re going to curse me?”

Xiao Yu’er joked back: “Well you’re going to lose for sure. Whether I curse you or not will make no difference.”

“Well then,” Xuanyuan Sanguang laughed coldly, “I’m afraid that you’ll be disappointed.”

Reverend Shenxi cut in: “Have you prepared yourself?”

“I was ready before you even entered the doorway,” Xuanyuan Sanguang retorted.

“Since that is the case, I will strike now!”

As the words were uttered, everything else fell suddenly silent. Even the sounds of breathing were inaudible. The only sound that each person could hear was the wild cadence of his own heart. With a clear ring, Reverend Shenxi drew

his sword from its sheath.

Xuanyuan Sanguang's back was still facing his opponent, as if his body were an immovable mountain.

Reverend Shenxi took three steady breaths. The edge of his blade quivered. Then suddenly, in a streak of green light, he thrust his sword forward.

This stroke was aimed towards the 'Mingmen' acupoint on the vertebra between the two hips. This was Xuanyuan Sanguang's center of balance! (?)

No matter how Xuanyuan Sanguang tried to dodge, his body would have to lean back. By using this sword move, Reverend Shenxi was not intending to injure, but merely wanted to throw Xuanyuan Sanguang off balance.

In this way, he would have the upper hand in the next stroke.

Xiao Yu'er thought to himself: [The techniques of an expert are truly admirable. It would be far beneath his dignity if he had tried to harm Xuanyuan Sanguang with the very first move!]

He saw Xuanyuan Sanguang's waist twist, and half his body rotated. His stomach retracted sharply, and the sword slid across the surface of his belly as it thrust past him.

But as the power of this stroke had not yet been released, its strength was yet to come. (?)

Reverend Shenxi did not wait for the stroke to decay (?), but instead with a flick of his wrist, it turned from a stabbing to a slicing move. The sword swept toward Xuanyuan Sanguang's chest.

The change of stroke was without flaw. Xiao Yu'er could not help shaking his head. It appeared that there was no way Xuanyuan Sanguang could avoid this second strike.

But who could have guessed-Xuanyuan Sanguang's waist suddenly seemed to have snapped. His lower body looked as if it had sprouted root and was fixed to the ground. His upper body bent sharply backward and plummeted downward.

His entire body resembled a stick of sugar cane that had been bent into two halves. As before, Reverend Shenxi's sword thrust past into thin air, narrowly missing his face.

What a daring and risky move! Brilliant!

Xiao Yu'er very nearly burst into applause. He could never have imagined that the giant Xuanyuan Sanguang could have cultivated such amazing flexibility arts!

Reverend Shenxi smiled faintly, and the edge of his blade twisted slightly. The sword swept back across like lightning, to aim at Xuanyuan Sanguang's left kneecap.

This time the evolution of his swordplay was even faster than before. In the blink of an eye, the three strokes were now complete. They were so seamless, it appeared that Reverend Shenxi had already known beforehand what tactics Xuanyuan Sanguang would employ!

Although Xuanyuan Sanguang's second evasive maneuver had been superb, he looked as if he now had come to a dead end. He had reached the limit of what his body could contort and adapt to-he could improvise no further.

Furthermore, willing or not, he would have leap up to avoid this stroke. Whether by being hit or by raising his feet from the ground, he would still lose. His earlier stipulation made his loss inevitable.

Xiao Yu'er thought: [Oh Devil Gambler, I believe this time your head is certainly forfeit.]

Unexpectedly however, even before his thought was complete, Xuanyuan Sanguang, his body twisting like a towel, released his position and came hurtling back the other way. Where originally he was facing upwards, now he faced

downwards and, stretching his jaws wide open, clamped down on Reverend Shenxi's sword-wielding hand with a single bite.

The Reverend could never have dreamed of such a technique. The bite on his hand was painful beyond words. His grip on his sword faltered, and with a "dong" it fell to the ground.

With a wild cackle, Xuanyuan Sanguang declared: "You lose!"

Xiao Yu'er was rooted to the spot with astonishment. Reverend Shenxi's face was the colour of dead ashes. He stood there for quite a while stunned, then stuttered: "This…what kind of move is this? In all the world, no matter what sect or school, their martial arts would never contain a move like this."

Laughing, Xuanyuan Sanguang shot back: "The moves themselves are dead. The practitioners are the ones who breathe life into the martial arts; why should a living man limit himself to lifeless techniques?"

"But you promised not to strike back!"

Xuanyuan Sanguang laughed even louder. "I promised to not lift a hand in retaliation. I was true to my word-I never said I wouldn't retaliate with my mouth!" (3)

A pause. Finally, with a bitter smile, Reverend Shenxi conceded: "Then, this lowly priest has indeed lost…"

Xuanyuan Sanguang spread open his palm and grinned: "Then hand over the bronze talisman."

"At this moment the bronze talisman still cannot be considered yours," Xiao Yu'er cut in with a flat voice.

Laughing fiercely, Xuanyuan Sanguang asked, "Little devil, what do you want?"

Xiao Yu’er said with a smile, “Aren’t you called ‘Whom He Sees, He Gambles With’? Why not have a gamble with me? If you win, not only will the bronze talisman be yours, but you will also have my person. If you lose, then the bronze talisman comes to me.”

Xuanyuan Sanguang laughed: “You also want to bet with me?”

“Precisely.”

“And you want to use yourself as a gambling chip to bet against this bronze talisman?”

“Do you dare to gamble with me?” Xiao Yu’er challenged him.

Puzzled, Xuanyuan Sanguang asked, “How does it benefit me to win you as a forfeit?”

“Of course it benefits you, in many ways!” Xiao Yu’er exclaimed. “You couldn’t even count them all. When you’re bored, I can find people to gamble with you. When you’ve run out of drink, I can con some wine for you to enjoy. If you win me as a prize, I guarantee you will never have any lack.”

Amused, Xuanyuan Sanguang chortled: “Having a little Devil Gambler to go with this old Devil Gambler, might not be a bad thing, after all.”

“So you’ll bet with me then?” Xiao Yu’er asked.

Xuanyuan Sanguang said, “How do you want to play?”

Smiling, Xiao Yu’er said, “I set the stakes. I think you should decide how we’ll bet.”

Xuanyuan Sanguang rubbed his hands together: “Very well, this is interesting…”

Xiao Yu’er stroked the buttons on his clothes with one hand, while joking: “Did you wish to bet on how many buttons I have on my body?”

His eyes alight, Xuanyuan Sanguang suddenly cried: “I’ve got it, we’ll bet on how many scars you bear on your body!”

Jiang Yulang inwardly sighed, and mused aloud: “Xiao Yu’er, this time I really think you’re finished.”

Although his heart was definitely pleased at this, despite himself, he somehow felt a hint of unease as well. No matter what, Xiao Yu’er had been a true friend through hardships, through life and death.

Standing to one side, the Reverend Shenxi definitely felt much worse.

The top of Xiao Yu’er’s robe was open, and you could see that although his face had scars, the rest of his body had even more. Most of them were the handiwork of lions and tigers, acquired in his childhood. A small number were from sword wounds. Had you let him strip naked, and count them himself, even Xiao Yu’er might not be able to tally them accurately.

Xuanyuan Sanguang never bet on things that had less than a nine-tenths chance of success. (?)

Xiao Yu’er was still standing in shock. He stammered: “You-you really want to bet on my scars?”

“But of course.” Xuanyuan Sanguang laughed loudly.

“Fine,” Xiao Yu’er answered. “Then let me tell you, on my body there are one hundred scars.”

“Exactly one hundred?” Xuanyuan Sanguang repeated in disbelief.

“You heard me,” Xiao Yu’er confirmed. “Not one more, not one less.”

By his confident and prompt response, it seemed as if he was utterly sure of himself. Not only had Xuanyuan Sanguang's expression changed, but Jiang Yulang was also extremely surprised. Was it possible that the little devil-spawn really knew the true number of scars on his body?

Xuanyuan Sanguang was silent for a while. Then he gave an odd chuckle: "All right then, take off your clothes and let me look."

And Xiao Yu'er did indeed strip naked and permit him to count. In fact he picked up a dagger and began to count along with Xuanyuan Sanguang.

Abruptly Xuanyuan Sanguang broke into a thundering laugh: "Ninety…your body only has ninety-one scars. You lose!"

"Oh?" Xiao Yu'er said. "Really, only ninety-one? I don't think so."

As he spoke, the dagger in his hand flashed around his skin to carve nine more wounds! Although the cuts were superficial, fresh blood still seeped out all around his body.

"What's this supposed to mean?" Xuanyuan Sanguang asked, startled.

With a straight face, Xiao Yu'er declared, "It means you lose."

Xuanyuan Sanguang roared: "Bullsh*t, you…"

Grinning, Xiao Yu'er cut him off: "Ninety-one old scars, plus nine new ones, that adds up to one hundred exactly, you have most definitely lost."

Xuanyuan Sanguang scowled: "How is that supposed to count?"

Laughing gleefully, Xiao Yu'er retorted: "Why not? You bet only on the number of scars on my body. You did not specify whether the scars could be old or new. Are you thinking of reneging?"

A stunned silence. Suddenly Xuanyuan Sanguang joined him in laughter: “Clever, very clever. Little devil, you are amusing indeed…all right, I will concede my loss.”

He turned around and beckoned to Reverend Shenxi, laughing: “Come over here, aren’t you going to pay your respects to the new leader of your sect?”

Naturally, Reverend Shenxi was feeling hopelessly miserable at this point, but he still managed to force a smile and say: “Emei is an old sect and in danger of stagnation. A young new hero is just what it needs as a leader. This lowly priest is old; I should have given up my post to a more qualified person a long time ago.”

Smiling, Xiao Yu’er asked: “Do you truly wish me to become sect leader?”

The Reverend’s long beard swayed gently in the breeze. He said slowly, “For the bronze talisman to be in your hands, is the fortune of Emei. This lowly priest…”

Before he had finished, an object unexpectedly dropped into his palm. It was indeed the sect leader’s talisman. He felt Xiao Yu’er’s gaze on him; the two eyes were shining with merriment. Xiao Yu’er laughed: “To be the Emei sect leader, I would have to become vegetarian, and would have to study scripture. I couldn’t stand it-I beg of you, don’t make me suffer, please take back this trinket of yours.”

Reverend Shenxi was both surprised and elated, he stammered: “But…but you…you have been so gracious, how could I possibly…”

Xiao Yu’er laughed aloud: “What is a talisman to me? My horizons are wide and my future lies ahead. I would hardly be moved by a mere trinket, isn’t this what you said earlier?”

Reverend Shenxi gripped the bronze talisman and looked at Xiao Yu’er. After quite some time, he bowed deeply and said: “In that case, I will take my leave.”

End of Chapter 35

Chapter 25

Chapter 36

Reverend Shenxi turned around, and departed without a backward glance. Xuanyuan Sanguang smiled mockingly: “There goes a bull-nose without a heart; leaving without even a word of thanks.”

Xiao Yu’er answered: “Haven’t you ever heard: [A great kindness does not need to be rewarded by words] ?” As he spoke, he tore off his robe and started to bind up the fresh wounds on his body. Because one hand was still locked up with one of Jiang Yulang’s, Xiao Yu’er’s movements were naturally hampered.

Curious, Xuanyuan Sanguang asked: “Why are you two being so intimate?”

Laughing, Xiao Yu’er said, “If you have a way to tear us apart, I’ll be really impressed.”

Xuanyuan Sanguang grabbed the dagger in his hand and hacked at the handcuffs. With a “jeng” sound, sparks flew everywhere, and the blade snapped in half.

Jiang Yulang sighed. Xiao Yu’er joked: “Do you see now? How can we help being so close to each other?”

Xuanyuan Sanguang grinned and retorted, “That’s not necessarily true. If you don’t feel like being tied up with him, I wouldn’t mind chopping off his hand.”

Jiang Yulang instantly turned pale from fear, but Xiao Yu’er had already cut in, smiling: “Even if you cut off his hand, this piece of junk would still be hanging on me. Might as well leave him around my side, he can relieve my boredom and

chat with me.”

Xuanyuan Sanguang took a closer look at Jiang Yulang, and said slowly: “If you don’t chop off his hand, I’m afraid one day he’ll chop off yours first!”

Xiao Yu’er said, “I wouldn’t worry, he’s not clever enough for that.”

Chuckling, Xuanyuan Sanguang said, “Little devil, you are really interesting! I originally wanted to enjoy your company a bit more, but that little rascal beside you-what an evil and devious face, I find it loathsome to even look at him.”

He patted Xiao Yu’er a couple of times on the shoulder, and then suddenly he was already outside the threshold. He waved a hand and laughed, calling: “Someday when you are free, by yourself, I will definitely find you to have a drink together.”

Xiao Yu’er dashed outside after him, but Xuanyuan Sanguang was already out of sight. At this point, the morning sun was just at its brightest, and the mountain scenery was as beautiful as a painting. Xiao Yu’er thought back to the underground palace; it seemed like a dream to him now.

The path descending the mountain from this Zhao Xuantan temple was not long; the two of them ran quickly along it. The sky was not even fully dark before they saw lights gleaming from a town some distance away.

Xiao Yu’er let out a sigh of relief. He smiled, saying: “I can’t believe I got off this mountain in one piece. Heaven is really smiling on me.”

Jiang Yulang had been silent all this time. Suddenly he smiled too, and asked, “Where would big brother like to go now?”

Xiao Yu’er said, “Well, wherever I go, you would have to go too.”

“Little brother would of course follow big brother wherever he wished,” Jiang Yulang replied with a smile.

“Actually,” Xiao Yu’er reflected, “I don’t really have anywhere that I have to go, I was just going to wander about.”

Jiang Yulang cried delightedly: “Since you were going to wander anyway, why don’t we first visit Wuhan? Little brother has a friend there with a special family heirloom. It is a precious sword that can cleave metal as though it were clay….” Upon reaching this point, he smiled faintly, and his voice quavered and drifted off. He knew there was no need to speak further!

Indeed, Xiao Yu’er had already seized upon his words and exclaimed loudly: “Let’s go then! We’ll go to find your friend.”

He ran a few steps, then abruptly stopped and laughed. “Do you have any money on you? We need to first stop at a town and get some clothes to wear, and also some to cover up our hands, otherwise we’ll be mistaken for escaped convicts for sure.”

Sighing, Jiang Yulang said, “If big brother had let little brother take some treasure from that dungeon, even one piece would be enough to purchase a lifetime’s worth of clothes for both of us.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed and winked at him: “Since you don’t have any money, we’ll just have to go and con some.”

He had hardly finished speaking when a person approached them with a torch. The stranger also carried a big package in his hand.

Xiao Yu’er and Jiang Yulang exchanged glances, and were about to walk over. Unexpectedly, the person caught sight of them and quickly set down the package before saluting them from afar. Without a word, he turned and left.

The package contained four sets of brand new clothes, and these appeared to have been especially tailored for Xiao Yu’er and Jiang Yulang’s sizes. The two of them could not help feeling startled as they viewed the contents of the package.

“This…who sent this to us?” Jiang Yulang wondered.

His brow furrowed, Xiao Yu’er added, “We just left the mountain now, who could have known about it?”

They racked their brains, but could not even make a guess. The only thing they could do was change into their new clothes. By now a thousand lights were visible in the closest town. They covered their hands with a purple robe(?), and swaggered and strutted into the main streets. Although they now looked wonderful, their bellies were grumbling ‘gu gu’.

Xiao Yu’er quipped: “Well, since our benefactor was generous enough to give us clothes, why not go all the way and send us some money…”

As soon as the words fell from his lips, a man dressed like a shopkeeper abruptly came towards them and smiled: “Would you two be the young masters Jiang? Earlier a patron sent five hundred ingots which are now on the counter. This lowly servant was instructed to deliver them into your hands, and also arrange for rooms and dinner with wine.”

Once again Xiao Yu’er and Jiang Yulang looked at each other. Jiang Yulang asked in a serious tone, “What was the person’s name?”

“This lowly servant does not know,” the shopkeeper smiled.

“Then what did he look like?” Jiang Yulang persisted.

The shopkeeper merely said, “In this humble shop, there are many people who come and go during the course of a day. As for what the patron looked like, this lowly servant has unfortunately forgotten.”

He repeatedly bowed, and kept smiling pleasantly, but no matter what Jiang Yulang asked him, the answer essentially remained: “I don’t know.”

Indeed, not only were the wine and dishes already prepared ahead of time, they were exceedingly sumptuous as well.

Xiao Yu’er joked, “This patron seems to be the worm in our bellies; no matter what we lack, he has already fulfilled our need.” (1)

Although his words seemed happy, in his heart he could not help feeling worried. He was reminded of the time he was traveling with the Yellow Ox and White Sheep, the circumstances were quite similar, but now it was not yet two hours since he had left the mountain. (2) How could anyone know of his departure so quickly? This benefactor might appear considerate and kind, but who knows what evil plans he had in store. If he really had good intentions, why did he not reveal himself?

Jiang Yulang’s eyes were darting back and forth; clearly he also harboured suspicions. Although the two of them were young, they knew well that it would be wiser not to reveal their worries.

As night fell, they realized that they would have to sleep together as well.

Xiao Yu’er yawned and said, “Do you know what I’d really like to do right now?”

“Perhaps big brother would like to read a book?” Jiang Yulang smiled.

“It seems that you really know my heart well!” Xiao Yu’er burst out laughing.

Before he had finished speaking, Jiang Yulang had already taken out the text he had snatched from Xiao Mimi. If Xiao Yu’er wanted to read it, then Jiang Yulang of course would want to read it as well.

On the text were encoded many mysteries and obscure principles of martial arts. The two of them did not seem to understand what they read-one would shake his head and the other would sigh-and yet their eyes were huge, as if they wished to devour the entire text into their bellies with a single swallow.

After reading for a couple of hours, Xiao Yu’er yawned again and smiled casually: “This book is extremely difficult to read. I want to sleep now, how about you?”

Jiang Yulang also gave a couple of yawns and smiled: “Little brother wanted to sleep a long while ago.”

The two of them lay on the bed for several hours, and still their eyes were wide open, who knows what they were thinking. If you guessed that they were ruminating on the martial arts secrets buried in the text, they would probably rather die than admit it. But on the second night, after dinner, Xiao Yu’er chuckled: “Well, even a hard-to-read book is better than not reading anything.”

Immediately Jiang Yulang also laughed: “It’s perfect; once you read until your eyes are tired, you can sleep. A book that’s too engaging would actually keep you awake.”

Xiao Yu’er clapped his hands, saying: “Just so-read it early and sleep earlier. Early to bed, early to rise, that is the best way.” In reality, both of them knew that each would not trust the other no matter what, yet they insisted on pretending to be unsuspecting and honest.

In particular, Xiao Yu’er enjoyed it this way; he found it both amusing and exciting. If a person, at all times and places, even while eating, going to the bathroom and sleeping, needed to guard against an attack from others, this kind of life would be so full of suspense, tension and spice. It would be intensely thrilling.

In this fashion, two or three days easily flashed by. These three days were surprisingly without incident and were very peaceful indeed. However, during this time, Xiao Yu’er felt that he was being followed at every moment. It felt rather like the feeling a child gets while walking on a road at night. The child would always feel that a ghost was pursuing behind. If he turned his head, of course there would be no-one. But once he turned back to walk forward, the pursuer would still be at his back.

Xiao Yu’er could not figure out who this person was. Still harder to guess were the person’s motivations. He only knew that whatever he lacked, would immediately be brought to him.

Somehow Xiao Yu’er felt that this mysterious stranger had a favour of sorts to ask of him, and wished to butter him up. But as for what this person might request, Xiao Yu’er had no idea.

The two of them followed the course of the Minjiang (?) River south, and today had reached Xuzhou. In the river region, the people were numerous and the natural resources bountiful. Naturally, the scenery here differed vastly from the barren northwest.

Xiao Yu’er gazed at the rushing river, and felt his spirits rise. Laughing, he turned to Jiang Yulang: “Why don’t we go by boat for a bit?”

Jiang Yulang clapped his hands: “Perfect-this was exactly little brother’s desire.”

Upon his words they noticed a black, brand-new boat sailing towards them. As they prepared to hail it, a boatman, wearing a bamboo hat and a raincoat made of straw, waved and called: “Would the two of you be the masters Jiang? A patron has already hired the boat for your use.”

Xiao Yu’er exchanged a glance with Jiang Yulang and smiled wryly. “If this person isn’t the critter in our bellies, that would be strange.”

He decided that he would not bother to ask who had hired the craft, since he knew that he would not be able to extract the information. Might as well not worry about it, and just board the boat.

The cabins turned out to be surprisingly pleasant, with clean tables and bright, clear windows. Besides the white-haired old boatman, the only other passenger was a young girl of about fifteen or sixteen. A pair of huge eyes kept darting over in Xiao Yu’er’s direction. But Xiao Yu’er did not even cast a glance at her-at this point, the mere sight of any beautiful woman was enough to give him a headache.

In the evening, Jiang Yulang gave a quiet chuckle: “It appears that this Miss Shi has taken a fancy to big brother.”

Xiao Yu’er yawned and murmured lazily, “You’re far more handsome than I, the one she fancies would naturally be you. It’s just too bad you have to be chained to my side, otherwise you could have enjoyed some carnal delights, you little pervert.”

Jiang Yulang’s face flushed. He muttered: “Little…little brother did not mean to say that…”

Xiao Yu’er laughed: “Forget it, if you weren’t thinking about it, why did you mention her, and how do you even know her family name?”

The blush deepened on Jiang Yulang’s cheeks. He stuttered: “Little brother just happened to hear her name by chance.”

Xiao Yu’er’s grin widened: “What are you getting so embarrassed for? Being fond of a girl is nothing to be ashamed of.” Upon these words he grabbed a pillow and covered his eyes, as if preparing to fall asleep.

Jiang Yulang murmured: “Big brother, you are not reading tonight?”

“Well I’m not feeling sleepless tonight, so I won’t need to read. How about you?”

Hurriedly Jiang Yulang laughed: “Since big brother is not reading, of course little brother won’t read either.”

The two of them slept side by side on the bed covers. Jiang Yulang fixed his eyes on Xiao Yu’er for who knows how long, until Xiao Yu’er’s breathing gradually deepened and he fell asleep.

Quietly Jiang Yulang pulled out the martial arts text. Lightly and soundlessly, he flipped through a few pages, and had just settled on the spot where he wanted to read, when Xiao Yu’er abruptly flipped over in his sleep. One arm slammed down on the book, while a leg landed on Jiang Yulang’s belly.

Jiang Yulang ground his teeth in frustration, but dared not awaken Xiao Yu’er.

He could only hope that Xiao Yu’er would turn over again and move his hand away.

Unfortunately it seemed that this time Xiao Yu’er had really fallen into a deep sleep. He remained as motionless as a dead pig.

By now Jiang Yulang’s face had grown white from anger. He looked as though he could shoot fire from his eyes. One hand groped under the bedding, then suddenly pulled out a kitchen knife. The blade immediately sliced down toward Xiao Yu’er’s head!

At precisely that moment, he heard “sough sough” followed by a “dong” sound. Two dried lotus seeds flew in through the window. One hit the kitchen knife and the other struck Jiang Yulang’s wrist.

Whether judged by accuracy of aim, or force on impact, this display was impressive, almost as if these projectiles had been released by a hidden weapons expert!

Jiang Yulang’s hand had been knocked askew by the blow. Although he had still managed to keep his grip on the knife, he was gritting his teeth against the pain, and beads of sweat erupted on his forehead.

Xiao Yu’er appeared to still be half asleep; he mumbled: “What’s going on, was somebody banging a gong?”

Jiang Yulang rapidly hid the kitchen knife again and answered: “No, nothing happened.”

Luckily Xiao Yu’er did not ask any further questions, but merely fell fast asleep again.

But as for Jiang Yulang, how would he be able to even catch a wink?

Exactly who had fired those two lotus seeds?

How could there be such a skilled projectiles expert on this boat?

Could it possibly be that the old white-haired boatman, whose every cough was accompanied by a running nose and watery eyes, was in fact secretly a martial arts expert?

Or perhaps…the flirty young girl, who never seemed capable of doing anything other than flashing her beautiful eyes at them, was she actually the one? Could she have the ability to use two light and flimsy lotus seeds as stealth projectiles?

This was something Jiang Yulang could never believe!

But if the attacker was not either of them, who was it? There were no other people on this boat!

Besides, even if it was the old man or the young girl, why would they be keeping a secret watch on Jiang Yulang and Xiao Yu'er's movements? For what reason would they try to protect Xiao Yu'er? As far as he could tell, they were total strangers to Xiao Yu'er.

With these thoughts, Jiang Yulang's eyes stayed wide open, staring at the cabin ceiling. Now he had pondered the entire night-dawn was breaking, and he still had not come up with an explanation.

Just when he was drifting off to sleep, Xiao Yu'er began to awake, and pushed at him to wake him up too. Xiao Yu'er laughed and asked: "Did you sleep well?"

With a forced chuckle, Jiang Yulang replied: "Marvelous, I slept through until the sun came up."

"Well, better get up then, sleeping too much is not healthy," Xiao Yu'er said.

Jiang Yulang could only say: "You're right. I should get up now."

Although his face wore a cheerful expression, his heart desperately urged him

to strike out at Xiao Yu'er with his fist. When they got to the bow of the boat, Jiang Yulang's eyes watched Xiao Yu'er, who seemed refreshed and full of energy, and his legs itched to boot Xiao Yu'er into the river with a single kick.

The young lady was already fetching a basin of water for face-washing. Her face was cheerful, her eyes danced, and two deep dimples appeared as she smiled. What was she smiling at?

Jiang Yulang's eyes were fixed on her two hands carrying the basin. The hands were white and tender-they truly did not appear capable of releasing a projectile with such force!

The boat was new, as were their garments. Clearly then, they had only recently acquired this craft and become its crew members. Perhaps this had been done for Xiao Yu'er's benefit.

But what would be their motive for doing so?

Xiao Yu'er gave no sign of being aware of any of this; he appeared to be in a very good mood. As soon as he finished washing his face, he ate four giant bowls of gruel with four fried eggs.

Jiang Yulang, on the other hand, could not eat a single bite. He heard Xiao Yu'er chatting with the boatman: "And what is your name, sir?"

The boatman said: "My family name is Shi…cough-cough…people call me old man Shi…cough-cough. My granddaughter, her name is Shi Shuyun."

Jiang Yulang shook his head and smiled wryly to himself. This old man could hardly speak a sentence without coughing and sneezing-how could he be any martial arts expert?

Old man Shi called to his granddaughter: "Little Yun, don't eat so many lotus seeds. If you do, your heart will grow bitter."

Jiang Yulang whipped his head around in shock. Little Yun's small hands, which

were so white and tender, were indeed grasping lotus seeds. As she ate them, she smiled sweetly at him.

Suddenly his heart began to beat wildly “ping-ping”- as he turned his head back the other way, he saw Xiao Yu’er gripping and waving a book about, using it as a fan. Unbelievably, it was the martial arts text.

Jiang Yulang thought back and recalled that last night Xiao Yu’er had slept with his arm and leg flung over on top. This morning when he got up, he must have seized the opportunity to sneak the martial arts text out from Jiang Yulang’s grasp.

The mere sight of Xiao Yu’er using this rare, highly sought-after martial arts text as a fan, was enough to send Jiang Yulang into an exquisite rage. He could not decide if he was more furious or more anxious about the book’s safety.

The boat had already left the dock, when unexpectedly another boat came towards them. Old man Shi used a long bamboo pole and lightly touched the other boat with it. The two boats narrowly missed each other and both felt a shock.

Xiao Yu’er cried out in alarm: “Oh no, it fell in!”

The martial arts text had fallen from his hand into the river. In his shock, Jiang Yulang felt as if his heart had fallen in with it. He could only see the swirls of the river water-in the blink of an eye, the book had been completely swept away from view.

With a miserable face, Xiao Yu’er faltered: “What…what do we do?”

Although inwardly he felt as though his heart were bleeding, Jiang Yulang’s face was smiling. He said mildly: “It’s nothing but a worldly treasure; losing it is of no consequence.”

Of course, he knew that Xiao Yu’er had discarded the text on purpose. Obviously Xiao Yu’er had already learned the text by heart. Not only that, but he

was sure to know that Jiang Yulang was aware of this.

But the fact that neither of them even said a word about this matter, this was the most interesting point of all. Except for the two of them, there was not a third person in this world who could guess what lay in their hearts at this moment.

The depths of the sky were deep blue, and the river sparkled like flowing gold. On both shores of the Yangtze River, the scenery was as beautiful as a painting.

Xiao Yu'er smiled contentedly: "Going slowly by boat isn't bad at all, especially since we're not in a hurry anyway."

"Exactly, we're in no rush at all," Jiang Yulang agreed.

Suddenly, a boat rapidly approached them from behind. There was an escort agency flag flying from the bow. It unfurled as it met the wind, and there appeared a beautifully embroidered lion in gold.

Immediately Jiang Yulang's face brightened. He stood up, his eyes alight, and called out loudly: "Who is the leader from the Gold Lion escort agency on this boat?"

Upon his words, the boat slowed down at once. There were many bare-chested, strong men aboard who were clearly experienced sailors. One of them leaned out of a cabin and shouted back: "Who are you?"

Jiang Yulang waved and answered: "It's me, Jiang Yulang, do you still remember me, Uncle Li?"

The man had a short mustache and wore a stern, fierce expression. But when he recognized Jiang Yulang, his face immediately broke out in smiles. He cried out in surprise: "Ah, it can't be hero Jiang's young son, how did you come to be here?"

Throughout this exchange, old man Shi acted as if he had seen and heard

nothing. He continued to steer his craft through the water, but the Gold Lion agency boat lunged forward, and with a single leap, the man crossed over.

Xiao Yu'er laughed lightly and joked: "This fellow's lightness kung fu needs a little work." He spoke softly; the man appeared not to have heard him and approached them in a friendly manner.

Jiang Yulang smiled and introduced the man: "This is the leader of the Jiangnan Gold Lion agency. He is known in wulin as the 'Purple-faced Lion'. With respect to swimming ability, he is number one."

This statement was clearly meant as a retort to Xiao Yu'er's disparaging comment about the man's lightness kungfu. Xiao Yu'er acted as if he hadn't heard it, and went on drinking tea.

He heard Jiang Yulang and Li Ting loudly chattering, then abruptly the volume of their conversation dropped. They began to softly whisper, as if they did not wish Xiao Yu'er to hear them.

Xiao Yu'er could care less. Although he was aware that Jiang Yulang was up to no good, he didn't try to stop him. In fact, he wanted to see exactly what tricks Jiang Yulang would try.

From the age of three, he had never been afraid of anyone or anything. He didn't know what "fear" meant. The more dangerous something was, the more he found it interesting.

Finally he heard the "Purple-faced Lion" Li Ting say: "After Yunhan(?), I will have to go by land. But your wishes will be carried out without delay, young master Jiang. You can depend on me."

The two of them exchanged a few jokes, and then with another leap, Li Ting left.

Xiao Yu'er laughed and called after him: "Be careful now, you wouldn't want to land in the water."

Li Ting turned his head back to glare at Xiao Yu’er. He seemed to say something which sounded like “You’d better be careful yourself…” But before he was finished, the two boats were already far apart.

Jiang Yulang’s spirits had inexplicably risen since this encounter. He laughed and said: “The men of the Jiangnan Gold Lion agency are like lions and tigers united together-they are true friends and honourable men.”

Old man Shi muttered: “Honourable men? A pack of scoundrels is more like it.” Both Xiao Yu’er and Jiang Yulang had heard his words, but the two of them did not react.

End of Chapter 36

Chapter 26

Chapter 37

The boat made slow progress through the water. Xiao Yu’er kept asking throughout: “What is this place? And where are we now?”

After they passed Yunhan, Xiao Yu’er’s eyes grew larger, as if he were waiting for something exciting to happen. When the boat reached Jiangzhou, they made an early stop.

Xiao Yu’er smiled: “Don’t you think it’s a little too early to sleep now?”

Old man Shi made a “hmph” sound, but otherwise said nothing.

Smiling at him, Little Yun winked and said: “Ahead lies the Wu Gorge (1). Once night falls, it becomes impassable. That’s why we’re stopping here now- tomorrow we’ll be rested and able to cross.”

Xiao Yu’er replied: “Ah, so then we are also approaching the famed Twelve Peaks of Wushan? (2) As a child, when I heard the lines “The call of the monkeys sounding endlessly on both shores, the boat lightly gliding past ten thousand peaks’, (3) I always felt a strong wish to see this place for myself.”

Little Yun laughed prettily: “Beautiful lines of poetry indeed, but this place is hardly scenic. Even the slightest bit of carelessness could cause you to lose your life here. Especially now, those monkeys on both shores would be too scared to make any noise, I’m afraid.”

“Why?” Xiao Yu’er asked, curious.

Laughing again, Little Yun replied softly: “Some things, it is better that you not question too closely.”

Xiao Yu’er turned to gauge Jiang Yulang’s reaction to this, but Jiang Yulang had his head down, watching the river water flow past. Even though he appeared not to have heard Little Yun’s ominous remarks, his face was still very pale.

The next day, he was even paler. Xiao Yu’er knew that whenever Jiang Yulang was anxious about something, his face would grow white.

But what was he feeling anxious about? Was he worried that something bad would happen?

Old man Shi, with a stroke of his long bamboo pole, set the boat in motion. Little Yun changed into a set of green short sleeved shirt and pants. With her pant legs rolled up, her slender figure was shown off to advantage.

Xiao Yu’er watched her in amusement, but did not say a word. As they advanced, the river rushed about and flowed quickly. Yet the number of boats on the river had actually increased without warning.

Abruptly, Xiao Yu’er noticed that the other boats all displayed a strip of yellow silk on their masts. Upon noticing the approach of their boat, the people on the other boats would all shrink back and avoid eye contact.

Old man Shi appeared not to notice anything unusual, while Little Yun’s two huge eyes swept back and forth, looking here and there. She seemed to be quite excited.

As for Jiang Yulang, he would not even let Xiao Yu’er get a glimpse of his face.

Unexpectedly, from the shore there came the sound of someone sounding a blast from a conch shell. The echoes reverberated off the surrounding mountains and rolled off both shores.

Immediately ten or so boats were launched from either side of the river. Each

craft had six or seven men aboard it. Each man had a yellow scarf encircling his head. Some carried curved sabers, others held spears, and some had long bamboo poles in their hands. They shouted and hollered as they rapidly approached.

Little Yun called out: “Grandfather, they are indeed coming.”

Without a change in expression, old man Shi said blandly, “I’ve known they were coming for a long time.”

Xiao Yu’er could not help admiring old man Shi for his composure under the circumstances.

He heard someone from the other boats shouting: “Surrender your lives, you cretins!” The armed men began to raise their weapons.

With a light laugh, Little Yun suddenly called out: “Don’t be nasty, here, why don’t you have some lotus seeds…”

She flicked her wrist. Two men at the front suddenly screamed in pain and dropped their spears. They clapped their hands over their faces; blood could be seen streaming from the spaces between their fingers.

The men began to shout: “Be careful, that b*tch has dangerous projectile weapons!”

Little Yun giggled: “Oh, you want some more seeds then? All right, here you go.”

Her pair of white and soft hands continued to flick. The seeds shot out at the other boats like a shower of rain. Only, this time, her projectiles were not dried lotus seeds, but instead were steel replicas.

They saw men all around them cry out in pain, one by one. Some were bleeding from their faces, while others had their weapons knocked from their hands. But still there were many men who were uninjured, and were now rushing forward.

During all this time, old man Shi had neither moved nor spoken. Suddenly he threw his head back and let out a wild howl. Such a piercing and clear sound, like a dragon or a phoenix calling out through the skies. Everyone felt as if their eardrums would split.

Meanwhile, he made a strong sweep of his bamboo pole, as fast and devastating as a thunderbolt flashing over the water. Three people closest to his pole were hurled backwards and landed far away on the rocks at the foot of the surrounding mountains.

A fourth person was about to leap onto the bow of their boat, when old man Shi made another thrust and skewered the attacker straight through his belly. The dozen or so onlookers did not dare to advance, as they listened to his agonized screams and saw the pole suspending the corpse, moist and dripping with fresh blood!

To see such a display of power from old man Shi, whom they presumed to be feeble and riddled with disease, was a shock not only to Xiao Yu'er. Jiang Yulang's face had gone completely pasty white with fear, and his forehead was drenched in chilly sweat.

Old man Shi continued to howl. By now their boat had sailed right into the crowd of hostile craft. The sailors all mustered up their courage, and amid fierce cries, rushed toward their boat. Some dived into the water; likely intending to surround and capsize the boat.

"This is bad!" Xiao Yu'er thought to himself. Once the boat sunk, their outlook would be really gloomy indeed.

Right at that moment, a man dressed in yellow robe and scarf, with a beard grey as steel, called out. He thundered: "Stop! Stop right now!"

The dozen men halted their advance at once.

The stranger in yellow was standing atop a pile of boulders by the water's edge. He reached down and yanked one of the swimmers from the depths of the

water up to the surface. He slapped the swimmer seven or eight times, all the while furiously shouting: “Have all you morons gone blind? Did you not see clearly who this is on the boat? How dare you?!”

Old man Shi, with a light touch of his bamboo pole, was able to keep the boat motionless even amid the rapid and tumultuous flow of the river.

The stranger in yellow immediately bowed and smiled apologetically: “Truly, I was unaware that elder Shi and his grand-daughter were on this boat, otherwise we would never have dared to raise our hands! Along the Yangtze River, who could claim not to be a junior of elder Shi?”

Old man Shi coldly replied: “You are far too courteous, this old man does not deserve such formalities. I am becoming useless in my old age; of course this river is your territory. If you want to take this old man’s life, I can only surrender it to you.”

Beads of sweat streaked down the other man’s forehead like raindrops. He rapidly protested: “This lowly junior is blind and deserves to die. I had never even imagined that hero Shi would appear on these waters again, otherwise how could I dare to scavenge for food here?”

Old man Shi let out a mirthless snicker. “ ‘Scavenge for food’ may be too humble a description! Throughout jianghu, who would not know Wang Huafeng, whose ‘Nest Engulfs the River’? (4) Who has not heard of the huge deals and big business you do?”

Suddenly he glared and shouted,"There are only a few poor passengers in my boat. Isn't it strange that you are targeting my boat? Or...did someone order you to do this?

All of a sudden Wang Huafeng, the Yellow Hornet's brow dripped with cold sweat again. On the boat Jiang Yulang's forehead was also wet with beads of perpiration.

"I beg for Elder Shi's mercy, this lowly junior really does not know," replied Wang Huafeng.

"I know that you are not telling the truth, however you have shown your respect, for this I am not going to make things difficult for you," said Old Man Shi. Just with a push of the bamboo pole, the boat sped swiftly. Quickly the boat left the dangerous Wu Gorge.

While staring at the wind blown white beard of the old man, finally Jiang Yulang asked slowly,"You, you... are Elder..."

"Can you keep your mouth shut or not?"snapped Elder Shi.

Immediately Jiang Yulang complied and quickly lowered his glance.

Xiao Yu'er suddenly laughed and said,"Elder Shi, I'm curious to know who you are, I bet you are a respected elder in Jianghu. Yet you complied to be my boatman, not that I don't appreciate it, but I am very curious."

Jiang Yulang got scared hearing Xiao Yu'er bold statement. Elder Shi replied with a smile, "Don't thank me, there's no need for that."

Xiao Yu'er blinked his eyes and said, "Then, whom should I thank? Maybe someone else asked you to take and protect me? You have a good heart, if my guess is right, please tell me the truth."

Suddenly Elder Shi had a coughing fit that he had to squat down.

"You did not answer my question, that means that it's true." Xiao Yu'er laughed.

Suddenly Elder Shi stood up and glared at him, "You are still young, but your mouth is too sharp. What would happen when you grow up?"

Xiao Yu'er glared back, and retorted, "Whatever happen when I grew up is my own business. Don't assume just because you helped me that I have to kowtow to you. Without your help, I still would survive, moreover did I ever asked you to help me?"

Elder Shi glared at him for a moment, suddenly he smiled and said, "I've never seen a kid like you in my life."

"I'm one of a kind in this world," agreed Xiao Yu'er. He looked away and thought,"This old man is no ordinary man, yet he was willing to take this lowly task as a boatman for me. Can't imagine how much higher is the status of the person who asked him. That person always think about my well being. I wonder what's the reason behind all these. If he's able to order someone as highly skilled as Elder Shi, it is highly unlikely that the person would need my help."

Xiao Yu'er hadn't the slightest clue who that person behind the scene was . He looked at Jiang Yulang, who looked scared and didn't dare to look directly at him. Xiao Yu'er laughed and said to him, "Didn't your friend the Purple-faced Lion yesterday said that he would be in Hun han?

"If..if..if, I'm not mistaken, that's what he said," stuttered Yulang.

"Does he dare to cross the Wu Gorge with his boat knowing that there are pirates around? Or is it possible that he's in cahoot with the pirates; isn't it common for people from the escort company to have raport with the pirates?

Jiang Yulang wiped his sweat and said,"I...I'm not very clear about that."

"Escortman in cahoot with the pirates, while you are friend with the escortman and told him to tell the pirates to block this boat. If it is not so, how come other boats were not stopped? And why were those pirates after my life and had no interest in goods? It's obivous there's nothing on this boat worth looting."

Jiang Yulang's body was drenched with cold sweat, he gave a weak grin and said,"Big brother, you are jesting with me."

"Correct, I'm just jesting, you are laughing, right? Hahaha, isn't that so amusing?" Xiao Yu'er laughed loudly as he lay down. As if talking to himself, he spoke aloud,"Yes, how strange and amusing that someone can be drenched with sweat when the weather is so refreshing and cool."

On one corner Little Yun kept looking at Xiao Yu'er with a smile, she saw that his hair tousled by the wind and the sun gave the scars on his face a reddish glow.

Actually no one could say that Xiao Yu'er was handsome, but somehow people found him attactive.

Because of the current and wind, their boat arrived at Ijiang before sunset.

Ijiang is a village by the mouth of the river where three rivers meet, a place to restock for boats traveling between Sujwan and Ohpak. One could see all kind of sail masts and all kind of rackets could be heard.

After entering Ohpak, Jiang Yulang's eyes lit up, he wanted to say something, but hesitated.

Staring at him, Xiao Yu'er smiled and suddenly he stood up and said,"Let's go, we've been on the boat too long, I'm getting seasick." Jiang Yulang immediately perked up upon hearing his suggestion.

"You..., you really want to go?" Little Yun asked. Her eyes didn't shine bright anymore, instead they looked sad and hurt.

However, Xiao Yu'er didn't pay any attention, he called out, "Elder Shi, thanks a lot for bringing us here. Please bring the boat closer to the shore. Although you were a little arrogant and pretended to be old, you are a good person and I will always remember you."

"Have you considered your decision thoroughly? You really want to get off here?" asked Elder Shi.

Xiao Yu'er laughed and said,"Other people might run away from danger, but there are people that live to feel the excitement of danger. When things are peaceful and quiet, it would be down right boring for them."

Elder Shi stared at the young man for a long while, finally with a laugh he

replied, "Very well, you may go, if you get out alive you can visit me at..."

"No need to tell me where you live, you don't even need to tell me your name," Xiao Yu'er quickly said while shaking his hand. "because I'm not going to look for you, and I have no intention to use your name to scare people off."

Little Yun looking upset, biting her lip she said, "You are the most ungrateful creature in this world!"

"Is that so? If that's correct, then I'm the most fortunate person," said Xiao Yu'er laughing.

"You....you..." suddenly Little Yun stamped her foot and went inside the cabin of the boat.

The boat started to get close to the river bank, and Jiang Yulang started to look left and right.

"Oh well, if you want to meet with danger, go ahead and go. I'm sure you won't be disappointed." Elder Shi spoke.

By the bank of the river, the village was full of commotion, people moving back and forth without stopping. There were people elegantly dressed, there were also beggars and coolies dressed in rags. There were people with beaming faces, and people with long faces. There were people getting on the boats and some getting off the boats. People yelling and cursing. A port is a port, anywhere was just the same, chaotic, full with people from different places.

The air was filled the smell of chicken's and goat's poop, the smell of rotten wood, the smell of varnish, smell of sweet aroma of tea leaves and the pungent smell of herbal medicines, and in addition the smell of alcohol from drunkards, and also the sweet smelling of jasmine flower from the ladies hair. That was the typical situation of a port.

Being a country boy, Xiao Yu'er was rather confused being in the middle of such a commotion. He looked at one thing and watched another interesting

thing, in the midst of bustle he felt so happy.

Jiang Yulang did not stay still either, his neck kept turning left and right as if searching for someone.

"Who are you looking for? asked Xiao Yu'er.

"Err...not really, I was just looking all the commotion going on," answered Yulang nervously.

Suddenly from the middle of the crowd someone shouted,"Brother Jiang, Jiang Yulang..."

"Yes, over here, over here," answered Yulang joyfully. Immediately he waded through the crowd toward the direction of the voice, Xiao Yu'er had no choice but to follow along.

By the side of the road under a tree parked three big expensive carriages with several horses hitched to them. Several young men elegantly dressed waved at Jiang Yulang.

With joy Yulang ran toward them, several young men came to greet him beaming with smile, the swords by their waists made clanking noise.

Right away they joked and chatted like long lost friends, nobody paid any attention to Xiao Yu'er. However, that didn't bother him at all. He waited till they were done talking then he spoke to Jiang Yulang,"Strange, how in the world did your friends know that you are coming?"

Jiang Yulang pulled a long face and scoffed,"It's none of your business."

His attitude changed 180 degrees. Before he was calling big brother and addressing himself as little brother, but now the way he talked was as a master speaking to a servant.

One of young men, wearing green outfit and having a pale face, looked at Xiao Yu'er with disdain as if seeing a mangy dog. With contempt he asked Yulang, "Who is he, Brother Jiang?"

Yulang replied, "He is the wisest,and the handsomest man on earth , and he makes every girl swoons at his feet. What do you think, do you agree?"

All the young men laughed as if Jiang Yulang just told them the funniest joke.

Xiao Yu'er kept his cool and with a laugh he said, "You should introduce your friends."

Yulang thought for a while, and said, "Ok, I will introduce them to you." Then he pointed to the young man with the green outfit, "This is the son of Congtin ciangkun (commanding officer) of Henciu city, Bai Ling Xiao, Bai shao-xia, people gave him the title 'Lik-bau-kiam-khek' (Swordsman in Green), his thirty six sword-strokes Hwe-hong kiam is truly awesome.

"Aha, truly fitting to the title, he's a handsome man," agreed Xiao Yu'er with a laugh.

Bai Ling Xiao laughed with pride, as Xiao Yu'er continued, "Maybe Master Bai would be so kind as to share with me the white powder from his face, so I too can look handsome."

Right away Bai Ling Xiao's laugh turned sour, his pale face turned green.

Xiao Yu'er pointed to the young man in red, tall built like a solid post, with a laugh he asked, "And who is this person?"

"This is Li Ming Sheng, the first son of Congpiauthau Kim-say escort, the best escort company from Kanglam province, the Jianghu people gave him the title 'Ang-sah-kim-to' (Golden saber Red attire), with his saber in hand, even a thousand people can't overcome him," explained Jiang Yulang.

"Wow, what a valiant man!" praised Xiao Yu'er clapping his hands.

Li Ming Sheng looked pleased and was about to laugh when Xiao Yu'er added on, "Good thing you gave a complete explanation, or else I would have thought that he's just a pig butcher.

Both Li Ming Sheng eyes almost popped out of the sockets, he looked like a bull ready to charge.

The third young man dressed in flowery outfit and a flamboyant hat, face powdered white like white washed wall, eyebrows plucked and he's more feminine than an average girl. He laughed coquettishly and introduced himself without being asked, I am Hua Xi Xiang, my father is known as 'Yu-mian-shen-pan' (Ivory-faced Judge), anyone in Jianghu who has never heard of my dad, must have hearing problem .

Jiang Yulang laughed and added on, "Yu-mian-shen-pan Song daihiap (Hero Song) is well known for his unrivaled kungfu. Brother Xi Xiang is using his mother's maiden name. Auntie Hua herself was a well known heroine in her primetime."

"Hehehe, I don't need to be ashamed of Mother. She was truly an amazing lady," said Hoa Sik-hiang as he moved his hips femininely. Maybe he felt that people respect him too well that nobody would make fun of his feminine antics.

Xiao Yu'er watched him for a moment and suddenly he shook his head and said, "What a pity, what a pity?"

"What do you mean, what a pity?" Hua Xi Xiang asked and teheed in a feminine way.

Xiao Yu'er sounding regretful answered," What a pity that Master Hua is not up on stage. It's a big lost to the artist world."

Hua Xi Xiang stared in surprise, and forgot to laugh.

Jiang Yulang continued on, introducing the other two young men. The tall

skinny one like a pole was Ho Koan-kun, the son of Gui-ying-zi (the Devil's Silhouette) Ho Bu-siang who was well known to be number one in Kanglam province for his lightness skill. The other person was short and heavy with a smiling face but piercing eyes. It seemed that his kungfu was the best among those five young men.

Xiao Yu'er looked at them indifferently, he knew that some of these young men had only their fathers' fame to boast. However, it would be difficult for him to handle even three out five of them and they all were looking at him with dislike.

Suddenly someone shouted flirtatiously, "Yulang, you brute! You have no feeling, you know I'm here, yet you ignore me." Out from one of the carriages came out a teenage girl. She's very young, yet her make up was thick.

Honestly speaking, that girl's face was not ugly, only Xiao Yu'er felt nauseated by her mannerism. On the other hand Jiang Yulang came and greeted her joyfully, "Little Sister Sun, if I had known you're here, I would have come and greeted you long time ago."

Like a dancer on stage Little Sister Sun came with her arms stretch out and jumped into Jiang Yulang's arms while grumbling in a spoilt voice, "You little devil, where have you been? You've been gone a long time. I missed you very much."

Pek Lengsiau piped up, "Look, no matter what our Brother Jiang is still romantic..."

Little Sister Sun turned around and said, "Look at him! He looked so skinny." She blinked her eyes several times, pretending to cry, yet not a single tear came.

Jiang Yulang caressed her cheek and said, " Don't be so sad my dear, I'm back after all. If you feel sad, you might get skinny."

"You...you...," grumbled Little Sister Sun as she swayed her hips.

Everyone laughed, except Xiao Yu'er who felt disgusted. If he had just finished

eating, he would threw up right there and then.

Little Sister Sun stared at him, with her hands on her hip she shouted,"Who are you? You disgusting thing, quickly get lost!"

"If I only could, I would thank heaven and earth," sighed Xiao Yu'er.

While hanging on to the carriage window, Xiao Yu'er poke his head complete out. It's because Little Sister Sun was in Jiang Yulang's arms and Yu'er couldn't stand her perfume that was nauseating to him.

Hua Xi Xiang and Bai Ling Xiao actually brought their own carriages, but they all went in one carriage. They had a great time chatting, laughing and joking among themselves, and completely ignoring Xiao Yu'er.

Secrectly Xiao Yu'er was surprised that Jiang Yulang turned out to be so uncouth, he tried looking at Yulang with the corner of his eyes, he saw that Yulang was laughing happily, but his eyes were gleaming like a bird of prey ready to pounch. It was clear that he wasn't as crude as his friends; he was just faking to conform to their behavior. If he's not conforming, how could he be closed friends with the young people from well known family.

Xiao Yu'er smiled, again he poke his head out of the window, he saw Li Ming Sheng who was known as "Golden Saber, Red Attire" riding on a horse behind the carriage. His whip cracked the air, scaring the pedestrian that they moved out of the way.

"Oh... today I am so happy," Little Sister Sun sighed. "Only too bad that...."

"Only too bad that there's one too many people here, isn't it?" finished Hua Xi Xiang.

Little Sister Sun blinked and said, "Yes, have you ever seen a disgusting creature like him?"

"Ofcourse I have," answered Hua Xi Xiang, "Wasn't it just the other day that

we met a Miss Po? She's grossly obese that poor Brother Bai almost suffocated being squashed by her. Isn't Miss Po in the same class as him?"

Before he finished his sentence the others were howling with laughter. But upon seeing Xiao Yu'er joined in their laughter, in fact his laughter was the loudest, automatically they stopped laughing.

Giving Xiao Yu'er the evil eye, Little Sister Sun said with a sneer, "It's amazing why this person still have the face to remain here. If I were he, I'd rather chop my arm off than to remain here."

With a grin Xiao Yu'er answered, "Yes, this person is just like any other person, except that he has thick skin. He'd rather sit here for another three years than to chop his own arm."

All eyes stared at him angrily, however Xiao Yu'er didn't give a hoot. He knew that at the most they only could try to make him embarrass or angry, but couldn't make him go away since his hand was cuffed to Jiang Yulang's wrist. Especially that Jiang Yulang didn't dare to make a move risking his life, knowing that Xiao Yu'er's martial arts was superior to his.

The bathtub was a custom made wooden tub, almost as tall as a person, with steam coming out of it.

Jiang Yulang had his body totally immersed in it, his eyes closed, several times he let out a deep sigh of contentment.

What about Xiao Yu'er?

How pitiful, he could only stand outside of the bathtub watching. Moreover, one of his arms was up on the edge of the tub, what a torture.

Bai Ling Xiao, the son of the commanding officer, was sitting in front with his feet propped high on the table. Rubbing his sparsely grown beard, he laughed

and said, "Brother Yulang, what do you think of my bathtub?"

"Heavenly," asnwered Yulang , his eyes still closed.

"Don't underestimate the value of this bathtub," said Bai Ling Xiao. "It has a long and interesting history. It came far away from the East (Japan). It is said that the people in those islands pay a great deal of attention to the art of bathing. It is a major recreation activity and enjoyment in their lives. Sometimes they would take hours immersing in the tub.

"Well, it's been more than an hour that I bathe," laughed Yulang.

Finally he got up, two pretty maids came barefooted with the towels. Their white hands slowly dried Jiang Yulang's body till it gave a red glow.

"Hmmm, I could get used to this type of bathing everyday," said Jiang Yulang.

The two maid laughed coquettishly as they dressed Jiang Yulang. He felt fresh after the bath, as he stretched lazily he laughed, "All my joints felt loose and relaxed, my body feels ten catties lighter."

"Yes, but I feel ten catties heavier," spoke Xiao Yu'er.

"Too bad that the host had no intention to let you bathe here. If you want to bathe, go and bathe somewhere else, but I have no intention of accompanying you," replied Yulang harshly.

"Ofcourse, ofcourse," said Xiao Yu'er. "If I would like to bathe, I have to chop off my arm so I can go elsewhere, isn't that so?"

"Just as long as you know," replied Yulang.

"Even though I haven't bathe, still I'm much cleaner than some people who are dirty inside and have no shame," says Xiao Yu'er.

Bai Ling Xiao asked angrily, "Who are you referring to?"

"Why? Are you dirty inside and have no shame?" laughed Xiao Yu'er.

"You stinky scum!" shouted Pek Lengsiau.

"If you are not that kind of person, then that insult must be for someone else. Why are you upset? asked Xiao Yu'er.

Little Sister Sun called from the door, "Hey, Jiang Yulang, did you drown in the tub? How come you took so long, Hurry up, let's go out to eat. Today Hoa Sik-hiang is going to treat us at Giok-lau-tang."

"Giok-lau-tang? That famous chain restaurant from Tiangsah? asked Yulang.

"That's right," replied Little Sister Sun.

"Hmm..., just thinking of 'Bit-ciap-hwe-tui' (ham with sweet and sour sauce) makes my mouth salivates," spoke Jiang Yulang happily.

The sweet sour ham of Giok-lau Tang restaurant was well known. Under the flickering light of the lantern, it looked like a platter of a shining golden brown onyx gem, pleasant to the eye. However, it's far from pleasant for Xiao Yu'er, as he stretched out his chopsticks to dig into it, he was immediately blocked by Pek Lengsiau's chopsticks.

“He he, I don't know you, what made you think that we would invite you to eat?” sneered Hua Xi Xiang.

“Ah, yes! That's right, if I want to eat, I have to chop off my arm, go out and find my own food.” replied Xiao Yu'er.

“Hah, you're getting smarter,” Bai Ling Xiao mocked.

Xiao Yu'er was only allowed to watch; watching them eat and drink till their

heart content. He can only grinned while his stomach was protesting for food.

Glancing at Xiao Yu'er, Hua Xi Xiang snickered, “If I were he, I would crawl under the table rather than sitting here salivating. By chance there would be a rib bone or two down there.”

Right away Xiao Yu'er laughed and shot back, “If I were to be born not a man nor a woman, I would kill myself by jumping into a well, rather than be an embarrassment to my parents.

Hua Xi Xiang suddenly slammed the table and bellowed,”you scum, who are you mocking at?”

“Why? Are you such a person, not a man nor a woman? Why are you getting mad?”replied Xiao Yu'er.

Right at that moment came a loud noise of many footsteps climbing up the stairs. Several people came up quickly, most of them were in the fifties, elegantly dressed. As soon as they reached the top floor, they looked around intimidatingly, it's obvious that they were no ordinary people to be reckoned with.

Hua Xi Xiang, Li Ming Sheng, Ho Koan-kun who were boisterous suddenly became quiet and stood up as soon as they saw those elders. They became well behaved, with their head bowing with respect, some called out, “Teacher” and others “Dad”.

Xiao Yu'er frowned, “So these people are the father and teacher of these youngsters. This is not good!”

Surprisingly the elders ignored them, instead they came to Xiao Yu'er and approached Xiao Yu'er and greeted him, “Is this Jiang Yu, Jiang shao-xia, we presume?”

Naturally Xiao Yu'er was surprised and confused, “That's right. I'm he.” he replied, staring at them.

One of them with a pale face and sparse beard right away shouted,”Hey servant, quickly prepare a feast, we are celebrating to welcome Kang shao-xia.

Hua Xi Xiang and his friends couldn't help but stared dazedly. Xiao Yu'er later found out that the paled face man and sparse beard was “Yu-mian-shen-pan, Hua Xi Xiang's father. Besides that, Gui-ying-zi Ho Bu-sing and Kim-say-cu Li Di were both there, also present were all the first class fighters of the town, not a single one absent.

Xiao Yu-er had a whole platter of ham with sweet and sour sauce to himself. Finally, he couldn't help but laughed,”The children treated me like dirt, but the parents treated me with great respect, even spread a banquet for me. Can someone explain what this is all about?”

“If our children were disrespectful, please forgive them, said Yu-mian-shen-pan.

Xiao Yu-er looked at a dazed Jiang Yulang besides him, and said to him with laugh,”Ah, that's no problem at all with me, only you....”

Gui-ying-zi Ho Bu-siang, a tall and dark faced man continued,”Upon the request of a Bulim cianpwe (honorable elder of the martial world/jianghu) we as hosts here were instructed to serve Jiang shao-xia well. This elder is well respected ...”

“Who is this person?”asked Xiao Yu-er.

“Are you sure you don't know him?”replied Yu-mian-shen-pan.

“I only know that he has a nose, two eyes and a pair of ears.”

Yu-mian-shen-pan thought for a while and laughed, “The elder told us to keep it a secret, because he doesn't want you to return the favor.”

“Don't worry, I never return anybody a favor, but if it is revenge, that's a

different story.”replied Xiao Yu'er with a laugh. “But if it's too much trouble to revenge, I just consider it done.”

“If everyone has a big heart like you, Master Jiang, what a peaceful world we would live in,”replied Yu-mian-shen-pan.

“Now, can you tell me who this elder is?” asked Xiao Yu-er.

“The leader of Emei sect, Reverend Shenxi,” replied Yu-mian-shen-pan slow and clear.

“Hmm... so it turns out to be him,” Xiao Yu'er spoke aloud. “All these time it was him who's been helping me many times, apparently he hasn't forgotten me.” He then slapped Jiang Yulang's hand, ”You didn't expect that, didn't you?”

“Nope.” replied Jiang Yulang stiffly.

“Amazing, really amazing, respected leader of Emei is willing to be my personal guard,” exclaimed Xiao Yu'er with a laugh.

Now that the puzzle had been solved, Xiao Yu'er was ready to eat and drink till his heart content. With a smile Yu-mian-shen-pan and his friends watched, but didn't participate eating.

Finally Xiao Yu'er put down his chopsticks and rubbed his belly, and said with a laugh,”Oh my dear tummy, I've paid all my dues to you.”

“Is Jiang Xiaohiap done eating?” asked Yu-mian-shen-pan.

“Yep, I'm so full that I can explode anytime,”answered Xiao Yu'er.

“Would you like some desert, or fruits perhaps?” asked Yu-mian-shen-pan.

“I'd love to, but there's no more room in my stomach,” replied Xiao Yu'er laughing.

“If that's so, then we've followed Reverend Shenxie's instructions well and did our job as hosts properly,” said Yu-mian-shen-pan with a smile.

Xiao Yu'er blinked his eyes and asked,”Is there a hidden meaning behind your statement?”

Suddenly Yu-mian-shen-pan stood up and slowly said,”Please open the window and look outside.”

When Xiao Yu'er did as instructed, he saw that the street lights had died off, not a single person can be seen walking on the street anymore. Instead the restaurant was surrounded by dozens of people in light clothing.

Xiao Yu'er suddenly noticed that there's no other guests upstairs anymore, and the waiters looked scared and visibly shaking with fear.

“What's the meaning of this?”Xiao Yu'er asked.

“We've followed Reverend Shenxie's instruction well and did our job as hosts properly,”said Yu-mian-shen-pan curtly. “However, another person have asked us..... for your head, what do you think about that?”

“Haha, I feel honored that somebody wants my head,” Xiao Yu'er said with a laugh. “But who is this person? Regardless, you need to tell me, right?”

“Enough for you to know that he has one nose and two eyes, that's all,”scoffed Yu-mian-shen-pan.

As Xiao Yu'er turned his head, he saw Jiang Yulang and the others looking very happy, while Gui-ying-zi and others had a murderous looked. They all surrounded him and there seemed no way out, one slight move would have him end up in bloody mess. Especially having one of his hands handcuffed to Jiang Yulang's wrist, to escape is impossible.

Xiao Yu'er heaved a long sigh, then said with a grin, ”It seems inevitable that I

have to surrender my head to you. Hah, in exchange for a platter of ham with sweet and sour sauce, that's too cheap!”

“Swoosh”, suddenly Kim-say-cu Li Di unsheathed his saber and shouted,”What are you waiting for? Do you want us to do it for you?”

“No need,” exclaimed Xiao Yu'er laughing. “It's just that I want to know if your saber is sharp enough or not. If it could chop my head off in one stroke then I would like to borrow it for a while.”

“Very well, seeing how you can laugh while facing death, I will lend my saber to you,” laughed Li Di. “Thump”, he suddenly threw his saber and it stuck on the table.

Slowly Xiao Yu'er reached out his hand and held the hilt of the saber. His eyes follow his hand movement, staring with steely glint, colder than the reflection of the saber.

Staring at Xiao Yu'er suddenly Yu-mian-shen-pan took out his weapon, a pair of Boan-koan-pit, a pair of calligraphy brushes. Slowly he caressed his weapon as if caressing someone dear to him.

Xiao Yu'er became unsure, his fingers touched the hilt of the saber, but he hesitated to pull the saber out.

“Go ahead, why don't you pull the saber out. What are you going to do, slash me with it or attack someone else? Or maybe point it at Yulang's neck to force your way out?” mocked Yu-mian-shen-pan. He continued, “For sure, you are not going to kill yourself. Isn't that right?”

Xiao Yu'er's hand was still on the saber's hilt, but still he didn't make a move. He felt his palm cold and sweaty.

“I know that you don't dare to pull out the saber, because the sooner you do that the sooner you'd die,”spoke Yu-mian-shen-pan. “Knowing that you are a wise man, I will let you die quickly. There! Good riddance!”

As soon as he finished speaking, with a quick movement one of the steelbrush attacked the Thian-tut-hiat (acupoint) at Xiao Yu'er's throat.

Thian-tut-hiat was one of the lethal acupoints of the human body, a mere hit or kick on that point was dangerous enough especially now being hit with Boan-koan-pit of an expert. Many times Xiao Yu'er experienced danger yet escaped death, who could have guessed that he would die right now.

Helplessly Xiao Yu'er watched the tip of the steel brush come closer to his neck. He felt too lazy to dodge, because he knew that it was no use. If he could dodge the first attack, the second one would follow and in the end it would be impossible for him to safe himself. If he's going to die regardless, might as well die a quick death with the least pain.

As the tip of the steel brush was about to thrush his throat suddenly with a “ching” sound, a wine cup flew in from outside the window and accurately blocked the Boan-koan-pit tip.

Even though the steel brush attack was accompanied by strong inner force, yet the fragile wine cup did not break. The strange thing, that wine cup was thrown from a far distance, yet could land exactly on the tip of the steel brush, intact. In fact Yu-mian-shen-pan felt his hand numb at the impact. With shock he quickly jumped back and shouted, “Who's there?”

Under the lighting of the half moon, one could see a man squatting on top of the sign board of a silk cloth store across the street. That man's hair was a mess, his chest exposed, his hand was holding a big wine gourd and drinking from it. Because his face was mostly hidden by the wine gourd, it was difficult to see who he really was.

However, with a glance Xiao Yu'er could recognized the man immediately. He thought, “With him here, things will get pretty interesting.”

Yu-mian-shen-pan made a quick flick with his steel brush, and the wine cup on the tip of the brush flew aiming toward the chest of that mysterious man. He was sure that with his strong inner energy the wine cup would make a hole in the

body, regardless who that man was.

“Ching, crash!” the wine cup hit the man's body. The cup broke in many pieces, however it didn't seem that the man even felt it.

Naturally Yu-mian-shen-pan was startled. Hua Xi Xiang, Bai Ling Xiao and the others quickly unsheathed their weapons.

With a blur suddenly Gui-ying-zi Ho Bu-siang flew out. His lightness skill was well known as number one in Kanglam province, his movement was indeed faster than anybody else. As he was in mid air, his hand moved and dozens of red dots flew toward that man.

That man laughed heartily, suddenly a stream of silver spray flew out of his mouth, and shot down the projectiles. The silver stream continued moving toward Gui-ying-zi's body.

This number one expert in lightness skill wasn't able to block the silver stream. He flew back faster than he came out, he flew backward through the window, and across the table and “bang!” he hit the wall.

The silver stream sprayed all over the place and everybody could smell the strong smell of wine. It turned out that what came out of the man's mouth was the wine that he was drinking.

Just the sprayed of wine alone was enough to knocked Gui-ying-zi back in. Everybody was amazed and stared in dismayed. Bai Ling Xiao, Hua Xi Xiang and the others being inexperienced, knew not “how thick the earth was and how high the sky”, quickly moved their weapon and was about to jump and attack.

But without warning something flew in and loud slaps were heard, “slap, smack!” several times, in a blinking of an eye the weapons in Bai Ling Xiao's hand and others were no longer there, and each of them were rubbing their swollen cheek. In that short of time each one of them had received a slap on their cheek.

When they looked, the person squatting on top of the sign board across the

street had sat down on a chair that Kui-eng-cu sat before, his left hand was holding the wine gourd, while the right hand holding Pek Lengsiau's and his friends' weapons.

Jiang Yulang face turned white with fright as he recognized who that person was.

Suddenly that man slammed the table with the weapons that he was holding and shouted, “You sons of a turtle, you see your Master is here already, yet your not rushing to have the food ready?”

Yu-mian-shen-pan realized that the kungfu of that mysterious man was very high, and that he would be a tough opponent. He was worried that Li Di and others might be careless, so he quickly stepped up, and with a forced smile asked, “Brother, may I know what your honorable name is? And why did you hit these people without a reason?”

That man glared at him and answered him roughly, “Who's your brother? What kind of a bedbug are you?”

Yu-mian-shen-pan tried to be patient, and answered,” I'm Siau Cu-jun, the people of Jianghu call me Yu-mian-shen-pan.”

“Yu-mian-shen-pan? Hahahaha!” that man laughed. “You have such a grand title, but do you deserve it?”

While laughing he extended his hand, giving the weapons he snatched to Siau Cu-jun. Startled, and without thinking Yu-mian-shen-pan reached out his hand to receive those weapons, but instead his Boan-koan-pit suddenly exchanged hand into that mysterious man's hand.

That man put down his wine gourd on the table, with one quick movement he broke the pair of Boan-koan-pit into four pieces, and threw them on the floor.

Although Siau Cu-jun treasured his weapons, upon seeing how great that man's inner strength, he could only keep silent and didn't dare to make a move.

Kim-say-cu Li Di had never lost a match before, thought that Siau Cu-jun's weapon was useless, he was about to attack. Luckily Jiang Yulang manage to stop him and whispered something to him.

All of a sudden Li Di's face turned ashen, he stuttered, “You...are you 'Ok-tu-kui' Suanyuan Sanguang!?”

There's no doubt that the mysterious man was indeed Ok-tu-kui, the “Gambling Devil”, alias “Whom He Sees, He Gambles With”.

Ok-tu-kui didn't bother to reply, he just grunted, he pulled out the saber that was stuck on the table and immediately slashed the small table on the side. On the table was a candle on a holder lighting the room.

Ok-tu-kui's slashed the candle in halves down to the candle holder and the small table. Slowly the candle split into two followed by the candle holder and the table, they all collapsed.

Ok-tu-kui flicked his hand and “wham”, the saber flew and stuck on the ceiling, sending layers of dust down.

Then without giving respect to anybody there, he sat down and yelled, “You sons of a turtle, you see your Master is here already, yet your not rushing to have the food ready?”

Although the phrase was the same as before, but now it carried a lot of weight,and nobody dared to mock him this time.

Li Di hurriedly shouted, “Hey waiter, look the master is here, what are you waiting for? Go quickly and prepare a banquet.”

Having the mentality of a business escort of shifting where ever the flow went, he changed his attitude completely.

The waiter scurried quickly to the kitchen and soon many different food were

served. Siau Cu-jun and Li Di tried to outdo each other hosting Ok-tu-kui.

However, Ok-tu-kui Xuanyuan Sanguang, glared at them and scolded them, “Who asked you to serve me? Except for that Jiang boy, I want all of you to get out of my face.” Soon after saying that, he poured some wine for Xiao Yu'er and Jiang Yulang.

Ofcourse Xiao Yu'er was ecstatic, on the other hand Jiang Yulang got very frighten.

“Drink!” ordered Han-wan Sam-kong, as he raised his cup.

Without hesitation Xiao Yu'er raised his cup and emptied it. Jiang Yulang didn't dare to disobey. Just as he laid down his cup, he saw Ok-tu-kui glaring at him.

“Do you know the name of this wine?” demanded Ok-tu-kui to Yulang.

“I'm very ignorant, therefore I don't know,” answered Jiang Yulang.

“This wine is called the betting wine,” said Ok-tu-kui. “Whoever drank this wine that I poured, he has to bet with me.”

Jiang Yulang's hand trembled and the wine cup that he was holding fell to the floor. He stuttered, “But...but I don't..”

“Do not what? You don't want to bet against me?” Ok-tu-kui glared at him.

“Oh.... yes...yes..”

“Hahaha, very good, what is at stake ?!”

“What... whatever you would like.”

“Very well then, I would like your arm to be the stake.

All of a sudden Jiang Yulang felt weak in the legs and he collapsed in the chair.

Xiao Yu'er pulled him up and laughed, “What are you afraid of? You still have a chance of winning the bet!”

“But...but I...” said Yulang stuttering, his face ashened.

“Sit up straight!” thundered Ok-tu-kui ruthlessly, “Now tell me what you would like as your betting prize?”

Jiang Yulang's tears were falling, he looked at Yu-mian-shen-pan Siau Cu-jun and others for help, but who would dare to defend him?

In between his sobs he said, “Sir, why..why....”

Right at that moment someone gave a laugh and shouted, “Haha, if Xuanyuan Siansing would like to gamble, let me humor you. Why bother to bet with a little kid, it's not as interesting.”

When Xiao Yu'er turned around, he stared at a middle aged man who appeared in the room.

This man had a fair complexion and clear eyes. He's wearing green outfit. Although he was middle aged, yet he was handsome. With a smile, he approached the crowd with a gallant demeanor.

Since roaming the wulin world, besides Hua Wuque, Xiao Yu'er had never seen anyone with such commanding presence as this middle aged man.

Upon seeing this man, Siau Cu-jun and others let a sigh of relief and were very happy. The happiest of all was Jiang Yulang, he almost jumped up and down with joy as if he just won a jackpot.

Xuanyuan Sanguan eyes flashed for a moment toward that man, against his

will, he felt intimidated. “Who are you?” he asked.

“My humble name is Jiang Bie He,” replied that man with a smile and bowed with respect.

“Oh, it's rumored that in Kanglam province there appeared an Enghiong (hero) that is outstanding, he is called da-xia (big hero) after Yan Nanthian. Are you that person?” asked Ok-tu-kui.

“Ah, it's just some praises that friends from wulin gave, I don't really deserve it,” answered Jiang Bie He modestly with a laugh.

"Is he your son?" asked Ok-tu-kui pointing to Jiang Yulang.

"Yes, he is my incompetent son," anwered Jiang Bie He with some regret.

"The father's so valiant, yet the son's such a coward..." Ok-tu-kui said while shaking his head, suddenly he slammed the table and shouted, "If he's really your son, then are you taking his place to gamble with me?"

"If Xuanyuan Siansing would like to, I would be happy to entertain," answered Jiang Bie He.

Ok-tu-kui gave a hearty laugh and said, "Wagering a big bet with someone like you would make my day."

"I wonder what kind of wager would you like to bet," asked Bie He laughing.

After thinking for a while, Ok-tu-kui said with a loud voice, "We will make the bet very simple, regardless who loses, he should do what the winner bids."

The people gasped with shock upon hearing such a wager. In Wulin life and death matter was not a big deal. However, to comply to the wish of someone,

one had to think twice about it. Just imagine, if the winner would ask the loser to do something embarrassing, wouldn't that be worse than death? Especially for someone whose status was like Jiang Bie He, if he would have lost he couldn't back out of it, and would be forced to comply to what his opponent wish. Therefore, everybody thought that Jiang Bie He would not accept such a crazy wager.

Unexpectedly he smiled and answered, "I will accept Xuanyuan Siansing's proposal. Only what would you suggest we bet on?"

Ok-tu-kui didn't expect Jiang Bie He to accept his suggestion that readily. He lifted up his wine cup and dried up the cup completely then laughed, "Very well, Jiang da-xia does have the spirit of a true hero. Now, regarding the way of betting, I leave it up to you."

"Xuanyuan Siansing no need to hesitate..."

"No, I've decided on the wager, so you decide on the way we bet, that's my rule," thundered Ok-tu-kui.

"If that is the case, then I will comply," replied Jiang Bie He laughing, then he placed a little table in front of them, and placed a bowl full of "Ang-sio-hi-sit" on top of the table.

Xuanyuan Sangong was puzzled, and asked, "What is this for?"

"This is how we bet," explained Jiang Bie He, "We take turn hitting the table with our palm, and whoever spilled the Hi-sit sauce or drop the bowl to the floor is the loser.

"That's too easy!" laughed Xuanyuan Sanguan, he softly tap the table and naturally the Hi-sit Sauce didn't spill at all. Suddenly Ok-tu-kui stopped laughing, he glared and said, "That way of betting even if it goes on till the new year there still won't be any winner. Who are you kidding?"

Jiang Bie He smiled, and he replied, "That's not the way to hit the table, it has

to be done this way...." and swung his palm unto the surface of the table.

It seemed that he didn't use any energy at all, but the small bamboo table suddenly seemed to turn soft like jello, and Jiang Bie He's palm went through the surface, but the Hi-sit sauce didn't spill, in fact it didn't even move.

"There, that's the way to hit the table, if both of us didn't spill the sauce, then eventually only the middle part of the table under the bowl is left, and the bowl will fall down. The last person that cause the bowl to fall is the loser.

Xuanyuan facial expression changed, he was silent for a while and finally he mumbled to himself, "I've never done this way of betting before."

"I just had my turn hitting the table once, now is Xuanyuan Siansing's turn," said Jiang Bie He with a smile.

"Hahahaha!" Xuanyuan tilted his head back and laughed heartily. "In my entire life I, Ok-tu-kui at least had bet several thousands time. Never in my life I admit defeat before starting..." he looked straight at Jiang Bie He and continued, "Nevertheless, today I admit defeat.... even though I am able to hit through the surface of the table, but I wouldn't able to keep the sauce from spilling.

At that moment Yu-mian-shen-pan and the others gave a big sigh of relief, and were very happy.

Xiao Yu'er was shocked, "Hey, you...you are admitting defeat for real?"

"If I've lost, I've lost, I'm not faking it," growled Ok-tu-kui. He smiled curtly and said to Jiang Bie He, "Now, what would you like me to do, tell me."

Jiang Bie He thought for a while, then he poured two cups of wine, he laughed, "Allow me to pay respect to Xuanyuan Siansing with a cup of wine."

Without thinking Ok-tu-kui accept it and with one gulp he drank it all. He slammed the cup down unto the table and said, "Now Xuanyuan Sanguan is ready to live or die, to go East or West, go ahead tell me what you want me to

do."

End of Chapter 37

Chapter 27

Chapter 38

"What I'd wanted, didn't Mr Xuanyuan just finished doing it?" answered Jiang Bie He with a smile. "How come after you just paid the wager, you asked about the wager again?"

Ok-tu-kui stood puzzled, he asked to clarify, "What...what did you say?"

"We agreed that the loser would comply to the winner's wishes, and just now I have collected my wager by asking you to drink a cup of wine with me, and you have done it. That means that you do not owe me anything anymore." explained Jiang Bie He with a laugh.

Ok-tu-kui Xuanyuan Sanguan stood still for a while, and said, "If you had killed me, there would be numerous of people in Jianghu that would be grateful to you, if you had asked me to find something, even a rare gem, I would have done it, but now..." he sigh, and continued on, "You only asked me to drink a cup of wine."

Suddenly Xuanyuan Sanguan raised up his wine gourd and drank big gulps and wiped his mouth with his sleeve. He tilted his head back and laughed, "Hahaha! Very well, you are well deserving the title 'Kanglam da-xia'. In my entire life I've never admit defeat to anyone, but now you've won my respect, Jiang Bie He."

He came to Xiao Yu'er and slapped him on the back, "Little brother, I can't help you anymore, but with Kanglam da-xia here I don't think you need to worry about those bunch of rats ganging up on you. I am leaving now, till we meet again!"

As soon as he finished speaking, he flew out the window and an instant he's disappeared into the darkness of the night. Outside the wind's blowing gently and the half moon decorated the sky.

Jiang Bie He watched Ok-tu-kui Xuanyuan Sanguan left and murmured to himself, "That man is truly a real man."

With a respectful smile Yu-mian-shen-pan Sau Cu-jun responded, "That man is one of the Ten Evils, it is a pity that Brother Jiang didn't take care of him for good just now."

"A hero like him can be counted on one hand. How could I anhilate him just like that? replied Jiang Bie He in a serious tone. "Except for his habit of gambling, it seems that he doesn't do any other evil thing."

"Yes, yes, I was wrong to say that." agreed Siau Cu jun, bowing his head.

"In fact even in his gambling he is a man of his word," said Jiang Bie He with a laugh, "If he wagers his head and lost, he still would stay true to his word, just think how many people would do such a thing as him?"

Suddenly Xiao Yu'er let a deep sigh and spoke up, "Too bad that Xuanyuan Sanguan is not here to hear what you just said, if not he would feel so touched that he would shed some tears and be ultimately grateful to you."

Jiang Bie He stared at Xiao Ju'er, with a smile he asked, "Little brother, are you a close friend of my incompetent son?"

"The term 'close friend' I don't dare to accept," said Xiao Yu'er.

"You must have helped my incompetent son out of trouble many times on the road," said Jiang Bie Hi again.

Xiao Yu'er replied with a saucy smile, "This little 'older-brother' did not help the big 'younger-brother' at all, in fact big younger-brother has many times given a hand to make this little 'older-brother's life miserable. If little 'older-brother's

fortune hasn't been good, his head would have been separated from his body by now.

Jiang Bie He turned to Jiang Yulang and asked, "Have you been mischieveous lately?"

"How would this son dare to do such a thing," replied Jiang Yulang and quickly looked down.

"Seeing your guilty look, I know that you did an evil thing," said Jiang Bie He sternly. "When we get home you must lock yourself in a room and think over your wrong doing, if you dare to do wrong then you have to be able to admit your wrong and apologize. That's the way a real man should act."

Yulang bowed his head even lower and mumbled yes.

Xiao Yu'er said in wonder, "How Jiang Yulang could have a father like you, is beyond my comprehension. However, if he has to lock himself to think about his wrongdoing, then consequently I have to accompany him.

Jiang Bie He glanced at the "love handcuff" on the wrists of both of the young men, and said with a smile, "I'm sure that I would be able to remove something that trivial, you come with me."

"I actually would love to go with you, however there are still some people here that want me dead. So what to do?" laughed Xiao Yu'er.

"Oh, who are they?" asked Jiang Bie He frowning.

"These well known heroes and first rate fighters of the village are all seeking for my head, a mere youth. I feel so honored," said Xiao Yu'er.

When Jiang Bie He eyes swept around the room, automatically Yu-mian-shen-pan and others didn't dare to look up, their faces were red with shame

Calmly Jiang Bie He spoke, I guarantee that today's episode wouldn't repeat itself again.

"Very rarely in my entire life do I admire other people, but today I salute you," laughed Xiao Yu'er.

If you didn't witness it for yourself you would not believe that the well-known "Jiangnan da-xia" would stay in such a humble house. Although the village where he stayed which was by the foothill of Ku-san (Turtle Hill) was a large village yet, many of the houses were neglected. Jiang Bie He occupied a row of the houses at the edge of the village.

He occupied about three or four dilapidated houses, although they were clean, they were very poor. Even an average government officer would live in a better house. Obviously he had no servants, only an old deaf and mute man helping him with the house chores.

It took them two days before they arrived at Jiang Bie He's home.

During the two days, Xiao Yu'er felt more and more that "Jiangnan da-xia" was indeed a remarkable person. A true da-xia in Jianghu, so friendly and humble toward anybody. Except for Jiang Bie He, no one could behave that way.

Therefore, Xiao Yu'er was suprised to see the house of the big hero of Jiangnan province.

"A good friend of mine used to own this village, but he had moved to Soatang, so he gave this village to me," explained Jiang Bie He. "Only it's a pity that I wasn't able to maintain the beauty of this village as it was before. When I think about it, I feel ashame toward my friend."

"With your fame and status, this village should be even better than before," laughed Xiao Yu'er.

"People that are involved in Jianghu world in general do not think about income and I am no exception. If I am after material things then I would cause

shame toward my parents."

Xiao Yu'er blinked several times and said, "But your friends, they can ...."

"It's true that among my relatives there are some who want to help, but I felt that it's not proper for me to accept, especially I feel content and peaceful the way I am.

"It's hard to believe that 'Jiangnan da-xia' who is so famous turns out live in such a humble estate, in hundreds of year, there's none in Jianghu who would do the same," replied Xiao Yu'er.

"According to an ancient saying, 'it is easy to go from thrifty to wasteful, but difficult to change from being wasteful to thrifty'. I would never forget that saying," said Jiang Bie He in a serious tone.

"You are a true hero," praised Xiao Yu'er.

Not long after they had their dinner which consist of three or four kinds of vegetables very simply prepared. In fact "Jiangnan da-xia" himself set the table. This humble life is not what you expect from someone as famous as Jiang da-xia.

"No wonder the people in Jianghu respect you very much," Xiao Yu'er murmured to himself.

Jiang Bie He stared sharply at Xiao Yu'er, suddenly he said, "It is strange, the more I look at you the more you look like my late good friend."

"Oh, who is he?" asked Xiao Yu'er.

"He's a model what people in Jianghu would call the most polite and cultured, the most handsome man in the world." said Jiang Bie He. "That's why I gave the name 'Yulang' (handsome one) to my son, in his honor.

"Hahaha you identify me with the handsomest person?" laughed Xiao Yu'er. "If

I am called polite and cultured, then no man in this world could be called uncouth or uncultured."

"It's possible that you are not the most polite or cultured man, but you do have this charisma that's hard to describe," said Jiang Bie He with a smile. "Especially when you laugh, I believe every girl in this world will swoon and find it hard to resist."

"I would love to be the man as good as you described and hope to be the son of that brother of yours who was so gracious, only too bad my father is exactly like me. He's wise, but not at all handsome. Moreover, he's still well and alive. Probably he's sitting on his rocking chair at this moment enjoying his pipe," Xiao Yu'er laughed out loud and he got up and walked out. Jiang Bie He had no other choice but to went after him.

"Actually I would like to chat longer with you," spoke Xiao Yu'er turning his head, "Unfortunately my eye lids are getting heavy, I wish to retire for the night. I hope that tomorrow you would be able to find a lock-smith to pick this cursed 'love handcuff'.

"Along the way almost all the well known lock-smiths I've contacted, but none were able to pick the handcuff, who would have guessed that the mechanism of this handcuff was so complex," Jiang Bie He laughed and added on, "But don't you worry, in a short time I will be able to find a special saber or sword that could cut through steel like vegetable. Being in my residence any problem you don' t need to worry about.

"Yes, because of that as soon as my head hit the pillow, I will be able to sleep like a pig," confirmed Xiao Yu'er.

Jiang Yulang all of a sudden became obedient, quiet and well behaved, wherever Xiao Yu'er went he would follow without any complain.

After both young men had left, slowly out of his sleeve Jiang Bie He took out a small sword out about a foot long. The sheath of the sword was black and uninteresting, but as soon as Jiang Bie He pulled it out of the sheath, it emitted a brilliant light.

The old man who was dumb and mute was standing outside the door, as he saw the light from the sword his eyes popped up with amazement as if he's saying, "You are obviously holding a special sword that can cut throuth steel like vegetable, how come you did not cut off the cursed 'love handcuff'?"

It seemed that Jiang Bie He was aware of the puzzled look of the old man, as if knowing what was in the heart of that old man he smiled and said, "This is not the time to take off the handcuff. That boy is obviously too clever and has many tricks up he sleeve, nobody could guess what he's up to. Therefore I have to allow Yulang to be by his side so he can keep watch of him. That handcuff will make it hard for him to run away if he has the thought of doing so."

It was unfortunate that the only person around was a deaf old man, so nobody heard what was spoken.

At the long porch was a small lamp with a small shades, the flickering light shone dimly the quiet yard. A black cat huddled in a corner, one could only see the eyes shining in the dark.

Xiao Yu'er and Jiang Yulang went along side of the long porch; one could hear their footsteps and the rustling of the leaves on the trees blown by the wind.

Shrugging his shoulder Xiao Yu'er said, "If one stays here for ten years, it is impossible for that person to keep his sanity."

"You don't need to worry about that, you don't need to stay here for ten years," replied Jiang Yulang.

"Haha, finally you opened your mouth to talk," teased Xiao Yu'er. "A while ago when we were with your father I almost thought that you turned mute."

"I think there are not too many people in this world who would dare to talk to my father the way you did."

"Have you been to the back garden?" asked Xiao Yu'er while looking at the

pitched black garden at the back.

“Yes, one time,” answered Yulang.

“You have stayed here for a while, surely you’ve been there more than once.”

“People that entered the garden once, even if you whipped them they wouldn’t want to enter for the second time.”

“Why, is there a ghost there?”

“A place like that, even a ghost wouldn’t dare to venture,” replied Yulang as he opened a door to a room and lit up a lamp. The room was not large, there were a few sabers and swords, a stack of books and naturally a bed.

“Is this your bedroom?” asked Xiao Yu’er looking around the room.

Yulang let out a long sigh and said, “I’ve been gone for over a year, seeing my bed is like seeing a dear lost friend.”

“Seeing your high class friends, even if you killed me, I still would not believe that you could sleep on that bed properly, do you honestly like it?”

Yulang laughed and replied, “In the middle of the night I often would slip out.”

“I know for a fact that most kids from high class families have the habit of slipping out the house in the middle of the night,” said Xiao Yu’er. “But your father is different from other people, how could you do that without him knowing?”

Yulang winked and replied, “Do you know why I chose to this bedroom?”

“No, I don’t,” answered Xiao Yu’er.

“It’s because this room is the furthest from my father’s bedroom, and also it has many windows. Actually this room is one of the servants quarters, but I purposely chose it for my bedroom.

“As far as I know, I think your choice is the best,” laughed Xiao Yu’er.

Being in his own bedroom Jiang Yulang apparently didn’t have to worry about anything anymore. As soon as his head touched the pillow he was fast asleep. He didn’t feel that he needed to watch Xiao Yu’er. Furthermore, he's just too tired, physically and mentally.

Xiao Yu'er was tired too, and he fell asleep soundly.

After a long while there were footsteps approaching the door softly, the person stopped in front of the door for a while, then softly knocked on the door. When there's no answer, the person opened the door a little and looked in. Then the door was closed and there was the sound of the footstep leaving the place, going toward the the quiet and eerie garden at the back.

Xiao Yu'er felt surprised, according to Jiang Yulang even a ghost wouldn't dare to venture there, then why would someone in the middle of the night enter the garden?

Xiao Yu'er suddenly opened his eyes, from his hair he took a very fine piece of bronze wire, and picked at the lock of the 'love handcuff'. Slowly he turned the wire while listening at tentatively as if a musician listening to a beautiful song.

All of a sudden a soft click was heard, and the 'love handcuff' which couldn't be picked by many well known lock-smiths, could be unlocked by Yu'er using a mere fine bronze wire.

Xiao Yu'er gave a satisfied smile; he stretch out his arm that was stiff from being confined so long. Afterward he hit Jiang Yulang 'sleep' pressure point so that the young man would sleep even more soundly.

While looking at Jiang Yulang, Xiao Yu'er said with a proud smile, “You think

that you're smart, actually you are not, you really think that I couldn't unlock that cursed handcuff. Hmm, you forgot where I was raised.

It's true that if Valley of Evil harbored the worst criminals, then naturally there would be the best pickpockets and thieves there, and to them there's no lock on earth that they couldn't open.

Since the age of eight Xiao Yu'er learned to pick many different kind of locks and padlocks. To pick and to dismantle locks and to put them back together again became an everyday game when he was small.

But why did he prefer to be handcuffed to Jiang Yulang and received such hardship and shame? What was really his intention? Did he suspect all along that Jiang Yulang's father was a mysterious person and full of secrets? Or maybe from the beginning he knew that this place was full of mysterious and shocking things?

Wasn't it possible that the reason why he allowed staying handcuffed with Jiang Yulang because he wanted to come to this place, and thus avoiding people being suspicious of him? People would think that since he could not get away from Jiang Yulang, if every inch and every second he had to be by Yulang's side, then there’s no reason to worry about him.

But now Xiao Yu'er is free, he's free to roam around. He had Jiang Yulang to thank for choosing this back room as his bedroom, as it was isolated away from the main area in the front.

Xiao Yu’er quickly flew to the garden at the back, the place where even ghosts were afraid to enter, according to Jiang Yulang.

In the mean time, the footsteps of the person entering the back garden earlier had long been gone. When Xiao Yu’er entered the gate, there was for a moment a flickering light far away. One second it was there, then darkness engulfed the night. The light had been snuffed off.

In the darkness, the sound of the wind rustling the leaves in the trees, sounded like a ghost waiting to pounce on its victim. Even though there were stars

twinkling up in the sky, but the twinkling stars added to the eeriness and the mystique of the garden.

The wind was cold, but both palms of Xiao Yu'er were sweating. If it were someone else, that person would have long gone retreated. However, Xiao Yu'er was not "someone else", Xiao Yu'er was still Xiao Yu'er, the only Xiao Yu'er in this world. If he had been scared and retreated, he would not be Xiao Yu'er. When he decided to continue on, there was nothing in this world that would be able to hold him back.

At the moment he's scouting the place where the flickering light came from. He flew quickly toward that direction.

The wind was blowing from the front, and there in the middle of the garden was a pungent smell. The garden smelled like a coffin, and inside a coffin there's only air of death! At that moment Xiao Yu'er was as if walking into a coffin, he held his breath, his footsteps were light and made no sound, because he realized that anytime he acted a little careless he could end up as a corpse.

Inside the garden there were only trees that were wilting, rock boulders from the mountain and old and worn cement statues. That tiny flickering light had disappeared; nobody knew where the source was.

After moving forward for sometimes, suddenly Xiao Yu'er lost his sense of direction. He felt all of a sudden the wind blowing strongly, and without realizing it Xiao Yu'er was trembling with cold. He didn't know where else to go, and what to look for.

At that moment suddenly a black silhouette jumped out from the darkness. Xiao Yu'er nearly jumped out of his skin, luckily it jumped and went away, when he looked carefully, it turned out to be a black cat. How strange, why would the black cat come into the garden and suddenly ran out again.

Xiao Yu'er thought of something, and quickly he dropped down low to the ground, right in front of him was a pile of small stones around a wilted and dried up plant.

Just as he dropped down to the ground, a few yards away behind a window a lamp was being lit and following that someone stepped out of the building.

That person had the lamp in his hand. The light of the lamp shone clearly on his face, and obviously that the person was Jiang Bie He.

He called out after the cat, and the black cat bounded up into Jiang Bie He's arms. He closed the door and walked away with the black cat in his arms.

Xiao Yu'er stayed low to the ground, not daring to breath. Slowly the light went further away, the garden again became pitch black and the air seemed to become thicker and colder.

After waiting for a long while and not hearing any more sound, slowly Xiao Yu'er got up, tippy toeing he approached the building, as he reached the building he realized that it was a green house.

That greenhouse must have boasted many different species of rare flowers in the past. As soon as he got there he smelled some sweet aroma.

However, that smell to Xiao Yu'er was like a forboding rotten stench. Although in the building there were flower plants, but most likely those would be flowers of death.

The door was locked, but not a problem for Xiao Yu'er. Again he showed his skill in picking the lock.

Slowly he pushed the door, he lit a match that he took from the table in Jiang Yulang's room. The greenhouse was full of spider webs, at the corner was a pile of broken flowerpots mixed with dry leaves and rotten wood, other than that there was nothing else. It's so strange, why would Jiang Bie He come to this rundown green house in the middle of the night?

The rafter on the windows rattled by the wind, from the hole in the paper

window the cold wind blew through like a ghost claw toward the nape of Xiao Yu'er's neck.

Actually Xiao Yu'er felt like running back to the room and hid his head under the blanket. This place was truly as Jiang Yulang described, "no ghosts dared to venture".

But a place where ghosts feared to venture, was exactly the best place to hide a secret, wasn't it?

Xiao Yu'er's eyes darted here and there, for a long time he scrutinized the room but didn't find anything unusual. Layer of dust covered everywhere; obviously nobody ever entered the room for a long time.

However, it was obvious that Jiang Bie He just recently stepped out of this building, then how in the world there were no footprints on the layer of dust on the floor?

Xiao Yu'er squatted down and felt the surface of the floor, apparently the dust was so old that it stuck to the floor, and except by scraping, it, you couldn't removed the dust.

Xiao Yu'er almost jumped with joy; he knew that in this hall there must be an underground passage. He scrutinized the place again, inch by inch, every corner he checked, and still he didn't find any secret panel that he hoped to find.

Almost giving up hope he tilted his head back and sighed. He saw a spider web fluttering by the wind, part of the web was broken and a spider was busy mending the web.

However, cobwebs usually weren't broken by the wind, regardless how hard the wind blew and it wouldn't make the web fluttered.

Such evidence usually would go unnoticed by most people. But there's nothing under the sky that could deceive Xiao Yu'er. He quickly jumped up, and found out that the spider web was different from other spider web. This spider web

was made of thin gold thread.

He quickly jumped up again and pulled hard on the cobweb. Soon a low rumbling sound was heard followed by a squeaking noise, the pile of dried wood under the spider web suddenly moved to the side and there appeared a secret passage.

Xiao Yu'er had seen many great secret panels, but none could match the obscurity and mechanism of the one in this room.

Most unexpectedly there was a den underground. Except for not having a window, that den was the most ideal, beautiful and complete with writing equipment.

On the left wall was bookcase full with different kind of books. In the middle there was a writing desk. It was very elegant and made of marble, on top of the desk was a complete set of writing equipment. Besides that, there was a small bronze lamp.

Xiao Yu'er lit the bronze lamp, and then sat on the chair like a big boss. He thought calmly, "If I were Jiang Bie He, where would I hide my secrets?"

Naturally in that underground den there were many places that could be used to hide things. But if the secret were a piece of paper, where would the best place be? It would be inside a book, in fact a book that nobody was interested in.

Immediately he walked to the bookcase and carefully examine the books one by one. There were many old valuable books and rare to find, indeed it was a fine collection of books. Almost all the books were covered with dust, indicating that they weren't touched for a long time.

The reason Jiang Bie He came to the den was definitely not to read, that's why the books were dusty. Strangely enough there was one book, only one book that had no dust and was very clean.

The book wasn't a thin one; Xiao Yu'er pulled it out of the shelf, and saw the

title on the cover “Herbal Plants” (Bok-cau). Apparently it’s a book about herbal medicine. Naturally no one would be interested in reading it unless he’s into herbal medicine.

Xiao Yu’er smiled; he knew that it was the book that he was looking for. He turned the pages, and in the middle of the book the pages were carved out into a space of a box and the pages were glued together.

Inside the space there were several thin masks, finely made, beside that there were two or three small bottles of make up.

However Xiao Yu’er wasn’t interested in those items, he kept on searching and finally found another identical boxed space. Inside it were several small bottles with rare and potent poison.

Xiao Yu’er let out a long sigh; he searched again and found a folded silver draft, a form of paper money in the olden time in China (Gin-bio) with a large sum of money that was shocking. Who would have guessed that “Jiangnan Da Xia” Jiang Bie He who lived a simple life kept such a shocking amount of money in form of silver draft?

He then found a long list of names, Xiao Yu’er was too lazy to read the names listed, but it was plain that each name had a word in bracket behind it, such as “Shaolin”, “Wudang”, *etc.* Almost all the words in bracket were name of the mainstream martial arts clans. It’s possible that the names listed were names of spies that Jiang Bie He sent to infiltrate those well-known martial arts clans.

However, Xiao Yu’er didn’t feel like checking it further, even though it would be a shocking revelation, Xiao Yu’er was looking for something else, and so far he still had not found it. He felt disappointed and sat again on the chair.

All of a sudden he saw a small table next to the desk, full with paper all sizes and color. He stared at those paper, and quickly he grapped the stack of papers. The papers were blank without any writing on them, but that was exactly the thing he was looking for.

The papers were thin and light, yet made of special material that was durable. Xiao Yu'er had once seen that kind of paper before, in fact he knew how it taste like.

The reason was because Xiao Yu'er had swallowed that kind of paper whole before.

Carefully he picked up a clump of dust and smeared it unto the surface of the paper, and sure enough line strokes appeared showing the map of the treasure.

So that it would look authentic, the map was drawn with a hard charcoal pencil, and when the map was drawn on the paper, the paper underneath would have the imprint.

Now that Xiao Yu'er smeared some dust on the paper, the imprint of the map appeared clearly. Apparently when Jiang Bie He drew the last map, he never used the rest of the paper afterward.

Xiao Yu'er let out a long sigh, and spoke softly, "Apparently he's the person that made the fake maps. He purposely caused the confusion among the pugilist heroes and caused them to kill each other ruthlessly. He is the true culprit."

He then scoffed, "Hm, how amazing is this benevolent 'Jiang Nan Dai Xia' who has such a big heart! Hm, even before all this I already had suspected that you harbored some evil ambition, if not why pretend to be such a true hero? You not only intent to fool all the Wulin heroes, but you wanted to wiped all those that wouldn't kow tow to you, with your ruthless treachery. You wanted to rule over world.

Carefully he put all the things back to the original place, and then said to himself, "If you didn't bother me, in actuality I would be too lazy to meddle into your business. But since you fooled me once, if I don't give the payback you deserve, I would do myself injustice."

He blew out the light, and retreated from the secret room. He returned the secret mechanism back to the original place. He knew that if he exposed the Jiang Bie He's deceits at this moment, no one would have believed him. It's because Jiang Bie He was very good in pretending. So right now he had to wait, he's sure that Jiang Bie He would not be able to escape though.

Xiao Yu'er quickly went back to Jiang Yulang's room. He saw Yulang still fast asleep, in fact he hadn't moved from his position before, the head half submerged in the pillow and the 'love handcuff' still around his wrist.

Quietly Xiao Yu'er layed down and put his wrist back into the hadcuff, "click" and it was locked.

He didn't want to think about anything. He wanted to have a good sleep so he would have full energy to face possible problems for tomorrow.

But before he could shut his eyes, suddenly someone lit a lamp inside the room.

Xiao Yu'er was shocked, he opened his eyes wide, and saw someone standing in front of the bed smiling. Under the flickering light of the lamp he saw that pale face, clearly it was Jiang Yulang.

But he definitely saw Jiang Yulang sleeping beside him, how on earth could he be standing in front of the bed?

Swiftly Xiao Yu'er jumped up and looked at the person next to him. To his surprise, the person next to him was looking at him, laughing, it was the deaf and mute old man.

For a while Xiao Yu'er froze, suddenly he laughed and said, "Yes, I knew for sure that Jiang Bie He is one brilliant man yet how come I still think lowly of him?"

"What is so funny?" sneered Jiang Yulang. "In my opinion now is crying time for you."

“Because I want to cry, yet I can’t cry, therefore I can only laugh,” answered Xiao Yu’er.

At that moment Jiang Bie He came in slowly into the room, he said smiling in a gentle voice, “You have found out a mighty important secret, you should have run away quickly, but you weren’t willing to run away, instead you came back as if nothing happen, indeed your bravery is amazing.”

“It’s obvious that you knew that I found out your secret, yet you waited for me to come back as if nothing happen and put back the handcuff on my wrist. Ah, you are indeed a very crafty man,” replied Xiao Yu’er.

“You are still so young, yet you could fool me and able to find out my secret. I never could imagine that. You have my admiration,” said Jiang Bie He.

“You were able to make everyone believe in you as a Da Xia (Great Knight), a true benevolent hero with a big heart. Everyone respect you, it’s no shame that you’re one noted figure of the era,” replied Xiao Yu’er.

That’s how the conversation went back and forth, both were as witty and both side extol each other. If anyone witnessed their conversation, nobody would have guessed what was in their mind.

“Actually I really like your intelligence and wittiness,” spoke Jiang Bie He with regret. “But, why are you against me? Because you found out my secret, even though I like you yet regrettably you still need to be sacrificed.”

“Actually I too like your intelligence and wit, but why did you on purpose make those cursed treasure map, that I got fooled by you?”

Suddenly Jiang Bie He’s face changed, he raised his voice, “How do you know that I had something to do with that treasure map?”

“If not because of the treasure map, why would I bother to come here, and with difficulty finding out your secret? If you had not cause me any trouble, I

wouldn’t have meddled into your secrets.”

Jiang Bie He glanced at Yulang then asked Xiao Yu’er, “How long have you suspected this?”

When I saw your dearest son with that piece of treasure map I asked him where he got it,” explained Xiao Yu’er. According to him he stole the map from your room. Then it got me thinking how in the world that such an important map would be laying around carelessly, so I became suspicious.”

“Your suspicion had some grounds,” agreed Jiang Bie He.

“Then I heard from others that the father of this beloved son was a true Da Xia of this era, accordingly a dragon would have a dragon for a son, and tiger a tiger for a child, but how could a big hero have a son so low and shameless?”

“Ehm, your insult has some basis in it,” smiled Jiang Bie He.

“Then I met you and followed you here,” continued Xiao Yu’er. “I saw that such an important hero was willing to stay in a place like this, in fact he had to do most of the chores, only being helped by an old man who’s deaf and mute. I came to the conclusion, that person was either a prophet or someone who was very evil and knifing. Because only those two type of people could lead such a life.”

“Obviously I don’t look like a prophet,” said Jiang Bie He laughing.

“Therefore I decided to get to the bottom of your secret,” continued Xiao Yu’er.

“You are indeed very clever, unfortunately that’s also the reason of your tragedy,” said Jiang Bie He with regret.

“When someone was born to be clever, he or she couldn’t escape from karma,” spoke Xiao Yu’er.

“You are so right, regarding this matter you and I have the same view,” Jiang Bie He nodded in agreement.

“If I’m a little older, maybe I could learn to be a little dumb.”

“Too bad, that you wouldn’t have the chance to learn,” replied Jiang Bie He.

Xiao Yu’er blinked his eyes several times and replied, “I guess you are going to kill me now.”

Jiang Bie He smiled and answered, “I never had the heart to kill people.”

“Oh, what violent method are you going to use then?” asked Xiao Yu’er.

After thinking for a while Jiang Bie He replied with a laugh, “Do you know that last night you are not the only one that wanted to do me harm?”

“Oh, who else was trying to harm you?” asked Xiao Yu’er.

“Last night someone visited my room, but before coming in the person lit a sleeping incense. It was obvious that the intent was to kill me. Only too bad that I was in the room.”

“That’s right, last night we were on the road, in the hotel,” agreed Xiao Yu’er. “But how did you know that someone came by?”

“When we got here, there was still the smell of the sleeping incense, and under the window there were footprints,” explained Jiang Bie He with a laugh. “Therefore, I came to the conclusion that the person who tried to kill me was not a professional.”

“If he’s a professional, then tonight he wouldn’t come back again,” said Xiao Yu’er.

“That’s right, but because the person is not, then it’s possible that he would

come again.” Replied Jiang Bie He.

“So you would want me to sleep in your bedroom in your stead to be killed by this person, that way I would be killed and you could use the opportunity to catch the person, and if you were to kill that person, you would have the excuse that you were avenging my death. If people knew about this incidence, you would be praised as a true benevolent Da Xia and loyal to friends.”

“Hahaha, talking to a clever kid like you is such an enjoyment. I don’t need to tell you, yet you know my heart inside out.”

“I rather not know at all,” replied Xiao Yu’er with a sigh.

End of Chapter 38

Chapter 28

Chapter 39

And true enough, Xiao Yu’er was carried to Jiang Bie He’s bedroom, and tucked in his bed.

Xiao Yu’er himself opened the “love handcuff”, but right away his important pressure points were blocked by Jiang Bie He.

Now the young man lay on the bed, staring at the ceiling. He was so frustrated that he purposely not thinks about anything. He counted sheep, one, two, three sheep, four, five….so he wouldn’t think about other things.

By counting sheep he was hoping that sleep would come, because by being in a deep sleep he doesn’t need to worry about life and death. He went on counting and continued on, but though he counted sheep till eight thousand six hundred fifty seven, he was still wide-awake.

Because of counting sheep, he thought of Peach Blossoms (Tho Hoa), he thought of Peach Blossoms' (Tho Hoa’s) face red as an apple, and because of that he also thought of Tie Xinlan.

All this time he never knew that the mind can do strange thing. The more you tried not to think of someone, the more the image of that person came into your mind.

“Where is Tie Xinlan at this moment? Maybe she is having a great time chatting with young master Wuque, that polite and handsome young man. And here I am waiting for death to come.

Xiao Yu’er tried to shut his eyes and try not to think of Tie Xinlan, but the image of the young lady came stronger in front of him wearing white with the sun shining on her.

That’s the memory of seeing her for the first time. If there’s no Tie Xinlan, then he wouldn’t have seen that stupid secret treasure map, and if not for the map he would not want to come here.

He forced himself to count sheep again … 8658…8659… but the face of sheep suddenly started to look like the pretty face of Tie Xinlan.

Suddenly there was a shuffling sound outside the window, and soon a sweet smelling smell permeated into the room.

Xiao Yu’er held his breath, he thought, “There it is, finally it’s coming. Jiang Bie He’s calculation turns out to be quite accurate. Ah, I can’t even move one finger, what’s the use of holding my breath.”

Because he was laying down and couldn’t move, Xiao Yu’er could only watched with his eyes half opened.

He saw the window slowly opened, and a shadow quickly slipped in.

That person was wearing a tight black outfit, there was a thin shining sabre on one hand, the movement was light and quick, it seems that the person was quite courageous.

At one time the reflection from the saber happened to shine at the face of the intruder. Xiao Yu’er saw the face and his mouth gaped open with surprise.

The courageous intruder was none other than Tie Xinlan.

Xiao Yu’er wasn’t sure that he was seeing right, maybe his eyes were playing tricks. Could such a coincidence happen in this world?

His eyesight wasn't playing tricks, that intruder was indeed Tie Xinlan.

She slipped quietly into the room. Seeing a person lying on the bed, without looking any closer Tie Xinlan quickly sprung forward, with the sabre lifted up high ready to strike the head on the pillow.

Because he couldn't make any noise nor make any movement, Xiao Yu'er became quite worried and sad at the same time. Who knew what other feeling came into his mind. It was hard to believe that he had to die under Tie Xinlan's hand, is life playing a game on him?

Jiang Bie He and Jiang Yulang at that moment were standing outside the door, spying to see what was going on. As soon as the lady's saber had done the job they would barge in…. It seemed that Tie Xinlan had started swinging the saber down, and Xiao Yu'er's head would soon be separated from his body.

At the critical moment there was a quiet snapping sound and the saber Tie Xinlan was about to swing down broke in two mysteriously.

Naturally both Jiang Bie He and Jiang Yulang were shocked, "Who would have such high level of kungfu" they wondered.

Tie Xinlan was just as shocked, her face paled, and she stepped back and was ready to run away.

At that moment someone flew in through the window so light and quick like a leaf blown by the wind.

Under the twinkling of the stars one could see a glimpse of this person wearing long white attire, his face smiling and benevolent, under the dim lighting he looked like a god coming down from heaven, his charisma was so strong, it's hard to figure what caused the charisma.

Jiang Bie He was also taken by the person's charisma, so valiant and poise, he stood in awe. He couldn't remember any young pugilist in Jianghu as impressive as this.

With just one look Xiao Yu'er recognized the newcomer instantly and he almost fainted because of it.

Obviously that person was none other than Hua Wuque alias Master Wuque, just like his name, Wuque which meant no flaw.

Without realizing it, Tie Xinlan moved back two steps, and with a hoarse voice she said, "Oh, it's you? Why ..why are you here..?"

"Yes, it's me," replied Hua Wuque with a smile. "Since yesterday you were searching for 'Ji Ming Wu Gu Fan Hun Xiang' (Soul-Returning Incense of the Five Calls of the Fowl or loosely translated, incense that makes you sleep till the next morning), I felt suspicious what you are up to. Therefore these two days I followed you secretly.

Tie Xinlan stomped her foot and said angrily, "Why are you following me and why did you prevent me from killing him?"

"Everyone in Jianghu says that 'Jiangnan Da Xia' is a benevolent knight, if you are angry at him there's still no need to kill him," spoke Master Wuque gently.

"But…do you know that …my father…was killed by him?" shouted Xinlan trembling.

At that moment Jiang Bie He opened the door and walked in with a surprise and shock in his face, he pretended to be confused with what Tie Xinlan said. He greeted them and asked with a smile, "Who are you two young people? In my entire life I've been careful not to kill innocent people, where did you hear this slander? Maybe there's a misunderstanding.

Tie Xinlan's eyes were red, and she screamed with anger, "My father left a secret code, telling me that he came here to look for you. Since then he never came back, that means either he's still here or you have killed him."

"Miss, and you are?" asked Jiang Bie He.

“My surname is Tie, my father is ‘Wild Lion’ Tie Zhan,” answered Xinlan loudly.

“Oh, so you are Miss Tie,” said Jiang Bie He with a laugh, “I give you my word that Elder Tie had never came here. Just think logically, if I had killed Elder Tie then it would be big news, even if I tried to keep it a secret that would be hard to fool the folks of Jianghu, with so many people with keen nose for news. Moreover if I really killed Elder Tie, why should I keep it a secret.”

What Jiang Bie He said was reasonable. One needed to know that “Wild Lion” Tie Zhan, was one of the Ten Evil.

It’s understood that there were many people in Jianghu that wanted the death of Tie Zhan and the other Ten Evil. So if there’s someone able to kill him, not only would it make news in Jianghu and cause many to celebrate, but would cause people to praise whoever did it. So if it really happened, it’s inconceivable that it would be kept a secret. Although what Jiang Bie He said was rather insulting, but there was some truth in it.

Unfortunately just like her father, Tie Xinlan was quick tempered and impulsive. Although she came for revenge and if needed to fight till death, but whether her father was indeed killed there or not, she wasn’t sure herself.

Jiang Bie He then turned and greeted Young Master Wuque, “Young sir, you are like a pearl in the world of Jianghu, I’ve been roaming in wulin for decades yet I’ve never seen an impressive pugilist as young as you. If it’s no trouble, may I know your honorable name?

With a smile Young Master Wuque replied, “I am Hua Wuque and you sir..?”

“I’m Jiang Bie He,” answered Jiang Bie He and made a gesture of respect.

Tie Xinlan jumped with shock and spoke out, “Hey, if you’re Jiang Bie He, then who’s the person sleeping in the bed?”

Secretly Jiang Bie He was amused to see how reckless Tie Xinlan was. On the

outside she look so gentle, yet her action was rash and careless, it took her until now to ask who the person sleeping in the bed was.

Suddenly an idea came to his mind, and he quickly approach the bed and slowly tap Xiao Yu'er's shoulder and answered, "This young man is the son of my late dear friend, he came from afar, therefore I let him sleep in my bed. My good nephew, get up quickly and meet Young Master Hua."

At the same time he released the pressure points on Xiao Yu'er, but left his hand threatening the fatal pressure point, guarding if Xiao Yu'er dared to say something disadvantage towards him. He would then let his energy flow into the pressure point so Xiao Yu'er couldn't talk anymore, meaning death.

"Young people like to sleep soundly, why do you need to wake him up," laughed Hua Buque.

Part of Xiao Yu'er's head was hidden by the pillow, he suddenly spoke, "I've been awake for a while, only I'm too lazy to chat them."

Jiang Bie He frowned and reprimanded, "Hey, how could you speak so rudely?"

"Who in this Jianghu world doesn't know that you are a benevolent knight," said Xiao Yu'er. "But they in turn is accusing you of killing someone without reason. People who are not wise couldn't tell the difference between right and wrong, so why should I waste my time talking to them."

At first Jiang Bie thought with his life threatened, at the most Xiao Yu'er would only do greeting formalities. Who would have guessed that this young man would suddenly say something in his defense, this was beyond his calculation.

Naturally Jiang Bie didn't know that the person that Xiao Yu'er most afraid of was not him, but that handsome Young Master Wuque.

At that momentTie Xinlan spoke out, "Hey, you…you.." She quickly glanced at Young Master Wuque and continued on softly, "If… you really didn't kill my father, then it's settled. We will be going now."

Jiang Bie He was astounded. Why would the reckless and impulsive young miss suddenly changed and became docile.

Jiang Bie He nor Young Master Buque didn't realize what's happening. Xiao Yu'er tried to disguise his voice by speaking with a hoarsely. Tie Xinlan had been with this young man for so long, in fact had fallen in love and was pining for him day and night. Naturally she could recognize Xiao Yu'er's voice although that young man had tried to disguise his voice.

With shock and happiness she called out to him, but stopped half way as she remembered that if Young Master Wuque recognized that the young man on the bed as Xiao Yu'er, he would be in grave danger.

That's the reason she wanted Hoa Wuque to go quickly.

The relation between these your people was really complex, no matter how sharp Jiang Bie He was, he had not the slightest inclination. He could only laugh and said, "So happen Young Master Hua, that you are here, how could you leave in a hurry?"

Hua Wuque laugh and answered, "I've heard and admired Jiangnan Da Xia's name for quite sometimes, and would like to ask for some pointers, only…"

Secretly Xiao Yu'er was relieved when he saw Hua Wuque was about to leave, but now it sounded as if he's going to stay longer, he got so nervous that he quickly said, "If you really want to meet Uncle Jiang, it's only polite to wait until morning, then you can come visit. Now it's in the middle of the night, where is your manner?"

Hua Wuque's face changed and asked, "Who are you, actually?"

Tie Xinlan quickly pulled Hua Wuque's arm and said, "Don't mind who he is, let's just go quickly!"

Half force she pulled Hua Wuque out the window, but just as she let out a sigh

of relief, suddenly there was a blur of a shadow and Hua Wuque had disappeared. When she turned around, that young man was by the bedside.

Almost all of Xiao Yu'er's face was covered by the pillow, secretly he cursed himself for being so dumb.

Seeing Hua Wuque left and came back, naturally got Jiang Bie He lost, not knowing what's going on.

He saw Hua Wuque became serious and asked slowly, one word at a time, "It this person Jiang Yu?"

Jiang Bie He was stunned, he answered with a quirk, "Hehe, does Young Master Hua know this good nephew of mine?

Hua Wuque let out a long sigh and said happily, "Hah, great, great, you didn't die after all."

Seeing this young person so happy, never could he imagine that the happiness was because Hua Wuque felt that now he could kill Xiao Yu'er with his own hand, on the contrary he thought that this young man was a close friend of Xiao Yu'er. With a laugh he explained, "Naturally he is not dead, I wouldn't allow anybody to kill him."

"You would not allow?" clarified Hoa Buque coldly.

Seeing his strange behavior, Jiang Bie He was rather puzzled.

At that moment suddenly Xiao Yu'er jumped out of bed and hid behind Jiang Bie He, he mocked at Hua Wuque and laughed, "You heard it yourself, whoever wanted to kill this good nephew of Jiangnan Da Xia, he could only dream of it."

"I have admiration and respect for Jiang Da Xia, but I have to kill this person regardless," said Hua Wuque calmly.

Again Jiang Bie He was stunned, he asked, “You…you want to kill him?”

“Yes, whether I want it or not I have to kill him,” said Hua Wuque regretfully.

Jiang Bie He stared at Hua Wuque, and then glanced at Xiao Yu’er for a while, secretly he sighed, “This is very bad, in the end I still got trick by this little devil.”

He realized since he had spoken, in accordance to his good name and position, he could not allow this “nephew” of his be killed in his presence.

Seeing Jiang Bie He not knowing what to do, actually Xiao Yu’er was greatly elated, but he pretended to be concerned and said, “Uncle, I feel that you shouldn’t help me in this matter. That man’s kungfu is very good and you are not his equal. If you do not help then Jianghu community won’t be able to mock you.

Xiao Yu’er purposely stress on the phrase “mock you” with louder voice, because he knew if Jiang Bie He did not move and allow Hoa Buque to kill him, then his hard earned title “Jiangnan Da Xia” would be mud.

Naturally Jiang Bie He knew well Xiao Yu’er’s ploy, he was so frustrated that he felt that his head was going to explode, but on the outside he looked unperturbed, and with a smile he said, “Does Young Master Hua truly intend to make things difficult for me?”

“I suggest that you think about it,” said Hua Wuque with authority.

“If that is the case, with much regret I…”

Before Jiang Bie He finished his sentence, Jiang Yulang suddenly barged in while clutching his stomach, his face ashen and his body trembling.

“The wine…the wine he brought was laced with poison!” choked Jiang Yulang while pointing at Xiao Yu’er.

Jiang Bie He's facial expression immediately changed, he turned to Xiao Yu'er and glared at him. With an angry voice he shouted, "We, son and father, received you with open arms, why do you want to harm us? No wonder, you didn't… didn't drink a drop of wine, your wine was poisoned!"

The change of event not only was beyond Hua Wuque's expectation, but even Xiao Yu'er was stunned.

But he quickly understood the situation, and he cursed secretly, "You slime, how deceitful and knifing your ploy…"

Jiang Yulang's trickery was really superb, the situation changed 180 degrees, now Jiang Bie He didn't need to stop Hua Wuque from killing Xiao Yu'er, because they now on the same side wanting Xiao Yu'er's death.

Jiang Bie He took out his sword and scolded, "I treated you as my own child. Who could have guessed that you were after this precious sword that you were willing to poison me… You monster with an animal heart, you ungrateful creature, if..if I let you live, who knows how many people will be the victim of your evil deed. For the happiness of families and the peace in world of Jianghu I have to annihilate you." After speaking, with a quick movement he aimed at Xiao Yu'er's chest.

As he made the move to attack, unexpectantly Hua Wuque jumped forward and held Jiang Bie He's arm gently.

Again Jiang Bie He was shocked at the quickness of that handsome youth, besides that he couldn't understand why suddenly Hua Wuque would block his attack, didn't Hua Wuque wanted to kill Xiao Yu'er?

"Young Master Hua, what…what's going on?" he asked confused.

"Oh, I'm sorry," replied Hoa Buque. "It's because I have to kill him with my own hands."

Suddenly Jiang Yulang screamed and collapsed.

Right away Jiang Bie He clutched his stomach and groaned, he said with a sad smile, “If..if that’s so, you go ahead, I…” before he could finished his sentence he staggered and collapsed into a chair.

Hua Wuque sigh, he took out a small porcelain bottle and gave it to Jiang Bie He, “Here are two types of pills, Siau-cu-hiang (goddess incense) and Soh-li-tan (pure virgin pill), you burn one and inhale, while the other one you drink, the combination of these two can detoxify all kinds of poison under the sky. I hope that it would benefit you. I’m sorry that I couldn’t stay any longer.

Even though Hua Wuque was speaking to other people and doing things, but he never left his gaze from Xiao Yu’er. He was tricked once, Xiao Yu’er was able to give him a slip. A mule would never fall into the same pit twice, so Hoa Bueque didn’t fancy of repeating the incidence last time where Xiao Yu’er was able to escape, so he didn’t dare to let down his guard.

It seemed that Xiao Yu’er also realized that this time he could not hope to escape, so he sat down on the bed cross legged. He looked at Hua Buque and laughed, “I have to congratulate you for the fact that I wasn’t killed.”

“That’s right, it’s my luck that you were not killed by somebody else,” replied Hua Buque laughing.

“If other people heard our conversation, they would assume that you’re my wife disguising as a man. The fact that I congratulate you because I didn’t get killed.”

Hua Buque didn’t get riled up, he laughed nonchalantly and replied, “Later when I’ve killed you, they would know that their assumption was dead wrong.”

“Are you dead sure that you could kill me?”

“Even if you wanted to kill yourself, that wouldn’t be possible.”

“Is that so?” Xiao Yu’er asked, raising his eyebrow.

Calmly Hua Buque answered, “With a distance as close as this, just a slight movement of someone’s hand, I would be able to hit the eighteen pressure points (Hiat-to) on both of your arms before that person could complete his movement.

He talked nonchalantly as if he’s chatting about something trivial and easy to do, but Xiao Yu’er believed him, what was said was no empty threat and no boasting matter.

Tie Xinlan was standing outside the window during the conversation, suddenly she vibrated her thin saber till it made a humming sound. She had a pair of saber at first, but one was broken, so there was only one left.

Upon hearing the sound, Xiao Yu’er rolled his eyeballs, suddenly he thought of an idea and he said with a laugh,, “It is not proper for you to kill me here.”

“Any place is fine with me,” replied Wuque.

“Do you dare to let me walk outside alone?”

“Why? Do you think you could run away?” asked Hua Wuque smiling.

“Why are you thinking that far? I just want to walk on my own without you carrying me.”

After saying that he jumped off the bed, for a moment he looked at Jiang Bie He and Jiang Yulang. If it were someone else, that person would have exposed the father and son’s pretense.

However, Xiao Yu’er didn’t bother to do that. He knew that it would just be a waste of time and energy. If he could convince Hua Wuque that Jiang Bie He was the vilest and most hypocritical person in the world, still Hua Wuque would want to kill him first, and it would be difficult for him to escape. Furthermore Hua Wuque might not believe him.

Xiao Yu’er stepped outside. The house was an old building where the window was big and low almost like a door. Just one step Xiao Yu’er was outside already. He looked at Tie Xinlan, that young lady was staring at him with her big clear eyes, who knows how many complex and muddled thoughts and emotions going on within her head.

She was still making the saber vibrate till it made a humming sound.

The night wind was blowing gently. Xiao Yu’er continue to walk forward, he didn’t look at Hua Wuque at all, but he was sure that the young man was not too far behind him, he thought there was no use to look behind him.

He walked freely pass Tie Xinlan.

All of a sudden came a flash of the saber movement, Liu-yap-to, the thin saber that Tie Xinlan held, thin as the leaves of the willow tree suddenly came attacking behind Xiao Yu’er.

Naturally Xiao Yu’er knew that the attack was directed to Hua Wuque. Although Hua Wuque’s kungfu was high as the sky he still had to evade the attack. Tie Xinlan’s saber art was counted as high level.

When the flash of the saber came Xiao Yu’er quickly jumped forward. He heard Tie Xinlan shouted, “Catch this…”

It turned out that the half way through the attack suddenly the direction changed, she suddenly threw the Liu-yap-to to Xiao Yu’er. And if that young man could hold a weapon then the incidence of killing himself at Mount Emei last time could be repeated.

Unexpectedly as the saber was in mid air, suddenly there was the sound “ting”, and the saber mysteriously broke into two and fell to the ground.

At that moment all of a sudden Hua Wuque was already behind Xiao Yu’er, and he said calmly as if nothing had happened, “Are you still wanting to walk further away?”

If people didn't know that they were enemy and only heard Hua Wuque's words, people would have thought that they were two good friends going sightseeing. And why not, Hua Wuque was forever courteous, with a smile on his face as if there's no problem between them. In fact, he didn't even glance at Tie Xinlan.

He knew that if he glanced at Tie Xinlan that she would feel embarrass and would have no face to meet him again. In his life Hua Wuque had never hurt the feelings of any women, especially if that woman was Tie Xinlan.

Xiao Yu'er groaned inwardly, he had no choice but to continue walking forward.

Just a few steps, suddenly he spoke exasperatedly, “It seems that you're very kind toward the girls.”

“Yes, that is my habit since I was little,” answered Wuque with a laugh, “It's a hard thing to change a habit, isn't it?”

“But if it's a girl with an ugly face, then what?”

“Just as long it's a girl, beautiful face or ugly, I think I will treat them just the same.”

“Haha, I would like to find a girl with a very ugly face, bald, covered with boils, flat nose, with a cleft lip, lame, and.. and.. rough skin..... Now, I'm interested to see how you would treat her courteously.”

“Oh, too bad most likely you wouldn't have that opportunity,” replied Hua Wuque.

Suddenly Xiao Yu'er sigh and said, “It's amazing and hard to imagine how you could think of killing someone yet without feeling nervous or worried you still could joke and chit chat with the person, that's really hard to imagine.

“To kill and to chit chat ...”

“are two separate things, isn't that what you mean?”

“That right. I myself would love to talk and exchange ideas with you, but the orders I have received dictate me to kill you. Therefore two are two separate things and not related.”

“I still don't understand; how you could separate those two things?”

“It's what I'm taught since I was small.”

“Wow, you are really a good and obedient child.”

Hua Wuque laughed and continued talking, “Are you still wanting to walk further?”

“Yes, actually I would like to keep on walking, in fact to walk as far as possible,” replied Xiao Yu'er with a dry smile. “But since you are the one who wanted to kill me not the other way round, you don't need to ask what I want.”

“Oh, in that case....in that case, let's stop here,” said Hua Wuque softly and a little uneasy.

Xiao Yu'er looked around him, under the twinkling stars, one saw the big silhouette of Mount Ku-san afar, the leaves on the trees were starting to wilt and shed. It's late at night during fall season.

Xiao Yu'er muttered, “It's so strange, it's autumn in Jiang Nan province, how could it be possible that I, Jiang Yu, Jiang Yu'er has to die so soon at such a young age?...”

After Hua Wuque and the other two went far away Jiang Yulang jumped up.

Jiang Bie He also got up, he looked at his son and with a laugh he said, “I didn't

expect you to come up with a strategy that's much better than mine, in time of crisis.”

Jiang Yulang looked down and answered, “How could the son be compared to the father. Your son only....”

“In front of your father you don't need to find excuses,” replied Jiang Bie He. “If you are really smarter and wiser than me, I would also be thankful, why would I want to have any ill intention toward you?”

Yulang looked down and nodded in agreement.

Jiang Bie He felt for the small porcelain bottle given by Hua Wuque, and said while knitting his brows, “Xian Zi Xiang and Su Nu Dan... how unexpectedly to find out that young man Hua is a disciple of the floral palace. With the appearance of that young man in Wulin, I have to be more cautious."

"Even though his kungfu is very good, but he doesn't seem to comprehend the intricacies of life, so why worry about him? spoke Yulang.

"That person might seem to be green and stupid, but actually he's very sharp, how could you understand his real personality?" said Jiang Bie He thoughtfully.

"Miss Tie seemed to be like a smart person, but turned out to be rather dumb just like you said, Father," said Yulang with a laugh. "Only... like what she said, did her dad actually ever come here? For sure you didn't kill him?"

Jiang Bie He scoffed, "Even though I have never seen Tie Zhan, the Raging Lion, but a young girl like Miss Tie has the habit of not telling lies."

"If she wasn't lying and you have never seen The Raging Lion, Tie Zhan, how come Miss Tie came to our place looking for her dad?" asked Yulang creasing his forehead.

"That means that the Raging Lion, Tie Zhan, did place a secret code here, and it's possible that he came here in disguise and I was too careless that I didn't see

through the disguise."

"But...., but that young girl said that after her father came to our place, he never left this place," said Jiang Yulang.

"That's right, I imagine that it is possible that he is still here," replied Jiang Bie He calmly.

"Still here?" clarified Yulang surprised.

Jiang Bie He snorted then stood up, he then said coldly, "Don't you forget that besides you and me, father and son, there is still another person."

"Hah, does Father mean that deaf and mute old man?" exclaimed Yulang.

"What deaf and mute? Can't someone pretend to be deaf and mute?"

"But...but Father, you had tested him by creeping behind him and suddenly sounding the big gong right by his ear and it was obvious that he didn't hear that awful racket from the gong, in fact he didn't even blink."

"A person that has a strong inner strength even if a mountain slides in front of his eyes wouldn't panic, let alone blinked."

Right away Jiang Yulang said lowering his voice, "Does Father know where he is right at this moment? Maybe he's long disappeared."

But Jiang Bie He spoke louder on purpose and said with a menacing voice, "He thought that I did not suspect him, therefore he is still here right now. Soon we will confront him and we will kill him without giving him any chances to talk. It is better to kill one hundred people than to let one spy escape. Mark my word!"

Jiang Yulang spoke in a low voice fearing that other people might overhear their conversation, but his father on the contrary purposefully spoke out loudly causing him to be surprised and puzzled. If the old man was really pretending to

be deaf and mute wouldn't he try to escape upon hearing what his father said? But after rethinking the situation, he understood his father's reasoning. He thought, “It's possible that Father is aware that the deaf and mute grandpa is around, so he spoke out loudly on purpose. If he ran away scared, that proves that he is truly The Raging Lion, Tie Zhan, and it would not be too late to chase after him.”

At the same time Jiang Bie He moved toward the door and “bang!”, suddenly he pushed at the door with force.

End of Chapter 39

Chapter 29

Chapter 40

Outside at the end of the long porch there was a small room, inside was a flame, a fire coming from a little stove. That deaf and mute grandpa was squatting by the stove watching water to boil.

The grandpa squatted, not moving a muscle, he looked calm and undisturbed waiting for the water to boil.

All his life he was used to “waiting” and who knew how long he would be “waiting” still?

Regarding the art of “waiting” naturally he knew much better than the younger people. Even though he realized that people his age were either dead or did not care to wait anymore since there's nothing that they look forward to.

Jiang Bie He at that moment was not too far behind that weak old grandpa, suddenly he shouted menacingly, “Great, your disguise was perfect, yet in the end still you're found out. Now surrender your life!”

After saying that as quick as a flash he leaped and his palm triked toward the skull of the grandpa.

As if oblivious to any danger, the old man looked up and smiled toward the master and pointed to the pot of water that was boiling, his gesture was saying, “The water is boiling, soon I will serve you some tea.”

Jiang Bie He lowered his hand slowly onto the old man's shoulder. Regardless what, he was still unsure at the last moment. If the old man had heard a little bit

of what he said, it would be impossible for him to smile and act so calm and natural.

Obviously Jiang Bie He wasn't aware that there were several people at times would smile calmly and naturally even when facing death.

Such a person is rare, one of those people was Xiao Yu'er....

The stars were twinkling, shining dimly on Hua Wuque's fair, handsome and flawless face.

A prince that treated every woman in the world so gentile has to have a face like Hua Wuque, the model of the most perfect man under the sky.

While observing his opponent, Xiao Yu’er laughed suddenly and said, “Do you know that your name ‘Wuque’ fits you very well, because you certainly don’t lack anything, no flaw…you come from a place that’s honored by the realm of jianghu, whose name is well known and respected. You are young and handsome, all your needs are met, no worries of not having enough money. Your kungfu could make all people in Jianghu obey and respect you. Your good look, and your congenial personality make all women swoon at your feet. Despite all these, you are still pure and clean, in fact nobody could say any bad words about you even behind your back.

Xiaou Yu’er shook his head and added on with a laugh, “If there’s a perfect person in this world, without any flaw, that person is you.”

“Thank you very much for your praises,” replied Hua Wuque with a smile.

“However, all of a sudden I found out now that you do lack something,” continued Xiao Yu’er softly.

“Oh, what is that?” asked Hua Wuque disinterestedly.

“Feelings!” answered Xiao Yu’er. “You are lacking feelings, yes feelings. From the top of your head to the tip of your toes I’ve observed that you are lacking on

the area of feelings, you are right now a perfect human minus the feelings. You probably have cold blood running through you veins also.”

“Oh, is that so?” Hua Wuque only gave a dry smile.

“Naturally you are not willing to accept my analysis, correct?” asked Xiao Yu’er. “Good, now try to answer, do you really understand the meaning of love? Do you know what is hatred or grudge? Have you ever love or feel hatred?”

While walking forward he continued, “I'm confident that you've never feel even frustration nor worries. For example, sickness, getting old, poorness, disappointment, sadness, embarrassment, anger... all these are suffering that can't be avoided by common people, but you don't know all these, not one of them have you experienced, none of these are in you dictionary of life. For someone who doesn't know what is suffering, how could he understand what is happiness?”

After letting out a sigh, slowly Xiao Yu'er continued on, “If you have never loved someone seriously or hated someone, you won't have any problem, you won't know any suffering, and you won't know what is happiness... other people might admire you, but I on the contrary think that people like you have nothing to live for.

Hua Wuque was quiet for a while, he was still calm as before without showing much expression, he only gave a dry smile and said, “Maybe what you said was correct, probably it was the environment where I grew up made me like this.”

“That's right,” said Xiao Yu'er with a bitter smile, “Only Floral Palace can create a man like you, making you like a mannequin, a life mannequin. Although you are always well mannered toward anybody, but inside your heart you never felt that they deserved to be respected, although you are always gentle toward every woman, but you never really like them.”

He then gave a long sigh, and continued on, “If you were to kill someone, inside your heart you are not sure that the person deserves to die.”

“Yes, all of that are regrettable,” said Hua Wuque.

“Very well, I'm done my talking, you can do your job now,” finally Xiao Yu'er said, tilting his head up and let out a laugh. “I'm interested to know how many strokes you will need to kill me.”

“Would you prefer using a weapon?” offered Wuque.

“I don't have any weapon with me,” replied Xiao Yu'er.

“If you would like a weapon I can accompany you to a place that has it, and you can choose whatever weapon you like,” said Wuque.

“It's obvious you know that I'm not your match even if I were to hold a weapon. You wanted to kill me, yet you still act so nice and polite toward me,” said Xiao Yu'er with a bitter smile, “If other people see it, they would think that you are evil and sadistic. However I know enough about you. I know for sure that you are not a man like that, because you don't know the meaning of pretending or hypocrite, because you don't need to pretend let alone to be hypocritical.

“You really understand me well,” said Hua Wuque.

“It would be difficult to find someone that understand you as well as I do,” said Xiao Yu'er.

“That is correct,” acknowledged Wuque sadly.

Xiao Yu'er rubbed his dry lips and said, “I think I don't need to use any weapon, go ahead and do your job now.”

Hua Wuque looked up to the dark sky, dry leaves were carried by the strong autumn wind, the twinkling stars were getting dimmer, the world seems to be engulfed by quietness and loneliness. Feeling desolate he softly spoke, “This weather...”

“....is the suitable for killing someone,” cut in Xiao Yu'er.

At that moment Tie Xinlan spoke out, “Weather like this makes me trembling with cold...” suddenly she came between them in an amazing situation...naked, without a stitch of clothing.

The dim twinkling stars shone softly over Tie Xinlan's body.

The body immaculately fair and smooth, like a priceless sculpture done by a master artist.

It would be hard to find another woman's body as smooth, and exquisitely beautiful as this. It caused people having breathing difficulty seeing such an exquisite body.

Xiao Yu'er and Hua Wuque stopped breathing at that moment. Hua Wuque stuttered, “You.. why you...”

Tie Xinlan looked toward Hua Wuque, and said in an empty voice, “Do you find my body beautiful?” The voluptuous breasts moving up and down, under the light of the stars they looked so desirable. It would be impossible for any man not to swallow his own saliva seeing such a exquisite body.

Without realizing it, Hua Wuque closed his eyes, he said trembling, “You...you..”

All of a sudden Tie Xinlan hugged Hua Wuque tightly. When that young man felt the smooth soft body closed him, his heart started to beat faster, his hands trembling and he went weak.

All his life Hua Wuque never felt this hot sensational feeling. He felt as if he's going to pass out, his heart was about to explode... in short; he didn't know what to do.

“You zombie...why..why are you still standing there?” with a trembling voice Tie Xinlan scolded, the question was directed to Xiao Yu'er.

Xiao Yu'er was still standing where he was, paralyzed, not knowing what to do.

“I've done all these and you.. you still don't go away quickly?” screamed Tie Xinlan hoarsely.

Suddenly tears fell from Xiao Yu'er's eyes.

For the first time Xiao Yu'er cried, he himself didn't know whether the tear was because he was touched, or thankful or tear of sorrow or anger or embarrassment.

Hua Wuque didn’t dare to move his hands, let alone to touch Tie Xinlan’s body, therefore he couldn’t get away from her embrace. With beads of perspiration and with his eyes closed he could only say again and again, “Let go… let go…”

Tears were also in Tie Xinlan’s eyes, she saw that Xiao Yu’er still didn’t budge, with frustration she screamed, “If… if you still refused to go, then I will kill myself … in front of you!”

“I… I…” Xiao Yu’er didn’t really know what to say.

Finally he stared at Tie Xinlan for a short while, a deep meaningful look.. a smooth flawless body with tears adorning the beautiful face, all these were imprinted in his mind and heart and he would always remember all his life.

Suddenly Xiao Yuer let out a heart rending scream , like a crazy man he turned around and ran as if by possessed by a demon.

The stars in the sky began to fade, the earth became quieter. Like a wounded animal Xiao Yu'er kept on running without any direction.

He ran forever so long in the middle of the night, over the fields and bushes, he wasn't aware how long he had been running, and his whereabout.

He was not crying anymore, his tears had dried up, his mind as muddled as his hair. He had never suffered all his life like now, never was he as confused and unsettled like this.

Rice paddy field lied on the horizon; the paddy ears were already filled, the stalks moving being blown by the night wind like the wave in the sea.

Without much thought Xiao Yu'er went into one of the rice paddy fields, under the starry sky he laid down.

The muddy water immersed part of his body, the twinkling stars seemed to shine far away. Seeing from between the heavy growth of the stalks of rice paddies, made them seem to be more distanced.

He bit his lip, the lip that had been bitten and bled, but he didn't seem to be aware of the pain. His emotional pain was tens times more than his physical pain.

He tried asking himself, "Could I still consider myself human?"

I considered myself super human, nobody could compare with me, I always see others as inferior to me. However, when someone wanted me dead, it turned out that I could do nothing about it.

I looked down at women, especially Tie Xinlan, because I knew that she has tender feelings toward me. I purposely teased her, and tried my best to hurt her feeling, but in the end I was forced to accept her sacrificing herself to safe me!

All this time I thought that I was the smartest man, the cleverest man on earth, but now I feel like a stray dog that's been chased away, I ran like a dog with its tail between its legs.

Even though this time I escaped with my life intact, but do I need to be on the run all my life? Do I need to depend on others to save me all the time?

Although Hua Wuque's thinking is not as deep as mine, but people like him

don’t need to use trickery. It's because he has the real thing, a genuine ability.

And I? ... I could only depend on chance ... a person that's smart without any genuine ability, what's the use?

"I always thought that those people at "Evil Valley" were all afraid of me, therefore I was proud. I considered myself amazing, it turned out that they were afraid of me as parents patronizing their spoilt kid. In a real fight could I really defeat Qiaoqiao? or Du Sha, or..."

Xiao Yu'er laid in the middle of the rice field and pondered over his life. He thought it over and over again.

Before he knew it, the morning came, the sun was rising in the east, noise of people and dogs barking started not too far away from the rice field.

But Xiao Yu'er still laid flat in the middle of the rice field, his eyes wide open even though he did not sleep the whole night.

Morning change to day, and day to night. It was dark, and the wind was howling bringing the faint aroma of steamed rice.

Finally Xiao Yu'er slowly got up, his body was full of mud, his face smeared with dirty mud, but he didn't care. He continued crossing the rice field.

From afar he saw flickering of a light indicating that there was a village ahead.

Sure enough, there was a town, a small town, and even though it's night time, the road was still busy. There was the sound of gong and cymbals pounded over and over, and a lamp with red shade lit the arena.

A troupe of acrobats was doing a show. In general acrobatic troupes were travelling group that went from places to places.

In a daze Xiao Yu'er waded through the crowd. Seeing his dirty appearance,

covered with mud, they threw insult at him, but was forced to make way.

Xiao Yu'er immediately came to the front and there he squatted watching the acrobat show. He saw a girl dressed in red with her hair braided in two walking on a tight rope. That girl had big eyes and her face was not too bad.

Besides the girl on the tight rope, there were some people old and young sparring with weapons and some doing sommersaults, others playing the gongs and cymbals.

Xiao Yu'er just squatted there, he wasn't aware what show was going on in front of his face, he felt empty, alone, just wanting to see faces of people smiling.

Who knows how long he had been squatting, vaguely he heard the people cheering, there were people clapping and jumping with joy, and the sound of coins being thrown to the stage.

The crowd began to disperse, and the acrobat troupe was busy packing and taking down their props. The young girl in red that was on the tight rope weren't among the people working, like a big boss she sat on the side drinking.

Seeing Xiao Yu'er squatting, the young girl looked shortly with a frown, her big eyes seemed to be shining. Suddenly she reached inside her pocket and tossed a coin in front of Xiao Yu'er, then quickly looked elsewhere.

Xiao Yu'er was still in a daze, he wasn't aware that a coin was tossed by the young girl, so he didn't pick it up.

The group of acrobats started to move away. Walking straight and tall the young girl in red walked by Xiao Yu'er. As if by accident her feet kicked the coin close to Xiao Yu'er's feet. That way the young man could reach and pick up the coin.

This is the heart of a human being, a person with a good heart. Someone who saw the sorrow and the poverty of others and immediately forget about oneself.

The acrobat group were talking and laughing, discussing tonight's performance, and counting their profits enough to buy foot and several catties of wine. Regarding tomorrow, tomorrow would be tomorrow's problem, they didn't need to worry about tomorrow's problem. Even if there would be a bad happening tomorrow, no food, they would worry about it tomorrow. What's important was today, just as long there's enough food and wine for today, that's sufficient.

That's the practical life of broad minded people. What Xiao Yu'er wanted and thought about was exactly that kind of life, live for today as if there's no tomorrow.

He quickly picked up the coin and followed the acrobat group. Not too far away was a little river, and by the bank a boat tied. A well built old man was waiting near the helm of the boat. It seemed that he was the leader of the group.

His age was past sixty, yet his body was strong like a young man, although he lived a life of wandering no direction where to go, yet that did not quench the zest of life.

Suddenly Xiao Yu'er rushed forward, he bowed with respect and said, "Sir, may I join you roaming around Jianghu?"

That old man looked at the young man for a while and answered while shaking his head, "Young man, to roam around Jianghu is not an easy thing, you need a special ability and able to withstand hardship."

"I am not afraid of hardship, I'm used to life of suffering," replied Xiao Yu'er.

"But do you have an ability that would entertain people?" asked the old man.

Xiao Yu'er was quiet for a moment, after thinking then he said, "I could do somersault."

"Somersault?" the old man laughed amused. "Haha, somersaulting is the simplest trick, anybody working in this profession can do that. Hey Yeduzi, show him your way of somersaulting."

A young man with a muscular body, big eyes and thick eyebrow came near, with a mischievous smile. Maybe because of his muscular body that he got the nickname "Yeduzi" (wild calf)

After rolling his sleeves, without doing any stance, Yeduzi right away did fourteen or fifteen somersaults.

Xiao Yu'er blinked his eyes and asked Yeduzi, "At the most how many somersaults could you do?"

"Maybe twenty or thirty," replied Yeduzi laughing.

"I am able to do a hundred or two in one go," said Xiao Yu'er.

"Hah, is that true?" the old man asked disbelieving. "Doing eighty in one go I had seen when I was young. That was Li-laoda from Li-jiaban (Li Family Troupe), but he sustained stabbing injury, since then nobody was able to match it."

"If only eighty, that's no big deal for me, I could do a hundred sixty somersaults," said Xiao Yu'er.

"If you can really do one hundred sixty times.... no, it's enough if you can do eighty times, then all your life you don't need to go hungry, although you might not be able to eat well, but meat and wine would definitely be there."

"Before the old man finished talking, suddenly Xiao Yu'er had started doing his acrobatic movement.

Since Xiao Yu'er's body had been trained till his tendons were like wire and his bone like iron, although his kungfu had not reached the first rate fighter level, when it comes to somersaulting it could be said for him that it was as easy as eating peanuts.

When he reached thirty somersault, crowd started forming, and when he did sixty they all cheered in one accord.

When he somersault till eighty the crowd forgot to cheer, they just stared in awe. If there was anybody that was glad, then the little miss in the red outfit with big eyes was the happiest.

Xiao Yu'er continued somersaulting till pass one hundred, then he stopped and with a laugh he asked, "Is that enough?"

"Enough, enough, more than enough.." said the old man while laughing and clapping his hands. "Quickly follow Yeduzi to the boat, wash your face and change your clothes, soon we will eat supper. Starting now you are a member of the Hai-jiaban.

But Xiao Yu'er immediately looked down and answered, "My father and mother died not too long ago. I'm still in mourning, in front of their graved I made an oath to mourn for three years, and during that time I would not wash my face."

"You poor child," said the old man with sympathy, "You are a filial son. Oh, by the way everyone calls me Sidie (fourth father), you can also call me the same way."

So Xiao Yu'er started his wandering life as an acrobat player with the Hai Jia-ban Everyday his work was to do acrobat, doing somersaults.

He learned that almost all the members of Hai Jia-ban were sons and daughters of Hay Sidie, if not his children then nephews and nieces or relatives. Yeduzi was the sixth son, the most nimble player and had the best kungfu.

The little red miss was the star of the troupe, her name was Hai Hongzhu, the red pearl. She's the youngest daughter of Hay Sidie that was born when the father was celebrating his half centennial birthday.

Besides that there weren't too many things that Xiao Yu'er was aware of.

Except for the acrobatic performance, Xiao Yu'er didn't bother to know about other things, everyday besides eating, sleeping and performing acrobat, he spent the time sitting day dreaming.

Nobody knew that when he was sitting lost in his thought, he was actually meditating, figuring the key to the most important part of the highest kungfu level. In this world not too many people held the key of understanding the highest kungfu level.

The secret kungfu manual that had taken many human lives happened to be in Xiao Yu'er's possession along with Jiang Yulang. He had read and memorized the book well, and with ease he could recall the whole content of the book he read.

When he managed to figure out a part, then that night when others were sleeping, secretly he would go toward a deserted place by the riverside to practice. Because other people thought of him to be crazy or slow witted, although his action at times was rather strange, no one paid any attention.

His acrobatic performance attracted people, and he was not picky when it came to sharing the profits, therefore people tolerated him and allowed him to do whatever he wanted.

Now Xiao Yu'er was no longer the smartest man on earth.

Now other people call him by the the nickname "Hai Xiaodai", little dumb with the surname Hai, because now he's considered part of the troupe of the Hai family.

The nomads all year long always wander along the river, from east to west and from west back to east. Xiao Yu'er himself wasn't quite sure what places he had been.

One day, their ship docked, Xiao Yu'er was sitting on the deck of the boat washing his feet. Suddenly from behind a small fair hand reached out and

offered him an orange.

Without looking Xiao Yu'er took the orange, peeled it and started eating it.

Hai Hongzhu was standing behind him. She waited for a long time, yet Xiao Yu'er still didn't turn around to acknowledge her. In the end Hongzhu moved and sat beside him. She took off her shoes and dipped her feet in the river.

Her small white feet stirred the water, suddenly she flipped the water and the water splashed all over Xiao Yu'er's body. That young man still didn't make a move, he didn't even utter a single word.

Hai Hongzhu glanced at him for a moment and started laughing, she said, "You chose to ignore me, yet why do you accept my orange?"

"I don't know how to talk," said Xiao Yu'er.

"You don't know how to talk? Why? Are you mute?" replied Hay Ang-cu with a laugh.

"I'm not in the same class as you," answered Xiao Yu'er coldly.

"Not in the same class? Who said you are not in the same class?..." her bright eyes danced merrily, suddenly she laughed and continued, "Other people call you Xiaodai, yet I know that you are a smart person. Not only smart, in fact a lot smarter than the others, correct?"

Xiao Yu'er felt uneasy, now he's afraid of people praising him as a very smart person.

He frowned and stood up. He turned around and started walking away. Suddenly he spotted a group of people at a distance. At an instance he froze and his mouth gaped open with shock. His two legs were as if nailed to the ground, he wasn't able to move.

By the bank of the river a group of people were jesting as they slowly approaching. They were walking across the green meadow. It was spring time, the air was full of life and a fresh sweet scent.

The people in the group were wearing multi color clothes, light and soft. Their faces were beaming, exuberant with happiness. The spring breeze gently caress their clothes, the sunshine warmth the earth matching their young age.

Unfortunately among the group of young people that was jesting and laughing were some individuals that he most reluctant to meet. They were Hua Wuque, Tie Xinlan, Murong Jiumei and Jiang Yulang.

How Jiang Yulang could associate with Hua Wuque and Tie Xinlan, this was something amazing and hard to understand.

At the moment several well clothed people were seen crowding Hua Wuque, buttering him up with praises. No doubt, it was obvious that Hua Wuque was the center of attention from everyone of the group.

Hua Wuque was laughing. His laughs were mostly directed to the two beautiful girls next to him, Tie Xinlan and Murong Jiumei.

Tie Xinlan was also laughing, her face bright, full of delight

They were really fortunate and happy, no wonder that they were laughing merrily.

However, their good fortune made Xiao Yu'er's suffering even more pronounce. Their happiness, made Xiao Yu'er's sadness deeper.

Xiao Yu'er's heart burned like fire.

For the first time in his life he found out the meaning of jealousy. Only now did he feel pain so strong, his heart as if it's going to break to pieces.

Hai Hongzhu looked at Xiao Yu'er with surprise, then she looked at the group of young people. As if feeling the pain that Xiao Yu'er had she said sympathetically, "I know that your life history is full of secrets, isn't it?"

In essence Xiao Yu'er didn't hear a word what she said, he was staring in a daze at the group that was so happy and jubilant.

Now he saw a young man in green, it was Bai Ling Xiao.

Bai Ling Xiao was jesting with Hua Wuque as if they were two closed friends.

How strange, how could Hua Wuque associated with people like them? But well, Hua Wuque could get along with anybody. and he didn't play favor with anyone, to him everyone in this world was no different from one another, they were all the same. He didn't need to feel angry or hatred toward them.

Hai Hongzhu said softly while biting her lip, "Do you know them? ... I have a feeling that you came from the same class like them, and you are not the same like us.... Yes, we are only lowly class of people that should be pitied."

Xiao Yu'er slowly stepped back until he reached the bridge of the boat (I'm not too sure of the translation).

Suddenly he felt that Tie Xinlan was looking at him.

It was only for a fraction of a moment, how could she pay attention to this young man that's dirty and lowly.

Beyond his will Xiao Yu'er was observing her, it seemed that Tie Xinlan had matured, like a peony flower blossoming pure, beautiful and desirable.

While Murong Jiumei looked a little thinner, so thin that she looked like a marigold flower (I'm not sure, hehe), although not as beautiful as the peony flower, yet it has a special intoxicating scent.

Murong Jiumei's eyes looked bigger than ever, but they lost their sharp penetrating look, in place there's a look forlorn and sadness. What was it that made her so sad?

Slowly Hai Hongzhu approached Xiao Yu'er, her eyes were as forlorn as Murong Jiumei's, with sadness she looked at Xiao Yu'er and said softly, "Finally I found out the reason why you ignored me, it's because I'm not good enough to talk to, correct? How could I compare to those two girls, they are beautiful, pure, while I ..."

The wind was blowing gently, below the bridge of the boat was rather dim....

Suddenly Xiao Yu'er pulled Hai Hongzhu and hugged her tightly. His hot lips with emotion clung to her lips. The young man's blood was moving fast, he needed to release his emotion.

Hai Hongzhu felt at that moment that heaven and earth were spinning, and suddenly it felt like the end of time was had come.

She closed her eyes, she became unaware of her surrounding. She felt as if she was in a hole of coals of fire. Her body was burning and her soul was melting, her spirit has also melted.

Her life at that moment had suddenly changed.

However, to other people this was unimportant event and those people that were jesting had walked away.

Suddenly Xiao Yu'er pushed Hai Hongzhu aside and quickly jumped down below the deck.

Hai Hongzhu stood in a daze like a statue, she felt as if she could move anymore. The breeze was warm, but her heart started to freeze little by little.

She continued to close her eyes, not daring to open them in case the dream that had made her intoxicated would shatter . Her long lashes started to welled

up with tears.

*****

Night came, nobody knew when it came.

Obviously Hai Hongzhu didn't know either, in fact she's oblivious to everything.

Shaded lamps started being lit, the crowd started gathering. Hai Sidie as the master ceremony started his opening remarks.

Whatever changes that happen in Hai Hongzhu, the show must go on.

Human can change in a blink of an eye, but life can't change is as short time, low class people has to continue to live their lowly daily life, that fact couldn't be avoided.

That's the life of human being, that's the tragedy of life.

Therefore Hai Hongzhu started to climb to on top of the rope, she started to walk on the tight rope.

She walked stiffly on the rope. The crowd started to cheer and clapped their hands, but for Hai Hongzhu it sounded so distant, because her heart had flown far away.

A warm light shone at a far away place. A place where the person you loved was always by your side, and never sneered at you.

Xiao Yu'er was squatting behind the rack of weapons, his heart also had flown to a far away place. He's not aware of what was happening in front of his eyes.

Suddenly in the midst of the cheers of the crowd, it changed into a scream of horror. Hai Hongzhu had suddenly fell from the tight rope that was quite high.

Hai Sidie and Yeduzi face turned pale, yet they still had the nonchalant smile. They quickly shouted, "People slip, even horses can trip. That's natural, no problem, come on little miss quickly get up and show us several of your beautiful movements."

However, the scream of shock from the crowd had turned into mocking laughter and hiss. Someone shouted, "What beautiful movement? It seemed that girl was daydreaming thinking about of her boyfriend, that's why she slipped!"

"Hey, little Missy, who were you thinking of? Were you thinking of me?" someone else mocked.

The laughter among the crowd grew rowdier, and the words thrown became more indecent.

Xiao Yu'er's blood started to boil.

Right at that moment, from the midst of the crowd a young man with green attire jumped forward, Xiao Yu'er recognized him right away as Bai Ling Xiao.

Bai Ling Xiao scanned over the crowd with an angry stare, then he shouted, "If anyone among you dares to speak indecently towards this lady I will cut his tongue right away."

"Yes, I will pluck his eyes also!" continued someone else with threatening voice. That person then leaped to the middle of the arena. He was the red attired golden saber Li Ming Sheng.

Immediately the crowd quiet down, not a person dared to make a noise. People were always scared of evil men.

Hai Sidie approached the two young men, he greeted them with a bow, and said, "Thanks you very much young masters for your help."

"Ah, don't mention it," said Bai Ling Xiao as if he's the most powerful man.

From his pocket he took out a piece of a silver coin and tossed it on the ground and said, "I see that your show tonight didn't bring any profit, let me give a tip for food and drink."

"That would at least be enough to buy 10 gourds of wine and five days of food for all of you," continued Li Ming Shen loudly. "Now, what's the reason that this big master was willing to give you such a big tip, you should have guess."

Hai Sidie's face changed and he looked rather uneasy, but soon he laughed and shouted, "Little Hong, come quickly and thank these gentlemen!"

With her head lowered Hai Hongzhu stepped forward, her face red and with a soft voice she said, "Thank you young masters..."

"Don't buzz like a mosquito, who could hear what you just said?" grumbled Hai Sidie.

Bai Ling Xiao smiled and said, "That's no problem no problem at all, women should talk softly and with gentleness."

"Haha, that's right, young masters in fact like it that way," said Li Ming Sheng with a laugh. Suddenly he got hold of Hai Hongzhu's wrist and while squinting his eyes he said, "This brother of ours is interested in you, come and accompany him to drink wine."

Hai Hongzhu's face paled and her body started to tremble.

With a grin Hai Sidie quickly cut in, "This girl is too young, please wait another two years then she can accompany you two masters drinking wine."

"Rubbish! Who has the patience to wait another two years?" scolded Li Ming Sheng, not very happy.

All of a sudden Yeduzi rushed forward and shouted, "Let her go!"

Before he could finish his sentence suddenly Li Ming Sheng's hand flew to his face, "pack", he got slapped till one of his cheek was red and swollen, in fact he was thrown far because of the in pact.

"You are not willing to be treated with kindness? Are you begging for us to use force?" shouted Li Ming Sheng with intimidatingly.

Bai Ling Xiao also grinned and said, "I think you'd better come along with us willingly" After saying that suddenly he pinched Hai Hongzhu's cheek.

Hai Hongzhu became afraid and started to cry.

At that moment suddenly someone came forward and said slowly one at a time, "No one is allowed to take her away."

Spontaneously Hai Hongzhu's eyes shone, finally Xiao Yu'er came forward. That young man was willing to defend her, even willing to face death.

Naturally Li Ming Shen was very angry, his eyebrows stood up. He shouted, "Hm, you dirty scoundrel, are you looking for death?" Quickly his hand moved to slap again.

However his slap would never be able to touch Xiao Yu'er, instead nobody knew how, suddenly Xiao Yu'er caught hold of the arm and he felt a lot of pain, as if it was pinched by a vice grip, even his bone felt that it's going to break. He was in so much pain that his tears started to fall.

"Get out of here," shouted Xiao Yu'er and at the same time his hand flicked Li Ming Sheng's body that weight hundreds of catties. His body flew several spears away, even though he did not die, he couldn't move.

The crowd screamed in shock, Bai Ling Xiao's face turned pale, he quickly took out his sword, "sreng" he wielded the sword and thrust toward Xiao Yu'er's chest.

Xiao Yu'er moved slightly to the side to dodge the sword and stepped forward,

in one stance he hit Bai Ling Xiao's chest with his fist.

Actually Xiao Yu'er didn't use all his energy, but Bai Ling Xiao wasn't able to stand it, with a scream he vomited blood and his body collapsed. His clothes all green was splattered with blood making it look like a painting of red roses.

In an instance the crowd went berserk, they were screaming and ran in many directions.

Xiao Yu'er stood there surprised, never could he imagine that his kungfu had improved so much, with just one hit he could make Bai Ling Xiao collapsed. The scream of the crowd brought him back to reality.

He felt that his secret would soon be found out, this place could no longer be his hiding place. Quickly he turned around and started to run away.

Quickly Hai Hongzhu ran and chased him, calling, "Xiaodai..., Xaiodai... wait...wait.."

However, Xiao Yu'er never looked back, in a flash he disappeared in a distance.

Staggering, Hai Hongzhu tried to chase after him, finally she fell several times, her tears wet her face. She moaned and sobbed, "He...he's gone... I know he is not...not coming back forever."

Hai Sidie came by and pulled his daughter up. That old man had a lot of life experience, bitter and sweet. His face was full of wrinkles showing mixed emotions. Maybe shock, happiness or sorrow that was hard to avoid.

Slowly he caressed his beloved daughter's hair, he spoke as if to himself, "Even if he doesn't come back, but what to do... He is not in the same class as us. It's not possible for you to hold him back..."

"But..but..I can't..I can't...I beg you..."Hongzhu sobbed sorrowfully.

"Be patient, daughter," said Hai Sidie while giving a long sigh. "People like him, not only Father couldn't hold him back, but maybe in this world nobody could tie him down... Maybe you will never see him again."

Suddenly Hai Hongzhu fainted in her father's arms. Not to be able to see the person she loved, was a severe blow for anybody. Especially Hai Hongzhu, an adolescent that just maturing like a flower blossoming.

But is it true that she would never see Xiao Yu'er ever again?

Nobody could say that positively. What's going on in this world no one could predict with surety.

End of Chapter 40

Chapter 30

Chapter 41

Xiao Yu'er ran several lis without stopping, finally he laid down at a deserted place next to a stream.

That night the sky was filled with little stars, twinkling brightly.

After doing what he did, he felt more at ease. The burden of his spirit felt lighter, but he felt that another burden equally as heavy was added on.

He realized after his disappearance, Hai Hongzhu's heart was shattered. He didn't want to break that little girl's heart, but that's exactly what he did.

He tilted his head and laughed, and spoke softly, "Don't you blame me, I did it out of necessity.. I had to leave because things are getting too risky. I can't stay there any longer."

The stars were decorating the sky, they were like Hai Hongzhu's eyes. It was as if each one of them was shedding tears for Xiao Yu'er, however that young man had already closed his eyes.

For Xiao Yu'er what had happened was something trivial in his life, but for Hai Hongzhu what Xiao Yu'er did had changed her entire life.

Life was just not fair.

Morning had arrived. Xiao Yu'er had gone far away from the original place. He walked with no definite destination, he's dirtier and poorer, but he didn't worry

about any of those things.

One day he arrived at a city that was not too small. Big or small a city was, he didn't care. He had been away from civilization for a long time.

He didn't take the main road, instead he took the small roads and alley where the aroma was more pleasant to him. Because the alley was where most of the kitchens were located and from the kitchen windows floated the aroma of steamed rice.

Without realizing it, he stopped by a large back door of a kitchen. For Xiao Yu'er it was really an irony. Before no matter how delicious a dish was, no matter how many tempting dishes, he could never be tempted but now the smell of a simple cooking was tempting his appetite. Maybe that was part of life drama.

The kitchen was very big, and the aroma was very strong. Xiao Yu'er stood there in a daze. Who knows how long he had been standing there, suddenly a bucket full of laundry water was flung from inside and drenched Xiao Yu'er.

Xiao Yu'er didn't get angry, neither did he move. He realized what kind of problem was worth getting angry for, and something trivial like this, even if you beg him, he wouldn't bother to get angry.

From behind the big door suddenly appeared a round face with chubby cheeks and spoke, "Sorry, I didn't see you standing there."

"That's okay," grinned Xiao Yu'er.

That round chubby face laughed and disappeared back in. After a while it appeared again, seeing Xiao Yu'er still standing there, with a laugh he invited him, "Inside there's a little rice, if you would like to, you may come in and eat."

"Good, thank you," replied Xiao Yu'er with a laugh.

He didn't feel awkward, and didn't feel shy. He went in without hesitation and right away ate what was offered to him. He finished eight bowls of rice and after

eating he got up and thanked him again.

That chubby face was observing him from the side, finding him interesting.

When Xiao Yu'er bowed and was about to leave, that chubby face laughed and said, "This place is needing another worker to do the dishes, if you would like to, you don't need to worry about food."

"Xiao Yu'er thought for a while and said with a laugh,"But my measurement for food is quite big."

"Would people that opened a restaurant be afraid of 'bottomless pit'?" spoke the chubby face.

Without thinking much more Xiao Yu'er immediately took the bucket and pail and asked, "Where are all the bowls and plates that need washing?"

The next day Xiao Yu'er finally realized that he was working at the kitchen of the Si Hai Chun (Spring in the Four Seas Restaurant) restaurant. The restaurant was a pretty decent size. The person with a chubby face was the cook named Zhang Changgui.

So Xiao Yu'er started to work washing bowls and plates, he knew that anybody hiding in the kitchen of a restaurant would be hard to find, let alone be recognized.

The reason why, because the kitchen of a restaurant in essence was a world of its own. Except for Zhang Changgui, he didn't meet anybody else. When Zhang Changgui finished cooking the dish that was ordered by a guest, Xiao Yu'er immediately took it to the little window where the waiter was waiting on the other side. The waiter then brought the dish to the guest. If there's no reason to come in, who would go into the kitchen?

The restaurant was not too popular, the customers were sparse, therefore the restaurant closed not too far into the evening. During the free hours often Zhang Changgui invited Xiao Yu'er to accompany him to chat and drink wine.

Although the wine consumption was a fair amount, but the words that came out of Xiao Yu'er's mouth was not more than two or three sentences. He ate and drank a lot and spoke very little.

Once day while Zhang Changgui was getting ready to cook, the oil poured into the wok, suddenly the cook had a stomach ache. Not able to stand it, he quickly put down the wok and ran to the toilet.

In order that the customers wouldn't have to wait too long, without thinking Xiao Yu'er took Zhang Changgui's place and started frying some of the dishes.

After Zhang Changgui came back from the toilet, he was rather worried if the dishes that Xiao Yu'er's cook were not up to the customers' expectation.

He didn't realize that the number one cook in the world came from the Evil Valley. Since small Xiao Yu'er had learned quite a bit from the best cook. There's nothing that a young man like Xiao Yu'er couldn't learn.

Not long after the dishes that Xiao Yu'er prepared was served, suddenly the waitress shouted, "One more plate each of fried mutton and sweet and sour chicken."

Obviously this time Zhang Changgui didn't allow Xiao Yu'er to cook, he alone attended the order of the customers.

Minutes later suddenly Boss Peng, the owner of Si Hai Chun restaurant stormed into the kitchen, he glared and demanded, "Who did the fried mutton and sweet and sour chicken before?"

The fact that the owner himself came in the kitchen made Zhang Changgui's heart beat faster. He reluctantly answered, "Naturally, I'm the one that made them."

"No, it didn't seem quite so. It didn't taste like your cooking," said the owner.

Zhang Changgui was forced to explained the truth what had happened.

Boss Peng came closer to Xiao Yu'er. He stared at him from left to right and from top to bottom for so long, suddenly he raised his thumb and said with a laugh, "Amazing, simply amazing! At such a young age you are already such an expert in creating delicious dishes, even Old Master Xiong was shouting praises, how delicious your dishes were. Therefore from now on you are welcome hold the key to the kitchen."

"No, I'm worthy," replied Xiao Yu'er.

Boss Peng clapped Xiao Yu'er on the shoulder and said in a gentle voice, "I hope that you could help us. From now on Si Hai Chun is depending on you."

People that had expertize, even when they did any kind of job they would eventually shone out. It's just like a sharp screwdriver inside a bag, eventually the sharp end would poke a hole in the bag.

After Xiao Yu'er was promoted as the cook, magically Si Hai Chun restaurant became very busy, customers came from hundreds of li away upon hearing that Si Hai Chun had a great cook.

Boss Pang started to expand his business, he bought the space to the right and left of his restaurant. Several VIP rooms were built, and naturally more forces were hired to help in the kitchen. Now Xiao Yu'er just need to move the ladle back and forth in the wok and things went well.

In fact when he was fixing the dishes, his mind wandered to the content of the kungfu manual, like a love sick young man, day and night his thought kept dwelling on it, racking his brain to decipher the kungfu manual he once read.

Now people called him Yuda Shifu (Great Master Yu), naturally great master in cooking.

What he said became law. He forbade people that had no business to come into the kitchen, even Boss Peng himself didn't dare to come in.

But one day the owner came in and with enthusiasms he spoke to Xiao Yu'er while rubbing his hands together in glee, “Yu Laodi (Brother Yu) today you have to work harder. Guess who's our customer today?”

“Who?” asked Xiao Yu'er disinterested.

“He's THE person, great knight from the area of Sanxiang, he is gracious enough to come here. That means a great honor for me, and a great honor for you too, Yu Laodi.

Xiao Yu'er perked up, he quickly asked, “Who's that person?”

Boss Peng showed his right thumb and answered, Tie Wushuang, Tie Laoye (Master Tie), in Jianghu he has the title of Ay-cay-jibeng (sorry for the Hokkian title) "Values talent as much as one's life". Everybody in this area would recognize his name.

"Oh, is that so?" said Xiao Yu'er indifferently, as if no matter how famous that character was, he had no interest in it.

However, after he's done fixing the food, secretly he stepped outside. For the first time in a long while he stepped out of the kitchen.

The jianghu leader of the area of Sanxiang, "Values talent as much as one's life" Tie Wushuang. This name was very interesting to him, he wanted to know what kind of a character that cares for those who have talents that even an evil person like Li Dazui (Big-mouthed Li) he took as his son-in-law. For someone who dared to allow his beloved daughter to be the wife of Li Dazui; that kind of a person impressed Xiao Yu'er.

In one of the VIP rooms, beautifully decorated. The entrance had the swinging doors, there Xiao Yu'er peeped. He saw an old man with a red face shone with vigor, and a white beard. He was dressed in red and was sitting at the head of the banquet table.

Although he was smiling and looked benevolent, he had the air of authority. It was obvious that it was the style of someone that was used to power and giving orders. That type of attitude was hard to copy by common people.

Just one look was enough for Xiao Yu'er to be sure that that old man was indeed Tie Wushuang.

On the right side of Tie Wushuang sat a middle aged man, with a high cheek bone and a large nose like the beak of an eagle. His eyes piercing resembling the eyes of an eagle.

On the left of Tie Wushuang turned out to be Zhao Quanhai, he was Zong biaotou (general manager) from the merger of seventeen escort company that was well known by the name "Iron Fist that Shakes-up Jianghu".

Seeing Zhao Quanhai, Xiao Yu'er remembered the incidence of searching of the treasure at the cave behind Mount Emei before. At that time this notable person in the escort world treated him as someone above him and respectfully addressed him as "respectful elder". His amusing behavior made Xiao Yu'er wanted to laugh when he thought of it.

Besides those three, there were eight or nine valiant men well dressed at that evening banquet, it seemed that they were important people from the Jianghu realm.

Among those presence the two young men in purple standing behing Tie Wushuang caught Xiao Yu'er's attention. They were still very young, and they were very respectful to the other men that were present. But in a glance Xiao Yu'er knew that those two were more formidable than the others in the banquet room.

The young man in purple on the left side had thick eyebrow and big eyes. His face was rather dark, making him look like a black panther. His body was powerful, people would be impressed with his ability.

The young man in purple on the right has a fair face, very polite and looked like a scholar from an upper class family. He looked gentile, but his gaze was piercing

and penetrating.

Both young men were holding the wine jug and serving the guests on behalf of Tie Wushuang. It seemed that they must either be Tie Wushuang's nephews or disciples.

After the guests finished three glasses of wine, suddenly Zhao Quanhai stood up, he bowed toward the guests, then he finished the wine in his glass. After clearing his throat he spoke out, “Today I came under Master Tie's invitation. I should have eaten and get drunk then go home, but before getting drunk, I need to say what is in my heart.”

Tie Wushuang rubbed his own beard and said with a laugh, “Just say it out, or else how could you eat and drink wine with ease.”

The man with high cheek bone and big nose also spoke out, “ If Zhang-Zong biaotou wants to say something, naturally I am interested to listen.”

Zhao Quanhai glared and shouted, “The fact that Duan Hefei wanted to to send a cargo from Guan wei (north-east of China, outside Shanhai Pass) for this reason we, the merger of seventeen escort companies (Liangho-piaulian) had sent a representative to discuss the business with Duan Hefei, that situation is known to friends of Jianghu realm.

“That's right, I've heard about that news,” agreed the man with big nose, smiling.

“If Li-Zong biaotou (general manager Li) had known about this matter, than you should not have sent a delegate to contact Duan Hefei and stole the business that had been given to us,” shouted Zhao-Zong biaotou furiously. “I've heard for quite a while that 'Heng-shanying (Eagle from Southern Mount Heng) Li Feng was a daxia with high moral and loyal to friends, hmm it turns out...”

“Crack”, suddenly he squeezed the wine glass in his hand and shattered it to pieces.

Heng-shangying Li Feng, the man with a big nose stayed calm, he answered with a dry smile, “In business, people look for quality and honor, all of these have nothing to do with loyalty to friends in Jianghu realm. If Dua Hefei prefers to do business with Sanxiang piaulian how could we say no?”

“So, you mean that our Liangho piaulian can't compare to your Sanxiang piaulian?” asked Zhao Quanhai angrily.

“I never said that, but you are entitled to you own opinion,” replied Li Feng.

Zhao Quan Hai's chest raised up and down, trying to keep his temper, he said menacingly, "Hm... very good.." suddenly he turned to Tie Wushuang and said with a respectful bow, "Although I've come here because of your invitation, but I know that Master Tie has a close relation with Sanxiang Piaulian. Therefore I had no intention of asking Master Tie to take care of this problem, it's just..." suddenly he slammed the table and thundered, "It's just that Sanxiang piaulian had insulted Liangho piaulian. Whatever it is, we must test their ability, especially that man with the surname Li."

"Why, what's the problem with that man with the surname Li?" mocked Li Feng.

"Let's find out!" shouted Zhao Quanhai.

All of a sudden Tie Wushuang stood up and laughed. He raised his wine glass as he said, "Brother Zhao, let me invite you to drink another glass of wine first."

Without hesitation Zhao Quanhai raised up his wine glass and drank it all, he said, "Master Tie, what do you have in mind?"

"Brother Zhao, what you said was correct," Tie Wushuang said with a laugh, "for generations I have stayed here, and everyone of Jianghu in Sanxiang area can be said to have close relation with me. You can even say that Li Feng is still my martial-nephew. If right now Brother Zhang would go with revenge in the heart, then my involvement in Jianghu for tens of years would a waste.

Zhao Quanhai's face changed and he clarified, "Master Tie, do you mean ...."

"You still don't understand what I meant to say? Tie Wushuang asked.

Zhao Quanhai's hand automatically rested of the hilt of his saber, and the four men next to him quickly stood up. On the contrary Li Feng had a smirk on his face and he stared at his opponent with piercing gaze.

"Does Master Tie mean to keep me here against my will?" asked Zhao Quanhai slowly.

Tie Wushuang laughed heartily and said, "That's right, I would like to keep you here to listen to a few words I have to say." Suddenly he turned to Li Feng and said with an authoritative voice, "If I were to ask you to give that business to Liangho piao-lian, what would you think?"

Right away Li Feng's face changed, and he stuttered, "This..this..."

"You don't need to say this and that, I don't want to force you," said Tie Wushuang. "I've investigated this matter and it turned out that your party is in the wrong, now if you would like to accept my suggestion, in return I would give my tea plantation in Southern Mount Heng to Sanxiang Piaulian. As Jianghu comrade, you should put loyalty first before business, may you think over what I said."

Li Feng was quiet for a moment, and with a sigh he said while looking downward, "Master's word I dare not to argue, only that tea plantation is one main thing of the few possessions that you have. How could I dare to accept it.."

Tie Wushuang laughed and said, "Just as long as you don't forget loyalty among Jianghu comrades and not make our people be a target of insults, how could this little bit of possession mean anything to me?"

Zhao Quanhai was also quiet for some times, his expression changed because of embarrassment and he said while looking downward, "It turned out that Master Tie has a heart of gold, and I on the contrary... I really feel ashamed. I

would prefer that the business is taken care by Sanxiang piaulian."

"Ah, how would I dare to accept," said Li Feng with a laugh. "That business was already been accepted by Liangho piaulian, so it's only proper that we back out. If Zhao Zong biaotou keep on humbling himself, then we would feel more guilty."

If before both men were arguing and fighting for the business, now they both were offering each other to get the business.

Xiao Yu'er felt touched watching the turned of event, he thought, "Tie Wushuang was really amazing, it's no shame of him being the leader of jianghu. Not only that he's able to avoid a possible fight that could end up in bloodshed, but now both parties were giving in."

"If both of you are giving in, how about having the business done by both Liangho and Sanxiang, that way both party would be happy." said Tie Wushuang with a laugh.

Everybody with one accord clapped their hands in agreement. Now that the dispute has been resolved, Xiao Yu'er was about to leave the place.

At that moment Zhao Quanhai was lifting his wine glass and giving a toast to Li Feng for friendship, suddenly he frowned and stiffened up, his hand trembled till the wine spilled all over him.

He wasn't able to finish his speech, suddenly it was as if his feet were stepping on hot coals, he jumped up and collapsed. A loud noise of bowls and plates fell, swept off the table, followed by Zhao Quanhai himself collapsing.

The banquet went chaotic. The four escorts of Zhao Quanhai shouted of shock and quickly came to their leader's side to help him up, but they gave a startled cry, "Hey, Zhao Zong biaotou is poisoned!"

Right away Tie Wushuang face changed, he shouted confused, "How..how could this be?"

"How could this be? That question should be addressed to you?!" shouted one of Zhao Quanhai's escorts.

Li Feng slammed the table angrily and shouted, "What do you mean? The food and wine that he ate and drank we also partake, so...."

Before he could finish his sentence, suddenly he stiffened up like Zhao Quanhai, like wise he jumped up and collapsed. It seemed that he was poisoned just like Zhao Quanhai.

Naturally people got more confused and scared. Everyone was worried of being poisoned, since all of them partake the same food and wine on the table.

So, who put the poison in?

The fact that Li Feng was also poisoned, ruled him out as a suspect even if he wanted to kill Zhao Quanhai. It couldn't be Tie Wushuang, so who could be the person that put the poison if not from any of the parties that were having the conflict?

Usually the observer would see better, but Xiao Yu'er was also confused and didn't know how things end up that way.

In the middle of the commotion suddenly Xiao Yu'er saw the young man in purple outfit with the pale face quietly stepped out. Quickly Xiao Yu'er slipped back into the kitchen.

At that moment people in the kitchen learned about the excitement, and they all came out wanting to find out what's happening, and the kitchen was left empty. Not long after Xiao Yu'er got inside the kitchen, suddenly the young man in purple also came inside. With the excitement going on outside, what business did he want coming inside the kitchen?

Quickly Xiao Yu'er squatted down, pretending to add more wood to the stove.

The young man in purple didn't pay attention to Xiao Yu'er. Which martial arts

person would pay attention to an insignificant servant?

Hastily the young man in purple slipped out the kitchen back door and it could be heard him saying in a halting voice, "Cloud's dispersing.."

"Wind's blowing!" replied someone else outside the door.

Quickly Xiao Yu'er took a look, he saw the young man with the pale face retreated back into the kitchen, followed by another person. that person was dressed in black, wearing also a black mask, with a hoarse voice he asked, "Any success?"

"Successful!" replied the young man with a pale face.

"Great!" said the person in black.

The total speech of the person with a mask was only three sentences, but his words were enough to make Xiao Yu'er's heart beat faster. He knew that voice very well. He purposely ducked his head even lower till it's almost inside the stove.

Nevertheless the person in black still noticed him and with a startled voice he asked his friend, "Who's that?"

"Only a servant," answered the young man with a pale face.

"Can't let him be!" said the person in black.

At once they both leaped forward, the person in black hit 'Shen-shu' pressure point at the back of Xiao Yu'er. That pressure point is one of the fatal pressure points.

But Xiao Yu'er didn't dodge at all, only secretly he moved his 'chi', and at the last moment he moved his pressure point to the side. He used 'Yi Xue Da Fa', the great skill of relocating pressure point, the highest skill in kungfu. Even though he

had not practiced it to perfection, but it was far from enough for Xiao Yu'er to take care of the situation.

Accurately the person in black hit the target, and it was definite that Xiao Yu'er collapsed without making a sound, he was sure that the servant died. With a scoff he grunted, "Who told you to stay in the kitchen, you yourself asked for it, not my fault!"

"How he died he didn't even realize, how could he accuse you?" laughed the young man with the pale face.

"Take care that nobody would recognize you," whispered the man in black.

"Yes, I know," answered the young man with the pale face.

"Quick, get out there, before anybody gets suspicious," advised the person in black.

The young man with a pale face nodded. He quickly ran back to the front room. Of course they didn't expect a servant to have such an amazing kungfu, they thought that nobody knew what had happened, therefore they ignored the "dead body".

Xiao Yu'er still laid face down on the floor not moving pretending to be dead, but his mind was working full speed thinking what had happened and what he just saw.

What was most intriguing was the voice of the person in black, it sounded very much like Jiang Yulang's. If that was really Jiang Yulang, then what's the connection between the disciple of Tie Wushuang and Yulang? What terrible scheme were they brewing together?

Right away Xiao Yuer remembered what he saw in the Jiang Bie He's secret chamber the other day, among the things he found out was the little bottles of poisons that was hard to find, tucked away inside the "boxed book".

Although he only saw for a brief moment, but every night those poison in the small bottles never escaped his mind, until now he still remembered clearly those poisons, and among them were "Xiaohun san" (soul melting powder), "Meiren lei, qibu duanchang" (Tears of the beauty, shatters the intestine within seven steps, "Duoming dan, yidi fenghou" (Life-taking tablet, a drop closes the airway), "Sanhu shui" (Soul dispersing water), "Xuepo jing" (Soul-cleansing Essence) and many other poisons.

"Xuepo jing!" shouted Xiao Yu'er, and quickly jumped up, "That's right, for sure that's the poison! From the condition of Zhao Quanhai after being poisoned, wasn't his skin looked as if he's frozen stiff?"

Right away he tore a napkin and wrote the recipe of the antidote with a charcoal on the napkin. A kid raised at Ten Evil Valley did have a vast knowledge; at least he knew how to counteract some poisons in this world.

Poison to a kid raised at Ten Evil Valley was as common and simple thing like white sugar to common people.

In the mean time Zhao Quanhai's and Li Feng's face had turned a strange gray, and their bodies before were shaking and stiffed, now couldn't move anymore.

Other people were shaking also, who knows maybe from being afraid or maybe from the poison. Since they didn't know when the poison would start acting up, they were tensed like a criminal in the court waiting for the judge's verdict. They were not comfortable sitting down. They were scared to run away, because if they run then the poison will act faster.

That smile on Tie Wushuang face had disappeared, he walked back and forth clenching his hands. That Jianghu elder that had roamed all over for tens of years, now had ran out of ideas.

Suddenly Tie Wushuang tilt his head back and sigh, he thought aloud, "What kind of poison? And who in the world put the poison there?!"

At that moment the young man in purple with a pale face was already standing behind Tie Wushuang, suddenly he said, "Maybe it's the restaurant worker?..."

"If the poison was in the food, I was the one that ate and drank the most then I would feel the effect first. Moreover a small restaurant like this wouldn't be able to find such a formidable poison," said Tie Wushuang.

"That's right," agreed the young man with big eyes and thick eyebrows. "This poison has no smell and color, even Master didn't notice it..."

"In my opinion this poison didn't originate from this country, if not how could I not recognize it after roaming around in Jianghu realm for tens of years. I think, if I'm not mistaken, maybe that poison..."

"Your guess is correct is not wrong!" suddenly someone cut in, before Tie Wushuang could finished his statement. "The poison didn't come from this country, instead 'Xuepo jing' comes from Tian-shan (Sky Mountain)"

In the middle of the sentence, suddenly someone flew in through the swinging door, while the body was still in the air suddenly he threw an object while shouting, "The recipe of the antidote for the poison Xuepo jing is written of the napkin. Go quickly to a pharmacy and the people's life may be saved"

His speech was very quick, and his movement was even quicker. While he was in the midst of the speech his silhouette had disappeared. The last two sentences were echoed from distance away.

People became panic, they wanted to chase, but it was too late.

"Fast move!" praised Tie Wushuang and at the same time he caught the object that was thrown by the person. Sure enough it was a piece of napkin that was rather oily and on the napkin was written the strange medicine recipe.

"Xuepo jing!" murmured Tie Wushuang after reading the recipe. "So it is correct that it's Xuepo jing...how come I didn't think about it?!"

People started cheering up and shouted, "It that is so Zhao Zong biaotou's life can be saved.

The young man with the pale face looked rather uneasy, and suddenly he snorted, "Hm, it's most likely a ploy from an evil man."

One of the people check the hand of Zhao Quanhai and said, "That's right, that crook must have evil intention to harm other people. Usually people that were poisoned by Xuepo jing would die frozen and stiff but.. but this Zhao person's body is hot as if he's burning."

Tie Wushuang replied, "Don't you know that people who die from frost bite, before dying do not feel cold, in fact on the contrary, they would feel hot as if burned. That sensation unless you've experienced it yourself, would be hard to believe."

"You Elder, how could you know all these?" suddenly the young man in purple with the pale face asked.

"It's because I've experienced it, I almost froze to the point of death," answered Tie Wushuang calmly.

The young man in purple lowered his head and didn't dare to speak any more. However his eyes still darted to the napkin that had the recipe written.

In the mean time, Xiao Yu'er was already at the outskirt of the town. Naturally he realized that Si-hai chun restaurant could no longer be his hiding place. He still didn't want to come out yet. He wanted to wait for the right moment, once he's ready he would create a sensation in Jianghu realm. That way people would realize what kind of a person Jiang Yu, Jiang Yu'er actually was!

But at the moment he still didn't want to meddle into other people's business, although he realized that the incidence at Si-hai chun would be a mystery that would stir up Jianghu realm. It's because he realized that his own ability right now is not enough to take care of the problem, and most likely his life would end up in danger.

So where could he go right now?

He walked forward with no definite destination, still dirty and poor. However his mind and kungfu ability were vast different from his situation before.

The invincible daxia, a true knight finally was about to be born!

One day Xiao Yu'er arrived by the bank of the river, seeing the big waves of the river, subconsciously he slowed down his pace. He was hoping to see the boat of the traveling troupe who had a lowly life but heart as good as gold. He also would like to see those big and bright pair of eyes.

There were many boats going to and fro down the river, but the boat of the traveling troupe can no longer be seen. Where did they go? Were they still roaming around, bobbing here and there?

Xiao Yu'er stood pensively by the river bank for a long time.

Who knows how long it had been, suddenly he heard a rush of wind from behind and someone greeted him, "I'm sorry brother, that you had to wait for a while."

Puzzled, Xiao Yu'er turned his head but didn't say anything.

That person asked, "How come you are here by yourself? Where are the other two?"

Xiao Yu'er continued to be quiet.

That man said angrily, "We have come as you requested, how come you continue to ignore?"

Finally Xiao Yu'er turned around and smiled, " Maybe you got the wrong person, I'm not the person you're looking for."

He saw the three people in front of him, the one of the left was big and tall wearing red attire, obviously that he's the "Red attired Golden saber" Li Ming

Sheng.

The person that was in the middle looked valiant, naturally he was Li Ming Sheng's father, "Golden Lion" Li Di. The other one had a dark face and short beard, he was "Purple-faced Lion" Li Ting whom Xiao Yu'er met along with Jiang Yulang when they were sailing together.

Xiao Yu'er was shocked, his smile nearly froze. Luckily the night was dark, so the three people did not recognize him.

The light from the stars only flickered, and Xiao Yu'er was now much taller than before, his face was dirty and his body had splashes of peanut oil. He looked like a beggar.

"Golden Lion" Li Di frowned and said, "It's only a little beggar."

"Why are you here for?" demanded Li Ming Sheng.

Xiao Yu'er lowered his head and replied, "I don't have a place to stay, so I stay anywhere."

"Get lost!" ordered Li Ming Sheng. "Do you need to..."

Before he finished his words suddenly "Purple-faced Lion Li Ting said excitedly, "There, they have arrived!"

At that time at the surface of the water a small boat zipped through. The passengers were three people in black.

End of Chapter 41.

Chapter 31

Chapter 42

Xiao Yu'er moved away to the bushes by the river side. He squatted, too lazy to go. In actuality he just wanted to see some excitement.

Even before the boat arrived, the three people had already leaped on land, all were nimble and fast, their lightness kungfu wasn't too shabby.

The first one had a tall and hefty physique, the second person behind him was short but fast and the third person was petite and slender, seemed to be a woman.

All three of them were in black and each was wearing a black mask that even their eyes were almost covered. Each of them was carrying a long item wrapped, and obviously those were weapons.

Why would they wrap their weapons in black cloth? Were there any secrets about their weapons?

Mean while the father and son Li had already came forward, but they stopped a few meters away. Both parties were watching each other carefully and warily.

“Golden Lion” Li Di shouted menacingly, “Are you the ones that go by the name 'Ren-yi san-xia' (Three Righteous Heroes)?

The tall and big person in black answered coldly, “That's right.”

“These last few years several carts of our escorted goods kept getting stolen. Are you the one that's responsible of it?”

Again that man in black answered, “That's right!”

Li Di became angry and shouted, “What enmity is there between our Shuang-shi biao-ju (Double Lion Escort) with you? Why are you looking for trouble with us?”

“Our enmity is not too big, but also not to small,” answered the man in black.

“Hm.., after being successful several times and our party couldn't find out information about you, you should have hidden and be saved. Why did you send us a letter asking us to come here to meet you?”

“All the people in Jianghu are aware that both Zhao Quanhai and Li Feng were both poisoned,” said the man in black calmly. “Although both men did not die, but Liangho-piau-lian and Sanxiang piau-lian had lost their name and trust.”

Li Di facial expression changed at that moment., but Li Ting immediately snorted, “What does all these have to do with us?”

“Naturally there's a reason,” said the man in black. He spoke calmly, not in a hurry but not belittling either, but his voice was as if he was trying to disguise it.

Li Di became impatient and shouted, “What's the reason, you tell us!”

“If Liangho and Sanxiang lost the people's trust then it's a big opportunity that Shuang-shi Biao-ju to show its ability. The business from Duan Hefei subsequently fell into your hands!" said the man in black.

At this moment Xiao Yu'er became very intrigued.

"If that's so, why don't you wait for a good opportunity to rob when we are escorting?" shouted Li Di.

"The business of escorting the goods of Duan Hefei is not a small matter," replied the man in black calmly. "I imagine that Shuang-shi biao-ju would not dare to escort it on their own, and would ask outside help. We wouldn't be able to do the job, just the three of us."

"Hehe, I guess you know your limit," scorned 'Purple-faced Lion' Li Ting.

"That's why now we are here to stop you from escorting the goods of Duan Heife," said the man in black menacingly. "If Sanxaing and Liangho Piau-lian are experiencing misfortune, then don't expect that you would be able to benefit from it."

At the end of his speech, he signaled and at once they unwrapped their weapon, the black cloth was discarded on the ground and three weapons gleaming, reflecting the lights, their weapons looked like a hook, but the tips were shaped of Mei flower (plum blossom).

"Hey, Mei-hua-gou (Plum Blossom Hook)?!" shouted Li Di surprised.

"Haha, so you recognized these weapons," mocked the man in black.

"Hm, you dare to show those weapons, reckless aren't we? Aren't you afraid that your enemy would come secretly and cut off your heads?" mocked back Li Ting.

"Nobody would know that Mei-hua-gou has reappeared in Jianghu," replied the man in black.

"Hah, at the least I'm aware of it," laughed Li Ting.

"But you would not able to talk anymore," scoffed the man in black.

At that moment the three people in black leaped forward. The short quick one lead out by rushing toward Li Ming Sheng. His movement was very nimble, and his style was vicious, he seemed to bear a grudge toward Li Ming Sheng.

While the female in black launched toward the Purple-faced Lion Li Ting. Her movement were fast and agile, her attacking style with Mei-hua-gou in her hand was even faster and more vicious with many changes of directions.

Li Ting's kungfu was considered pretty decent, and he had the experience. However, against the attack of such strange weapon with rapid movements, he was in trouble immediately.

On the other side Li Di was parring against the hefty man in black.

Li Di was known as an expert in saber, his golden saber movement was hard and strong. Each attack brought a strong swish of wind. However, the robust man in black was equally as formidable, in fact his stamina was above Li Di's. The Mei-hua-gou was used to lock in the opponent's weapon. Li Di's weapon became powerless, and he couldn't develop his movement.

The fight was terrific, but in the eyes of Xiao Yu'er, it was blah, not at all interesting. Except for the Mei-hua-gou movement that once or twice came out with a strange or new movement, it was not worth watching.

It's understood that from the result of his contemplation of the manual, other people's kungfu became insignificant; just like an artist looking at children's scribble.

The kungfu knowledge in the secret manual that he learned covered the essence of the highest martial arts, compared to Li Di's and his gang's kungfu the difference was like heaven and earth.

Among Li Di and the other two, the one that got the worst was Li Ming Sheng, just about tens of movements he had difficulty in developing his saber movement. Drops of sweat decorating his brow and tip of his nose. The short person in black on the other hand, became more and more valiant the longer the fight. Suddenly he dodge and leaped forward. A green light flashed and suddenly Li Ming Sheng's saber was locked by his hooked weapon.

Li Ming Sheng was shock, his will to fight vaporized instantly. Because at that

situation his chest was left open, unguarded if the opponent would attack with a fist, even if he would not die, he would be seriously injured.

Unexpectedly the person in black only gave him a slap and shouted, "This is the payment of debt I owe you."

Li Ming Sheng staggered because of the slap, when he was able to stand up, he asked, "What do you mean by payment of debt?"

"Disciples of Mei-hua-bang (Peach Blossom Clan) are very good in returning favors, good and evil. Every debt owed has to be paid in full." scoffed the person in black.

"But... when did I ever.."

"Before you die I will explain clearly what exactly the debt I needed to pay to you!" shouted the man in black. Again the Mei-hua-gou moved, in a short moment green flash surrounded and block the light of the opponent's saber.

At that moment suddenly someone gave a long laugh, a shadow slipped in between the flashes from the hook. Following that the sound "sarr...serr...ser.." three times was heard, and all three Mei-hua-gou of those people in black flew up in the air and two fell in the middle of the river.

All three in black were shocked, and automatically jumped back. They only felt their wrists shook and suddenly their weapons flew off their hands, how their enemy did it, they didn't even know.

When they looked carefully they saw in front of them a young man with a fair face had appeared from nowhere. That young man looked so weak that the wind could blow him away, yet in a flash was able to disarm them. Even in a dream they could not imagine it.

Seeing that fair faced young man surprised Xiao Yu'er. Jiang Yulang, that young man with a fair face and sinister smile was none other than Jiang Yulang.

But, how in the world did his kungfu improve so much?

That question could be answered by Xiao Yu'er. Because Jiang Yulang happened to memorize the content of the kungfu manual, if within these two years his skill didn't improved than it would be in vain that he's a human being.

Li Di and the gang were glad to see Jiang Yulang appearance, on the other hand the three in black were shocked.

"Huh, so you had hidden help around," yell the hefty man in black angrily.

"Haha, what do you think about our help?" mocked Li Di laughing.

The hefty man in black stamped his foot in anger, and he was about to walk away but Jiang Yulang slipped past and blocked in front of them, laughing, "Hey, don't be in such a hurry, there's still some matter that I need your explanation."

"What do you want?" shouted the hefty man in black.

"This lady is wearing a mask, is it because her face is too ugly or too beautiful?" ask Jiang Yulang with a laugh.

The short person in black became angry, he roared and leaped forward to attack.

His skill actually wasn't too shabby at all, as Li Meng Shuang was not able to spar against him. But now that he's facing Jiang Yulang, his skill was no use at all. Before he had the chance to hit, suddenly his wrist was caught by Jiang Yulang, with a flick suddenly his body flew far, and he almost fell into the river.

"Because you didn't want to answer, I had no choice but to check it myself," laughed Jiang Yulang. At the same time he leaped forward and slipped pass the hefty man in black, suddenly he was already in front of the girl.

At once the female in black moved both of her hands to hit, but somehow both

hands were caught by Jiang Yulang in one hand. Quickly she kicked, but just as she was raising her foot, suddenly her knee felt stiff and prickly and she couldn't move it anymore.

"Hehe, I hope that your face is beautiful, if not I would be so disappointed," laughed Yulang.

"Let...let go!" yell the girl in black hoarsely.

Naturally Yulang didn't want to let her go, when the other hand came near, girl tilt her head back, but in the end the cloth that covered her face was removed by Jiang Yulang.

Under the light of the twinkling stars her face could be seen, also her big round eyes.

Xiao Yu'er almost shouted out.

Hai Hongzhu, that girl in black turned out to be Hai Hongzhu!

Great, great! You are a pretty girl after all," laughed Yulang.

"Hey, it's her!" shout Li Meng Shuang.

"You know her?" asked Yulang.

"She is the acrobat girl that was responsible for big Brother Bai's death!" shouted Li Meng Shuang hoarsely.

"So that short guy was the kid that I slapped once, no wonder he held a grudge, and wanted to payback."

"Haha, wonderful, wonderful, the disciples of Mei-hua-bang (Peach Blossom Clan) had to become traveling acrobat troupe," mocked Yulang. "In order to avoid your enemy, you are willing to do such a lowly job, for that I admire you."

Right away that hefty man pulled his mask off. Sure enough he was indeed Hai Sidie. He shouted, "Let go of her hand!"

"It's not difficult to let her hand go," replied Yulang, "but I want to ask you first, who was that person that killed Master Bai with one hit that day? Where is he right now?"

"You are looking for him?" shout Hai Hongzhu. "Huh, in your dream!"

"Oh, dream?..." Yulang smiled while squeezing her wrist tighter. Hai Hong Zhu grimaced with pain till her tears came pouring.

But she tried to endure, and shouted with her teeth gnashing, "People like you can't compare to him. Huh, even to be his errand boy you are not worthy." Her voice was shaking towards the end, obviously she was trying to bear the pain. Even if it killed her she wasn't willing to stop talking.

With anger Hai Sidie roared and hit Jiang Yulang's back with a mighty fist.

Jiang Yulang didn't even turn, his body stayed still, as if it didn't move, but suddenly Hai Sidie's hand was locked under his armpit and he wasn't able to free his hand.

Hai Sidie tried to pull back his arm, till his vein on his forehead popped up and beads of sweat covered his brow. His hand felt as if it was locked under a vice grip, it felt that it's going to break.

Before he roamed in Jianghu realm, but now against this young man he wasn't able to do anything. He lost hope, he let out a sigh and said, "Never mind, I....."

Before he could finish his sentence suddenly a haunting voice called out, "Oooh, how painful is my Shen Shu pressure point. Jiang Yulang, come on here, and pay back my life that you have taken."

The voice was sharp and clear like the moan of a ghost. Following the moan a silhouette flew from the bushes by the river bank.

In the middle of the night a form with hair a mess going in all direction was dimly seen, the whole body oily, the shape looked more like a ghost than human. The form seemed to float, not touching the ground. The scream was scary and haunting causing the people that saw him to feel afraid and having cold sweat.

Obviously Jiang Yulang was afraid also, but with a menacing voice he stammered, "You..you.., who are you?"

"Cold hearted scoundrel," Xiao Yuer cackled. We had never met before nor had we any grudges, but in the kitchen of Si Hai Chun restaurant, you killed me in cold blood. Now you have to pay for my life."

Jiang Yulang released his hold on Hai Hong Zhu's arm, he started to retreat and stuttered, "You..you.."

People like Jiang Yulang actually don’t believe in ghosts, devils or any of those sorts. Now he’s forced to believe because he knew for sure that he did hit the fatal pressure point of that servant, and he absolutely sure that the person died, moreover nobody witnessed the incidence in the Si Hai Chun’s kitchen. Then who could this person be if not a ghost?

Jiang Yulang teeth were chattering so much that he wasn’t able to talk. Seeing their hero scared to bits, Li Di and the others started to retreat also.

“Hehe, are you running away? Mocked Xiao Yu’er with an eerie voice. “Huh, you won’t be able to. Come here and give me your life!”

With a contorted grin he moved forward one step at a time. He made his steps swayed to the right and to the left as if being blown by the wind.

Naturally Xiao Yu’er’s appearance attracted Hai Hongzhu’s attention. She stared with her eyes wide opened, and suddenly she shouted, “Hey it’s you! It’s

you, Xiaodai?”

Although physically Xiao Yu’er had changed a lot, but his eyes, his eye gaze had long been carved in Hai Hongzhu’s heart, the way he blinked and winked she could never forget in her entire life, naturally she recognized him immediately.

As soon as she shouted, she realized her mistake, but it was too late, she could not take it back.

Xiao Yu’er quietly sighed, the problem was going to be more complex.

Sure enough, that clever Jiang Yulang realized that something was not right, suddenly he made a move, in a flash he leaped forward and with ease he sent out seven strokes in succession.

Seeing the strange turn of event and seeing Jiang Yulang formidable stances, Hai Sidie and his two children were shocked, in fact secretly Hai Hongzhu was worried for the ‘dummy’ that she yearned for.

But Xiao Yu’er wasn’t afraid, he scoffed, “Hm, you want to kill me again?”

Calmly Xiao Yu’er stood his ground, his body didn’t move, in essence he didn’t dodge, yet Xiao Yu’er attacks did not meet the target, they didn’t even touch Yu’er’s clothes.

Everyone was surprised, Jiang Yulang himself was worried and scared, suddenly he roared and again he sent out another seven fists, this time faster and fiercer.

Still Xiao Yu’er didn’t budge, and Jiang Yulang’s fists still weren’t able to touch him.

“No matter how you attack, you won’t be able to kill me again, you still don’t believe it?” mocked Xiao Yu’er.

Jiang Yulang body trembled, beads of perspiration were on his forehead.

Others were watching this extraordinary event with amazement.

They were all first rate kungfu experts, they knew that Jiang Yulang's kungfu skill was great and formidable, the fact that someone could stand there without dodging and all fourteen fists of Yulang didn't touch him. It's hard to imagine that something like this can happen.

However, this person was able to do it, tens of Jiang Yulang attacks hit empty place, if they didn't see it with their own eyes, they would not believe it.

They didn't know that Jiang Yulang skills came from the same source as Xiao Yu'er's, only Xiao Yu'er's knowledge was deeper than Jiang Yulang's.

The manual book was read by both of them, but Xiao Yu'er's had better memory and brain than Jiang Yulang, especially during this two years Jiang Yulang was already known a young hero, the son of the well known Jiang Nan daxia Jiang Bie He, naturally he seldom practiced. That's the reason every fist that Jiang Yulang sent was known by Xiao Yu'er before it arrived. As long as Xiao Yu'er calculated accurately where it's going to go, with a minimal movement Jiang Yulang's fist would hit empty space.

Hai Hongzhu's eyes were wide opened and tears were running down, but it was not because of sadness, but of surprise and joy.

She saw Xiao Yu'er started to press on step by step, and Jiang Yulang also started to retreat step by step. His arms and legs as if they were weak and no strength to attack back

Naturally Li Di and the other two started to move further back and finally they ran away.

Suddenly Jiang Yulang leaped up high and somersaulted in the air. He ran even faster than Li Di and the other two.

Xiao Yu'er didn't bother to chase, he chuckled while watching them running. He murmured, "I had no intention to kill, really I didn't want to kill you."

At that moment Hai Hongzhu came running and shouted, voice all shaky, "Xiaodai, I know that we will meet again, I know..."

Xiao Yu'er laughed and said, "Who is Xiaodai? ...I'm a ghost...ghost.." suddenly he flew backward and he somersaulted in the air and "plung" he fell right in the middle of the river.

Hai Hongzhu ran to the bank of the river and cried sadly, "Xiaodai, Xiaodai, if you didn't care to meet me then why bother to come here? If you wanted to see me, then why did you leave after seeing me? Why..., why?...."

Hai Sidie let out a long sigh and said, "Why? Who can explain how people live their lives in this world? Child Hong, from the beginning I've advised you to forget him, if not you yourself will suffer all the time…"

*****

The night was getting late, as much as possible Xiao Yu'er tried to relax his muscles of his body and allowed his body to float on the surface. The water of the river was cold, it was like a bed to him. The stars were twinkling decorating the sky, he felt so comfortable.

Nevertheless he had seen the people that he wanted to see, even though the turn of event surprised him greatly, even though he only saw them for a little while, but it was enough. He felt that if it was prolonged things would turn bad and boring.

The mystery that puzzled him for several days was finally solved today. The young man in purple with a pale face was in cahoot with Jiang Yulang. It was obvious that Jiang Yulang was the main character behind the screen for Shuang-shi biao-ju (Double Lion Escort Agency).

Therefore the problem of Zhao Quanhai and Li Feng being poisoned wasn't a mystery anymore. The wine that they drank was poured by that young man with pale face.

Xiao Yu’er thought over the event that had happened, at that moment suddenly several bamboo poles were pulling and lifting his body up.

At first he was shocked, but then he remembered, "Maybe they thought that I'm drowning and are trying to save me." Secretly he was amused, and played along by closing his eyes.

Not long after several people pulled him up on the boat, someone felt his chest and said, "Hah, this kid has long life, it's fortunate that we found him before he is dead."

Someone fed him some warm broth and another person massage his body.

Suddenly a loud voice was heard, "What kind of a person did you help? Let me see."

Immediately Xiao Yu'er felt his body being carried by people, he felt lazy to open his eyes, but the light of a lamp blinded his eyes, it seemed that he was inside the cabin of the boat.

The loud voice asked again, "Is this person dead or still alive?"

"Alive!" shouted Xiao Yu'er suddenly. He opened his eyes and laughed.

When he opened his eyes, he saw a robust man with the collar of the shirt half opened. His fez was tilted to the side and one of his feet propped on a chair. On his hand he's holding a long and big tobacco pipe.

With the pipe pointing to Xiao Yu'er he shouted, "If you're alive, why do you pretend to be dead?"

Before Xiao Yu'er had the chance to answer he noticed that the chest of the "man" was full, the waist tiny and although the eyebrows were thick and the eyes big, the face wasn't bad.

That "man" turned out to be a woman, in fact if the body would be a little smaller she would be considered as a beautiful woman. Only now she's considered as a large woman, her shoe size were two sizes larger than the average woman.

With a laugh Xiao Yu'er answered, "If you are a woman, then why are you dressed up as a man?"

Right away that large woman glared and said, "Don't you know who I am?"

"Who cares if you are a man or a woman, the fact is you are a human being," laughed Xiao Yu'er. "I think that you have difficulty to find a husband even if you lowered your price. If you act so fierce, who would dare to propose to you?

Xiao Yu'er had a sharp and loose tongue, for the last two years he tried so hard to control himself. But now that he's out hiding, his habit was hard to curb. What much can be said if that's how his personality was.

The large lady became very angry, she shouted while slamming her palm on the table, "You dare to speak to me that way?"

Those people that carried Xiao Yu'er in became scared upon seeing the miss angry and they cowered behind Xiao Yu'er.

However, Xiao Yu'er pretended to be oblivious, he was still laughing and said, "Why should I be afraid? As long as you are a human being, no matter what I don't...."

Before he finished his sentence several of the people interrupted him, " This is our boss, the beloved daughter of Duan Lao Taiye (Old Grandmaster Duan). People in Jianghu call her "Nu Mengchang", you must have heard the name. So speak carefully and don't be rude."

"O, so you are the daughter of Duan Heifei," said Xiao Yu'er with a laugh. "Didn't your dad want to send a lump sum of money to Guan-wai?"

The large lady with the title "Nu Mengchang" frowned, and she asked back, "Where do you know this from?"

Xiao Yu'er started sniffing, and asked again, "This load of medicines, did you get it from Guan-wai?"

Nu Mengchang's eyes grew big, and she shouted, "How do you know that this boat is loaded with medicines?"

Xiao Yu'er laughed and answered, "Not only do I know that this boat is loaded with medicines, but I know what kind of medicines. There are ginseng, gui pi (Chinese cinnamon), lu jiao (deer antler), wu jiazi (bark of the sleder acanthopanax).." In one breath he rattled a string of medicine names and it turned out to be accurate with the content of the cargo of the boat, not one mistake.

Obviously nobody knew that Xiao Yu'er being raised among piles of medicine, not only knew these few common medicines, even if all medicine in this world all mixed up into one he could still recognize by smelling them. Now that he explained the names of all the medicines on board, naturally everyone had their mouths gaped open in surprise.

Nu Mengchang's eyes shone with amusement, she inhaled deeply the tobacco, and "berr", suddenly she blew the smoke to Xiao Yu'er's face and said calmly, "It's a surprise that you kid is an expert in medicine."

Xiao Yu'er's tears almost flowed out from the tobacco smoke, he rubbed his eyes and laughed, "I'm no only an expert in medicine, but I'm willing to bet that hardly anybody knows better about medicine than me. If you are really Nu Mengchang you should have invited me to your pharmacy with all honor."

Nu Mengchang inhaled the tobacco, this time she didn't blow the smoke at Xiao Yu'er's face, but slowly exhaled it. After done exhaling the tobacco smoke, she suddenly stood up and while walking away she said to her staff, "Give him a change of clothes and bring him to Qingyu Tang (Hall of Overflowing Celebration) or Qingyu Hall."

Qingyu Hall was the name of the biggest pharmacy in the city of Anqing, in fact the biggest in the province of Anhwi. Nu Mengchang, the beloved daughter of Duan Hefei, placed Xiao Yu’er in the pharmacy as a pharmacist and in charge of the inventory.

Xiao Yu'er's job was easy enough, he didn't need to be at the front, and so he didn't need to worry of being recognized. Everyday he only had to measure medicines that were needed according to the prescription and to check the inventory, other than that it could be said that there's nothing else for him to do.

He just found out that Duan Hefei was the wealthiest person in the Chang-jiang valley, all the companies that had the best business in that area were monopolized by him.

And Nu Mengchang was his only daughter, it was told that she had two older brothers, but both died when they were small. That's the reason why people call her as "Third Miss".

"Third Miss" often came to Qingyu Hall, but she never paid any attention to Xiao Yu'er, therefore Xiao Yu'er also ignored her. However, Xiao Yu'er was aware that although in the outside this large lady looked fierce but in the inside her heart was not too bad.

The strange thing was the more Xiao Yu'er ingored her, the more often the visit to the pharmacy by the large lady, sometimes up to two or three times a day, but not even once did she look at him, naturally Xiao Yu'er wasn't bothered by it, only secretly he felt amused.

One day Xiao Yu'er was lying on his lazy chair basking under the sun, the sunshine at the beginning of winter felt so cozy. He felt so comfortable that he almost fell asleep.

Suddenly "Third Miss" approached him and with her pipe she tapped the lazy chair with her pipe and said, "Hey, wake up!"

Lazily Xiao Yu'er opened his eyes and answered, "Whom are you talking to?"

"Is there anyone else beside you here?" replied 'Third Miss".

"But my name is not 'Hey', " laughed Xia Yu'er.

'Third Miss' glared, but she then laughed and said, "I want to ask you about my Dad sending the money to Guan-wai like you said, where did you know that from?"

"Why, did something happen to it?" asked Xiao Yu'er.

"It was robbed on the road," replied 'Third Miss' dryly.

Instantly Xiao Yu'er's eyes popped wide open, he quickly sat up and said, "It was robbed by someone? It wasn't escorted by Shuang-shi biao-ju (Double Lion Escort)?"

"In fact it was escorted by Shuang-shi biao-ju (Double Lion Escort)," replied 'Third Miss'.

Absent mindedly Xiao Yu'er rubbed his nose and murmured, "How strange! If it was escorted by Shuang-shi biao-ju (Double Lion Escort), then why was it robbed?…"

"You think that goods escorted by Shuang-shi biao-ju (Double Lion Escort) could not be robbed? Mocked 'Third Miss'. "Hmm, I see that those two men with the surname Li in essence are like rice pots, only good in making noises but incompetent in working."

"Even though the two Li men are rice pots," said Xiao Yu'er, "but there are still others who are not rice pots."

"Who are they?" asked 'Third Miss'.

"There are many turns and dips in this case that you are not aware of, in fact I… yes! I myself don't know everything completely."

“You are speaking nonsense,” grumbled ‘Third Miss’ glaring.

After thinking for a moment, Xiao Yu’er asked, “What kind of a person was the robber, do you know?”

“The package disappeared suddenly in the middle of the night. The door weren’t opened, the windows were closed, the guards didn’t see anything, and in fact not a noise was heard. The package just suddenly disappeared as if it had wings.”

This is really a strange happening,” said Xiao Yu’er. “I feel that the robbers must have some black magic or something must be wrong with the ears and eyes of people from Shuang-shi biao-ju (Double Lion Escort).

“If that is so, they themselves would lose,” said ‘Third Miss’.

“Are they supposed to reimburse?”

“Of course, even if they have to pawn their pants,” scoffed the large lady.

Xiao Yu’er rubbed his nose and murmured, “How strange, at first I thought that Shuang-shi biao-ju (Double Lion Escort) side were the thief that shouted thief, but if they had to reimburse, then how can this happen?”

“It’s because they are all rice pots, that’s why the goods that they are guarding were robbed, is that simple.”

“It seems very simple, but is possible that behind the scene is very complex.”

“What do you mean?” asked ‘Third Miss’.

“I myself don’t know what it means,” replied Xiao Yu’er laughing.

‘Third Miss’ stared at the young man, staring at his smile for so long. Suddenly

she shouted, “Actually are you a smart person or a dumb one?”

Xiao Yu’er sighed, he turned around and buried his head in his arms and said coldly, “If I were a dumb person, then my life would be much happier.”

End of chapter 42

Chapter 32

Chapter 43

The next day is still a warm and sunny day. Once again, Xiao Yu’er was lying on the chair tanning himself.

It’s as if all the bones in his body has softened, it’s as if he is not thinking of anything, but in fact, he’s thinking of many things.

All the things he has been thinking can actually be summed up into two sentences: “How did the cargo get stolen? Who stole it?” He can’t think of an answer.

Just then, Third Missy came again.

Xiao Yu’er looked at her thru half closed eyes, and saw that she appeared very excited. She rushed towards him and said loudly, “Hey, you’re wrong.”

Xiao Yu’er actually can’t be bothered about her, but on hearing this sentence, he opened his eyes and asked, “What was I wrong about?”

Third Missy said with shining eyes, “I just heard the news, the cargo has been taken back.”

Xiao Yu’er’s eyes widened, “Who took it back?”

Third Missy replied loudly, “That person is about the same age as you, but his abilities are far superior than yours. If you’re not so lazy, you might accomplish one-tenth of what he has achieved.”

Xiao Yu’er jumped up and exclaimed, “The person you are talking about is Jiang Yulang?”

Third Missy was taken aback and asked, “How did you know?”. Xiao Yu’er laughed loudly, “I know, of course I know… I know everything now…”

He was laughing and shouting and jumping and Third Missy, stunned, could not help but ask, “Are you crazy?”

Xiao Yu’er suddenly jumped up and kissed Third Missy’s face, and laughingly said, “Too bad I am not, so their unfortunate days will soon come.” Clapping and laughing, he turned around and skipped into the warehouse.

Third Missy touched her face, and with wide open eyes, looked at him as if she has seen a weirdo and mumbled, “Crazy… you’re really a Little Craze.”

As only a strand of wick was used, the light was not bright. Xiao Yu’er stared at this bit of light intently, smiling and muttering, “Jiang Yulang, you are really smart. You pretended that the cargo was stolen, and seized it back again… such a mysterious robbery, and you solved it without any effort, who in Jiang Hu will not admire you, and who would have guess it’s just a show directed by yourself?”

He sighed softly, “Only me – Xiao Yu’er, don’t forget that I’m still around in this world, none of your bellyful of devious plans can escape me.”

Outside the window, the night was quiet, only the whishing of the wind blowing on the dried branches could be heard. Suddenly, someone whispered, “Little Craze, Little Craze, come out quick.”

Xiao Yu’er opened the window a little, and saw Third Missy standing in the cold wind under the moon, wearing a big red cape.

Third Missy bit her lips and said, “I have something… something important to tell you. That matter is really not that easy.”

Xiao Yu’er’s eyes gleamed, “You have more news?”

“Yes. I have just received news, the cargo has been stolen again!” Third Missy replied.

Xiao Yu’er jumped out of the window without even wearing his shoes. This time, he was really surprised. He stood on the cool stone floor barefooted and asked hoarsely, “Your news is real?”

“Not a shred of falsehood.”

Rubbing his hands, Xiao Yu’er exclaimed, “It’s impossible that the cargo will be stolen again. I can’t figure it out… do you know who stole the cargo?”

Third Missy replied, “This time, it’s vastly different from the last time.”

“What’s the difference? Unless they need not compensate this time for losing the cargo.”

Slowly, Third Missy said, “Yes, they really need not compensate.”

Xiao Yu’er jumped up and asked loudly, “Why?”

Third Missy lowered her eyes, “It’s because all of “Double Lion” Escort Agency’s bodyguards, runners, a total of 98 people, are all dead, leaving only the horse groom.”

Xiao Yu’er was shocked for a while before suddenly exclaiming, “What about Jiang Yulang?”

“Jiang Yulang is not a member of the “Double Lion” Escort Agency. After returning the cargo, he left immediately, as what a great hero, an outstanding man would have done!”

Xiao Yu’er laughed coldly, “What a great hero, an outstanding man! I’m only afraid that he already knew that the cargo would be stolen again, so he slipped off.”

Third Missy asked, “You mean… the second robbery, is also done by the same people who did the first robbery?”

Xiao Yu’er blinked, “Is this not possible?”

“The people who did the first robbery, has been killed by Jiang Yulang. When he returned the cargo, he returned it together with the heads of the robbers!”

Xiao Yu’er applauded, “Great move! Really a great and ruthless move!”

Third Missy fixed her gaze at him and continued, “Also, only one person was involved in the second robbery. All the 98 men in “Double Lion” Escort Agency died at the hands of this one man!”

“One man? …. Single handedly killing 98 lives in one night, who in Jiang Hu would have such ruthless and high handed move?”

Third Missy replied, “Apparently, it was an old man with white eyebrows and fine beard!....”

“Who has seen him?”

“Of course it is the horse groom who escaped death.”

“Then he….”

Third Missy continued, “After hearing the first scream, he hid himself in the haystack and could hear screams coming one after another within the time taken to drink 2,3 cups of tea.”

Xiao Yu’er horsely said, “What a fast movement! What a fast sword!”

Third Missy sighed, “It did not take long to kill everyone, but the horse groom felt as if hours has passed. He later saw a big and tall old man with a fine beard, holding a steel sword and laughing wildly as he walked out. The old man was wearing a light coloured shirt, which has by then been dyed red with the fresh blood!”

Xiao Yu’er rubbed his chin, “This sounds like a story spun by a storyteller, every little thing was described in detail and excitement. For someone who has escaped death, it takes a brilliant man to remember and describe everything in detail.”

Third Missy smiled, “When I first heard this, I also thought this person is very meticulous.”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “When did you first hear this news?”

“Just an hour ago.”

“When did this happen?”

“Last night”

Xiao Yu’er wondered, “How could the news have arrived so fast?”

Third Missy replied, “Homing pigeons. This is the headquarters; within the radius of a few thousand ‘li’, there are 79 large and small towns, and all the towns have homing pigeon stations set up by my family!”

Xiao Yu’er suddenly exclaimed, “How in dog’s as* am I connected to this matter? Why did you come to me in such a hurry to tell me? Have you nothing better to do after eating? Don’t tell me you think I have some connection with the robber?”

Third Missy stamped her feet, “But… that’s not what I meant.”

“Then what do you mean?”

Third Missy was so anxious, she actually blushed, but she did not throw a tantrum.

She lowered her head, and softly said, “Because you… you are my friend. If a person feels something weird is going on, he will certainly tell his friend…”

“Friend? …. I am only a worker you employed, why do you want to treat me as your friend?” Xiao Yu’er asked loudly.

Third Missy blushed even redder, her head lowered even more, “I… I don’t know either.”

Xiao Yu’er stared at her for a while, before laughing suddenly.

Third Missy bit her lips and asked, “You… what are you laughing about?”

Xiao Yu’er laughingly replied, “Since the time I got to know you, only now, you look like a girl!”

Third Missy stood there with head lowered head for a while, stunned, before bawling suddenly. Her whole body seemed to have softened, and dropped on the cabinet, crying bitterly.

Xiao Yu’er furrowed his brows, “What are you crying about?”

Weeping, Third Missy replied, “Ever since I was young, no one saw me as a girl, not even my father. Even he treated me as a boy when I… am in fact a girl.”

Xiao Yu’er was taken aback, before nodding, “For a girl to be always treated like a boy, is really a miserable thing! You are really a very pitiable girl.”

Third Missy whimpered, “To be able to hear such words today, even if I were to die right now, it would not matter.”

“But I don’t pity you at all.” On hearing these words, Third Missy took two steps back, and stared at him.

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “If you want others to treat you like a real girl, then you should first make yourself look like a girl. But you’re always wearing men’s clothes and covering yourself with a large cape, kicking your legs higher than your head, behaving like a muke driver, how do you expect others to treat you like a girl.”

Third missy rushed forward with her hand raised to hit, but before she strike, she paused. After hesitating for a while, she lowered her head again.

Xiao Yu’er said, “Good girl, go back and think over what I have said…. As for the matter concerning the cargo, although I have no assurance now, but in less than a month, I will tell you the truth.

As he spoke, he jumped back through the window.

He closed the window, and yet peeped thru the window opening. He saw Third Missy standing in a daze, thinking for a long while before walking off in a state of bewilderment. Xiao Yu’er shook his head and smiled bitterly.

Later that night, Xiao Yu’er was sleeping soundly. Suddenly, a few men dashed into the room and pulled him out of bed. Some were helping him dress, some were retrieving his shoes.

These men included the Head Storekeeper and the Assistant Storekeeper. Xiao Yu’er rubbed his eyes sleepily, “It’s not even payday, and you’re kidnapping me?”

The Assistant Storekeeper smilingly replied as he buttoned up the shirt, “Tell you a great piece of news…. Old Master actually wants to see you today.”

The Head storekeeper continued with a smile, “Old master hardly sees any staff in a year. He just arrived at An Qing today and the first person he wants to meet is you, aren’t you lucky?”

A bewildered Xiao Yu’er was bundled up a carriage and after traveling a distance, was taken to a mansion so stylishly huge that it’s scary and ushered into the mansion.

Xiao Yu’er followed a pale looking servant past one courtyard after another, and after walking for a while, they only reached the back garden, where there were 5 luxurious porches amidst the plants.

The servant lowered his voice and said, “Old Master is inside, he wants you to go in alone.” Xiao Yu’er stood outside the door and blinked. After thinking for a while, he raised his leg, took a huge step in and the first person he saw was Third Missy. Today, Third Missy looked vastly different from the Third Missy in the past.

She is no longer wearing pants with a shirt jacket, but a flowing gold skirt with a blue silk top with white floral prints.

On her face there is a hint of make up, in her black hair there was a hairpin, and two pearls as large as dragon’s eyes dangled on her ears.

She sat there with lowered head, looking almost shy. Obviously she saw Xiao Yu’er walk in, but did not raise her head. She cast a glance at him, gently bit on her lips and lowered her head further.

Xiao Yu’er almost wanted to laugh out loud, if not for the fact that there is a person on the floor next to her, he would have laughed.

On the thick Persian carpet, a fat person wearing a wide robe was on the floor. At first glance, he looks just like a large embroidered ball.

In front of him, there is a jade box, carved from an entire block of jade, which will cost at least ten thousands and above, but in the box there is only a cricket.

Xiao Yu’er bent down and after looking for a while, smiled, “I’m afraid this ‘Red Head Coffin’ is an executioner.”

The fat man raised his head, and smiled until his eyes was narrowed into a line, “You know about crickets too?”

Xiao Yu’er grinned, “Besides giving birth, I’m afraid that there is nothing much that I do not know.”

The fat man clasped his hands and laughed, “Good, Lao San (Number Three), the person you mentioned is him?” Without asking, you will know that this person is naturally the famous tycoon Duan He Fei.

Third Missy answered with bowed head, “Mmm”

Duan He Fei smiled until his eyes can no longer be seen, “Good, very good, you have good taste.”

Xiao Yu’er rubbed his head and smiled, “What is this all about?”

Duan He Fei replied, “Don’t ask, don’t talk, leave everything to me. Now pull me up, use your strength… ai… that’s a good boy.”

He stood up with much difficulty and from his appearance, looked as if he was more tired than someone who has walked 3 li. Panting and rubbing his chest, he beamed, “Good…. Very good. You like roasted meat? Shark’s fins, bird’s nest, abalone, bear’s paws… all these are fake, only eating roasted meat gives the greatest pleasure.”

Xiao Yu’er said, “But I don’t actually know, this is…”

With a wave of his hand, Duan Hefei replied, “You don’t have to know, don’t have to know anything… leave everything to me, stay here for a meal, the roasted meat made by my chef is number one in this world.”

And so a baffled Xiao Yu’er ate a huge bowl of roasted meat. Here, his mouth seems to have no use other than eating, because Duan He Fei did not let him talk.

He returned to the shop at dusk, still not knowing why Duan He Fei asked for him, only knowing that everyone in Qing Yu Hall is now treating him differently.

Of course they were now more courteous.

After his bath, Xiao Yu'er lied on the cane chair, when he suddenly heard a gruff voice, like a broken gong, "Monkshood, cinnamon, rhinoceros horn, bear's gall…"

He was mouthing off a list of herbal names, either extremely cooling, or extremely heaty herbs. Then the Assistant Storekeeper's sharp and thin voice was heard, most likely asking him, "These herbs, how much do you want?"

The voice replied, "We'll take all that you have, not a single one to be left."

Another voice added, "Qing Yu Hall should have a warehouse right? Bring us there for a look." This person's voice was even louder, sounding like a string of fire crackers going off.

Just as Xiao Yu'er stood up, he saw the Assistant Storekeeper being escorted in, just like a chick being caught by an eagle.

Under the light, the 2 men appeared wide at the shoulders with a narrow waist, their movements were full of vigor, their eyes fierce and their face full of anger, how can the Assistant Storekeeper not obey when faced with such men?

Xiao Yu'er stood at the side watching, while the staff in the shop wrapped up all the herbs the 2 men wanted into four big packages.

Xiao Yu'er quietly took a small pebble in his palm, and waited until they were moving the packages up the carriage before his fingers lightly flicked, the pebble flew out with a 'whoosh' and hit the corner of the package. The light outside the door was dim, and his movements fast, so naturally no one noticed.

He lay down on the cane chair again and looked at the stars in the sky,

murmuring, “Seems like, a good show is about to begin…”

The night was quiet, everyone in the shop were fast asleep, but Xiao Yu’er was still sitting under the stars. In this peaceful night, he seems to be expecting something shocking to happen. Xiao Yu’er closed his eyes, and it seems as if he is falling asleep.

Suddenly, in the quite night came sounds of rapid hoof beats. Xiao Yu’er’s eyes shone instantly and cocked his ears to listen, “Three horses, why only three horses?”

Just then, the rushing hoof beats came to a stop. The three horses were of course pulled to a halt outside Qing Yu Hall.

After that, there is a hurried knocking on the door and someone spoke loudly, “Someone open the door, open the door quick, we have a seriously ill person; we need to buy medication.”

Underlying that resounding voice, there is a certain amount of urgency. The staff sleeping in front was shocked awake and so, the sounds of replies, sounds of grumble, sounds of hurried feet, sounds of door opening were all combined.

The anxious voice is already shouting out, “We need Monkshood, cinnamon, rhinoceros horn, bear’s gall; three catties for each item, quick, quick, this is a serious illness.”

The staff were astonished, why is everyone purchasing these herbs today? Of course their reply was “None.”

The anxious voice sounded more alarmed, more nervous, and made a ruckus, “Such a big medical Hall, and you don’t even have such herbs?”

This person was more than six foot tall, with a pair of commanding bright, but bloodshot eyes. On seeing such a fierce countenance, the staff smiled nervously, “Our shop is more than a hundred years old, and we have all the herbs initially, but unfortunately, all the herbs were sold just four hours ago. Why don’t you try

other shops?”

Xiao Yu’er walked over silently, and looked thru the crack in the door, only to see the man nervously breaking out in cold swear and stamping his foot, “What an unfortunate coincidence! All the medical halls in this city do not have these herbs!”

The shop door was ajar, and outside the door stood another man holding on to two strong horses. The horses were frothing at the mouth, obviously they have ridden hard from afar.

There is another person and a horse, standing a few feet away. Under the stars, the person on the horse could be seen wearing a black cloth around the head, a long black cloak, the eyes looking around. The stars shone on the face – this person is a woman.

The staff, holding up the candle, was in a hurry to send off the visitors. Suddenly, the flame flickered, the woman in black on the horse suddenly stood in front of him. Her pair beautiful eyes were as sharp as knives! The staff stepped back in surprise, the candle wax dripped on the back of his hand and scalded him. His hands slacked and the candle stand dropped.

Before the candle stand touched the floor, without knowing how, it was in the hands of the woman in black, and the candle was still lighted. The warm candlelight shone directly on her pale face! Her face was so pale that it looks like a ghost at night!

Her gaze fixed on the staff, she spoke each word slowly, “These herbs, were all bought by the same person?”

The staff was scared stiff and fluttering, replied, “Yes… no… it’s two people!”

The woman in black asked, “What kind of people?”

Her slow voice suddenly became sharp and short, so full of hatred that the staff could not help but shivered on hearing them. “Don’t…. don’t know… we’re

only doing business here, we would not dare inquire about our customer's background."

The sharp eyes of the woman looked at him intently, unblinking, as if she is trying to see if what he said was true or false. Under such a pair of watchful eyes, who can lie?

The staff's legs has gone soft from her stare. Luckily, the woman in black finally turned around, went up the horse, whipped the horse… the sounds of the hoof beats gradually became softer, leaving faster than when it arrived.

The staff felt as if it was a dream, but looking down, he saw the candle stand on the floor right in front of him. This naturally is not a dream, and he bent down and took the candle stand.

The flame suddenly flickered again. The staff was again surprised and the candle stand he just picked up dropped again.

But this time, the candle stand again did not drop onto the floor, and the flame was not extinguished – a hand shot out like lightening and by chance caught hold of the candle stand. The shocked staff turned around and saw Xiao Yu'er.

Xiao Yu'er hand was holding the candle stand, but his eyes were looking afar, muttering, "Never did I guess… never did I guess it would be her!"

The staff asked, "Her… who is 'her'?"

Xiao Yu'er replied, "Her name is He Lu, a servant from the Floral Palace… You would not know even if I told you." All of a sudden, he jumped up lightly and reached out his hands to grab a piece of paper blown up by the wind, only to see on the paper, full of names of the medical halls.

Xiao Yu'er said, "By throwing away this piece of paper, it's obvious that she has searched through all the medical halls, but still could not buy those herbs…"

The staff asked, “Funny, why would she want such weird herbs in such a hurry?”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “Naturally this is because someone in their family has come down with a weird illness.”

The staff bowed his head and wondered, “What illness could it be, to require herbs of extreme coolness and heatiness….. I’ve never heard of such illness before, have you?” He raised his head to ask Xiao Yu’er.

Again the candle stand was on the floor, Xiao Yu’er is gone!

End of Chapter 43

Chapter 33

Chapter 44

Swiftly running past a few roofs, Xiao Yu'er saw the 3 running horses.

Although the horses were in a rush, it could not match Xiao Yu'er's strides. The horses were running on the street, Xiao Yu'er was following silently on the roofs.

He was asking himself, "Why is He Lu in such a hurry to buy those herbs? Unless someone was poisoned by a venom of extreme coolness or heatiness? Can't the medicine in the Floral Palace neutralize the poison?"

His thoughts wandered and pondered, "The person who poisoned them already knew they needed such herbs, so they bought all the herbs on the market. Obviously they wanted the poisoned person to die!... What a callous plan! But who could it be?"

"Who could be the one who was poisoned? Could it be Hua Wu Que!"

His thoughts were in a mess, and could not decide if he was shocked or happy.

The horses ran and in an instance, suddenly stopped in front of a high wall. There is a small door in the wall, it looks like someone's back door. The door was unlocked. He Lu jumped down from her horse and pushed the door open.

Xiao Yu'er raised his shoulders, and jumped up the high wall like a bat. His body slid over in the darkness, and the two men below did not even notice anything.

Sighing softly, He Lu walked swiftly, the night wind blowing past the tree tops, the pebbled path going ‘sha, sha’ under her feet. She removed the black cloth covering her head and on her hair, there was a bright pearl.

The pearl shone under the stars. Hiding in the trees, Xiao Yu’er followed the shine of the pearl. The shine disappeared into the trees and amidst the trees, there were three to five exquisite lodges.

Xiao Yu’er hid himself in the heavy foliage, unworried that he will be discovered. He looked down quietly, and saw Hua Wu Que’s face.

This handsome, suave, serene, confident face, at this moment was filled with anxiety. He came out in a hurry and on seeing He Lu, his first words were, “Where are the herbs?”

He Lu rubbed the black cloth in her hands and replied softly, “Didn’t buy it.”

The three words were not even out of her mouth but on seeing the expression on her face, Hua Wu Que’s own expression changed and snatched the black cloth from her hand, uttering, “Why… why couldn’t you buy it?”

This Master Wu Que, his every movement is usually refined, and treats females with gentleness and courtesy, but this time, he lost his usual composure.

On seeing his behavior, Xiao Yu’er knew that the injured person must be someone very close to him, or he would not be so uncharacteristically lost.

Xiao Yu’er was lost in thought while He Lu and Hua Wu Que continued talking. By the time he returned his attention to the conversation, the two of them had already entered the house.

The candlelight glowed inside and on the paper window, 2 shadows appeared. One with a bowed head, the clothes rustling, as if the person is shaking from nervousness. Without a doubt, this person is Hua Wu Que.

The other person had a long, fine beard, sitting as straight as a pen, and Xiao

Yu’er could imagine his expression would be serious. But no matter how long he looked, he could not make out who this second person could be.

Suddenly a gentle and steady voice said, “The fortunate will be blessed, Sir need not worry too much. Actually, I have expected that Miss He Lu would return empty handed.” As soon as this voice reached his ears, Xiao Yu’er’s heart skipped a beat.

He heard Hua Wu Que sigh, “These herbs, although expensive, are not rare. I cannot understand why we could not even buy these few herbs in such a large city like An Qing.”

That voice continued, “That person knows that only these few herbs of extreme coolness or hotness can neutralize his poison, and deduced that Sir would know about this, so if he had not bought all the herbs, the effort taken to put the poison would have gone to waste.”

Regardless of what the speaker said, his voice remained very calm. At this moment, Xiao Yu’er realized that this person must be Jiang Bie He!

Remembering this person’s ruthlessness, Xiao Yu’er could feel a shiver run down his spine. Never mind about Hua Wu Que, if he was found out by this person, he would not be able to live! Hiding in the trees, Xiao Yu’er dare not even breath.

With a voice full of hatred, Hua Wu Que replied, “Correct, this person has reckoned that even the medicine in Floral Palace could not neutralize this kind of cold poison made from the essence of snow and ice, but… what enmity does ‘he’ have with ‘him’? Why leave him with no way to live!”

Xiao Yu’er could not guess who the first ‘he’ that Hua Wuque was referring to, and could not figure out who the second ‘him’ was, and was beginning to get anxious.

Jiang Bie He slowly replied, “I’m afraid that the one the person wants to harm is not ‘him’, but Sir.”

Hua Wu Que replied, “But eversince I came to Central Plains, I have not made an enemy of anyone, why would this person want to harm me? Who is this person? I can’t think of an answer.”

Jiang Bie He seemed to reply with a smile, “If Sir could set his mind at ease about Miss Tie’s condition, and follow me to investigate, I have 80% confidence that we can find the perpetrator!”

Miss Tie! The person who was poisoned, could it be Tie Xin Lan! Xiao Yu’er was so surprised he almost fell off the tree. The leaves “whooshed” and Hua Wu Que’s shadow could be seen standing up abruptly and he shouted, “There’s someone outside, who is that?”

Xiao Yu’er was so tensed that his heart almost jumped out from his throat.

However, Jiang Bie He replied, “The wind is rustling the leaves, who can there be? Let me accompany Sir to take a look at Miss Tie’s illness.” And so, the two of them left the window.

Xiao Yu’er heaved a sigh of relief, “Heaven has really helped me this time, Jiang Bie He has always been a wary person, but today he actually overlooked…”

As soon as he arrived that that thought, he felt coldness in his heart, “Jiang Bie He has always been wary, he will never fail to notice, there must be a ploy in this!”

Xiao Yu’er is really sharp, and his thoughts faster than lightening, once he thought of this, he wanted to escape, but alas, he is still late!

In the darkness, there are already 2 human shadows, flying through the sky like swallows!

Xiao Yu’er cast a startled look, and saw that it is indeed Jiang Bie He and Hua Wu Que. Hua Wu Que’s clothes fluttered in the wind, looking like a flying fairy, his eyes gleaming in the darkness, but full of hatred. He must have thought this person hiding in the darkness is related to the poison incident.

Xiao Yu’er’s martial arts has improved by leaps and bounds, but faced with these two people, he can’t help but quiver in his heart. It’s just that he has faced such life and death situations so many times; he now treats them like an everyday meal. At this point, he was alarmed but not confused, he lowered his ‘qi’ and the branch he was sitting on ‘cracked’ and broke, and his body went into a straight fall.

Jiang Bie He and Hua Wu Que has gathered momentum in the air, and like an arrow released from the bow, they could not change their direction to fall, or turn back. Xiao Yu’er heard the whistling of the wind above him, the two of them had flown past his head.

He gained the advantage, not daring to hesitate, rushed forward with all his might, in an opposite direction of where Jiang Bie He and Hua Wu Que has gone. He calculated that by the time they turned back, they would be one step behind. Although the time difference is only a moment, with Xiao Yu’er’s current Lightness skill, Jiang Bie He and Hua Wu Qie would not be able to catch up with him.

How could he have expected that although Jiang Bie He’s body could not stop, shooting forward like a pen, but his hand flicked back. In his hand he has already held on to his secret weapon, several Silver Stars flew towards Xiao Yu’er back like a thunderstorm!

Hua Wu Que was darting through the air when he suddenly lifted his leg, kicked against a tree trunk, and borrowing the strength from the tree, lightly rebounded and changed direction, his head followed by his feet, shooting back! The speed of his rebound was comparable to the secret weapon fired by Jiang Bie He!

Xiao Yu’er heard the sounds of the secret weapon flying through the air, but the Silver Stars are almost upon his back!

His strength exhausted, he could not leap up, and could only fall flat on the ground and rolled, “puff, puff”.

A string of light sound was heard, and the seven Silver Stars were embedded on the ground next to his body.

He had escaped death by a hair's breath but before he could gather his wits, he looked up. Hua Wu Que's fluttering robe has already reached the top of his head!

Hua Wu Que flipped over in the air, his palms outstretched! He is as agile as a dragon in the sky, and with the strength of his palm pressed down, even ants would find difficulty escaping!

Unexpectedly, the seven Silver Stars embedded on the ground sprung up suddenly towards Hua Wu Que, and it seems with the sudden change, it would not be easy for Hua Wu Que to avoid them!

No matter how devious Jiang Bie He is, he did not expect such a ploy. He was speechless that the opposite party actually used his secret weapon to escape!

Hua Wu Que clapped his outstretched palms with a 'pak', and like night birds returning to their nests, the seven Silver Stars all flew into his palms!

All this happened in an instant, but the whole process was like a thousand changes! After shooting the Silver Stars with a stroke of his palm, Xiao Yu'er used the energy from the stroke and rebounded himself, and still managed to sneak a peek amidst all the action.

On witnessing Hua Wu Que's amazing internal energy, Jiang Bie He can't help but cry out, "Good!"

Jiang Bie He called out to this mysterious person with such wondrous reflexes, "Friend, what great skills! Why not stay and tell us your intention!"

Without turning back, Xiao Yu'er replied coarsely, "Speak tomorrow, it's good bye for today!"

Before he even finished his words, Hua Wu Que has already coldly replied,

“Friend, with your skills, it will be such a waste if I let you leave just like that!”

The voice was just behind Xiao Yu’er. Not only does he not dare to turn his head, he did not even dare to speak, but used all his strength to glide forward.

The roofs flew under his feet rapidly, and he does not know how many roofs he has flown over, but he is still within the compounds of the mansion!

He heard Jiang Bie He exclaim, “Friend does not look very old, but not only do you possess astonishing skills, your thoughts are swift too. With the appearance of such a young hero in Jiang Hu, it will be such a sin if I do not make your acquaintance.”

His speech did not even hinder his chase, and his voice was calm, as if he is confident that Xiao Yu’er will never escape his clutches.

Hua Wu Que remarked, “Correct, his Lightness Skills, even if it is not Number One in Central Plains, is already remarkable!” He was also wondering, why he could not catch up even now.

Although his Lightness Skill is better than Xiao Yu’er’s, but the prey can always hide here and there, changing direction randomly, so they have an advantage over the predator.

Jiang Bie He commented, “This person’s Lightness Skill is excellent, and looks full of energy, his body has gathered momentum and I’m afraid it would be difficult for you and me to continue the chase.”

Once Xiao Yu’er heard that sentence, he suddenly dropped downwards towards the houses. This impish Xiao Yu’er, he did not think of this in his shock, but Jiang Bie He’s speech reminded him.

Jiang Bie He secretly dropped down, and saw Xiao Yu’er turning here and there in the winding corridor. Suddenly he jumped head in through a window.

By then, the lights in the rooms have been extinguished. Although he does not

know if there is anyone in the room, he reckoned that in such a huge mansion, there are bound to be more empty rooms.

The room is really empty.

Xiao Yu'er has just taken a breath when he heard a 'whiz', Hua Wu Que has leaped in, followed by another 'whiz', Jiang Bie He was not far behind too.

It was pitch black in the room, and nothing can be seen. Xiao Yu'er stepped forward and almost knocked into a table.

Jiang Bie He laughingly said, "Friend, come out. I am Jiang Bie He, and I stake my reputation as the 'Hero of Jiang Nan' that if you reveal your background, I will not make things difficult for you."

If this sentence was spoken to someone else, that person might just obey, but Xiao Yu'er not only knows what kind of person this 'Hero of Jiang Nan' really he, he also knows that once they find out his identity, they will surely make things 'difficult'.

Jiang Bie He continued, "If Friend does not heed my kind advice, I'm afraid it will soon be too late for regrets."

Xiao Yu'er quietly lifted up the table and hurled it towards Jiang Bie He, at the same time vaulting into a corner at the left.

He figured that there must be a door at the corner of the left wall, and he was correct. The table landed with a 'smash', and he has already kicked open the door and darted out.

This house is even darker than the open, and darkness is to his advantage.

Xiao Yu'er hid in the darkness, not even daring to move a muscle. He was just thinking of how to escape when suddenly, there were lights coming on. Jiang Bie He actually lighted the lamps outside.

Xiao Yu’er grabbed a chair and threw it out, the people retreated, and the chair fell with a ‘peng’. He leaped out of the window, turned a somersault in the air and jumped through another window opposite.

With all the clashing and banging, he woke up half the people sleeping in the house, and voices started to be heard, “What happened? Who’s that?” Jiang Bie He called out, “There’s a robber, everyone stay calm and do not run about, in case you get injured accidentally. We only need to light the lamps, and the robber will not be able to escape!”

Xiao Yu’er was lamenting in his heart, this Jiang person really has quite a few tricks up his sleeves, everything he said was spot on. Xiao Yu’er was hoping to escape among the chaos, and more hopefully, the lamps will not be lighted. Once the lamps are lighted, not only does he have no where to run, he has no where to hide as well. This is really costing him his life.

He only heard everyone chorusing, “It’s Hero Jiang talking, everyone listen to his instructions.”

Subsequently, all the lamps in the courtyard was lighted up. Xiao Yu’er looked around and found himself in a study. This study was exquisitely decorated, and there is an embroidery stand next to the study table.

He thought, “Why would there be a lady’s embroidery stand in a study?”

Jiang Bie He and Hua Wu Que is already outside the window. Xiao Yu’er retreated through another door, when suddenly someone called out from behind the door, “Who is that outside!”

It’s a girl’s voice.

There’s someone behind the door. Xiao Yu’er was initially alarmed, but his thoughts turned and he was elated. Without hesitation, he kicked open the door and barged in.

He reasoned that Jiang Bie He, being the hypocrite that he is, would need to

maintain the façade of the ‘Hero of Jiang Nan’, and would never enter a girl’s room. Hua Wu Que would also never be ill-mannered in front of a lady.

But Xiao Yu’er has no qualms about lady or no lady. He extinguished the lamp with a flick of his hand as soon as he entered the door, but from the corner of his eyes, he has seen a girl lying on the bed. He dashed over and with hands as fast as lightning, covered her mouth one with hand while pressing her shoulder down with the other and whispered, “If you do not want to suffer, do not utter a sound!”

Who would have expected that the girl is so strong, and her reflexes as fast, and her hands instead gripped Xiao Yu’er’s hands!

This is another unexpected turn of event. In his panic, Xiao Yu’er tried to use his strength but the girl had already pressed him down on the bed, her elbow pressed down on his throat!

Xiao Yu’er was caught unawares and ended up being overcome by this girl. He felt half his body go numb, and was powerless to move. He secretly sighed and laughed bitterly, “Forget it, forget it… I guess in this life, it is fated that I will die in the hands of women.”

At this point in time, Jiang Bie He’s voice could be heard outside.

He really did not come in, but just asked outside, “Miss, did that thief dash into your room?”

Xiao Yu’er shut his eyes, ready to accept fate.

The girl replied, “Yes, someone did barged in just now, but has escaped through the window behind. I’m afraid he has fled to the small garden there, Hero Jiang please give chase quickly.”

Never in his dreams would Xiao Yu’er expect the girl to reply in that manner. He only heard Jiang Bie He call out his thanks and hurrying off. He was so surprised and happy that he did not move.

Finally, he could not bear it any longer and asked, “Mi… Miss, why did you save me?”

The girl did not answer immediately, but went to latch the door.

It was so dark in the room that you would not be able to see your fingers even if you raise them. Xiao Yu’er could not catch a look at the girl’s face, and started to feel suspicious. He jumped up and said, “I do not know Miss at all, and yet you saved me, but I wonder why?” The girl giggled, “You really do not know me?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “All the women who knew me wants to kill me, they would not save me.”

The girl laughed out loud, “Don’t tell me you’ve been scared out of your wits, you could not even recognize my voice.” She was speaking softly and gently initially, but now laughing out loud, it bears the heroic spirit of a man. Xiao Yu’er immediately recognized the voice and asked hoarsely, “You, you are Third Missy? Why are you here?”

Third Missy replied, “This is my home, where else could I be if not here?”

Xiao Yu’er was astounded for a moment before adding, “I deserve to die, how could I not have recognized this is Duan He Fei’s house… this ghastly place is really to huge, coming in here is just like walking through a maze.”

Third Missy laughed, “Not only you, even I will sometimes lose my way in here.”

“But why is that Jiang Bie He and Hua Wu Que here?” Xiao Yu’er asked.

Third Missy replied, “They are here because of the stolen cargo.”

Xiao Yu’er sighed, “What a twist of fate, an unexpected happening, of all the coincidences in the world, I have to meet them all. Jiang Bie He turned out to be in your house, and I blundered into your room.”

Third Missy chuckled, “They would never expect that I know you.”

Xiao Yu’er concurred, “Why else would that old fox believe you.” Jiang Bie He would never guess that Duan He Fei’s daughter would save a thief; therefore he was easily dismissed by Third Missy’s words.

Third Missy asked, “But… but you and Hero Jiang.. how? How…”

Xiao Yu’er sniggered, “Hero Jiang… humph, the devil my Hero.”

Third Missy wondered, “Who in Jiang Hu does not know his reputation as ‘Hero of Jiang Nan’? If he is not a Hero, then who is?”

Xiao Yu’er retorted, “If he is a Hero, any turtle, as*hole thief will all be heroes.”

Third Missy laughed, “You were intimidated by him, that’s why you hate him so much. He is actually a nice person. Once he heard our cargo has been stolen, he came immediately to help us.”

Xiao Yu’er snickered, “This is what I call a weasel wishing a chicken happy new year.”

“You said he does not have good intentions, but what devious plans would he have?” Third Missy asked.

Xiao Yu’er said, “The plans these people harbor, you will never understand in your whole lifetime.”

Third Missy bent over and sat on the bed, sat right next to Xiao Yu’er, her heart beating ‘rat-a-tat’. After sitting for a while with head lowered, she spoke, “That Master Hua… was also invited by Jiang… Jiang Bie He.”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Oh?”

Third Missy continued, “Apparently this Master Hua, is the Number One hero in Jiang Hu, and is considered the most handsome man in the world, but the way I see him, that effeminate look, just doesn’t look pleasing to me.”

Hearing her scold Hua Wu Que, Xiao Yu’er was delighted, and holding her hands, smiled, “You have good taste, what you’ve said is right.”

“I…. I….”

In the darkness, Xiao Yu’er was holding her hands. She could feel her face blushing, her heart beating and her throat drying, and she could not utter even a single word.

After thinking for a while, Xiao Yu’er exclaimed, “That Master Hua you mentioned, did he have a friend who has been poisoned?”

Third Missy asked, “How did you know?”

Xiao Yu’er mused, “He is so capable, how could he have let his friend get poisoned?”

“Yesterday afternoon, that Master Hua and Hero Ji…Jiang Bie He went out together, leaving Miss Tie alone in the guest room. Someone came with gifts for Master Hua, and Miss Tie accepted it. Among the gifts there were some snacks, and who knows Miss Tie was poisoned after eating a little.”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “Who sent the gifts?”

Third Missy replied, “The gifts were sent directly to Miss Tie, no one else know.”

“Did she not say?”

“When Master Hua returned, she is already in a coma and could not talk.”

Xiao Yu’er furrowed his brows, “How could she be so careless, and just eat what someone delivers?”

After thinking for a while, he continued, “The person with the gift must have been someone she trusted, which is why she ate without a doubt… but why would someone she trust want to harm her?”

Third Missy sighed, “That Miss Tie, is really gentle and pretty, and is such a perfect match with Master Hua. It would be such a pity if she cannot be saved.”

Xiao Yu’er asked through gritted teeth, “You said she and Hua…”

Third Missy revealed, “The two of them were so loving that everyone envied them, especially the way Master Hua treats her, acceding to her every wish, so gentle, so caring…”

On hearing these, the blood shot right up to Xiao Yu’er’s head, and he almost exploded. Unable to control further, he blurted, “Hateful!”

“Who…. Who are you referring to as hateful?”

Xiao Yu’er exhaled, and slowly said, “I mean the person who poisoned her is hateful.”

Third Missy replied, “Until now, Master Hua and Jiang Bie He have not found out who is the perpetrator…”

Xiao Yu’er laughed with his eyes wide, “He may be gentle and caring towards her, but he cannot save her life…. Hee…. Hee… hee hee…”

On hearing his strange laugh, Third Missy can’t help but ask, “What…. What’s with you?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “I’m very well, very happy, never been this happy before.”

Third Missy lowered her head, “You… Are you really that happy, being with me?” Others say that boys can be self-intoxicated, but they do not know that when a girl is self-intoxicated, it is ten times stronger than a boy’s.

Xiao Yu’er was silent for a moment, and suddenly grabbed Third Missy’s hands, “I’m begging a favor from you now, will you agree?”

Third Missy blushed again, her heart skipped again, and replied breathlessly, “No matter what request, I will agree.”

Overjoyed, Xiao Yu’er said, “I beg that you send me out, and not let anyone discover.”

Third Missy felt as if she has just been whipped, and was stunned.

After who knows how long, she quivered, “You… want to leave right now?” Fine, I will send you out.” Third Missy suddenly shouted, “Someone…. Someone…. There’s a robber in here!”

Xiao Yu’er’s face paled immediately, and clutched Third Missy’s hand, “You… what are you doing?”

The sound of clothes fluttering in the wind was heard, and Jiang Bie He was outside the window, “Miss, do not be alarmed, where is the robber?” His arrival was swift!

Xiao Yu’er was alarmed, angry and hateful.

“Women…. Women…. To detain me, she would not hesitate to harm me! I have known long ago that women are disasters, but why did I still trust her!”

He was all ready to dash out, when Third Missy replied, “I saw someone just now, heading towards where Miss Tie is staying…”

Before she completed her sentence, Hua Wu Que cried out, “Ah…. That’s bad!

We must not fall into that person's diversion trap, go!" The sound of the wind followed, and they have gone far.

Xiao Yu'er heaved another sigh of relief, and smiled bitterly, "You really scared me."

Third Missy replied slowly, "Rest assured that I will not harm you. I can only help you to leave after luring them away."

She grabbed an overcoat and draped it over Xiao Yu'er, "Wear this, I'll bring you out."

Xiao Yu'er could not explain how he felt, and only muttered, "Women…. Now even I cannot fathom what kind of a creature women are!"

"What did you say?" Third Missy enquired.

"Nothing, I'm saying… you're the most honest girl I've ever met."

Luckily, Third Missy is of a big build, so the overcoat fitted Xiao Yu'er well, and the two of them sauntered out into the corridor.

Third Missy brought Xiao Yu'er to a side door and opened in. Turning around, the pale starlight shone directly on Xiao Yu'er's stubborn, roguish but charismatic face.

Sighing softly, Third Missy asked, "You… you will see me again?"

Laughingly, he replied, "Naturally I will, I will today…"

As he spoke, he hurried away.

Third Missy gazed at his disappearing back, lost, and felt something in her heart. She does not know if it's sorrow, or joy, but it's something she has never felt before in her life.

Xiao Yu’er hurried back to the medical hall.

When he reached the street, the gold signboard of ‘Qing Yu Hall’ could be seen shimmering under the stars; and Xiao Yu’er slowed down his steps.

His nose sniffing and twitching left and right, his eyes searching and looking left and right, he suddenly squat down, murmuring, “That’s it…”

On the bright flagstone, specks of herbs could be seen, and there were more, about six, seven feet in front. Xiao Yu’er used both his nose and eyes and followed the trail.

It turned out that when he used the pebble to hit the bag of herbs the two men bought this afternoon, it tore a small hole in the bag, which flakes of herbs fell out. He only need to follow the trail of the herbs and he would naturally be able to find out where the herbs had been sent to. He may be young, but he is thorough. Not only has he laid down the clues earlier, he also deduced that the streets would be deserted in the middle of the night, and there would be no one to step and mess up the trail.

Later, he need not even lower his head to search. With the cool night wind blowing the scent of the herbs, he will not be lost.

After walking for a while, the path became more and more desolate, and there was a pond in front, the ripples clear.

Not far from this pond, there was indeed a courtyard. Although not as exquisite as Duan He Fei’s courtyard, but in the deserted surroundings, it’s manner looked even more imposing. The bags of herbs were sent to this courtyard.

Xiao Yu’er hesitated for a while and glanced around. It was the middle of the night and yet the lamps in the courtyard were lighted up, and on the darkly painted door was a sign “Heavenly Fragrance Pond, Earthly Spirited Villa, Zhao” (Tian Xiang Tang, Di Ling Zhuang, Zhao).

Xiao Yu’er thought to himself, “Look at this grandeur, this Zhao person is not only rich and influential, he must be from the Martial Arts world as well. They are not sleeping so late at night; they must be up to no good.”

He has always been startlingly brave, and with his martial arts improving by leaps and bounds recently, he is all the more nonchalant, and flew straight towards the light source.

It was a reception room. Xiao Yu’er hanged under the eave and wetting his little finger with his saliva, poked a small hole on the paper window. There were four people sitting in the reception room drinking.

His observed that on the left corner of the room, there were big and small packets of herbs, obviously these are Monkshood, cinnamon, rhinoceros horn, bear’s gall… Someone said, “No matter what, with the presence of the three of you at my villa, your humble one is truly privileged; let me offer a toast to you again.”

This person who was sitting on the main chair was tall and thin, with a horse like face, brows shaped like a broom, a hooked nose, peaked cheekbones and sharp eyes, and looked as if he is of some stature.

Xiao Yu’er secretly commented, “This person must be surnamed Zhao.”

Another person laughed, “Master Zhao has said this many times, and have toasted us many times, if you continue to be so polite with us, my brother and I would feel ill at ease.”

The third person chuckled, “Actually, to become guests of Master Zhao, is truly our honor. My brother and I should offer a toast to Master Zhao instead.”

These two people have the same rounded face, fat necks and eyes which closed up when they smiled, with a slow speech, and looked identical.

Xiao Yu’er secretly laughed, “These two fatties are made from the same mould. There are so many twins in the world, but few looked as alike to each other as

these two brothers.”

He could not recognize these three people, neither could he guess why they would want to harm Tie Xin Lan. He was feeling baffled when he suddenly saw the fourth person turn his head.

This person has a head full of white hair with silvery beard, his aura dignified, and turned out to be who everyone in the Martial Arts world praised as the Jiang Hu leader of San Xiang, ‘Values talent as much as one’s life’ Tie Wushuang.

Seeing him, Xiao Yu’er was truly taken aback.

So the person who put the poison is Tie Wushuang!

No wonder Tie Xinlan trusted him, and ate the snacks without any suspicions. The seven words ‘Values talent as much as one’s life’ Tie Wushang, naturally everyone would believe him.

He never thought that this Tie Wushuang is like Jiang Bie He, full of justice and humanity on the outside, but with the heart of snakes and scorpions inside. But why would he want to harm Tie Xinlan?

End of Chapter 44

Chapter 34

Chapter 45

Rapidly, Xiao Yu'er thoughts has turned seventeen, eighteen rounds. He was flabbergasted and doubtful, but even if he felt disbelief, the truth is right in front of his eyes.

Master Zhao poured another cup of wine and raised his cup, smiled, "My good brothers and Old Master Tie are heroes of today, Zhao Xiang Ling has neither merit nor capability, and yet the three of you does not belittle me, come… come…, let me propose another toast to the three of you."

The two brothers immediately raised their wine cups, but Tie Wu Shuang did not even move a muscle.

The fatty seated on the left chair turned his eyeballs, and immediately said with a smile, "My brother and I are juniors in Jiang Hu, unknown minors, how would we dare to be placed together with Old Master Tie. If not for Master Zhao inviting us, my brother and I will not even be qualified to drink with Old Master Tie."

The other person laughed, "Indeed, if the people in Jiang Hu were to hear that Luo San (Luo Three) and Luo Jiu (Luo Nine) were able to drink together with Old Master Tie, I really would not know how envious they would feel."

Tie Wu Shuang laughed heartily and immediately raised his cup, "The two of you are too modest, an Old Man like me is not deaf, I've heard that the Luo Brothers in Jiang Hu are heroic and chivalrous, ha ha….. ha ha, let me offer a toast to my good brothers."

Xiao Yu'er laughed to himself, "This is really ridiculous, irrational, Tie Wu Shaung deemed himself as a cut above the rest but could not withstand a few words of exaltation. These Luo Brothers are such adept bootlickers; they are unlikely to be someone good."

He heard Zhao Xiang Ling laughed, "The three of you do not have to be so modest, Old Master Tie is without a doubt of noble character and standing, respected by all, but the Luo Brothers are also outstanding men of today."

He turned towards Tie Wu Shuang and smiled, "Old Master Tie might not know, these two Luo Brothers may have appeared in Jiang Hu only in recent years, but once they striked, they heavily injured the Seven Ghosts of Lake Tai, followed by the Five Tigers of Qi Lu. On Mount Tai Xing, the two Brothers single handedly fought with the Three Sabers and the Eighteen Invaders, that was an enormously magnificent battle."

Tie Wu Shang commented, "That's weird, all these big events, I actually do not know." Zhao Xiang Ling continued, "Old Master does not know, these two brothers does not want others to know, so no matter what they did, they did not wish to publicize. To have such mentality is very rare."

Tie Wu Shuang laughed, "Good, good, this kind of friends, I must make acquaintance of, but… since the two of you are twins, why are one of you called San (Three), and the other Jiu (Nine)?"

Luo San chuckled, "Your junior were named after numbers, it has nothing to do with order of birth."

Luo Jiu smiled, "Actually I am the elder, he is the second."

Tie Wu Shuang clasped his hands and laughed, "This is astonishing, if others hear your names, they would never expect Luo Jiu to be the older brother, and Luo San is the younger brother."

He continued, "The two of you are so capable, but I do not know which famous teacher taught you? And I also do not know why you debuted so late, that I only heard of your names three years ago."

Luo Jiu smiled, “My brother and I have loved martial arts since young, so we learnt a few paltry strokes on our own at home, we don’t really have a teacher. At forty years old, our mother was still alive, so we dare not venture too far, until she passed away.”

Tie Wu Shuang replied joyfully, “Not only are the two of you heroes, but filial sons as well.”

Luo San smiled, “We wouldn’t dare.”

Tie Wu Shuang asked, “But, the Seven Ghosts, Five Tigers, Three Sabers, Eighteen Invaders, are all famous fighters in the underworld, yet the two of you could actually defeat them. I find it hard to believe that you are not taught by some famous school.”

Luo Jiu assured, “In front of Old Master, your junior would not dare to lie.”

“In that case, the two of you can be considered rare talents. The martial arts you invented can be so amazing; I wonder if you could demonstrate…”

Luo San replied, “In front of Old Master, your junior would not dare to flaunt.”

Tie Wu Shuang insisted, “You must give me some face.”

Luo San answered, “Your junior really would not dare.”

Pretending to be offended, Tie Wu Shuang said, “The two of you look down on me, that you would not even give me face?”

Zhao Xiang Ling quickly laughed, “Old Master Tie is known as ‘Values talent as much as one’s life’, and on hearing about such rare talents as the Luo Brothers, must have been moved. The two of you really should not spoil Old Master Tie’s enthusiasm.”

Luo San smiled bitterly, “Master Zhao also…”

Continuing, Zhao Xiang Ling continued, “To tell the truth, I myself would like to see your skilful performance.”

Luo Jiu stood up and smiled, “In that case, your junior shall obey your orders, forgive us if we are not up to par.”

These two brothers may be fat, but they are very tall. The two of them pulled on their sleeves slightly, and showed off their moves in the reception hall.

At this point in time, not only was Zhao Xiang Ling and Tie Wu Shuang were concentrating on the moves, even Xiao Yu’er, who was outside the window, was staring with unblinking eyes.

Both Luo Jiu’s palms were fluttering, executing the “Double Plated Palm”, while Luo San’s punches were mighty, and displaying a set of “Da Hong Fists”.

The palms and fists of the brothers were swift and solid, and their skills full of vigor, but there were nothing spectacular to be noted about the strokes.

It is known that “Double Plated Palm” and “Da Hong Fists” were the most common skills seen in Jiang Hu, so much so that even cart drivers and sedan pullers would know a few strokes.

Tie Wu Shuang was simply stumped. He was not shocked at how proficient their martial arts are, but surprised at how appalling their skills are. To display such skills, it really is not ‘up to par’.

After executing their moves, their faces seem to have reddened, and clasping their fists, smilingly asked, “Old Master please give us your guidance.”

Tie Wu Shuang replied, “Hmm… hmm….”

Zhao Xiang Ling smiled, “The martial arts of the Luo Brothers is really

unyielding. This kind of martial arts may not look polished, but is very practical… what does Old Master think?”

Tie Wu Shuang answered, “Hmm…. indeed…indeed.”

Although he was saying ‘indeed’, he could not disguise the disappointment in his voice. Facing these two men, he simply has no more interest.

But Xiao Yu’er’s became even more interested in these two men.

He was secretly alarmed, “These two brothers are so well adept at concealing their real skills that even a senior in Jiang Hu like Tie Wu Shuang had the wool pulled over his eyes and could not see that their martial arts are more than meet the eye. By doing this, they not only concealed their martial arts background, but also eliminated any misgivings others might have, so that their guard will never be up against them. They would rather be looked down upon. I must really be wary of people like this.”

Although Xiao Yu’er has deduced that these two people have some secret plot, he could not guess what it could be about; naturally he could not guess their background.

Zhao Xiang Ling raised his wine cup again, “We may not have a good night’s rest because of this baffling case, but to be able to behold the Luo Brother’s skills, and to drink the night away with Old Master Tie, it is indeed a blessing in disguise.”

Xiao Yu’er questioned himself, “Baffling case?... What baffling case?”

Just then, the sounds of a horse carriage could be heard from outside the villa.

Tie Wu Shuang pushed his cup aside, and his countenance changed, “Don’t tell me it’s here again!”

As he spoke, he fled outside. There was indeed a horse carriage approaching the villa. The main door opened and the carriage came right through, but there

was no one driving the carriage.

Zhao Xiang Ling instructed his servant to remove the packages from the carriage. On opening the package, a strong herbal scent gushed towards the nose; in the package were Monkshood, cinnamon, rhinoceros horn, bear's gall…

Xiao Yu'er secretly took a better look, and was really surprised. Under the light, he saw Zhao Xiang Ling, Tie Wu Shuang's expression changed too.

Zhao Xiang Ling exclaimed, "What is this all about? Seven, eight times in a night, sending these herbs over for no rhyme or reason, is this someone's idea of a joke, a prank?" Furrowing his brows, Tie Wu Shuang continued, "These herbs are rather expensive, who would use such pricey herbs as a prank?"

Zhao Xiang Ling queried, "What would Senior's views on this be, what is this all about?"

Tie Wu Shuang sighed, "This might be an evil plot."

Zhao Xiang Ling replied, "But these herbs are not poisoned, and some are extremely nourishing, sending these herbs over does no harm to us at all… Brother Luo, can you guess what might be the reasoning behind this?"

Luo Jiu smilingly replied, "Old Master Tie has seen many things and is knowledgeable, what he said must have a reason."

Tie Wu Shuang heaved a sigh, "I must admit I am bewildered as well."

He may be bewildered, but Xiao Yu'er had guessed it all.

"Well, so you guys wanted to frame him, by sending the antidote here, Hua Wu Que will think that the person who put the poison was Tie Wu Shuang. So this is a series of plotting… what a venomous plot, but what a pity, consider yourselves extremely unlucky to have met me, Jiang Xiao Yu."

He rolled his eyes and left quietly. Taking advantage of the night, he looked for a shop selling powder and chalk (cosmetics) and jumped over the wall. When he left, his arms were filled with big and small packages.

And so, when the day breaks, he has already changed his look. With a pale, white face, eye bags, a mouth like a pig, he looked just like a pimp from a brothel. The art of disguise he learned from Du Jiao Jiao really did not go to waste.

Xiao Yu'er found a very busy teahouse, and had an enormous meal. He ate two trays of crab buns, four sets of fried dough fritters, and a large bowl of soup before stopping. He knows that he will use up a lot of energy today, and a man has to have a full stomach before he has the energy.

Outside the teahouse is a marketplace, bustling with people walking about. A tall man with a medicinal plaster stuck on his temple, holding a bird cage in one hand was walking around in the crowd, and the loose silver in other people's pocket soon became his.

Xiao Yu'er followed him to where there were less people, and suddenly tapping his shoulder, smilingly enquired, "Friend, you have fast hands and legs."

That green faced scoundrel turned around and angrily cried out, "Little bastard, have you eaten too much and feeling bloated?"

With a flip of his hand, his palms extended to strike Xiao Yu'er's face. But he can forget about touching Xiao Yu'er's face in his lifetime. Using two fingers, Xiao Yu'er lightly caught hold of his wrist, lightly twisted, and this seemingly large guy was in immediate pain.

Grinning, Xiao Yu'er asked, "Who's the little bastard?"

The green faced rascal broke out in cold sweat from the pain, "I…. I am the little bastard, the typical little bastard, Little Grandfather, Little Ancestor, please let this little bastard go, I will give everything in my pouch to you."

Xiao Yu’er replied, “As long as you answer my questions truthfully, not only will I not take your pouch, I might even fill it up, so what do u reckon?”

“Fine…. Fine of course…”

Still holding his wrist, Xiao Yu’er asked, “Do you know of this place ‘Heavenly Fragrance Pond, Earthly Spirited Villa’?”

The green faced replied, “If lowly me does not know that place, how can I hang around in this city?”

Xiao Yu’er continued, “What kind of a person is that Master Zhao?”

“Master Zhao is a millionaire, with friends over the four seas, in both the underworld and orthodox world, but… ever since Duan He Fei arrived, his business is always over taken by Duan He Fei. When he wanted to venture into the martial arts realm, who knows that Duan He Fei also kept some friends in Jiang Hu, and their status are much higher when compared.”

Rolling his eyes, Xiao Yu’er mumbled, “Right… Zhao Xiang Ling sought Tie Wu Shuang to make use of his reputation to suppress Duan He Fei, but ended up being made use of by others instead.”

The green faced could not hear clearly what Xiao Yu’er was talking about, but just pleaded, “Little Grandfather, can you let go of your hands now?”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “You roam around everyday, you must be very familiar with this city, and there must be someone you know from Zhao Villa. If you bring me to that person, and let me stay in the Villa for a day, I will give you three hundred taels of silver, will you do it?”

What is there to ‘will’ or ‘will not’? For three hundred taels of silver, this green faced will literally sell his own wife.

A place like Zhao Villa, there is sure a mix of every kind of people, good or bad. Naturally there would be some scoundrels among the servants, and these people

would obviously be the friends of this green faced.

With his skills, Xiao Yu'er soon mixed with them. Within two hours, these people have already treated him like their good friend.

What Xiao Yu'er did not expect is that Zhao Xiang Ling is already at the reception hall early in the morning, looking energetic and contented, without a trace of having been drinking the night away on his face.

After a while, there were people coming in from the outside, one after another. They looked like merchants, and were all respectful when they saw Zhao Xiang Ling.

Standing afar, Xiao Yu'er stopped a servant and asked, "Who are all these people? Why are they here so early?"

The servant replied, "All these are the Storekeepers our Master sent to tend to the shops outside. They have to come to the villa every morning to report the business situation for the day. Besides them, our Master never sees anyone else in the morning."

Xiao Yu'er smiled, "Some guests, your Master will have no choice but to meet."

The servant of course could not catch the hidden meaning behind Xiao Yu'er's words, and laughed, "This, 'Heavenly Fragrance Pond, Earthly Spirited Villa', would there be anyone who dares to force their way in?"

Xiao Yu'er blinked, "What about Duan He Fei?"

The servant replied triumphantly, "That fat pig, my Master has long made roasted meat out of his fat body and eaten it."

"So your Master and that Duan He Fei have such great enmity." commented Xiao Yu'er.

The servant replied, “He knows where our Master’s shops are, and will open a similar shop right opposite, he knows who are the major clients of my Master, and will try his best to befriend them. The hatred between ‘Heavenly Fragrance Pond’ and Duan He Fei is as deep as the sea.”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “I never expect the business field is just like a battle field, it seems like the enemies made on the business field, are so much more wicked than the enemies made on the battle field.”

The servant continued, “In business ability counts. A person like Duan He Fei who uses such underhand methods, is not fit to be a man.”

While they were talking, Zhao Xiang Ling had already sent the store keepers away after a few words with them. Picking up his teacup and taking a few sips, he instructed, “Take a look at the guests, if they are awake, invite them to the reception hall for tea.”

Xiao Yu’er sat on a boulder under the shade of a tree outside the door, mumbling, “If my guess is correct, I’m afraid he should be arriving.”

Just then, sounds of conversation could be heard from the door, “Please hand this name card to your Master, and tell him that I have come to pay a visit.”

The doorkeeper replied, “My apologies, my Master has never before noon…” The voice suddenly halted, as if he has seen the name on the name card and was startled.

Xiao Yu’er heard that voice, full of excitement and joy, “Arrived, arrived, really arrived.”

That servant hastily went to the reception hall to present the name card! Zhao Xiang Ling furrowed his brows and received it, but on seeing the card, his expression changed and he whispered, “The Hero of Jiang Nan Jiang Bie He has arrived.”

Tie Wu Shuang hurriedly stood up and before he could speak, a laughing voice

could be heard from outside, “Jiang Bie He has come visit Master Zhao, would he not see me?” Two persons strode past the stone steps in front of the hall, the person in front appearing calm, and was none other than Jiang Bie He, while the person following behind was a handsome young man.

Further behind there were four large men carrying a green soft carriage. The carriage was so deep that one cannot see who is actually sitting in it.

Zhao Xiang Ling rushed forward to welcome them, and clasping his fists, smiled, “Junior is not aware that Hero Jiang has arrived, please forgive me for any inhospitality.”

Jiang Bie He lightly smiled, “This is Master Hua, Hua Wu Que.”

He deliberately said that nonchalantly, but Zhao Xiang Ling, Tie Wu Shang, Luo Jiu and Luo San were unable to repress the change in their countenance on hearing the three words Hua Wu Que.

Sweeping his gaze up and down, Tie Wu Shuang smiled, “This brother is actually the recently famous ‘Master Wu Que’, really a dashing young man, outstanding, it’s really a pleasure to meet you.”

Hua Wu Que replied coldly, “My pleasure.”

Zhao Xiang Ling continued with a smile, “This is Old Master Tie, I’m sure the two of you have forgotten about, but these two Luo brothers…” and immediately introduced Luo Jiu and Luo San, bragging about their virtues.

Hua Wu Que does not seem to have heard, his nose seem to have smelt something, suddenly he flapped his sleeve, and glided out of his seat.

Everyone only felt a shadow brush past, and he has already flown into the reception hall at the side. In the blink of an eye, he has flown out from the reception hall, a fistful of herbs in his hand, and face even paler, said, “It’s really here.”

Zhao Xiang Ling asked, “Could these herbs belong to Master? Junior is not aware who sent it here, last night…”

Jiang Bie He replied on behalf with a faint smile, “Master Zhao really does not know who sent it?”

Zhaoo Xiang Ling glanced at him, and glanced at Hua Wu Que’s expression, and knew that something serious must be going on, and with forced laughter, replied, “What… what is this all about?”

“This is a very simple matter, someone poisoned Master Hua’s future wife, and bought all the herbs needed for the antidote from the market, what is this about?” Jiang Bie He explained.

Zhao Xiang Ling replied, “This is to ensure that Master Hua’s future wife does not survive.”

Jiang Biehe continued, “Correct, so to say, the person who bought the herbs, will he be the same as the person who put the poison?”

“Of course!”

Smiling faintly, Jiang Bie He agreed, “Then that’s it.”

After thinking for a moment, Zhao Xiang Ling’s expression suddenly changed, and asked hoarsely, “Those…. Those herbs are now in the reception hall?”

Jiang Bie He bit out every word, “That’s right!”

Zhao Xiang Ling jumped up, “But… but Junior really does not know this… someone sent those herbs here yesterday.”

Jiang Bie He questioned, “Who sent it?”

“Junior does not know either” Zhao Xiang Ling replied.

Jiang Bie He laughed coldly, “Do not know? Would anyone give away such expensive herbs for no rhyme or reason? Master Zhao, by saying this, aren’t you treating me like a kid?”

It must be said that this affair is really absurd, absolutely impossible. Zhao Xiang Ling was dumbfounded, and beads of sweat flowed down his head.

Tie Wu Shuang stood up and shouted, “I can state my reputation to vouch for Master Zhao, the herbs were sent by others, Master Zhao really does not know who that person is!”

Jiang Bie He threw him a glance, and said calmly, “If Master Zhao does not know, then you must have known.”

Tie Wu Shuang flared, “You… what did you say?” Jiang Bie He smiled icily, no longer looking at him, and not answering either.

End of Chapter 45

Chapter 35

Chapter 46

Only then did Hua Wu Que look back from the carriage. So the person in the carriage is really Tie Xin Lan, and he has already fed Tie Xin Lan with the herbs.

Taking the uncooked herbs may not fully utilize the strength of the herbs, but it can neutralize the poison slightly, and aided with Hua Wu Que's profound internal strength, a groan could be heard from inside the carriage after a while.

Heaving a sigh of relief, Hua Wu Que turned slowly around, his gaze slowly sweeping from one person to the next, and the look was like lightning piercing that everyone felt shivers down their spine.

Biting out each word, Hua Wu Que asked, "Who put the poison?"

Wiping his sweat, Zhao Xiang Ling replied, "Junior really does not know."

Glancing at Luo Jiu and Luo San, Jiang Bie He suddenly asked, "These herbs are really not purchased by Old Master Tie and Master Zhao?"

Luo Jiu and Luo San's eyes met, and Luo Jiu slowly replied, "Us brothers do not know anything."

Furious, Tie Wu SHuang blurted, "But you obviously know, you witnessed it yourself last night!"

Luo San replied, "We only saw the herbs coming by themselves, but do not know who sent it, it could be Zhang San, it could be Li Si, or it could also be…"

[Zhang San. Li Si, equivalent to Tom, Dick or Harry]

Taking a quick look at Tie Wu Shuang, he promptly shut up.

Jiang Bie He continued, “It could also be a disciple of Old Master Tie, right?”

Luo Jiu and Luo San exchanged looks again, not answering, which is as good as admitting it.

Fixing his stare at Tie Wu Shuang, Jiang Bie He asked, “Do you have anything else to say?”

However, Tie Wu Shuang’s furious gaze was locked onto the Luo brothers, and he fiercely asked, “How dare the two of you?”

Luo Jiu replied, “My brother and I are just speaking the truth.”

Jiang Bie He said, “You are truly men of good faith, and I respect that, but as for Old Master Tie…. Heh heh…”

Tie Wu Shuang bellowed, “What about me?”

Jiang Bie He did not answer, but walked to the carriage instead, calling out, “Miss Tie, Miss Tie is awake?”

Tie Xin Lan could be heard groaning from inside the carriage, “Mmm…. I’m very cold!”

Jiang Bie He continued, “Does Miss Tie know who poisoned you?”

Once this question was asked, everyone in the hall became anxious.

“I… I was poisoned? I don’t know who poisoned me either…”

Zhao Xiang Ling has just heaved a sigh of relief when Tie Xin Lan continued, “ I only know that after I ate two dates which Tie Wu Shuang sent over, I started feeling cold and shivering. Soon after, I became unconscious.”

As soon as this sentence was spoken, everyone’s countenance changed.

Tie Wu Shuang immediately demanded, “You…. Why do you malign me?”

Jiang Bie He commented. “If you still try to deny at this point in time, you’re not a real man.”

“What fa*rt! Firstly I am not acquainted with her, secondly we have no enmity, why would I harm her?” Tie Wu Shuang replied angrily.

Jiang Bie He asked, “Master Hua, what do you think?”

Hua Wu Que is really not your average man, to be able to hold on to his temper even at a time like this. Although he looked displeased, but he did not move, and instead calmly told them, “Before we strike, we should let others be convinced.”

Jiang Bie He smiled, “Indeed.” He suddenly waved at a carriage bearer, “Come here.”

The carriage bearer obeyed and with a bow, asked, “What instructions does Hero Jiang have?”

Everyone was baffled at why at this crucial moment, Jiang Bie He would suddenly summon the carriage bearer, when Jiang Bie He asked with a slight smile, “Old Master Tie’s words just now, you’ve heard?”

The carriage bearer replied, “Your servant has heard very clearly.”

“Do you think he has reason to harm Miss Tie?” Jiang Bie He asked.

“No.”

Everyone in the hall started casting looks at each other, some were of the impression that Jiang Bie He was trying to be mysterious, while others think he was trying to outsmart himself.

Jiang Bie He instead laughed and asked, “So, the poison was not placed by Old Master Tie?”

The carriage bearer replied, “It is placed by Old Master Tie.”

Jiang Bie He queried, “Why do you say that the poison is placed by Old Master Tie?”

The carriage bearer explained, “Although he has no intention to harm Miss Tie, but he did mean to kill Master Hua. He wanted to kill Master Hua, but Miss Tie took the brunt instead.”

Deliberately furrowing his brows, Jiang Bie He asked, “Old Master Tie and Master Hua has no enmity either, why would he harm Master Hua?”

He did not even finish his sentence, when Tie Wu Shuang bellowed, “Exactly, why would I harm him?”

Unhurriedly, the carriage bearer replied, “Naturally there are a few reasons to kill someone, one is jealously, second is enmity, or if one has done something shameful and is afraid of being found out.”

Furious, Tie Wu Shuang yelled, “I have been honorable my whole life, a servant such as you dare to imply that I have done something disgraceful!”

This yell sounded so thunderous, that all the servants in the villa’s expression changed in shock, but the carriage bearer was actually unaffected and continued calmly with a smile, “Your servant would not dare to say such words, these words were spoken by Old Master Tie yourself.”

This carriage bearer is not only articulate and brave, but his words, although

polite, bear sarcasm, almost as if he is treating Tie Wu Shuang as an equal.

The others were wondering, why the staff of the ‘Hero of Jiang Nan’, this carriage bearer, is such a formidable character, but Xiao Yu’er has already observed that this ‘carriage bearer’ is not a real carriage bearer, but someone disguised as one. The more he stared at the carriage bearer, the more he finds him familiar.

Tie Wu Shuang was so livid, that he actually started laughing wildly.

Facing heaven, he laughed madly, “Good, good, good, in front of the many friends here, I would like to hear what a servant like you would say what kind of shameless deed I have done.”

The carriage bearer slowly replied, “There are also many kinds of shameless deeds, for example doing things sneakily is considered a small deed while robbery, murder, these are considered large deeds.”

Tie Wu Shuang replied, “You…. You said who have I robbed?”

“For example, Master Duan He Fei.” Replied the carriage bearer.

Tie Wu Shuang hissed, “Duan He Fei? You… you…”

The carriage bearer continued, “Everyone in the city knows that Master Duan and Master Zhao are at odds, if Master Duan’s money, which was meant to purchase his goods, had been robbed, and his goods can’t be purchased, then there would be no one to fight with Master Zhao for business in this city.”

Tie Wu Shuang fumed, “If that is so, what has this got to do with me?”

The carriage bearer grinned, “If Old Master Tie had secretly stolen Duan He Fei’s money, not only will Master Zhao greatly reward you, but Old Master Tie would be able to enjoy the loot.”

Tie Wu Shuang replied, “Fine… continue speaking.”

The carriage bearer continued, “Old Master Tie thought that this matter, even the Gods are ignorant and the ghosts unaware, even if the people in Jiang Hu were to investigate this matter, they would not link it to Old Master Tie.”

With a laugh, he carried on, “Who knows that Master Duan actually invited Master Hua, and Old Master Tie himself knows that Master Hua is not your average man. Afraid that if Master Hua got to the bottom of this matter , Old Master Tie would never again be able to show his face in Jiang Hu, so he decided to make the first move, and kill Master Hua.”

His words are becoming more and more obvious, initially the words ‘if’ and ‘for example’ were used, but now he is clearly pointing the finger at Tie Wu Shuang!

Tie Wu Shuang roared, “What a wicked servant, let me beat the hell out of your sharp tongue!”

While roaring, this impulsive old man had already leapt up, both his palms spread like a fan, striking together, aiming straight for the carriage bearer’s left and right cheeks.

Tie Wu Shuang is the Jiang Hu leader of ‘San Xiang’, and his martial arts are of course not mediocre. At this point in time he was hitting out in fury, the wind produced from the force in his palms caused their clothes to flap about ten feet away.

Funnily, Jiang Bie He was standing right next to the carriage bearer, and on seeing that his staff is about to be attacked, he behaved as if nothing is happening and did not even lift a hand to stop!

‘Puff, puff’, and a maddening roar, a shadow flew past!

This carriage bearer actually blocked the blow from Tie Wu Shuang.

And as the four palms clashed, the one who flew out is not the carriage bearer,

but ‘Values talent as much as one’s life’ Tie Wu Shuang, the famed hero of ‘San Xiang’ who is well known for the prowess of his palms!

Those present couldn’t help but gasp in surprise and Xiao Yu’er was cracking his head trying to figure out who this carriage bearer was, when he saw that the stance he used when he shot out his palm was the highest level of authentic Shaolin’s martial arts!

A thought flashed in his mind, and Xiao Yu’er exclaimed silently, “So it’s him!”

Tie Wu Shuang was flung back by the force, and when he landed, he almost lost his footing and tumbled a few steps back. If not for Zhao Xiang Ling who rushed forward to support him, he would have fallen.

Even so, his ruddy face has turned deathly pale, his chest heaving irregularly. Obviously he is injured, and the injury is not superficial.

Jiang Bie He smiled lightly, “Old Master Tie is indeed getting on in age.”

Tie Wu Shuang fluttered, “You…. You…..”

Jiang Bie He replied, “What else does Elder have to say, Junior here will listen attentively.”

Zhao Xiang Ling said loudly, “I have something to say. If the poison is really put by Old Master Tie, why would he keep the herbs here? He can’t be waiting for you to catch him red-handed?”

The carriage bearer interrupted, “A common man would not have done such a thing, but Old Master Tie has been roaming Jiang Hu for many years and is experienced. By doing this, others would not believe that this deed was done by him, isn’t this plan ten times, a hundred times better?

Zhao Xiang Ling muttered, “But… but…”

He has always prided himself on being quick witted, but who would have guessed that at this point, he can't say anything after being refuted by the carriage bearer. One must know that if this deed is really done by Tie Wu Shuang, and he has planned it that way, it is indeed an excellent plan.

Jiang Bie He asked, "Now that things have turned out this way, what does Master Hua think?"

"If this matter is known to all the pugilistic Heroes, I'm afraid even they would find this intolerable." replied Hua Wu Que.

"Indeed", agreed Jiang Bie He.

Hua Wu Que's gaze slowly swept through the crowd, and finally fixed his eyes on Tie Wu Shuang and Zhao Xiang Ling's face, saying "It is now noon, I will give the two of you half the day to mull over how to settle this matter. At the 'Zi' hour tonight, I will return." With a clasp of his fists, he turned around and walked out.

"All this time I had admired the fame of Old Master Tie's great name and had really wanted to meet you, who could have guessed.....ai!" after letting out a long sigh of disappointment Jiang Bie He walked away with the carriage bearer.

Everyone saw that they actually left, and do not know if they felt distress or joy, but stayed where they stood, stunned.

Even Xiao Yu'er can't help but sigh quietly, "No matter what, the way these two left, are indeed worthy of a Hero's status. However, that Hua Wu Que really had that intention, but Jiang Bie He was just putting up a front."

Everyone stared at Hua, Jiang and company walk out the villa.

Tie Wu Shuang suddenly roared "It'll be the death of me….."

Just as he finished his words, blood spurted out from his mouth.

It turned out that he was quite heavily injured when he crossed palms earlier, but was holding his breath and controlling. He did not talk earlier as he was afraid of losing his face.

Zhao Xiang Ling saw that despite his age, he is still a proud person, and with mixed feelings, forced out a smile, “Senior better hurry to the back for a rest and tend to your injury…”

Tie Wu Shuang laughed bitterly, “Our deadline is the ‘Zi’ hour tonight, what’s the use of tending to my injury?”

Zhao Xiang Ling replied, “That… that may not be so, they have already gone…”

With a long laugh, Tie Wu Shuang continued, “They might have gone, but I cannot possibly flee… cough cough, it’s unbelievable that having been illustrious all my life, I would end up dying in humiliation!”

Looking heavenward, Tie Wu Shuang lamented, “Now that things have come to this, I have no place to go, no road to walk, instead of waiting until the ‘Zi’ hour, I might as well just do myself in!”

He has not even completed his sentence, but his face was already flowing with hot tears. This old Hero reaching the end of his road, who could not feel sad for him?

Shocked, Zhao Xiang Ling replied, “Senior must never do that, there may be a change in the situation.”

Tie Wu Shuang continued, “Now that this has happened, I would not be able to defend myself even with a hundred mouths, unless we can find the real culprit… but where in the world can we find the culprit? And considering that we only have half a day…”

Disheartened, Zhao Xiang Ling muttered, “Half a day… ‘Zi’ hour…”

Looking up, the sun has already moved towards the west.

Raising his head heavenward, Tie Wu Shuang laughed, “Jiang Bie He oh Jiang Bie He, Hua Wu Que oh Hua Wu Que! I do not blame you, now that things have come to this… cough cough, you can only do this. To give me another half a day, is being very kind and righteous to me, I… cough…. I should thank you instead… cough cough”

As he spoke, he coughed, the fresh blood splattered down the front of his robe.

Half pushing and half cajoling, Zhao Xiang Ling summoned his servants to help support him to the back room. Turning back to look at Luo Jiu and Luo San, he asked “You are unable to save me as well?”

With a slight smile, Luo Jiu replied, “Old Master Tie is too downhearted, the way I see it, this is a simple matter.”

Turning his gaze, Luo Jiu leaned towards Zhao Xiang Ling’s ears and whispered, “Now that things have come to this, we shall have to make the first move, and kidnap Duan He Fei and his daughter, so that Jiang Bie He would be cautious and would not dare to strike!”

On hearing this, Xiao Yu’er really felt like giving him a few tight slaps. What kind of an idea is this, this is literally pushing them towards their graves.

After staying silent for a while, Zhao Xiang Ling replied, “We must never do this. If we do this, all the people in the pugilistic world would really believe that the robbery and poison was done by us, and we would not be able to defend ourselves even if we have a hundred mouths.”

Xiao Yu’er secretly clapped, “That’s right, Zhao Xiang Ling is really not a dumb person.”

But Luo Jiu whispered again, “Why is Master Zhao being obstinate, you must know that this is only a temporary measure. On one hand we keep Jiang Bie He and the rest at bay, on the other hand we shall investigate and search for the real culprit. Once we capture the culprit, the truth will be out, and we can kindly

send Duan and his family back. Who in the pugilistic world would dare to say anything bad about Master Zhao then?”

Zhao Xiang Ling seems tempted and muttered, “But… I still feel that…”

Luo Jiu pressed on, “If Master Zhao does not want to use such a brilliant plan, with Jiang Bie He and Hua Wu Que’s martial arts, it will be harder than ascending heaven if you want to escape the deadline tonight.”

Zhao Xiang Ling was again silent, then he smiled bitterly, “It seems like that is the only way.” He paused, and continued, “But, that Duan He Fei’s servants are as numerous as clouds. To enter his villa and kidnap him and his daughter is not an easy task. This is almost like obtaining the head of a general amidst thousands of soldiers and millions of horses.”

Luo Jiu smiled slightly, “Master Zhao need not worry about this.” Luo San added, “Right now, Hua Wu Que and Jiang Bie He would never be on their guard against this plan, neither would they go and protect Duan and his daughter. Besides these two, the others are all negligible.”

Zhao Xiang Ling asked joyously, “Would the two of you be willing to extend a helping hand?”

Luo Jiu replied, “How can we not share the problems of someone who has taken care of us?”

Overjoyed, Zhao Xiang Ling bowed, “My good brothers are so honorable, I really do not know how to repay you.”

Luo Jiu hurriedly helped him up, saying “Master Zhao, please do not stand on such ceremony.”

Witnessing everything, Xiao Yu’er commented to himself, “What a good Luo Jiu, to execute such an evil plan. By doing this, aren’t you creating more havoc, so that you can reap benefits from it…”

Luo Jiu could be hard saying, “We should not dally, I shall leave immediately.”

Zhao Xiang Ling informed, “If you have any needs, please let me know.”

“We don’t need anything else, but would Master Zhao send eight servants, carrying two small carriages to follow my brother and me.”

Zhao Xiang Ling replied, “That should be easy…”

As soon as he gave his instructions, there were voices of acknowledgement. Turning his eyes, Xiao Yu’er walked out as well, and he also masqueraded as a ‘carriage bearer’.

Two carriages were brought up, but Luo Jiu sat in it first and smilingly said, “Let me and my brother sit on these two carriages for now. When it’s Duan He Fei and his daughter’s turn later, I don’t think they will be any lighter than us.” He sat in the carriage, lowered the curtain and asked, “Duan He Fei’s villa, do you know the way?”

Someone laughingly replied, “Of course we do, there were a few occasions that we felt like going to burn his house down.”

“Then let’s go.”

Seven servants and one Xiao Yu’er actually carried up the carriages and went off. The seven servants still do not know why they are making the trip, and some were secretly whispering.

After traveling for a while, Duan He Fei’s villa could be seen from a distance. In front of the big red door sat seven, eight burly men, and inside the door sat another seven, eight of them.

One servant said, “Right in front is Duan He Fei’s pig sty, what does Master Luo think we should do?”

Luo Jiu replied, “Go straight in.”

As soon as he spoke, even Xiao Yu’er was surprised, “Aren’t they afraid of Jiang Bie He?” The servants was even more stunned, and forced out a laugh, “Duan He Fei has a lot of guard dogs, it will be such an injustice if we get bitten by them.”

Luo Jiu replied, “You just have to carry the carriage in, those guard dogs will not bite you.”

Casting looks at one another, the servants mustered up their courage and walked forward with a shout.

They have just reached the door when predictably, the burly servant from Duan’s residence called out, “Hey, what are you here for? Halt!”

Xiao Yu’er rolled his eyes and yelled back, “We are here to carry the pigs, give way!”

Naturally he is out to make mischief, so that Jiang Bie He would come out and Luo Jiu would fail. On how to save Tie Wu Shuang, he is already full of confidence.

As expected, the burly servant dashed towards the carriage, scolding “Raised by dogs, are you here to seek death…”

The Zhao family servants were carrying the carriage with their hands, and on seeing them charging forward, have no means of defending themselves. Just as they were feeling anxious, they suddenly heard a few sounds of ‘poof poof”! The seven, eight burly servants in front actually fell without a sound. No one saw anything, and thought they had seen a ghost.

Xiao Yu’er’s eyes were sharp, and saw a few dark flashes flying out from within the carriage, hitting once on each of the seven, eight burly servants, who immediately dropped to the floor, rolled around for a bit, and then stopped moving!

This Luo Jiu really has such fatal moves! Xiao Yu'er can't help feeling chilled, and the Zhao family servants were even more stunned.

Luo Jiu smiled and said, "The guard dogs are not barking anymore, aren't you moving." Chorusing their agreement, the servants carried up the carriage and proceeded.

Just then, there were another seven, eight men rushing out from inside, shouting in surprise. They have just run out the door when there were another few 'poof poof' sounds, and another seven, eight person dropped to the floor.

The only one who has not stepped out of the door, turned around and ran, yelling, "Someone, someone, an evil ghost is barging in from the front door."

Xiao Yu'er thought to himself, "The way he is yelling, Jiang Bie He will surely be lured out. Aren't the Luo brothers concerned?"

Luo Jiu and Luo San were really indifferent, laughing loudly, "Guys, go forward!"

Their bravado boosted, the Zhao family servants flew forward.

Walking into a courtyard in front, there were already twenty odd men with knives and axes rushing out from inside, but the sounds of the secret weapon darting past could be heard and in front of them, laid another heap of people.

A burly men in purple cried out with a shocked expression, "The person in the carriage hold your hand, the servants please retreat." This person's skills were the fittest, his martial arts seems unlikely to be weak.

Amidst the shouts, five men suddenly appeared, each holding shields and they threw one shield to the man in purple. The man in purple shouted, "To shoot the rider, first shoot the horse. Kill the person in the carriage first."

With flashing blades, the six of them has already flown forward.

Although the Zhao family servants roared, but they were secretly petrified, seeing that the fighters were all carrying shields protecting their chests, swishing their knives directly down.

Suddenly there was a long laugh, someone said loudly, “Hold on!”

A shadow flew out from within the carriage, and with one hand grabbing the back of one of the Zhao family servant, threw him behind.

The knife of the fighter cut through air instead, and he saw standing right in front of him, a fat man with a round face beaming at him, with one finger pointing at his own nose, asking “Don’t you all recognize me?”

The fighters were all stunned, and looked at one another, thinking that this fatty may be the friend of one of them. Before they are done looking at one another, Luo Jiu had continued, “If all of you don’t recognize me, then I can only not recognize you either!”

While he talked, his palms had already shot out like poisonous snakes, grabbing the wrist of the knife bearing fighter right in front of him. There was a sound of ‘ka cha’, followed by a scream.

That fighter’s wrist was broken! The steel knife dropped to the floor, and the person also fainted from the pain. The other five were both shocked and angry, one spear and two knives struck down!

Sweeping his gaze, Luo Jiu said with a smile, “Unthinkable that there will be disciples of the Yang Family’s Spear here, this stance of ‘Wind Nodding Head” seems to have at least fifteen year’s practice, and considerably a good spear stance!”

The fighter with the spear is indeed a direct disciple from the Northern Branch of the Yang Family’s Spear. He had only displayed once stance, and his background was exposed. Secretly surprised, the spear in his palms slowed down as well.

In this moment of hesitation, the tip of his spear has already landed in the hands of the other party.

Holding the spear tip with his right hand, Luo Jiu half turned his body and with the pole of the spear, blocked the sword attack from his right. At the same time, he smiled and asked the man in purple who was attacking from his left, “Is Peng Nian Zu, Teacher Peng well?”

This Peng Nian Zu is the Southern Branch Sect Leader of “Five Tigers Breaking Door Blade”, and this man in purple is his disciple. Now that he heard the other party bringing up his teacher’s name, he can’t help but ask in shock, “You know my master?”

Luo Jiu laughingly replied, “I don’t know!”

As soon as the three words ‘I don’t know’ were spoken, his left palm has already struck the chest of the man in purple, and his burly body flew out.

At the same time, the fighter holding on to the spear could feel a force of energy welling up from the pole and wanted to release his hold on the spear but was too late!

With a ‘puff’, the pole of the spear had been impaled into his chest! The spear in his palms actually became the weapon of his opponent!

Clapping his hands, Luo Jiu asked, “Does the three of you recognize humble me now?”

The remaining three were so frightened their face turned ash, their hands holding on to their blades and spears but not daring to strike. This Luo Jiu actually killed three experienced fighters while chatting, and his venomous strikes were something Xiao Yu’er has never seen since he debuted. The Luo Jiu now, is not the Luo Jiu who executed ‘Da Hong Fists’ last night!

Although Xiao Yu’er already knew last night that this person’s skill is definitely more than meets the eye, he never expected his slyness and wickedness to be

comparable to the ‘Ten Evils’ he knew.

In the time that he was thinking, one of the three standing fighters had fallen, and the legs of the remaining two started trembling.

Beaming, Luo Jiu asked, “So the two of you should recognize me by now.”

The two answered in unison, “Recognize… recognize…”

“Who do you recognize me as?”

Looking at each other, the two replied, “You… you are Master… are…”

“My surname’s Luo, named Luo Jiu.”

They replied, “Right, right, you are Master Luo Jiu.”

Luo Jiu continued, “Since the two of you know me, that is just too good, so I’ll trouble the two of you to bring me to Duan He Fei, Old Master Duan, how’s that?”

The two of them looked at each other, mumbling, “This… this…”

Luo Jiu’s expression darkened, and asked “Such a small favor, and the two of you won’t agree?”

They thought for a while, and finally sighed, “Fine, please…”

They have not finished their words when ‘puff, puff’, two dark flashes flew from the back, striking their back, and they fell with a scream.

Someone laughed, “Old Master Duan has already been invited out by me, and we no longer need the two of you to lead the way!” As he laughed, Luo San strode out, his left hand holding on to Duan He Fei, his right hand holding on to

Third Missy.

It turns out that while Luo Jiu was fighting out here, Luo San has sneaked into the back yard. Third Missy might have some martial arts background, but how could she have been a match to Luo San!

Surrounding them were the remaining thirty, forty strong servants of the Duan Residence, who at that moment were staring at Luo San dragging their master out, but no one dared to attack!

These mysterious Luo Brothers really managed to kidnap Duan He Fei and his daughter effortlessly, and Xiao Yu'er was both surprised and curious. 'Where is Jiang Bie He? Could Jiang Bie He be dead?'

Duan He Fei was so terrified that his face was pale. He would walk when Luo San told him to walk, and when Luo San told him to get into the carriage, he obediently went in.

Although Third Missy stared at them with eyes even bigger than copper bells, she was powerless as well. Luo San pushed her into the carriage and with a beam, instructed, "Brothers, lift up the carriage and leave."

Luo Jiu smiled, "This carriage is not small, and it won't be crowded even with two people sitting inside. Please bear with it a bit!"

The two brothers actually squeezed themselves into the carriage, and the carriage creaked under their weight.

The Zhao Family servants had long since looked upon the two brothers as Gods, so no matter how heavy the carriage, they still carried it willingly. Not only did they not complain, but were very happy instead.

Xiao Yu'er's thoughts started churning again! Jiang Bie He still has not shown his face, could it be he is not back yet?

They should have been back long ago, but yet they are not. Unless they already

know that Luo San and Luo Jiu would have such a plan, and are avoiding them.

He deliberately wanted Luo San and Luo Jiu to kidnap Duan He Fei and his daughter, so that this matter would be blown out of proportions, so that Tie Wu Shuang would not be able to settle this matter!

But how did Luo San and Luo Jiu know that Jiang Bie He is not around?

“Unless these two brothers were already in cahoots with Jiang Bie He?”

Xiao Yu’er shuddered involuntarily, “What a Jiang Bie He, within his evil plan, there is yet another evil plan. In this world, besides me, Jiang Xiao Yu, who else can see through his evil plan?”

As he thought, the carriage has already turned into another street.

He suddenly saw another carriage coming towards them, and carrying the carriage, was the argumentative ‘carriage bearer’, followed by two horses behind. On the horses were Jiang Bie He and Hua Wu Que.

Xiao Yu’er was surprised, his eyes rolled, and suddenly yelled out, “The carriage in front get out of the way, do you know who is sitting in this carriage?” The Zhao Family servants, on seeing Jiang Bie He and Hua Wu Que, who were already quivering in fear, heard his shouts and were even more petrified.

Who would expect that Jiang Bie He really moved his carriage aside for them.

Carrying the carriage, Xiao Yu’er walked past and bumped into the ‘carriage bearer’ deliberately, asking quietly, “I recognize you, do you recognize me?”

That ‘carriage bearer’ seemed not to have heard, and walked past with his head lowered. Only Jiang Bie He gave Xiao Yu’er a hard stare as he rode past.

As the carriages went past, the Zhao Family servants secretly heaved a sigh of relief.

Xiao Yu’er laughed coldly, thinking to himself, “My guess is indeed correct, Jiang Bie He is really in cahoots with these two Luos, so he had already known who is in the carriage, but pretended not to know.”

This move has really plunged Tie Wu Shuang into danger. Even if he insisted that he is not involved in the robbery and poison, no one in the world would believe him.

End of Chapter 46

Chapter 36

Chapter 47

Duan He Fei and his daughter entered the villa, and everyone was surprised. They all beamed as they released the pent up frustration suppressed over the years. Although Zhao Xiang Ling felt that what they had done does not seem too appropriate, but on seeing that his nemesis for so many years now becoming his prisoner, he can't help but feel delighted.

On seeing this sight, Xiao Yu'er silently shook his head, "Smile all you want now, soon it will be time to cry…"

Duan He Fei and his daughter were pulled and dragged by a few men into the back yard. This father and daughter has ended up in 'Earthly Spirited Villa', naturally they will be in for a suffering.

Zhao Xiang Ling is already holding up his wine cup to express his thanks, "You have offered such immense help, I will never forget it."

Luo San smilingly replied, "It's just a small matter, do not keep it to heart, but… what does Master Zhao plan to do now?"

Sighing, Zhao Xiang Ling replied, "Now that things have come to this, I can only hope that we can reduce a big problem into a small problem, and to reduce the small problem into no problem. When Jiang Bie He arrives, I will give a good explanation on this matter. As long as he does not pursue the matter, I will just release Duan He Fei."

Luo Jiu smiled, and replied coldly, "After this matter, Master Zhao still think this big problem can be reduced into a small problem?"

There was a slight change in Zhao Xiang Ling's expression as he replied, "Isn't….. isn't it …"

Luo Jiu continued icily, "Now that things have come to this, both parties are now in a deadlock. If Master Zhao continues to insist that you are not involved in this matter, no matter how much you explain, Jiang Bie He will never believe you."

Zhao Xiang Ling paled, "Then…. Then haven't you done more harm to me."

Luo San sneered, "My brother and I went through life and death, and in exchange we only have these words from Master Zhao?"

Zhao Xiang Ling hurriedly apologized, "It's a slip of my tongue, please forgive me, it's just that… my plans are in a mess, and I am really at a loss. I will need to depend on you to offer me advice."

Luo Jiu beamed, and said slowly, "If we can't make peace, we can only make war!"

Zhao Xiang Ling whispered, "War!"

"Exactly!" Luo Jiu replied.

"But… but that Jiang Bie He and Hua Wu Que's martial arts, I… I…"

Luo Jiu smiled lightly, "Hua Wu Que and Jiang Bie He might have amazing martial arts, but Master Zhao need not fear them."

Luo San added, "Have Master Zhao not heard, if we can't win by force, we win by wits."

"But how do we win by wits?" Zhao Xiang Ling queried.

Luo Jiu replied, “Duan He Fei and his daughter are now in Master Zhao’s hands, Jiang Bie He would be cautious. Even if he came, he would not dare to strike, so Master Zhao can secure them first.”

“And then?” asked Zhao Xiang Ling.

Luo Jiu took a sweeping look, and whispered, “The brothers of ‘Earthly Spirited Villa’, are all skilled, why not Master Zhao instruct your men to lay an ambush in this hall, and prepare to give a fierce attack…”

Luo San added with a smile, “Once that Jiang Bie He and Hua Wu Que enters this hall, I’m afraid that it would be difficult for them to leave this place alive even if they have three heads and six arms.” His speech was unguarded, and his voice loud.

Listening from afar, Xiao Yu’er silently cursed, “What kind of a dog as*ed idea is this? That Jiang Bie He would not fall into the trap. If Zhao Xiang Ling really listened to this idea, he’ll just be adding another crime to the list. Even if Jiang Bie He were to kill you immediately, no one in Jiang Hu would speak up for you.”

On hearing the plan, Zhao Xiang Ling was moved, “You think that this plan would work?”

Luo Jiu assured, “Of course it would work.”

Luo San continued with a smile, “After the success of this plan, ‘Heavenly Fragrance Pond, Earthly Spirited Villa’s name will rock the world, by then Master Zhao might have chased my brother and I out!”

Zhao Xiang Ling can’t help but laugh out, “How can I forget the two…” The laughter stopped, and he muttered, “But… by doing this, if it fails…”

With a straight face, Luo Jiu replied, “Now that things have come to this, does Master Zhao have any other idea?”

Zhao Xiang Ling went silent for a while, before replying with a bitter smile,

“Now that things have come to this, I guess I have no other choice. As the saying goes, “A coward is not a gentleman, and an un-lethal person is not a man. Zhao Xiang Ling will have to fight it to the end with them!”

Clasping his palms, Luo Jiu smiled, “Indeed, indeed. By saying these words, Master Zhao has really shown yourself to be a true hero!”

Luo San added, “Once that Jiang Bie He finds out that Duan He Fei and his daughter had been kidnapped, he would be on his way here immediately, and we must be quick in our planning.”

Zhao Xiang Ling suddenly stood up and shouted, “Brothers, prepare your bows and arrows for an ambush. When I raise my cup, it would be the signal, strike immediately!”

“The ambush is set, you can invite Old Master Tie out now.” Informed Luo Jiu.

Luo San smiled, “The plan would not work if Old Master Tie is not involved.”

Jiang Bie He’s plan is apparently proceeding smoothly, not only is Zhao Xiang Ling walking straight into the trap, he is dragging Tie Wu Shuang along with him.

This way, Jiang Bie He can easily weaken Tie Wu Shuang’s influence, and there would be less and less people in Jiang Hu who will pit themselves against him.

Hence, Tie Wu Shuang will become the scapegoat of the real robber who stole the cargo, and no one in Jiang Hu would be suspicious.

The net is closing in tighter… Xiao Yu’er shut his eyes, and mumbled to himself, “Jiang Bie He’s evil plan, is it really unassailable?”

Dusk.

Tie Wu Shuang is already seated at the hall. Although his body was ramrod straight, his expression looked haggard, and the original gleam gone from his

eyes.

Luo Jiu and Luo San on the other hand were jaunty, and even Zhao Xiang Ling appeared excited. This ‘Earthly Spirited Villa’ may seem very peaceful from the outside, but it is in fact surrounded by murderous traps!

In ambush on the four sides of the hall, were thirty strong bows, twenty hard crossbows, in the courtyard were servants in groups of three to five people, and Xiao Yu’er was mixed in there as well.

Suddenly, the sound of hoof beats could be heard outside the villa, and everyone’s expression changed.

The hoof beats stopped, but seven young men in smart attire and carrying swords entered instead. The seven stepped into the hall at the same time, and prostrated themselves in front of Tie Wu Shuang.

These seven people are the most highly skilled among Tie Wu Shiang’s ‘Eighteen Disciples’, and had rushed here on hearing the news. Tie Wu Shuang was delighted at their appearance, and Zhao Xiang Ling was elated as well.

On seeing those seven people, Xiao Yu’er’s eyes brightened as well. The leader of those seven people, turned out to be the pale looking youth in green who was secretly in cahoots with Jiang Yu Lang,

He said respectfully, “Your disciple came late, Master please forgive…”

Xiao Yu’er secretly gloated, “You’re not late, you’re just on time, I am just waiting for you!”

Tie Wu Shuang’s joyful look was quickly replaced by gloom, and replied with a long sigh, “You might have arrived, but it is of no use… this is not something that can be settled through brute strength. All of you must not strike carelessly, to avoid…”

He had not finished his sentence, when there was a scream.

The body of a person flew in from the back window in the hall, and fell to the ground with a ‘pong’. The limbs were stiffened, and will never move again. This person was dressed in black with a gold plated bow held in his hand, and a dark feathered arrow was embedded in his back. This is one of the burly servants Zhao Xiang Ling ordered to lay in ambush in the hall.

Zhao Xiang Ling looked aghast, and Tie Wu Shuang also lost his voice suddenly.

There was another scream, another person fell in… in the blink of an eye, screams after screams continued, and there were more than ten bodies piled up in the hall, all of them with stiffened limbs, unable to move.

Tie Wu Shuang gasped, “What… what is this all about?”

Zhao Xiang Ling, looking around in fear, replied “This… this…”

Someone continued coldly, “This is because you outsmarted yourself! And you will have to bear the consequences!”

Two shadows floated in, and who else could it be but Jiang Bie He and Hua Wu Que!

Zhao Xiang Ling collapsed onto the chair, and could not stand up.

Clasping his hands behind his back, Jiang Bie He smiled icily, “If Old Master Tie thinks that such ambush would be able to harm me, you think too lowly of me.”

Tie Wu Shuang roared, “What is this all about? I have no idea at all!”

Jiang Bie He replied coldly, “If Old Master Tie did not agree, Master Zhao would not dare do this.”

Tie Wu Shuang shouted angrily, “Zhao Xiang Ling, explain, who taught you to use such underhand methods?”

Not even daring to raise his head, Zhao Xiang Long can only mutter, “This… this…”

Luo Jiu suddenly stood up and said loudly, “My brother and I knew that Old Master Tie and Master Zhao were heroes, and came here from afar. Who would have guessed that the two of them would actually use such underhand method?”

Luo San added loudly, “My brother and I may not be talented, but we would not associate ourselves with such devious people. From now on, no matter what happens in ‘Earthly Spirited Villa’, will have nothing to do with us!”

Zhao Xiang Ling exclaimed loudly, “How can the two of you say such words, aren’t all these your idea?”

Luo Jiu smiled coolly, “What a good Zhao Xiang Ling, you dare to push the blame to my brother and I!”

“No matter how you deny, I’m afraid no one would believe you!” Luo San continued coldly.

With a mad roar, Zhao Xiang Ling exclaimed, “You… you’re good, good….”

Hua Wu Que interjected calmly, “Although I am not doing this for myself, but now that things have come to this, what do the two of you have to say?”

Tie Wu Shuang bit out, “I…. I… I am incensed!”

While shouting, he vomited fresh blood again, and this old man, in his fury, actually fainted!

His disciples were shocked and angry. Some rushed forward to help him up, some has already drawn their swords, ready to strike, when the pale faced youth in green cried out, “Before we clear this matter up, everyone hold your arms!”

Jiang Bie He replied with a straight face, “Indeed, if the Master is not righteous, the disciples should not follow. If all of you can differentiate who the honor lies with, everyone in the martial arts world would look at you differently.”

The youth in green commented, “But what all this about, is still….”

Jiang Bie He replied fiercely, “All the facts are here, what is there not to believe?”

The youth in green deliberately heaved a long sigh, saying “Master, do not blame your disciple for being heartless, you can only blame yourself for doing something that even Heaven would not tolerate. To uphold justice, you disciple can only…”

Clenching his teeth, and pausing in his steps, he removed the sword tied to his waist and threw it on the ground!

This move of his is absolutely clever, if those in Jiang Hu finds out that even Tie Wu Shuang’s own disciple has admitted guilt, what else can others say? The rest of the six have always followed his lead, and on seeing him do this, three of them also removed their swords. Although the other three have not removed their swords, but the hands that were holding the swords hand had already drooped down!

Jiang Bie He spoke up, “Besides Tie Wu Shuang and Zhao Xiang Ling, this matter does not involve the rest of you. As long as all of you do not help them in their tyranny, I will definitely not implicate the innocent!”

His teeth chattering in fear, Zhao Xiang Ling asked hoarsely, “What enmity do I have with you, that you must thus harm me?

Jiang Bie He replied calmly, “Although I have no enmity with you, but to uphold justice in Jiang Hu, I shall not abide with you today!”

Biting his teeth, Zhao Xiang Ling suddenly grinned, “Good, I know that for Duan He Fei’s sake, you want to get rid of me, but don’t you forget that Duan He

Fei is now in my hands. If I die, he shall not live either."

With a frosty smile, Jiang Bie He asked, "Really?"

He waved his hands, and two carriages were brought out from the back of the hall, and the person in front that was carrying the carriage, turned out to be the quick witted and mysterious 'carriage bearer'.

"Would you like to take a look who is sitting inside the carriage?" Jiang Bie He asked.

Zhao Xiang Ling took two steps back, and the 'carriage bearer' lifted the cloth, and sitting in the carriage beaming, is Duan He Fei.

At this stage, Zhao Xiang Ling has lost completely. Looking around in distress, he suddenly roared and dashed out of the hall madly.

Jiang Bie He did not stop him either, but just looked at him and with a cold smile, commented "You still think you can escape?"

Zhao Xiang Ling burst out of the hall, and in the darkness a hand suddenly shot out and dragged him aside, and someone whispered some words in his ears.

These few words were like elixir, and made Zhao Xiang Ling spirited again. By then, Tie Wu Shuang was gradually regaining consciousness.

Hua Wu Que said slowly, "On the account that his fame did not come easy, just let him do himself in."

His speech was still calm, and his expression elegant and suave as always, his attire white as snow, and one cannot tell at all that he had just been involved in a fight.

Although he could control all that went on here, but he behaved as if he is not involved in the whole matter, and even his words were not in excess.

Evidently, even in a chaotic situation, he can maintain his suave demeanor.

Jiang Bie He bent down and picked up the sword belonging to the youth in green and slowly brought it towards Tie Wu Shuang with a cold look in his eyes, without uttering a word.

He has no need to speak.

Looking heavenward, Tie Wu Shuang gave a long sigh, “Heaven oh heaven, if I, Tie Wu Shuang were to die today, how can I die in peace!”

His agonized eyes swept past his disciples, and even that youth in green involuntarily lowered his head. Tie Wu Shuang suddenly shouted excitedly, “I am standing right here, if you really think that I am guilty, and wants my life, then come take it! I’m afraid that even Heaven would not stand for this!”

In the flickering candlelight, with his eyes shone red, his hair wild, and an air of grievance inexplicably made their guts went cold. Even Jiang Bie He moved half a step back unconsciously.

However, that ‘carriage bearer’ darted out with a shout, “With all the evil deeds you’ve done, everyone will not condone it. In the whole wide world, anyone can take your life. If others can’t bear to strike, then let me!”

Suddenly someone exclaimed, “Jiang Yu Lang, you really dare to strike!”

That ‘carriage bearer’ came to a shocking stop, and turned around, only to see Zhao Xiang Ling walking back in with a huge stride. His face was still pale, but his chest had puffed up! His words were booming as well.

He strode to the middle of the hall, and only then everyone realized that there is someone following behind him. This person was wearing a blue gown with white socks, with a bamboo hat on his head covering his whole face. He drifted as he walked, and looked like a spirit stuck onto Zhao Xiang Ling’s body, and this image involuntarily sent a cold shiver down their spines.

That ‘carriage bearer’, although stunned, maintained a composed expression, and said with a laugh, “A man like Young Hero Jiang, why would he become a carriage bearer, you must be blind!”

Zhao Xiang Ling replied loudly, “Jiang Yu Lang, you may be able to fool others, but you cannot fool me. After stealing the Duan’s cargo, you rushed back here to masquerade as a carriage bearer, and your motive is to take Old Master Tie’s life. This way, everyone in Jiang Hu would think that Old Master Tie died in the hands of this carriage bearer, and even if someone were to seek revenge in future, they would not find the hypocritical “Hero of Jiang Nan’ and his son… Jiang Yu Lang oh Jiang Yu Lang, you and your father’s plan is really well thought out, and not a single loophole!”

The ‘carriage bearer’ let out a laugh, “Did everyone hear that, he dare say that Young Hero Jiang was the one who stole the cargo… Master Duan, don’t you think he is a nonsensical madman!”

A cunning look seem to flash through Duan He Fei’s beady eyes, and beaming at Zhao Xiang Ling, he said each word slowly, “How do you explain this, the first time my cargo was stolen, it was retrieved by Young Hero Jiang. If he is the thief, why would he retrieve the cargo?”

Zhao Xiang Ling replied, “The first time the cargo was stolen, was collaboration between ‘Double Lion Escort Agency’ and Jiang Yu Lang. If Jiang Yu Lang did not return the cargo, they would still need to compensate you.”

“Why would they do that?” Duan He Fei asked.

Zhao Xiang Ling replied, “In that way, not only will Jiang Yu Lang’s reputation in Jiang Hu be raised, but also…”

He deliberately paused for a while and as expected, Duan He Fei can’t help but press on, “But also what?”

Zhao Xiang Ling slowly continued, “And also when the second time the cargo was stolen, no one would ever suspect Jiang Yu Lang.”

Duan He Fei queried, “If that is the case, the men of ‘Double Lion Escort Agency’, why would they…”

Zhao Xiang Ling carried on, “Once everyone in ‘Double Lion Escort Agency’ is dead, no one would be able to accompany the cargo, and all that money would safely land in the hands of the ‘Hero of Jiang Nan’.”

Jiang Bie He furrowed his eyebrows slightly, and threw a glance at that ‘carriage bearer’.

That ‘carriage bearer’ roared in anger, “Bitten by a thief, you actually wanted to make a false accusation, I shall not tolerate this!” As he spoke, he raced towards Zhao Xiang Ling in anger.

The speed of his body, is as fast as an arrow leaving the bow!

In his shock, Zhao Xiang Ling was unable to avoid in time, but right at this moment, there was a sudden movement, and Hua Wu Que had glided in to block the ‘carriage bearer’s’ path.

That ‘carriage bearer’s’ palm had struck out, and could not retract in time and it seems that it is about to land on Hua Wu Que. With a sudden twist to his body, the left palm clapped against the right palm, the body has already turned around smoothly, and the strike has turned its direction.

This move of ‘Warrior Breaking the Wrist’ is the highest level of authentic orthodox martial arts, and the move is even above ‘Stopping the Horse before the Cliff’ of Kun Lun’s Ninth Stance.

Once this skill was executed, even Tie Wu Shuang’s expression changed, and Jiang Bie He’s eyebrows furrowed tighter. Only Hua Wu Que could be heard commenting with a smile, “Great martial arts! Great move…”

That ‘carriage bearer’ stared at him in surprise, mumbling “Master Hua why…”

Hua Wu Que replied slowly with a smile, “No matter who has what to say, we should let the person finish his words. Even if we do not believe what he said, we must let him have the freedom of speech, right?”

The ‘carriage bearer’ lowered his head, “Right!”

Turning towards Zhao Xiang Ling, Hua Wu Que continued, “For saying such words without any reason, do you have any prove?”

Zhao Xiang Ling paused for a while, and suddenly shouted, “Everyone in ‘Double Lion Escort Agency’ died a hasty death, and did not manage to retaliate even a single stroke. With the martial arts of those in ‘Double Lion Escort Agency’, although they can all be killed, but it’s difficult to make all of them unable to retaliate, right?”

After his pause, as if someone had suddenly enlightened him, his speech flowed out like a river, well thought out. Jiang Bie He’s pair of sharp eyes has already swept like lighting towards the ‘spirit’ behind him.

Hua Wu Que replied slowly, “Correct, even if a person’s martial arts is better than mine, although he can kill them, but he cannot make them all unable to retaliate.”

“In this world, I’m afraid there is no one whose martial arts are better that Sir’s, correct?” Zhao Xiang Ling asked.

Hua Wu Que replied with a slight smile, “Even if there is, there’s not many.”

Zhao Xiang Ling continued, “Then there is only one explanation for this.”

“What explanation?” Hua Wu Que queried.

Zhao Xiang Ling explained, “This must have been done by someone very familiar with the Lee Brothers of ‘Double Lion’, and they would never have thought that this person will harm his own people. They were taken so unaware, that they did not even have a chance to retaliate…”

With a snigger, he continued, “This goes without asking, that besides Jiang Yu Lang, there is no others!”

Hua Wu Que pondered, “But according to the horse groom who escaped, the killer is a mighty old man.”

Zhao Xiang Ling commented, “Although the art of disguise is wrapped in mystery in Jiang Hu, but there are quite a few who knows it. If he can masquerade as a carriage bearer, why can’t he masquerade as a mighty old man…”

He paused again before continuing, “He deliberately left the horse groom alive, to use his mouth to spread the words… why else would he laugh madly as he came out after killing the men? With his skills, no matter how the horse groom hid himself, he can never escape from his eyes and ears.”

Another pause, and he added, “Also, after the horse groom escaped, he immediately explained everything in detail, with vivid descriptions and nothing left out. How can a person who has really been through such shock speak so coherently, so… that horse groom must be his accomplice, and has long been instructed by him…”

Every time he paused, he seems to be concentrating on what the spirit behind him was saying. Jiang Bie He’s eyes shone, and he asked with a cold smile, “So who instructed you to say what you said?”

Zhao Xiang Ling stammered, “This… this is all thought out by me, I…”

As he said this, he suddenly paused again, and then continued loudly, “That’s right, I made a mistake just now, that ‘horse groom’ could be the ‘carriage bearer’ here, which is Jiang Yu Lang, and the person who struck is Jiang Bie He!”

Jiang Bie He suddenly raised his head and laughed, “I actually did not want to lower myself to your level, but you have been sprouting such nonsense, that even I cannot abide with it.”

His words were not directed at Zhao Xiang Ling, and his eyes were never on Zhao Xiang Ling, his pair of sharp eyes was pinned on that ‘spirit’!

There was a sudden ‘whish’, and not knowing when, that ‘carriage bearer’ is already behind the ‘spirit’, his body in the air, ‘Flying Eagle Preying on Rabbit’, his palms pressing down like lightning!

Everyone’s eyes were glued to Jiang Bie He, and no one paid any notice to this ‘carriage bearer’ and with his sudden attack, there is no way that he will miss the target.

Who would have expected that from the time when both his palms were extended, that ‘spirit’ seems to have calculated his move and positioning, and without even turning his head, his palm shot out with a backhand.

This move, although lightly executed, was aimed right at the loophole of that ‘carriage bearer’s’ stroke, and is the only spot he can save himself. He does not want to hurt others, only to protect himself. The carriage bearer’s legs bent and straightened, his body did a back flip, and landed on the ground far away. He stared at this ‘spirit’, as if he has really seen a ghost.

The others, who had just witnessed his skills, now saw him being fended off by someone with just a light palm stroke, and they were all greatly surprised. Even in his dreams he would not expect that a stroke that he was so sure of, would appear like kid’s play in front of others. The ‘spirit’ slowly turned around, and asked with a chuckle“Do you recognize me?”

That ‘carriage bearer’ asked hoarsely, “You… who are you?”

The ‘spirit’ replied, “You do not recognize me, but I recognize you… I’ll never forget you even if I die!” His voice was shrill and light, and actually sounded quite ghostly.

The ‘carriage bearer’ unconsciously shivered, “You… who are you really?”

“I’ve already told you, I am not human, I’m a ghost!” that ‘spirit’ replied.

As he moved forward step by step, that ‘carriage bearer’ unknowingly retreated step by step.

In the brightly lit hall, there suddenly seem to be an inexplicable sense of eeriness.

Although not a muscle on the ‘carriage bearer’s’ face moved, his eyes were panic stricken. This kind of expression matched with this kind of eyes, really sends goose bumps down one’s back.

Suddenly, the youth in green cried out, “Ah, oh no! My Master… my master… he has committed suicide!”

With this cry of despair, everyone’s eyes shifted back from that ‘spirit’… and on looking around, all of them gasped in surprise.

Tie Wu Shuang was still seated on the chair, but the long sword which was on his side is now embedded in his throat, and fresh blood has already dyed his clothes red!

Tie Wu Shuang was still seated on the chair, but the long sword which was on his side is now embedded in his throat, and fresh blood has already dyed his clothes red!

The sharp sword piercing his throat, he could not even utter a sound. With both his hands on the sword handle, it seems he wanted to stab someone, or extract the long sword, but did not have the strength to do so!

His eyes popped out in anger, but a look of shock and hatred seemed to have passed through it. He is already dead, but the look of hatred, seems to be fixed on that youth in green!

Everyone was at a loss for words, they were all stunned.

With a long sigh, Jiang Bie He said, “Tie Wu Shuang is indeed a hero, to admit

to his mistake bravely. With his death, all his sins will finally be cleansed.”

The ‘spirit’ suddenly shouted, “My as*! Tie Wu Shuang definitely did not kill himself!”

End of Chapter 47

Chapter 37

Chapter 48

Jiang Bie He retorted angrily, “If Old Master Tie did not commit suicide, don’t tell me I was the one who killed him?” He paused, and continued with a frosty smile, “If I had wanted to kill him, I would have done so long ago, why would I need to wait until now?”

That ‘spirit’ also laughed coldly, “If Old Master Tie were to commit suicide, he would have done so long ago, and definitely would not wait until now… he was unwilling to die in injustice earlier, now that the truth is about to be revealed, all the more he would not die.”

Jiang Bie He raised his voice, “If Old Master Tie did not commit suicide, who else can kill him without him even having a chance to retaliate! Old Master Tie died a clean death; do you want his reputation to be muddied even after his death?”

That ‘spirit’ also raised his voice, “This is just like what Master Zhao said earlier, if it’s a direct clash, naturally no one would be able to kill Tie Wu Shuang without him retaliating, but if the person secretly…”

Jiang Bie He shouted, “Would I, Jiang Bie He need to attack him in secret?”

With an icy smile, the ‘spirit’ replied, “That naturally would not be you, you yourself know that Tie Wu Shuang is already on his guard against you, even if you were to attack him secretly, you can never succeed!”

Jiang Bie He continued, “If it is not me, don’t tell me it is Master Hua?”

That ‘spirit’ replied, “I’ve already said so earlier, the person must be someone very close to Tie Wu Shuang, and Tie Wu Shuang would never expect him to strike, which is why he was killed!”

The youth in green suddenly shouted, “Who killed my Master, I will have it out with him!”

The ‘spirit’ replied coldly, “The one who killed your teacher, is you!”

The youth in green stumbled, before shouting in anger, “My as*, I am indebted to my Master, how can I kill him. You… you are mad?”

“Since you know that you are indebted to your Master, you should repay him well, but you have heartlessly collaborated with Jiang secretly! Now that you realize that the truth is about to be out, you stabbed your Master’s throat while everyone did not notice you. You think that with Tie Wu Shuang’s death, there would be no witness to this matter, but you forget, I am still here!”

The youth in green replied, “Do you have proof?”

The ‘spirit’ replied, “Others may not be able to produce the evidence, but I can. I witnessed with my own eyes that you are the one who put the poison in the wine the other day to harm Zhao Quan Hai, Escort Zhao!

The youth in green has already started shaking, but he still shouted, “My as*! That day, my Master and I invited Escort Zhao to make peace with ‘San Xiang Joined Escort’, why would I poison the wine to harm Escort Zhao.”

The ‘spirit’ replied, “Because you were instructed by Jiang Yu Lang, not only must the peace talk not succeed, but the plan must smear your Master’s reputation, this evil plan is indeed ‘killing three birds with one stone’!”

The youth in green cried out in anger, “My as*! Your… your words, no one would believe it!”

The ‘spirit’ laughed coldly, “You still deny it? I saw it with my own eyes, and

heard with my own ears you and Jiang Yu Lang discussing your evil plot in the kitchen!”

The youth in green roared, “How could you have seen…. You malign me, I’ll have it out with you!”

He ran forward with a mad howl, when the ‘spirit’ suddenly removed the bamboo hat on his head, and with a weird smile, chuckled, “Take a look again who I am?”

Under the light, his face was full of dirt, his hair in disarray, at a glace he really looked like a living ghost.

The youth in green halted, took three steps back, and stammered, “You… you…”

That ‘spirit’ bit out each word slowly, “Let me tell you, I am the ghost of the person you and Jiang Yu Lang killed the other day, and I want your life even if I am a ghost!”

He has not finished his sentence, and the youth in green has already started screaming madly, “Ghost… ghost… there really is a ghost!”

As he screamed, he retreated, and finally bounded out like a mad man.

Suddenly, the flash of a sword!

The youth in green has not even reached the door, when he has already collapsed, a sword piercing in from the back of his neck, protruding out from his throat, and he was embedded on the ground!

This youth in green did not even manage to utter a scream, and he has already died on the spot! But this time everyone saw, the sword was thrown out by Jiang Bie He!

Without any change in his expression, Jiang Bie He said slowly, This person has already gone mad, if we let him dash out like that, I'm afraid he may hurt others, therefore I can only kill him."

The 'spirit' called out, "Jiang Bie He, you silenced him, and yet want to wax lyrical about yourself, Heaven would really not tolerate this!"

With a small smile, Jiang Bie He replied, "You do not even dare to let others see your real face, who would believe you!"

These words have really struck this 'spirit's' sore spot… Xiao Yu'er paused for a while, before continuing loudly, "As long as I speak the truth, does it matter if I do not show my face?"

Jiang Bie He asked, "Everyone please think, if what he said is true, why would he not fare to show his true face?"

Xiao Yu'er looked around, and saw that everyone's eyes were fixed on his face, and in every pair of eyes were looks of doubts.

Jiang Bie He continued slowly, "This evasiveness, rumor mongering, we do not know what he has up his sleeves." As he spoke, he was studying the expression on everyone's face. He suddenly turned to face Hua Wu Que, and asked quietly, "Master Hua took upon yourself to look after the affairs of the world, don't you want to know their background?"

Hua Wu Que replied, "Their?"

Jiang Bie He added, "Besides him, there is that 'carriage bearer' as well, I would like to see, if he is really my son Yu Lang as he said."

In the chaos, most of the people had forgotten about the 'carriage bearer' incident, and only remembered it now that he reminded them. However, looking around, not only is that 'carriage bearer' gone, the other carriage bearers and the two carriages that were carrying the Duan family were gone, and no one knows when they left.

Xiao Yu’er was secretly stamping his foot, he may be extremely smart, but he lacks the experience. He was not attentive enough, and this negligence is fatal.

Jiang Bie He shouted in excited fury, “That ‘carriage bearer’ is gone? When did he leave?”

Luo Jiu, who witnessed the happenings from the side the entire time, suddenly spoke up, “Master Duan was not feeling too well, and was overwrought. Most likely he could not take this kind of excitement any more, and ordered them to carry him back just now.”

Luo San added with a chuckle, “When a person is too fat, he really cannot get overly excited, or he might get a stroke. My brother and I have the same problem.”

Jiang Bie He paused, and replied, “Since Brother saw it, you should have retained that ‘carriage bearer’. If this matter is not cleared up, I will have to bear with the suspicions!”

Xiao Yu’er could not tolerate any further and scolded, “You wily old fox, judging by skills of pretension, you are really number one in the world.”

Jiang Bie He smiled coolly, “Who knows if that ‘carriage bearer’ was not your accomplice, to slander me? If not, why would you let him escape so easily?” He actually turned the tables, and his explanations seem plausible. Although not everyone may be on his side, but at least they no longer believe Xiao Yu’er’s words.

Xiao Yu’er was both angry and anxious; he now knows that Jiang Bie He is really not an easy person to deal with. With just a few words, he managed to change the situation. Without even moving a finger, he has forced Xiao Yu’er into a corner!

The front and back of this hall has fourteen windows, three doors; each window is seven feet high, three feet wide, so a man can easily exit from there no matter how large they are, and the exits lead into all directions. Although the

hall is spacious, but the furthest of the window is only two, three feet away from where Xiao Yu'er stood. With his skills, he can easily slip out.

But Xiao Yu'er could not leave, because Hua Wu Que's eyes were pinned on him right now.

Jiang Bie He commented slowly, That 'carriage bearer' might have slipped away, but I'm afraid you will not be able to sneak off. Since you insist on not revealing your real face, have you done something shameless?"

Xiao Yi'er eyeballs kept rolling, but he could not think of any ideas.

Hua Wu Que suddenly called out, "If Friend does not wish to make the first move, I might have to do it on your behalf."

Xiao Yu'er scolded loudly, "Hua Wu Que, I've always thought that you're a smart man, who knows that you are actually being made use of like a dog, that even I feel ashamed for you."

Hua Wu Que remained calm and only smiled, "If you're thinking of provoking me, I'm afraid it is useless."

Jiang Bie He said with a laugh, "Master Hua may be young, but his self control is excellent, to want him to be angry, unless…"

Xiao Yu Er interrupted loudly, "To want him to be angry, unless Tie Xinlan is snatched away, right?"

Hua Wu Que's expression really changed a little, before adding quietly, "This has nothing to do with her, it is best that you do not to mention her name."

"Tie Xinlan does not belong to you, what right do you have to forbid others to mention her name!" Xiao Yu'er scoffed.

And without knowing why, Xiao Yu'er suddenly felt a rush of hot blood to his

head. He is no longer afraid, his intention is to provoke Hua Wu Que, his intention is to let Hua Wu Que disgrace himself. He knows clearly that he is not Hua Wu Que's match, but his intention is to fight it out with him! So that regardless of winning or losing, dying or living, at least he can expel the rush of hot blood! Or else he might just expire from the heat!

He thought that he is a very, very smart person, not only does he understand others well, he understand himself well too. He knows that he is not as skilled as Hua Wu Que, so he can only tolerate.

If there were no pressure from others, if there were no trigger, he may have kept tolerating like this, tolerating until the day he can defeat Hua Wu Que.

But the situation now so pressuring that he felt breathless, and 'Tie Xinlan' these three words were the trigger, the hot rush of blood that he had been fighting to suppress suddenly erupted!

Not only were his pupils gleaming, even his eyes were extraordinarily large!

Laughing madly, he continued loudly, "Hua Wu Que, to tell you the truth, Tie Xinlan already has a sweetheart! Her heart has long belonged to him, and you cannot steal it no matter how. Even if you manage to marry her, her heart will still be with the other person!" Amidst his laughter, his suddenly flew up!

At that precise moment, Hua Wu Que's palm has already shot out. If Xiao Yu'er had flown up a moment slower, his chest might already have been shattered by the blow!

The beams in the hall were about forty feet above the ground! With this one jump, Xiao Yu'er has reached the beam!

His hand clasped on the beam, his body swaying unsteadily like the dried leaves on an autumn branch. Looking up from below, it seems he might just fall down any moment!

But Jiang Bie He has already observed that this is the highest skill level of the

Lightness Skill. He body seems to be in danger of falling, but within every sway hides a murderous intent.

Besides, with this jump, he is already looking down on the rest from above. He may not have gained the first strike, but he has obtained a strategic spot. At this point, no matter who jumps up, will most likely first receive a blow on the head!

But not only did Hua Wu Que not think of attacking, he did not even cast a glance upwards. He stood there quietly; his gaze seems to be fixed on the tip of his foot.

Like an old monk, he seems to have entered into a state of silence, not concerned about anything else that is happening around him, he seemed to have fallen asleep standing there.

But Xiao Yu'er knows that at this point in time, his mind is empty. Seemingly ignoring his surroundings, but actually not a single movement can escape his eyes!

Staying at his strategic location here, he might not strike, but once Xiao Yu Er makes a move, the chance of a first strike is gone, and most likely he will be immediately killed!

The two of them, one on top and one below, one swaying and one unmoving, were in a stalemate!

Although the others could not fathom the mystery within, they could sense the heavy atmosphere. Xiao Yu'er was still swaying, but they no longer thought that he is about to fall, only this unsteady movement was making them giddy and unable to concentrate.

Even though they dare not look up, the candlelight in the hall is already swaying to Xiao Yu'er's movement, and in the end, even the whole hall seems to be swaying.

Only Jiang Bie He, he was staring at Hua Wu Que, who still looked as calm as

ever.

Hua Wu Que's stiff appearance, is like a pillar in a choppy sea, not only is he as steady as a mountain, he also gives other a sense of stability.

Others could feel a murderous intent emanating from his motionless body, slowly closing in on them, the pressing force is making them almost breathless!

Movement and immobility, was a stark contrast. Although forty feet separated them, but nothing could stand in between them!

But movement naturally cannot last as long as immobility.

Jiang Bie He naturally knew about this point, and the corners of his mouth unconsciously turned up into a smile!

All of a sudden, a swallow flew in from the window.

This is just a lone, lost swallow, who blindly flew towards any source of light, to seek some warmth.

It actually flew right into the deadlock between Xiao Yu'er and Hua Wu Que!

No one saw Xiao Yu'er or Hua Wu Que make any move, but mysteriously, this swallow was unable to fly past this invisible air of violence.

The swallow actually fell! The falling swallow brushed across Hua Wu Que's face! Right at this time Xiao Yu'er suddenly dropped down.

His whole body like a top, he was spinning continuously in mid air. Spinning as he was falling, his limbs seem to be dancing when viewed from afar.

The rest stared until they were starry eyed, and felt as if a devil with a thousand arms and a thousand hands was flying down from the sky!

However, Hua Wu Que did not even lift his head to take a look. With a shout in mid-air, Xiao Yu'er's spinning body seems to attack with eight legs and sixteen palms!

His moves were so rapid, that it seems unmatchable. It looks as if there were eight legs and sixteen palms extending from his body, aiming to attack! Aiming to attack Hua Wu Que!

The attack seems to consist of more false moves than real ones, but the fake and real moves are interchangeable, a false move turning into a real one. He only has to be struck by one blow, and he will not live.

Hua Wu Que suddenly lifted his head.

In the flickering light, his eyes shone like stars, he face seem to be smiling, his right palm waved out, moving lightly. It did not look like an attack; neither did it look like defence.

A string of 'pi piaks' were heard, and Xiao Yu'er's left palm struck his own right palm, his right palm attacked his left palm, and before the strength in his left palm was used up, it hit his right fist, before the strength in his right palm was exhausted, it hit his left palm, and his lower body was the same, the left leg kicking the right palm and the right leg kicking the left palm.

The moves planned to subdue, were all attacking him. His body spinning from the attack, he slanted a few feet before falling down with a 'bang'!

Jiang Bie He watched on, delighted, and laughed "Good! What a good move of 'Shifting Flower and Grafting to Jade'!"

Xiao Yu'er's palms were both red and swollen, his chest panting heavily, and he was unable to climb up.

Looking at him, Hua Wu Que said with a slight smile, "Your martial arts can be considered one of the best in Wulin, and the force of your internal strength is beyond my expectations, but what a pity, the stronger your internal strength,

the more you will be injured.”

As he spoke, he strolled towards Xiao Yu’er!

Suddenly, the hall was filled with the sounds of wind rushing in, and the candle lights were suddenly extinguished. There were sounds of ten over secret weapons, heading straight towards Jiang Bie He and Hua Wu Que!

This kind of secret weapon will still not be able to hurt Jiang Bie He and Hua Wu Que! The two of them lightly leaped, and avoided them.

By then, the entire hall was in chaos, and amidst the chaos, Luo Jiu could be heard shouting, “Everyone stay still, do not move about!”

Luo San also called out, “Don’t let him take the opportunity to escape!”

These were the exact words Jiang Bie He wanted to say, and when he heard them, he silently nodded to himself, thinking “These Luo Brothers are really something!”

Luo Jiu continued, “I’ll go outside to stop him from escaping, you light the fire quick!”

Following that, there was a flash of light, and torches were lighted up. Looking around, the ‘spirit’ that had difficulty getting up from the floor has indeed disappeared!

Jiang Bie He’s countenance changed and dashed to the window, but it was dark outside the window, and not a shadow to be seen.

Stamping his foot, Luo San exclaimed, “He really runs fast, let us give chase!”

Hua Wu Que replied slowly, “There are so many exits from here, even if we were to chase, we won’t know where to start!”

Furrowing his brows, Jiang Bie He asked, “Are we to just let him escape?”

Hua Wu Que continued, “Judging by the amount of strength he used during his attack, which I deflected, causing him to hit himself instead, he should not have been able to escape!”

Jiang Bie He replied bitterly, “Naturally the person who extinguished the lights just now saved him.”

Luo San interrupted, “My brother has already given chase, but I do not know if he will manage to catch up!”

“I’m afraid your brother will not be able to catch up.” Replied Hua Wu Que unhurriedly.

“Oh?”

Hua Wu Que explained, “The person who helped, was able to save someone right under my nose, naturally he would have exceptional skills. Besides, we were stalled for a moment by his secret weapon, so we will not be able to catch up with him!”

Laughing bitterly, Luo San agreed, “Right, if that person can rescue someone from right under Master Hua’s nose, my brother would of course not be able to catch up with him!”

Once the lights were extinguished, Xiao Yu’er knew his savior has arrived. Just as he was struggling to get up, someone carried him and jumped out the window! This person’s Lightness Skill is the best in Jiang Hu, with a few light jumps, they were already more than 100 feet away.

The cool breeze was blowing onto his face, but Xiao Yu’er’s limbs were throbbing with pain. He thought of Hua Wu Que’s astonishingly mysterious skill and was secretly alarmed.

At that moment, he was really hovering between life and death, and if not for

this person's helping hand, Xiao Yu'er will never escape, but who is this person?

Xiao Yu'er finally asked, "Thank you for coming to my rescue, thank you."

Without stopping, the person just replied, "Hmm". He clasped Xiao Yu'er under his rib, so Xiao Yu'er could not get a look at his face.

After a while, Xiao Yu'er said, "You know, I'm not really a good person, why do you want to save me?"

That person laughed, "You're not bad either."

Xiao Yu'er pressed on, "But I do not know you, who are you?"

"Make a guess."

Xiao Yu'er speculated, "Judging by your voice, you're not very old."

That person laughed, "But not young either."

"You naturally would not be Reverend Shen Xi."

"Oh."

Continuing, Xiao Yu'er said, "If you are Reverend Shen Xi, you won't be asking me to guess. A priest will never behave so furtively like you."

That person saved him, but yet he scolded him, because he wanted to force this person to talk so that he can guess from his voice who he is.

However, that person only smiled and said, "You're right."

Xiao Yu'er still could not make out his voice. He rolled his eyes and asked, "Could it be you're Xuan Yuan San Guang?"

The person laughed, “I’m not acquainted with that gambler.”

Xiao Yu’er could not take it any longer and raised his voice, “Are you man or ghost?”

“You will never guess who I am.” The person laughed.

Xiao Yu’er continued, “Don’t think that I really cannot move my limbs. If you don’t tell me, I will press on your pressure point, tie you up and see who you really are.”

As he spoke, his hands were already pressing down on that person’s waist.

The person replied, “Don’t you forget, I am your savior.”

“I will not appreciate what you have done!” Xiao Yu’er retorted. “Some people have ulterior motive for helping others. You might have saved me because you want to make use of me, or even to torture me further.”

The person laughed heartily, “You are really difficult to deal with. I’ve met countless people, but I’ve never really met one as difficult as you…” As he spoke, he has already flown through a window, and placed Xiao Yu’er down.

This window seemed to have been left opened the whole night, and the candles in the house were lighted up. Under the light, Xiao Yu’er finally saw this person’s face.

This person turned out to be that mysterious Luo Jiu!

Xiao Yu’er was so surprised that he stared and stammered, “It’s you… how can it be you?”

Luo Jiu laughed, “I just knew you would never be able to guess.”

“But… but I definitely heard you shouting in the hall just now.” Xiao Yu’er stuttered.

Luo Jiu smiled, “That was my brother Luo San, he faked a conversation between two people, so others thought I was still there. Naturally they would not have guessed that the one who saved you is me.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed heartily, “What a brilliant plan, that even I was tricked, so it would be impossible for the rest not to be taken in!”

“To trick Jiang Bie He, that wily old fox, is really not an easy task.” Luo Jiu smiled.

Xiao Yu’er stared at him with shining eyes, “Correct, it is really not easy to trick Jiang Bie He, but you could dupe him.”

Xiao Yu’er rolled his eyes, asking “Then, let me ask you, we’re neither kin nor friend, why did you save me?”

Luo Jiu replied, “It’s because I admire Brother, and can’t bear to see Brother being forced, I could not tolerate it any longer so I had to take the risk to save you.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed coldly, “I’m afraid it’s because you have seen my skills, and wants to make use of me.”

Luo Jiu laughed loudly, “By saying this, Brother has wrongfully blamed a good person.”

Xiao Yu’er explained, “Between humans, most would naturally try to make use of one another. You want to make use of me, but how would you know if I do not want to make use of you. If you have any requests, just say so, I will certainly not blame you.”

Luo Jiu clasped his hands and laughingly exclaimed, “Brother is indeed a person who comes straight to the point, I am full of admiration…”

He suddenly stopped laughing, stared at Xiao Yu’er and said softly, “I see that all the things that Brother has done, is solely to reveal Jiang Bie He’s mask, and I too have long since harbored the same thought, which is why…”

“Which is why you found me, right?” Xiao Yu’er continued.

Luo Jiu laughed loudly, “If Brother can join forces with me, no matter how wily Jiang Bie He is, I’m afraid there will be no place for him to hide.”

His eyes bore into Xiao Yu’er, and Xiao Yu’er was also staring back, and replied slowly, “You were obviously helping Tie Wu Shuang and Zhao Xiang Ling, but collaborated with Jiang Bie He secretly. You were obviously in cahoots with Jiang Bie He, but now you’re secretly making my acquaintance, why is that so? I don’t care what motive you really have, as long as you truly want to reveal Jiang Bie He’s mask, I will join forces with you, and I will support you until the end on this matter!”

End of Chapter 48

Chapter 38

Chapter 49

This house is actually a small loft, but exquisitely decorated, the thick carpet sewn with colored flowers, so that whoever walks on it, will never make any sound.

Only now did Xiao Yu'er have time to look around, and saw on the table there were a few strange but expensive toys, and on the wall a few exquisite decorations were hanging. Some were miniature sabers and swords made of gold, some were miniature men and horses carved from white jade, and there were also some ugly looking beasts and ghouls, pretty fairies and goddesses.

Luo Jiu asked smilingly, "What does Brother think of this house?"

Xiao Yu'er asked, "Whose house is this exactly, that you can come in at will?"

Luo Jiu smiled, "This is my humble abode."

Xiao Yu'er was startled and asked, "This is your house? You're not afraid Jiang Bie He will find his way here?"

"Brother can rest assured, this house of mine, no one else knows." Luo Jiu smiled.

Xiao Yu'er laughed, "You are really farsighted, to have a place decorated like this here…"

Luo Jiu replied, "This place might belong to my brother and me, but it is not

decorated by us.”

“Oh?” Xiao Yu’er replied.

Luo Jiu answered with a mysterious smile, “The person who decorated this place, if Brother were to see, you would surely be extremely interested.”

“Why?”

Luo Jiu laughed, “Because she is a beauty out of this world.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed loudly, “Beauty… my head will hurt like hell once I see a beauty.”

Luo Jiu grinned, “Brother may disregard beauty, but she….she is different from others. Not only is she beautiful, she gives a feeling of unexplainable mystery, and I think she will surely suite your taste.”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “Your description of her is so wonderful, that I think I would like to take a look.”

Luo Jiu pulled on a bell cord, and said with a grin, “Brother shall be able to see immediately.”

Xiao Yu’er mused, “Someone who can decorate a place like this, must be different from the rest…” His thoughts turned, and he suddenly changed the subject, asking “Is Jiang Bie He still living in that run down house?”

Luo Jiu laughed, “Although it’s still the same place, but the house is no longer run down.”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “Did he not want anyone to rebuild it for him? Why change his mind now?”

Luo Jiu explained, “But this time it is Hua Wu Que who rebuilt it for him, and

Hua Wu Que is staying there himself.”

Xiao Yu’er sighed, “To think that Hua Wu Que is being entangled with such a person, I do feel some pity for him.”

With an accompanying smile, Luo Jiu continued, “Jiang Bie He’s façade is full of justice and humanity, those who do not know the real him, will all want to be his friend. Hua Wu Que’s martial arts may be good, but no matter what, he is young and ignorant…”

Xiao Yu’er replied with a cold smile, “Hua Wu Que is the personification of intelligence, and does not reveal his abilities easily. If you think he is young and ignorant, then you are the ignorant one.”

Luo Jiu’s eyes flashed, and asked “Is it possible that Brother is well acquainted with Hua Wu Que?”

Xiao Yu’er replied with a slight smile, “Do you know of this term! The person who understands one the most, is usually his greatest enemy!”

He suddenly felt a strange sensation behind him, and turned around suddenly… someone was standing behind him like a spirit, the light, shining on her face.

This is indeed a beautiful face, her willow like brows lightly furrowed, and her large eyes, seem to be filled with fog.

Her eyes were looking at Xiao Yu’er, but do not seem to be looking at Xiao Yu’er, she is standing there alive, but looked as if she is dreaming. She turned out to be Murong Jiu.

At one glance, Xiao Yu’er can’t help but feel dumbfounded.

Luo Jiu did not seem to notice the change in his expression, and laughingly asked, “This Miss Meng, is the person who decorated this place.”

”Miss Meng?” Xiao Yu’er asked.

Luo Jiu replied, “When I saw her, she was already like that, walking around in a daze alone. I asked if she is willing to follow me back, and she nodded her head, beaming. I asked her for her name, abd she still nodded with a grin… hai, she seems to be dreaming all day long, so I called her Miss Meng (Meng = Dream).”

Of course Xiao Yu’er knows what trauma she has suffered, so much so that she is in such a state, but he only sighed lightly and said, “Miss Meng… this name is not too bad.”

Luo Jiu glanced at him, and suddenly asked, “Could it be that Brother knows her?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “You reckon she knows me?”

Murong Jiu’s eyes were hazy, like she does not know anyone.

Luo Jiu answered with a smile, “Brother of course would not know her, but… what does Brother think of her?”

Xiao Yu’er rolled his eyes and asked, “What use is there even if I said that she’s good, would you bear to give her to me?”

Luo Jiu smiled, “Now that Brother has joined forces with me, all that belongs to me, also belongs to Brother, and not to mention that my brother and I are old, lazy and fat. Brother should know that these three words ‘old, fat, lazy’, is the biggest bane to lust.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed heartily, “Since you are so generous, that I shall not stand on ceremony.”

Suddenly, laughter could be heard from the outside, and flying in through the window, is Luo San.

Luo Jiu asked, “Why are you back only now? Did that Jiang Bie He suspect me?”

Luo San smiled, “Never in his dreams would he suspect the both of us. Now that Tie Wu Shuang is dead, Zhao Xiang Ling is even more submissive and obedient. He did not verbalize it, but in his heart, he is so happy that he does not know what to do.”

Xiao Yu’er suddenly exclaimed, “The person who died is not the only witness.”

Luo Jiu and Luo San exchanged looks, and asked unanimously, “Who else is there?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Don’t you forget, there is still his son Jiang Yulang.”

Luo Jiu queried, “But why would Jiang Yulang want to expose his old man’s ploy?”

Xiao Yu’er replied with a lazy smile, “I might have a plan.”

He let out a long yawn, and slid down from the chair, collapsing on the soft and thick carpet, murmuring, “Warm sun, vast green plains… this carpet really feels like the long grass on the plains, light, soft, warm. If someone can sleep comfortably on it for three days and three nights, it would be a very satisfying thing indeed.”

Luo Jiu replied with a laugh, “Brother can go ahead and sleep; there will definitely be no one who would disturb you.”

A person who can sleep under any circumstance, this person is really very fortunate… Xiao Yu’er is without a doubt, fortunate.

He does not know how long he slept. When he woke up, the candle light has died. It looks like day, but the thick curtains covered the daylight, and the light in the house was dim. In the dimness, a pair of bright eyes was staring at him.

Xiao Yu’er lay there, not moving.

He saw Murong Jiu sitting next to him on the carpet, looking as if she just sat down, but also looking as if she had sat there since last night.

Xiao Yu’er opened his eyes and stared at her, and unconsciously went into a daze. He did not say anything, and naturally did not expect her to say anything.

Unexpectedly, Murong Jiu suddenly exclaimed, “I seem to have seen you somewhere before, I seem to know you.”

Xiao Yu’er’s heart skipped a beat, and asked, “You know me?”

“Hmm.” Murong Jiu replied.

“Do you remember where have you seen me before?” Xiao Yu’er asked.

Murong Jiu replied with a sigh, “I can’t remember… I just have this feeling.”

Xiao Yu’er smiled and rolled his eyes, asking, “Do you know who you are?”

Murong Jiu suddenly clasped her head with her hands, saying “I don’t remember either, I cannot think, once I think, my head hurts.”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Then don’t think, it’s the best that you do not think, it might be worst if you remember.”

Murong Jiu asked, “You… you know who I am in the past?”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “I can’t remember too, I only know, the way you are now, is a lot cuter than you were in the past.”

It is still summer, it was so warm in the small room that it makes one lethargic, although there was no breeze, there is a faint fragrance drifting in the air.

Having just woken up from his sleep, Xiao Yu'er is full of energy. Looking at that round, smooth, pale ankle, he is suddenly reminded of the day in the ice room when she was naked… in this hot summer evening; he suddenly has an evil thought.

He suddenly smiled and asked, "But no matter what, you still want to know what you were like in the past, right?"

Murong Jiu replied, "If I can remember the past, I would be willing even if it means immediate death."

Xiao Yu'er instructed, "Good, take off your clothes first, I'll think of a way for you."

Murong Jiu's eyes opened even bigger, and fluttered, "Take… take off my clothes."

Xiao Yu'er explained, "You must have experienced some terrible thing, and became like this. Because the incident was so terrible, it is like a devil occupying your body."

Murong Jiu lightly nodded her head, "Hmm."

Xiao Yu'er continued, "So, to remember what happened in the past, you must chase the devil in your body away, and to chase the devil, you need to remove all impediments."

Murong Jiu seems to be in a daze, constantly nodding her head.

Xiao Yu'er grinned and said, "Clothing are men's biggest impediment. I can only help you chase the devil away if you take off your clothes. This logic is very simple, you should understand, right?"

"But… but…"

Xiao Yu’er’s hand is already on her ankle, and laughed, “Listen to my words, it will never go wrong…”

He has not finished his words, when Murong Jiu suddenly jumped up, and in her hand there is already a shiny dagger, aiming straight at Xiao Yu’er’s throat.

Xiao Yu’er asked hoarsely, “What are you doing? Aren’t I helping you?”

Murong Jiu answered calmly, “Someone told me, anyone who tries to touch my body, I must use this dagger to deal with him.”

Xiao Yu’er rolled his eyes, and laughed bitterly, mumbling “No wonder the Luo Brothers dare not touch you… no wonder they want to give you to me.”

Murong Jiu asked, “What did you say?”

Xiao Yu’er asked in return, “Do you know them?”

Murong Jiu replied, “I don’t think I know them.”

Xiao Yu’er said, “But you recognize me, why do you not believe me but them?”

Murong Jiu lowered her head in thought, and the dagger fell onto the carpet.

Xiao Yu’er pulled her down and laid on top of her. Murong Jiu did not struggle at all, and Xiao Yu’er’s hands had already pulled open her front covering, mumbling to himself, “If a person almost killed you, no matter what you do to her, is not unreasonable.”

As he spoke, his hands were moving as well.

Suddenly, someone called out coldly, “No!”

Xiao Yu’er was startled, and from behind the thick curtain, a silver thread flew

out, and entwined around his hand like a venomous snake. With Xiao Yu'er's current skills, he did not move away, neither did he struggle to escape.

Following that, a skinny and small body, flew in from the window like a ghost, heading straight towards Xiao Yu'er. With a somersault, Xiao Yu'er moved out of the way, and with a flick of his hand, pulled on the silver thread.

The thin and long silver thread, although he was pulling it tightly, he could not break it.

Naturally he has already observed the skinny person, the whole body wrapped in clothes so black that it shone, and the face covered by a black mask, leaving only a pair of eyes, which is more black than white. The eyes were constantly moving, and looked like a ghostly face, indescribably furtive and scary.

Xiao Yu'er cried out hoarsely, "You're Black Spider!"

Black Spider has already launched himself, but stopped suddenly, and asked coldly, "Who are you? You actually recognize me!"

Xiao Yu'er laughed, "Brother Hei (Hei = Black), don't you recognize me?"

Black Spider's eyes shone, and exclaimed, "Ah, it's you! How did you become like this?"

Xiao Yu'er chucked, "You do not wish to let others see your real face, so why can't I change my looks?"

Black Spider's eyes gleamed, and added, "A person who has been caught by me doing such a despicable act, and yet can still laugh and talk to me… a person like that, there is no one else in the world but you."

Xiao Yu'er laughed, "This can't be considered a despicable act… as long as it's a young and strong man, it's possible that anyone can do this thing."

Black Spider stared at him in amazement. How can someone who has done something like this, still behave blamelessly, as if he really did not have any evil intentions?

Xiao Yu'er continued with a smile, "Also, this isn't much of a matter anyway, only a dirty minded person, will see it differently. A person like me would not feel terrible if I did it, neither would I feel terrible if I did not do it."

Black Spider suddenly laughed, "Nonsensical words like these, but coming out from your mouth, does not sound vile at all, what kind of reasoning is this?"

Xiao Yu'er explained, "This is because I am basically not a vile person."

Suddenly, footsteps could be heard from outside the door, and with a flash, Black Spider is behind the window again, his silver thread following him.

Xiao Yu'er stood there, but with his mouth, made snoring sounds. That person seemed to listen outside the door for a while, and after that, the footsteps faded away.

Pulling the window open, Black Spider is gone.

Outside the window, the sky seems to be setting, but it is not yet dusk. Xiao Yu'er muttered, "Day, it is still day, this Black Spider was moving about so freely, flying over roofs and walking on walls in the day, no wonder those in Jiang Hu look upon him as a weirdo."

Muring Jiu stood there in a daze, and softly asked, "You think he is weird as well?"

Xiao Yu'er turned his head, and stared at her, asking, "The person who gave you the dagger, is him? Is he not afraid of being found out?"

Murong Jiu bit on her lips, as if in thought, before slowly replying, "Although they suspect that there is someone around here frequently, but they could not catch even a glimpse of his shadow no matter how hard they tried. When he

comes, I am always alone.”

Xiao Yu’er furrowed his brows, and said “He visits you frequently, he is frequently nearby…” Could it be he is also getting suspicious about the Luo Brothers? These brothers could actually make this kind of person spend so much effort on them, what exactly are their identities?

He lowered his head and walked two rounds, and looking up suddenly, he saw that Murong Jiu has already removed her clothes, standing there naked.

In the darkness, her youthful body shone like satin, her long yet firm legs was clasped together tightly, her soft bosom, upright… A fully clad Murong Jiu appears delicate, but without her clothes, it’s as if every inch of her body holds an astonishing amount of matured charm.

This is the second time Xiao Yu’er saw her naked body, the first time in that secret ice room, and now… the room was filled with a fragrant haze, the lights dim, there seems to be a pressurizing heat in the air that makes one mad. Unconsciously, there were beads of sweat on Xiao Yu’er’s forehead, his throat dry, he asked hoarsely “What are you doing?”

Murong Jiu looked at him dazed, and walking towards him step by step, told him, “I want you to help me chase the devil in my body away.”

Xiao Yu’er raised his voice, “There’s no devil in your body, I was lying to you.”

Muring Jiu insisted, “I know there is, ‘it’ is now moving in my body, I can feel it.”

With a silly smile, her snow white teeth seems to be gleaming like a beast’s, her pale face now bright red, her eyes shining with a different light.

Xiao Yu’er unconsciously took half a step back, and shouted, “Nonsense, wear your clothes quickly, or else…”

Murong Jiu replied, “I won’t wear my clothes, I want you to help me…”

She suddenly lunged at Xiao Yu’er, her arms and legs were tightly twined around Xiao Yu’er like octopus, and the both of them fell to the floor together.

Her cold body, suddenly became scalding hot like a volcano, her lips pressed down on Xiao Yu’er’s face hardly, her chest heaving with her breath. Xiao Yu’er’s palms lightly held onto her smooth back.

He suddenly flipped up Murong Jiu’s hair, and pressed her underneath. Reaching for the carpet, he wrapped her up like a dumpling and tied her tightly.

Murong Jiu’s eyes were full of shock, and asked hoarsely, “You… why are you doing this?”

Xiao Yu’er glanced at her with a grin, picked up a piece of her clothing to inspect, reached for the pot of cold tea on the table, slowly poured it over her head, and laughingly said, “Remember, a girl should not remove her clothes so casually, she should at least wait for the boy to remove it for her. If you do this again the next time, see if I don’t smack your bottom!”

Murong Jiu was breathless after being drenched with the cold tea, and shouted, “You evil rascal, let me go…”

Xiao Yu’er paid no heed to her, and wrapping the empty teapot with her clothes, he gently placed it on her chest. Pushing open the door, ‘dong, dong, dong’ and walked down the loft.

Xiao Yu’er walked around the lower floor, and only saw two dim-witted, silly maids, but could not find Luo Jiu and Luo San.

Xiao Yu’er walked into the kitchen, washed his face, and using the remaining ingredients from yesterday, changed his face to another look before swaggering out.

This turned out to be in the middle of a busy street. Xiao Yu’er bought new clothes from a boutique from the street, had a hearty meal at the restaurant

next door and lifting his head to look at the sky, smiled “The sky is turning dark, it’s going to be time for my activities again…”

He was very pleased with himself over what he did earlier, so he is now extremely happy and energetic, and felt that if he does not do something good now, he will be letting himself down.

By now it is almost dusk, Xiao Yu’er walked to the medicinal hall and even bought Zi Jin Ting, and no one in the medicinal hall recognized him. Therefore, Xiao Yu’er went straight to the suburbs. Initially, he wanted to go to Duan He Fei’s house first, but changed his mind at the last minute because he saw many pugilists hurrying out of town, and he guessed that they are on their way to ‘Heavenly Fragrance Pond’.

‘Values talent as much as one’s life’ Tie Wushuang has been famous for decades, and in these years, there are countless people who have been helped or promoted by him.

From afar, Xiao Yu’er could see that ‘Earthly Spirited Villa’ was fully lighted, and human shadows flickering around. Such a big courtyard, but it is almost filled with people of all descriptions.

Outside the villa, were also filled with various types of carriages and horses. Xiao Yu’er hurried over, and suddenly stopped. Among the horses, there was a horse’s neigh who was exceptionally loud, and it sounded like ‘Little Fairy’s’ horse.

Could it be that ‘Little Fairy’ Zhang Qing is here as well?!

The corners of Xiao Yu’er’s mouth unconsciously turned up into a smile, “How has she been these two years? Is she still the same, wearing her fiery red dress, riding on her horse running all over the place? Whipping people all around?”

He really wanted to take a glimpse at that little woman who’s unreasonable, rude, fierce and pretty. She should have grown up a little over the past two years, but wonders if she is more sensible now.

But there are just too many people in the courtyard. Xiao Yu’er looked left and right, not only did he not see her shadow, he could not even find a girl in red.

“If she is here, she will certainly attract attention, why can’t I see her? A person like her could be recognized in an instance even if she is among ten thousand people.”

Xiao Yu’er was mumbling to himself, and could not help but feel a little disappointed.

End of Chapter 49

Chapter 39

Chapter 50

Tie Wu Shuang's coffin, was placed right in the middle of the hall. Zhao Xiang Ling stood at the side with a grief stricken look, and was actually clad in mourning clothes, looking just like a filial son.

The guests, who came to offer their condolences, were all crowded in the courtyard in groups in three to five, putting their heads and ears together, pointing about, and who knows what they were discussing.

Suddenly a commotion was heard outside the courtyard, and voices were heard commenting, "Hero Jiang is here as well!"

"Hero Jiang has always been righteous and just in his dealings, I've long known that he would come."

The people standing in the courtyard immediately separated to two sides, opening a path, all of them bowing and saluting, and there were a few who even knelt down and kowtowed.

Seven, eight burly men in blue has already accompanied Jiang Bie He in.

His brows furrowed, his expression grim, he walked stiffly to the front of Tie Wu Shuang's alter, and respectfully kowtowed trice, speaking in a somber tone, "Old Master Tie, although I treated you as an enemy while you were alive, but it was to uphold justice in Jiang Hu, and forced by circumstances. Your soul is still near, and you should know my pains. From now on, I hope that your soul in heaven can help me to uphold justice in Wulin. During Spring, Autumn and the mourning period, I will certainly represent the entire Wulin, and visit your alter,

to pray that you rest in peace.”

These words definitely sounded righteous and compassionate, and the heroes on hearing it, praised Jiang Bie He’s heroic act.

Xiao Yu’er felt nauseous instead on hearing it, and laughed coldly to himself, “This is really what you call a cat crying over a mouse, pretending to be benevolent…”

He has not finished his thought, when suddenly a cold, loud laugh was heard, “This is really what you call a cat crying over a mouse, pretending to be benevolent. Crying for that person after killing him.”

The voice is high pitched and loud, and it’s a woman’s voice.

Everyone was stunned and looked towards the direction where the voice was coming from, only to see that the person who spoke is a girl clad in black, wearing a large straw hat, with furrowed brows. Although it is a summer’s night, she was wearing a long satin black robe reaching to the floor. Even with so many people staring at her, she is unperturbed, and used her bright eyes to stare back at them.

Standing next to her is tall and good looking youth in fine clothing, but his behavior was like a girl. When others looked at him, he would be so shy that he dared not lift his head.

Xiao Yu’er recognized the two of them in a glance, and felt both surprised and elated! “She’s really here, and she actually still have that old temper of not acknowledging her family, there is no change at all.”

By then, a few people have dashed out of the crowd, pointing their finger at the lady in black and scolding, “Where did you come from, how dare you be so rude to Hero Jiang.”

The lady in black replied icily, “I will say whatever I like, who can interfere with me?”

A bearded man shouted, “Hero Jiang is magnanimous, but I will teach you a lesson on his behalf today!”

As he spoke, he has extended a palm about the size of a fan across. The lady in black laughed coolly and did not move, but the shy youth next to her suddenly raised his arm and blocked!

This burly man, after being lightly blocked by the youth, actually flew back from the impact. Everyone was speechless, and another few roared and rushed forward!

The youth raised both his fists, and made an impressive stance, full of vigor and energy. He looks like a shy maiden when he did not strike, but once he moved, he seems to have the air of an expert. Those who were able to judge his true prowess can’t help but feel amazed.

The lady in black laughed coldly, “Go ahead and fight for me, if anything happens, there’s still me!”

That youth was really obedient, his left leg took half a step forward, his right fist is already flying like lightning, and another burly man in front was flown back from the impact.

Suddenly, a voice of mild admonishment rang out, someone said, “Hold on! Stop!”

Before the words were finished, Jiang Bie He is already blocking the youth’s way with a smile, and asked “If my eyes are not blind, brother must be “Jade Faced Godly Fist” Gu Ren Yu, Second Master Gu.”

Xiao Yu’er secretly thought, “This Jiang Bie He’s evil pair of eyes are really good.”

Gu Ren Yu has not spoken, but that lady in black already held on to his hands, smiling icily, “We do not need to seek his friendship, let’s go!”

Once the word ‘go’ was spoken, two shadows were already flying over the crowd, the black satin robe flying in the wind, revealing a set of fiery red clothes underneath.

Someone in the crowd cried out hoarsely, “Could it be the Little Fairy!”

By now, the both of them had flown out the main doors of the villa, a whistle was heard, loud hoof beats followed, and a fiery red horse galloped up. The two of them rode on and galloped away like the wind.

Jiang Bie He watched their retreating back, and with a sigh, said “The descendents of a famed house has indeed remarkable skills.”

Suddenly a muddy looking begger, holding a bamboo pole in his hands, ran in.

High on the bamboo pole hung a white piece of cloth with a couplet on it, and the couplet, which was written with a flourish, read “You are alive, I feel uncomfortable. You are dead, I feel sad.”

The 12 words were written with grandiose, as if it was the work of a famed writer, but the words were extremely weird, as it did not make any sense.

Everyone were surprised, yet found it funny. However, once they saw the signature, their expression changed, and not a single person was laughing. On the top it was written “Father-in-law for eternity”. At the bottom, it was surprisingly written as “Respectfully, Dumb son-in-law Li Dazui”

Xiao Yu’er was stunned, and on careful inspection, found that the handwriting on the couplet really looks similar to Li Dazui’s. Could it be that Li Dazui had really left the ‘Valley of Evil’? When did he come out? Where is he now?

Jiang Bie He faced the begger and blocked his way, asking in a low voice, “Who asked you to send this couplet here?”

Blinking his eyes, the begger replied, “I could not take a good look at his

features in the darkness, but I felt that he seems to be rather tall and large, with a fierce expression, bearing some resemblance to the statue of the Judge (Note: should be Judge of the Underworld) in the temple."

Jiang Bie He continued, "Besides asking you to send this couplet here, what else did he say?"

After humming and hawing for a while, the begger finally replied, "He also said, although his father-in-law wants to kill him, but now that someone else has killed his father-in-law, he is still furious. He wants the person who killed his father-in-law to cleanse himself quickly. I can't help but ask him why that person should clean himself, but he just laughed loudly, turned around and left."

Jiang Bie He's expression changed, and without a word, took a big step and walked out.

However, the begger was still shouting out, "Doesn't Old Master knows what his words meant? Old Master…."

By then the rest of the people were in a tumult again, and their discussion drowned out his voice, saying "The 'Ten Evils' have gone into hiding for so many years, now that this Li Dazui has revealed himself, the others might have followed him out as well."

Someone else said, "Besides Li Dazui, there is also Er Du Gui (Devil Gambler), and these two are already difficult to handle, what shall we do now?"

Amidst the astonishing discussion, no one paid any heed to the begger, only Xiao Yu'er followed him, and saw him placing the couplet on the alter, and as he walked out, kept looking left and right. Xiao Yu'er quietly followed behind, and one in front of the other, they walked for some distance, when the man suddenly turned around with a smile, "I've just gotten three hundred taels of silver, do you intend to rob me by following me?"

Xiao Yu'er also replied with a grin, "Who are you really? Pretending to use Li Dazui's name to send this couplet, what do you have up your sleeve?"

The man's expression changed, and his eyes shone like a piercing light. The look was more intense than Jiang Bie He's, and fiercer than Er Du Gui's.

But he closed his eyes in an instant and smiled, "Someone gave me three hundred taels of silver, and I'll just deliver the couplet. Other things, I do not know."

Xiao Yu'er smilingly asked, "How did you know I was following behind you, you're obviously highly skilled, and yet you want to hide this from me?"

The man laughed loudly, "You say that I am highly skilled, if I am highly skilled I would have become a robber long ago, why would I want to be a beggar."

Xiao Yu'er raised his voice in reply, "Even if you do not want to admit it, I will force you to admit it!"

He flew forward like an arrow, extending his hand out to strike. Who would have known that the man really did not know any martial arts, once Xiao Yu'er's fist hit him, he fell instantly.

Xiao Yu'er was still afraid that he was faking it, and waited for a moment, but the man lay on the ground, unmoving. Reaching out to touch him, the man's limbs were icy cold, and there was no breathing, he had been beaten to death.

Xiao Yu'er truly did not expect that this person was really unable to take a beating, he had unintentionally killed this person, and felt very bad about it. After pausing for a while, he said with a long sigh, "Don't blame me. I accidentally killed you, so the least I can do is to bury you. Although a bad life is better than a good death, I still want your burial to be an elaborate one."

With a sigh, he carried the body of the man up and walked back to the city. After walking for only a while, he suddenly felt his neck getting wet, and there was a sour smell.

Xiao Yu'er was surprised, "How could a dead person pee?"

Furious, he used his hands to wipe his neck, and the ‘corpse’ dropped to the ground. Raising his leg for a flying kick, that ‘corpse’ suddenly flew up, and said with a laugh “I am treating you to drink my pee today, the next time I shall have to treat you to eat my stools.”

Amidst the laughter, he has moved a few feet away with a somersault, and disappeared in an instance.

This person’s Lightness Skill, is not below the likes of Jiang Bie He. By the time Xiao Yu’er gave chase, not even a shadow could be seen.

Since young, when has Xiao Yu’er ever suffered any loss? He almost expired of anger, but since he does not even know who this person is, there is no way for him to vent his frustration.

Xiao Yu’er was only angry for a short while, and he suddenly burst our laughing, “Luckily he was only playing a prank. If he wanted to kill me, I would not have lived until now. I should be happy instead of being angry.”

Laughing, he strode forward, as if he is really not angry any longer. He is indeed very open-minded when it comes to things that he cannot control.

The lamps were shining brightly along the streets; it is the liveliest time of the night.

Xiao Yu’er again bought another set of clothes to change, and strolled around to while away the time when suddenly a large carriage drove past in a flurry, almost hitting him. Xiao Yu’er unconsciously took another look.

He saw that the large carriage coming to a sudden stop outside a very large inn, and after a while, a few servants in nice, clean attire walked out from the inn and pulled open the carriage door. They stood on attention at the side, and looked as if they did not even dare to take a deep breath.

After another moment, two persons walked out of the inn, surrounded by a group of people, some bowing and some carrying lanterns. Under the light, the

person on the left could be seen to have a pale face… the build scrawny, looking as if he is so weak that a gust of wind would blow him away. However, he has a calm air around him, giving others a sense of comfort. His clothes were of a plain color, and the lines simple, but each scarf and belt was well matched, and not a flaw could be found from head to toe.

The person on the right, was tall and large, his appearance energetic, and as he looked around, his gaze was assertive, giving others a feeling that he is not one to be belittled.

This person's dressing was also quite simple, but a set of simple, ordinary set of clothes, when worn by him, does not seem simple or ordinary anymore.

One walking in front of the other, the two of them walked up to the large carriage without any flair or arrogance, but they looked as if they were slightly different from others, as if they were born to be accompanied by an entourage, born to ride in this kind of carriage.

Even when the carriage has left, Xiao Yu'er still stood there, mumbling, "Who could these two people be? To have such charisma …."

Such charisma was hard to copy and impossible to fake too.

This An Qing City, is now full of valiant heroes. In this one night, all those that Xiao Yu'er has seen were outstanding and uncommon people. What he didn't understand, is the reason for those heroes to come to An Qing, and who were they? It's obvious that some excitement was brewing in this area.

After strolling for half the day, he unconsciously found himself walking back to Luo Jiu's house.

Although night has fallen, it is still too early for the night activities to begin. After thinking for a while, Xiao Yu'er decided to go in.

He sat downstairs for quite some time, and just as Xiao Yu'er stood up to walk out, he suddenly saw Luo Jiu and Luo San running in from outside.

Luo Jiu and Luo San took two steps back when they saw him, and stared at him for a while, before Luo Jiu finally smiled in comprehension, and clasping his fists, said “Brother is really adept at the art of disguise, it seems like you can be considered the best.”

Xiao Yu’er replied with a grin, “Where have the two of you gone? You’re back really early.”

Luo Jiu smiled, “There were honored guests coming today, Jiang Bie He held a feast to welcome them and my brother and I were invited to accompany them, which is why we unconsciously came back late.”

Luo San continued, “To trouble brother to wait so long for us, please forgive us.”

Xiao Yu’er asked with a smile, “Honored guests! Who’re they?”

Luo Jiu replied, “These two people are really quite famous, they are the son-in-laws of the Murong Family of ‘Da Xiu Villa’. One of them is the descendent of the ‘Aristocratic Nangong Family’ Nangong Liu, while the other is a talent in Jiang Hu, Qin Jian, who is also the Leader of the Wu Lin of Liang Guang (Liang Guang = 2 Guangs, meaning Guang Dong and Guang Xi).”

Xiao Yu’er’s eyes shone, and commented “The son-in-laws of the Murong Family! Wonderful. Wonderful.”

Luo San continued, “To be able to marry the ladies of the Murong Family, is really the admiration of many. The abilities of these people are not bad either, take for example that Nangong Liu, although sickly, but no one dares to look upon him with contempt.”

Liu Jiu asked, “From the way brother speaks, could it be that you know them?”

Xiao Yu’er explained, “Although I do not know them, but I saw them earlier… the two of them, one has a pale face… with elegant clothes, while the other

looked smug, as if he just picked up three hundred taels of silver."

Liu Jiu laughed, "Correct, that is the two of them."

Luo San continued, "Not only the two of them, but it is heard that the other six son-in-laws of the Murong Family, will be rushing here within these two days, as well as another potential son-in-law 'Jade Faced Godly Fist' Gu Ren Yu…"

Xiao Yu'er's eyes shone again, and asked "Could it be that Gu Ren Yu is also coming with them?"

Xiao Yu'er rolled his eyes, and continued, "These people are all rushing here, do you know why?"

Luo San replied, "It is said that a lady is missing from the Murong Family, and it seems that this lady was once with Hua Wu Que, so they are all rushing here to inquire."

Clapping his hands, Xiao Yu'er laughed, "That's right, I've long guessed that they are most likely here for this matter."

Luo San queried, "Could it be that Brother knows that lady?"

Luo Jiu stared at him, and asked, "Is it possible that Brother knows the whereabouts of that lady?"

Without even taking a glance towards the direction of the loft, Xiao Yu'er replied with a stern look, "How would I know, I can't possibly hide a lady."

Luo Jiu smiled, "My feelings exactly, but…"

Xiao Yu'er replied with a grin, "It could be that she herself eloped with her lover, or she could have been drugged by someone..."

He tilted his head and thought for a while, and suddenly burst into laughter,

“This is very interesting, really extremely interesting.”

Luo Jiu joined in the laughter, and taking a glance towards the loft, asked with a smile, “Where has Brother been this half day?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “This half day I have really seen many interesting things, and many interesting people, the most interesting one is…”

Although he was made fun of, but he did not find it an embarrassment, instead he told them exactly how he had been tricked.

Luo Jiu and Luo San joined in the laughter after listening to his story, but their laughter were superficial, and the expression on their faces seems to have changed slightly.

The two of them secretly made eyes at each other, before Luo Jiu asked, “I wonder what that person looked like?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “That person looked exactly like what a good-for-nothing vagrant would look like, those whom you can see in the inns or red light districts of any city, and others would not take a second look at such people. This is also where this person is skilful, those who do not catch the attention of others, will find it exceptionally easy to commit crimes.”

Luo Jiu and Luo San exchanged looks and Luo Jiu suddenly stood up and walked into the room. Xiao Yu’er heard the sound of the drawer being opened, followed by the sounds of paper ruffling, and then, Luo Jiu waked out, holding a piece of paper so old that it has turned yellow.

Not only has this piece of paper turned yellow with age, it is also torn, but Luo Jiu seemed to treat it like a treasure, carrying it out carefully, gently placing it on the table in front of Xiao Yu’er, but yet blocked Xiao Yu’er’s line of sight with his body, as if afraid of being seen by Xiao Yu’er.

Xiao Yu’er asked with a smile, “This tattered piece of paper won’t be broken or shattered from a fall, and no one’s snatching it away, why do you treat it like a

treasure?”

Luo Jiu replied with a straight face, “This piece of paper may be tattered, but in the eyes of some in Wu Lin, it is indeed a priceless treasure. If Brother thinks that no one would snatch it, you are very wrong.”

Xiao Yu’er answered with a grin, “Oh, does that mean that, this paper is again some sort of ‘treasure map’? If it’s really a ‘treasure map’, I don’t even want to take a look at it.”

Luo San smiled, “There are really quite a few people in Jiang Hu who were tricked by ‘treasure maps’, out of ten thousand ‘treasure maps’, I’m afraid not one will show a real treasure. From what Brother has said, could it be you have been tricked before.”

Luo Jiu interjected, “But this drawing is definitely not the same…”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “You took this piece of paper out with the intention of letting me see it, then why do you block my view.”

Luo Jiu smiled, “Although my Brother and I normally treat this drawing as a treasure, but Brother is now one of us, which is why I am willing to take it out, but… I hope Brother would promise to keep it a secret after you have seen it.”

Xiao Yu’er can’t help but feel curious, but deliberately stood up and walked to the side, and said with a smile, “If you do not trust me, than it does not matter if I do not see it.”

Luo San replied with a hearty laugh, “If my brother and I could not trust Brother, who else can we trust…”

Xiao Yu’er interrupted, “You tell me first what is drawn on that piece of paper, before I decide if I want to take a look at it.”

Luo Jiu lowered his voice and said, “On this paper, is it the drawings of the ‘Ten Evils’ real looks.”

Xiao Yu'er eyes gleamed, but he deliberately smiled and asked, "I have never seen the Ten Evils, but hearing the name, I would imagine them to look ugly. What's so interesting about it, why would others want to snatch it?"

Luo Jiu sighed, "Brother is not aware, this 'Ten Evils', each has a skill that is unfathomed even by Gods or ghosts, each has committed all kinds of evil, those in Jiang Hu who have been harmed by them, are countless…"

Luo San continued, "But these ten people, not only do they move from place to place, but they are all skilled in the art of disguise. Some who have became homeless and lost their family, who were at their wit's ends after being harmed by them, have not even seen their real face, so how could they seek revenge, how could they vent their frustration."

Xiao Yu'er laughed, "I understand now, others want to snatch this drawing away, so that they can take a look as to how they look like, so that they can seek revenge."

Clasping his palms, Luo San replied, "Exactly."

Xiao Yu'er asked, "But they have no enmity with me, so why do you want me to see…"

Luo Jiu smiled mysteriously, "Brother really has no enmity with them?"

Xiao Yu'er rolled his eyes, and asked "Do you mean to say that the rascal who pretended to be dead, is one of the 'Ten Evils'?"

Luo Jiu did not reply, but moved his body away, pointing to the picture of a person on the paper, and calmly said "Why don't Brother come take a look, if that rascal is him?"

On that yellowed paper, were portraits of ten people, the brush strokes were exquisite, lifelike. One person wore clothes white as snow, with a pale face, and is precisely 'Bloody Hands' Du Sha.

Next to Du Sha, with a laughing pose, is naturally ‘Dagger in Laughter, Little Monk’ Ha Ha’er. A little further is the one with a charming smile ‘Charm to Death without Compensating with Life’ Xiao Mimi, and holding a human’s head in the hand, with a miserable expression is ‘Does not eat human head’ Li Da Zui…

And there is someone who seems to be floating amidst some fog, and without any question, that is obviously ‘Half Human, Half Ghost’ Yin Jiu You. Diagonal to Yin Jiu You, ther is someone with two heads, the left head is of a lady, the right head is of a handsome man, this would naturally be ‘Neither man nor woman’ Du Jiao Jiao.

Xiao Yu’er has seen all these people countless times, and saw that not only do the drawings look like them, even their expressions were well captured.

Xiao Yu’er can’t help but secretly admire the drawings, and wondered, “Who could have drawn this painting? Unless this person is very familiar with them, how else could he capture their expressions?”

Soon, he noticed the picture of ‘Er Du Gui’ Xuanyuan Sanguang, who was dressed in tattered clothes, with a haughty expression, and next to him was someone with a face full of fine beard, the expression murderous, and the eyes looked like those of a hungry wolf or wicked tiger, waiting for prey. In his hand held a large knife, and the knife was dripping with fresh blood.

Xiao Yu’er deliberately asked, “This person looked scary, I wonder who he is.”

Luo Jiu replied, “He is ‘Mad Lion’ Tie Zhan.”

Luo San continued, “Although this person looks fierce and wicked, but in fact he is the kindest person among the ‘Ten Evils’. If one does not annoy him, he will never bother that person.”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “But what if someone annoyed him.”

Luo San replied, “The person who annoyed him, must really be unlucky for

three life times, for he will not cease until he has killed the person's and his family."

Xiao Yu'er stopped smiling and commented, "If you consider this sort person kind, then I must be a saint."

Although he was conversing with others, but in his heart, he can't help but think of Tie Xinlan, and thought of that mouth that seems to pout and smile, thought of the eyes that seems troubled and angry…

He felt a stab of pain in his heart, and hurriedly asked loudly, "Who are these two?"

"These two" are obviously twin brothers, both of them looked skinny yet robust… both their cheekbones jutting out, one of them holding an abacus in his hand, the other one holding an account ledger. Although they are dressed to look like some wealthy merchants, but their looks and expression looked like a pair of evil ghosts who had just escaped from Hell.

Luo Jiu smiled, "These are twin brothers, who appeared weak but fierce, fierce but weak. Although the 'Ten Evils' are considered 'Ten', there are actually eleven people, because all in Jiang Hu considered the two of them as one person."

Luo San continued, "These brothers are surnamed Ouyang, one is nicknamed 'Desperately taking advantage', the other nicknamed 'Rather die than suffer a loss'. Brother should know what kind of people they are when you hear such nicknames."

Luo Jiu commented, "Although the Ten Evils are famous, but they are mostly poor, only these two brothers, their wealth can be compared to that of a country…"

Luo San pointed to another person on the painting and said, "But this person's character is totally different from the others, this person has always liked to harm others, and wants others to be tricked, without caring if he himself benefits from anything."

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “This kind of person is really rare, he…”

Suddenly losing his voice, he exclaimed. “Ah! That’s right, he really is that rascal who was faking death!”

The people on the painting, some were sitting, some were standing, and only this person is squatting at the bottom corner of the painting, one hand scratching his toes, the other hand placed at his sniffing nose.

The others on the painting more or less have an imposing air, only this person appeared shifty, with a grinning face, and looking like an absolute rascal.

Luo Jiu’s eyes shone as he asked, “Has Brother taken a good look?”

Xiao Yu’er replied loudly, “That’s right, it’s him! Although he also disguised himself, but the expression, the smile… will never go wrong.”

Luo San sighed, “When I heard Brother describing what that rascal had done, I’ve already guessed it was him.”

Luo Jiu said, “This person is surnamed Bai, and called himself Bai Kaixin (Kaixin = happy).”

Luo San added, “Those in Jiang Hu gave him another nickname, called ‘Harm others without benefit to oneself’ Bai Kaixin.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “He is indeed worthy of his reputation, pretending to be someone else to send a couplet, pretending to be dead, these are really acts that ‘harm others without benefit to oneself’. Although others were tricked by him, but he did not gain anything from it either.”

Xiao Yu’er suddenly asked, “You and your brother immediately thought of him when you heard my story, could it be you are well acquainted with him?”

Luo Jiu rubbed his chin, before replying with a smile, “My brother and I may

not be talented, but we would not lower ourselves to be with such people."

Xiao Yu'er looked at him amd asked with a beam, "I think you and your brother are very familiar with him, and very familiar with the 'Ten Evils' as well. How else would you know his ways so well, and how else would this painting be in your hands?"

Luo Jiu's expression changed, but Luo San had already had a long laugh before explaining, "I shall not hide this from Brother, my brother and I are arch enemies with the 'Ten Evils', our parents were killed by them."

Xiao Yu'er asked in surprise, "Oh… is that real?"

Luo Jiu continued, "To take revenge, my brother and I used all means and methods to obtain this drawing, and by all means possible, searched for information about their character and behaviour."

Xiao Yu'er queried, "If that is the case, why don't you let everyone else take a look at the painting, so that others will look for them. Why do you help them keep it a secret instead!"

Luo Jiu replied with hatred, "To seek revenge, my brother and I have put in so much effort, and everyday we imagine the euphoria we would feel when we kill our enemies, so why would we want them to die at the hands of others!"

After thinking for a while, Xiao Yu'er nodded, "Right, that sounds reasonable… very reasonable."

Luo Jiu carefully rolled up that piece of paper again, and said "If Brother encounters that Bai Kaixin the next time, you must help us brothers detain him."

Luo San continued, "If Brother can find out his whereabouts, my brother and I will be very grateful."

Xiao Yu'er's eyes flickered, before answering with a smike, "Fine, Bai Kaixin is yours, but Jiang Yulang is mine. You and your brother must keep him for me, and

it’s best that others do not even touch a finger of his.”

Luo Jiu smiled, “Naturally.”

Xiao Yu’er commented, “The old man’s giving a feast, the son will naturally be there, you must have met him today.”

Luo Jiu replied, “That’s the weird thing, Jiang Bie He giving a feast, but Jiang Yulang was not present.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed heartily, “That little thief does not even dare to show his face now? Or else with the chance of meeting someone like Nangong Liu, his daddy would be hurrying him to become friends with him.”

Luo Jiu immediately joined in the laughter, “That little thief must have been scared out of his wits by Brother.”

Xiao Yu’er glanced up towards the loft, before saying with a smile, “To see someone who has been beaten to death by oneself, and to appear resurrected infront on him, that person will definitely be frightened senseless, unable to face anyone else, regardless of whom he might be.”

There is of course a hidden meaning to his words, but the Luo brothers would never have guessed that it would have anything to do with the girl in the loft, and would never expect that this ‘senseless’ girl would be Murong Jiu.

The two of them saw Xiao Yu’er’s eyes looking towards the loft, so they stood up together, laughed loudly and said, “It’s getting late, Brother would want to rest.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed loudly, “That’s right, it is time to rest.”

He stood up, and walked outside, laughing.

End of Chapter 50

Chapter 40

Chapter 51

The Luo brothers were stunned, and pointing towards the loft, asked “Is Brother not sleeping upstairs tonight?”

Xiao Yu’er walked out the door, turned his head around and smiled, “There’s a spider up there, I can’t sleep there, it’s better that I come back tomorrow… if there’s news of Jiang Yulang, you must not forget to find out more for me.”

Luo Jiu stared at his retreating back, and mumbled “Spider? Spider… you think this guy has a problem?”

Luo San replied, “He does have an irritating problem. He is just feigning ignorance, we must be careful not to have our plan backfire, and instead of making use of him, end up being made use of instead.”

Luo Jiu chuckled, “This guy may be devious, but how does he fare when compared to us?”

Luo San laughed loudly, “There may be many bad people in the world, but who can be compared to us?”

By then, it is already very late into the night. The Luo brother’s residence was already quite remote, and by now there is not a trace of anyone. Xiao Yu’er walked two rounds along the street.

He saw that the nearby surroundings were mostly single story houses, and besides that little loft, there was only a building about fifty to sixty feet towards the east, which were taller then the other houses.

Xiao Yu’er strolled over, turned the corner, and walked another round. He waited until the lamps in this building were all extinguished before lightly vaulting over, and crouched down in a dark area behind the ridge.

In the sky, the moon was bright and the stars were few. On the ground, there were no sounds or noises. Looking afar, the window of that loft was half opened, and the lamp dim. Murong Jiu was sitting near the lamp, her hand cradling her cheek, lost in thought.

Suddenly, the faint sound of clothes rustling in the wind was heard, and a person clad in black was climbing over the roofs like a ghost. He bent over the roof, and was gazing towards the direction of the loft.

Xiao Yu’er secretly gloated, “Just as I expected, he’s really here.”

Murong Jiu was lost in thought over there, that person was also lost in his stare over here, and did not realize that there was someone at the side looking at him.

His pair of dark eyes gleamed in the night, and besides this pair of eyes, the rest of his body was in darkness.

This person is Black Spider.

His usually lively eyes, now looked as if it was covered by fog… a look of melancholy. He stared in a daze, lying quietly under the starlight, not caring that the dew is soaking through his clothes.

Xiao Yu’er suddenly chortled, and said “Such stars such night, for whom are you standing in the night in the wind and dew?”

Before he has finished speaking, Black Spider is already in front of him, quietly chiding, “Who?”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “Who else but me?”

The look in Black Spider's eyes changed as fast as lightning, and he finally relaxed and said, "You again!"

Xiao Yu'er smiled, "It's less than fifty feet between the two places, why don't you fly over?"

Black Spider laughed, "I… How can it be that I am here because of her?"

Although his face was hidden, his voice obviously sounded awkward.

However, Xiao Yu'er did not divulge his real intentions, instead he smiled and asked, "If you're not here for her, then for who?"

Black Spider replied, "Naturally it's for the two Luo Brothers."

Xiao Yu'er smiled, "Oh, is that so?"

Black Spider continued, "The background of these two brothers is a mystery, their actions odd. I have been secretly observing them for two… three months, for the purpose of revealing their secret."

Xiao Yu'er asked, "The matters of the Luo brothers, is it worth you looking into it?"

Black Spider replied with an icy smile, "In Jiang Hu, it doesn't matter if one is from the orthodox or unorthodox sect, it doesn't matter if one is good or evil, because all are targets that the Luo brothers want to harm. These two actually wants to instigate a bloodbath among all those in Wu Lin, so that they can reap the benefits. So far, there have been countless people who died under their hands."

Xiao Yu'er exclaimed, "Oh!"

Black Spider continued, "Do you know about the clash between Bo Hai gang

and Huang Hai gang two months ago? The fight between Lao Shan gang and Kuai Dao sect a month ago? These two bloody battles were all instigated by the two brothers!”

Xiao Yu’er queried, “If that is the case, why have you not struck?”

Black Spider explained, “Firstly it’s because I could not get hold of any evidence, secondly all those whom they have harmed are rogues, thirdly I thought about exposing their background before I strike.”

“Who do you reckon them to be?” Xiao Yu’er asked.

Black Spider replied, “I initially suspected them to be one of the ‘Ten Evils’, later… after investigation, I realize that these two people were not among the ‘Ten Evils’.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “Maybe not… but… in that case, you are not here because of that lady.”

Black Spider was silent for a moment, before replying “Maybe not completely unrelated.”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “Do you know who she is?”

Black Spider sighed, “I only know that she is a pitiable girl, who has unluckily fallen into the hands of this evil person.”

“Which is why you want to protect her?”

“I will protect all pitiable people in the world.”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “If that is the case, why don’t you save her and take her away?”

Black Spider’s bright eyes suddenly dimmed, and answered with a big laugh,

“Do you know what kind of life I am leading?... I am constantly on the move, with no definite place to stay. I have a meal without knowing where my next meal will be, I live past tonight but do not know if I will live past tomorrow. I have no home when I am alive, and I won’t even know where I will be when I die.”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “With your skills, you could have lived a comfortable life, right?”

Black Spider replied, “But I have already chosen this way of life, so I can only live it, even if I wish to change now, it is impossible… even if I do not wish to live like this now, others will not allow…” Clenching his fists, he continued hoarsely, “She must never live a life like this!”

Xiao Yu’er replied with a faint smile, “As long as you like her, and she likes you, no matter how difficult life is, it will still be a happy one.”

Black Spider’s eyes reflected a sad gleam, and he laughed wretchedly “Who said I like her! A person like me, is not fit to like anyone! And can’t…”

Xiao Yu’er sighed, “I initially thought that even your blood is cold, but now… now then I realize that you’re actually an emotional person!”

Black Spider stood up suddenly, and admonished “You’re so young, what do you know. Don’t talk about it anymore.”

Xiao Yu’er grinned “You don’t have to be so fierce even if one has uncovered what is in your heart.”

Black Spider stared at him for a moment before suddenly bursting into laughter, and holding his hand, said “I have again made a friend recently. I’ve bought two flasks of wine today and cooked a pot of meat, what do you say about me inviting you as well for a meal?”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “Fine, a person who can be your friend, must be very interesting.”

After flying for a while, Xiao Yu’er was still lagging behind Black Spider.

Black Spider turned his head around and laughed, “Your skills have improved greatly recently.”

Xiao Yu’er smiled in reply, “I’m flattered.”

Black Spider continued, “The other friend I made, is also well versed in academics and martial arts, and very knowledgeable, you will be very happy to see him as well.”

Xiao Yu’er queried, “Oh! What’s his name.”

Black Spider smiled, “Talented people are not necessary famous. He’s surnamed Gu, called Yue Yan, and although he is an unknown, be he is more than a million times better than those famous people.”

As they spoke, they have already left the city, and in front of them was a forest, with a dim light flickering among the trees. As they walked nearer, they could see an abandoned ancestral hall.

The light came from the abandoned ancestral hall.

Upon reaching, they caught a whiff of the aroma of cooked meat.

Xiao Yu’er commented, “It seems like besides being accomplished in academics and martial arts, your friend is also a very good chef.”

Black Spider replied, “The wanderers in Jiang Hu, besides the occasional good meal, what other enjoyment can we have?”

The two of them entered the woods, and saw a blazing fire in the ancestral hall, a large metal pot hung over the fire, the fragrant meat bubbling in the pot. At the side of the pot, bowls and chopsticks were laid out, and the bowl was filled with wine, but there was no one in sight.

Black Spider glanced around, and shouted “Brother Gu… Brother Gu, I’ve brought you a friend, come out quickly to see us.”

Xiao yu’er laughed, “Seems like your habit of being a Big Brother just cannot be changed.”

Black Spider called out for quite some time, but there was still no response. He walked out to look around, and could not find anyone, so he just sat down and laughed, “This Brother Gu of mine has a sharp butt, he can never sit still. I don’t even know where he is gallivanting now, so we don’t have to stand on ceremony either, let’s eat first.”

Xiao Yu’er has already picked up his chopsticks, and smiled “Suits me fine.”

However, he only ate a piece of meat, and put his chopsticks down, his mouth not moving, and it seems like he has not swallowed the meat. On the other hand, Black Spider had already eaten seven… eight pieces.

By the tenth piece, he washed the meat down with a large mouthful of wine. Only then did he lift his head to look at Xiao Yu’er, and said with a wide grin “The meat is fresh and tender, and it’s really delicious, why aren’t you moving your chopsticks?”

Instead, Xiao Yu’er spit the meat out from his mouth onto the floor, saying “This meat can’t be eaten.”

Black Spider’s face darkened, and asked “Why can’t it be eaten? The meat is not stolen.”

Xiao Yu’er suddenly laughed and asked “Do you know what meat is this?”

Black Spider let out a gasp, and immediately spit out the meat that he had just put in his mouth, and asked hoarsely, “What did you say?”

Xiao Yu’er continued, “To tell you the truth, I grew up in the “Valley of Evil”. If

this meat is not carved from a freshly dead body, I will eat my nose."

He was waiting for Black Spider to puke out the meat he had eaten, but instead Black Spider laughed loudly, "Going by what you said, could it be Li Dazui who cooked this meat?"

"Maybe it is him."

Black Spider mused, "Hmm, that's right, Gu Yue Yan… could it be that this 'Gu Yue Yan' means 'nonsense'. He has told me earlier that he is 'nonsense' but I only thought of it now." (The Chinese characters Gu and Yue joined together form the word Hu. Yan means language. Hu Yan means nonsense.)

Xiao Yu'er asked "You don't feel nauseous!"

Black Spider smiled, "Since I've already eaten it, there's no use in puking it out."

"You can still laugh?"

Black Spider laughed, "To be able to make friends with a person like Li Da Zui, is indeed an interesting experience. Regardless of whether he is good or evil, he is quite a character, and there are not many like him in Jiang Hu."

Xiao Yu'er can't help but secretly admire him! "This person is really frank, not like those nauseating pretentious people at all."

He said out loud, "But this 'Mr Nonsense' may not necessary be Li Da Zui."

"Who else could he be if not Li Da Zui?"

Xiao Yu'er continued, "I know of someone else, who pretended to be Li Da Zui. Maybe he wanted you to eat human flesh, and then throw up all over the floor. As long as you are tricked, he will be happy…"

As he spoke, he suddenly paused, and whispered “Maybe he not only wants you to throw up, maybe he has another evil plan.”

With a whoosh, Black Spider pulled his mask down and asked icily “The friend outside! Since you are here, why don’t you come in?”

Xiao Yu’er’s ears may be sharp, but Black Spider’s ears are not bad either! He has not finished his words, when a body flew into the ancestral hall from outside.

In the flickering firelight, this person has a slender build, with clothes even redder than fire, and her gleaming eyes was filled with fury. This person turned out to be Little Fairy.

Little Fairy actually came to this abandoned ancestral hall in the middle of the night, and although Xiao Yu’er was surprised, he maintained a calm composure and sat there.

Black Spider obviously did not expect the intruder to be a young, pretty lady, and was shocked still, but Little Fairy did not even pay any heed to the both of them.

She waved the sword in her hand. Using the slim tip of the sword to upturn the heavy pot, she spilled the meat in the pot all over the floor, and saw a flash of gold. There’s actually a lady’s gold hairpiece in the pot.

Little Fairy immediately screamed, and another person ran in from outside. This person is Yan Ren Yu. Little Fairy collapsed into him, and cried out, “Wan’er’s hairpiece… Wan’er’s hairpiece is really in the pot.”

Yan Ren Yu’s large eyes stared angrily at Xiao Yu’er and roared, “Tell me! What is in this pot?”

Xiao Yu’er has really never seen this effeminate youth so fierce before, and knows that he must be really furious, and understand that the person cooked in the pot must be related to them.

However, Xiao Yu’er could not figure out how they managed to find their way here, and how they knew there is a gold hairpiece in the pot. He felt suspicious, yet asked with a smile, “What do you say is in the pot?”

Yan Ren Yu’s face reddened, but could not utter a word.

They heard someone speak slowly, “There are so many types of meat in the world, why must the two of you eat human meat. Eating the same species, don’t tell me the two of you are worst than beasts?”

This person maybe scolding them, but not a single vulgarity was spoken, and his tone was calm, as if he is chatting with them.

Following the voice, two people walked over slowly, and although there was wrath in their eyes, their expression was composed, and they are Nangong Liu and Qin Jian.

Xiao Yu’er was still grinning and asked, “You say that we are eating human flesh, but how did you know, unless someone told on us?”

Before Qin Jian could reply, Little Fairy had rushed forward, stamping her foot and scolding “Naturally someone will squeal on you. Who can abide you doing something that even heaven would not tolerate.”

Nangong Liu said calmly, “A smart and adorable girl like Wan’er, men should treasure her, but the two of you cooked and ate her, isn’t it a vulgar thing to do.”

Little Fiary can’t help but shout, “Who do you bother saying so much to people like that…”

Nangong Liu maintained his composure and asked, “Now that things have come to this, what does the two of you have to say.”

Black Spider suddenly stood up and said loudly, “I have something to say…”

Qin Jian's eyes flashed, and asked "Are you the fabled Black Spider in Jiang Hu."

"I am!"

Qin Jian furrowed his brows and said, "Seems like the rumors in Jiang Hu cannot be believed. I did not expect Black Spider to be someone like you."

Black Spider shouted, "Rumors in Jiang Hu may not be believed, but carried tales should not be heard all the more. Let me ask you, unless the person cooked the meat personally, how else would he know that the hairpiece is in the pot."

Qin Jian and Nangong Liu glanced at each other, and Nangong Liu calmly replied, "You mean, this could be a trap set by others shift the blame onto you?"

"Naturally"

Nangong Liu slowly nodded his head, "This sounds reasonable."

Little Fairy stamped her foot and asked "Second Brother, you can let them go, but I cannot. Is it not possible that someone secretly saw them killing and cooking the meat, and then told on them."

Nangong Liu agreed, "That is also a possibility."

Little Fairy shouted, "If Wan'er could be killed and eaten by them, then Ninth (Jiu) Sister naturally would be… would be…" She suddenly chocked on her words, unable to continue.

Qin Jian's shining eyes bored down on Xiao Yu'er and Black Spider, and spoke with a grave voice, "This matter may be uncertain, but if the two of you cannot produce any evidence of your innocence, I'm afraid I will have to ask the two of you to return with me today."

Black Spider laughed coldly, "You're sure polite in your speech. I don't mind

going back with you, but you must also show me proof, on what basis do you want me to go with you."

Little Fairy yelled, "Isn't this gold hairpiece proof! You're still denying it?"

Black Spider stared at her, and he has not begun speaking when Xiao Yu'er suddenly chuckled, "Since when have I denied it."

Little Fiary's sword was drawn in preparation to strike, and on hearing what he said, was shocked still, and asked "You admit it?"

Xiao Yu'er grinned at Little Fairy, "The Sister Jiu you mentioned, does she have large eyes, pale face, about eighteen, nineteen years old, and usually like to wear a pale green top?"

Little Fairy's voice faltered, "You… You… what have you done to her?"

Xiao Yu'er laughed out loud, "What I have done to her, need I still say?"

Black Spider was startled and replied, "This guy is crazy, and sprouting nonsense."

Xiao Yu'er smirked, "This is no big deal, what are you afraid of?"

No matter how composed Nangong Liu and Qin Jian were, their expression changed unconsciously as well.

Little Fairy jumped up, "Listen, listen… he admitted it himself!"

She was crying and screaming, but did not forget to strike, with a 'whoosh', her sword struck out like a poisonous snake. On the other side, Yan Ren Yu's eyes were reddened, and with a roar, struck out with three fists.

These three fists and one sword, are naturally aimed towards Xiao Yu'er's fatal points. The sword like lighting, the fists like thunder, attacked from the left and

right, without giving him a chance to retaliate.

End of Chapter 51

Chapter 41

Chapter 52

If this happened two years ago, Xiao Yu’er would either perish under the fists or die under the sword, but the Xiao Yu’er now, is no longer the ignoramus he once was.

He saw Little Fairy’s left hand move, and his right hand slid up her sword and lightly brushed it. Little Fairly only felt a blur in front of her, and the sword in her hand seems to be attracted to a huge force. The stroke that was meant to stab Xiao Yu’er, is now aiming towards Yan Renyu instead. The startled Yan Renyu hurriedly changed his stroke and with a whoosh, his sleeve was sliced.

This ordinary stroke of ‘Flower Grafting to Wood’, in Xiao Yu’er’s hands, turned into a miraculous move, and although the method differs, it seems to produce wonderfully the same results as the famed move ‘Shifting Flower and Grafting to Jade’ of the Floral Palace. This is because once martial arts reach a certain level, some parts will be quite similar to each other.

However, Nangong Liu and Qin Jian could not discern the subtle differences at that moment and asked hoarsely, “Are you a disciple from Floral Palace?”

Xiao Yu’er did not reply, and instead darted behind Black Spider with a loud laugh, “I may have consumed some meat, but the mastermind is not me, why did you come specifically for me?”

Yan Ren Yu and Little Fairy saw that he obviously had the upper hand, and yet did not take the chance to retaliate, and instead avoided them. Fury clouded their judgment and without asking for an explanation, attacked again.

This time, their strokes were even more venomous, and more careful in their attack. But the person who's going to bear the attack is not Xiao Yu'er, but Black Spider.

Black Spider was surprised and troubled, with the situation like this, how could he explain?

In the flash of an eye, the light from the sword flickered, the shadows from the fist flying, Little Fairy and Yan Ren Yu had stuck out more than ten strokes, and Black Spider also returned three palm attacks.

Under Little Fairy's rapid sword strokes and Yan Ren Yu's vigorous fist attacks, how could Black Spider try to explain himself? He could not even open his mouth.

Xiao Yu'er, on the other hand, was behind him laughing, "Right, that's right, fight it out with them, what's there to be afraid of!"

Black Spider was grunting with fury, and wanted to shake Xiao Yu'er off his back, but Xiao Yu'er is like a shadow glued to his back, and occasionally clapping his hands and laughing, "Good! This sword stroke is good… hmm, Yan Family's Godly Fist is not bad either, Black Spider oh Black Spider, I think you are no match for them!"

Little Fairy and Yan Ren Yu were clouded by fury earlier, and their thoughts disorganized, which was why Xiao Yu'er managed to gain the upper hand once he struck.

After ten odd strokes, their thoughts have settled, their hands stable. Although Yan Ren Yu's fist attacks were fierce, his strokes were slightly raw. Little Fairy is more experienced in combat than anyone else since she looks for fights almost daily. Her sword stabbing and piercing left and right, her strokes fast and venomous. Not only was she on the offensive, she also makes up for the loopholes in Yan Ren Yu's fist strokes, and Yan Ren Yu's firm strokes, also covered up for the lack of intensity in her sword strokes. The two of them were well established in Wulin, and were able to complement each other without the need to practice in advance.

Black Spider may be well known, but it was not due to his martial arts, and now to face the two of them… one quick and one slow, one intense and one soft. Slowly, he was having difficulty fending off such seamless partnership.

Besides, there is Xiao Yu'er behind him, seemingly helping him, but actually creating more trouble.

Nangong Liu was watching the fight from the side, and commented "Ren Yu is really born to learn martial arts."

Qin Jian added, "But Sister Qing is always slightly better than him."

Nangong Liu replied, "Then you are wrong. Ren Yu's attacks are a little raw now, but that's because of his strict upbringing. He dared not create trouble, so had no chance to fight. If he were allowed to roam around in Jiang Hu, within three to five years, his reputation will definitely be far ahead of Sister Qing's."

Qin Jian concurred, "Second Brother really has a good eye, no wonder those in Jiang Hu who had been mentioned by Master Nangong, will immediately see a rise in their value."

Nangong Liu continued, "The person we should take notice of today is not Black Spider, but that yellowed face youth. This person is crafty, and does not follow the norm. If I am not wrong, he must be some famous person in disguise."

This Master Nangong's martial arts, whether it's good or bad, is yet unknown, but with his pair of sharp eyes, he is already worthy of being called the descendent of the Wulin family with more than a hundred year's history in Jiangnan.

As they spoke, it is now obvious who has the upper hand in the fight.

With Black Spider's strange moves, it would have been difficult for Yan Ren Yu and Little Fairy to gain the upper hand, but with Xiao Yu'er sticking to Black Spider's back, Black Spider kept feeling as if there is a weight hanging behind

him, so his moves are naturally affected. By now, he is caught in a dangerous situation.

Xiao Yu'er deliberately sighed, "No good, no good. Seems that a man like Black Spider, is going to be defeated by these two little kids today."

Actually, Little Fairy and Yan Ren Yu are also well known in Jiang Hu, and not little kids. By saying this, Xiao Yu'er's intent is to deliberately antagonize Black Spider.

Black Spider has a strong temper, and despite knowing his intentions, he was still provoked into shouting, "You crazy fellow, what do you actually want?"

Xiao Yu'er whispered, "You can't win them, but don't you know how to escape?"

Black Spider was even more incensed, "My as*! Am I such a person!"

Xiao Yu'er commented, "Black Spider is well known for your strange skills, but today you are not doing what you do best, and instead fighting head on, isn't that stupid."

Although Black Spider was scolding him, but he knew in his heart that what Xiao Yu'er said was reasonable. Because he was distracted by the talk, he almost got stabbed.

Xiao Yu'er said calmly, "If you are able to retreat safely today, and bring me along with you, not only will those in Jiang Hu not ridicule you when they find out, instead they will be full of admiration."

Black Spider stamped his foot, and replied "Fine!"

He had just said 'fine', and Xiao Yu'er had already dashed out from behind him, 'Breaking the Jade and Splitting the Gold', both his palms attacking diagonally left and right.

Yan Ren Yu and Little Fairy were taken unawares, and were forced back two steps by this move.

Right at this time, a silver thread flew out from Black Spider's sleeve, out of the door, and attached to an old cypress tree outside the ancestral hall, with Black Spider flying right behind.

Xiao Yu'er had long clung onto his clothes, and followed him out. His body light as cotton, and although he was clinging onto Black Spider, Black Spider did not feel any burden at all.

It looks as if his body is a kite pulled by a thread, floating up the cypress tree, both his feet lightly touched the tree and he flew up again, landing on a second cypress tree. That silver thread flew out again, and attached to a third cypress tree further ahead. Black Spider lightly landed on the third cypress tree, and somersaulted over to the fourth tree, and the silver thread was attached onto the fifth tree…

By the time Qin Jian and the rest rushed out, the two of them were already more than ten feet away, and in another instant, were lost in the darkness, and only a voice could be heard from afar, saying "If you are still not convinced, then no harm coming back here tomorrow night during the third watch!"

Black Spider flew on without stopping, and only rested in the dark when they reached the edge of the city.

Xiao Yu'er clapped, "What a great Black Spider, you really come and go like lightning, moving so swiftly over a thousand miles. This Lightness Skill 'Silver Thread Flying Spider', is really the one and only in Jiang Hu… unparalleled!"

Black Spider huffed, "Humph, it's no use sucking up to me."

Xiao Yu'er laughed, "I know you must be feeling very peeved right now, and I only wanted to calm you down."

Black Spider demanded, "Let me ask you, you obviously did not do it, why put

the blame on yourself, and drag me into it. And you were hiding behind, letting me be the scapegoat."

He got more irritated as he spoke, and shouted "That I shall not mention further, but the most intolerable thing is that, you could have openly helped me, but you choose to escape, and made me lose face with you. What is this all about?"

Xiao Yu'er chuckled, "You still do not understand? This is because I want to harm you."

Black Spider was stunned, "Harm me?"

Xiao Yu'er continued, "With our escape, I can just leave, but you Black Spider has a name and reputation, if word gets out in future, saying that Black Spider is a cannibal like Li Dazui, would you still be able to stay around?"

Black Spider roared angrily, "Then why do you want to harm me?"

Xiao Yu'er grinned, "Because only when I drag you into with me, you will do your best for me. But you don't have to be too worried. I harmed you because I think you're not too bad. I can't even be bothered with others who begged me to harm them."

Black Spider replied fiercely, "You've harmed me, I should be killing you, why would I work for you."

Xiao Yu'er smiled, "If it was another person, and I have harmed him, he will naturally want to settle scores with me. But you, Black Spider is very different from others. Of this I am very clear."

Black Spider glared at him, before suddenly bursting out in laughter, "Fine, you really know my temper! Once I've encountered weird events like this, I would not relent even though I know very well that I am being tricked."

Xiao Yu'er smiled, "If that is not the case, Black Spider would not be Black

Spider.”

Black Spider asked, “By doing this, is there no other intention other than dragging me into this matter?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Of course I do. That Nangong Liu and Qin Jian thinks they so are remarkable, that their eyes are growing on their forehead. If I were to invite them out on a normal day, they would not entertain me. But now I want them to come at the third watch tomorrow, they would never be a minute late.”

Black Spider asked, “Fine, now that I am embroiled in this matter, and you have caught hold of their weak spot, tell me, how shall we continue this show?”

Xiao Yu’er mused, “That Mr ‘Nonsense’ secretly killed the girl, and wants you to eat her, yet he secretly told others to capture you, what kind of ploy do you call this?”

Black Spider replied hatefully, “He is of course shifting the blame onto me.”

“Such a mischief maker who maligns others, how do you think he should be dealt with?

Black Spider gritted his teeth and said, “If I were to see him again, I would kill him.”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “Do you know that mischief makers like this, besides Mr ‘Nonsense’, there is a lot others, and what they have done, is more evil than what Mr ‘Nonsense’ has done, so how should they be treated!”

Black Spider replied, “I’ll capture and kill them one by one.”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “It’s too good for them if you kill them, besides, it’s not easy to kill them either.”

“Who are you actually referring to?”

Xiao Yu’er emphasized each word, “Jiang Bie He!”

Black Spider almost jumped up, and asked hoarsely “How is it possible that the Hero of Jiang Nan would do something like that?”

Xiao Yu’er stared at him steadily, “You don’t believe me?”

Black Spider stared back at Xiao Yu’er, and said “You’re a secretive person… and sneaky. The ways you handle matter are odd and full of diversity, who in the world would believe you!”

He sighed, and slowly continued, “I believe you, only because although you are a scoundrel, but you’re definitely not a hypocrite.”

Xiao Yu’er sighed, “That’s right, the most detestable people are hypocrites, and that Jiang Bie He is one of the most hateful ones.”

Black Spider asked, “How do you want to deal with him?”

With shining eyes, Xiao Yu’er replied, “Give him a taste of his own medicine. They know how to shift the blame to others, then I want to shift the blame to them. This is called a tooth for a tooth.”

Black Spider queried, “Why don’t you tell me how you intend to do it.”

Xiao Yu’er stared at him and asked, “Do you know who that lady in the loft is?”

Black Spider suddenly turned his head, and said “I’ve already said so earlier, I don’t know.”

Xiao Yu’er continued slowly, “Let me tell you now, she is the Ninth Miss of the Murong Family!”

Black Spider’s eyes became alert immediately, and asked hoarsely, “She is

Murong Jiu?”

“That’s right. Now that Nangong Liu, Qin Jian, Little Fairy are all anxiously looking for her, if they find out that someone has been hiding her, they will certainly get into a huge fight with that person.”

Black Spider’s eyes shone as well, “So, you want to make Jiang Bie He take the blame.”

Xiao Yu’er clapped and laughed loudly, “Precisely, I want him to have a taste of what it is like to be maligned.”

Black Spider asked, “But that Jiang Bie He is experienced and shrewd, how would he get tricked?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “That Jiang Bie He may be wily as a fox, but with your help, I will have a way to trick him.”

He jumped up, grabbed Black Spider and said, “Time is running out, let us go settle the matter.”

The two of them flew into the city.

Along the way, Black Spider kept mumbling to himself, “Until now, I still no not understand how it would benefit that Mr ‘Nonsense’ by killing and cooking that person from Murong Family and maligning me.”

He guessed that ‘Wan’er’ must be connected to the Murong Family, most likely she is Ms Murong’s personal maid.

Xiao Yu’er grinned, “That Mr ‘Nonsense’ you are referring to, is not Li Dazui, but Bai Kaixin. He has a nickname ‘Harm others without benefit to oneself’, and he will be happy as long as others get tricked.”

Black Spider asked hoarsely, “How can there be someone like that in the

world?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “You say there isn’t, but there is. They know that the son-in-laws of the Murong Family is looking for Murong Jiu, so they kidnapped that ‘Wan’er’ and killed her, so that those son-in-laws of the Murong Family will think that Murong Jiu has also been killed and eaten, so of course they will not be able to find her. When they are sad, Bai Kaixin will be happy.”

Black Spider sighed, “There is a person like Bai Kaixin in the world, and yet there is someone like you as well. The two of you are plotting against each other, but I am the one who is unfortunate instead.”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “If it was not for me tonight, you’ll be worse off. You would have been caught red handed, and even if you have a hundred mouths, you can forget about explaining yourself.”

“But no matter what, you should not have admitted…”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “Since when did I admit it, when did I say that I have already eaten Murong Jiu? I only said… ‘What I have done to her, need I still say?’, ‘This is no big deal, what are you afraid of?’….”

Black Spider thought for a while, and can’t help but laugh, “That’s right. Although you seemed to have admitted it earlier, but actually it’s as if you’ve said nothing at all…”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “That is where the ingenuity is.”

As they spoke, he brought Black Spider back to the loft.

Surrounding them, there were no lights, and only the lamp in the loft is still lighted. Murong Jiu was bent over the table, most likely she had dozed off unknowingly while thinking.

Xiao Yu’er commented, “This lady listens to you the most. You told her to carry a knife, and she carried a knife. You tell her to kill someone, and she will. Now, I

only want you to tell her to write a note.”

Black Spider asked curiously, “At a time like this, why the sudden need to write a note?”

Xiao Yu’er continued, “Ask her to write : ‘If you want me alive, please bring eighty thousand taels of silver to the appointed place without delay, or else Sister will be sacrificed.”

Black Spider gasped, “Eighty thousand taels!”

Xiao Yu’er explained, “Eighty thousand taels may not be a small amount, but with Nangong Liu and Qin Jian’s background, it is not considered a lot as well. Others may not be able to raise the money within a day, but I presume they will have a plan.”

He continued with a smile, “Besides, this note truly has the handwriting of Murong Jiu… one point to note, you must tell them the eighty thousand taels must be in silver, not gold or jewelry.”

Black Spider asked, “I tell them?”

Xiao Yu’er grinned, “Naturally you will have to tell them, and naturally you will have to send this note… Black Spider comes and goes without a trace and covers a thousand li in an instant. To send such a letter, who else in the world can be better than you?”

Black Spider stayed silent for a while, before he replied with a sigh, “Fine… but I still do not understand, why insist on silver?”

Xiao Yu’er repled, “This of course a reason in this, you will know when the time comes. After sending the letter, you just have to wait for the show to begin.”

Black Spider asked, “Are you really going to collect the silver personally when the time comes?”

“When the time comes for the silver to be collected, it will be my scapegoat going.”

Black Spider pondered, “Then… if Qin Jian and Nangong Liu did not see you but someone else, won’t they be suspicious.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “Qin Jian and Nangong Liu don’t even know who I am… they saw this waxed yellow face of mine, and saw me executing ‘Flower Grafting to Wood’’ they think that I am a ‘Floral Palace’ disciple in disguise. Right now that real ‘Floral Palace’ disciple is together with Jiang Bie He.”

Black Spider pondered for a while, and sighed “So every move you make has a reason. A person like you, if there are a few more in the world, then it would be a difficult life for others.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed out loud, “Don’t you worry, there never will be a second person like me in the world.”

At dawn, the bewildered store keeper of ‘Qing Yu Hall’ was dragged out of bed by Xiao Yu’er to send a letter to Third Missy’s place.

By morning, Xiao Yu’er has already returned to his look of the medical hall staff, lying on his bed at Qingyu Hall and had a good sleep.

Then, Third Missy arrived.

This time, she is no longer calling from the window, but came straight in, and dragged Xiao Yu’er from the bed, full of happiness and grouse, and stamping her foot, saying, “Where have you been these two days, don’t you know how anxious I was.”

Xiao Yu’er rubbed his eyes and smiled, “If you’re really anxious for me, then you should help me.”

Third Missy replied gently, “Since when have I rejected what you have asked.”

Xiao Yu’er continued, “But this matter, you must not reveal a single word to a third person.”

Third Missy lowered her head and asked, “Don’t you trust me?”

Xiao Yu’er grinned, “Fine, let me first ask you, have you seen that Jiang Yu Lang these two days?”

“No”

Xiao Yu’er stared at her and ask, “Think again, could it be possible that one of the people around Jiang Bie He could be Jiang Yu Lang in disguise.”

Third Missy really paid it some thought, and answered firmly “No, it’s impossible, Jiang Yu Lang was definitely not here these past two days.”

Xiao Yu’er heaved a sigh of relief, “That’s right, a girl’s intuition may be baffling, but sometimes they are right. Since you are so sure, I guess Jiang Yu Lang is not here then.”

Third Missy asked quietly, “You called for me, just to ask about him?”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “That is because you and he have a big association.”

Third Missy huffed, “Don’t you sprout nonsense, what association do I have with him?”

Xiao Yu’er lowered his voice, “Do you know that your family’s money was stolen by him.”

Third Missy gasped, “Really?”

Xiao Yu’er explained, “He left suddenly within these two days, firstly is to avoid me, secondly is to find another place to hide the money, because he thinks that I know more secrets than I actually do.”

Third Missy blinked, and asked, “Who are you really? Why is he so afraid of you?”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “Strictly speaking, until now, he does not know who I am.”

Third Missy was silent for a while, before she replied quietly, “I don’t care who you are, I will…”

Xiao Yu’er hurriedly interrupted her, “As long as my guess is correct, as long as he is not here, my plan will succeed… you must take note for me, if he comes back, you must tell me immediately.”

Third Missy asked, “What plan do you actually have? Why is it that your plan can only succeed if he is not here?”

Holding her hand, Xiao Yu’er said gently, “You will find out in future, but now, please do not ask me.”

If there is anything in the world that can make a girl shut up, it would be her beloved speaking to her gently. Third Missy really shut up, no longer asking.

She only bowed her head, and asked “You… don’t have anything else to say to me?”

“Tonight, at the beginning of the watch, wait for me outside the door in the back courtyard of your house…”

Third Missy’s eyes immediately brightened in joy, and fluttered, “Tonight… the door in the back courtyard?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “That’s right, don’t you forget, you must be there on time.”

Third Missy smiled tenderly, “I will definitely not forget, even if the sky was to fall, I will be there on time.”

She turned around with a tender smile, imagining a beautiful and romantic scene.

Xiao Yu’er roamed around on the streets, and walked past many restaurants but he did not go in. Instead, he found an old and run down noodle shop outside the eastern gate of the city.

This little noodle shop actually has a very beautiful name, called “Nostalgia Stall”.

Xiao Yu’er went in and ate a large bowl of hot, soupy noodles, four fried eggs, and asked the shopkeeper, who looked as if he had not bathed for three years, to help him buy brush, ink and seventy, eighty pieces of paper.

Using a piece of paper as big as a rice bowl, he wrote ,”Happy friend, at the ‘Xu’ hour tonight, there will be a person surnamed Li waiting for you at ‘Nostalgia Stall’ outside the eastern gate of the city, you have no choice but to come.”

The same words, he wrote continuously on seventy… eighty pieces of paper, and hired two beggars, asking them to paste it on the visible areas in the streets and alleys in the city.

The shopkeeper looked on curiously, and could not help but ask, “What is this all about? I really do not understand.”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “Those who should know would naturally know, those who should not know would naturally not know.”

The villager scratched his head and asked, “Who should know?”

But Xiao Yu’er had left, chuckling away. He went to a boutique and bought a black suit, went to the provision shop and bought some ink… plaster, glue.

Later, he went to an average sized inn, and had a good sleep! When he woke up, the sky is almost dark.

Xiao Yu'er looked into the mirror, and like a young girl putting on make up, took quite some time applying things on his face. After he put on that suit, and stood in front of the mirror… how could that be Xiao Yu'er, isn't that Li Dazui himself standing there.

Xiao Yu'er was very satisfied with the outcome and chortled "Although it's not exactly the same, but I think that Bai Kaixin has not seen Li Dazui for twenty, thirty years, in the darkness of the night, I should be able to pull this off."

He is not short all along, and after two years of roaming, his body is has become firmer. When he stands with his chest out, not only does he look 90% like Li Dazui, even his build is similar to the tall and stout Li Dazui, that even those who sees Li Dazui everyday may not be able to tell the difference if they do not pay attention.

He rolled up his old clothes and stuffed it under his blanket, so that when seen from outside, it seems that there is someone sleeping on the bed.

Then, he used the pen on the table and wrote a letter, this letter is actually for Jiang Bie He. Using his left hand, he wrote crookedly "Jiang Bie He, your son and the money is now in my hands. If you want to talk terms, come to the abandoned ancestral hall outside the city at the third watch tonight."

He sealed the letter tightly, and wrote on the envelop, "To be opened by Jiang Bie He personally, not to be seen by others."

Xiao Yu'er kept the letter close to him, and chuckled "Jiang Yulang is not in the city, most likely he has gone to hide the money. As long as he don't come back tonight, even if Jiang Bie He is a fox, he will still be tricked when he sees this letter. Even if he does not believe it totally, he will still be unable to bear the suspense and will go take a look during the third watch."

With a self satisfied smile, he slipped out the window.

By the time he reached ‘Nostalgia Stall’, it is already late into the ‘Xu’ hour.

Although it is dinnertime, there wasn’t a lot of people in ‘Nostalgia Stall’, and even that shopkeeper was no where in sight. Only one customer was sitting there drinking.

This person was wearing a new satin suit, and there is even a pearl in his hat. He was dressed to look like a wealthy gentleman, but his mannerism is that is a scoundrel, not sitting properly, but instead squatting on the stool drinking. His shifty eyes kept looking around, as if he is a thief on the lookout for his captors.

Xiao Yu’er walked in with a big step and laughed loudly, “Good man, you’re really here. We’ve not met for so many years, yet you rascal have not forgotten you have a friend surnamed Li, you’re quite punctual.”

He grew up with Li Dazui, so naturally it is easy for him to imitate Li Dazui’s accent and mannerisms accurately, and he looks as if they came from the same mould.

However, that person kept a straight face and stared at him, saying “Who are you, I don’t know you.”

Xiao Yu’er grinned, “You want to hide from me, but although you are dressed like a human, that shifty monkey head and brain of yours cannot be changed.”

That person actually laugh loudly, “You scoundrel who eats people without spitting out bones, we’ve not met for so many years, can’t you be more polite when talking to me?”

Xiao Yu’er sat down opposite him, on the table were two sets of cups and chopsticks, but only a bowl of roasted meat. Xiao Yu’er furrowed his brow and said, “You penniless thief is really getting poorer and poorer. Quick call that shopkeeper out, so that old brother here can have a hearty meal with you.”

Bai Kaixin replied, “He won’t come.”

“Why? Where is he?”

Bai Kaixin pointed at the bowl with a grin, “Right in this bowl.”

Without any change in his expression, Xiao Yu’er guffawed, “You sure know how to bootlick me, and have not forgotten what I like to eat. But that shopkeeper looked as if he had not bathed for many years, I’m afraid even the meat would have spoiled.”

Bai Kaixin beamed, “I’ve long washed him clean from head to toe before cooking him.” He raised his cup to toast with Xiao Yu’er, and poured another cup of wine.”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “You’re quite a filial son.”

He picked up a piece of meat, and only chewed it for a while before he spit it out again, and asked with a stare, “What kind of poultry is this, passing off as human meat?”

Bai Kaixin clapped his hands with a hearty laugh and said, “Surname Li, you are really something. This bird mouth of yours can really tell that it is not human meat once you tasted it. Think for yourself, would I kill for you?”

Naturally he had wanted to use this method to test if this person who came is really Li Dazui. Xiao Yu’er was secretly smirking, but he did not blow his cover. He stared at him and said, “Who else can you be filial to if not to me? That shopkeeper maybe a bit dirty, but the meat is still quite firm. I already have the intention of roasting him, but where have you hidden him?”

Bai Kaixin replied, “He went home long ago, I have already bought over this shop of his… ha ha, he was actually very happy when he received my fake silver taels, and thought that I was the one who got hoodwinked.”

Xiao Yu’er sighed, “You have no use for this run down noodle shop, but you tricked him badly, and made me unable to enjoy good meat. Your that nasty

habit of ‘Harming others without benefit to oneself’, will never be changed.”

Bai Kaixin grinned, “I can’t change my habit, but can you change yours? A dog will never change from eating poop… you’ve been hiding in your dog’s den for so many years, why are you suddenly coming out? ”

Xiao Yu’er stared at him and raised his voice, “Let me ask you first, you used my name to send a couplet to Tie Wushuang, and used my name again to kill someone’s maid and cooked her, what are you thinking?”

Stunned, Bai Kaixin asked, “You know everything?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed loudly, “Think about it, what else can be hidden from me.”

Bai Kaixin grinned, “Those people had nothing to do, and I don’t like it, so I found some things for them to do. Cooked some meat and invited them for a meal, and yet told on them, so that the two sides with fight it out, only then will I be happy… tell me honestly, do you think my plan is brilliant?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed coldly, “What a regret that that Qin and Nangong kids, having lived for so long, actually believed anyone who came to talk to them. If it was me, and you came to tell tales, I will detain you and ask you how you would know that others are eating human meat.”

Bai Kaixin replied, “Can’t I write a letter? Why must I go personally?”

“An anonymous letter and they believed it?”

Bai Kaixin explained, “Even if they do not believe, they will still go take a look.”

Xiao Yu’er smacked the table and laughed, “That is precisely the reason! That is just what I wanted you to say out.”

Bai Kaixin rolled his eyes and asked, “What devious idea are you thinking of now, that you want me to be tricked?”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “You used my name, but I will not punish you for now, provided you write another letter to that Qin and Nangong kids. Since they have already proven that your first letter is not false, they will definitely believe your second letter.”

“What letter?” Bai Kaixin asked.

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Naturally it is a letter to trick others, if it is not a letter to harm others, I don’t think you would want to write it.”

Bai Kaixin beamed, “If it is to harm others, I can still agree, but who will be the one being harmed?”

Xiao Yu’er told him, “You just have to tell them, at the third watch tonight, go to the guest room in Duan He Fei’s back courtyard to take a look, and they will naturally see something that they will find interesting… but it must be on the dot at the third watch, not a moment earlier or later. As to who we are harming, you will know sooner or later.”

“What if I refuse to write?”

Xiao Yu’er replied icily, “I know you will write. How can you still sleep when you refuse to do something that will harm others? Besides, if you do not agree to write this letter, I have ways to make you…” Suddenly he took out the letter for Jiang Bie He, held it in his hand, and with a palm stroke smashed the oil lamp on the table.

Bai Kaixin’s expression changed and he asked, “What are you doing?”

End of Chapter 52

Chapter 42

Chapter 53

Xiao Yu’er whispered, “Someone here’s to catch us, get ready to escape!”

Before he could finish speaking, flashes of sword could be seen from outside the window.

Someone shouted, “Li, Bai! You have committed many evil crimes, and you can forget about escaping today, come out and receive death.”

In the darkness, there were many shadows, this Nostalgia Stall has been surrounded.

Bai Kaixin mumbled, “Weird, these people actually knows that we are here…”

Xiao Yu’er whispered, “This person is full of honor and compassion, it must be Jiang Bie He.”

Bai Kaixin replied, “Hmm.”

“Let us dash out from his side.”

Bai Kaixin remarked, “Dash out to the person with the best martial arts? Are you crazy?”

Xiao Yu’er replied with a slight smile, “Naturally I have my reasons.”

The voice outside shouted again, “If you do not reply, we will charge in.”

Actually, these people also dread facing the ‘Ten Evils’, and for the time being, no one dared to charge into this dark house.

Xiao Yu’er suddenly stood up and shouted, “Li Dazui is coming, you just wait!” He picked up a stool and threw it out the east door but he jumped out from the west window instead.

The three words ‘Li Dazui’ is really scary. As soon as the stool flew out, the east side was in chaos, and a few knives attacked without any reason, but all the cuts landed on the stool.

Xiao Yu’er jumped out the window, and there were also two blades slashing down. Xiao Yu’er roared, and with a flying kick, sent the sword from the left flying.

His body has already flown over the person on the right, and conveniently kicked on that person’s head, and that person immediately became shorter.

This ‘Double Flying Mandarin Duck Kick’, is basically not a very superb skill, but in his hands, with some changes, it immediately countered two highly skilled martial arts exponent.

It must be known that what he obtained in the dungeon, consists the essence of the martial arts of all the sects in the world. After he has studied and mastered the book, it does not matter which sect the styles belong to, as long as it is in his hands, he would be able to turn the common into the exceptional, and yet others would never be able to tell the background of his martial arts.

Someone exclaimed in alarm, “This Li person is really powerful, everyone be careful…”

He did not even finish his words, where a ‘pak’ sound was heard, followed by loud laughter. Most likely the person who spoke has been slapped by Bai Kaixin.

Xiao Yu’er’s stance of ‘Double Flying Mandarin Duck Kick’ downed two people, followed by Zhao Nan Sect’s ‘Flying Cannon’, which sent another burly man flying into the sky with one punch.

Suddenly he saw in front of him, the flash of a sword, quick and lethal, controlled and adequate.

Someone laughed coldly, “Li Dazui, your martial arts may be good, but you can forget about escaping today.”

As he spoke the three sentences, he has already stabbed eight times, and each stab aiming to be a fatal one.

Without even looking, Xiao Yu’er already knew that it is Jiang Bie He. He continuously avoided the eight stabs, but did not retaliate, but lowered his voice and asked, “Do you wish to know the whereabouts of your son and the money?”

The sword in Jiang Bie He’s hands really slowed, and he asked hoarsely, “What did you say?”

Xiao Yu’er pierced that letter onto the tip of Jiang Bie He’s sword, and told him, “Take a look first.”

Jiang Bie He could not decide whether to retrieve the letter for a look, or to stab and injure the other party. As he hesitated, Xiao Yu’er has already leaped away from his side.

Bai Kaixin also followed behind.

Jiang Bie He looked as the two of them escape, and by the time the others came by, not even Xiao Yu’er or Bai Kaixin’s shadow could be seen.

Xiao Yu’er and Bai Kaixin only stopped when the reached the dark woods.

Bai Kaixin looked at Xiao Yu’er and asked with a frosty smile. “How did those

people know we were there?”

Xiao Yu’er blinked, and laughed, “Naturally someone told on us.”

Bai Kaixin laughed coldly, “The person who told on us, I’m afraid is you.”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “If it was me, why would I still help you escape. Others are not blind, can’t they have seen the big words on the notice.”

Bai Kaixin smiled icily, “How would these people understand those words.”

Xiao Yu’er grinned, “Naturally someone would understand them.”

Bai Kaixin paled, “Who? Could it be that our old friends are in the city as well?”

Xiao Yu’er thought for a while, and replied, “No harm telling you, there are two people, one called Luo Jiu, one called Luo San, who are intent on finding trouble for us, and is very familiar with our background.”

Bai Kaixin furrowed his brows and asked, “How does these two people look like?”

“Fat, tall, the two of them look exactly the same, they’re twins.”

Bai Kaixin replied, “I only know of a pair of skinny twins, but not fat ones.”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “You don’t know them, but they know you.”

Bai Kaixin fumed, “Since you already know that they understand that notice, and you already knew that they would tell on us, why were you still doing this?”

Xiao Yu’er beamed, “I want them to tell on us, I want them to find someone to capture us, only than can I hand that letter to Jiang Bie He… if I use other ways to hand that letter to him, he may not place much importance on it, but if the

letter was handed to him by Li Dazui personally, the standing will not be the same anymore."

Bai Kaixin asked, "But how would you know that Jiang Bie He would surly turn up."

Xiao Yu'er replied, "He calls himself a hero, can he not be involved when he heard that the 'Ten Evils' are in the city? As long as he comes, and listen to what I have to say, he will surely not let us off."

Bai Kaixin was silent for a while, before he sighed and said, "You calculated everything so well, I'm afraid even the real Li Dazui cannot be compared to you."

This time, Xiao Yu'er was stunned, and he giggled, "What real Li Dazui, it can't be that I'm a fake one?"

Bai Kaixin suddenly chortled, "You could imitate Li Dazui's looks and accent so well, that even I was a bit impressed, so much so that I can't really bear to see you die in front of me. But what a pity you have to die!"

Xiao Yu'er furrowed his brows and asked, "Have to die?"

Bai Kaixin replied with a weird smile, "The wine you drank, has already been poisoned by my creation 'Crystal Intestine Piercing Powder'. You could have lived for another hour, but after all that commotion earlier, I'm afraid you are going to die now!"

Xiao Yu'er fumed, "You horrible thief, I'll have it out with you!"

He jumped up with the intention of throwing himself at him, but he had just moved when he fell to the ground with a thump, his face pale, his hands clutching his stomach, and with a trembling voice, said "No good, I… I… can't make it…."

Bai Kaixin danced around and chuckled, "You should know by now that the 'Ten Evils' are not to be trifled with."

Xiao Yu’er asked hoarsely, “But… but how did you know that I… I am not Li Dazui? I don’t believe you can see the difference.”

Bai Kaixin explained, “You were able to imitate Li Dazui’s every move so well, you must know him, right?”

Xiao Yu’er started trembling in pain, and said “Yes…. Yes.”

Bai Kaixin asked, “Have you heard him mention me before?”

Xiao Yu’er was stunned, and replied, “No…. no.”

Bai Kaixin replied, “This is because our enmity is deeper than the sea, he hates me to the core, and won’t even want to mention my name, so why would he treat me as a friend, and drink with me at the same table.”

He continued with a loud laugh, “You think that since the ‘Ten Evils’ are all evil, everyone is alike, so they must all be friends, but you do not know that there are also enemies who hate each other to the core in the ‘Ten Evils’… after all that calculation, you have calculated a wrong move, and this move is enough to take your life!”

Xiao Yu’er replied with a long sigh, “So you already knew that I am not Li Dazui, then why did you… why…”

Bai Kai Xin sniggered, “I have been feigning ignorance, so that I can see what you are actually up to and also to have fun with you. Now that I’ve had my fun, you will just have to wait for death.”

Xiao Yu’er suddenly laughed bitterly, “Although I am going to die in your hands today, but there is this matter of yours…”

His body suddenly twitched, and he lied on the ground, facing up. Although he struggled to speak, not a sound came out from his moving lips.

Bai Kaixin pressed on, “What matter of mine? Speak.”

With beads of perspiration, Xiao Yu’er struggled to say “You… you…”

Although he was using all his might, but the sound emitted was as soft as a mosquito buzzing.

Bai Kaixin could not take it anymore, and he lowered his head and said, “Speak louder, I can’t hear.”

Xiao Yu’er suddenly shouted, “I said you are a big fool!”

As he shouted, his hand shot out quick as the wind, and has pressed on ten over acupuncture points on Bai Kaixin’s body. Bai Kaixin had just been startled by the sudden roar, and now his whole body fell on the ground.

Xiao Yu’er jumped up and said with a loud laugh, “The ‘Ten Evils’ might all be as quick witted as ghosts, but once they meet me, they will still be tricked. Now you should know that I am not to be trifled with.”

Bai Kaixin laid on the ground, staring. He could not believe that there is actually someone more devious that the ‘Ten Evils’.

Xiao Yu’er continued with a laugh, “Although I was not sure if that wine was poisoned, but faced with you, one of the ‘Ten Evils’, I have to take some precautions. You thought that I drunk that wine, but actually I held the wine under my tongue, and spit it out together with the fake human meat.”

“I… why didn’t I notice that?”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “This kind of cheating business, I’ve learnt it since I was five years old. Don’t talk about hiding a small cup of wine in my mouth, even if I hid a large duck’s egg in my mouth, you would not have noticed it.”

Bai Kaixin looked as if he has seen a ghost, and trembled in reply, “You… who

are you actually?”

Xiao Yu’er beamed, “So now you know how to be afraid! A person like me, should be feared. If you want to know who I am, just help me obediently, and I might just tell you.”

On hearing that this person who is even fiercer than a ghost does not have the intention of killing him, only to ask him to run some errands, he can’t help but give a relieved answer, “Yes, yes… Junior here will write the letter immediately.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “So now you have turned from a ‘Senior’ to a ‘Junior’… but if Senior here were to let a Junior like you off just like that, I can’t help but feel slightly worried.”

With both his hands behind his back, he has long rolled a ball of dirt in his hand secretly. Suddenly he pinched Bai Kai Xin’s nose and stuffed it into his mouth forcefully.

Bai Kaixin only felt something sticky and wet… with a faint smell of something indescribably bad, slip down into his stomach from his throat, and asked in surprise, “What… what was that?”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “You have your creation ‘Crystal Intestine Piercing Powder’, I have my own creation ‘Dark Spirit Killing Pill’…”

Bai Kaixin’s expression changed, “Dark Spirit Killing Pill? I… Why is it that I’ve never heard of this name?”

Xiao Yu’er replied slowly, “Of course you’ve never heard of this name. I have researched this for many years, and it’s only formulated recently. It has no antidote in the world, and within fourteen hours of consuming it, the whole body will become black and swollen, and in another hour, the whole body will decompose, and you will become a puddle of black and putrid water.”

He weaved the story on the spot, but his description sounded genuine.

Beads of sweat trickled down Bai Kaixin's head, and said, "You… don't you have things for me to do?"

Xiao Yu'er smiled, "Of course, I would have my own antidote."

Bai Kaixin begged, "I have no enmity with you, please…."

Xiao Yu'er stared and him and raised his voice, "If you can do what I ask you to do within fourteen hours, if you can satisfy me, then come back here and wait. I will naturally save you."

He then conveniently released Bai Kaixin's acupuncture point with a slap of his hand.

However, Bai Kaixin still laid on the floor, as if he has no strength even to stand, and asked, "You… you will not forget me?"

Xiao Yu'er replied coldly, "Time is running out. If you don't hurry up, I'm afraid you won't be able to make it."

Without waiting for him to finish speaking, Bai Kaixin has already sprung up from the floor, and like a wild horse that has just been slashed on the bottom, ran away like the wind.

Xiao Yu'er looked at his retreating back and laughed, "So the feared 'Ten Evils' is so easily tricked as well."

Before dawn, Xiao Yu'er is back at the loft.

Luo Jiu and Luo San were really not in. Murong Jiu was sitting on the carpet, holding a clay doll in her hands and softly singing, "Little dear, sleep quickly, the sky is dark outside the window, the little bird has gone home, even the crow is resting…"

Xiao Yu'er smiled, and continued the song "When it's dawn, the sun is out, and

birds sing and the flowers bloom…”

Murong Jiu stopped singing, and stared at him in a daze for a moment, mumbling, “Who are you, I don’t know you.”

Xiao Yu’er replied with a gentle laugh, “Have you forgotten? I’m the person who taught you how to get rid of the devil in your heart yesterday.”

“Ah, so it’s you, your looks seemed to have changed a little?”

Xiao Yu’er deliberately whispered, “I was afraid the devil would look for me, so I purposely disguised myself, so that he won’t find me. Don’t you ever tell any one else.”

Murong Jiu nodded her head, “I know, I understand, that devil is very powerful, he must never find you.”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “I knew you would understand, you’re a very clever girl.”

Murong Jiu smiled. The smile that appeared on her troubled face, seems like the ray of sunlight emitting from a grey sky, and the flowers seem to bloom in that instant.

Xiao Yu’er took two looks, and his heart felt something weird. He knew immediately that he cannot continue looking, and so he hurriedly continued “Now, I want to bring you to a place. Soon, you will be able to see someone who is more capable than me, who can help you chase that devil away.”

Without knowing why, Murong Jiu seems to obey him. She immediately stood up, walked two steps, blinked, and suddenly ask, “Then… what about you?”

Xiao Yu’er gave a bitter smile, “In future, I’m afraid you will not see me anymore.”

Murong Jiu immediately paused in her steps, “If I cannot see you in future,

then I’m not leaving.”

Xiao Yu’er was stunned for a moment, and he could not describe what he was feeling, but he hurriedly shouted back, “After the devil in your heart has been chased away, you yourself would not want to see me, by then, there will be many people accompanying you everyday.”

Murong Jiu thought for a while, and replied, “Then, let that devil stay in my heart.”

Xiao Yu’er’s nose seems to have soured up, and he laughed, “Silly child, don’t tell me you want to be like this all your life?”

Murong Jiu stared at him, and biting her lips, replied “Actually there’s nothing bad about that, besides, as long as you accompany me everyday, you can chase that devil away too, right?”

Xiao Yu’er rubbed his nose, and replied with a stern expression, “Why would I accompany you when you are so disobedient.”

Murong Jiu lowered her head, and asked quietly, “If you insist that I go, I will go, but you…”

Xiao Yu’er can’t help but sigh, “As long as you remember the conversation today, I will still visit you in future.”

Xiao Yu’er helped Murong Jiu with her cape, and by the time they walked to the small door at the Duan’s back courtyard, Third Missy is already waiting there.

Her eyes bright, her heart thumping non-stop, and although her body was shivering with cold, her face was heated up, so heated that even her ears were red.

She saw Xiao Yu’er from afar, and bounded towards him in joy. Only when she reached Xiao Yu’er did she realize that there is someone else behind him.

Her heart immediately sank, and biting her lips, asked “You… you did not come alone.”

It is unclear if Xiao Yu’er knows what she felt in her heart, or is he pretending not to know, but he raised his brow, looked at her and grinned, “I’ve never said that I’ll be coming alone!”

Only now did Third Missy see his face, and asked hoarsely, “Who… who are you?”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “You could recognize me just now, why is it you can’t recognize me now?”

Third Missy had already recognized his voice, but was still suspicious, and muttered, “Just now I only felt… felt that it was you, but your face…”

Xiao Yu’er lowered his voice, “I have something secretive to do, so I have no choice but to disguise myself. You must never tell anyone else, you are the only person who knows about this matter.”

Although he did not say what matter ‘this matter’ is, but he knows that once young girls know that they are the only ones who know their lover’s secret, they will not ask anything else.

Third Missy really became happy again. Xiao Yu’er is really nice to her, or else why would he tell her a secret that no one else knows.

She immediately whispered, “Don’t worry, I will never tell others.”

Xiao Yu’er furrowed his brows and said, “But this matter, I still need someone’s help.”

Third Missy hurriedly asked, “Can I help?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Actually, I can find someone else, but you… if you are

agreeable to help, that would be the best.”

Third Missy was even happier, and said “As I’ve said before, no matter what you ask of me, I will agree.”

The man she loves only looked for her for help, and not others, so obviously she is different from others. She was ecstatic.

Xiao Yu’er looked at her expression, and knows that there will not be any problem. He lowered his voice and said, “Actually, this matter is not that difficult, as long as you bring this person to your room, and at the third watch, quietly bring her to Jiang Bie He’s room and find a place for her to hide.”

Third Missy replied, “This is very easy, I’ll definitely be able to do it.”

“But you must remember two things. Firstly, you must not let anyone see her. Secondly. You must hide her well at precisely the third watch, not too early nor too late.”

Third Missy smiled, “Don’t worry, I won’t make a mistake.”

Only then did she notice Murong Jiu.

End of Chapter 53

Chapter 43

Chapter 54

Murong Jiu was wrapped in the black cape, and even her head was covered. Third Missy could not see what she looked like, and hesitated for a while before she can't help but ask, "Who is this person?"

Xiao Yu'er replied, "She is very involved in that matter that I'm doing, you will know in future."

He pushed Murong Jiu towards Third Missy, and told them, "The two of you should go in."

Murong Jiu nodded her head and looked at him, as if she wanted to say something, but Xia Yu'er has already hurried away. Looking at their expression, Third Missy unconsciously looked suspicious, but in the end, she only sighed and said, "Hey, you follow me."

Xiao Yu'er hurried to the ancestral hall and was early. He looked around and the people he invited have not arrived. After sprucing up the area a little, he found the best spot and hid himself.

Then, he thought about the whole matter from the beginning to the end again.

Qin Jian and Nangong Liu will certainly come on receiving Murong Jiu's note.

Jiang Bie He will have no choice but to come after seeing that letter.

Qin Jian's men will be carrying eighty thousand taels of silver with them, while

Jiang Bie He's men would be here looking for the 'stolen cargo'. When these two parties meet, won't there be a good show?

In the darkness of the night, the two groups must be feeling anxious, and if they cannot come to terms with each other, it'll be abnormal if they do not fight.

Even if they do not fight, but when Third Missy brings Murong Jiu to Jiang Bie He's room, and when Murong Jiu's men hear about Bai Kaixin's tip-off and find her, would her men still let Jiang Bie He off? No matter how powerful Jiang Bie He is, the Murong Family is also not one to be trifled with.

This plan of Xiao Yu'er, is killing more than two birds with one stone.

Firstly… he is letting others have a taste of their own medicine, and let Jiang Bie He knows what it feels like to be maligned. He can finally feel avenged for himself.

Secondly, Nangong Liu… Little Fairy, they accused him last night, so he also wants them to suffer a little. He deduced that after they received Bai Kaixin's tip off, they will certainly split into two groups, one to take a look at Duan's family back courtyard, and another to come to this ancestral hall. Those who come will most likely be Qin Jian… Little Fairy and Yan Renyu, and although these three may be able to handle Jiang Bie He, they will still invariably suffer a little in the process.

Thirdly, he is finally able to send Murong Jiu back to her own family. Even if she does not regain her senses in future, at least she will not be bullied when she is with her family. This way, it will be a stone off Xiao Yu'er mind.

Fourthly, if Jiang Bie He did not die after getting tricked this time, he will become a little more honest. Bai Kaixin and the others, will not dare to be such busybodies. This way, life in Jiang Hu will become more peaceful.

Fifthly, The Duan Family's money might be returned to its rightful owner after this. The Duans have been kind to him, so this would mean that he has repaid them for their kindness.

Sixthly, the maligned Tie Wu Shuang, would be able to clear his name, so that this old man who ‘Values Talent as much as One’s Life’, would not leave a black mark on his name after his death.

This plan which he thought of at the spur of the moment, could actually achieve six goals at once. Although this plan is a little difficult to execute, and a little complicated, it is still worth it.

What Xiao Yu'er did was good and bad, but if you compared there was more good than bad. The bad was not low and dirty, the bad was interesting bad. Moreover, the people that he caused trouble were bad people that were many times worse than him.

Jiang Bie He, Qin Jian, Nangong Liu, Bai Kaixin, Luo Jiu, Luo San… everyone involved in this plan, although are extremely powerful characters, have been made use of by him without them even knowing. He absolutely does not believe that there is anyone in the world who can see through his plan.

The more he thought about it, the more smug he felt, and he can’t help but giggled, “Who dares to say that I am not the smartest person in the world, who dares to say that I am not a genius.”

“Hey, follow me.”

Third Missy repeated her words again, her voice louder, but Murong Jiu was still staring in a daze at the place where Xiao Yu’er disappeared.

Third Missy asked icily, “He’s already gone, why are you still looking?”

Murong Jiu tilted her head and thought for a while, before she gently smiled, “That’s right, he’s already gone… but do you know, he will come look for me in future.”

Third Missy raised her voice, “He lied to you, after he sends you here, he will

not be bothered with you anymore.”

Murong Jiu smiled, “He will never lie to me, I know.”

She lifted her head, full of confidence, the moonlight shining down on her smiling face, the expression that was filled with happiness and hope for the future.

Although Third Missy is also a woman, she can’t help but look at her in a daze, and asked, “You… how do you know he won’t lie to you?”

Murong Jiu smiled, “He sent me here to chase the devil in my heart away, after that, he will look for me.”

Looking at her infatuated but pretty face, Third Missy slowly asked, “You don’t remember anything at all?”

“Hmm.”

“If it is not because of the state of your mind, he would not have sent you here?”

Murong Jiu replied, “I know he also cannot bear to leave me.”

Third Missy asked, “When… when you are well, he… he will look for you?”

Her voice is already trembling with jealousy, such a strong feeling of jealousy, is enough to make a woman to anything.

However, Murong Jiu is unaware, and continued smiling, “He will surely look for me.”

“What… what else did he say?”

Muring Jiu's hazy eyes lighted up, and she smiled, "He also said, I am a clever girl, if I obey him, he will accompany me everyday. Of course I will be obedient, you tell me if I should be obedient?"

Third Missy suddenly shouted, "No, No!" Murong Jiu was stunned.

Third Missy screamed madly, "You're not clever at all, and not pretty at all. You're only crazy; he will never like an ugly and weird crazy girl like you."

Muring Jiu burst out in tears, and covering her face, said "I'm not crazy, I'm not crazy…."

Third Missy asked, "You're not crazy, then let me ask you, do you know who you are?"

Murong Jiu tried hard to think, but could not remember who she is. She suddenly felt a splitting pain in her head and kept on hitting her own head, crying bitterly, "Please, don't ask me, I don't know, I don't know…"

Third Missy laughed coldly, "A person who does not even know who she is, if that is not crazy, what is?"

Murong Jiu screamed hoarsely, "I am crazy, I am crazy… he won't like me, won't like me…"

Amidst her cries, she bounded out in tears.

Only when Third Missy saw her disappearing back, did she heave a sigh of relief. The corners of her mouth unconsciously turned up into a cruel but victorious smile.

After all the calculations Xiao Yu'er did, he ultimately forgot one thing. He actually forgot that no woman in the world would be spared from jealousy.

Xiao Yu'er waited quietly in the darkness, but still no one appeared. In the

wilderness there would be no night watchman too, so he does not know the time as well.

However, he is patient, and by now, voices could be heard from afar.

Xiao Yu’er became alert, and mumbled, “I wonder who will be here first? Both groups may be equally anxious, but Jiang Jie He would be able to hold his emotions well, so logically speaking, the one who arrives first should be Qin Jian.”

Amidst the sounds of people, were also the sounds of carriage wheels rolling, and the sounds of the mules calling.

Xiao Yu’er secretly thought, "It is indeed Qin Jian and his men, and they actually used a mule carriage to transport the silver…”

His thought turned, and suddenly he felt something is not right.

Qin Jian… Nangong Liu, rich men like them, would use a horse drawn carriage, and never a mule drawn carriage if they are transporting the silver.

By then, the carriage is within his sight.

The group who arrived is neither Qin Jian and Nangong Liu, or Jiang Bie He, but five or six village women wearing mourning clothes and with their hair in disarray.

On the mule carriage were not silver, but a coffin.

Xiao Yu’er was stunned. How could something like that happen? It’s the middle of the night, why are these village women here?

He saw these few women walk into the ancestral hall, knelt on the floor in unison, and started bawling. The lady on the left banged her head and cried, “Oh my dead father-in-law, if you can hear me in heaven, then be my judge. I have

been a widow in your family for tens of years, and it was not easy to wait for my son to grow up, hoping that he will be filial to me, so that I can enjoy life in my later years. Who knows that he will be killed by others, how do you expect me to spend the rest of my life?”

This lady looked as if she is already forty, fifty years old. Although she was in mourning clothes, she still looked dignified. As she cried, a young lady next to her patted her back, and cried “Second Madam, please don’t cry yourself sick. If you die of heartbreak, the family property will end up in other’s hands, so why should you let them gain.”

On witnessing the scene on this side, the lady on the right was also not to be outdone, and immediately cried out bitterly, “Oh my dead father and mother-in-law, if you can hear me in heaven, then help me tear off that sl.ut’s mouth. I may not have given birth to the boy, but he is still of our family’s flesh and blood, and can only considered to be my son. That sl.ut has no status, who does she think she is? She maligned me, because she wants to usurp the family property.”

This lady looks older and uglier, and although she looks as skinny as a bone, her wails were louder than anyone else’s.

As she cried, there is also a younger lady next to her, crying as well, “First Madam, please don’t cry yourself sick. Everyone has eyes; they will not let that evil woman take over the family property.”

After hearing these few words, Xiao Yu’er understood.

There is nothing wrong in coming to the ancestral hall to judge such matters, but of all places, they should not have come to this ancestral hall at such a time.

Xiao Yu’er can never imagine that there would be such a coincidence in the world, and felt both angry and funny at the same time, and really wished that these ladies could be chased away.

He was scolding them in his heart, when he suddenly saw a few men in black, flying in. The few of them were dressed lightly in black, with black cloths covering their faces.

Xiao Yu’er’s heart jumped, “Jiang Bie He is here.”

The women were still crying and admonishing, totally oblivious that there are now a few more people in the ancestral hall. The men in black stood coldly at the back, not speaking.

That First and Second Madams were initially scolding on their own, but by now, it has erupted into a quarrel. The First Madam pointed at the Second Madam and scolded, “You sl.ut, you used your wiles and seduced my husband to his death, now that your son is also dead, this is heaven’s way of punishing you, you still dare to scold me?”

That Second Madam would not take it lying down and immediately retorted, “You jealous hag, why don’t you take a look at yourself in the mirror? You still wish to fight for attention with others? My husband died of anger because of you!”

First Madam roared, “Who is your husband, shameless, the husband is obviously mine.”

Second Madam smiled icily, “You are the shameless one, married to him for so many years and you did not even let out a fart (ie: no children). If not for me, he won’t even have someone to carry his alter when he died.”

This Second Madam is really good at arguing, being sharp tongued and venomous in her reply. That First Madam was so antagonized that she started shivering in anger, and suddenly slapped across.

Second Madam yelled after being slap, “Good, you dare to strike, I will have it out with you.”

She leaped up and grabbed First Madam’s hair.

The two to three young ladies next to them rushed up to split up the fight, but later, a slap from you, a smack from me, and the ones separating the fight

fought a fiercer fight instead.

The few ladies pulling each other's hair… clothes, were entangled into a ball, and fell rolling to the floor, rolling closer and closer towards those men in black.

The men in black were quite strange, acting as if they did not see them fighting right in front of them, but just stood there coolly.

Just at this time, a string of scoffing sounds was heard, and tens of black light flashed out from among the pile of fighting women.

These secret weapons were fast and poisonous. Under the rain of the secret weapons, there is no escape for the men in black!

Xiao Yu'er already felt that something is not right!

The few ladies may be disheveled, their face rough and old, but every one of their hands, were pale and tender.

Xiao Yu'er realized this, and his eyes brightened, and thought to himself, "The ladies of Murong Family, are really great, it seems like Jiang Bie He will surely be tricked."

He has just finished his line of thought, when secret weapons were shot out again. Who would have known that these men in black have already expected such a move.

As the secret weapons flew out, these few people flew up as well, and with a swish, drew out their swords in mid air, the flashes of blades like meteors, slashing straight down at those ladies!

These ladies were no weaklings as well, their bodies rolled and separated, and evaded the slashing swords. When they jumped up, they were already carrying their weapons in their palms.

The leader of the men in black laughed icily, “What ignorant women, who dares to play such tricks in front of me. You are far from tricking me. I have already investigated, the descendents of this ancestral hall have all died… who are you actually, if you do not reveal your background, then all of you can forget about leaving here alive today.”

Xiao Yu’er secretly sighed, “This Jiang Bie He is really an old fox, no matter what he does, he will always be on his guard against every move of his opponent, investigate everything clearly beforehand, never letting his guard down.”

That First Madam smiled coldly, “Don’t you know what we are here for?”

This is actually a very simple question to answer, or one could even say that it does not matter even if there is no answer, but this person in black is scheming. To others it may just be a simple sentence, but to him, the sentence becomes very complex.

If he says that he ‘knows’, it would mean admitting that the ‘cargo’ was stolen by him, and if this is a trap set by the other party to make him reveal the truth, he would have been tricked.

On seeing him hesitating and refusing to answer, the ladies felt suspicious. That First and Second Madams exchanged a look, and the Second Madam asked, “Who exactly are you? Don’t tell me you are not here because of that letter.”

This time he did not hesitate, and replied coldly, “If not for that letter, why would I be here?”

Second Madam continued, “So that means, you insist on having those silver?”

There is no longer doubts in this person’s mind, and he replied angrily, “Not only the silver, but the person as well.”

First Madam’s expression changed slightly, and fumed “After getting the silver, you still want the person?”

“Both cannot be left out.”

Enraged, Second Madam replied, “What right do you have to be so unreasonable?”

The man in black smiled icily, “Based on this sword I have in my hand?”

Both parties got even more agitated as they speak, and Xiao Yu’er became merrier the more he hear, and only wished that they would come to blows soon, and the fiercer the fight, the better.

The First and Second Madams exchanged another look.

Second Madam shouted, “To tell you the truth, you can forget about getting both the silver and the person. We did not even carry the silver with us, as for the person… if you want the person, than we’ll want your life!”

The expression in the eyes of person in black changed, and he replied icily, “As I have already said, the silver and the person, both cannot be left out. Now I’ll just take the silver first.”

Before he finished speaking, he has already made a hand signal behind his back secretly. The ladies may not have seen his hand signal, but Xiao Yu’er saw it clearly.

Naturally the other four men in black also saw it, and the two in front suddenly attacked. As their swords flashed, they slashed at the mule that was pulling the carriage to the ground!

The two behind lifted up the coffin on the carriage and tipped it over, and with a loud clink, countless silver flowed out of the coffin.

Although the night is dark, the silver are still sparkling, and blinding. The men in black unconsciously stared at the silver in stupor.

The leader of the men in black laughed, “As I have already said, you are far from trying to trick me!”

Obviously these silver are his stolen cargo.

As he spoke, he has already made another hand signal secretly, and the men in black charged with their swords held high. Just then, right at that moment, they suddenly heard a series of ‘poof poof poof!’ and from the coffin shot ten over dark flashes of light, flying towards the men in black!

The men in black screamed in pain, and all fell to the ground.

Only that leader who stood further away, and had faster reflexes, blocked the secret weapons with a flurry of his sword. On seeing that none of his men survived, he unconsciously revealed a look of alarm and fury in his eyes, and shouted, “What wicked women, who dare to…”

First Madam laughed coldly, “To deal with a wicked person like you, of course we can only use such wicked methods!”

The few of them surrounded him, and there was a ‘boom’, the bottom of the coffin flew up from the impact, and another person jumped up and stood behind the man in black, and asked sternly, “What else do you have to say?”

The man in black stood alone in the middle of the group, but showed no fear, and instead laughed icily, “I did not expect you to be so meticulous in your dealings as well. I’ve belittled you, but it is still too early for you to feel so smug now.”

The person who jumped out from the coffin was dressed in tight fitting attire, her figure curvaceous, and although her face was covered with a light veil, Xiao Yu’er recognized her as Little Fairy at one glance.

It must be because of her impatient nature, and her inability to act and cry, that she was asked to hide in the coffin so that she would not let the cat out of the bag and spoil the plan.

Now that she has been controlling her temper in the coffin, she finally could not hold it in any longer, and stabbed towards that man in black's back, yelling, "No more nonsense, give me your life!"

It looked as if there were eyes growing on his back, and without even turning his head, he almost disarmed the sword in her hands with a back flip of his hand.

Little Fairy's wrist was sore and numb from the impact, and only then did she realize that this person in black is the strongest opponent she has ever met in her life. Startled and angry, she shouted, "Death is at your door, and you are still showing off!"

Borrowing the strength from the sword attack to retreat to the corner of the wall, the man in black replied with a frosty smile, "Whose door is Death at, why not you take a look!"

Everyone can't help but followed his gaze and turned around for a look, to see that there are now countless men in black outside the ancestral hall, every single one of them cocking their bow and arrow.

At the windows, at the gaps in the wall, were filled with the glittering reflection of the arrowhead. The expression on the ladies' face changed.

The man in black said coldly, "Outside this ancestral hall there are already 140 steel bows in ambush, each bow has the strength of thirty stone. At the count of three, if you do not put down the weapons in your hand and surrender, you can imagine what the outcome will be!"

140 steel bows, if they were split into two teams, and take turns to shoot, even the most highly skilled martial arts exponent can only defend themselves for a while.

Naturally, these ladies already know, amongst them, there may be one or two who can escape, but the rest would perish under the rain of arrows!

The few of them gathered around and discussed among themselves quietly. Little Fairy and that Second Madam's voices suddenly stopped, as if they want to fight it out, but First Madam held on to their hands tightly.

The man in black looked on coldly, and suddenly shouted, "One!"

First Madam suddenly asked, "What if we give you both the silver and the person?"

The man in black replied icily, "The person must first…"

Before he could finish his sentence, there was a sudden scream, and a few men in black outside the ancestral hall fell. The dense formation of the arrows was suddenly thrown into disarray.

Second Madam's eyes shone, and she screamed, "Third Sister, Sister Qing, strike now, what are you waiting for!" As she screamed, a shiny short sword was already making its way towards the man in black.

Once Xiao Yu'er heard what that First Madam said, he knows that he cannot let them negotiate any further or his plan would be revealed!

Once he thought of that, he struck with the sharp stones that he has been holding in readiness in his hand!

His attack was fast, and he was well hidden, so even though ten over people were struck on their head and fell to the ground bleeding, none of them could make out where the secret weapon came from.

By then, Second Madam's short sword has blurred into a cold light, and made more than ten attacks in the blink of an eye. She may be a female, but the speed and strength of her sword strokes, is even better than the two wandering sword fighters, Black Route Qing Hao and White Route You Xia.

The man in black was secretly stunned that his attacks were warded off by her.

The sword strokes of the Second Madam were not only vicious, but every stroke was lashed out as if she did not mind perishing with her opponent. In Jiang Hu, there is not much women like her around.

Looking at the First Madam, she was holding her sword close to her chest, looking at the fight from the side, as if she does not intend to help out. A woman fighting with a man, but the woman will usually be at the losing end.

No one in Jiang Hu would say anything if women were to gang up and win the battle, and until this stage, this Second Madam is still fighting alone, unwilling to have the two of them against one person. Such bearing among women in Jiang Hu, is even rarer than phoenix's feather or kirin's horn.

The man in black thought it was weird the more he watches, and was alarmed the more he thought.

What was even more surprising is that, there were two lasses who were frightfully accurate with their secret weapons, as soon as their hands waved, one or two people would fall down screaming outside.

Little Fairy has long charged out, and out of a hundred odd men in black, about forty or fifty of them had fallen. The rest were too busy defending themselves to even think of releasing their arrows.

Xiao Yu'er stared with his mouth agape, almost laughing out loud. Having lost out to Jiang Bie He a few times, he has finally taken his revenge today.

After another ten odd strokes, that Second Madam's swordplay was even faster and more vicious, each stab aiming for the fatal points of the man in black, and the tip of her sword closing onto his throat. Others witnessing this, thought that she now has the upper hand.

However, they do not know that the man in black is the most cunning person, and he was thinking as he fought. Although he was fencing with the sword in his hands, but he was not concentrating on his moves, only fighting to keep himself unscathed. Now that he has straightened out his thought, he suddenly gave a loud laugh, and struck out with his sword.

For a moment Second Madam felt her opponent's long sword flitting towards her, the sword has not come near, when she already felt a force gushing towards her. She had no time to react and had no choice but to wave her sword to meet the attack head on.

Her sword strokes may be venomous, but her internal strength is way below that of the man in black. The single stroke of the man in black is enough to make her forsake what she is skilled in and use what she is incompetent. By blocking the attack head on, is akin to throwing an egg at the stone.

This is all because she really belittled the martial arts of this man in black, and by the time she realized her mistake, it is too late. Although she knows that she is at the losing end, she can only meet it head on.

That First Madam saw everything clearly, and cried in alarm, "Don't fight with him on strength!"

Although she disliked winning by numbers, but at this critical moment, she had no choice. With a shout, she drew her sword and charged. There was a loud 'clang', and sparks flew.

With First and Second Madam fighting two against one, their strength is still not enough to counter the attack. They felt half their bodies go numb, and the swords in their palms seemed to have flown out of their hands.

Xiao Yu'er was secretly stamping his foot, "These lasses are not using the martial arts they excel in, but instead fighting with brute strength, isn't that looking for trouble?"

First and Second Madam was thrown by the impact into the air, and almost retreated to the wall, but they maintained their composure, and got ready their secret weapons in their hands.

The ladies of the Murong Family are famed for their Lightness Skills and secret weapons. If that man in black were to crave for a quick win and give chase, it would be difficult for him to retreat safely.

Who would have expected that the man in black stopped immediately after his failed attack, and laughed loudly, “I don’t want anything today, farewell.”

As he spoke, he retreated.

Even Xiao Yu’er was greatly surprised by this move, and the First and Second Madam, on seeing him leaving although he obviously had the upper hand, were even more baffled.

Second Madam can’t help but ask, “You were intent on killing us earlier, and now you are thinking of leaving just like that, why?”

The man in black laughed heartily, “Just now I don’t know who you are, if I left, it would be difficult for me to find you in future, so naturally I would never have left then.”

“What about now?”

The man in black smiled icily, “The ladies of the Murong Family have names… have houses. What I cannot retrieve today, I will pay a visit to your estate in future, I have no fear of not being able to obtain it then!”

Second Madam’s expression changed, “You have found out our background?”

“The Second Missy of the Murong Family is famed for her vicious sword strokes, if I can’t see that, then I must be blind!”

Second Madam suddenly pulled a bunch of hair from her head… a mask, and revealed a pale face, her round, almond shaped eyes, her willow brows snapping in anger, and she smiled icily “You recognize me, but I don’t recognize you. Since we will never find you in future, do you think we will let you leave today?”

Someone continued loudly, “He won’t be able to leave!”

Little Fairy is already standing behind the man in black, blocking the door.

The man in black chortled, “If I can’t leave today, I would not have said what I said earlier!”

The Murong ladies shouted, “We would want to see how you can escape!”

This Second Missy of the Murong family really is impatient and rash. She just took a beating, but is not afraid at all, and charged forward waving her sword.

A clash of swords, and that ‘First Madam’ actually blocked her sword.

Murong Shuang asked angrily, “Third Sister, do you really want to let him go, don’t you want to find Ninth Sister anymore?”

Murong Shanshan replied, “In my opinion, there seems to be something fishy in this matter.”

“What’s fishy?”, asked Murong Shuang.

Murong Shanshan explained, “If this person asked us here, he should have long known who we are, but he only found out about our background now, isn’t that weird?”

Murong Shuang was surprised, but she still stamped her foot and asked, “What’s so weird, who knows if he was not pretending.”

Little Fairy interrupted, “That’s right, capture him first and talk later.”

That man in black was listening intently, and suddenly shouted, “The three of you do not strike, I’m afraid we have all been tricked.”

He has not finished his words, when suddenly a loud ‘whoosh’ was heard, and an incense burner dropped down from the beam, dragging a huge piece of white cloth along with it.

On that cloth it was written, “Jiang Hie He, you have committed so many evil deeds, now you can forget about denying them!”

The words were as big as bowls, so that it is clearly visible even at night. The few who saw them, were all shocked.

Murong Shuang gasped, “You… you are Jiang Bie He?”

The man in black widened his eyes in surprise. He heard the exchange between the Murong ladies and knew that however carefully he had planned, he still fell into another’s trap today, and yet he does not even know who the real mastermind behind all these is.

He has all along been cunning. Others might have only thought of one point, but he has thought of ten, but this sometimes backfire on him, because he will forget to reply once he is thinking of something.

Murong Shuang smiled coldly, “The respectable Hero of Jiangnan, would actually do such a thing. This is totally unexpected.”

The man in black did not even manage to reply, when another ‘whoosh’ was heard, and another incense burner dropped down, with another strip of white cloth.

On the white cloth were words as big as bowls saying, “Jiang Bie He, the person you are hiding has been found, what do you have to say.”

Naturally, these cloths were all prepared in advance by Xiao Yu’er. He nailed one end of the cloth on the beam, wrapped the incense burner at the other end of the cloth, and tied a long and thin thread to the incense burner, leading from the beam to where he was hiding. Once the thread was pulled, the incense burner would drop, and the cloth would fall down as well.

He heard earlier how Murong Shanshan was talking about the whole situation, and if she continued speaking, his brilliant plan would have been exposed, so he

quickly pulled on the thread.

He deduced that by now, Qin Jian and his men must have found Murong Jiu in Jiang Bie He's room, and once they come with Murong Jiu, Jiang Bie He would not be able to defend himself even if he had a hundred mouths. This is such a surefire plan, that he would not expect it to go wrong even in his dreams.

End of Chapter 54

Chapter 44

Chapter 55

After the two pieces of cloth dropped down, there are no more doubts in Murong Shanshan's mind. Even Little Fairy and Murong Shuang looked murderous, wishing that they could kill Jiang Bie He first before saying anything else.

That 'man in black' did not admit that he is Jiang Bie He, but he did not deny it as well. He only stood there silently, staring at the swords of his opponents.

Murong Shuang stared at him and asked, "Third Sister, what do you say we do now?"

Murong Shanshan sighed, "Let's capture him first." Little Fairy could not wait for her to finish her words and had already stuck out with her sword.

Her sword strokes were fast and offensive; Murong Shuang's sword strokes were vicious and ruthless.

Although Murong Shanshan's sword strokes were not as fast as Little Fairy's, or as vicious as Murong Shuang's, but her eyes were sharp, her mind clear, every stab is aimed at the opponent's weak point.

These three persons and three swords are not to be trifled with. Besides, they have been training with the sword since young, and their strokes complement each other seamlessly.

The man in black may be highly skilled, but even he found it difficult to handle them. He blocked a few strokes, and the sword stances suddenly changed

drastically. He is already defending by attacking, waiting to find a chance to escape.

How would he expect that the three girls are experienced in dueling, because once he changed his sword stance, the three of them saw through his mind.

It would be better if he did not try to leave, because once he thought of that… his opponents were sure that he is involved even if he is not guilty. Little Fairy and Murong Shuang charged forward, sparing no thoughts for their own safety.

The other two girls they brought along were more than capable of handling the remaining men in black outside.

The beads of sweat on the man in black's head, has soaked the cloth covering his face. Only now does he realize that the famed Murong Sisters are really not easy to deal with.

However, he does not know that the sister's forte is not swordplay; secret weapons and Lightness skills, that is their expertise! Only because they were afraid that he would escape, so they had no time to take out their secret weapons.

With a 'whoosh', Murong Shanshan's stroke of 'Splitting Flower, Knocking Tree', was flying towards him, the light from the sword shimmering without rest, not knowing if the move is a real or false one.

This move of hers is not to injure the enemy, but to confuse the enemy's eyes, so that others can strike. However, if the man in black does not avoid this move, it will immediately turn from a false move into a real one.

Without a thought, the man in black turned his body and raised his sword, and as expected, Little Fairy and Murong Shuang is already waiting for him, the light reflected from the sword like rainbows crossing each other, attacking from both left and right.

The strokes executed by the three of them were not some superior strokes,

but their coordination was seamless. Three ordinary sword strokes attacking together, but the power is more than three times. The shimmering swords were blocking all the escape route of their opponent, and it seems like even if he could avoid this sword, he cannot avoid the other one.

Who would have known that once the man in black blocked Murong Shanshan's sword, he immediately loosened his hold, and dropped his sword. Quick as the wind, his hands have grasped Murong Shanshan's wrist.

This move is indeed dangerous, and yet also ingenious. If not for a person like him, no one else would think of such a move, that even Xiao Yu'er almost cheered when he saw it.

The other hand of the man in black is already at her throat, and shouted, "Do you still want her life?"

At this point in time, the back of the man in black is empty; the two swords of Little Fairy and Murong Shuang could have stabbed him a few times anytime.

But Murong Shanshan's life is in his hands, how can the two of them dare to strike? The two swords were pointing at the man in black, but they did not dare to stab forward.

Murong Shuang stamped her foot and shouted, "Let go, or I will kill you!"

The man in black smiled icily, "If the two of you do not let go, I will kill her!"

Little Fairy spoke up, "You let go first, then we'll let go."

The man in black laughed loudly, "A gentleman does not fight with a lady, you better let go first."

Murong Shuang asked angrily, "How can we trust you?"

He replied coldly, "I don't see why I should trust you as well!"

Both parties do not dare to strike, or release, and it was a stalemate for quite a while. Little Fairy and Murong Shuang are impatient by nature, and were already sweating in anxiety.

On the other hand, Murong Shanshan was not nervous at all, and replied calmly, “Second Sister, you must not let go, he will never dare to harm me.”

The man in black smiled coldly, “I’ve always been patient, it doesn’t matter even if we continue like this.”

In her anger, Murong Shuang unconsciously moved the tip of her sword forward, and on the other side, Murong Shanshan was immediately gasping for breath.

Little Fairy roared in anger, “How long do you want to drag this on?”

“Until you let go.”

Little Fairy’s face is full of sweat, as if she is so anxious that she does not know what to do anymore!

Xiao Yu’er laughed bitterly, “Silly girl, what are you so anxious about, are you afraid that there is no help coming?”

Right at this time, three shadows flashed from the outside, and in an instance was right in front of them, and it is indeed Nangong Liu… Qin Jian and Yan Renyu are here!

Xiao Yu’er… Murong Sisters were ecstatic, but that man in black did not appear frightened or surprised! Qin Jian is here, he will definitely not let Murong Shanshan die.

As long as he holds Murong Shanshan hostage, he need not fear about walking out from this place.

On seeing his beloved wife being held hostage, Qin Jian's expression changed. Yan Renyu's Jiang Hu experience is the least, and on seeing such a situation, was dumbfounded.

Little Fairy stamped her foot and shouted, "Stupid, you're still not coming to help?"

The man in black shouted, "Who dares to come over?"

Qin Jian asked, "What… what is this all about, friend we can talk things out."

The man in black raised his voice, "This is all a misunderstanding, but now that things have come to this, no matter how I explain, you will never believe me. Whatever that needs to be said, can be said after I walk out!"

By now Nangong Liu has seen the cloths hanging from the beams, and asked hoarsely, "Could you really be the Hero of Jiang Nan?"

Little Fairy shouted, "What dog as*ed hero, this person is Jiang Bie He!"

Murong Shanshan took a breath and asked, "Don't bother about me, have you found Ninth Sister already?"

Nangong Liu sighed, "We went to Hero Jiang's residence just now…"

Xiao Yu'er heard that, and his heart leaped, if they have found Murong Jiu at Jiang Bie He's place, how would they still be so courteous to him, addressing him as 'hero'!

Murong Shanshan anxiously asked, "Ninth Sister is not there?"

Qin Jian replied worriedly, "Don't you bother about Ninth Sister, you yourself… you…"

Nangong Liu laughed bitterly, "Ninth Sister is not at Hero Jiang's place, I'm

afraid we've all been made fun of!"

Xiao Yu'er was so shocked, that he almost jumped out from his hiding place. How can Murong Jiu not be there, unless they were looking at the wrong place?

Qin Jian continued, "We've also just met Master Hua Wu Que and Miss Tie Xin Lan, and he said Ninth Sister has long been missing, and it definitely has nothing to do with Hero Jiang!"

Murong Shuang stood there, stunned, her sword unconsciously drooping.

Little Fairy mumbled, "It seems that Tie Xin Lan is not the kind who will help defend Jiang Bie He."

Murong Shanshan sighed, "I've also felt that something was wrong, come to think of it, if Hero Jiang really wanted our ransom, why would he need to come here himself? Since he is here, how can he not know who we are? Besides, if he really wants to hide Ninth Sister, there are so many places to do so, why hide her in his own room?"

Puzzled, Qin Jian asked, "If you have thought of that, then why were you fighting with Hero Jiang?"

He saw that the man in black has not loosened his hold, so naturally he had to first reprimand his wife.

However, Murong Shuang argued, "He…. Hero Jiang himself did not say a word, how would we know."

Murong Shanshan rolled her eyes, and suddenly asked, "But… are you really Jiang Bie He, Hero Jiang?"

Once this sentence was said, everyone became suspicious.

Only to see that man in black finally lowering his hand, and smilingly said,

“Since the misunderstanding is cleared, it’s all the same if I am Jiang Bie He or not.”

However, he still did not remove the cloth covering his face.

Qin Jian has already rushed to Murong Shanshan’s side, and whispered, “Are you alright?”

Murong Shanshan held on to his hand with a smile, but her eyes were still staring at the man in black, and said, “Your humble wife has injured so many of Hero Jiang’s men, and we really deserve death, but we hope that Hero Jiang would forgive us.”

She deliberately emphasized on the words ‘Hero Jiang’, and even repeated the name twice.

The man in black still did not deny or concur, but only smiled “Since both parties have fought, injuries are unavoidable, so how can I blame Madam. Only, the person who tried to secretly frame me, is really hateful!”

As he spoke, his pair of cold eyes suddenly stared at the area where Xiao Yu’er was hiding, and everyone’s eyes unconsciously followed his gaze.

Murong Shuang shouted, “Correct, that person must never be let off!”

Little Fairy continued, “If I can find that person, I will first cut off his tongue, dig out his eyes, before asking him why he wants to execute such a devious ploy.”

As the few of them spoke, they subtly surround Xiao Yu’er’s hiding place at the same time. With so many martial arts exponents surrounding one person, no matter who that person is, he can forget about escaping!”

Xiao Yu’er’s palms started breaking out in cold sweat, and he knows that once these people capture him, the outcome would be unthinkable. His plan backfired, and instead of harming others, brought harm to himself instead.

During this short period of time, his mind has turned a few hundred rounds, but he cannot think of a single way to escape.

By then, the man in black called out with a cold smile, “By now, you are still not coming out?”

Murong Shuang asked with hatred, “Since you have long known that he is hiding here, why don’t you say so earlier?”

The man in black replied, “Just now I saw the secret weapons flying out from here, and injuring my men, so I thought it was an ambush placed by Madams.”

Xiao Yu’er secretly scolded, “This pair of dog eyes, are really vicious.”

However much he scolded, he knows that it would be difficult for him to escape this time. Unless he is dreaming, he would not be able to escape from here.

The man in black said icily, “If Friend does not come out yourself, I shall have to give orders for my bowmen to shoot!”

Murong Shuang suddenly snatched over a bow and arrow, and shouted, “I’ll let you see Miss Murong’s skills with the bow and arrow!”

Since viewing Murong Shuang’s room the other day, Xiao Yu’er already knew that she is exceptional with the bow and arrow. He certainly does not wish to squat here and be her target. Just then, someone suddenly chuckled, “It’s so crowded here, is there a show going on?”

Everyone turned around, and saw a person wearing a long robe with disheveled hair, chuckling stupidly, and walking forward like a spirit, who is none other than Murong Jiu!

Where did Murong Jiu go just now? Why is she here now? Even Xiao Yu’er was stunned by the sight.

The Murong sisters were ecstatic, and cried out hoarsely “Nine, I’ve missed you badly!” As they cried, two of them were already rushing forward to grasp Murong Jiu’s hands.

Murong Jiu took a look at them, and her gaze was bewildered, and chuckling, asked “Who are you? I don’t know you?”

Murong Shuang paused, “Ninth Sister, you… don’t you even recognize Second Sister?” Before she could finish her sentence, tears were already welling from her eyes.

Murong Shanshan was also weeping, “Ninth Sister, how did you end up like this?”

Murong Jiu looked that them in a daze, and did not reply.

Yan Ren Yu could not control himself any longer and walked over, asking, “Ninth Sister, do you recognize me?”

Little Fairy interrupted, “She doesn’t even recognize Second and Third Sister, how could she recognize you?”

Yan Ren Yu lowered his head, his tears dripping on the floor. Qin Jian and Nangong Liu also wore expressions of pain.

Murong Shuang stamped her foot, “Who made her like this? Who?”

Little Fairy suddenly wailed, “She saw Xiao Yu’er resurrected from the dead, and she was scared into this state, actually Xiao Yu’er did not die, but deliberately scared her.”

Murong Shuang raised her voice, “Who is Xiao Yu’er? Where is he now?”

Little Fairy replied, “I’m afraid he’ll be dead by now.”

Murong Shuang was stunned, “You said earlier that he’s not dead, and now you said that he’s dead? So is he dead or not?”

Little Fairy explained, “He did not die initially, but later he fell over the cliff and died.”

She paused, and continued, “But this person is full of tricks, full of talents, others are so sure that he is dead, but he turned out to be alive. Without seeing his body personally, no one dares to say if he’s really dead!”

The man in black suddenly spoke up, “He is not dead. I saw him again recently.”

Murong Shuang shouted, “You know where he is?”

The man in black replied frostily, “From what I see, I’m afraid right now he is at…”

He seemed to have already guessed that the person hiding is Xiao Yu’er, and Xiao Yu’er’s heart went cold again. Who would have expected that before he could finish his sentence, Murong Jiu suddenly shouted, “Xiao Yu’er… Xiao Yu’er! I remember!”

Everyone was shocked and ecstatic, Murong Shuang asked, “You… you remember everything?”

Murong Jiu looked at her dully, and said slowly, “You are Second Sister.”

Murong Shuang screamed in joy and hugged her, and started crying for joy.

Murong Shanshan was also weeping with happiness, and said “Nine, Nine… heaven took pity on us, you’ve finally recovered.”

Murong Jiu smiled, “Third Sister… Third Sister, I can still see you? Am I

dreaming?”

The sisters were laughing and crying in a circle, and Xiao Yu’er, secretly looking from the side, also felt his eyes getting wet, and could not explain how he felt.

The man in black suddenly sighed, “That Jiang Xiao Yu has hurt your sister in such a way, no one in Jiang Hu will let him off.”

He is still not leaving, because he wants to deal with Xiao Yu’er, and is afraid that the Murong sisters would forget about this matter in their joy, so he hurriedly reminded them again.

Murong Shuang really stopped crying, and said with hatred, “If I know where that little thief is hiding, I will kill him.”

Murong Jiu suddenly interrupted, “Actually this matter cannot be blamed on Xiao Yu’er.”

Once this sentence was said, everyone was shocked, and the most surprised was Xiao Yu’er himself, followed by Little Fairy.

She can’t help but ask, “Who else can you blame but him? Don’t you hate him to the core?”

With a sorrowful smile, Murong Jiu replied “Seeing him resurrected from the dead, I was traumatized, although I was a little dazed, but I soon regained my thoughts after a while.”

Murong Shuang wondered, “Since you have regained your memory, why didn’t you recognize us just now?”

Murong Jiu replied, “I was harmed by Jiang Bie He!”

Once these words were uttered, even Xiao Yu’er was confused. Why would Jiang Bie He harm her?

Murong Jiu continued, “He saw that I was conscious, so he used drugs to confuse me. He wants to make use of my befuddled state, to force me… to marry him, because he wants to be the son-in-law of the Murong Family. He kept me under supervision day and night, just now, when I saw that he was not around, I slipped out secretly.”

Everyone thought earlier that Jiang Bie He had been wronged, but now the words were spoken from Murong Jiu’s mouth, how could it be false?

Murong Shuang fumed, “What a wicked Jiang Bie He, we were almost tricked by him!”

Nangong Liu was berating himself, “No wonder we couldn’t find her just now, so she had escaped herself. Luckily Heaven has eyes, so that she escaped here. The law really has long arms!”

As they spoke, they once again surrounded that man in black.

Xiao Yu’er was both surprised and delighted, but confused as well. How did things turn out this way? Even if Xiao Yu’er is the smartest person in the world, he could not figure out what this is all about.

Murong Shuang shouted, “Jiang Bie He, what else do you have to say now?”

Who would have expect that man in black to suddenly burst out laughing, “Who said that I am Jiang Bie He?”

He removed the black cloth covering his face, revealing a face full of fine beard. Everyone has seen Jiang Bie He before, and this face really did not belong to Jiang Bie He. Everyone was surprised.

Murong Shuang asked hoarsely, “Who are you actually?”

Murong Shanshan asked, “If you are not Jiang Bie He, then where is Jiang Bie He?”

The man in black suddenly shouted, “Jiang Bie He is right here!”

He actually dashed into where Xiao Yu’er was hiding and shouted, “Jiang Bie He, come out now.” As he spoke, his palm struck down like lightning.

End of Chapter 55

Chapter 45

Chapter 56

Xiao Yu’er was surprised on seeing that palm bearing down at him, and in his haste blocked the palm and shouted, “You are Jiang Bie He in disguise, who are you trying to trick?”

That man in black also shouted, “You are Jiang Bie He in disguise, who are you trying to trick?”

Xiao Yu’er rolled his eyes, and scolded, “Jiang Bie He, you evil thief, you son of a b*tch, as*hole, turtle!”

He thought that Jiang Bie He is quite a character, and would not scold himself.

Who knew that the man in black also shouted, “Jiang Bie He, you evil thief, you son of a b*tch, as*hole, turtle!”

Xiao Yu’er laughed loudly, “Even if I can’t force you to reveal your true colors, hearing you scold yourself, is enough to release my frustration. Ha ha, scolding yourself a turtle, so funny, oh so funny.” That man in black also laughed, “Even if I can’t…”

And he actually repeated what Xiao Yu’er said, not changing a word, saying everything as it is. Xiao Yu’er was happily scolding, but he was not too bad himself.

The two of them scolded as they fought, and everyone looked at them in astonishment.

Murong Shanshan commented, “Jiang Bie He’s martial arts is said to be Number One in Jiang Nan, so it can’t be bad.”

But the two of them, with their flying fists and legs, not only were their strength intense, even their moves were every changing and strange. They are both highly skilled!

For a moment, no one can tell who is stronger or weaker.

The continuous sounds of fighting rung in their ears, and everything that came into the path of their blows, will immediately be shattered into pieces.

The two of them fought from the inside to the outside, from near to far.

It must be known that the person in black does not want others to guess his background, and neither does Xiao Yu’er. With the same thoughts in their mind, they naturally brought the fight further and further.

Their strokes may be fierce, but actually none of them wants to drag the fight any longer. Suddenly, they stopped, and one went towards the east while the other went towards the west.

They were so fast that by the time Murong Shuang and the others caught up, they were too late to go after them. Besides, the two of them fled separate ways, and no one knows who they should be going after!

Right at this moment, a man suddenly flew out from the forest and blocked Xiao Yu’er’s path. Pointing at Xiao Yu’er, he gave a weird smile and said “This is Jiang Bie He, this is the real one.”

It was clear under the moonlight, this person turned out to be ‘Harming others without benefit to oneself’ Bai Kai Xin!

Xiao Yu’er was both startled and livid, and shouted “Are you mad? Don’t you want the antidote to save your life?”

Bai Kai Xin giggled, “Who’s saving who? You harmed me, why should I not harm you?”

Suddenly with a somersault, he disappeared into where he came from.

By then, the Murong Sisters have caught up, and a few swords were already surrounding Xiao Yu’er.

Murong Shuang cried out heatedly, “Jiang Bie He, if I let you escape today, then my surname is not Murong.”

Xiao Yu’er hopped in frustration and asked “Who is Jiang Bie He? Only an as*hole is Jiang Bie He!”

Murong Shanshan smiled icily, “If you are not Jiang Bie He, why are you fleeing?”

Xiao Yu’er was stunned; he really has no answer to this question.

Murong Shuang immediately continued, “That’s right, if you are not Jiang Bie He, why don’t you let us examine your face!”

They have been tricked once, and will no longer be tricked again. As they spoke, their hands were not idle, the swords in their palms striking out with increasing viciousness.

Xiao Yu’er replied, “I am a man, how can I let you girls touch my face. As the saying goes: There’s gold on a man’s face, there’s shit on a girl’s hand. How can I let my face be smeared with shit.”

In his anxiety, he started sprouting nonsense, with the intention of antagonizing them, so that he can find a chance to escape.

As expected, Murong Shuang was incensed and scolded, “What fa*t, you face is the one with shit.”

Little Fairy cried out, “If you end up in my hands, see if I don’t soak you in a container of shit!”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Even if I soak in a container of shit, I can’t let women touch me as well.” Everyone else has guessed his intention, and knew that he is trying to distract them with his nonsense, so they ignored him. Only that Yan Ren Yu was most naïve, and he can’t help but ask, “I’m not a woman, why not you let me examine you?”

Xiao Yu’er rebutted, “Aren’t you originally a girl? And I thought you were their sister.”

As he spoke, he himself found the thought funny, and he had just laughed when the front of his shirt was sliced open. If not for his superb martial arts, his intestines would have been carved out.

Since by now, he is going all out in his fight, and on seeing Qin Jian and Nangong Liu not making any moves, but just watching the fight from the side, he laughed and said, “Everyone in Jiang Hu envies the son-in-laws of the Murong Family, saying that you have married well. From what I see, you might be better off if you have married a pock marked or crippled woman.”

He was happily talking, when his shoulder suffered another strike, and although it did not strike his bone, but where the sword passed through, the fresh blood is already oozing out from the wound.

Qin Jian replied with a frosty smile, “I actually did not want to win you by numbers, but since you are like that, I shall have no arguments.”

As he spoke, he has already struck out thrice, and these three strikes were just right in terms of strength and depth, well complementing the lack of steadiness in the Murong Sisters’ swordplay.

Although he is secretly lamenting in his heart, but his words were scathing, and he laughed “Nangong Liu, why don’t you attack as well, unless your martial arts cannot be seen, and you are only roaming about Jiang Hu with your wife’s

backing?”

Nangong Liu’s expression changed slightly, and he said with a low voice, “Fu Jie, Fu She… Shi Feng, Xu Zhong… Huan Tiao…” (various acupuncture points) He has not finished his sentence, but there were already three swords attacking the acupuncture points he mentioned, and with a ‘whoosh’, the position next to Xiao Yu’er’s ‘Huan Tiao’ point has been sliced open!

As he watched coldly from the side, he spoke calmly, telling them the areas where Xiao Yu’er has difficulty avoiding and blocking. Xiao Yu’er was busier than ever.

Nangong Liu continued, “Ling Men, Zhong Fu, Yin Shi, Liang Qiu… Cheng Fu!”

‘Swish, swish, swish’, three strikes later, Xiao Yu’er’s ‘Cheng An’ point was slashed, as expected. He was thinking to himself, “Once I hear you calling out the position, don’t tell me I can’t avoid it?”

But who knows that when it was spoken, he just cannot avoid the attacks.

Nangong Liu was controlling the whole situation, and is well aware of Xiao Yu’er’s moves, so the positions he mentioned are naturally Xiao Yu’er’s fatal points.

Nangong Liu continued, “You Men, Tong Gu… Fu Hui, Gui Lai… Tong Quan!”

This ‘Tong Quan’ point is at the bottom of the feet, and Xiao Yu’er was surprised on hearing it, and thought to himself, “Your swords can’t possibly can attack the bottom of my feet?”

Murong Shanshan’s sword came attacking straight at his ‘Fu Hui’ and ‘Gui Lai’ points, and he could have avoided it, bit another sword was blocking his path.

In his haste, he did not spare a thought and his leg flew up to kick Murong Shanshan’s sword holding wrist. Murong Shanshan might have retreated, but with a ‘swish’, Murong Shuang attacked, directly on his ‘Tong Quan’ point. Xiao

Yu’er was wearing leather boots, and although this strike did not cause any serious injury, he couldn feel beads of cold sweat dripping down.

Nangong Liu continued calmly, “Shen Tang, Xin Yu… Wei Zhong, Yin Gu… Que Xuan!”

This time, Xiao Yu’er was even more attentive, and concentrated on protecting his ,Que Xuan’ point, but he did not expect to feel a cold rush of air behind, and his ‘Hui Yang’ point was struck.

Right at the same time that Nangong Liu called out, “Hui Yang!”

Xiao Yu’er can’t help but secretly sigh, “Forget it…”

Who would have expected that right at this time, Murong Jiu’s screams can be heard from afar, “Help…. Jiang Bie He… you evil villain…. Third Sister… Second Sister…. Help….”

Her cries were getting further and further.

Murong Shanshan cried out, “Oh no, we forgot about Ninth Sister at the ancestral hall…”

Little Fairy replied, “Jiang Bie He is there.”

Yan Ren Yu added, “This person is really not Jiang Bie He!”

Amidst the cries, they have already flown towards the direction of Murong Jiu’s cries. Nangong Liu was the slowest to leave, and he clasped his fist towards Xiao Yu’er, and said “You have amazing skills, and seems to have combined all the best points of various sects into your own skills. However, you were not able to apply the moves seamlessly, and revealed your weak points. I assume that it’s because you had things on your mind, and were not concentrating on the fight. If you can change this habit in future, it would have been useless for us even if I was giving pointers from the side.”

Xiao Yu’er was surprised, and asked, “Why are you telling me all these?”

Nangong Liu replied, “You are definitely not Jiang Bie He, Jiang Bie He’s moves would not have been so raw.”

Xiao Yu’er fumed, “Since you have realized it, why didn’t you say so earlier?”

“I may have realized it, but at that time I wanted to see who you really are, so I did not mention anything. But now that Ninth Sister is in trouble, it’s another matter altogether.”

Xiao Yu’er sighed, and asked “It’s because I scolded you, so you deliberately let me suffer.”

Nangong Liu smiled, “If it is not because I was feeling troubled as well, I would not have been affected…”

With a slight clasp of his fist, he turned around and gave chase as well.

Nangong Liu may have left, but Xiao Yu’er was still digesting what he had said earlier, and the more he thought, the more he savored the thought.

“…I assume that it’s because you had things on your mind, and were not concentrating on the fight…”

With another sigh, Xiao Yu’er mumbled “His words struck right to my core. Seems like this descendant of the aristocratic Wu Lin family is really quite capable, and is not one to be taken lightly.”

Dazed for a while, he then walked forward with a large step, thinking of looking for that ‘Harming others without benefit to oneself’ Bai Kai Xin so that he can settle some scores with him.

As he walked, he can’t help muttering to himself, “Why is that Bai Kai Xin suddenly not afraid of death, that he did not even want the antidote? … And

what is it with Murong Jiu? Has she really been captured by Jiang Bie He?”

The more he thought, the more confused he became, so he might as well stop thinking. However, he started feeling the pain on all the wounds on his body, so he found a large tree in the forest and sat down for a rest.

By now, the stars are fading, and rays of sunlight are slowly emerging from the east. Birds are starting to chirp in the forest and the earth seems so quiet and peaceful.

Xiao Yu’er closed his eyes and mumbled, “I’m afraid I’ve been too much of a busybody, but one cannot just eat and not do anything. Besides, once trouble comes knocking, there’s no way one can hide.”

Who would have expected that right then, a voice suddenly called out, “Xiao Yu’er… Jiang Xiao Yu… where are you?”

Xiao Yu’er jumped up, and said with a bitter laugh, “Trouble really came a knocking… but I wonder who this person is? And how would that person know I am in this forest?”

That voice called out again, “Xiao Yu’er, I know you’re in this forest, come out quick, I have something important to tell you… aren’t you coming out?” This voice sounded like Murong Jiu.

Xiao Yu’er’s eyes brightened, and smiled “If it’s Murong Jiu, she came at the right time. I wanted to look for her, and she’s here.”

A person with long hair and a long robe, was floating towards him among the misty morning fog, looking like a forest goddess flying on clouds. It is Murong Jiu.

Xiao Yu’er suddenly jumped right in front of her and shouted, “Hey!”

Murong Jiu was startled, and with her hands raised to her chest, gently chided, “You want to scare me to death again?”

Xiao Yu’er looked her up and down, and grinned, “I have not seen you for half a day, and you seem to be getting prettier.”

Murong Jiu pursed her lips and smiled, “I have not seen you for half a day, and you seem to be getting more handsome as well.”

Xiao Yu’er grinned, “You don’t hate me anymore.”

Murong Jiu replied, “A girl’s heart is ever changing, don’t you know?”

Xiao Yu’er answered, “I have been tricked by women before.”

Murong Jiu laughed, “Who tricked you! Who lied to you? Could it be… that Miss Tie?”

Xiao Yu’er felt a sharp pain in his heart, and shouted “No! It’s Murong Jiu.”

Murong Jiu giggled, “When have I lied to you?”

Xiao Yu’er’s eyes gleamed, and said each word clearly, “You are not Murong Jiu!”

Murong Jiu laughed loudly, “Who else could I be if not Murong Jiu? Don’t tell me you are feeling faint, and can’t recognize me anymore.”

Xiao Yu’er stared at her with big eyes for a while, and suddenly jumped up, turned a somersault, rolled on the floor, and rubbed his eyes before laughing loudly, “I thought it could not have been you, but it must be you.”

Murong Jiu smiled, “Who are you talking about?”

Xiao Yu’er grabbed her and laughed, “You’re Aunty Du… Du Jiao Jiao!”

That ‘Murong Jiu’ also stared at him for a while, and suddenly burst out

laughing, “Little imp, you’re smart, you actually saw through my disguise. I’m afraid there’s no one else in the world besides you who can see through my disguise.”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “That’s right, but… I don’t believe that Aunty Du would really come here. Never in my dreams would I think that you would leave the ‘Valley of Evil’.”

Du Jiao Jiao actually sighed, and said slowly, “There are many things in the world which is unexpected.”

Xiao Yu’er widened his eyes, “I did not expect that even Aunty Du would sigh, and I can’t imagine why you would leave the ‘Valley of Evil’, and the most puzzling is how did you know about my matters, and disguised yourself as Murong Jiu?”

There are too many questions in his mind, and he can’t help but ask them all at once.

Du Jiao Jiao smiled, “You are rattling off your questions like a cannon, how am I supposed to answer you?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “For the past two years, no one knows where I am, so how did you find out, and why did you disguise yourself as Murong Jiu?”

Du Jiao Jiao smiled, “After I left the valley, I heard about some of your antics, but I did not know where you were actually hiding! And I can’t even find out.”

Xiao Yu’er blinked in satisfaction, and grinned, “Of course you couldn’t find out, if I wanted to hide, no one can find out where I am.”

Du Jiao Jiao continued, “I couldn’t find you, but I bumped into you a few days ago! Not only did I see you, but I talked to you as well.”

Xiao Yu’er scratched his head, and asked with a bitter smile, “That’s weird… I actually spoke to you…?”

Du Jiao Jiao giggled, “You were so fierce then, staring at me and asked me to scramble off. I was really afraid of offending you, so I had to obediently scramble far, far away.”

Xiao Yu’er jumped up, and with widened eyes, laughed, “I know, you are that… that…”

Du Jiao Jiao smiled, “I am that silly maid at the Luo Brother’s house.”

Xiao Yu’er chortled, “I must really hand it to you, you were really good, I can’t even imagine it in my dreams.”

He laughed heartily for a while, and stopped, asking “But before that day, you did not see me?”

“No.”

“So you would not have guessed that I will be at Luo Jiu’s house.”

Du Jiao Jiao giggled, “I’m not god, of course I couldn’t have guessed.”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “Then why were you disguised as a silly maid, waiting for me there?”

There was a sudden flint of anger in Du Jiao Jiao’s eyes, and she bit each word out “I was there for the Luo Brothers!”

Xiao Yu’er was enlightened, “I know, they originally had some enmity with you.”

Du Jiao Jiao replied, “I left the Valley, besides to look for you, it’s also to look for two other people.”

“The ones you are looking for, is them?”

Du Jiao Jiao did not reply, but slowly continued, “20 years ago, among the ‘Ten Evils’, five were forced to enter the ‘Valley of Evil’. The situation then was very urgent, and they left in haste, so they did not have enough time to bring with them several important things.”

Xiao Yu’er nodded, “That’s right, you and Uncle Li, Uncle Du and the rest have roamed in Jiang Hu for so many years, so naturally you would have gathered some things, and those things that you actually took a fancy to, naturally must be very precious.”

Du Jiao Jiao added, “You know, we do not have friends in Jiang Hu, only the other five of the ‘Ten Evils’ can be considered birds of a feather.”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “Of course I know about this point.”

Du Jiao Jiao continued, “So, we can only hand our things to them, but that ‘Mad Lion’ Tie Zhan was always crazy, and once he gets mad, he can disregard even his own life, much less things that others had given him. That ‘Harm others without benefit to oneself’ Bai Kai Xin is not only untrustworthy, but he is at loggerheads with Li Da Zui.”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “And if you give it to ‘Compulsive Gambler’ Xuanyuan San Guang, you’re afraid he will lose it all.”

Du Jiao Jiao can’t help but laugh, “That’s right, this ‘Compulsive Gambler’ may have gambled all his life, and considers himself a better gambler than everyone else, but he often loses until even his pants are gone. He will only stop when ‘the light breaks (Tian Guang), the man is empty (Ren Guang), and the money is gone (Qian ye Guang)’. His name Xuanyuan San Guang arose because of this saying.”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “As the saying goes, even a god will lose in a long gamble. And he’s only a compulsive gambler, not even qualified to be a god, so how could he not lose.”

Du Jiao Jiao continued, “That time, everyone initially decided to hand our things to ‘Charm to Death without Compensating with Life’ Xiao Mimi, but we

didn’t know where she has hidden herself, and could not find her.”

She continued, “So after much thought, we can only hand our things to the Ouyang Brothers.”

Xiao Yu’er commented, “From what I seem these two brothers are even more unreliable. Since these brothers likes to take advantage of others, by handing your things to them, is akin to walking straight into a lion’s den.”

Du Jiao Jiao smiled bitterly, “We did think of that point, but these Ouyang Brothers were most afraid of ‘Bloody Hands’ Du Sha, who never takes advantage of others, but only kill them. Therefore we thought they won’t dare to cheat us, but who would have expected that these brothers, once they thought that since ‘Bloody Hands’ Du Sha had escaped to the ‘Valley of Evil’ and would not dare to come out, they need not fear him. So they stole our things.”

Xiao Yu’er said, “Which is why you came looking for them once you left the valley.”

“That’s right!”

Xiao Yu’er blinked, “Are that Ouyang Brothers somewhat related to the Luo Brothers?”

Du Jiao Jiao emphasized each word, “The Luo Brothers, are the Ouyang Brothers!”

Xiao Yu’er cried out hoarsely, “No wonder their styles are so vicious, I’ve long suspected that their background is strange… but, from what I know, they do not look like the Ouyang Brothers at all!”

Du Jiao Jiao explained, “Over the years, they deliberately made themselves fat, and appear swollen. They were originally skinnier than ghosts, so once they put on weight, the looks on their face would have changed, and no one would be able to recognize them. These two brothers are really smarter than others, to think of such a perfect way to disguise themselves.”

Xiao Yu’er clapped, “That’s right, using natural fats to disguise themselves, is the best way, trust them to think of such a brilliant idea!”

Du Jiao Jiao continued, “Therefore, I chose one of the silly maids they hired, killed her and disguised myself as her. They could not see through me, but I could see through them, and have already known that they are the Ouyang Brothers. However, if I were to reveal them, I’m afraid they will escape, or they would not tell me the whereabouts of our things.”

Xiao Yu’er guessed, “Which is why you have to wait until you find out the location of those things before you strike.”

Du Jiao Jiao said, “Although I did not know initially that the dim witted girl was Murong Jiu, but I found her a bit weird. So while I was feeling bored, I made a mould of her face, or else how could I have disguised myself as her in such short notice earlier, and without any tools as well.”

Xiao Yu’er rolled his eyes, and suddenly laughed coldly, “You made this mask, not out of boredom I think.”

Du Jiao Jiao smiled, “Then, what do you think I made it for?”

Xiao Yu’er continued, “You must have thought to kill her if the need arises, disguise yourself as her, and since the ‘Luo’ brothers would not be on their guard against her, it would be easier for you to investigate.”

Du Jiao Jiao smiled, “You’re a smart little imp after all, only you can guess what is in my heart.”

End of Chapter 56

Chapter 46

Chapter 57

Xiao Yu’er replied, “You idea might be brilliant, but you did not expect me to take Murong Jiu away, so since your mask is now useless, you might as well do me a favor and use it to save me.”

Du Jiao Jiao laughed, “Once I saw that it was you, I knew that you must be up to some mischief, so I was constantly keeping a watch on you. This morning, I also overheard you and Black Spider asking Murong Jiu to write a letter.”

She continued with a coquettish smile, “If not for me keeping an eye out for you outside, I’m afraid you would have been found out by that Ouyang Brothers this morning.”

Xiao Yu’er was secretly startled, but he carried on with a smile “Even if they found out, it doesn’t matter.”

Du Jiao Jiao smiled, “You’d really rather die than accept help.”

Xiao Yu’er said, “So you overheard about the letter, which is why you knew we would be at the ancestral hall at night…”

Du Jiao Jiao continued, “Besides that, I also met another person.”

Xiao Yu’er asked hoarsely, “Bai Kai Xin?”

Du Jiao Jiao smiled, ‘While you were rubbing that dirt ball, I was already looking.”

Xiao Yu’er mumbled, “Weird, how could I not have heard that you are near?”

Du Jiao Jiao smiled, “With your current skills, you should have heard, but at that time Bai Kai Xin was facing me, and I have made a secret hand signal with him, asking him to create a din to divert your attention. Besides, you were so smug with yourself then, how could you have noticed.”

Xiao Yu’er smiled bitterly, “Seems like no matter the time, a person should never be too smug.”

He paused and suddenly guffawed, “No wonder Bai Kai Xin did not ask me for the antidote earlier, because you have already told him that was only a dirt ball. He ate the dirt ball, so naturally he would want to harm me to vent his frustration.”

Du Jiao Jiao smiled, “If things were not such a coincidence, you would not have benefited from it.”

Xiao Yu’er replied with a straight face, “This may seem like a coincidence, but it is not really a coincidence, everything that happened, happened for a reason. This kind of ending is the most reasonable of all.

Du Jiao Jiao giggled, “After all these, the only one who suffered is that Jiang Bie He.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed loudly, “If someone is to be harmed, then naturally it would be more meaningful to harm someone like him. If I were to harm an honest, respectful person, I might as well stay at home and count my fingers.”

Du Jiao Jiao thought for a while and slowly nodded, “This statement sounds quite reasonable, harming a bad person is indeed more interesting than harming a good person, since they definitely will not dare to make known what had happened. Besides, if others know that you have tricked him, they would only admire you, and no one would look for you to settle scores with.”

Xiao Yu’er grinned, “So, if you learn from me, and only harm the bad people and not the good, not only can you satisfy the craving for tricking people, you need not hide or fear them looking for you. Not only is it impressive, dignified but also worthwhile.

Du Jiao Jiao giggled, “Worthwhile matters, have all been done by you, little imp.”

Xiao Yu’er wondered, “But I still can’t think why you would leave the ‘Valley of Evil.’

Du Jiao Jiao sighed again, “There are many things in the world which is unexpected.”

The same sentence, she said it twice, and each time she speaks this sentence, she would unconsciously heave a long sigh.

Xiao Yu’er thought of something, and asked, “Could it be that something unimaginable has happened in the ‘Valley of Evil’?”

Du Jiao Jiao heaved another long sigh, “Something really serious.”

Xiao Yu’er pressed on anxiously, “What is the matter, tell me quick…”

Du Jiao Jiao replied slowly, “Do you know…”

Suddenly there was a light ‘whish’, and a shadow flew from the top of the trees, exclaiming loudly, “So you are here, I had a hard time looking for you.”

The person who came, is Black Spider.

With a long sigh, Black Spider said, “I almost missed seeing you.”

Only then did Xiao Yu’er realize that his usually black satin shine clothes are now muddied, his hair disheveled, and asked hoarsely, “How did you end up

looking like this?”

Black Spider explained, “When I went to deliver the letter, I saw that there was not a single person in Nangong Liu’s room, so I sneaked in and placed the letter on the table…”

He did not finish his sentence, when Xiao Yu’er interrupted, “Why did you walk into the room, can’t you just throw that letter in? Their own maid has been killed and eaten; of course they will be extra cautious about their accommodation.”

Black Spider laughed bitterly, “I was too careless. I had just placed the letter on the table when suddenly a long whip curled in and snatched the letter over. I knew something was not right but by the time I wanted to escape, the doors and windows have been blocked.”

Xiao Yu’er sighed, “They deliberately left the room empty to lure you in. How else could it be possible that others can walk in and out of Nangong Liu and Murong Shuang’s room at leisure?”

Black Spider continued, “In my shock, I wanted to charge out, but I did not expect all of them to be highly skilled, and their secret weapons astonishing. Not only was I unable to escape, it seems like I will soon be injured and captured by them.”

“The secret weapons of the Murong Family really live up to it’s name…but since you managed to escape from their circle, doesn’t it mean that you are stronger than them.”

Black Spider replied with a long sigh, “How could I have escaped single handedly.”

Startled, Xiao Yu’er asked, “Could it be that there was someone else helping you?”

Black Spider added, “I saw that I was losing, and suddenly someone floated in. Yan Ren Yu’s Godly Fist can be considered a strong opponent, but this person

just lightly waved his sleeve, and he flew straight out!”

Xiao Yu’er asked hoarsely, “This person’s martial arts is so powerful?”

Black Spider sighed, “This person’s martial arts is greater than anything that I have seen in my life. Even in my dreams I would not have imagined that there would be someone with such powerful martial arts.”

Xiao Yu’er stirred, “Even you are in awe of him, this is rare.”

Black Spider continued, “With a wave of his sleeve, he sent the secret weapons back out, and the strength was even greater then when they threw out the secret weapons. As they were dodging in alarm, this person has already taken me away.”

He continued with a bitter smile, “I was actually clasped under his arm, unable to move, and only saw that he flew about seventy, eighty feet with a light jump, as if he was floating on clouds.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “You story is getting more miraculous, how could there be someone with such superb Lightness Skill in the world.”

Black Spider said seriously, “You might not believe it, and even I, who witnessed it personally, almost could not believe my own eyes. But think about it, if this person does not possess such magnificent martial arts, would he be able to clasp me under his arms?”

Xiao Yu’er sighed, “That’s right, it’s impossible that there would be someone in the world who could clasp you under his arm.”

Du Jiao Jiao could not help but interrupt, “What does he look like?”

Black Spider replied, “This person is not very large, but has immense strength. I was only held by him for a while, but my whole body was so numb that I could not move.”

Once Du Jiao Jiao heard that this person is ‘not very large’, she heaved a sigh of relief, but Xiao Yu’er pressed on, “What about his face?”

“He was wearing a fierce and ugly looking copper mask, his pair of eyes looked extremely eerie. I’ve always considered myself brave, but with just one look at him, even my palms started breaking out in cold sweat.”

On hearing his description, Xiao Yu’er unconsciously felt the hair on his back stand as well, as if a cool breeze brushed past him, and a cold shiver ran down his spine.

Black Spider continued, “He ran up a small hill carrying me, and jumped up onto a huge tree, before putting me on a branch. My whole body was so numb that I could not move, not that I even dare to, as I was afraid I would fall once I move.”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “What about him?”

“He was also sitting on a branch, looking at me coldly, not talking. That branch looked so weak that even a child could have broken it, but he actually looked very comfortable sitting on it.”

Xiao Yu’er sighed, “That is indeed a weird person… could it be all highly skilled martial arts exponents will have some weird habits.”

Du Jiao Jiao giggled, “If you think like that, you are doomed.”

Black Spider added, “Indeed, he waited for half a day, and pressed two of my acupuncture points and left me there on that tree. With a wave of his sleeve, he disappeared.”

As he spoke, he seemed to have remembered something, and stared at Du Jiao Jiao, asking “Miss Murong has regained your senses?”

Du Jiao Jiao chuckled, “Have I recovered my senses…. I don’t know either?” She suddenly turned around and fled.

Black Spider was about to give chase when Xiao Yu'er held on to him and laughed, "Let her go, don't bother about her, tell me what happened to you on the tree first."

Black Spider's eyes seemed to be clouded over, and after hesitating for a while, he finally continued, "At that time the wind was getting stronger, and my body was moving with the wind. The branch looked as if it was about to break and I could not even move my fingers, so naturally I was petrified."

"Then how did you come down from the tree?"

Black Spider smiled bitterly, "I was just thinking of revenge when that person appeared, and as if he has read my mind, he asked 'Were you thinking of revenge?'"

Xiao Yu'er laughed, "Even I could see what you are thinking of. Your mouth may not say anything, but your eyes have revealed it all."

Black Spider said, "He saw through my mind, so I stared at him angrily, thinking that even if he kicked me down, it would be better than suffering on the tree. I did not expect him to laugh and say 'I saved your life, and you did not think of repaying me, but you are thinking of how to take revenge?'"

Xiao Yu'er chortled, "These words are indeed brilliant."

Black Spider added, "I was stunned by his words, and although revenge must be taken, I must also repay him, I cannot be an ungrateful person. However, his martial arts was so good that not only was I unable to take revenge, I don't even know how I should repay him even if I want to. Sometimes, repaying a debt can be more difficult than seeking revenge."

Xiao Yu'er mused, "I'm afraid he saw through what you were thinking again."

Another sigh, and Black Spider said, "He really saw through it, I have not finished my sentence, and he already said 'You don't know how to repay me,

right?', I humphed, and he said 'If you can deliver letter for others, can't you deliver a letter for me?'. I can't help but ask 'Is it considered debt repaid if I deliver the letter for you?'. He actually nodded his head, took out a letter, and asked me to deliver it to…. make a guess who?"

"That I cannot guess."

Black Spider said, "He actually wanted me to deliver a letter to Hua Wu Que."

Xiao Yu'er's eyes shone, and he laughed, "This is really getting more interesting, how is he related to Hua Wu Que? Why does he want you to deliver the letter for him, he obviously could have spoken to Hua Wu Que directly."

Black Spider replied, "Maybe he does not wish to see Hua Wu Que."

Xiao Yu'er countered, "Even if he did not wish to see Hua Wu Que, with his Lightness Skill, he could even deliver the letter right to Hua Wu Que's bed without him realizing it."

Black Spider suddenly said, "Maybe he knows that there is no way for me to repay the gratitude, so he thought of this errand for me."

Xiao Yu'er heaved a deep sigh, "That is possible as well, a weird person like him, it's possible that he would have such strange logic. You did not want to owe him a favor, so maybe he did not want another to owe him a favor as well…"

Black Spider agreed, "Exactly, I don't owe anyone else, naturally I would not want someone to owe me anything. Without such debts, life would be a lot better. If I know that there is someone who wants to repay me, I would feel bad."

Xiao Yu'er laughed, "Seems that the two of you have equally weird temperament, no wonder he would save you… but did you see what was written on the letter?"

Black Spider lashed out, "Am I one who will peep into another's letter? After

he released my acupuncture point, I delivered the letter to Hua Wu Que immediately. I did not even take a single look at what was written on the envelop."

Xiao Yu'er grinned, "You are indeed a gentleman, but I'm sure Hua Wu Que said something after reading that letter."

Black Spider replied, "It is precisely because he said something extremely bizarre after reading the letter that I was in such a hurry to find you."

Xiao Yu'er pressed on, "What did he say?"

"He said, 'Although I did not know Jiang Bie He for long, but we know each other very well, so how would I be swayed by rumors that he is an evil person. This Senior is overly worried.'"

Xiao Yu'er furrowed his brows and wondered, "How is that weird person related to Jiang Bie He? Why would he help Jiang Bie?"

Black Spider added, "After Hua Wu Que said those words, I was just about to ask him 'Who is this Senior?', when instead he told me 'You are so lucky to have seen this Senior, I wonder what he looks like, was he really wearing a copper mask?'"

Xiao Yu'er mused, "Since Hua Wu Que has never seen him before, why would he listen to him?"

Black Spider replied, "I thought it was peculiar too, that the Mistress of the Floral Palace has instructed him, if he should meet a 'Mr Copper' in future, he must never disobey him. Whatever this 'Mr Copper' said, he must comply."

Xiao Yu'er exclaimed, "So that weird man is called 'Mr Copper', this name is really as weird as him!"

Black Spider carried on, "The Mistress of the Floral Palace also said, this 'Mr Copper' is the most outstanding person in Jiang Hu since time memorial, and his

martial arts is the best in the world. She even said that compared to this ‘Mr Copper’, she is far beneath him.”

Xiao Yu’er was moved, and said “The Mistress of the Floral Palace is such a haughty person, would she say such a thing? If the Mistress of the Floral Palace is so in awe of him, then this ‘Mr Copper’s’ martial arts must be really intimidating.”

Black Spider replied, “But Hua Wu Que really obeyed what that ‘Mr Copper’ said, so he would really do his utmost to help Jiang Bie He in future. With someone like him helping Jiang Bie He, it’s enough of a headache for you.”

Xiao Yu’er gave a slight smile, “That doesn’t really matter.”

Black spider stared at him for a while before he suddenly said, “Farewell, my debt may have been repaid, but my revenge has not been taken!”

Xiao Yu’er asked hoarsely, “You want to seek that ‘Mr Copper’ for revenge?”

Black Spider replied coldly, “Can’t I?”

“But… but his martial arts…”

Black Spider fumed, “Can’t I take revenge if his martial arts is better than mine? Am I a person who bullies the kind and fear the evil?” As he shouted, he flew out. Now, there are three more mysteries in Xiao Yu’er’s mind.

Firstly, where has the real Murong Jiu gone to?

Secondly, what frightening event took place at the ‘Valley of Evil’?

Thirdly, who is that ‘Mr Copper’ really? How is he connected to Jiang Bie He? Why must he insist that Jiang Bie He is a good person?

By now, the sun has risen, and Xiao Yu’er has removed the mask on his face.

He does not wish to see others with Li Da Zui's face during the day.

The streets are starting to get crowded, but nine out of ten of them were walking from the west to the east, and most of them looked like members if Jiang Hu. Some of them even tied a black cloth on their sleeve, and all of them looked excited, mumbling incomprehensibly.

Xiao Yu'er was feeling perplexed, when right then, a very elaborate but strangely designed carriage drove up from the side and stopped right in front of Xiao Yu'er.

The carriage door opened, someone stuck her head out and said, "Come up quickly."

The sun was shining on her face, her features looked delicate but her complexion was extremely rough. It turned out to Du Jiao Jiao. Xiao Yu'er jumped up the carriage, and saw that the interior of the carriage was even more elaborately decorated, with thick, soft and wide cushions, and extremely comfortable when seated.

Xiao Yu'er could not help but laugh, "You're really resourceful, where did you get this carriage from?"

Du Jiao Jiao did not reply, but asked, "I waited for you for almost half the day, why did you come out only now. What is there to discuss between you and that Black Spider."

Xiao Yu'er smiled, "We were discussing about a 'Mr Copper', have you heard of this name?"

Du Jiao Jiao asked hoarsely, "The weird person who saved him is 'Mr Copper'?"

"You know of this person?"

Du Jiao Jiao looked stunned, but she suddenly raised her voice "I don't know this person, I've never heard of this name."

End of Chapter 57

Chapter 47

Chapter 58

Xiao Yu’er saw that Du Jiao Jiao was humming and hawing once Mr Copper was mentioned, and looked troubled, so he did not press on. He noticed that the carriage was also traveling towards the east, going the same direction as those members of Jiang Hu.

He could not help but ask, “Why are these people hurrying?”

Du Jiao Jiao replied, “To see the show. The disciple of the best martial arts sect in the word fighting against the most respected and powerful organization in Jiang Hu, don’t you think this would be an interesting show?”

Xiao Yu’er rolled his eyes and asked, “Could it be Hua Wu Que and the sons-in-laws of the Murong family?”

Du Jiao Jiao answered, “Nangong Liu and Qin Jian have gone to look for Jiang Bie He to settle scores, but Hua Wu Que pledged that Jiang Bie He is innocent. Both parties could not come to an agreement, so they can only duel.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed with gleaming eyes, “This fight is going to be really interesting. But, this thing only happened this morning, how did so many others find out about it?”

Du Jiao Jiao smiled, “I’m afraid it was Jiang Bie He who informed them. He must have thought that he has Hua Wu Que on his side backing him up, so he would definitely win. Naturally he would want more people to see the show.”

Xiao Yu’er sighed, “That’s right, the Murong Family may be powerful, but

compared to Hua Wu Que, they are still a little inferior… is there really no one else in the world who can deal with Hua Wu Que?”

Du Jiao Jiao looked at him with a smirk, “Only you.”

He really did not feel like continuing on this topic, and luckily there is a topic that he wants to discuss right now. He rolled his eyes and immediately changed the subject, “You were interrupted by Black Spider earlier, what major incident happened at the Valley of Evil?”

Du Jiao Jiao sighed, “Do you remember there was a Wan Chun Liu in the valley?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “How can I forget. When I was young, he would soak me in his medicine everyday, until I was giddy from it all. I may not be able to beat up others very well now, but I am quite good at taking a beating, thanks to all those soaking.”

Du Jiao Jiao continued, “Do you remember in Wan Chun Liu’s house, there is a person called ‘Medicine Jar’?

Xiao Yu’er was secretly startled, but without any change in his expression, he grinned, “Of course I remember, he eats more medicine than me. Every time Wan Chun Liu finds a new kind of herb, he will always let him try first.”

Du Jiao Jiao stared at him and said each word slowly, “Ten months ago, Wan Chun Liu and this Medicine Jar, both disappeared!”

Xiao Yu’er’s heart almost jumped out from his throat, but even if you are so close that your nose is sticking to his face, you would not be able to see any twitch of his facial muscle.

He only smiled lightly and asked, “This is nothing much, why are you all so excited about it?”

Du Jiao Jiao smiled as well, “Do you know who that Medicine Jar is?”

Xiao Yu’er widened his eyes, “Who?”

“Have you ever heard that there was once a man in Jiang Hu, who could let you feel the force of his sword once he drew it even if you are standing over ten feet away. He can also shave off your beard and hair without you feeling anything.”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “I’ve heard of this person, think he’s called Yan Nan Tian, right?”

Du Jiao Jiao sighed, “Besides Yan Nan Tian, there is no one else.”

“But isn’t he already dead?”

Du Jiao Jiao replied, “He is not dead! He is that Medicine Jar!”

Xiao Yu’er deliberately replied in shock, “Medicine Jar is Yan Nan Tian, with the most powerful swordplay in the world, this is really unimaginable. But if Yan Nan Tian’s swordplay was really so good, how did he end up half dead?”

Du Jiao Jiao sighed, “It was all because of you. We were trying to save you from his clutches, so we had no choice but to injure him.”

She sounded so believable that if Xiao Yu’er had not already heard from Wan Chun Liu about this secret, he might really have believed her right now.

He secretly sighed, and thought “Yan Nan Tian may be my benefactor, may be a hero, but there are no feelings between us. You people may be evil, but after all these years, we have developed some feelings for one another, so how could I bear to seek revenge on all of you for him, why do you still need to lie to me!”

Strictly speaking, although Xiao Yu’er is not a very good person, but he is a hot blooded, sentimental, and soft hearted person, although he may appear otherwise.

Xiao Yu’er was sighing in his heart, but put on a smile on his face and said, “For me? How is he related to me?”

Du Jiao Jiao replied, “This is a long story, we’ll talk about it slowly in future. You only have to remember, we offended Yan Nan Tian because of you. With the departure of Yan Nan Tian, we don’t even dare to stay on at the Valley of Evil anymore.”

“Why?”

Du Jiao Jiao explained, “The Valley of Evil may be viewed by others in Jiang Hu as a restricted place, but if Yan Nan Tian was to charge in, who in the world can stop him. He was tricked once, and this time he would be even more cautious.”

Her cunning and changeable eyes revealed a look of fear, and she continued with a long sigh, “This time when he comes, I’m afraid we the Evil people would turn into evil ghosts instead.”

Xiao Yu’er’s eyes glimmered, and asked, “You think… that he has regained his martial arts?”

Du Jiao Jiao replied with hatred, “Even if he has not recovered his martial arts now, but that Wan Chun Liu must have concocted some herbs that can treat his injuries, if not how would he have escaped with him out of the valley!”

Xiao Yu’er replied slowly, “But he could have recovered by now, right?”

Du Jiao Jiao involuntarily shivered, and stared at Xiao Yu’er, “You wish that he has recovered by now!”

Without any change in his expression, Xiao Yu’er replied calmly, “Although I do not wish it to be so, but no matter what, we have to make plans for the worst case scenario.”

Du Jiao Jiao was silent for a long moment, before she sighed again, “That’s right, he could have long recovered his martial arts, he could be looking for us

right now…” Her eyes looked out the carriage window, no longer in the mood for conversation.

The carriage was moving faster and faster, and sounds from the whip of the carriage driver were continuous, as if he is also in a hurry to watch the exciting battle.

At the bottom of three hills, there is a little valley, and by now there were already a few hundred people standing on the hills, even the tree branches were seated with people.

The carriage stopped outside the valley and Xiao Yu’er was unable to catch any glimpse of what is happening in the valley.

Voices could be heard discussing, “That mild looking scholar, could he be the disciple of the ‘Floral Palace’? I really can’t see how he can be highly skilled.”

“It seems that there is no one in Jiang Hu right now whose martial arts is better than his. Even Hero Jiang is in awe of him, I wonder how true that is.”

Someone sighed, “He looks so young, and yet is the best martial artist in the world. With such pretty looks, no one else in the world can be compared to him.”

The discussions were all focused on praising and envying him. Xiao Yu’er was peeved upon hearing them and Du Jiao Jiao looked and him and smiled, “You are not feeling good after hearing all these?”

Xiao Yu’er stared, “Who said that I don’t feel good. I am perfectly comfortable.”

Du Jiao Jiao chuckled, “He may be the son of heaven, but our Xiao Yu’er is in no way worse than him. I’m afraid Jiang Hu would belong to the two of you in future.”

Xiao Yu’er suddenly pushed the door open and said, “I’m going out to join in

the fun, what about you?”

Du Jiao Jiao replied, “You go ahead, I will wait here, but… you must do something for me.”

“What thing?”

Du Jiao Jiao continued, “Try to get that Ouyang… Luo brothers up into this carriage, you may be able to do that.”

Xiao Yu’er grinned, “As long as this carriage of yours is large enough, even if I were to make everyone in this valley get in, it would be a simple task.” He jumped down the carriage and walked away with big steps. Suddenly he turned around and stared at the carriage driver, who was just scratching the beard under his chin, looking at him grinning.

Xiao Yu’er squeezed into the crowd and climbed up the hill with ease.

On the hill, there were hundreds of big trees, and one could view the whole area sitting on it. Unfortunately, the trees were full of people sitting on it. Xiao Yu’er rolled his eyes, suddenly shook his head and sighed, “So strange that there were be so many people who do not fear death in this world, sitting right on top of the poisonous snake’s lair. If the poisonous snake were to take a bite on the butt…”

He had not finished his words and those people on the tree were already jumping down in fear. After the chaotic situation, they realized that the person who sighed and spoke earlier, is now seated comfortably on the tree.

These people can’t help but ask, “Hey, Friend, you said this tree is a snake’s lair, why is it that you dare to sit on it yourself.”

Xiao Yu’er grinned, “Oh? Did I say those words earlier?”

The crowd was surprised and furious, and heard Xiao Yu’er mumble, “With the Hero of Jiang Nan and the Murong ladies settling their problems here, if one

were to think of causing a quarrel here, that person must really be sick of living.”

The crowd looked at one another, and had no choice but to swallow their fury. Some climbed up the tree again, and for those who could not squeeze themselves up, they could only consider it their bad luck.

On the empty spot in the valley was a horse carriage, and that Hua Wu Que was leaning on the carriage door casually, as if he is talking to the person in the carriage.

Jiang Bie He was sitting on a piece of stone next to him, and was smiling and acknowledging those people around him that he knew, without putting on any airs that befits a ‘hero’.

Xiao Yu’er also saw those ‘Luo Jiu’ brothers. With the two of them so tall and fat, they were a head taller than everyone else in the crowd.

However, none from the Murong Family was there, and some of the members of Jiang Hu were starting to feel displeased, thinking that they were trying to put on airs.

Hua Wu Que does not look anxious at all, and was happily smiling. Every time his eyes turned to look into the carriage, that pair of piercing eyes will become especially gentle.

Xiao Yu’er unconsciously gripped his fists, feeling unspeakably awkward and wondered, “Who is the person in the carriage? Could it be that Hua Wu Que and Tie Xin Lan are never far from each other, and he brought her here as well?”

Suddenly, there was a commotion in the crowd, twelve burly men dressed in black with colored belts carrying three large sedans hurried in.

Behind each large sedan there was a small sedan following behind, and on them sat three bright eyed, charming young maids. Once the sedan stopped, the three maids came down from the small sedans, and opened the door of the large sedans. From within the large sedans, three dazzling beauties walked out.

These three were Murong Shuang, Murong Shanshan and ‘Little Fairy’ Zhang Qing. The three of them were elaborately dressed today, and had taken pains to dress up, looking exactly like well bred ladies out to receive guests, and not like valiant heroines or martial arts exponents coming out for a fight.

Most of the people sitting on the hills had only heard of the reputation of Murong Jiu and her sisters, but only a handful has really seen them before. Now, everyone’s eyes brightened, and nine out of ten of them were stunned by the sight. Even Xiao Yu’er almost could not recognize the last lady walking quietly behind is the same fierce Little Fairy who was galloping in the plains and spoiling for fights.

Hua Wu Que’s gaze of course shifted from the carriage to their faces. Instead of saying that his eyes were full of admiration, it would be more accurate to say it was full of surprised curiosity.

Murong Shanshan, with small, light steps, was walking in front. With a curtsy, she smiled and said “We are late, and had to trouble Sir to wait for us. Please forgive us.”

She spoke so gently and politely, so how could Hua Wu Que be ill-mannered in front of these ladies. He immediately bowed and smiled, “It’s not Madams that came late, it is I who came too early.”

Murong Shanshan smiled. “It is such a fine day today, and with the breeze and the sun as elegant as Sir, we should have come out earlier for a walk. Unfortunately, we were delayed by mundane matters, and could not arrive earlier.”

The laughing banter between the two, sounds is if they were a lady and a gentleman who has arranged to meet to enjoy the scenery, and not a thread of fury could be detected.

Hua Wu Que asked, “Master Nangong and Master Qin should be arriving soon?”

Murong Shanshan smiled, “Something happened at their homes, so they have already rushed back.”

Murong Shuang added, “Outsiders are not allowed to interfere in matters involving the Murong Family.”

Hua Wu Que was stunned, and asked “But… but aren’t Madams…”

Murong Shuang smiled in reply, “We may be their wives, but matters pertaining to the wives do not involve the husbands as well. Would we Murong sisters marry a husband who likes to poke his nose in his wife’s affair?”

Murong Shanshan continued with a laugh, “Sir would not wish to marry a controlling wife either, right?”

The words of these sisters actually stumped Hua Wu Que into silence, but Xiao Yu’er was secretly snickering, “Whoever marries the ladies of the Murong Family, is truly lucky. It’s obvious that Nangong Liu and Qin Jian themselves do not dare to duel with Hua Wu Que, but the way the ladies explained it off, not only was their reputation not affected, others would praise that they are considerate husbands instead.”

But, since they are willing to let their beloved wives attend, they must believe that their wives are confident of winning. Xiao Yu’er secretly thought about it!

Jiang Bie He could really control his temper well, and only now did he speak up with a smile, “If Master Nangong and Master Qin is not coming, how can this matter be settled?”

Murong Shuang shifted her gaze towards him, and the smile on her face disappeared immediately. She replied with a stare, “Who said that it cannot be settled?”

Hua Wu Que coughed and asked with a bitter smile, “How could I duel with Madams?”

Murong Shanshan smiled, “If Sir does not wish to duel with us, then we ask that Sir do not interfere in the matter between us and Jiang Bie He. He is not a child, can’t he handle his own affairs?”

Her smile may be gentle, but her words were sharper than knives. Everyone who heard her stopped smiling in shock, and felt that no matter what, Jiang Bie He would not be able to take these words lying down.

Who would have expected that not only did Jiang Bie He not react, but he smiled “Friends in Jiang Hu would know that I would never wish to hurt others, so how could I hurt Madams? And over such a minor misunderstanding as well.”

Murong Shuang shouted, “Jiang Bie He, listen, firstly, this is definitely not a misunderstanding! Secondly, you may not be able to injure us, so just strike!”

Jiang Bie He replied with a slight smile, “This misunderstanding cannot be cleared for now, but the truth will come to light in time, so how can I fight with Madam now. Even if Madam were to kill me, I cannot retaliate.”

These words were beautifully spoken, and some people in the crowd could not help but cheer. Even Xiao Yu’er can’t help but secretly admire him, “I’m afraid there’s no one else in the world who can be compared to Jiang Bie He with regards to handling others. Especially in such situations, his ability really shows.”

Murong Shuang roared, “You obviously know that Master Hua would not let us kill you, so you deliberately said those nice words.”

Suddenly someone shouted, “At least Hero Jiang would not slip home on his own, and let his wife come out and quarrel with others.”

Xiao Yu’er could see clearly that the person who shouted was Ouyang Ding, also known as Luo Jiu. However, the Murong sisters could not see him, and does not know who the one who spoke was.

They pretended not to hear, but they knew in their hearts that they cannot continue arguing with Jiang Bie He. Since both parties are using similar tactics,

it’s better that they tolerate each other a little.

Little Fairy suddenly shouted, “All these talk will not settle the problem, let’s just start the fight. How about me taking on Master Hua first?”

Hua Wu Que looked her up and down, and smiled “Do you think I can fight with you?”

Murong Shanshan smiled, “I guess that Master Hua will not duel with women.”

Hua Wu Que smiled, “It would be a sin if I were to accidentally smudge Madam’s make up, so how could I even fight with you.”

Murong Shuang raised her voice, “This matter has to be settled. If Sir has no other ways, I do have an idea.”

“Please advice.”

Murong Shuang replied, “I will say three things, if Sir can accomplish them, then we will never look for this Jiang Bie He. However, if Sir is unable to accomplish them, then we ask that you stop interfering in Jiang Bie He’s affairs!”

Right at this time, Xiao Yu’er suddenly realized, that the reason Qin Jian and Nangong Liu deliberately refuse to come, and the Murong sisters dressed so elaborately, was to stop Hua Wu Que from really fighting, so that they could use the three terms to tie Hua Wu Que up. Once Hua Wu Que takes the bait, it would be considered a battle won!

But Hua Wu Que is not stupid either. He was silent for a while before continuing with a smile, “What if the three tasks that Madam sets up is impossible to be completed?”

Little Fairy shouted, “If you are unable to complete the three tasks after we say them, then you shall see us complete it. This should be considered very fair.”

Murong Shanshan continued, “Of course these three tasks can be done by anyone, regardless if they are men or women. We only wanted to witness Sir’s martial arts and wits.”

Hua Wu Que smiled, “If that is the case, then I will retire from Jiang Hu in future.”

Xiao Yu’er has already guessed that the three tasks set by the Murong sisters must be something bizarre and extremely cunning, and could not help but secretly laugh, “Hua Wu Que oh Hua Wu Que, once you agreed, you will be tricked! The tasks they spent so much effort thinking of, I’m afraid even I would not be able to accomplish it, much less you!”

It must be known that although Hua Wu Que said those words lightly, but the four words ‘retire from Jiang Hu’ is too severe. His reputation now is rising day by day, and his life in Jiang Hu in the years ahead will definitely be exciting and glorious. However, if he were to lose today, he will spend the rest of his life in monotony. He may have confidence in himself, but the onlookers can’t help but feel nervous for him. The Murong sisters quietly held a discussion among themselves.

Murong Shuang finally smiled and said, “The first task for Sir, we ask that Sir stand using the ‘Golden Chicken Standing on One Leg’ position, and let someone push you. If Sir does not fall, then you have won.”

Hua Wu Que smiled, “But I wonder how many people would Madam want to push?”

Murong Shuang rolled her eyes and said, “Any number will do! For example, two hundred!”

Hua Wu Que took a deep breath, and replied with a smile, “Fine, so it shall be.” Once this sentence was uttered, everyone was surprised. How enormous the pressure of two hundred men would be. Even if those men are of average built, the combined strength will be more that what Hua Wu Que alone can stand against, much less now that he is going to stand on only one leg.

“What’s so exceptional about this, just have to use his brains and anyone would be able to accomplish it. You just have to stand against the face of the hill, forget about two hundred people; even twenty thousand people would not be able to ‘push’ you down.”

Xiao Yu’er assumed that Hua Wu Que also thought of this point, but who knows that he did not walk towards the hill, but just stood on one leg on the plain field and said with a smile, “Once I count to three, Madam can ask the men to push.”

The Murong sisters exchanged looks among themselves, unconsciously revealing the ecstatic look in their eyes, and chorused, “Yes Sir.”

The few hundred people in the Valley, including Xiao Yu’er, all thought that Hua Wu Que would surely be defeated, and some had already started sighing.

Judging by Hua Wu Que’s martial arts, even a hundred men would not be his match, but this task required a test of strength, and no skill is required. He can’t borrow another’s strength to bolster his own, nor can he dodge or hide. If others pushed with a force of a hundred kilos, you must also oppose the force with a hundred kilos

Hua Wu Que was heard counting, “One, Two, Three…”. At the count of ‘three’, his one leg on the ground suddenly sunk into the ground half an inch, that solid rock under his feet was like soft mud. Murong Shanshan was secretly alarmed on seeing this, and with a wave, said “Master Hua is ready, what are you waiting for?”

The eighteen burly carriage bearers dressed in tiger robes immediately ran forward. Obviously they have practiced for this, and as they stood in line, the second person is already placing his hand on the first person’s shoulder, the third person putting his on the second person… the steps of the eighteen people getting faster and faster, rushing towards Hua Wu Que and pushing him.

This push not only garnered the strength of these eighteen people, but also the strength picked up from the run. It’s not difficult to imagine how large the force would be.

End of Chapter 58

Chapter 48

Chapter 59

Who would have expect that after the eighteen men pushed him, not only did Hua Wu Que not fall, he did not even take a step back. His body actually sunk another few inches into the ground.

The more strength the eighteen men used, the faster he sunk. Beads of perspiration dripped down the heads of the eighteen men, who were using all their strength.

Hua Wu Que's body has actually sunken down by two feet, and half his leg is embedded into the stone ground. He carried a slight smile on his face, as if he had not exerted any strength at all, and was just standing on sand.

The rest of the people stared in awe, as if they were witnessing a magic show, and even thought their eyes were playing tricks on them… could it be he is really standing on sand and not real stone.

Xiao Yu'er was also stunned.

Hua Wu Que's approach may be more foolish than his own plan, and more difficult, but only this method would surprise and gain admiration from others.

After much thought, even Xiao Yu'er did not know if Hua Wu Que's method was smarter, or his own plan was smarter.

Hua Wu Que's body was sinking slower and slower, obviously the strength of the eighteen men wase getting weaker and weaker.

When Hua Wu Que stopped sinking, the eighteen men suddenly dropped to the ground, totally exhausted, and unable to stand up.

Hua Wu Que actually used ‘Shifting Flower and Grafting Jade’ and cleverly shifted the direction of their force. The force which was supposed to push him back, after Hua Wu Que’s shift, is now pressing him down instead. It looked as if they were pushing him, but in fact they were just pressing him down to the ground.

The rest of the people naturally did not understand the intricacy of the move, and the more they do not understand, the more in awe they are of Hua Wu Que’s martial arts, and finally could not help but cheered thunderously.

The Murong Sisters expressions changed unconsciously, and Hua Wu Que said with a slight smile, “Does Madams want to find others to push?”

Murong Shanshan forced out a smile and replied, “Sir’s capability is really incredible, we are all amazed.”

Little Fairy pouted and shouted, “We’ll consider the first task accomplished, but there is the second task.”

With a slight smile, Hua Wu Que bounded up, and when the wind blows, the half of his pants which was embedded in the ground immediately fluttered into the wind like butterflies.

The other heroes cheered continuously, and even after the cheers stopped, the clear, crisp sound of someone clapping could be heard from inside the carriage. Xiao Yu’er’s heart immediately tightened on hearing that sound.

Although he had to admit that Hua Wu Que’s martial arts is indeed worthy of ‘her’ applause, but once he thought of this point, he can’t help but feel miserable.

Hua Wu Que has already asked with a smile, “What would the second task be, would Madam please advice.”

Murong Shanshan rolled her eyes, and smilingly replied “Inside Anqing City, there is a shop that specializes in selling snacks, called ‘Xiao Fang Zhou’. I wonder if Sir knows about it?”

Hua Wu Que replied, “Brother Jiang has brought me there a few times.”

Murong Shanshan continued, “The Eight Treasures Rice, Thousand Layer Cakes made by ‘Xiao Fang Zhou’ is sweet but not overly so, melts in one’s mouth, and is really the most wonderful in the world.”

Hua Wu Que laughed, “I may not be interested in such sweet stuff, but I do have a friend who heaps praises on these two items.”

Xiao Yu’er naturally knows who this ‘friend’ refers to, and the thought of Tie Xin Lan enjoying the Eight Treasures Rice with him is enough to make him almost fall off the tree in anger.

Murong Shanshan smiled gently, “Not only do we heap praises on these two items, but we keep pining about them, and cannot forget them. I wonder if we can trouble Sir to make a trip there to satisfy our craving.”

This task seems to be too unreasonable, and also too easy.

Hua Wu Que was also feeling perplexed, but he would never reject a lady’s request. He was stunned for a moment before he finally replied with a smile, “It would really be my honor if I could be of assistance to Madams.”

Murong Shanshan replied, “But this two items, will only taste good when eaten hot.”

Hua Wu Que sighed, and replied, “When I come back, I’m afraid they will still be hot.” Murong Shanshan smiled even more sweetly and continued, “But for the trip, Sir’s legs cannot touch the ground, I wonder if Sir can do that?”

Once her words were spoken, the others realized therein lays the difficult part

of her task. But how could he make the trip to and from An Qing City without his feet touching the ground?

Xiao Yu'er can't help but want to laugh again, and thought to himself "The tasks set by this Miss Murong are really ridiculous. Two feet not touching the ground, can't he travel by carriage or horse?"

This is another treacherous task, and if Hua Wu Que is unable to accomplish it but Murong Shanshan was able to do it, with Hua Wu Que's character, he would admit defeat.

Hua Wu Que suddenly took off his shoes, revealing a pair of clean, white socks and replied with a smile, "Whether my feet touches the ground or not, these socks will be the evidence."

Before he has even finished speaking, his had already flown off like smoke.

He did not go up the carriage, neither did he ride on the horse, but flew to a large tree and broke off two branches. The branch on his left hand landed lightly on the ground, and he has flown thirty feet away, followed by another light tap on the ground with the branch on his right hand, and he is now sixty feet away. His voice could now be heard coming from a distance, "Madams, please wait a moment, I will be right back."

He has executed the Lightness Skill 'Frosty duck plays with water' to perfection. Although another can use this Lightness Skill, but to cover several li in a moment is impossible.

As the discussion continued, time seems to pass very quickly, and a person could be seen from afar. Hua Wu Que has really arrived, and was holding on to something with his mouth.

His two branches tapped on the ground, his body immediately turned upside down, and his pair of clean white socks were still clean, not a speck of dirt to be seen.

Amidst the cheers, Hua Wu Que somersaulted, and both his feet slipped into the shoes which he had taken off earlier. He threw away the branches, and presented the parcel to Murong Shanshan, and smiled “I have not failed you, please eat it while it’s still hot.”

Murong Shanshan forced out a slight smile and said, “Thank you, Sir.”

She took over the parcel, opened it up, and inside were indeed steaming hot Eight Treasures Rice and Thousand Layer Cakes. She had no choice but to pick up a piece and slowly eat it.

This sweet and fragrant Thousand Layer Cake, actually seems to taste a little bitter in her mouth.

That’s right, Hua Wu Que might have used a dumb method, but Xiao Yu’er not only cannot call him stupid, but he could not help but secretly admire him.

His first ‘stupid plan’ showed off his amazing internal strength, and again with this second ‘stupid plan’ he showed off his remarkable Lightness Skill.

If he had not used these two ‘stupid plans’, not only will the gathered people not clap, they might even throw rotten eggs, orange peels at him.

Murong Shanshan managed to swallow a piece of the Thousand Layer Cake with much difficulty, and she could not imagine that it would be so trying to swallow a piece of cake.

Hua Wu Que did not move until she has finished eating, and asked with a smile, “What about the third task?”

Little Fairy could not take it any longer and shouted, “There’s a house with a closed door. You are not allowed to touch that door with any part of your body, nor are you allowed to hit it with any object. Can you enter this house?”

Xiao Yu’er secretly sniggered, “This third task is even more ridiculous than the second task. He can’t touch the door, couldn’t he just open the window and go

in?”

But by now he also knows that Hua Wu Que will never use such a plan. Hua Wu Que was silent for a while before he replied, “There are no houses here, I wonder if this horse carriage…”

Murong Shuang interjected, “The horse carriage will do as well. Your hands cannot touch the door of the carriage, and if you can enter the carriage, you would have won.”

Hua Wu Que shifted his gaze towards Murong Shanshan and asked, “Is that the case?”

Murong Shanshan thought for a while before replying with a smile, “The horse carriage and the house are the same.”

Hua Wu Que asked with a slight smile, “If I accomplish this task, will Madam have anything to say?”

Murong Shuang cast a look at Murong Shanshan, and Murong Shanshan replied, “If Sir can accomplish this task, we would leave immediately.”

She really could not think of anything else that could make it more difficult for Hua Wu Que, and even if they were to fight, they are no match for him, so what else could they do but leave?

Hua Wu Que smiled, “Since that is the case, then would Madam please witness…” As he spoke, he was already walking towards the horse carriage.

Xiao Yu’er thought to himself, “Could it be he can use ‘Hitting the bull from across the hill’ or a similar palm stroke, and shatter the door of this horse carriage?”

Hua Wu Que walked to the front of the carriage, and suddenly said, “Miss Tie, open the door.” A tinkling laughter could be heard replying from within the carriage, “It’s opened.”

The gathering heroes were first stunned, then perplexed, and finally can't help but started roaring with laughter. Even Xiao Yu'er almost wanted to laugh as well, but on hearing that tinkling giggle, he really was unable to laugh. The Murong Sisters stared at Hua Wu Que walking in the door, and were confounded as well.

Hua Wu Que could be heard asking from within the carriage with a laugh, "I have not broken any of Madam's rules, and have walked into the carriage. Would Madam agree that I have won?"

The Murong Sisters were tongue tied, and was unable to speak.

The method, which Hua Wu Que used, was even smarter than what the Murong Sisters and Xiao Yu'er have thought, and even more ridiculous. He only used such a plan at the last task, and by now not only will the gathered heroes not look down on him or find him a disappointment, instead they were even more in awe of his intellect. One by one, they all cheered, "Of course Master Hua has won, that goes without saying."

Even if Murong Shanshan tried to force out a thread of smile, she failed.

She stomped her feet, turned around and walked up the sedan. Murong Shuang followed behind and Little Fairy stared at Jiang Bie He with hatred, and said with a vengeance "Don't be too smug, I won't make life easy for you."

Jiang Bie He looked at her with a smile, not answering.

The eighteen men carried the three large sedans and three small sedans, and ran out of the Valley as if they are fleeing.

Jiang Bie He said with a smile, "Brother Hua's intellect and martial arts is really the best in the world, I am really impressed."

As the gathered heroes cheered thunderously, Hua Wu Que clasped his fists in thanks from within the carriage, and the carriage horse rode off amidst the

cheers.

Xiao Yu'er looked at the horse carriage, and thought of Tie Xin Lan in the carriage, feeling bewildered. His heart felt like a handkerchief that had been tied into knots, and after a while, he suddenly said, "Since when have I treated her so nice? Why must I suffer for her? I must have seen a ghost!"

When Tie Xin Lan was with him, he did not feel anything, but when Tie Xin Lan is now with someone else, he suddenly felt that she is more important than anything else.

Xiao Yu'er was dazed for quite a while, when he suddenly saw two tall and huge fat men walk out from the crowd, and only then did he remember what he had promised Du Jiao Jiao.

He jumped down the tree, squeezed his way through, and lightly tapped on that 'Luo Jiu' Ouyang Ding's shoulder. Ouyang Ding turned around suddenly, his expression changed.

Xiao Yu'er laughed, "You are always so nervous, it's strange that you did not get any thinner."

Only when Ouyang Ding recognized him did he start smiling, "The gratitude of a beauty is most difficult to swallow, and I have no beauty who is gratuitous towards me, so I can only eat to while away my time, so naturally I would become fat."

Xiao Yu'er rolled his eyes and smiled, "So the two of you already knew that I was the one who took that lady away?"

Ouyang Ding grinned, "Who else would she leave with besides with Brother?"

Ouyang Dang laughed, "Only we did not expect that Brother would also be interested in that silly maid, and took her away as well."

None of their guesses were correct, and they would not expect that 'silly maid'

is actually Du Jiao Jiao, and thought that Xiao Yu'er also took that 'silly maid' away.

Naturally Xiao Yu'er did not correct them, and grinned "To have is better than not to have, and two is better than one, right?"

As they spoke, they have already walked out of the Valley, and were almost upon Du Jiao Jiao's carriage.

Xiao Yu'er suddenly stopped walking, and said "The two of you can go ahead, we'll meet again tonight."

Ouyang Ding chuckled, "Could it be Brother is going to meet a lady again?"

Xiao Yu'er smiled mysteriously, and said "Maybe…" He deliberately cast a look towards the carriage.

Ouyang Ding rolled his eyes and laughed loudly, "We have nothing to do anyway, and were thinking of having a chat with Brother."

Xiao Yu'er pretended to be anxious and said, "I have to go someplace else, the two of you…"

Ouyang Dang suddenly raised his voice, "I'm afraid Brother is going someplace else."

Ouyang Ding had already dashed to the front of the horse carriage, pulled the door open and started clapping and laughing, "My guess is indeed correct, the lady is really here."

These two brothers, one would always want to take advantage of others, and the other would rather die than be at a disadvantage, and after seeing the 'beauty' that they found being stolen by someone else, felt that they had suffered a huge loss. If they don't take some advantage back, they won't even be able to sleep in peace. Unanimously, the brothers went up the carriage.

Ouyang Ding laughed, “Brother should come up too, as my brother and I will not be chased off.”

Xiao Yu’er was secretly snickering, “You’d ‘rather die then be at a disadvantage’, seems like you will certainly take advantage today.”

He went up the carriage dejectedly, and sighed “If I had known, I should have avoided you earlier, and not run up to greet you…. ai, I’m afraid all the excitement had gone to my head.”

And so the carriage starting moving, running forward.

The Ouyang Brothers were grinning and sat down comfortably on the thick and soft seat, not knowing that seated opposite them is their nemesis.

Du Jiao Jiao lowered her head, as if she was shy, but actually she did not want the ones sitting opposite her to have a good look at her face.

Ouyang Ding chortled, “It’s only been a day, how did Miss become so pretty.”

Ouyang Dang grinned, “The flower will bloom even more beautifully with the morning dew, don’t you even understand this?”

Although these two brothers are always on their guard against others, but in this carriage, with the wall of the carriage behind them, what is there to guard against.

Even though Xiao Yu’er knows that Du Jiao Jiao wanted to trick these two up the carriage so that she can settle scores with them, but he does not know how she would go about doing it.

Du Jiao Jiao continued sitting there shyly. She did not seem anxious to reveal her cards, neither was there any intention of asking for Xiao Yu’er’s help, as if she is already sure of her plans.

Xiao Yu’er felt that this show is more interesting than the one earlier, and almost couldn’t wait to see how Du Jiao Jiao would strike, and how the Ouyang Brothers would retaliate.

By now the horse carriage has traveled faster and faster, away from the crowd, into the wilderness.

Ouyang Ding can’t help but ask, “Why is Brother’s love nest so far away?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed out loud, “If you want to taste the fruit, you have to be patient.”

Ouyang Dang chortled, “That’s right, that’s right, but….”

Du Jiao Jiao suddenly lifted her head and said with a coquettish smile, “But this fruit is extremely sour, I’m afraid you won’t be able to take it.”

The Ouyang brothers were both stunned, as if they already felt that something was not right.

Ouyang Ding laughed loudly, “Since when did Miss become such a good talker!”

Du Jiao Jiao smiled, “Very long ago, about twenty years.”

The expressions on the Ouyang Brothers’ faces changed again, and the two of them were getting ready to rush out of the carriage.

Xiao Yu’er was secretly furrowing his brows and thought, “When did Du Jiao Jiao become so impatient in her affairs, those two sentences of her, isn’t she afraid of alerting them?...”

Right at this time, there was a ‘poof’ sound, and beneath the spacious carriage seat, four hands shot out from the thick and soft cushion!

The two of them felt numb between their elbows, and their arms were pressed down by the four hands, in addition to an iron hoop around their chest, and they were unable to move at all!

Ouyang Ding was extremely startled and stammered, “Bro… brother, you… why are you doing this?”

Xiao Yu’er felt surprised and funny, and said “This has got nothing to do with me, don’t ask me.”

Ouyang Ding turned towards Du Jiao Jiao and asked, “Could this be… Miss’s idea?”

Du Jiao Jiao giggled, “Who else but me?”

Once the Ouyang Brothers heard that tone, their faces paled, and Ouyang Dang asked, “You… Who are you really?”

Du Jiao Jiao smiled, “It was genuine when you did not recognize me just now, but if you still don’t recognize me now, you must be faking it.”

Ouyang Dang stammered, “We…. How would we know Miss?”

“If you don’t know me, why are you so afraid?”

Ouyang Ding replied with a forced smile, “Afraid? Who’s afraid….”

Ouyang Dang chuckled, “We brothers of course know that Miss Jiao is joking.”

Du Jiao Jiao sighed, “Ouyang Ding, Ouyang Dang, there is no use in you pretending anymore…”

Ouyang Ding said, “Sister Du, you think it’s funny too! A skinny person could actually become so fat.”

Du Jiao Jiao smiled, “I’m afraid you ate pig’s food.”

Ouyang Ding replied, “That’s right, that’s right, we brothers really seemed to have eaten pig’s food, ha ha…”

Du Jiao Jiao stared at them and said frostily, “Now is the time you spit out the pig’s food, right?”

The two of them kept going ‘ha ha’, but did not say anything, and Xiao Yu’er knows that these two must be up to no good again.

Suddenly a person could be heard laughing from beneath the carriage, “Besides getting themselves round and fat over the last twenty odd years, I did not expect the Ouyang Brothers to learn the skills of Ha Ha, why don’t you just accept them as your disciples.”

It was an eerie, weird voice, and it’s Bai Kaixin.

Someone laughed loudly, “Haha, if I accepted these two as disciples, I’m afraid they would even take my trousers, and I can only walk on the streets with my naked butt, haha.”

These two sounds of ‘haha’ were loud and the genuine, ‘child like’, ‘Dagger in Laughter, Little Monk’ Ha Ha’er is here.

The Ouyang Brothers were originally thinking of escaping, but once they heard those two were hiding underneath, what hope do they have of escaping.

Ouying Ding laughed dryly, “Little Brother here unexpectedly sat on two elder brothers, what a sin.”

Bai Kai Xin laughed underneath the cushion, “That’s all right, Sister Du made the bottom area here more comfortable than my own bed at home, and there’s wine and meat….”

Ha Ha'er continued with a laugh, "But the thought of your fat butts right on top of my head, makes me lose my appetite."

Ouyang Dang replied, "The two of you won't let go, little brother here is unable to stand up, and if little brother can't stand up, the two of you can only continue squatting underneath… Sister Du, what should we do?"

Du Jiao Jiao smiled, "Isn't that easy? As long as you spit out the pig's food, they will let go immediately."

Bai Kaixin added, "If not we can always kill the both of you."

Ha Ha'er continued, "Haha, this is not a bad idea."

Ouyang Ding sighed and said, "The things that Sister Du handed to us brothers, we had long wanted to send them to the Valley of Evil, but…"

Du Jiao Jiao asked with a frosty smile, "But the things were lost, right?"

Ouyang Ding replied with a dejected expression, "Sister Du's guess is indeed correct, the second year you went to the Valley, those things were all snatched by someone. My brother and I were afraid that Sister Du would blame us, so we can only…. can only…."

Du Jiao Jiao's expression did not change at all, even her eyes did not blink, and she said "This is indeed a good reason, but who was the one who snatched the things?"

Ouyang Ding heaved another sigh and replied, "Lu Zhong Da."

Du Jiao Jiao suddenly giggled, and said "Brother Ha, do you think they told a good lie?"

Ha Ha'er responded, "Haha, not bad indeed, they obviously know that there is no way we can ask Lu Zhong Da."

Bai Kaixin chuckled, “This is called the dead cannot verify.” Ouyang Dang replied, “If there is any ounce of untruth, then may I be destroyed by heaven and earth, and die a horrible death. I will be reincarnated as a sow in my next life and be barbequed and eaten by Brother Ha.”

Xiao u’er secretly sniggered, “This curse really sounded ridiculous, I wonder how many times a day he says it, or else how could he rattle it out so smoothly…”

However, Du Jiao Jiao raised her head and ignored him. Ha Ha’er and Bai Kaixin were also silent under the cushion, but sounds of chewing could be heard. Apparently Bai Kaixin is starting to eat the meat.

The Ouyang Brothers kept talking, and were sweating from their speech, as if they have talked their mouths sore, but Du Jiao Jiao did not seem to have heard a single word.

The more Xiao Yu’er saw the proceedings, the more interesting he felt it was, and although he wanted to leave initially, now he couldn’t bear to. By now the horse carriage suddenly stopped, and then, a face appeared at the window of the carriage.

This face is cold and pale, so pale until it looked as clear as ice.

The Ouyang Brothers saw this face, and looked as if they had just been whipped, their whole body crouched into a ball, and Ouyang Ding stammered, “So… so Du... Brother Du is here too!”

End of Chapter 59

Chapter 49

Chapter 60

The Ouyang Brothers were so eloquent and articulate earlier, but now that they saw Du Sha they can't even speak a few words properly.

On seeing 'Bloody Hands' Du Sha's icy looking face, Xiao Yu'er suddenly felt a surge of kindred spirit, and can't help but laughingly ask, "Uncle Du, how are you?"

Du Sha replied, "Fine!"

He only took one look at Xiao Yu'er, but in this moment, the frosty look in his eyes seemed to have melted a little, but when this pair of eyes stared at the Ouyang Brothers, the icy look was even frostier.

He pulled open the carriage door, without saying anything, his other hand is already on Ouyang Dang's face, to and fro, slapping more then twenty times, before he asked coldly, "Do you still recognize me?"

Ouyang Dang dare not make a single sound, and smilingly replied, "Little… Little Brother would not dare to…. to not recognize Big Brother Du."

With a chilling smile, Du Sha gave a back slap, and pressed on his 'Xu Pi' point on his right knee, and similarly slapped Ouyang Ding as well. He turned around and said fiercely, "Come down!"

Ouyang Ding stammered, "Little… Little brother here can't move my legs, how do I go down?"

Du Sha replied, “You can’t use your legs, then use your hands and climb down!”

The Ouyang Brothers cast a look at each other, and really crawled down obediently.

The carriage stopped outside a deserted mansion, and the carriage driver is already gone.

The few of them walked into the deserted mansion, and saw that in the dilapidated hall, there was a fire, and on top of the fire, something unknown was cooking in a pot. There were also a few clay jars, scattered around the floor in a mess, looking as if they contained ingredients for cooking.

Someone was squatting next to the fire, and it was the carriage driver. In such a hot day, he was sitting next to the fire and yet there is not a bead of perspiration on his head.

Du Jiao Jiao smiled, “Xiao Yu’er, you’re still not hurrying to go see your Uncle Li, he has been thinking of your everyday all these years, but I wonder if he was thinking of eating your flesh?”

Xiao Yu’er giggled, “Seems like, Uncle Li is angry about something?”

Li Da Zui couldn’t control himself and chuckled, pulling Xiao Yu’er hand and laughed, “I didn’t expect you little rascal to remember this sentence.”

Only now did the Ouyang Brothers crawl in, sighing, with ‘Bloody Hands’ Du Sha following coldly behind them. When they slowed in their crawl, he gave them a hard kick, and treated them worse than pigs.

Ha Ha’er laughed loudly, “These twenty years, it’s the first time that so many of our brothers are here together. What a rare occasion, we must celebrate.”

Du Jiao Jiao chuckled, “If others in Jiang Hu were to find out that we old friends have gathered again, I wonder what they will think?”

Ha Ha'er laughed, "I'm afraid that they will be so scared that their guts will break."

Li Da Zui replied with a straight face, "The guts must never be broken, or else the meat will be so bitter it cannot be eaten." Xiao Yu'er's eyes rolled around, looking at these people, thinking of the times when he was growing up, and felt a surge of indescribable feeling in his heart.

These people may be evil, but in his eyes, each one of them has their adorable sides, and they are really so much more endearing than that hypocrite Jiang Be He.

Xiao Yu'er was feeling really happy, but once he thought that how each one of these people are like the plague. Now that they have resurfaced in Jiang Hu, there will be many people who are going to be unlucky, he can't help feeling a little troubled.

He can't just stand there looking, he must think of a way.

He heard Du Jiao Jiao say, "Now, we're only left with Yin Lao Jiu. I wonder what have he bumped into, why is he not here yet?"

Ouyang Ding, who was sprawled on the floor, answered with a smile, "Little Brother here is ecstatic that we brothers are reunited again."

Du Jiao Jiao commented, "That's right, but you have cheated us of all our money, where else do we have the money to buy wine?"

Ouyang Ding replied, "If Sister Du let Little Brother here off, I will immediately go and look for that Lu person, and snatch the things back even if it cost me my life."

He has not finished his words when Du Sha's steel hooks are already hooked into his shoulder, and hung him up by the hook. Ouyang Ding could not take it any longer and screamed like a pig for slaughter, "Big Brother Bu, Little Brother

here has never lied, please let me off."

Du Sha asked coldly, "Where are the things? Speak!"

Ouyang Ding stammered, "It's really…. really been taken by Lu Zhong Da…"

Du Sha's fist pounded into his face once the word 'Da' was uttered, and a mouthful of fresh blood, together with three teeth, spurted out.

Although Xiao Yu'er knows that these Ouyang Brothers were worse than anyone else, but looking at them now, he could not bear to see them suffering. Just as he was going to think of a way to help them, Ouyang Ding had already screamed, "I'll talk, I'll talk. The things are still around, Lu Zhong Da did not even touch them. I was lying just now, please let me off."

Xiao Yu'er sighed, and mumbled, "You knew you had to speak, why did you not say so earlier, or must you really wait until they use such methods against you? Then I cannot blame them for being ruthless.

Du Sha asked, "If the things are still around, where are they?"

Ouyang Ding replied, "If I tell you, will you still kill me?"

Ha Ha'er laughed, "Haha, we were originally like brothers, why would we kill you?"

Ouyang Dang commented, "This words should be spoken by Big Brother Du before my brother and I can rest at ease."

'Bloody Hands' Du Sha may be vicious, but he has always kept his words, and has never told a lie. This point is well known by everyone in Jiang Hu.

Du Sha coldly replied, "After you tell us, we will definitely not take your life!"

Ouyang Ding heaved a long sigh, and said "The things are hidden in a cave at

the peak of Turtle Hill…”

Ouyang Dang interrupted, “Little Brother here can draw a detailed map for you.”

After the map was drawn, everyone looked ecstatic, and four pairs of hands reached out at the same time. A sting of ‘pak’ sounds were heard, your hand hitting mine, my hand hitting yours, and four pairs of hand shrunk back… there’s only four pairs of hand, because ‘Bloody Hands’ Du Sha’s hand, besides for killing, will never be stretched out so easily.

Li Da Zui finally said loudly, “This map should be kept by Big Brother Du, or else I will not rest at ease.”

Suddenly a person spoke slowly, “That’s right, besides Big Brother Du, there is no one else who will put me at ease.”

Amidst the lingering words, a person had already appeared outside the window.

Ha Ha’er commented, “Ha ha, Yin Lao Jiu is truly a smart person, he waited until we have exhausted ourselves before coming in to take the pickings.”

Yin Jiu replied coldly, “You have exhausted yourselves, but did I not?”

Du Jiao Jiao smiled, “What effort have you exhausted? Unless you were hounded by a ghost and could not escape?”

Yin Jiu You said each word slowly, “I did meet a ghost.”

Yin Jiu You’s eyes landed on Xiao Yu’er, and suddenly smiled sadly, “Xiao Yu’er, make a guess what ghost was it?”

Xiao Yu’er rolled his eyes and laughed, “A ghost who can hound you is rare, but one that can scare you, there could be one…”

Du Jiao Jiao jumped up and asked hoarsely, “Could it be that you saw Yan Nan Tian?!”

Yin Jiu You smiled craftily, “If I met him, can I still come here? … I only saw him from afar, saw him riding on a horse, very much alive, and seems that he is in better shape than before.”

On hearing this, Xiao Yu’er was surprised and happy. Li Da Zui, Ha Ha’er, Bai Kai Xin and Du Jiao Jiao’s expressions all changed, especially Du Jiao Jiao, who rushed forward and asked, “He… He was going towards which direction?”

Once this sentence was spoken, the infamous ‘Ten Evils’ could not even sit down. Li Da Zui was the first to stand up and said, “This is not a place to stay for long, let us leave.”

Ha Ha’er added, “Naturally we must leave, I admire the person who will not leave.”

Ouyang Ding fluttered, “Please, take me away as well, I… I do not wish to see Yan Nan Tian too.”

The three words ‘Yan Nan Tian’ seem to have some magical effect, to be able to make these ruthless killers so restless and lost.

On seeing this, Xiao Yu’er was surprised, ecstatic and envious, and thought to himself “If a person can be like Yan Nan Tian, then he would not have lived his life in vain…. I thought that I was not too bad, but compared to him, who am I?”

But Yan Nan Tian is also human, what Yan Nan Tian can do, why can’t Jiang Xiao Yu do it, and in what way is Jiang Xiao Yu inferior to others?

For a moment, a million thoughts were churning in Xiao Yu’er’s mind, he suddenly felt downhearted, but suddenly felt warm blood rushing through his body, and his heroic spirit rose…

Suddenly he heard Ouyang Ding scream, and fresh blood spurted out. One of his arms and legs were already cut off by Du Jiao Jiao.

Ouyang Dang asked hoarsely, “Big Brother Du, you… you promised…. you…”

Du Jiao Jiao smiled, “Big Brother Du only promised not to take your life, but he did not promise anything else.”

As she spoke, she cut off one hand and one leg of Ouyang Dang, and poured a jarful of sugar all over the both of them.

Ouyang Dang shouted, “You… you might as well offer me a quick release, kill me!”

Du Jiao Jiao smiled, “Big Brother Du said not to kill you, how can I kill you!”

Ouyang Ding replied bitingly, “You… your heart is vicious, what a venomous method!”

Du Jiao Jiao chuckled, “You may say this now, but if I were to end up in your hands, I’m afraid you will be twice as vicious as me.” She walked out with a coquettish smile, without even turning back to take a look at them.

No one seems to hear the screams of the Ouyang brothers. By now, the sun is setting, it is now dusk.

Xiao Yu’er stood along in the setting sun. Du Jiao Jiao, Bai Kai Xin, Li Da Zui, Du Sha and Yin Jiu You have all left, and before they left, each of them spoke to Xiao Yu’er. But what exactly did they say, Xiao Yu’er did not really pay attention, he only knew that they are all going to Turtle Hill, and did not ask him along. Besides, Xiao Yu’er has no intention of following them, he only heard them say, “Be on your guard against Yan Nan Tian, and try to defeat Jiang Bie He. It’s inconvenient if you follow us, we will look for you again in future.”

Xiao Yu’er did not really listen to their words seriously, because since an unknown time, his whole mind seems to be filled with the words ‘Yan Nan Tian’.

“Yan Nan Tian, why can’t I learn to be like Yan Nan Tian? Why learn to be like Du Jiao Jiao, Li Da Zui…. When I hate someone… why can’t I be like Yan Nan Tian, and look for that person openly, and have a duel. Instead, I became like Du Jiao Jiao and Li Da Zui, and only know how to play tricks on him in secret!”

The screams of the Ouyang brothers, came drifting with the wind, and Xiao Yu’er suddenly turned around and dashed back towards the abandoned manor.

The Ouyang Brothers were lying in a pool of blood, and thousands and millions of ants were rushing from all directions in the abandoned manor towards them. The suffering that they were going through cannot be aptly described with any words.

They saw Xiao Yu’er coming, and shouted in fear, “Please, stab me, I’ll be grateful to you even in death.”

Xiao Yu’er sighed, and carried the two of them out. He found a well and washed the ants off the two of them.

The Ouyang brothers never imagined that he would save them. Four eyes looked at Xiao Yu’er, and in their eyes were full of surprise and gratefulness.

Xiao Yu’er mumbled, “I’ve suddenly become compassionate, are you feeling strange? Although I know that you are not good men, but to make you die slowly like that is a bit too much as well.”

Ouyang Ding stared at him, and said, “You… if you are willing to save me, I… will reward you handsomely.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “As long as you can live, I will certainly save you, but I don’t want your reward.”

Ouyang Ding looked at him, as if he had never seen him before, and suddenly said “The treasures are not hidden in Turtle Hill.”

He suddenly spoke this sentence, which stunned Xiao Yu’er.

That face of Ouyang Ding, which would make anyone who sees it be on their guard, again revealed a thread of sinister sneer, and he said bitingly, “The words that I spoke under those circumstances, everyone would not think that it would be false, right? This is just what I want them to think, how else would those evil ghosts be tricked by me!”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “At the most, they will just be making a wasted trip, it can’t really be considered being tricked.”

Ouyang Dang was in so much pain that his lips were quivering, but he still laughed loudly, “If my brother and I wants to trick them, it would be more than a wasted trip.”

Ouyang Ding grinned evilly, “Even if they can survive this trip, they would have left half their lives on Turtle Hill.”

Xiao Yu’er furrowed his brows and asked, “Why?”

Ouyang Dang smiled sinisterly, “The place that my brother and I told them, there is no treasure, but a devil. This devil has not revealed himself for many years, and never in their dreams would they think that he would be hiding in Turtle Hill.”

Ouyang Ding added, “Even if we died, they did not benefit as well. After seeing this devil, I’m afraid their suffering would be ten times worse than ours.”

Xiao Yu’er shook his head and smiled, “Since you were going to die, why do you still want to harm others?”

Ouyang Ding laughed loudly, “I knew that they would not let me off anyway, so I might as well suffer a little more, and drag them down with me. I, Ouyang Ding, must take advantage even if it costs me my life.”

Ouyang Dang laughed loudly as well, “The two lives of my brother and mine, in

exchange for their five lives, this deal covers both my cost and my interest and I, Ouyang Dang, would rather die than be at a disadvantage."

Looking at them writhing in pain and yet trying to laugh loudly, Xiao Yu'er felt goose bumps all over his body, and shaking his head in a bitter smile, he said, "You are not harming others because you knew you were going to die, rather, you won't mind dying if you can harm others. Someone like the two of you is really rare."

These two brothers who were trying their utmost to harm others, although they were laughing, but their laughter were getting weaker. Ouyang Dang rolled over to Ouyang Ding's side, and asked, "Big Brother, are we really going to tell that lad where the treasures are hidden?"

Ouyang Ding replied, "This lad is born a bad person, after he got our treasures, he will surely harm even more people. After our death, to see this lad using our treasures to harm others, would also be a pleasure."

Xiao Yu'er sighed, "Others said, when one is about to die, even their words would be benevolent. You are looking at death in the face, won't you even say something nice?"

Ouyang Dang stammered, "We…. We were evil while alive, even in death…. we want to be evil ghosts."

Ouyang Ding continued, "Let me tell you, the real place where the treasures are hidden, is at…. Han Kou City, Ba Bao Lane, at the end of the lane on the right side, inside the three small houses, the door is yellow in color."

Ouyang Dang giggled, "They all thought that we would surely hide the treasures in some god forsaken secret cave, but would never expect that we would deliberately keep the treasures in a congested area, so that they would not think of this even in their dreams."

Their words were also getting weaker, to the point that it was barely audible, and the blood from the wound gradually stopped flowing as well.

Xiao Yu’er suddenly laughed, “Very well, if the two of you want to become evil ghosts, then go be one, but don’t you forget, evil ghosts have to climb hills of knives, and be fried in oil, it won’t be a good experience.”

Ouyang Dang’s body suddenly shrunk into a ball, and he whispered, “I’m not an evil person, and I don’t want to be an evil ghost, I… I don’t want to go to hell.”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “Only now did you think of saying these words, isn’t it a little too late?”

Ouyang Dang wailed, “I beg of you, use our treasures and do some good deeds for us.”

Ouyang Ding agreed, “That’s right, that’s right, we have committed too many evil deeds, please help us atone for our mistakes.”

Xiao Yu’er shook his head and commented, “Weird, a lot of people think that they can atone for their mistakes with some stinking money, isn’t this a ludicrous thought? If that is really the case, won’t heaven be full of rich people, and will the poor have to go to hell.”

The Ouyang brothers wailed in unison, “We beg of you, help us!” The Ouyang brothers started shaking, and could not longer say anything, but could only nod their heads vigorously.

Xiao Yu’er shook his head and commented, “If we let all the evil people in the world take a look at the two of you now, I’m afraid there will be a lot less people who will commit evil deeds in future.”

With a sigh, he continued, “But no matter what, I will try for you. Although it is too late now for you to repent, but it is still a little better than not repenting even in death, so put your minds at ease and die.”

In everyone’s life, there will be a day that is especially memorable.

Naturally Xiao Yu’er would have such a day as well, and on this day, Xiao Yu’er

suddenly realized many things… it's not that he was totally unaware of these things in the past, just that he has never put much thought to them.

This day, for Xiao Yu'er, whose life has always been colorful, is also especially memorable. Because on this day, he experienced such sadness and disappointment that he has never felt before, and also experienced excitement and exhilaration that he has never felt before. If he was a child in the past, this day has made him a fully grown up.

Now, Xiao Yu'er washed his face clean, went into the boutique and changed into a set of blue clothes. Looking in the mirror, he felt extremely pleased with himself.

And so he looked for the biggest, busiest restaurant and had a satisfying meal. The Jiang Hu friends from all over the place were still in An Qing City and of the tens of tables on the upper level, more than half were occupied by heroes of the martial arts world.

With a feeling of appreciation, Xiao Yu'er looked at them take large mouthfuls of meat and drink large bowls of wine, and felt that these crude men actually have their adorable points.

He heard someone at the next table laughingly comment, "I guess Brother Ouyang will come to this Scholar Place tonight."

That 'Brother Ouyang' laughed, "All thanks to Hero Jiang, who gave me an invitation as well, so I must come here for a drink tonight."

He deliberately spoke loudly, and as expected, quite a number of people surrounding him turned to look at him, their looks filled with envy and jealousy.

On seeing this, Xiao Yu'er felt laughter and anger at the same time. Jiang Bie He actually has the cheek to invite guests, and those invited were actually proud that they are being invited. This really made Xiao Yu'er so angry his stomach could burst.

At another table near the window, someone suddenly exclaimed, “Hero Jiang is holding a feast tonight for Master Hua, but why have Master Hua left now? Could it be that he is not giving due respect to Hero Jiang?”

Another person commented, “The weather is fine today, the sky clear, I guess Master Hua is bringing his future wife out of the city for a walk right now, and not really leaving.”

A large carriage, coming from the East, with its bamboo curtain rolled up halfway at the window. The outline of a beautiful lady with jet black hair could be made out from the window.

Hua Wu Que, who appeared refined and handsome, his clothes white as snow, riding on a Thousand li horse with a brightly colored saddle and bridle was following next to the carriage, speaking and laughing softly with the person in the carriage.

Xiao Yu’er took a glance, and was almost thrown into a stupor again.

By now most of the people on the upper level of the restaurant had rushed to the window and looked down, unconsciously sighing with envy. Someone even greeted with a smile, “Master Hua, how are you?”

Hua Wu Que lifted his head, and smiled slightly.

The people in the restaurant were afraid that he would not see them, so all of them stuck out their heads as far as they could, while Xiao Yu’er was afraid that he would see him, and quickly shrunk his head back.

Only when Hua Wu Que’s carriage had passed, did the people in the restaurant returned to their seats. Xiao Yu’er was still sitting there in a daze, and suddenly mumbled to himself, “Hiding from him like this, how longer must I continue hiding, must I hide from him my whole life…” As soon as he thought of this, he suddenly stood up and rushed down the stairs.

End of Chapter 60

Chapter 50

Chapter 61

Xiao Yu’er did not care at all how others looked at him, but just hitched up his clothes and ran faster and faster. In a short while, he had caught up with Hua Wu Que’s carriage.

The carriage was just about to leave the city, when someone suddenly shouted, “Hua Wu Que, hold on!”

Hua Wu Que furrowed his brows slightly, and held his horse back automatically. Tie Xin Lan had just stuck half her head out of the window when Xiao Yu’er ran towards them like an arrow.

The sudden appearance of Xiao Yu’er surprised even Hua Wu Que, who almost could not believe his own eyes, and Tie Xin Lan was even more stunned.

Xiao Yu’er controlled himself desperately, determined not to take a single look at Tie Xin Lan, and stared at Hua Wu Que with unblinking eyes. With a sudden laugh, he asked, “You think I am here to invite death, right?”

Hua Wu Que sighed, and replied, “That’s right.”

Facing a person like that, Xiao Yu’er can’t seem to smile anymore, and raised his voice, “Since you wish to kill me so much, why didn’t you look for me but waited for me to look for you?”

Hua Wu Que slowly replied, “Personally, I do not wish to kill you, so I was not in any hurry to look for you. But now that I have seen you, I still must kill you!”

Tie Xin Lan only regained her senses at this time, and suddenly pulled open the carriage door and dashed out from within, blocking Xiao Yu'er's front and shouted, "This time he came to look for you himself, at least you cannot kill him this time."

Xiao Yu'er suddenly pushed with his might, and she was knocked onto the carriage. Hua Wu Que's expression changed, but finally forced himself not to speak.

Tie Xin Lan looked at Xiao Yu'er and fluttered, "You… why did you treat me like that?"

Without taking even a glance at her, Xiao Yu'er stared at Hua Wu Que and said frostily, "I heard that this Miss Tie is your future wife, why is she meddling in my affairs, I don't even know her."

Tie Xin Lan bit her own lips with force, and although her lips are now bloodied, although tears were rolling in her eyes, but she did not leave.

Hua Wu Que felt stabs of pain in his heart, and deliberately avoided looking at Tie Xin Lan, asked calmly "Don't you want others to help you this time?"

Xiao Yu'er looked heavenward and laughed loudly, "If I needed help, why would I still look for you?"

He suddenly stopped laughing and shouted, "You would know in your heart that, a person like me, would never come and look for you and offer my life. Why then did I come, you must be wondering."

"Indeed I was wondering."

Xiao Yu'er continued, "You thought that I am unable to kill you, and I also thought that you are unable to kill me. If this drags on, even in another two hundred years, we would not know if you are correct or if I am correct. I am feeling anxious, and I'm afraid you are even more anxious than me, therefore, I came here today to settle this once and for all with you!"

A slight smile flickered in Hua Wu Que's eyes and he said, "How are you thinking of settling this?"

Xiao Yu'er replied, "You just have to name a place, and three months later, I will certainly find you for a death duel! No one is allowed to escape before a winner is found!"

Xiao Yu'er heaved a long sigh, and continued, "But before this three month deadline, even if you see me, you must pretend not to see me, and you definitely cannot look for me for a duel!"

Hua Wu Que was silent.

Xiao Yu'er said loudly, "If I do not look for you, you would not be able to find me anyway within these three months. You are not losing out with this request, why won't you agree?"

Hua Wu Que slowly replied, "This request that you made, there must be a ploy within."

Xiao Yu'er stared at him and asked, "You… you will not agree?"

Hua Wu Que suddenly turned his horse around and said, "Three months later, I will be at the vicinity of Wu Han, you will certainly find me there."

Xiao Yu'er replied loudly, "Very well, since you trust me so much, I will certainly not disappoint you!" Before he finished his words, he also turned around and walked away with large strides.

Tie Xin Lan was hoping that he would turn around for a look, but he never did turn his head back. Until his outline totally disappeared from view, Tie Xin Lan was still standing there in a daze. Hua Wu Que sat quietly on the horse, not rushing her at all.

Not knowing how much time has past, Tie Xin Lan finally went up the carriage

slowly. Upon seeing Hua Wu Que still sitting on his horse waiting for her when she opened the door, she felt an inexpressible feeling in her heart.

Hua Wu Que initially wanted Tie Xin Lan to take a stroll to relax, which is why he encouraged her to leave the city for a walk. But this trip out of the city, both of their hearts were tied into a knot, and it seems that it would be difficult to untie.

Tie Xin Lan kept rolling up the bamboo curtains of the window up, and releasing it down again. The view may be picturesque outside the city, but she no longer has the mood to take a look at it.

At the woods in front, thousands and millions of nameless mountain flowers were in full bloom, with a little stream flowing through the flowers and woods. The water in the stream was twinkling from the rays of the autumn sun.

In the distance, there is a poor man, who was lying face up next to the stream, tanning in the sun. Nearby the sounds of crickets were heard, with the sounds of birds chirping and the fragrance of the flowers. The soil on the ground was soft like carpet.

Hua Wu Que came down from his horse and stood beneath a flowering tree, deep in thought, with the gentle wind blowing his snow white clothes.

Tie Xin Lan opened the carriage door gently and walked on the soft soil. Looking at Hua Wu Que's back view, she seems to be in a daze, when she suddenly spoke, "You obviously know that it must be a ploy, why do you still agree to his request?"

Hua Wu Que seemed to sigh, but he did not turn his head back, nor say anything.

Tie Xin Lan walked past him, plucked off a little flower from a low branch, and gently crushed the unnamed flower, before she suddenly turned her head back and looking at him, asked "Why are you not speaking?"

Hua Wu Que smiled slightly, before he slowly replied “Silence, isn’t it sometimes better than words?”

Tie Xin Lan turned around and said, “These two years, you have been looking after me. If not for you, I would have died long ago. No one else has ever treated me as well as you do in my entire life.”

Hua Wu Que gazed at the fluttering strands of hair on her neck, and did not say a word.

Tue Xin Lan continued with a soft sigh, “In my entire life, there is no one else who treated me as bad as him, but I… I don’t know why either, when I see him, I lose my senses.”

Hua Wu Que shut his eyes and said, “These words, you need not say them to me.”

Tie Xin Lan’s shoulders trembled, and replied, “I know these words should not be said, but if I don’t tell you the truth, I’ll feel bad, I’ll feel that I’ve let you down even more.”

Hua Wu Que gently asked, “How can this be blamed on you? What wrong have you done me?”

That poor man in the distance, slowly stretched his body, and mumbled, “So young, and so tortured over such a small matter. Wait till you’ve grown up and you will realize that in this world, there are a lot more other things a thousand, million times more painful than this!”

Hua Wu Que initially did not pay attention to him, and did not think that his soft conversation on this side, would actually be heard by someone so many feet away. Even Tie Xin Lan unconsciously stopped her soft crying, and lifted her head.

That poor man yawned, and suddenly stood up with a somersault.

His face was skeletally thin, his brows dark as ink, with greenish marks on his face. Under the piercing rays of the sun, looking from afar, one could not tell how old he could be.

Ever since Hua Wu Que debuted, he never thought too highly of any of the heroes in the world. But without knowing why, this lazy poor man, have an inexplicable air of power. His build may not be very large, but no matter who is the person standing in front of him, that person would naturally feel very small.

That poor man, on seeing Hua Wu Que, seemed to be surprised as well, and mumbled, “Could it be him? Or else how could they look so alike. I would not interfere in other people’s matters, but he… how can I not fulfill his wish?”

Hua Wu Que and Tie Xin Lan could not hear clearly what he was talking about, and this poor man is already walking towards them. He walked languidly, as if he was walking very slowly.

However, it only took two steps and he is already in front of Hua Wu Que, and only then did Hua Wu Que take a clear look at him.

He was wearing a set of clothing, which was originally black but now had faded to white from washing, on his feet he wore a pair of tattered straw sandals, his large and long arms hanging down by his side, almost over his knees. A straw rope was tied around his waist, and on the rope an old rusty sword was slotted diagonally across.

This poor man had looked up and down a few times, scrutinizing Hua Wu Que, and suddenly grinned, “Do you really like this lady from the bottom of your heart?”

Hua Wu Que did not expect him to ask such a question at all, and was stunned.

That poor man shouted, “What silence is sometimes better than words, it’s all bullshit. If you don’t say it out, how would she know that you like her.”

Hua Wu Que actually blushed, and could not even speak. He always thought

that it's better to be subtle, but without knowing why, such crude words, coming out from this poor man's mouth, actually has an air of valor, making one feel strangely moved.

Although Tie Xin Lan was also blushing, she suddenly blurted out, "Some words, I would know even if he did not say it."

The lightning like eyes of the poor man immediately shifted its attention to stare at her face, and said laughingly, "Very good, I didn't expect you to be more outspoken than him. This kind of girl, even I would take a liking to, not to mention him."

The poor man continued, "Do you like him?"

Tie Xin Lan replied, "I don't…"

She lifted her head and took a look at Hua Wu Que, and lowered her head again, adding on, "It's not that I don't like him, but…"

That poor man did not wait for her to finish her sentence, and was already chuckling, "Since you do not dislike him, naturally it means you like him. Since the two of you like each other, then let me be the matchmaker, and you shall get married here today!"

Once these words were uttered, Hua Wu Que and Tie Xin Lan were both shocked.

Hua Wu Que asked hoarsely, "Are you joking?"

That poor man stared at him, and raised his voice, "How can this be a joke, look at this place, the birds chirping and the flowers fragrant, the weather so fine, if the two of you get married here, it will be so much better than any place else."

He was getting more excited as he spoke, and could not help laughing, "The glow from the red candle, how can it be compared to the beauty of the sun's

rays. The red carpets in the world, cannot be compared to the fragrance and softness of this soil. The two of you are able to swiftly complete your rites under the rays and on the soil, won't it be a great joy. Even I, feel overwhelming happiness!"

Listening at him talking to himself, Hua Wu Que does not know whether to feel angry or happy. Tie Xin Lan stood there in shock, not knowing whether to cry or to laugh.

Although she felt like rejecting the idea right now, she could not bear to hurt Hua Wu Que's feelings.

Hua Wu Que looked at her expression, and suddenly said, "You may have your good intentions, but we are unable to comply."

That poor man's laughter stopped, and he stared at him and asked, "You will not agree?"

Hua Wu Que heaved a long sigh, and replied, "Yes."

The poor man laughed, "I know, it's not that you are unwilling, but you are afraid that she is unwilling. However, she has not finished her words, so why should you be overly concerned."

Hua Wu Que thought for a moment, and said slowly, "There are many words which need not be voiced out."

That poor man sighed, "You obviously like her a lot, but for her, you'd rather harden your heart and not agree to it. A sentimental man like that, you are really your father's son."

Hua Wu Que did not understand what he meant by those words, and that poor man is already staring at Tie Xin Lan and asking, "A man like this, who else can you marry but him?"

Although Hua Wu Que knows that he was doing it for himself, but he couldn't

help feeling a bubble of anger, and asked with a cold smile, “I have seen many kinds of people, but I have never seen someone like this who forces others to marry.”

That poor man replied, “The way you spoke, you think that I can’t kill you, right?”

Once the word ‘right’ was uttered, he suddenly pulled out the sword at his waist, and slashed it towards a tree next to him. This sword is already rusty beyond recognition, and looked as if it can’t even slice through a branch, but who would have expected that with a slash of his sword, the huge trunk which is wider than an arm’s length actually broke into two!

Tie Xin Lan was worried that Hua Wu Que might offend him with his words, because this person’s martial arts is so profound, that even Hua Wu Que might not be his match.

It must be known that Tie Xin Lan has the kindest heart, although she did not wish for Hua Wu Que to injure Xiao Yu’er, she also do not wish for others to injure Hua Wu Que. Without waiting for Hua Wu Que to reply, she interrupted, “I agree.”

Hua Wu Que suddenly said, “I will never agree.”

Hua Wu Que obviously know that Tie Xin Lan did not agree wholeheartedly, and the more he loves Tie Xin Lan so deeply, the more he does not wish her to feel an ounce of reluctance.

Hua Wu Que said coldly, “I do not agree, means I do not agree. If you want to kill me, then just strike!”

Tie Xin Lan asked hoarsely, “You… don’t you like me?”

Hua Wu Que did not take a single look at her… There may not be a thread of semblance in terms of looks between him and Xiao Yu’er, but in terms of character, he was exactly the same as Xiao Yu’er.

That poor man stared at him and asked, “You would rather suffer for the rest of your life than to agree?”

Hua Wu Que affirmed, “I will never agree.”

The poor man shouted, “Fine! Instead of letting you suffer for the rest of your life, why don’t I end it all for you now!”

The sword flashed, aiming straight towards Hua Wu Que! Although he did not use all his strength in this attack, but the swiftness of the move, the force in the stance, no one else in the whole of Wu Lin would be able to attain the same.

With a ‘pak’ sound, Hua Wu Que might have avoided this strike, but the jade hairpiece tied to his hair was actually shattered by the force of the sword, and his full head of hair was standing up from the impact! How forceful was this sword stroke! It is unbelievable!

Tie Xin Lan cried out hoarsely, “Sir please stop quickly! He refused to agree because of me, I really do not wish to agree in my heart. Sir, if you want to kill someone, then kill me!”

In her fear, she unconsciously revealed the truth. Hua Wu Que felt a stab of pain in his heart, and the three palm strokes he executed, he did it without a care, heading straight on towards the flash of sword.

Who would have expected the poor man to actually retract his sword attack, and laughed loudly, “Those surnamed Jiang are really the all stubborn like an ox, but you are dumber than your father. Think about it, if she really disagreed, if she really don’t like you, would she die for you.”

Hua Wu Que was stunned, and Tie Xin Lan was shocked as well, and said, “His surname is not Jiang, he’s called Hua Wu Que.”

The poor man rubbed his head, his expression full of surprise, and muttered, “Your surname is not Jiang? This is really weird, you look like a Jiang, you look

exactly like him.”

Hua Wu Que also forgot to strike, and only thought this person seems crazy.

The poor man sighed, and said with a bitter smile, “Since your surname is not Jiang, whether you get married or not, is no longer my problem. Leave if you want to.” He actually does not care anymore, and turned around with a bitter smile.

Hua Wu Que and Tie Xin Lan looked at each other, not knowing what this is all about, only to see that poor man muttering to himself as he walked, “This youth is actually not Jiang Xiao Yu, weird, weird…”

Tie Xin Lan was both surprised and ecstatic, and asked hoarsely, “Could Sir thought that he is Jiang Xiao Yu, that’s why you were forcing us to get married?”

That poor man replied, “Although I could not bear to see the both of you in agony over matters of the heart, but if I was not under the impression that he is Jiang Xiao Yu, I would not have interfered.”

The poor man suddenly turned around, took a look at Tie Xin Lan, took a look at Hua Wu Que, and suddenly bust out laughing, “I got it, I got it, so the person who treated you badly that you were referring to, is Jiang Xiao Yu, and the two of you would have gotten married! Just because of Jiang Xiao Yu, it ended up in this situation.”

Tie Xin Lan sighed sadly, and lowered her head.

That poor man knocked his head with his hand and laughed, “I wanted to do some good, but who would have expected me to mess things up even more instead…”

He has spent his life exploring sword techniques, and in addition spent the later years of his life roaming in Jiang Hu, having a nomadic life, and has never tasted the feeling of romance.

On hearing his laughter, Hua Wu Que felt anger and bitterness, and suddenly asked, “Are you thinking of leaving?”

The poor man laughed, “I know you are feeling unhappy, so I’ll just let you punch me twice to vent your frustration.”

Hua Wu Que smiled coldly, “Your martial arts may be the strongest in the world, but you will never be able to take a palm attack from me. If you do not defend yourself, then you are looking for death!” As he spoke, a palm shot out.

Althougn this palm attack looked gentle, but the position it was attacking, was extremely vicious. Besides, the depth of the palm, has gathered the strength of the attack, and obviously once it was struck out, it would be beyond redemption.

That poor man has extremely good eyesight, and exclaimed, “Very good palm attack!”

He loves martial arts by nature, and now on seeing this young martial arts expert, he can’t help but want to test the other party’s skills, and he met the attack head on with his own palm!

Who would have expected that Hua Wu Que’s palm attack would suddenly change. The palm that was attacking like an arrow, suddenly moved towards the right. The ingenious change was really unimaginable.

This move is precisely Floral Palace’s unique ‘Shifting Flower and Grafting Jade’. Once Hua Wu Que executed this move, the other party’s palm attack will surely be aimed towards himself instead.

Unexpectedly, the poor man’s body turned smoothly, and actually avoided this stance of ‘Shifting Flower and Grafting Jade’, which no one else in the world has ever avoided.

Only now was Hua Wu Que truly shocked, and asked “Who are you actually?”

The poor man suddenly looked up to heaven and laughed loudly “I have always

hated that I did not have the chance to have a taste of ‘Shifting Flower and Grafting Jade’ in my life, I did not expect that today I would actually meet a disciple of the Floral Palace here…”

The thunderous laughter shook the flowers off from the branches around them.

Tie Xin Lan asked in fear, “Could it be that Senior has some enmity with Floral Palace?”

The poor man suddenly stopped laughing and bellowed, “My enmity with Floral Palace is as deep as the sea. I practiced my sword for ten years, so that I can exterminate everyone in Floral Palace!”

Hua Wu Que exclaimed hoarsely, “Yan Nan Tian! You are Yan Nan Tian!”

Floral Palace’s biggest enemy is Yan Nan Tian. In the whole world, besides Yan Nan Tian, there is no one else who would dare go against Floral Palace!

End of Chapter 61

Chapter 51

Chapter 62

Just as Hua Wu Que and Tie Xin Lan were feeling stunned, there was a flash of light in that poor man's eyes, and he said "I am Yan Nan Tian!"

Hua Wu Que was silent for a moment, when he suddenly took off his long shirt slowly, carefully folding it, and slowing walking towards Tie Xin Lan and gave her his shirt with both his hands.

Naturally Tie Xin Lan knows although it is only a set of clothing that he handed to her, but the underlying meaning was heavy and complicated.

Hua Wu Que said, "To be able to duel with Yan Nan Tian, is the lifelong wish of anyone who practices martial arts. Even disciples of Floral Palace, will find pride in being able to duel with Yan Nan Tian.

Tie Xin lan whispered, "You… Can't you leave? I'll help you block him, he will never kill me!"

Hua Wu Que smiled slightly, and said, "This duel is not for myself, but for Floral Palace…" He suddenly stopped talking, but the meaning of his unfinished sentence, was unimaginably heavy.

He slowly turned around, but suddenly turned his head back and said, "I also want you to know, that I did not want to kill Jiang Xiao Yu for myself, but for Floral Palace as well. When you see him three months later, you can tell him, although I wanted to kill him, but I have never harbored any hatred towards him. I hope he… he would not hate me either."

Tie Xin Lan's face was full of tears and she cried hoarsely, "Why must you always think about others in whatever you do? Are you living your life for others? You… shouldn't you be doing something for yourself?"

Hua Wu Que has already turned around, looking heavenward, he suddenly laughed and said, "For myself? … Who am I then?" This is the first time he revealed his pain in front of others, and the two sentences may be a simple one, but the underlying sadness is heavier than a mountain.

Looking at him, Tie Xin Lan weeped and whispered, "Others said that you are the most perfect, lucky, enviable person in the world, but who would understand your pain. Others said that you are the steadiest, calmest, but who would understand that you have lost even yourself. Others all wish to live your life, but who would understand that you are actually living for others."

Yan Nan Tian has all along been looking on from the side, and now he suddenly laughed loudly and said, "Hua Wu Que, you are indeed worthy of being a disciple of the Floral Palace! It doesn't matter if you win or lose in this duel, the reputation of Floral Palace will remain high because of you!"

Hua Wu Que replied, "Thank you."

Yan Nan Tian continued loudly, "But I also want you to know, besides you, there are many other people in the world, the things that they do are not for themselves either. Those who only know how to live for themselves, they might not be happy in their hearts, in fact they could be even more miserable than you!"

Hua Wu Que looked at him with unwavering eyes, and asked slowly, "You want to kill, is it because of others as well?"

Yan Nan Tian was silent for a while, and suddenly heaved a long sigh heavenward, as if he is full of misery, but unable to talk to others about it.

Hua Wu Que sighed, and suddenly took out a silver sword.

Tie Xin Lan has seen him fight on many occasions, but has never seen him use a weapon. She almost thought that all disciples of Floral Palace do not use weapons at all.

This silver sword in his hand, has a narrow body, and looked as if it's thinner than chopstick, but it's more than five feet long, with sliverish light flasing from tip to end, as if it might fly out of the hand anytime!

Yan Nan Tian's gaze flickered, and only took an uninterested glimpse at this strange looking weapon, and shouted, "Since you have already taken your weapon out, why are you not striking?"

Hua Wu Que lightly flicked the sword with his left middle finger, and the silver sword let off a "zing" buzzing sound. Before the buzzing sound stopped, the sword is already out of his hand!

When this sword is not moving, it is already shimmering with silver light, dazzling to the eyes. Now that the sword is executed, the shimmering silver looks as if a basin of mercury has been poured out from heaven.

Yan Nan Tian stood straight in the face of the sword, like a mountain. Hua Wu Que's sword was coming towards him, but he did not move at all. Suddenly, the silver light turned, and the sword attack suddenly changed direction. It turns out that Hua Wu Que's attack was a fake move.

Hua Wu Que used a fake move to test his opponent, and did not expect the other party to be so calm.

Hua Wu Que then executed seven fake moves continuously.

The continuous seven moves are Floral Palace's unique sword moves. Although they are all fake moves, but under the glare of the sword, no one can be sure that it is a fake move, and anyone would want to block and avoid the attack. However, no matter how he block or avoid, his moves have all been anticipated in this seven moves.

How would he expect that Yan Nan Tian was totally unaffected by these dazzling flashes of sword moves, and the uniqueness of this sword play, was totally lost in front of Yan Nan Tian.

As soon as Hua Qu Que's seventh move was executed, the steel sword in Yan Nan Tian's hands was already stabbing out, piercing through the dazzling light, aiming straight towards Hua Wu Que's chest.

This attack is ordinary, without any fancy moves at all, but the speed of the attack, the extreme ferocity of the move, is exactly showing off it's magnificence through normality, it's solidity through its power!

It doesn't matter how many changes Hua Wu Que's sword play could morph into, because he would have no choice but to avoid this attack first. Once the sound of the sword swishing was heard, Yan Nan Tian has already stabbed three times! Hua Wu Que avoided these three moves, but only managed to return a single attack.

Sliver flashes of light could be seen shimmering throughout the sky, and Yan Nan Tian looked as if he's trapped within the silver light, but in fact, these sliver lights of sword shimmering in the sky are unable to even attack once.

Hua Wu Que was attacking around Yan Nan Tian relentlessly, but Yan Nan Tian's feet did not even move an inch. Hua Wu Que's sword attacks are like flowing water, and Yan Nan Tian is like a pillar in the stream.

Their swordplay, one extremely gentle, the other extremely severe, one changing like the clouds, the other fiercely steady, one like a mercury pool, flowing into every nook and cranny, the other like a steel bucket, not leaking even a drop of water.

Although Hua Wu Que looks as if he is on the offensive, but in actual fact he is at a disadvantage. Tie Xin Lan stared at the fight in confusion, and has forgotten where she is. The abundant flowers in the woods fell like rain and covered the ground.

Xiao Yu'er found an inn with the intention of having a good sleep, but was

unable to fall asleep despite tossing and turning. Therefore, he might as well wear his clothes and walked out.

In the large courtyard, besides Xiao Yu'er, there is only another room which was occupied, and the occupant looked likes he's just moved in. There were voices coming out from the house, but the door and windows are tightly shut.

Suddenly a burly man in green dashed into the courtyard, in his hands he held a horse whip, like a carriage driver. Once he stepped into the courtyard, he shouted, "Is Jiang Bie He, Master Jiang here?"

Xiao Yu'er was stunned, why is Jiang Bie He here as well? What is he here for? There is not time for Xiao Yu'er to think too much, and he hid himself behind a pillar in a flash.

He saw the door of that house opened halfway, and someone inside asked, "Who's that?"

The carriage driver said, "The lowly one here is Duan Gui, who sent Master Hua out of the city earlier…"

He has not finished speaking, when Jiang Bie He walked out, but the door was immediately shut again.

Jiang Bie He furrowed his brow and asked, "Why are you back here? And how did you find your way here?"

Duan Gui replied, "Master Hua seemed to have run into some trouble outside the city, I hurried back to report, and happened to bump into Duan Fu who escorted Master Jiang here. That's how I found out Master Jiang is visiting here."

Jiang Bie He gave a slight smile and commented, "Even if Master Hua met with some problems, he would be able to handle it, do you need to be so anxious?"

"But… but that person looked fierce, and Miss Tie looked as if she was very nervous, so I thought, Miss Tie knows the capabilities of Master Hua, and since

even she was nervous, then this must be no small problem.”

Jiang Bie He sighed, “Since that is the case, I’ll go and have a look.” Jiang Bie He turned his head and spoke towards the house, “At the latest tonight, I will surely come back…”

As he spoke, he was already hurrying out with Duan Gui.

At first Xiao Yu’er wanted to find out, who is that in that house? Why is he being so secretive? But after thinking, he decided that this person would have to wait for Jiang Bie He here anyway, so there is no rush to find out right now.

He really wants to see who is the person who could give Hua Wu Que so much trouble?

There is no relationship between Xiao Yu’er and Hua Wu Que, in fact, it can be said that they are at odds, but without knowing why, Hua Wu Que’s affairs always could move Xiao Yu’er’s heart.

A horse carriage outside just left, Jiang Bie He must have been sitting in that carriage. Xiao Yu’er followed behind, but he can’t execute his lightness skill in the middle of the road, and two legs will always be slower than four legs. By the time he left the city, the horse carriage could not be seen.

Once the horse carriage left the city, Jiang Bie He asked loudly from within the carriage, “Did Master Hua fight with that person?”

Duan Gui replied, “He seemed to have received a palm attack.”

Jiang Bie He furrowed his brow, “This person was able to receive one of Master Hua’s palm attack, he is indeed skilled, but I wonder what he looked like?”

Duan Gui answered, “This person is large and tall, but his clothes are even more torn than mine, but he bears a proud look.”

Jiang Bie He's brows furrowed even tighter, and asked "How old is this person?"

"He looks to be about forty, or maybe more than fifty, but… but he looks like he's just turned thirty. He looks exactly like the age that one would think him to be, I have never seen such a strange person."

Jiang Bie He furrowed his brow and sigh, the expression on his face gradually getting heavy.

Duan Gui suddenly exclaimed, "That's right, on that person's waist, there's a steel sword, but it's all rusty…"

He has not finished his words but Jiang Bie He's expression suddenly changed. He was stunned for a while, and lowered his voice, "You shall stop the carriage far away, don't go too near, understood?"

Although Duan Gui felt strange about this, and did not know why he wanted to stop the carriate far away, but Master Jiang's words, he dare not disobey. It was still over a hundred feet away from the woods but the carriage has already stopped.

The air was full of sword energy, and a person's body could be seen leaping up and down, like a flying dance, and the other person was as still as the rocks in Mount Tai, not moving at all.

At this time, Hua Wu Que's moves was still very nimble, his sword energy still strong, and doesn't look as if he is losing. But Jiang Bie He has very good eyesight, and with one look he knows that although Hua Wu Que's sword moves were exquisite, but he could not attack even once! The sounds of the fencing, one strong and one weak, the difference very contrasting.

Jiang Bie He's expression turned ashen, and he mumbled, "Yan Nan Tian! This must be Yan Nan Tian!"

Jiang Bie He knows that right now Yan Nan Tian only wanted to take a longer

look at Floral Palace's unique swordplay, or else Hua Wu Que would have died under his sword long ago!

That Duan Gui naturally could not see the intricacies of such a profound swordplay, and also because he could not see anything at all, he was even more anxious.

Duan Gui saw that overbearing sword energy, and is already sweating in anxiety over Hua Wu Que, and exclaimed "Isn't Master Jiang going to help Master Hua?"

Jiang Bie He replied, "Of course I will. Why can't this carriage door be opened, is there something wrong?"

Duan Gui jumped down from his seat and went to open the door. The carriage door opened immediately, there was no problem at all.

Duan Gui smiled, "I'm afraid Master Jiang may be too anxious, that's why you can't even open the carriage door."

He has not finished speaking, when he suddenly saw Jiang Bie He's face, amost turning green, his eyes staring at Duan Gui, his gaze as if it's already turned frightfully green.

Jiang Bie He smiled sinisterly, and said slowly, "One best not be a busybody, or else one won't live long."

Duan Gui was so startled that his legs softened, and turned around thinking of escaping, but suddenly felt his collar being grabbed, and he was dragged into the carriage.

Duan Gui said through chattering teeth, "Jiang… Master Jiang, I did… not… not offend old master, you…"

He has not finished his words, a short sword was already pierced under his ribs, right to the hilt of the sword.

Jiang Bie He slowly took out the short sword inch by inch, afraid that the fresh blood would stain his clothes. Once the short sword was pulled out, it still looked as clean as autumn waters, killing others without seeing blood. This is exactly the precious sword that cut open the ‘Love lock’.

Jiang Bie He breathed out a long sigh and mumbled, “Now, no one would know that I was here, and no one would know that I did not save Hua Wu Que although I saw that he will die. My reputation as a hero, cannot be spoiled by this stupid lad… you used your life to guarantee my reputation as the ‘Hero of Jiang Nan’, it’s not too unjust a death.”

As he spoke, he quietly slipped down the carriage and turned around. There was a fierce fight going on in the woods, naturally no one would notice him.

There was no one at the suburbs. After walking around, Xiao Yu’er finally saw the strong sword energy emanating from the woods, and later saw that horse carriage.

He did not see Jiang Bie He. Could it be Jiang Bie He is still in the carriage? Why is the horse carriage stopped so far away?

Xiao Yu’er had no intention of finding out these matters, he only wanted to stand far away and look at the fierce fight going on in the woods, look at how Hua Wu Que’s sword play changed so uniquely, so that he can be on his guard the next time he sees him.

Naturally, he also wanted to see who is the person fighting Hua Wu Que.

But he suddenly saw on that tightly closed carriage door, at the gap, there were fresh blood flowing out… could it be that Juang Bie He has died? Or else whose blood could it be?

Xiao Yu’er was both excited and curious, and could not help but go and take a look.

Once he opened the door, he saw Duan Gui's fiercely contorted face, and then, he saw the pair of eyes full of fear and alarm. But Jiang Bie He is already gone.

Xiao Yu'er can't help but feel shocked, stunned, but suddenly he became immediately aware… the viciousness of Jiang Bie He, no one else would know better than Xiao Yu'er.

He also immediately realized the danger Hua Wu Que is facing now, and the expression of anxiety Tie Xin Lan had for Hua Wu Que, inexplicably made him feel a stab of pain in his heart.

Suddenly, a long cry was heard across the sky! A flash of sword, flying into the sky, Hua Wu Que staggered back, and finally fell!

Yan Nan Tian actually used his pure and hard sword, and shattered the sharp and soft sword right out of Hua Wu Que's hand! Hua Wu Que felt his breath and blood backflow, and finally tumbled down!

At this split second, without knowing why, but Xiao Yu'er felt hot blood rushing up to his head, and actually forgot the grudges and rivalry he had with Hua Wu Que… he actually suddenly forgot all these, and suddenly flew out without a thought!

Yan Nan Tian's loud cry continued, his steel sword ready to attack again. Tie Xin Lan cried out in fear… just at this time, she suddenly saw someone flew in, blocking right in front of Hua Wu Que and shouting, "No one is allowed to hurt him!"

Tie Xin Lan saw that this person is actually Xiao Yu'er, and with her mouth agape, was stunned.

Yan Nan Tian's eyes were like lightning, and took a look at Xiao Yu'er, shouting "Who are you? You actually dare to come between the tip of my sword!"

Tie Xin Lan finally regained her senses, and shouted, "He is Jiang Xiao Yu!"

Yan Nan Tian replied hoarsely, “Jiang Xiao Yu? Jiang Xiao Yu is you?” the pair of eyes bored into Xiao Yu’er’s face, refusing to let go.

Xiao Yu’er also stared at him, and asked haltingly, “You… You are Yan Nan Tian, Uncle Yan?”

Tie Xin Lan replied, “He is Old Master Yan.”

Xiao Yu’er was surprised and happy, and suddenly dashed forward, hugging Yan Nan Tian and exclaiming, “Uncle Yan, I missed you so much….”

Tears seemed to have formed in Yan Nan Tian’s eyes, and he mumbled, “Jiang Xiao Yu… Jiang Xiao Yu, have Uncle Yan not missed you as well?”

Tie Xin Lan saw that a lonely vagrant like Xiao Yu’er had suddenly found his relative, and it turned out to be the famed Yan Nan Tian. She also truly felt surprise and happiness, and hot tears were brimming in her eyes.

Yan Nan Tian suddenly pushed Xiao Yu’er aside, and asked gravely, “Do you know that this Hua Wu Que is a disciple of Floral Palace!”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “I know.”

Yan Nan Tian raised his voice, “Do you know that the person who killed your parents, is the Mistress of Floral Palace?”

Xiao Yu’er’s body shook, and he asked hoarsely, “Could it be true?”

When he was very young, although there was a mysterious person who brought him out of the Valley of Evil and told him about this matter, but he thought that this person was too secretive, and the words may not be trustworthy, so he never regarded Floral Palace as his arch enemy.

But now that these words were spoken from Yan Nan Tian’s mouth, he cannot disbelieve it. Yan Nan Tian stared at Xiao Yu’er, asking “Why do you want to save

him?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “I… I…”

He himself does not really know why he wants to save Hua Wu Que, even if Floral Palace does not have any enmity with him, he originally should never have saved Hua Wu Que!

Yan Nan Tian suddenly threw his steel sword onto the ground, and bellowed, “Kill him with your own hands!”

Xiao Yu’er’s body shook, and he turned his head around to take a look at Hua Wu Que.

Hua Wu Que has already been knocked unconscious by Yan Nan Tian’s sword energy, a tattered flower, landed on his face. The fresh red flower, made his face look even paler in contrast.

Looking at this pale face, Xiao Yu’er felt an inexplicable feeling in his heart. He does not know why, but he suddenly shouted, “I can’t kill him!”

Yan Nan Tian asked furiously, “Why can’t you kill him? You already know he is a disciple of your enemy! Besides, he wanted to kill you!”

“I…. I….”

He sighed, and suddenly raised his voice, “I’ve already had an agreement with him, to have a duel to the death three months later! So I can’t let Uncle Yan kill him, and all the more I can’t kill him while he’s injured!”

Yan Nan Tian was stunned for a moment, and suddenly looked heavenward and laughed loudly, “Good! You are indeed worthy of being Jiang Xiao Yu, indeed worthy of being my Second Brother Jiang’s son…. Second Brother oh Second Brother, to have a son like this, you should be able to rest in peace now!”

His happy laughter, suddenly became mournful.

Xiao Yu’er felt a rush of hot blood in his chest, and suddenly knelt down, crying out, “Uncle Yan, I swear that from now on I will not let my Father be ashamed of me!”

Yan Nan Tian held onto his shoulders, and quietly asked, “Do you feel that the things you have done in the past, might have let him down?”

Xiao Yu’er lowered his head, and chokingly said, “I….”

Yan Nan Tian replied, “You don’t have to be sad, don’t have to blame yourself, whoever grows up in that environment of yours, will be worse than you. Besides, from what I know, your ploys may be wrong, but they are never really evil.”

Yan Nan Tian laughed loudly, “That Yan Nan Tian can see Jiang Feng have a son like you, it is the happiest thing in my life.”

There were tears in his laughter, and it could be seen that he was feeling both happy and sad. Tie Xin Lan saw the feelings flowing between them, and unconsciously lowered her head, her tears dripping to the floor.

She was also feeling both joy and happiness. Xiao Yu’er’s pain has the understanding and consolation of Yan Nan Tian, but who would understand her pain?

She’d die to stop Hua Wu Que from killing Xiao Yu’er, but if Xiao Yu’er was to kill Hua Wu Que, she will feel very bad as well. She only hopes that the two of them can be on good terms.

Who would have expect that they are arch enemies, and this enmity obviously cannot be dissolved, and one of them will certainly die at the hands of the other! Or else this enmity will never end!

What makes it even more heartbreaking is that for Xiao Yu’er, she does not mind sacrificing everything, but Xiao yu’er did not even take a single look at her.

By now Yan Nan Tian had dragged Xiao Yu'er to the bottom of a tree and sat down, and asked suddenly, "Do you know that Du Jiao Jiao, Li Da Zui and the rest have all left the Valley of Evil?"

Xiao Yu'er replied, "I know."

Yan Nan Tian's gaze flashed, and asked, "Could it be that you have already seen them?"

Xiao Yu'er nodded his head, and suddenly asked laughingly, "Uncle Yan, can you let them off?"

Yan Nan Tian bellowed, "How can I let them off!"

Xiao yu'er continued, "They may have thought to harm you, but they did not manage to in the end. Besides, they are still the ones who brought me up, and they have turned over a new leaf."

Yan Nan Tian thought for a while, and sighed, "For your sake, as long as they do not do any more evil deeds in future, I will let them off!"

Xiao Yu'er was ecstatic, "If they hear this news, they will be so happy, why would they harm others in future!"

Yan Nan Tian took a glace at Tie Xin Lan, and smiled slightly, "You should go and speak to that Miss now, I can't always take your time."

Xiao Yu'er's expression turned sullen, and said "I don't know that Miss, in fact I have never seen her before."

Tie Xin Lan could not take it anymore, and started wailing. She ran towards Xiao Yu'er in tears, but before she reached him, she suddenly turned around and ran away with her face covered.

Xiao Yu’er gritted his teeth, and did not go after her.

Looking at Tie Xin Lan running further away, Yan Nan Tian turned his head to look at Xiao Yu’er and asked, “What is this all about? The matters of you young people, I really cannot understand.”

Xiao Yu’er was also stunned, and did not speak for a long time.

Yan Nan Tian took another close look at him, and suddenly stood up and laughed, “Do you want to venture on your own, or do you want to follow me?”

Only now did Xiao Yu’er regain his senses, and he beamed, “Although it’s best if I follow Uncle Yan, but others would escape at the sight of Uncle Yan. I’ll have nothing to do, and it’ll be boring.”

Yan Nan Tian laughed loudly, “You have aspirations indeed!”

Xiao Yu’er added, “But I wish to have a longer chat with Uncle Yan….”

Yan Nan Tian replied, “At this time tomorrow, I’ll still be here waiting for you. I just remembered that I have something to be done, and should be leaving!”

He patted Xiao Yu’er’s shoulder with a smile, picked up his steel sword, and with a leap, was soon gone from sight.

Xiao Yu’er did not expect him to leave so soon, and he actually did not notice that the direction Yan Nan Tian went, was the same as Tie Xin Lan.

He gently picked up the fallen flower on Hua Wu Que’s face, held onto Hua Wu Que’s palm, and secretly passed a flow of energy through his palm. After a while, Hua Wu Que jumped up, his eyes looked around in confusion, and when he saw Xiao Yu’er, he exclaimed in surprise, “Why are you here?”

Xiao Yu’er looked at him with a smile, and did not speak. On hearing his voice, Xiao Yu’er already knows that he was knocked unconscious earlier because his

internal energy was shocked into flowing in reverse, but because his internal strength is deep, he did not sustain any internal injury.

Hua Wu Que thought for a moment, and asked, “You saved me?” But Xiao Yu’er remained silent.

End of Chapter 62

Chapter 52

Chapter 63

Hua Wu Que stared silently at him for a long moment, then slowly turned around, as if he did not want Xiao Yu’er to see the change of expression on his face.

He suddenly turned back again and asked loudly, “Why did you save me?”

Xiao Yu’er replied calmly, “When others wanted to kill me, you saved me as well.”

Hua Wu Que replied, “But that is because I want to kill you myself!”

Xiao Yu’er’s eyes shone, and asked “How do you know that I did not want to kill you myself? Don’t you forget, three months later, you and I have a date for a death duel for which we will not leave until we meet!”

Hua Wu Que was silent for a while, and heaved a long sigh, mumbling, “Not leave until we meet, no rest until death…”

Xiao Yu’er suddenly laughed loudly, and said, "Although you and I were born to be arch enemies, but we can be friend at least during these three months?" His laughter may be loud, but amidst the laughter there seems to be many regrets.

Hua Wu Que stared at him, and did not move for a long time, and the corners of his mouth suddenly curved up into a slight smile. Everything was understood, although it was unspoken.

The two of them walked out the woods together, and saw that most of the flowers had dropped due to the impact of the sword energy, the ground was full of fallen flowers. Some seemed to be gracefully dancing when blown up by the wind.

Hua Wu Que can't help but heave a long sigh, but who would have expected that Xiao Yu'er also happen to sigh at this moment. The two of them can't help but took a look at each other, and smiled when their eyes met.

Hua Wu Que was secretly thinking, "To be able to become friends with this person for three months, I guess it would be one of the joys in life." He has always been a man of few words, and although he was thinking of it, he did not say it out.

However, Xiao Yu'er smiled and commented, "To be able to become friends with you for three months, it might be one of the greatest joys in life…"

Hua Wu Que was stunned, and finally could not help but burst out in laughter. In his entire life, he has never laughed like this before.

A horse carriage was parked far away outside the woods, and the horse looked as if it had been trained. Although there was no one driving it, it did not go far.

Xiao Yu'er opened the carriage door, pointed at the corpse in the carriage and asked, "Do you know who killed this carriage driver?"

Hua Wu Que asked with wide eyes, "Who?"

Xiao Yu'er thought for a while, and smiled, "If I tell you now, you won't believe me. You will find out in future."

Jiang Bie He was robed in a green suit, mingling amongst the guests, and although his face was full of smiles, but there was a hint of worry between his brows, as if something was troubling him.

The famed martial artist from He Fei, 'Unbeatable Golden Knife' Peng Tian

Shou was the oldest, and given a seat at the VIP table. Right now, his hand stroking his white beard, he laughed, “Could Hero Jiang be missing Master Hua right now?”

Jiang Bie He smiled bitterly, “I know that nothing will ever happen to him, but I don’t know why, I still feel a little alarmed…”

He heaved a long sigh, and continued, “I just wish that nothing has happened to him. If he has really met with danger, and here I am happily drinking, how can I ever face friends again in future.”

There was a sudden flurry of praises from the gathered heroes.

Suddenly, someone laughed loudly and added, “That’s right, whoever can become Jiang Bie He’s friend, it must be because he has done a lot of good deeds in his previous life.”

Amidst the candid laughter, someone tall and straight, with a candor expression on his face, which has a long and deep scar, a youth with an inexplicable charm walked out with a large stride.

He may not be very old, but his style seems grand. Although his smile looked extremely warm and adorable, but the eyes that looked about actually looked like it did not hold any regards to anyone.

None of the gathered heroes know who this youth is, and were all secretly guessing, that this must be the descendant or disciple of some famed sect or martial arts family.

On seeing this youth, Jiang Bie He’s expression suddenly changed drastically, and asked hoarsely, “You… Why are you here as well!”

Xiao Yu’er grinned, “Can’t I come?”

Before Jiang Bie He spoke any further, he already saw the person who came with Xiao Yu’er…. Hua Wu Que has already walked up as well, and was standing

next to Xiao Yu’er with a smile.

That Xiao Yu’er would actually come here, has already given Jiang Bie He a huge shock. Hua Wu Que is actually alive, that is another big surprise for Jiang Bie He.

Xiao Yu’er and Hua Wu Que came together, and looked as if they have settled their differences and became friends. This comes as a tremendous shock to Jiang Bie He.

Once the heroes saw Hua Wu Que, they all stood up and greeted him with smiles, no one noticed that Jiang Bie He was so shocked at the side that he was frozen to the spot for a long time.

He has a lot of questions that he wants to ask, but was troubled as some questions were not convenient to ask, and some questions cannot be asked. He was stunned for a long time, before he remembered that he should express his concern and anxiety towards Hua Wu Que, but a pity that no matter what he wants to express now, it’s too late.

There were still a few empty seats at the VIP table, everyone was giving way to one another, and no one sat down. However, Xiao Yu’er just strode over and sat down.

It was as if he was born to sit there. Others were staring at him but he did not blush or blink his eyes. He picked up a wine cup for a look and suddenly laughed, “Hero Jiang is throwing a feast, and there’s not even wine available?”

Jiang Bie He coughed dryly twice, and commanded, “Bring in the wine!”

Xiao Yu’er commented, “Looking at Hero Jiang’s expression, you don’t seem to welcome a guest like me? However, I did not want to come, it was Hua Wu Que who invited me.”

Jiang Bie He’s expression changed again, but he laughed and said, “Brother Hua’s guest, is my guest.”

Xiao Yu’er grinned, “If that is the case, Hua Wu Que’s friend, would be your friend too?”

Jiang Bie He replied, “Exactly”

Xiao Yu’er’s expression suddenly changed and he said icily, “But Hua Wu Que’s friend, is not my friend!”

When the gathered heroes heard the conversation between Xiao Yu’er and Jiang Bie He, they all knew that Xiao Yu’er is in no way related to Jiang Bie He at all.

‘Unbeatable Golden Knife’ Peng Tian Shou was the first who could not take it, and with a humph, said frostily, “This little friend’s words are really difficult to understand.”

“What I meant was, if I treat Hua Wu Que’s friends as my friends, then I’ll be very unlucky! Hua Wu Que himself is not a bad person, but the friends he makes…. Heh heh, heh heh.” Xiao Yu’er replied icily. “The friends he makes not only does nothing when he sees someone in trouble, but…”

Peng Tian Shou roared angrily, “Who are you referring to?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Whoever is Hua Wu Que’s friend, will be the person I am referring to.”

Peng Tian Shou heatedly replied, “Hero Jiang is also a good friend of Master Hua, could you….”

Xiao Yu’er answered coolly, “At least the person I am referring to is not you! Because you are not even worthy to be friends with Hua Wu Que, at the most you can only boot lick Jiang Bie He.”

Peng Tian Shou slammed the table with a ‘pak’, and roared, ”Do you know who I am?”

“I really do not know”

Peng Tian Shou has not spoken, but someone at the side had interrupted, “You don’t even know who ‘Unbeatable Golden Knife’, Old Hero Peng is, and you still want to roam in Jiang Hu?

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Old Hero Peng’s name, if it was changed to ‘Unbeatable Boot Licker’, won’t it be even more appropriate.”

At Jiang Bie He’s feast, Peng Tian Shou was initially a little apprehensive, but until now, not only did Jiang Bie He not try to stop the argument, it was as if he did not even notice the quarrel.

Peng Tian Shou naturally did not know that Jiang Bie He was hoping that Xiao Yu’er would make more enemies, and thought that Jiang Bie He was deliberately backing him up.

After hearing the words ‘Unbeatable Boot Licker’, he could not take it any longer, and flew over the table towards Xiao Yu’er.

Xiao Yu’er came with the intention of creating trouble, so he just grinned while Peng Tian Shou was leaping over, and suddenly picked up his chopsticks and lightly poked.

Peng Tian Shou only felt his body suddenly go numb, unable to exert any strength at all, and with a ‘peng’, fell onto the table, the bowls, plates and utensils all scattered to the ground.

Xiao Yu’er chortled, “Jiang Bie He, could it be that you cannot bear to serve the dishes, and are now using this boot licker as the cold dish?”

There were quite a number of people among the gathered heroes who were friends with Peng Tian Shou. Those seated far away were already shouting, and those seated nearby were thinking of attacking.

Hua Wu Que looked at Jiang Bie He quietly, but Jiang Bie He still looked as if he has no intention of settling the dispute, as if all these guests were not invited by him.

This is because right now, he is hoping that the messier the situation, the better. There was a sound, and Peng Tian Shou rolled down from the table, and the table flipped over as well. A few people rushed forward, but were all thrown out by the scruff of their necks by Xiao Yu'er. The waiter was crying out in alarm at the side, busy collecting the plates and bowls, and for a moment, the restaurant was in chaos. However, once the gathered heroes saw Xiao Yu'er's martial arts, none of them really dared to go over for a fight.

Only now did Jiang Bie He ask with a furrowed brow, "Brother Hua, looking at this, how do you think it should be settled?"

Hua Wu Que replied with a slight smile, "I don't know."

Jiang Bie He never expected him to say such a sentence, and can't help feeling stunned. He heard the sound of a fist punching through air, Xiao Yu'er is already striking at him with a fist, bellowing, "Jiang Bie He, he saw that Hua Wu Que was in danger and swiftly slipped away. He was afraid that the carriage driver would reveal his wickedness, and actually silenced him. I am not thinking of anything else today, only thinking of giving you a good beating, take my challenge." As he spoke, he fought. By the time he finished his words, he have already struck out more than ten fist attacks.

Jiang Bie He only avoided his attacks and did not retaliate until he finished his words, and frostily replied, "You are maligning me, I'm afraid others will find it hard to believe."

Xiao Yu'er shouted, "Let me tell you, that carriage driver may have been stabbed by you, but he did not die…"

Jiang Bie He's expression changed involuntarily.

Xiao Yu'er suddenly took a few steps back and shouted, "Look, he is already walking here from that side!"

The gathered heroes could not help but all turned towards the direction he was pointing at.

Instead Jiang Bie He answered with a cold smile, “You cannot trick me, he…” As soon as he said these words, he suddenly stopped, his face suddenly turned pale.

Xiao Yu’er laughed loudly, “Indeed I cannot trick you, everyone else turned around, only you did not turn around, because only you know that he cannot be alive, correct?”

He created such a ruckus earlier on, firstly to suppress the others, secondly to let the situation deteriorate so that Jiang Bie He would not be able to remain steady, or he would not have been tricked now.

Jiang Bie He’s gaze swept through the crowd, and saw that the expressions on the gathered heroes revealed surprise and doubt. He walked towards Hua Wu Que and said, “Brother Hua, do you believe him, or believe me?”

Hua Wu Que replied with a sigh, “It doesn’t matter even if this is not brought up…”

Xiao Yu’er shouted, “Whether this is brought up or not, I still want to fight with him. Are you helping him, or helping me?”

Hua Wu Que replied with a bitter smile, “If the two of you really want a duel, then no one else can interfere.”

Xiao Yu’er was waiting for him to say this sentence, and immediately shouted, “Fine, if others interfere, I will look for you!”

Before he finished his words, another fist struck out.

Jiang Bie He saw that the ten over fist attacks executed earlier did not even touch his clothes, and thought that his martial arts is mediocre, so he replied with a cold smile, “Since you insist on fighting, then do not blame me!”

As soon as he finished his sentence, Xiao Yu'er has already attacked another four times.

Jiang Bie He's palm shot out, swift and fierce, his style seemingly directionless. Xiao Yu'er had to use all his skills to narrowly avoid the attack. The gathered heroes can't help but cheer Jiang Bie He on.

Jiang Bie He knows that in Jiang Hu, the winner is the strongest, so as long as he injures Xiao Yu'er, no one would pursue the murder incident earlier. Feeling revitalized, he added with an icy smile, "All the friends in Jiang Hu are witnesses here today, it was you who asked to be humiliated, do not blame me for bullying a young person."

Xiao Yu'er looked as if he was only concerned with fighting and dodging, and did not even have the extra energy to argue. He deflected less than twenty moves, but there were many times which he was almost in danger.

Jiang Bie He has always suspected that he is the secret troublemaker, and harbored caution, but now that he saw that his martial arts is so mediocre, his suspicion lessened, and his attack slowed down for a moment as well. He smiled, "You may not know your place, creating a scene here, but on account of your youth and ignorance, I do not wish to make things too difficult for you. As long as you are willing to admit your mistake, on account of Brother Hua, I will let you off."

His words were not only magnanimous, but it also gave some credit to the friendship with Hua Wu Que, indeed on par with the reputation of the 'Hero of Jiang Nan'.

Xiao Yu'er kept panting, as if he can't even talk anymore.

Actually he has already known that in front of so many people, as long as Jiang Bie He can show off his reputation as 'Hero', he will certainly not let the chance off.

He knew that in front if so many people, the more he pretended to be weak,

the more Jiang Bie He would not be so vicious in his attacks, or he would have lost his bearing as ‘Hero’.

Jiang Bie He’s attack were more gentle as expected, but someone among the gathered heroes shouted, “Towards such a person, Hero Jiang need not be too courteous.”

Those beaten up by Xiao Yu’er earlier, all expressed agreement.

Jiang Bie He looked as if he was forced with no other choice, and said with a sigh, “You are young, I really do not wish to injure you, but if I don’t teach you a lesson, other friends would not tolerate it…” As he spoke, Xiao Yu’er was forced back a few more steps.

Jiang Bie He said with a slight smile, “After this ‘Splitting Flower Striking Willow’ move of mine, I will attack your chest, you must be careful! It’s best that you do not resist, or else if my attack is too heavy, you may lose your life.”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Thanks for the advice!”

After Jiang Bie He’s ‘Splitting Flower Striking Willow’ move, his right palm suddenly struck out diagonally, the palm attack like an axe splitting a mountain, aiming straight towards Xiao Yu’er’s chest. This palm attack may not be very mystifying, but the swift changes in the palm attacks are unequalled. Although he had already disclosed his plan of attack, but the gathered heroes did not expect that his palm moves could actually move to such a position, and it seems like Xiao Yu’er would not be able to avoid this palm attack.

The gathered heroes can’t help but cheer again. Xiao Yu’er suddenly struck out his hand to meet the attack head on!

Jiang Bie He suddenly felt a large force surging towards him. By the time he wanted to use all his strength, it is too late. With a bang, his body actually flew up from the force!

The many years of anger bottled up by Xiao Yu’er, is finally expelled in this

palm attack!

Jiang Bie He's body knocked into the crowd, and the few people standing in front also fell down from his knock, staggering a few steps back before sitting down on the floor!

The cheers of the gathered heroes stopped suddenly, everyone of them mouth agape, stunned. Xiao Yu'er clapped his hands and laughed, flew out of the window and left!

Although Xiao Yu'er can't really give Jiang Bie He a good beating, but to be able to embarrass Jiang Bie He, is also giving vent to his frustration, and he was feeling extremely happy.

Of course, Xiao Yu'er is very clear about these words 'quit while you're ahead'.

The gathered heroes may not totally believe that Jiang Bie He is one who would not save someone in need and one who silences others, but at least there will be doubts in their hearts.

After walking around the streets for a while, he slipped back into the inn, taking a rest in the room that he reserved during the day. When there are no more sounds coming from the courtyard, he slipped out.

He saw that the door and windows if the mysterious person's room was still tightly closed, and the room inside is lighted, but no human shadows could be seen.

Xiao Yu'er looked around and jumped up the roof, quietly making his way to the eaves, laying low in the darkened shadows, not moving at all. There is no sound at all in the room. Is this mysterious person sleeping, or has he left? Jiang Bie He had arranged to meet him, how could he have left? Besides, the light in the room is still lighted.

Xiao Yu'er controlled his impatience, and waited. He deduced that Jiang Bie He will certainly come. The night starry, the air cool like water, waiting there, he

almost fell asleep.

Suddenly, a ‘swoosh’ sound was heard, and a shadow flew in like smoke. Xiao Yu’er has never seen such expert Lightness Skill before.

He almost could not see this person’s shadow, and was secretly startled. He heard the soft sound of the door, and this person has already walked into the house.

There is still no sound in the house.

This person’s Lightness Skill is so superior, that not only he himself is below par, but even Hua Wu Que would not be as good when compared to him. Why would there be such a person in the Martial Arts realm!

This kind of person in cahoots with Jiang Bie He, wouldn’t it be terrible! As Xiao Yu’er thought, another person suddenly slipped into the courtyard.

This person was looking left and right as he walked, and came over silently. He also walked to the front of this house, softly coughed, and knocked on the door.

Someone in the house immediately responded, “Who?”

This man in black said in a low voice, “It’s Junior.”

On hearing this voice, Xiao Yu’er realized that Jiang Bie He is here, and felt energized. The door opened a little, and Jiang Bie He slipped inside in a flash. The two conversed, but Xiao Yu’er can’t hear clearly what was being said.

Suddenly he heard Jiang Bie He say, “Junior witnessed an astonishing matter today.”

That person asked, “What matter?”

Jiang Bie He replied, “Yan Nan Tian is not dead, and he has reappeared!”

No matter whom the person is in the Martial Arts realm, on hearing this news will definitely be alarmed. However that person appeared nonchalant, the tone of voice calm, and said, “Humph, it’s best that Yan Nan Tian is not dead. If he’s dead, it’ll not be interesting.”

The more Xiao Yu’er listened, the more he was surprised. This person is not only unafraid of Yan Nan Tian, but seemed to have the intention of pitting himself against Yan Nan Tian.

Who in Jiang Hu would dare to oppose Yan Nan Tian? Xiao Yu’er cannot think of a single person.

Jiang Bie He added, “Besides Yan Nan Tian, that Jiang Xiao Yu has actually revealed himself as well!”

That person seems a lot more interested in Jiang Xiao Yu than Yan Nan Tian, and asked “How is his martial arts? How is it compared to Hua Wu Que?”

Jiang Bie He laughed, “His martial arts is definitely not comparable to Hua Wu Que, but when he fights, he’s full of tricks. If one is even slightly careless, one will definitely be tricked by him.”

That person seemed to smile, and said “I was worried that his marital arts would be too bad, now I am relieved.”

Xiao Yu’er thought it very weird, he cannot understand why this person would be so interested in him, or could it be someone like him actually knows him?

That person added, “No matter how strong is Jiang Xiao Yu’s martial arts, Hua Wu Que will deal with it, there is no need for you to worry.”

Jiang Bie He sighed, “But now Hua Wu Que seemed to have become friends with Jiang Xiao Yu…”

The person laughed coldly, “The two of them are born enemies, and will not

cease even in death. Even if they are friends, it will not be long. You can be assured on this point.”

Xiao Yu’er was stunned! How could this person be so clear about the matter between him and Hua Wu Que?

There’s not a lot of people who knows about this matter.

Jiang Bie He seemingly smiled, and said “If that is the case, I wonder what other instructions does Elder have for me?”

The person said, “I only want you….”

The voice suddenly lowered, and Xiao Yu’er could not hear even a single word, but with each sentence this person said, Jiang Bie He would reply, “Yes.”

When this person finished speaking, Jiang Bie He laughingly comment, “These few matters, Junior will definitely obey.” That person replied coldly, “These few matters benefit you as well, naturally you will obey!”

Jiang Bie He hesitated, and smilingly said, “Elder only need to instruct, and I came immediately, but right until now, I do not even know Elder’s great name.”

That person chided, “You do not need to know my name. You only need to know that in the whole world, besides me, there is no one else who can help you. If not for me, not only will you not be able to become a ‘Hero’, you will not even live!”

Jiang Bie He was silent for a moment before he replied, “Yes.”

The person said, “You can leave now. I will naturally look for you when it’s time.”

Jiang Bie He replied, “Yes!”

The person added, “The few matters that I asked you to do, if you make any mistake, there will be no need for Yan Nan Tian and Jiang Xiao Yu to strike. I will kill you myself! Do you understand?”

Jiang Bie He replied, “Yes!”

End of Chapter 63

Chapter 53

Chapter 64

Jiang Bie He walked out with his head lowered, but his movement suddenly became fast and looking around to see there's no one, he was out of the courtyard in a flash. Xiao Yu'er rolled his eyes and also slipped away from the eaves quietly.

Xiao Yu'er leaped past a few roofs before he dared to jump down and left the courtyard from a side door. He found the kitchen, where there was still a small fire going on the stove, a kettle of water boiling on top.

He took that kettle of water and strode back. The light in the room was still lighted. Xiao Yu'er walked over, knocked on the door and asked, "Would guest like to add some water to your tea?"

He wanted to take a look at what this mysterious person really looked like, and don't mind taking the risk, not caring if this person would recognize him. There was no response from within the room.

He gathered his courage, and lightly pushed on the door. The door was not locked, and opened once he pushed it.

He saw that the lamp was still lighted on the table, next to the lamp there's a plate. On the plate there's a teapot with four teacups, and the teapot and teacups have not been touched at all.

He looked at the bed. The blanket on the bed was folded neatly.

Although this mysterious person is staying in this house, he did not touch a

single thing in the house. Obviously he only used this house to talk to Jiang Bie He.

Xiao Yu'er mumbled, "I wonder if there's still tea in the pot. I might as well fill it up, in case the guest has nothing to drink when he comes back."

As he spoke, he walked into the room.

Once he entered the room, he realized that there is a lingering fragrance in the room, and he felt as if he had stepped into a woods full of flowers in full bloom.

But besides this strange fragrance, there is not a single suspicious trace in the room. It was as if no one has ever stayed in this house.

However, this room was extremely clean, even the dust under the bed has been swept clean. The table, chairs, cupboard, all looked as if it had been washed.

Even the stone floor was gleaming from the wash.

That mysterious person, since he's only using this house to talk, and has no intention of staying here or using the things here, then why would he clean this place up so well, and even use such mysterious and expensive fragrance.

Or could this mysterious person be a cleanliness freak. Xiao Yu'er can't help but furrow his brows and mutter, "It so rare to see someone who loves cleanliness so much…"

Suddenly a person asked coldly, "Who are you? Why are you here?"

This voice obviously came from behind Xiao Yu'er! Xiao Yu'er was truly shocked, but he smiled and said, "I came to take a look if guest would like to top up your teapot."

That person asked, "You are a staff here?"

Xiao Yu’er hurriedly replied, “Yes.”

“The person who came during the day doesn’t seem to be you.”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Big Brother Qian works the day shift, Wang San here works the night shift.”

That person suddenly laughed coldly, “Jiang Xiao Yu really reacts quickly to circumstances, and answers fluently. A pity that I recognize you since the day you were born, it’s useless for you to pretend to be anyone else in front of me!”

Xiao Yu’er was startled, “Who are you?” That person did not reply.

Xiao Yu’er turned around suddenly, there was nothing behind, and the door was still swaying with the wind! Outside the door, darkness is approaching, there is no shadow at all! Could that person have left again!

Xiao Yu’er was surprised and curious, and has just breathed out in relief when someone said coldly from his back again, “You will not be able to see me!”

That person is actually behind him again! Xiao Yu’er turned around continuously for five, six times. His speed cannot be considered slow, but that person is always behind him, like a shadow stuck to his body. No matter how bold Xiao Yu’er is, right now he can’t help but break out in cold sweat. Since this person’s Lightness Skill is thus, his martial arts ability is imaginable. Xiao Yu’er knows that not only is he not a match against the enemy, he cannot even escape.

His eyes rolled, and he might as well stand there and not move. He asked with a grin, “If you do not wish to be seen by me, then why did you come?”

That person replied, “You can’t think of why?”

Xiao Yu’er blinked his eyes and replied, “I think, you can’t be wanting to kill me.”

That person asked, “How do you know I won’t kill you?”

Xiao Yu’er said, “A person who is about to die, it does not matter even if he sees your real look, so if you want to kill me, you won’t mind letting me take a look, right?”

He already felt that this person really had no intention of killing him, and unconsciously became bolder. As he spoke, he suddenly leaped to the front of the cupboard.

The paint on the cupboard was originally very new, and after being given a thorough wash, it was gleaming like a mirror. Xiao Yu’er squatted down, and a person clad in white was reflected clearly on the cupboard.

This person has long hair, the clothes white like snow, the bearing looked extraordinary, but on the face he was wearing a fiercely terrifying copper mask.

Xiao Yu’er can’t help feeling shocked, and exclaimed, “So you are Mr Copper!”

Xiao Yu’er felt his eyes staring at him with hatred. The glare from this pair of eyes, reflected from the cupboard, makes one feel eerily creepy.

Xiao Yu’er forced out a laugh, “That day, Black Spider was saying how superior your martial arts were, and I did not really believe it. On witnessing it today, I realized he was not bluffing.”

Mr Copper smiled coldly, “You do not have to flatter me. Since I do not wish to kill you, I will never kill you.”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “Never?” Mr Copper replied, “Yes!” Xiao Yu’er heaved a sigh of relief, and smiled, “I see that you love cleanliness a lot, and with this fragrance, I originally thought you are a woman… luckily you’re not a woman, or else even if you say that you will not kill me, I will not believe it.”

Mr Copper asked, “You do not trust women?”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “The words of women, must never be listened to. Anyone who believes in women, would be extremely unlucky!”

Mr Copper suddenly asked angrily, “Is your mother not a woman?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “The women in the world, who can be compared to my mother? She is gentle, and pretty…”

Although he has never seen his mother, but in every child’s mind, his own mother would naturally be the most gentle, most beautiful woman.

As he spoke, he unconsciously closed his eyes, and according to his imagination, started to describe. He is naturally eloquent, and as he described, he made his mother out to be someone so rare, that not another one can be found in this world.

The cold eyes of Mr Copper seem to have suddenly burst out in flames.

Xiao Yu’er did not notice, and seemed to be talking in his dreams, “The other women in the world, if they were to be compared to my mother, they can’t even compare to soil, I…”

He has not finished his words, when he felt an intense pain on his neck, his body numb, and his whole body seemed to have been lifted up by this ‘Mr Copper’.

With Xiao Yu’er’s level of martial arts now, he was actually unable to stop it at all!

Mr Cooper’s eyes were full of fury, the cold palm getting tighter and tighter, as if it was going to break Xiao Yu’er’s neck.

Xiao Yu’er cried in alarm, “You… You said you would never kill me. How can you not keep your words.”

Mr Copper replied, “Because you are talking a lot of nonsense, it’s hateful.”

“Since when was I talking nonsense?”

Mr Copper said, “Whether your Mother is good or bad, pretty or ugly, you have never seen her before, and yet you are boasting about her, is it not talking nonsense then!”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “You… how did you know I have never seen my Mother before?”

Mr Copper relied coldly, “If I don’t know, who will?”

Xiao Yu’er can’t help but ask, “What does my Mother look like?”

Mr Copper replied, “Your Mother is crippled and hunchbacked, pock faced and balding, she is the most evil and ugly woman in the world, any woman in the world would be better than her.”

Xiao Yu’er retorted angrily, “What a fart! You are the one speaking nonsense!”

He has not finished his words when he felt two slaps on his face.

Although Mr Copper did not use his real strength in the two slaps, but the slaps had caused the two sides of Xiao Yu’er’s face to swell, fresh blood trickling down from the corner of his mouth. However, Xiao Yu’er did not cease in his scolding.

Although he has never seen his Mother, but once he thought about her, he would have an inexplicable feeling in his heart, it’s pain, but it’s warmth as well.

Usually he loves to sway where the wind blows, so if this ‘Mr Copper’ were to humiliate him, he would never retaliate and argue if he knows that he is not his match. But it was his mother being humiliated, he can never accept that.

Mr Copper continued slapping, yet Xiao Yu'er continued scolding. Once his stubborn streak arose, he would not care at all about his own life.

Mr Copper said through gritted teeth, "If you dare to continue scolding, I will kill you."

With his mouth full of blood, Xiao Yu'er replied hoarsely, "As soon as you admit that my Mother is the gentlest and prettiest, I will stop scolding you."

Mr Copper asked, "You… You would rather die than admit that your Mother is the most evil and ugly woman?"

Xiao Yu'er nodded immediately.

Mr Copper continued, "You… you are willing to die for her?" His gaze was full of viciousness, but there was a slight quaver to his voice.

'Mr Copper' was standing there, his whole body shaking.

Xiao Yu'er secretly took a peek at him, but dared not move. After a while, he finally could not take it and asked, "What enmity does my Mother have with you, that you must scold her thus?"

However, Mr Copper seemed not to have heard him at all.

Without hesitation, Xiao Yu'er jumped up and out of the window. Turning his head around for a look, that Mr Copper did not seemed to be chasing him. Although Xiao Yu'er were full of doubts, but he can't be bothered about them now, and with all his skills, fled for his life. In a blink of an eye he was out of the inn.

Suddenly he heard someone from behind him ask coldly, "You still would not admit it?"

Xiao Yu'er had just jumped up, when he fell again. He knows that once this

person is chasing him, it would be like maggots attached to the bone, he can forget about getting rid of him. He suddenly shouted, “If you have the ability, then kill me!”

As he shouted, he turned around suddenly, both his fists striking out like raindrops. However, he did not even manage to see the shadow of the other party. His back felt numb and he fell to the ground.

Hua Wu Que has never liked drinking, but without knowing why, he started drinking alone this night, and drank up as soon as he filled his cup. He drunk himself into a daze, collapsed onto his bed and fell asleep.

Right at this time, someone was outside the window calling out, “Hua Wu Que! Wake up!”

The voice may be soft, but it seemed that every word was clearly sent to Hua Wu Que’s ears.

Hua Wu Que composed himself and pushed the window open. It was night outside the window, a person clad in white, with a ghostly face was standing fifty, sixty feet away.

Under the reflection of the pale starlight, this person’s face seemed to be giving off a gree glow. On a closer look, he realized that this person was wearing a fierce looking copper mask on his face.

Hua Wu Que was shocked, and asked hoarsely, “Could it be Mr… Mr Copper?” That person nodded and said, “Come out!”

Mr Copper had already flown up the roof. Hua Wu Que followed and jumped over the roof, over the quiet street,

Without turning his head, Mr Copper said coldly, “Since when has the disciple of Floral Palace become a drunkard and sloth!”

Hua Wu Que was shocked, and lowered his head, not daring to speak.

This Mr Copper did not seem to be moving from his head to his chest, but his flight was incomparably fast, and looked as if he was riding on the wind. On witnessing such Lightness Skill, Hua Wu Que can't help but feel secretly startled.

Mr Copper said, "You obviously already know who I am."

Hua Wu Que replied, "When Junior left the Palace, my Teacher had already instructed, if I see Sir, it would be as if I am seeing my Teacher. Junior will obey all instructions that Sir have."

Mr Copper added, "When you left the Palace, what else did the Princess instruct you?"

Hua Wu Que finally replied quietly, "Teacher wants me to personally kill this person called Jiang Xiao Yu!"

Mr Copper seemed to have smiled, and replied, "Very good!"

He did not talk further, and did not turn his head back at all. As they traveled, it became more secluded, and they finally came to a small hilltop. On the hilltop there was a large tree with thick branches and leaves. Mr Copper suddenly flew up, but said, "You stand under the tree!"

By the time he finished the five short words, he is already standing on the treetop. The starry night, reflected on his white clothes, made him seem even more suave, unworldly and unattainable.

Suddenly Mr Copper carried a person from within the thick leaves and shouted, "Catch!"

The shout has just been heard when a person fell straight from the tree.

This big tree is more than a hundred feet high, a person's weight may be less than a hundred kilos, but being thrown down from the treetop, the force would be more than five hundred kilos. Hua Wu Que could not guess who was this

person he threw down, and was not confident if he could catch this person. In an instant, without any thought, he flew up.

Hua Wu Que suddenly reached out and grabbed this person's belt, but he heard a 'si', and this person's clothes tore. Hua Wu Que was also brought down by the force of the fall.

However, when they reached the ground, the force of gravity has lessened, and with a shout, made a somersault in the air and threw this person up into the air again.

When this person fell a second time, Hua Wu Que extended both his arms and gently caught hold. The starry night, reflected on this person's pale face and tightly shut eyes.

This person is actually Xiao Yu'er! Although Hua Wu Que is usually calm, at this point in time he can't help but let out a gasp.

Mr Copper stood alone on the treetop and asked icily, "Is he Jiang Xiao Yu?"

Hua Wu Que replied, "That's right."

Mr Copper replied, "Good, kill him then!"

Hua Wu Que was taken aback, and lowering his head looking at the unconscious Xiao Yu'er, he felt a little bitterness in his mouth. For a moment, he was stunned.

Mr Copper said slowly, "If you do not wish to kill a person who cannot retaliate, you can unseal his acupoint!"

Hua Wu Que stretched out his hand in a daze and unsealed Xiao Yu'er's acupoint with a tap. Xiao Yu'er opened his eyes, saw Hua Wu Que, and beamed, "Did you save me?" Hua Wu Que stood there, stunned, unable to speak a single word.

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “I knew you would come and save me, we are friends.”

Without knowing why, Hua Wu Que felt sourness in his heart, and turned his head around.

Suddenly a person was heard asking coldly, “Hua Wu Que, why are you still not striking?”

Only now did Xiao Yu’er saw that Mr Copper standing on the treetop, and with a sharp intake of breath, turned around to face Hua Wu Que, his large eyes staring….

Hua Wu Que heaved a long sigh. Xiao Yu’er was silent for a moment, and said with a bitter smile, “I know you do not dare to defy him… fine, strike then!”

Hua Wu Que was also silent for a moment, and said each word calmly, “I cannot kill you now!”

Xiao Yu’er was ecstatic, but Mr Copper asked in fury, “Have you forgotten your Teacher’s words?”

Hua Wu Que heaved a long sigh and replied, “I have a three month agreement with him, before the time is up, I cannot kill him!”

Mr Copper shouted, “If your Teacher finds out about this matter, what then?”

Hua Wu Que suddenly lifted his head and raised his voice, “Although Teacher’s command cannot be defied, but a promise cannot be broken, even if Teacher is here right now, she cannot make me become a person who goes back on his words!”

Mr Copper replied angrily, “Hua Wu Que don’t you forget, seeing me is as good as seeing your Teacher, you dare to disobey me?”

Hua Wu Que replied with a sigh, “Whatever that Sir ask of me, I will do them

all, except for this matter, I can never obey.”

Mr Copper suddenly shouted, “You do not wish to kill him, not because you want to keep your word, but because there is another reason? Is that so?”

Hua Wu Que felt another shock, he himself does not know if the reason for insisting on not killing Xiao Yu’er is because he wants to keep his word, or if there is another reason.

When Xiao Yu’er was lying helpless in his arms earlier, he suddenly felt a surge of inexplicable feelings. Looking at Xiao Yu’er’s face, he suddenly felt that this is not his enemy, but a close friend he has known for years.

He felt Xiao Yu’er’s faint breathing on his arm, and only felt that this is not someone he wants to kill, but someone he should be protecting at all costs.

Until the time Xiao Yu’er fell to the ground, this strange feeling still lingered in his heart, and after seeing that confident smile of Xiao Yu’er, how can he strike now!

Hua Wu Que sighed again. In his heart, he did not feel a thread of enmity towards Xiao Yu’er, and he himself cannot tell when this strange feeling started.

This feeling, seemed to have been buried in his heart since a long time ago, and was only triggered when Xiao Yu’er’s skin touched his skin.

Looking at Xiao Yu’er, he was mumbling in his heart, “Jiang Xiao Yu, Jiang Xiao Yu, what are you thinking? Are you having the same thoughts as me?” Xiao Yu’er was also staring intently at him, and indeed is having deep thoughts.

Mr Copper looked down from the treetop, and on seeing two people standing shoulder to shoulder, his cold eyes became hotter than fire, and shouted, “Hua Wu Que, do not wait another three months! Strike now!”

Xiao Yu’er suddenly looked heavenward and laughed madly, “Why can’t it wait another three months? You’re afraid that after three months, all the more he

will not strike?”

Mr Copper raised his voice, “What do I have to fear! The two of you are born enemies, your lives are fated, that one of you must die at the hands of the other!”

Xiao Yu’er roared, “Since that is the case, then why do you want to force him now. If you want me to die right now, then do it yourself…. Why don’t you dare to do it?”

It was as if someone stabbed Mr Copper right at the heart, and he flew down with a cry.

End of Chapter 64

Chapter 54

Chapter 65

Hua Wu Que's expression changed, and thought he would attack Xiao Yu'er, but unexpectedly, he flew into the woods with a long cry and with a strike of his palm, shattered the trunk of a tree!

His body was spinning in a dance, his palms striking out continuously, and about seven, eight trees on the hill were struck down by him. As the branches fell, they emitted a deafening sound.

On witnessing such amazing palm prowess, Xiao Yu'er can't help but feel tongue-tied.

He knows that with Mr Copper's martial arts, it would be easy as a pea to kill him. He also knows that this Mr Copper hates him to the extreme, and can't wait to kill and disembody him, with a thousand stabs and slashes. However this Mr Copper insisted on not doing it himself, and would rather vent his frustration on the trees. Why is this so? This is really incomprehensible!

In the time that his thoughts turned, Mr Copper has already flown to Hua Wu Que, and shouted, "You insist on waiting until three months later to kill him, right?" Hua Wu Que took a deep breath and said, "Yes!"

Mr Copper suddenly laughed hysterically, "Since you place such importance on your words, as your Senior, how can I make things difficult for you. If you want to wait three months, what's the problem in me letting you wait for three months?"

This change is really unexpected, and Hua Wu Que was both surprised and

ecstatic.

Mr Copper suddenly stopped laughing, “Now, you will leave.”

Hua Wu Que took a glace at Xiao Yu’er and asked, “Then he….”

Mr Copper replied, “He will stay here!”

Hua Wu Que was taken aback, “Could it be that Sir wants to…”

Mr Copper said coldly, “It doesn’t matter if he will go back on his words or not, but within these three months, I will protect him well, and not let him have an ounce of injury. Three months later, I will hand him in completeness to you…”

Xiao Yu’er grinned, “To let you spend so much effort to protect me, how can I accept such kindness?”

Mr Copper replied, “To protect a person like you, would it require much effort of mine?”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “If you think that I am very easy to protect, then you are wrong. I have no other bad habits, except to create trouble for others. There’s more than one person in Jiang Hu who wants to kill me.”

Mr Copper said, “Besides Hua Wu Que, no one else can kill you!”

Xiao Yu’er sighed, “You have said such boastful words, if I am hurt in anyway within these three months, I really wonder how you can face others.”

Mr Copper shouted, “Within these three months, if you are in any way injured, I will be held responsible.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed loudly, “That will put my mind at ease. Within these three months, it doesn’t matter what I do, anyway no one will be able to hurt me.”

Mr Copper replied coldly, “Rest assured, within these three months, no matter what you want to do, you won’t be able to do it.”

Xiao Yu’er blinked, and grinned, “Not necessarily…”

Hua Wu Que thought that Xiao Yu’er is so cunning and mischievous, even with Mr Copper’s excellent martial arts, it might not be easy for him not to be tricked. Once he thought about that, he unconsciously smiled.

Mr Copper asked angrily, “You’re still not leaving? What are you doing waiting here?”

Xiao Yu’er added, “Rest assured and leave, three months later, I will be here waiting for you!”

He turned towards Mr Copper, and continued with a smile, “Now I want to tell him some things in private, are you worried?”

Mr Copper said icily, “There is nothing in the world that can worry me.”

Xiao Yu’er wrinkled his nose and laughed, “Your abilities may be great, but aren’t you a little too boastful?”

Mr Copper said angrily, “How dare you be rude!”

Xiao Yu’er chortled, “Why would I not dare, anyway during these three months, no one can hurt me, right?”

Mr Copper was so angry that he stood there stunned, unable to move at all.

Xiao Yu’er walked to Hua Wu Que and whispered with a smile, “What a pity he’s wearing a ghastly mask, or else the expression on his face right now would look so good.”

Although he deliberately lowered his voice to talk, but he allowed the words to

be just heard by Mr Copper. Hua Wu Que almost could not take it and wanted to laugh, but he hurriedly cough and asked, “What was it that you wanted to say?”

Xiao Yu’er told him, “Tomorrow afternoon, Yan Nan Tian, Hero Yan will be waiting for me at the woods today. Can you help me tell him that I won’t be able to make it for the meeting.” This time, he was really whispering.

Hua Wu Que furrowed his brows and said, “Yan Nan Tian? …”

Xiao Yu’er sighed, “I know you have some issues with him, so even if you do not agree, I will not blame you.”

Hua Wu Que suddenly smiled, “These three months, we will be friends, right?”

Xiao Yu’er looked at him for a while, and smiled, “You’re very good, to have a friend like you, is not in vain at all.”

Hua Wu Que was silent for a moment, and said calmly, “A pity there’s only three months.” He deliberately pretended to be calm, but his pretense was not too good.

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “There are many unexpected things in the world, these things happen a few times every day, for all you know I will see you again in another two days.” Hua Wu Que sighed, “I always don’t believe in miracles.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “If I don’t believe in miracles, do you think I can still laugh now?”

Suddenly Mr Copper could be heard saying coldly, “A miracle will never happen! Hua Wu Que, you’re still not leaving?”

Looking at Hua Wu Que walking further away, Xiao Yu’er sighed, “If a person must die, to be able to die in his hands, is better than dying in other people’s hands.”

Mr Copper raised his voice, “You do not hate him?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Why must I hate him”

“His Seniors killed your parents!”

Xiao Yu’er said, “When my parents died, I’m afraid he wasn’t even born yet! The things done by his Teacher, are not related to him at all. If his Teacher had a meal, it can’t possibly be that he will have to shit on his behalf?”

On hearing the words that Xiao Yu’er said, Mr Copper can’t help but feel stunned. Xiao Yu’er looked at him intently and suddenly smiled, “Let me ask you, why do you want me to hate him?”

Mr Copper suddenly said, “Whether you hate him or not, what matter is it of mine?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “That’s right, whether I hate him or not is no matter of yours, then why are you so concerned?”

Mr Copper actually did not speak. Xiao Yu’er continued with a slight smile, “He had to kill me with his own hands, but cannot tell me the reason, I had already thought this is a little strange, now it is getting stranger.” Mr Copper answered, “Although you do not hate him, but he hates you, so he wants to kill you, what’s so strange about that?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “Do you think he really hates me?”

Mr Copper’s body seemed to shake and he raised his voice, “He must hate you!”

Xiao Yu’er sighed, “This is what I was feeling strange about. You and his Teacher can kill me easily, but you do not strike yourselves, so I feel that you did not actually want me dead, but only wanted him to kill me. It seems that the both of you must see him kill me personally before you will feel happy.”

Mr Copper replied, “Wanting him to kill you, means wanting you dead, what’s the difference?”

Xiao Yu’er said, “There is a difference, and this difference must extremely subtle. I know there must be a very strange reason, but what I pity I cannot guess the reason for now.”

Mr Copper replied, “In this whole world, only two people know about this secret, but they will never tell you!”

A flash of light seem to pass through Xiao Yu’er’s eyes, but he deliberately said with a low sigh, “The Mistresses of Floral Palace will naturally know…”

Mr Copper agreed, “Naturally.”

Xiao Yu’er shouted, “The Mistresses of Floral Palace are two sisters, and since you said this secret is only known to two in the world, then how did you know?”

Mr Copper’s body seemed to have trembled again, and said angrily, “You speak too much, shut up now!”

He suddenly reached out his hand and sealed Xiao Yu’er’s acupoint. Xiao Yu’er only felt a white shadow flash by, and could not even see what his hand looked like.

This mysterious ‘Mr Copper’ not only did not want others to see his real face, he did not even want others to see his hand!

Hua Wu Que is also feeling suspicious about this inexplicable matter, only the matters that he is concerned about, there is no one he can talk to, and he himself does not wish to tell others.

By day break, the wine was still making him sleep, and without knowing how long he has slept, there was a sudden commotion in the courtyard, jarring him awake.

He wore his clothes as he got up, and just as he walked out the door, he saw Jiang Bie He standing under the tree with his hands crossed behind his back, and on seeing him walked over with a smile. He said smilingly “Elder brother had a date with someone else last night, and had no choice but to leave. By the time I returned, I realized that Younger brother had drunk quite a lot on your own, and was actually drunk.”

Not only did he not make any mention of what happened at the restaurant last night, he even changed his way of address, and starting saying ‘Elder brother’ and ‘Younger brother’. It was as if that matter is due to someone trying to sow discord, not worth a mention at all, this is better than any explanation. Hua Wu Que’s eyes moved, and asked, “I wonder what is the time now.”

Jiang Bie He replied with a smile, “It is past noon.”

Hua Wu Que said hoarsely, “Ah, I have actually slept for so long…” As he spoke, he hurried back into the room to wash up.

Jiang Bie He also followed him in, and tried to probe, “How about Elder brother here accompany Younger brother out for a walk?”

Hua Wu Que said with a laugh, “I have been staying in the City for so long, is Brother Jiang worried that I would be lost?”

Jiang Bie He stood at the door for a long while, before forcing out a laugh and said, “Since that is the case, Elder brother will just go to the front and take a look at Miss Duan.”

It seems that he has already felt that Hua Wu Que is not hiding things from him, and although he did not say it out loud, his heart is already tied into a knot. He walked to the courtyard and spoke softly to two men. The two burly men replied in unison, “Yes.”

Jiang Bie He looked at them bounding out of the courtyard, the corners of his mouth revealed a thread of sinister smile, and mumbled, “Hua Wu Que oh Hua Wu Que, although I sincerely want to become friends with you, but if you are thinking of letting me down, then do not blame me for letting you down!”

Hua Wu Que seemed to be leisurely strolling. He stopped in front of a shop selling birds and listened to the birds chirp for a long while, and walked to a teahouse and drank two cups of tea and ate a plate of salted snacks. Someone on the street immediately went to report to Jiang Bie He.

Jiang Bie He mused, “Drinking tea… why would he go to a teahouse to drink alone? Could it be he has asked someone to meet him at that teahouse?”

That burly man replied, “Master Hua was at that teahouse for a very long time, no one walked over to talk to him.”

After another while, someone came back to report, “Master Hua is on the street looking at Steel Arm Wang performing right now.”

Jiang Bie He furrowed his brows, “That type of low down performance, and he can still tolerate seeing it? Do you see if anyone in the crowd spoke to him?”

“No.”

Jiang Be He asked, “Who is keeping an eye on him now?”

The man replied, “Song San and Li Ah Niu are in charge of that street…”

He has not finished his words when Song San has already rushed in frantically, and fell to the floor exclaiming, “Master Hua suddenly disappeared!”

Jiang Bie He was furious, and slapping the table, exclaimed, “Are you blind? In the bright daylight with so many people walking up and down the streets, he cannot use his Lightness Skills, so how could he have suddenly disappeared?”

Song San stammered, “After that Steel Arm Wang and his disciple performed the ‘Single sword breaks the spear’, it was his daughter’s turn to perform the ‘Meteor Hammer’. However who would have expected when she executed the move ‘Catching the Moon amongst Clouds’, the Meteor Hammer suddenly broke. The Meteor Hammer, which was as large as a small watermelon, flew up

into the sky and all those in the crowd were afraid it will drop down on their heads, started screaming and running, and the situation became messy immediately.”

Jiang Bie He asked, “How did the chain on the Meteor Hammer break?”

Song San replied, “Your servant does not know.”

Jiang Bie He asked icily, “I’m afraid you were dazzled from looking at Steel Arm Wang’s daughter?”

Song San stammered, “Your…. Your servant wouldn’t dare.”

Jiang Bie He shouted, “Since your eyes are so useless, then why still keep it?”

Before he finished his words, two burly men were already dragging Song San out. Song San’s face turned ashen, but he dare not even cry out for mercy. After a while, a shrill scream could be heard coming from the back!

Jiang Bie He did not seem to have heard, but only mumbled to himself, “Where have Hua Wu Que gone to? Why does he want to hide from me? Could it be he has an appointment with Jiang Xiao Yu to take care of me? If the two of them were to join forces, what shall I do?” His words were said very softly, but the look in his eyes already revealed the a killer look, and said with an icy smile, “I would rather betray everyone, than to let anyone betray me… Jiang Bie He oh Jiang Bie He, you must never forget these words!”

Hua Wu Que left the city, a slight smile on his lips, and if someone were to ask him now, “How did the Meteor Hammer break?” he will surely laugh very loudly.

To be able to use a small stone to break that chain made of fine steel, he is indeed feeling very pleased about his own skills.

When Hua Wu Que reached the woods, the silk-like purple flowers, were already ravaged by the sword energy yesterday. The fog covered the daylight, and the breeze started to feel cool.

Once Hua Wu Que thought that he would be meeting Yan Nan Tian again, the smile at the corner of his mouth disappeared. Although he knows that this trip will certainly hold some danger, but he must come.

Stepping on the fallen flowers, Hua Wu Que walked into the woods. However, Yan Nan Tian was not in the woods, instead there was a girl clad in snow white clothes, leaning against a tree trunk with her head lowered, as if she was counting the fallen flowers on the ground.

Her back was towards Hua Wu Que, so Hua Wu Que could only see her slim body, and that long, lustrous, jet-black hair draped on her shoulders. Although Hua Wu Que could not see her face, but at a single glance, he could already tell who she was… Tie Xin Lan. Tie Xin Lan, why is she still here?

He did not expect to see Tie Xin Lan here, and he does not know whether he should greet her, and there seems to be some bitterness in his heart.

She seems to be troubled, and did not even realize that someone was here. The cool wind caressed her hair, which was as shiny as satin.

After a long moment, there was a long, sad sigh, and she muttered, “Flowers bloom and flowers wither, and shortly they will decay, is life not like that as well?”

Hua Wu Que originally did not want to startle her, and could not bear to startle her as well. He only wanted to turn around and leave quietly, but at this point in time he couldn’t help but let out a small sigh. Tie Xin Lan seemed surprised and happy, and turned her head around, saying “You…” She only said one word, and on seeing that the person who came is actually Hua Wu Que, was immediately stunned.

Hua Wu Que may be feeling troubled, but he still smiled and asked, “How are you?”

At this moment, he really could not think of any other words. Who would understand that in this little greeting of his, the amount of feelings that was put

in it. Tie Xin Lan seems to be at a loss for words as well, and lightly nodded her head.

After a moment, Hua Wu Que added with a smile, “You did not expect that it would be me who came, right?”

Tie Xin Lan lowered her head and said slowly, “I see that you are not injured, I am really happy.”

She almost could not hear herself talk, but Hua Wu Que heard every word clearly, and felt a stab of pain in his heart.

He tried hard to make his smile more naturally, but doubtlessly failed. Luckily Tie Xin Lan did not see his smile at all.

It was as if she did not dare to look at him at all. After another moment, Tie Xin Lan said with a sigh, “I actually have a lot of things to say to you, but I don’t know how to say them.”

Hua Wu Que’s smile became bitter, and said gently, “Some people are very hard to forget, sometimes you may think that you have forgotten him, but once you see him, his every word and every smile, will all return to your heart…”

Tie Xin Lan asked, “You… you can forgive me?” She suddenly raised her head, her eyes filled with tears.

Hua Wu Que dared not look at her as well, and with a lowered head, said with a smile “You have nothing to ask for forgiveness. If I were you, I might do the same as well.”

Tie Xin Lan replied, “But I have really let you down, you… why don’t you scold me? Blame me? Then I will feel better. Your pity and understanding will only make me more miserable.” As she spoke she became more agitated, and finally burst out crying.

End of Chapter 65

Chapter 55

Chapter 66

Hua Wu Que was silent for a moment, before looking heavenward and sighed, “I will never hate you, although I cannot be with… with you, but I will treat you like a sister for the rest of my life.”

He smiled and continued, “Also, I want to tell you, I have never hated Jiang Xiao Yu. He may be fated to become my enemy, but he is the only true friend in my entire life. If you… you can be together with him, I’ll feel very happy as well…”

Tie Xin Lan suddenly exclaimed, “Big… Big Brother, I will be grateful to you for the rest of my life, really grateful to you.”

She was smiling as she cried, and really doesn’t know if it’s sadness or happiness. Hua Wu Que also does not know if it’s sadness or happiness. He knows with Tie Xin Lan’s cry of ‘Big Brother’, it can never be changed for the rest of their lives. Although they might have built up some feelings, but such feelings has been totally changed by this cry of ‘Big Brother’. This cry of ‘Big Brother’ was uttered so affectionately, but so alienated as well.

Hua Wu Que looked towards Heaven, and finally could not help but heave a long sigh, saying, “I hope that he will not let you down… will not let you down!” This is a wish, a prayer, and also a pledge, a kind of self-release and putting his mind at ease… It is unlikely that anyone else can understand the complexity of the feelings in these two sentences.

But no matter what, now the both of them are more confident about their feelings. The two words ‘Big Brother’ is a like a wall, making them feel that their feelings will no longer flood over.

Tie Xin Lan finally smiled, and asked, “Big Brother, why are you here?”

Hua Wu Que replied solemnly, “I was entrusted by someone to come look for a person.”

Tie Xin Lan pressed on, “Are you here to look for Hero Yan?”

Hua Wu Que can only nod. Tie Xin Lan’s eyes shone, and asked “Could it be he was the one who entrusted you?” Hua Wu Que replied, “Yes.”

Tie Xin Lan asked, “He… why didn’t he come himself?”

Hua Wu Que did not reply, but instead asked “Why is Hero Yan not here, but you’re here instead?”

Tie Xin Lan lowered her head and said, “Last night, Hero Yan found me, and told me many things. He told me to wait for him here today. You should know, Hero Yan’s words, no one would disobey.”

Hua Wu Que asked, “What did he tell you?”

Tie Xin Lan’s face reddened, and biting her lips, replied “Hero Yan said, he wants me… me to chat with him first, and then…”

Suddenly a person could be heard laughing loudly from outside the woods, “Have you two young lovers talked, am I too early?”

Hua Wu Que turned around suddenly, and saw Yan Nan Tian taking large strides into the woods. On seeing him, his laughter stopped abruptly, he expression changed, and he bellowed, “Why are you here? How did you come?”

His lightning like gaze swept Tie Xin Lan’s face, and asked, “Where is Xiao Yu’er?”

Tie Xin Lan unconsciously lowered her head and said, “I don’t know, he said…”

Hua Wu Que continued, “Jiang Xiao Yu asked me to inform Hero Yan, that he can’t make it for the appointment today.”

Yan Nan Tian asked angrily, “Why can’t he come?”

Hua Wu Que heaved a long sigh and said, “He has been imprisoned by someone, I’m afraid his moves will be restricted….”

He knows that once he said those words, the outcome would certainly be unimaginable. Before he finished his words, Tie Xin Lan’s expression changed as expected. Yan Nan Tian fumed, “Who imprisoned him?”

Hua Wu Que hesitated for a while, but finally said, “An Elder in Wulin, whom everyone addresses as ‘Mr Copper’!”

Yan Nan Tian suddenly roared, “Mr Copper? I have roamed the Martial Arts realm for ten over years, I’ve never heard if a person called ‘Mr Copper’ in the Martial Arts realm. Did you make up that name!”

With a step, he was right in front of Hua Wu Que, and shouted, “Have you secretly hurt him, and yet you dare to come here and pretend to be a good guy!”

Hua Wu Que fearlessly replied, “I was entrusted by someone, it’s a matter of loyalty. Hero Yan only need to ask, and I will tell all that I know, but Hero Yan keep having doubts about my character, I…” Hua Wu Que said each word clearly, “I may not be Hero Yan’s match, but I must still have another duel with Hero Yan!”

Yan Nan Tian looked heavenward and laughed hysterically, “You still dare to say such a thing? You are very bold!”

Hua Wu Que replied calmly, “I am not bold, but I am not a coward who’s afraid to die!”

Yan Nan Tian shouted, “Since you are not afraid to die, then I shall grant you

your wish today!”

Before he finished his shout, Tie Xin Lan had already rushed over, crying out, “Hero Yan, I know him. He is not a liar no matter what!”

Yan Nan Tian shouted, “Xiao Yu’er has already fallen into another’s hands and yet you are speaking up for him! No wonder Xiao Yu’er ignored you, you are also a fickle minded woman!”

Tie Xin Lan’s tears were bursting out again, and fluttered, “If Jiang Xiao Yu is in danger, Junior would save him even if it costs me my life, but Hero Yan said Master…. Master Hua is lying… Junior would not believe it even in death.”

Yan Nan Tian laughed icily, “You want to fight with your life for Xiao Yu’er, and also want to die for Hua Wu Que, how many lives do you actually have?”

Tie Xin Lan sobbed, “No matter how Hero Yan berates me, even if you think Junior is a… is a loose woman, there is nothing Junior can do ….”

She collapsed onto the floor and cried hoarsely, “Junior only ask that Hero Yan let Master Hua off. If in future Hero Yan finds out that he was lying, even if you tear my body to pieces, I would be willing.”

Yan Nan Tian laughed fiercely, “Fine! Since you want to vouch for him with your life, but a fickle woman like you, how much can your life be worth?”

This famed hero, already has a fiery character, and now that he is worried about Xiao Yu’er, all the more his anger flared, and cannot be stopped.

Hua Wu Que’s expression changed and he said, “Yan Nan Tian, I respected you as a Hero of our times, and have been tolerant towards you. I did not expect you to actually say such words to a girl. This kind of hero, heh heh, how much is he worth?”

Yan Nan Tian has already struck out his fist with a furious shout. Hua Wu Que also moved his body, and charged up.

Tie Xin Lan knows that once these two fight, no one in the world would be able to stop them. Once she thought about the injustices and grievances she had suffered for Xiao Yu'er and Hua Wu Que, which not a single person can understand, once she thought about the hard efforts she had made, which only resulted in being scorned as 'fickle', her efforts totally useless…. she finally could not take it any longer and starting wailing loudly. Her piteous cries were even more heartbreaking than a cuckold who cried out blood. The energy from the fist and palm shattered the flowers, which dropped like rain.

This is literally a duel between the two strongest martial artists in the martial arts realm belonging to the old and new generation! This literally is the most earth-shattering duel in the martial arts realm in the last hundred years!

The last time, they used swords, but this time, they're only using their hands, but the excitement and intensity of this duel is not below that of the previous one! Yan Nan Tian's fist moves were like his sword moves, sweeping with overwhelming power. The power of his strokes is incomparable in the world! Floral Palace's martial arts have always countered brute strength with subtleties, and striking only when the enemy has struck. Hua Wu Que's gentle and brooding character is also due to this type of martial arts, which he had learnt since young.

But now, his moves have totally changed!

He actually executed a forceful strike, attempting to attack at every opportunity! It's because without this kind of moves, there is no way he could vent the anger he is feeling! This battle, is no longer entirely a battle for his life! It is a battle to protect the person he cared for most in his entire life!

He may be a gentle and quiet person, but Tie Xin Lan's heart rending cries, have triggered the ferocity in his blood! This hot, furious blood, is inherited from his mother – his respectable mother, who for love, faced death without fear, and died smiling.

Floral Palace's cold and solemn upbringing may have gradually turned Hua Wu Que's blood cold, but the fire of love, have rekindled it! He suddenly felt that life and death is not really that important.

The most important thing is, he is going to have a duel to the death with Yan Nan Tian. He wants to use his own blood to wash the injustice that the person he cares about most has suffered, and also to wash the injustice he himself has suffered. The intensity of power of his palm attacks, seemed to have shocked heaven and earth.

Hua Wu Que's palms kept attacking, straight attacks, diagonal attacks, side attacks, his moves were strong yet nimble, but Yan Nan Tiam's fist moves were like an iron wall. Hua Wu Que could not even make a single successful attack!

His hair was in a mess, and the messy strands of hair landed on his pale forehead, but his cheeks were red from the hot rush of blood. Anyone would have thought that to use ferocious moves to attack Yan Nan Tian, that person must be tired of living.

His palm attacks may be as sharp as nails, but Yan Nan Tian's fist attacks is like hammer, the heartless hammer, beating down on him heartlessly.

He only felt himself slowly suffocating, slowly losing his breath, Yan Nan Tian's dance-like fists, seemed in his eyes to be growing bigger, growing bigger…

He knows that this time Yan Nan Tian will not let him off! But he did not give up, did not despair, as long as he still have one last breath in him, he will not give in even in death!

Who would have expected that Yan Nan Tian suddenly somersaulted, retreated seven feet, and shouted, "Hold it!"

He saw that he could have killed Hua Wu Que with his fists, and yet he suddenly stopped.

Hua Wu Que was surprised, and can't help but asked as he panted, "Why do you want me to stop?"

Yan Nan Tian stared at him with bright eyes, and said each word clearly,

“Although I have never heard of this name ‘Mr Copper’, neither do I believe that ‘Mr Copper’ really exists in this world, but I now believe that you did not lie.”

Hua Wu Que said, “Oh?…”

Yan Nan Tian continued, “If you had lied, you would surely have felt guilt, a guilty person would never be able to execute such ferocious moves!”

Hua Wu Que was silent for a moment, and looking heavenward, laughed, “Don’t you feel that it’s a little too late to believe me now?”

Yan Nan Tian said with a deep voice, “If you felt that I have insulted you earlier, then I sincerely apologize.”

Hua Wu Que heaved a long sigh, “Admitting a mistake without trying to shift the blame, a hero of the world indeed, even if I want to fight with you to the death, I will not be able to strike now!”

Yan Nan Tian shouted, “But I will still strike!”

Hua Wu Que was again surprised, and asked, “Why?”

Yan Nan Tian replied, “You may not have lied, but I still cannot let you go. No matter who that ‘Mr Copper’ is, he is surely related to you, right?”

Hua Wu Que thought about it, and said, “Right.”

“He imprisoned Jiang Xiao Yu, is it because of you?”

Hua Wu Que replied with a bitter smile, “I did not ask him to do it, but it’s true that was his intention.”

Yan Nan Tian roared, “That’s it then, since he kept Jiang Xiao Yu, then I will keep you! The time he releases Jiang Xiao Yu, will be the time I release you!”

He took a step forward, and said fiercely, “If he kills Jiang Xiao Yu, then I’ll kill you!” Hua Wu Que’s expression changed, but he heaved a long sigh and said, “That sounds very fair.”

Yan Nan Tian replied, “I have always been fair in my dealings.”

Hua Wu Que said coldly, “But the words you said to Miss Tie were most unfair.”

As he said these, he suddenly realized, that Tie Xin Lan is no longer under the tree. No one knows when this heart broken girl left!

Yan Nan Tian roared, “Do you stay willingly, or do you want me to fight with you again?”

Hua Wu Que’s expression paled, and he said out each word, “Even if you want me to leave now, I will not leave. If something untoward were to happen to Tie Xin Lan, even if you let me off, I will not let you off!”

Yan Nan Tian laughed heartily and said, “Good, very good! Before I find Tie Xin Lan and Jiang Xiao Yu, I think the two of us cannot be separated, right?”

Hua Wu Que replied, “Exactly!”

Mr Copper carried Xiao Yu’er and flew up the tree top again.

The branches on this tree were dense and at the tip of the tree, the circumference was about ten feet or more. The branches were firm yet supple, able to hold the weight of a few hundred catties. Mr Copper placed Xiao Yu’er at the top, and only pressed the branch down a little, and the dense leaves were wrapping Xiao Yu’er up like a blanket. Unless it’s a flying bird, or else no one would realize there is someone being hidden there.

Although Xiao Yu’er could not move, but he was still grinning and said, “This is really a good place to hide. It seems that I can have a comfortable sleep here.”

Mr Copper said coldly, “You better honestly sleep.”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “Are you leaving? You are such a loner, and loves cleanliness so much, I just know that you will not guard over me forever.”

Mr Copper smiled coldly, “You can forget about running away. Once I have finished my work here, I will bring you to a safer place.”

Xiao Yu’er said, “I can’t even move my fingers, even if you were to put me on the road, I won’t be able to run.”

Mr Copper replied, “It’s best that you can understand this point.”

Xiao Yu’er rolled his eyes and commented, “If it rains, and I don’t have a very good constitution, I’ll fall sick once I get caught in the rain. It’s no big deal if I fall sick, but if I’m injured due to my sickness, won’t it spoil your reputation? You promised, never to let me be injured, right?”

Mr Copper said icily, “No matter how sick you are, I will be able to cure you.”

Xiao Yu’er thought for a while, and continued, “I’m heavier than an ox, if this branch can’t take my weight and break into half, and if I fall and break my arm or leg, can you patch them up as well?”

Mr Copper replied, “Even if two of the branches were to break, you still would not fall.”

Xiao Yu’er widened his eyes and smiled, “What if there were eagles or similarly large birds that flew over my head, and thought my eyes were pigeon eggs and pecked me. Can you mend that as well?”

Mr Copper suddenly exclaimed, “Why are you so annoying!”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “Since I was born, I don’t have any other ability other than annoying others. If you find me annoying, why don’t you kill me. A dead person

won’t be annoying.”

In Mr Copper’s entire life, he has really never met such an irritating person. If it was anyone else, that person would have been cut into eight pieces long ago.

He was so angry his body was shaking, but he had no choice but to take out a silk handkerchief to cover Xiao Yu’er’s face, saying fiercely “Is this better?”

Xiao Yu’er took a deep breath and smiled, “Your handkerchief is really fragrant, is it some love token given to you by some lady?"”

Mr Copper bellowed, “Why can’t you just shut up?”

Xiao Yu’er said, “If you were to seal my mute acupoint, then won’t I be unable to talk? But you would also know that the mute acupoint cannot be sealed for more than six hours, or that person would die of asphyxiation.

Xiao Yu’er continued with a laugh, “So if you were to seal my mute acupoint, every three hours, you would have to come back and let me take a breath, won’t that be even more troublesome.”

Mr Copper said through gritted teeth, “You know quite a lot.”

Xiao Yu’er added, “Besides this, there is another less troublesome method.”

He deliberately paused, and continued, “That would be running away, the best plan in the thirty-six plans. Once you’re gone, no matter what I say, you won’t be able to hear me. Won’t that be a relief to your ears?”

Without waiting for him to finish his words, Mr Copper had already flown down the tree.

Xiao Yu’er deliberately sighed, and mumbled, “He’s finally gone, I hope that gentleman would not come too early, so that I can have a good sleep first.”

He has not finished his words when Mr Copper flew up again, took away the handkerchief that was covering his face, and asked fiercely, “Who is the gentleman you were referring to?”

Xiao Yu’er pretended to be startled, “Ah, the words I have just said, you’ve heard them all?”

Mr Copper said coldly, “Within a thousand feet, nothing can escape me.”

Xiao Yu’er sighed again, “You’ve hidden me on the tree, no one can see me, so how can there be anyone who would save me? I was just talking and amusing myself earlier on.”

Mr Copper asked, “Who did you think would come and save you?”

Mr Copper was deep in thought for a moment before he exclaimed, “That’s right, Hua Wu Que might come back for a look.”

He stopped speaking, carried Xiao Yu’er again and flew down the tree. He thought himself to be astute, but he did not see Xiao Yu’er secretly smiling.

Xiao Yu’er did not expect anyone to save him at all. He knows that if he stays on the tree, there will be no chance for him to escape at all. He can only harass Mr Copper, until he’s dizzy from the harassment. As soon as he is a little careless, there will be a chance for him to escape.

If it’s martial arts, Xiao yu’er is definitely not Mr Copper’s match, but when it comes to petty tricks like these, even two Mr Copper would not be a threat to Xiao Yu’er.

He carried Xiao Yu’er and flew down the tree, but hesitated again.

Xiao Yu’er asked, “Where are you taking me to? You can’t possibly just stand here carrying me.”

“Humph!”

Xiao Yu’er grinned, “I have not bathed for a few days, don’t you find it dirty carrying me?”

He has not finished his words and Mr Copper had released his hold.

Xiao Yu’er fell to the ground and cried loudly, “Aiyo, oh no, my bone’s broken!”

Mr Copper kicked his hipbone, thus unsealing the acupoint for his lower body and shouted, “Stand up and follow me!”

Xiao yu’er felt that his legs can move, but groaned, “My bone’s broken, how can I stand up, this time you really must carry me!”

Mr Copper fumed, “What is your bone made of, that it will break with a fall?”

Xiao Yu’er said, “Even if it did not break from the fall, it would have broke from your kick… aiyo, so painful!”

He might as well start screaming in pain.

Me Copper’s gaze flickered, and he finally can’t help but ask, “Is it really broken?”

Xiao Yu’er groaned, “Touch it for yourself if you don’t believe me.”

Mr Copper hesitated, but finally bent down to inspect Xiao Yu’er’s leg.

Xiao Yu’er said, “No, it’s not there.”

“Where is it?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Not at the thigh, it’s a little higher.”

Mr Copper's hands suddenly shrunk back, as if he has been bitten by a poisoned snake. He stood up straight, his chest panting.

Xiao Yu'er grinned, "Why is it that you don't even dare to touch, unless you're a woman?"

Mr Copper bellowed, "Shut up!"

Xiao Yu'er stuck out his tongue and laughed, "You want me to shut up, even if you wish to seal my mute acupoint, you can use a cloth to stuff my mouth!"

He could have stuffed Xiao Yu'er's mouth, but now that Xiao Yu'er had said it out first, if he were to do that, won't it be a loss of face?

Mr Copper said icily, "Why should I stuff your mouth, I want to hear you talk."

Xiao Yu'er tried to hold his laughter and said, "I did not expect my words to be so nice. Since you like to listen, why don't you sit down, we can have a comfortable chat."

Mr Copper stared at Xiao Yu'er in anger, but there's nothing he can do. He had thought that there would be no one in the world that he cannot handle, but who would know that there would be a Jiang Xiao Yu. For the first time in his life, he felt a headache coming on.

End of Chapter 66

Chapter 56

Chapter 67

Yan Nan Tian and Hua Wu Que walked out of the woods together.

Hua Wu Que suddenly said, “Which direction did Tie Xin Lan walk towards? Did you not notice as well?”

Yan Nan Tian replied, “No!”

Hua Wu Que raised his head and looked up, saying with a soft sigh, “I wonder where Jiang Xiao Yu is right now as well?”

Yan Nan Tian asked, “When did he end up in the hands of that ‘Mr Copper’?”

“Last night”

Yan Nan Tian was silent for a moment, and suddenly said, “How can there be a ‘Mr Copper’ in the martial arts realm? If he is so highly skilled, why have I never heard of him? … Do you know his background?”

Hua Wu Que replied, “I only know he is extremely skilled, unbelievably so, but I do not know his background as well.”

Yan Nan Tian smiled coldly, “If my guess is correct, he must be someone in disguise.”

Hua Wu Que asked, “But who in the world would be so highly skilled?”

Yan Nan Tian replied, “The Mistress of Floral Palace…”

Hua Wu Que said with a slight smile, “Why would my Teacher want to disguise herself? And why would she want to hide it from me? How would doing this benefit her? Hero Yan, can you think of a reason why?”

“I can’t think of any…” He paused for a while, and added, “Where would you think that ‘Mr Copper’ would bring Jiang Xiao Yu to?”

Hua Wu Que heaved a long sigh as well, “I can’t think of any as well.”

By now Xiao Yu’er is already asleep. Taking advantage of the night, Mr Copper brought Xiao Yu’er back to that room in the inn. He really could not think where else he can bring this troublemaking youth. Xiao Yu’er lied on the bed, sleeping soundly, but Mr Copper can only sit on the chair and look at him. He is just like a statue sitting on the chair, not moving at all. Xiao Yu’er’s breathing lowered, as if he is sound asleep, and like a child who is sleeping next to his mother, there was a slight smile at the corners of his mouth.

When he’s awake, on this face, not only is it full of captivating charm, but there is also a carefree, mischievous air. But now that he is asleep, this face looked as innocent as a baby.

Mr Copper looked at his innocent and handsome face, looked at the scar on his face that can never be removed, and his whole body started to shiver.

His hand clutched tightly at the back of the chair, so tightly, that his cold eyes became hotter than fire, as if it’s filled with pain, or filled with hatred.

There was a ‘pak’ sound, and the back of the teak chair was shattered to pieces by him!

Xiao Yu’er slowly opened his eyes, rubbed his eyes and smiled at him, asking, “Did I sleep for a long time?”

“Very… very long” He tried his utmost to make his voice sound calm, but there

was still a slight shiver.

Xjao Yu’er smiled, “You have been sitting there guarding me all along?” Although Xiao Yu’er could not move his body, but with a kick, he jumped down the bed and said with a smile, “I’ve taken over you bed, and you could not sleep, I’m really sorry about that.”

Mr Copper stared at his leg, and asked fiercely, “You… your leg is not injured?”

Xiao Yu’er made a face at him, and started walking out.

Mr Copper shouted, “Where are you going?”

Xiao Yu’er grinned, “I have a habit, once I wake up I need to… need to go to the toilet.”

Mr Copper fumed, “You’re not allowed!”

Xiao Yu’er said miserably, “If I’m not allowed, then I’ll have to poop in my pants, that would be very smelly.”

Mr Copper almost jumped up, and shouted, “You… You dare to do it?”

Xiao Yu’er said slowly, “No matter how fierce or capable a person is, even if he can kill or set fire, but he cannot ask others not to poop.”

Mr Copper stared at him, his gaze almost smoking with fire.

However, Xiao Yu’er remained unperturbed, and smiled, “If you do not want me to poop, there is only one way, which is to kill me immediately. Or else… or else I really cannot hold it in any longer.” As he spoke, he was about to squat.

Mr Copper quickly yelled, “No… not here….”

“Are you letting me out?”

Mr Copper stamped his feet angrily and said, “Scram!”

Without waiting for him to finish talking, Xiao Yu’er is already walking out with his back bent, and laughingly said, “If you’re worried, you can look at me from outside the toilet.”

Mr Copper was indeed worried, and indeed could only wait outside the toilet.

He would not even imagine in his dreams, that in his life, he would actually be standing outside a toilet, waiting for someone who is pooping inside.

After almost an hour, Xiao Yu’er walked out slowly rubbing his belly. Mr Copper was quite mad and fumed, “Have you died inside?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “A few day’s worth of stuff, to be cleared in one go, of course it would take some time.”

Mr Copper was so angry that he did not know what to say, and can only turn his head away.

However, Xiao Yu’er grinned, “Now we should go for a meal.”

Mr Copper fumed, “You… what did you say?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “Eating and pooping, is the most common thing, what’s so strange about that? …. Have you never seen anyone who wants to eat?”

Mr Copper was stunned for a while, and suddenly smiled frostily, “Although I cannot stop you…. you from going to the toilet, but I can stop you from eating.”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “You won’t allow me to eat?”

Mr Copper roared, “You will only eat when I let you, other wise you will shut your mouth!”

Xiao Yu’er blinked, and smiled, “But the mouth is on my face, right? So, when I want to eat, you will have to let me eat, or else I will never eat. If I starve to death, your plan will be finished… do you understand?”

Mr Copper went forward with a step, grabbed Xiao Yu’er’s collar and hissed, “You… you dare to say such words to me?”

Xiao Yu’er grinned, “I may not be able to win you in a fight, but if I want to starve myself, there is nothing you can do, right?”

Mr Copper was shaking with fury, but can only pretend not to hear.

Yan Nan Tian and Hua Wu Que naturally could not find Tie Xin Lan, and of course Xiao Yu’er. They walked aimlessly for a while when Yan Nan Tian suddenly asked, “Do you drink?”

Hua Wu Que smiled, “I can drink a cup or two.”

Yan Nan Tian replied, “Good, then we’ll go for a drink!”

So the two of them went back to the city, and Yan Nan Tian said, “The food in Jiang Zhe are too sweet, Northern cuisine too bland. Only Sichuan food, salty, spicy and hot, are suitable for a man’s taste, what do you think?”

Hua Wu Que replied, “There is this restaurant called Yang Zi Jiang in the city that seems to have a famous chef.”

At this time the night market is still open, the streets were crowded, and it was quite a bustling atmosphere. On the upper level of Yang Zi Jiang Restaurant, were also filled, not a table untaken.

Jiang Bie He was alone drinking.

There are too many things worrying him these two days, Xiao Yu'er, Hua Wu Que… and his son Jiang Yu Lang, who still have not returned.

Suddenly a burly man hurriedly ran upstairs, knocked over two chairs and walked to him, whispering, "Master Hua is here, he's just downstairs, and seems like he's coming up for a drink."

Jiang Bie He asked, "Is he alone?"

The burly man replied, "He is with a tall, skinny man with tattered and torn clothes, seems like…"

He has not finished his words but Jiang Bie He's expression had turned ashen, and immediately stood up, and fluttered, "Quickly… you think of a way to block them first."

But by now Hua Wu Que and Yan Nan Tian had already walked up, and Hua Wu Que is walking towards him with a smile.

Jiang Bie He's hand held onto the table, almost unable to stand from fear.

He heard Hua Wu Que said with a smile, "I didn't expect Brother Jiang to be here as well."

Jiang Bie He replied, "Yes… yes…"

He stared straight at Yan Nan Tian, and only felt his throat drying, his legs softening, unable to utter even a single word, as if he's already scared out of his wits.

Yan Nan Tian looked at him up and down twice, and smiled, "Is this the recently famed person in the Martial Arts realm 'Hero of Jiang Nan, Jiang Bie He'?"

Jiang Bie He stammered, “I wouldn’t… wouldn’t dare.”

Yan Nan Tian replied, “Fine, let’s sit together, and have a few drinks.”

He pulled a chair over and sat down, but realized that the cups and plates on the table kept moving. It turns out that Jiang Bie He’s whole body was shaking. Yan Nan Tian furrowed his brows and asked, “Why won’t Brother Jiang sit down?” Jiang Bie He immediately sat down straight on the chair.

Yan Nan Tian said with a laugh, “Although I have not stepped into the martial arts world for a long time, but I have long heard of Brother Jiang’s heroic name. I must have a good drink with you today.”

Jiang Bie He hurriedly poured three cups of wine and said with a forced smile, “Let Junior offer a toast to Hero Yan first.”

He used the wine cup to cover his face, but in his heart he was totally surprised! “So Jiang Xiao Yu have not told him about me, but he… how could he not have recognized me? These twenty years, my looks have not changed much.”

He secretly looked over from the corner of his eyes over the wine cup, and was silently contemplating, “But his looks have changed a lot, could it….. could it be….”

Suddenly Yan Nan Tian asked, “Why haven’t Brother Jiang drank up your cup of wine?”

Jiang Bie He hurriedly gulped it down, and said with a laugh, “Junior have long been respectful of Hero Yan’s heroic name, I did not expect to meet you today, it is indeed an honor.”

Yan Nan Tian laughed loudly, “That’s right, it’s the first time we met, we must really have a good drink.”

On hearing the four words ‘first time we met’, Jiang Bie He felt even more perplexed, but can’t help heaving a long sigh of relief, and laughed, “We really must have a good drink, and not leave until we are drunk.”

Yan Nan Tian slapped the table and laughed, “What a good ‘not leave until we are drunk’…. Come, hurry up and bring us thirty catties (= 15 kg) of wine!”

Mr Copper and Xiao Yu’er walked out of the inn. It’s late in the night, there’s no one else on the long street and the shops on both sides are all closed.

Xiao Yu’er clasped his hands behind his back and walked around, seemingly very happy, and smiled, “Don’t be anxious, even if the restaurant is closed, as long as you’re willing to spend, even the ghosts will work for you. There’s no need to worry that the restaurant won’t open for you.”

Mr Copper controlled his anger and said, “There’s a restaurant here, you can call for them.”

Xiao Yu’er said, “This restaurant is called San He Place, it’s Jiang Zhe dishes(Jiang Su and Zhe Jiang Provinces), it can’t do… hmm, there’s a restaurant Zhen Bei Ping here, must be Northern food, can’t do as well.”

Mr Copper fumed, “Why can’t it do? Can’t you just make do with it?”

Xiao Yu’er replied with a straight face, “No, a person can let his friends down, but he must never, never let his own stomach down, because friends will run away when you are having bad luck, but the stomach will stay with you for life.”

Mr Copper stared at him angrily, before slowly commenting after a moment, “Everyone in the world fears me, you… why are you not afraid?”

Xiao Yu’er replied with a smile, “I obviously know that you will not kill me yourself, why should I be afraid of you?”

Mr Copper suddenly turned around and walked away with large strides.

Xiao Yu’er laughed loudly, “Actually you don’t have to be angry. You obviously know that the angrier you are, the happier I will be, so why must you make things difficult for yourself?”

They saw on the upper level some distance away, there is still light, and the large gold words on the signboard were also shining. “Yang Zi Jiang Restaurant, authentic Sichuan Cuisine”.

But by then there are no customers at the Yang Zi Jiang Restaurant, only a few workers were cleaning up.

The few of them lifted their heads and all were stunned by their fear – a person wearing a ghastly copper mask, had wondered upstairs since who knows when, is looking at them icily.

Xiao Yu’er however, was grinning, “What are you all stunned about, this Sir here may be wearing copper on his face, but there’s lots of silver hung on his waist. The God of Fortune is coming to your door, aren’t you going to welcome him quickly?”

The worker replied numbly, “Sor… sorry, our shop is closed.”

Mr Copper looked at him frostily, and suddenly grabbed his hair.

That worker’s was like travelling on cloud, his whole body flew out. When he regained his senses, he realized he’s sitting on the beams of the roof. Although he was not physically injured, but he was scared out of his wits. His head felt faint and he fell straight down. If not for Xiao Yu’er catching hold of him, his head would have been smashed like a rotten watermelon.

Mr Copper coldly said, “I don’t care of you’re closed or not, whatever that he wants to eat, you will have to serve it. If any one item is missing, then no one among the four of you will live!” How would the four workers dare say the word ‘no’.

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “Oh joy oh joy, to have a meal with someone like you, is really joyous.”

He sat down comfortably and said, “I’ll have four cold dishes first, chicken sticks, cold dish in four sauces, hot and spicy tendons, garlic meat, and a fat camphor tea duck, roasted oxtail, black bean fish….”

With every dish he said, the workers nodded their heads, until they were a little dizzy from all the nodding. Xiao Yu’er finally sighed and said with a smile, “It’s so late at night, there’s no need to prepare so many dishes, I’ll just make do with these few. However, the wine must be of excellent quality, either Bamboo Green or Huadiao will do, let us have twenty or thirty catties first.”

The few workers were tongue-tied. These dishes are enough for twenty people, yet this lad said that he’s just ‘making do with it’. They were stunned for a while before they stammered, “Sorry…. Our… our shop’s wine, have all been drunk by the three customers earlier.”

Mr Copper said icily, “If it’s finished then go someplace else to buy it. Thirty catties, even if it’s one catty less, I’ll have your head!”

The four workers could only blame it on their bad luck, they just sent off three Gods of Plague, and here comes another two evil spirits.

In less than an hour, all the dishes and wine were served, and indeed not a single item was missing. Xiao Yu’er immediately started eating and drinking voraciously, but Mr Copper would not even sit down.

Xiao Yu’er grinned, “Why are you not sitting down, the way you are standing, how can I find my appetite?”

He raised two cups and smiled, “This wine and dishes are really not bad, why don’t you eat a little. If you have lost your appetite from anger, and starve yourself sick, I would feel bad.” Mr Copper totally ignored him.

Xiao Yu’er picked up a piece of Camphor Tea duck, and sighed as he chewed,

saying “The mouth is on your face, if you refuse to eat, there’s nothing I can do. But you are neither eating nor sleeping, how can you take it?”

Mr Copper suddenly stuck with his palm, and shattered a table by the side to pieces. He really has no way to vent the anger he is feeling, and can only take it out on the table.

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “The table did not offend you, why must you make things difficult for it… in my opinion, why don’t you let me go and save yourself from such suffering.”

Mr Copper replied angrily, “Let you go, forget it!”

Xiao Yu’er raised his head and took a drink, laughing loudly, “To tell you the truth, even if you release me now, I won’t leave. I have a bodyguard when I’m asleep, someone is paying for my meals, such happy days, where else can I find it?”

Mr Copper stared at him for a while, before saying each word slowly, “I want you to live happily, that way when you die, it will be more painful.”

Xiao Yu’er put his chopsticks down and stared at him, and suddenly said with a sigh, “Let me ask you, I do not know you at all, why do you hate me so much? Since you hate me so much, why won’t you kill me yourself?”

Mr Cooper looked heavenward and laughed coldly, “The secret within, you will never know!”

Xiao Yu’er sighed, “For a person to never find out a secret closely related to himself, isn’t it the most cruel, most pitiful thing.”

Mr Copper laughed harshly, “That’s right, it is indeed the most cruel, most pitiful thing in the world. I can guarantee that you can never escape from this pitiful fate, because there is definitely no one in the world who can reveal this secret. So now your only concern is to remain happy, as long as you can really be happy, then be happy by all means.”

Yan Nan Tian, Hua Wu Que and Jiang Bie He, the three of them seemed a little drunk. They staggered around under the star lit night.

Jiang Bie He has never drunk so much wine in his life, but since Yan Nan Tian wants to drink, he can only drink with him, although later whenever Yan Nan Tian drank a cup, his own cup is at the most only half filled.

Yan Nan Tian sang loudly, “The Piebald horse, the lady raids, a shout to change for excellent wine, to drink away worries with you…. Worries…” The song was gallant yet filled with grief, as if the heart is full of anguish.

Yan Nan Tian looked towards heaven and heaved a long sigh, “Why is it that the best person and the worst person in the world, are all surnamed Jiang?”

Jiang Bie He stammered, “Wha… what do you mean by that?”

Yan Nan Tian sighed, “That 2nd Brother Jiang of mine, is gentle and kind, and can be considered the best person in the world, but then there is Jiang Qin…”

As he said the two words ‘Jiang Qin’, Jiang Bie He suddenly felt a cold shiver. Yan Nan Tian’s hair was disheveled, his gaze fierce, and he continued angrily, “Although my 2nd Brother Jiang treated Jiang Qin like a brother, but that heartless murderer, actually secretly colluded with someone else and betrayed him!”

Cold sweat was dripping down Jiang Bie He’s face, but he forced out a laugh and asked, “That Jiang… Jiang Qin is truly so vicious?”

Yan Nan Tian took his hands in a tight clench and hissed, “A pity that murderer has gone into hiding, and I could not find him… if I find him, I will definitely crush all his bones one by one.”

Jiang Bie He shivered again, and seems to have been shocked out of his drunkenness. He only felt Yan Nan Tian’s hold on his hands getting tighter and tighter, as if he is going to crush his bones.

Jiang Bie He can't help but forced out a smile and said, "Ju… Junior is not Jiang… Jiang Qin, Hero Yan please do not crush Junior's hands."

Yan Nan Tian released his hands with a laugh, and saw in front of him in the dark night, a few people flying into a house like a cat, and who knows what secret deals they are making.

Hua Wu Que felt the alcohol rushing up, and seemed to have become more high spirited, and laughed, "It's the middle of the night, these few people must be up to no good, I'll go take a look." Yan Nan Tian suddenly said, "With me around, would there be a need for you to go look?"

With a jump, he flew over the wall and said fiercely, "Yan Nan Tian is here, friends inside should all come out now!"

He has not finished his words when there were a few people scattering out in the darkness like rats.

Yan Nan Tian roared, "Stop, not a single one is to leave!"

The few men of the night seems to have been really shocked by the name 'Yan Nan Tian', and all of them stood there, not even daring to move at all.

Yan Nan Tian said fiercely, "With me in this city, how care you think of committing misdeeds, don't you want your lives anymore!" He stood alone on the wall, his clothes fluttering in the wind, and at a glance really looked like a God descended from heaven.

The few of them saw how imposing he looked, and only then confirmed that it is really the undefeated Yan Nan Tian who is here. The few of them were so startled that they all prostrated on the ground and fluttered, "We did not know that Hero Yan has returned to the martial arts realm, we hope Hero Yan will forgive us."

Yan Nan Tian bellowed, "But Hero Jiang is in this city, did you not know as

well?”

The few of them took a glance at Jiang Bie He, and although they did not say anything, but the meaning is quite obvious. No matter how hard Jiang Bie He works, but Jiang Bie He’s ‘Hero’ is way below when compared to Yan Nan Tian.

Yan Nan Tian roared, “On the account that you have not committed any misdeeds, all of you are to give yourselves twenty slaps, scram quickly!”

The few of them actually really raised their hands and slapped themselves twenty times, kowtowed once, and flew off in distress.

On witnessing this, Jiang Bie He was astonished, envious and jealous, and can’t help but heaved a long sigh, “If a person can have such a reputation, only then would his life not have been in vain.”

Hua Wu Que smiled and said, “In the whole world, to have such a reputation, I’m afraid it’s not only Hero Yan.”

Yan Nan Tian asked, “Hua Wu Que, you still refuse to accept my ability?”

Hua Wu Que smiled, “If they know that someone from Floral Palace is here, I’m afraid they would run even faster.”

Yan Nan Tian stared at him for a while before suddenly laughing loudly, “To make someone like you accept, is really a difficult task.”

He jumped down from the wall and started walking and singing again.

Jiang Bie He quietly tugged on Hua Wu Que’s sleeve and whispered, “Good Brother, Hero Yan seems to be a little drunk, why don’t we say our farewells to Yan Nan Tian and leave quickly.”

Hua Wu Que smiled, “I’m afraid I will have to say my farewell to Brother Jiang.”

Jiang Bie He was stunned, and asked, “Good Brother you… you really want to go with Hero Yan?”

“Exactly.”

Jiang Bie He’s palm broke out in cold sweat, “If your Teacher were to find out, won’t it be a little inconvenient?”

Hua Wu Que smiled, “Even if my Teacher were to know, I will still need to leave with him.”

Jiang Bie He was shocked for a moment, and asked, “You…. where are you going?”

“To look for Jiang Xiao Yu.”

Jiang Bie He secretly shivered, and thought to himself, “Even if Yan Nan Tian has not recognized me, even if he still regards me as a friend, but once he sees Jiang Xiao Yu, I will still be finished.”

The three of then walked another two rounds, and also ended up at the inn where ‘Mr Copper’ was staying. Jiang Bie He’s eyes rolled, and suddenly said with a smile, “Would Hero Yan want to go into this inn to have another drink?”

Yan Nan Tian laughed loudly, “You are indeed understanding… come, let us go in.”

Once they’re in the house, Yan Nan Tian ordered for wine to be brought, while Jiang Bie He looked for an excuse to go outside, and secretly slipped into Mr Coppers’s house.

Naturally he was thinking of looking for Mr Copper to deal with Yan Nan Tian, unfortunately Mr Copper was not in the house. Although the light fragrance is still in the air, but he could have left this place long ago.

Jiang Bie He was full of disappointment, and when he returned to the room, Yan Nan Tian had already drunk a few catties of wine. He may be a good drinker, but by now he is a little drunk. Hua Wu Que was also getting drunk. Jiang Bie He had a thought, and slipped out. He used his hands to induce vomiting, and threw up all the wine in his stomach before returning with the intention of urging them to drink more.

Later Yan Nan Tian finally collapsed on the bed and slept soundly. Hua Wu Que was mumbling, “Wine with friends, not leave until drunk, come, have another cup…” Before he finished his words, he also fell asleep on the table.

End of Chapter 67

Chapter 57

Chapter 68

Jiang Bie He sat there quietly for a while, and stared at Yan Nan Tian with large eyes. Hua Wu Que was lying on the table, also unmoving.

Jiang Bie He can only hear his own heartbeat, getting louder and louder…

If he wants to rule the martial arts realm, now would really be the opportunity.

But this chance, has come too easily! He clenched both his fists tightly, his palm in cold sweat. “Jiang Bie He oh Jiang Bie He, if you miss this chance, then there would never be another opportunity like this. If you do not kill them today, you will die in their hands sooner or later, what are you afraid of? Why are you hesitating? The two of them are already drunk, why aren’t you striking?”

Once he thought of this, he suddenly stood up, but sat down again with a plonk! “No! I must not think of it as luck, there will never be something so easy in this world!”

His palms were shaking badly, that he had to grab hold of the chair tightly!

“But this kind of thing, even I do not believe it, naturally they would not believe it even more. Just because they do not believe, that’s why they are not on their guard at all.”

Jiang Bie He’s eyes gleamed!

“That’s right, Hua Wu Que and Yan Nan Tian would never think that I would kill

them, this really is a rare opportunity… Jiang Bie He oh Jiang Bie He, why can't you make up your mind now…? You just have to strike now and the world would be yours!…"

Jiang Bie He no longer hesitated, and stepped towards the table in one step, his palm aiming straight down!

Just at this instant, Hua Wu Que suddenly jumped up and shouted, "Jiang Bie He, I've finally seen your true colors, Jiang Xiao Yu really did not malign you!"

As he shouted, he jumped over.

Who would have expected that Yan Nan Tian would actually be faster than him.

Jiang Bie He's palm was aiming down, Yan Nan Tian's iron palm is already aiming up!

With a 'pak' sound, Jiang Bie He's body was thrown back by the force and knocked heavily against the wall. He only felt all the joints in his body seemed to have cracked and could not stand up at that moment.

Yan Nan Tian laughed loudly, "These few cups of wine, how can they make me drunk? I also want to see why this person is drinking and puking, puking and drinking, what his intentions are?"

He suddenly stopped laughing and roared, "Jiang Bie He, what do you have to say now?"

Jiang Bie He laughed bitterly, "Forget it… the martial arts that I've practiced for twenty over years cannot even withstand a palm attack from Yan Nan Tian, what else do I have to say?"

Yan Nan Tian asked fiercely, "I have no enmity with you, why do you want to sneak an attack on me?"

Jiang Bie He deliberately heaved a long sigh and said, “Two heroes cannot stand together, you and I cannot live together, with a ‘hero’ like you still living in the world, where can a ‘hero’ like me still stand!”

He clenched his teeth, and continued loudly, “Just now when I saw how those people, after seeing you, did not even bother about me, I made up my mind that I must get rid of you! Since now my martial arts cannot win you, what revenge can I speak of?”

Yan Nan Tian said angrily, “Even if your martial arts are unparalleled in the world, just with that thinking of yours, you cannot live up to the words ‘hero’.”

Jiang Bie He asked, “You… what do you want?”

Yan Nan Tian replied fiercely, “You have the false name of a hero, but your heart is so vicious, your methods so unscrupulous. If I do not get rid of such an evil in the martial arts world, I wonder how many more people will die in your hands in future!”

“You want to kill me?”

Just as Yan Nan Tian shouted “Exactly”, his palm struck out like lightning.

Jiang Bie He avoided his attack and suddenly laughed loudly, “If you kill me, then no one else in the world will know Jiang Qin’s whereabouts… you can forget about finding him for the rest of your life!”

Yan Nan Tian was shocked, and asked hoarsely, “You… you know Jiang Qin’s whereabouts?”

Jiang Bie He stood up slowly, and said calmly, “Exactly.”

Yan Nan Tian rushed forward and grabbed him by his collar, and hissed, “Where is he?”

Jiang Bie He stood there, not avoiding, and said slowly, “You can kill me, but you cannot make me reveal his whereabouts.”

Yan Nan Tian raised his palm and roared angrily, “Do you want to try?” Jiang Bie He smiled, “You are a hero, if you’re thinking of torturing me into talking, won’t it be unbefitting of your reputation as a hero?”

Yan Nan was stunned, and his palm lowered unconsciously.

Jiang Bie He continued with a smile, “If you really want me to tell you, unless you promise me two things.”

Yan Nan Tian angrily asked, “What else do you want?”

Jiang Bie He said slowly, “I want you to promise, not only must you let me go today, you cannot harm even a hair on me in future!”

Yan Nan Tian was silent for a while before roaring, “Fine, I promise you… I don’t believe that besides me, there is no one else in the world who can hurt you!”

Jiang Bie He smiled, and said, “Also, after I have revealed Jiang Qin’s whereabouts, you must keep it a secret, and never let a fourth person know where Jiang Qin is.”

Yan Nan Tian raised his voice, “This is originally my business, I want to kill him with my own hands, why would I let others know.”

The corner of Jiang Bie He’s mouth tilted up into a sly smile, and said “Very good, but what if you cannot kill him?”

Yan Nan Tian hurriedly said, “If I cannot kill him with my own hands, all the more others cannot kill him!”

Jiang Bie He turned around and asked, “What about you Master Hua?”

Hua Wu Que heaved a long sigh and said, “This is originally Hero Yan’s business. Since he has agreed, of course I would not oppose it.”

Jiang Bie He looked heavenward and laughed loudly, “Good, very good.” Yan Nan Tian asked, “Where exactly is Jiang Qin?”

Jiang Bie He slowly stopped his smile, looked at Yan Nan Tian, and said each word slowly, “Right here!”

Yan Nan Tian’s body shook, and stammered, “You… you…”

Jiang Bie He laughed loudly, “I am Jiang Qin, but you have already promised, never to hurt me!”

Yan Nan Tian felt as if he had been whipped, and took a few steps back, his fists clenched, his whole body shaking. Even Hua Wu Que can’t help but feel astounded as well.

Jiang Bie He laughed madly and said, “You were intent in finding out Jiang Qin’s whereabouts, therefore you promised me. Although now you already know Jiang Qin’s whereabouts, but you can never kill him.”

He was laughing himself hoarse, as if he felt that there is nothing funnier than this in the world. Yan Nan Tian’s gaze turned red, and suddenly dashed out with a roar, “You… you wicked thief, how can I allow you!”

Jiang Bie He stared at him and said fiercely, “A reputable hero like Yan Nan Tian, could he be one who goes back on his word!”

Yan Nan Tian was shaken, and stood there in a daze.

His hair was angrily messy, the corner of his eyes seemed to be cracking, all the bones in his body unconsciously shaking, and he finally staggered a few steps back and fell sitting on the bed, and said with grief, “Jiang… Fine… I promised you, go.” Yan Nan Tian suddenly jumped up again and hissed, “If you still do not

leave, be careful that I may change my mind!”

Jiang Bie He clasped his fists in a bow and said smilingly, “Since that is the case, I shall make a move. Thank you, thank you. Goodbye, goodbye.”

He laughingly walked out with large strides, and a dead silence immediately fell upon the room, and only Yan Nan Tian’s heavy breathing was heard. Even the roof seemed like it’s about to collapse from the weight.

After who knows how long, Hua Wu Que suddenly heaved a long sigh and said, “Hero Yan, now I really yield to you.”

Yan Nan Tian laughed bitterly and said, “I defeated you twice with fists and swords but you did not yield to me. With a roar from me, I made all the thieves fear me but you do not yield to me as well. Now that I am seeing my enemy walk calmly away and yet cannot do anything about it, you yield to me instead?”

Hua Wu Que replied with a straight face, “It’s exactly because I saw you let Jiang Be He leave, that I know that Yan Nan Tian is really worthy of being called the hero of our times. It would have been easy for you to kill him, there’s not a lot of people who can kill Jiang Bie He in the world, but to be able to let him go like this, I’m afraid only Yan Nan Tian can do it!”

He continued after another long sigh, “So, even though there may be others whose name would cause more fear than yours, there may be others whose martial arts are better than yours, but only you is fit to use the word ‘Hero’.”

Yan Nan Tian laughed bitterly and replied, “But do you know, if a person wants to keep the word ‘Hero’, how much suffering and loneliness he will have to endure…”

Hua Wu Que gave a long laugh and said, “I finally know now that it’s really not easy if a person wants to live up to the word ‘Hero’. Not only must he be able to do what others cannot do, he must also tolerate what others cannot tolerate…”

His eyes looked at Yan Nan Tian, and said with a wide smile, “But no matter

what, it would be worth it, right?”

Once Jiang Bie He walked out the courtyard, he was unable to continue laughing immediately. He knows that although he was able to cheat Yan Nan Tian today, but there would be more troubles in future.

The wind was blowing at the bamboo leaves, which rustled. Jiang Bie He hid into the bamboo woods in a flash, with the intention of taking a look at Yan Nan Tian and Hua Wu Que’s intentions.

He thought, these two people must be extremely vexed and furious right now, and he can’t wait to see Yan Nan Tian perish of anger, for only then will he feel happy.

But after a while, Yan Nan Tian’s booming laughter actually emitted from the house. This might be a great setback, but Yan Nan Tian did not seemed to have taken it to heart at all.

Amidst the laughter, Yan Nan Tian and Hua Wu Que could be seen walking out with arms over each other’s shoulder, and with a jump and a flash of a shadow, they disappeared into the dark night.

Where are they going? To look for Jiang Xiao Yu? The three of them should be enemies, but is it that they seem to be on the same side now.

Jiang Bie He may not be able to guess the real reason, but ‘suspicions’ are making him even more uneasy, more agonized. He bit his lips and thought for a while, but could not come to a decision.

Suddenly a shadow flickered, an eerily green copper mask, was shining in the night. Mr Copper is actually back again.

Jiang Bie He was ecstatic and was about to rush over, but right at this time, he saw clearly the person next to Mr Copper, turned out to be Xiao Yu’er! Jiang Xiao Yu’s face was red from the wine, his face full of smiles, as if he’s very happy…

Mr Copper is actually with Jiang Xiao Yu, and these two looked as if they had just finished a drinking session!

His only thought was to rely on this mysterious Mr Copper to deal with Yan Nan Tian and Hua Wu Que, and this is almost his only hope of winning.

But he never would have thought that Mr Copper would be with Jiang Xiao Yu. These two old and young weirdoes, when did they become friends? Mr Copper originally wanted to kill Jiang Xiao Yu, but why have he changed his mind now?

Could it be he had been affected by Jiang Xiao Yu's honeyed words?

Jiang Bie He was surprised, angry, worried and terrified. Even when Mr Copper and Xiao Yu'er had walked into the house, he was still there in a daze.

He suddenly felt that he is totally alone, there are his enemies everywhere, and not a friend whom he can trust.

He has always had a suspicious streak, and now that he has witnessed it himself, he is sure that Yan Nan Tian, Jiang Xiao Yu, Hua Wu Que, Mr Copper, these four persons are now in cahoots to deal with him. By now the night is dark, the dew on the bamboo dripping down in droplets, dripping on his body, face, and even onto his neck.

But he did not realize it at all, only muttering quietly to himself, "I want to defeat those four, how should I do it? Naturally with only me, it's not enough, I need to find helpers, but who can I find?"

Suddenly a worm on the bamboo leaf suddenly dropped down, and landed on his head. Jiang Bie He reached out and caught it, and saw the worm wriggling on his palm, like a little snake.

His face suddenly revealed an expression of joy, and said hoarsely, "That's right! Why didn't I think of him! With him alone it might still not be enough, but if we were to add that Tiger husband and wife and me, four against four, won't it be well matched!"

He flew out of the woods in joy, but suddenly remembered that Mr Copper and Jiang Xiao Yu was still in the house opposite, and he stopped his steps in shock, his palms already breaking out in cold sweat.

But there seemed to be no reaction coming from the house opposite at all, the lamp may be lighted in the house, but no human shadows could be seen on the window. Mr Copper and Xiao Yu'er had actually left.

When Xiao Yu'er walked out of the house, he also did not think that Jiang Bie He would be looking at him from outside.

The light in the room has been extinguished, and although Xiao Yu'er cannot see anything at all, but he realized that the fragrance in the room was stronger than when they left the house. Could someone have entered this house?

Xiao Yu'er was just feeling perplexed when he suddenly heard Mr Copper say coldly, "Why are you here only now?"

It was actually a lady's voice coming out from the darkness, saying "It's not easy to find a place that is to your satisfaction, that's why I'm late."

This voice is naturally gentler compared to Mr Copper's rough and hard voice, but the tone was equally icy, as if it's of the same tune as Mr Copper's.

Xiao Yu'er was surprised and curious, and secretly thought, "I did not expect a weirdo like Mr Copper would actually have a girlfriend, and the way she speaks is also as strange as him, they are really a match made in heaven." He felt around for a flint and quickly lighted the lamp.

When the light shone, Xiao Yu'er saw a lady with long hair dressed in black, and on her face was an expressionless mask, carved from fragrant wood. Now that the lamp is burning brightly, to suddenly see such a person, Xiao Yu'er can't help but jump in shock. This lady in black was also looking at Xiao Yu'er, and suddenly asked, "You are Jiang Xiao Yu?"

Xiao Yu’er asked with wide open eyes, “You… but why do I not know you?”

The lady in black said, “Since you know that there is a Mr Copper in the world, how can you not have heard of Madam Wood?”

Xiao Yu’er said, “Madam Wood? … that’s right, I seemed to have heard of this name before.”

He remembered that when Black Spider told him about Mr Copper, he also mentioned this name Madam Wood, and he also said that these two people are equally weird.

Madam Wood looked at Xiao Yu’er, and looked at Mr Copper, saying, “I have reached this place long ago, but the two of you…”

“I went drinking with Mr Copper, to trouble Madam to wait so long for us, I’m really sorry.” Xiao Yu’er said with a grin, “Mr Copper is really nice to me. He’s afraid that I will starve myself sick, so he took me out for a drink. He knows that I like salty and spicy food, so he took me for Sichuan cuisine… I’ve never met such a nice person before.”

Madam Wood’s eyes seemed to convey surprise, but also looked as if she finds it a little funny.

Xiao Yu’er realized now that her tone of voice may be as frosty as Mr Copper, but this pair of eyes, is a lot more lively and warm when compared to Mr Copper.

He rolled his eyes and immediately sighed, continuing, “Just that Mr Copper is really too concerned about me, and only wants to look at me, so much so that he won’t even eat or sleep. I’m really afraid that he will be exhausted, so if Madam is a good friend of Mr Copper, why don’t you look after me on Mr Copper’s behalf so that he can take a rest.”

Madam Wood said, “Elder… Elder Brother, if you’re feeling tired, then it’s good to hand him to me.”

Although the laughter in her eyes were even more obvious now, but the tone of her voice was still icy.

Mr Copper suddenly flew up and with a ‘pak’ from his palm, he slapped Xiao Yu’er. This may not be a heavy slap, but it was an excellent place that he slapped on.

Xiao Yu’er did not feel any pain at all, but felt his brains getting dizzy, his body finding difficulty standing. He staggered a few steps back and finally fell down.

In his semiconscious state, he heard Mr Copper said frostily, “This time, no one can think of taking him away from me. When he’s alive, I will of course look at him, even if he’s dead, I will still look at him, until his body decomposes.”

Madam Wood said, “But I….”

Mr Copper laughed coldly, “You are the same, you are not any more loyal towards me compared to others.”

Madam Wood asked, “You… you don’t even trust me?”

Mr Copper said each word out, “Ever since the day Yue Nu took Jiang Feng away, I stopped trusting anyone!”

Madam Wood was silent for a while, and slowly lowered her head, “I know that you still remember that one time, you kept thinking that I am fighting with you over Jiang Feng…”

Mr Copper said fiercely, “You loved him too, you said these words yourself, right?”

Madam Wood raised her head and said loudly, “That’s right, I love him too, but I did not want to possess him, and even more so I did not want to fight with you over him. I have never fought with you over anything in my life, right?”

Her cold voice suddenly shook, and she said hoarsely, “Ever since we were young, as long as there’s anything good, I’ll always let you have it. Ever since the time when you and I were fighting to pluck the only ripe peach on that tree, and you pushed me down from that tree, resulting in my broken leg. Ever since that day, I never dared to fight with you over anything, do you still remember?”

Mr Copper’s gaze was like a blade, staring at her. After a long time, he finally heaved a long sigh, and slowly lowered his head, saying quietly, “Forget about this matter, no matter what, neither of us got him, right?”

Madam Wood was silent for a long while, and also heaved a long sigh, and said sadly, “Elder Sister, sorry, I should not have said such words. Actually I have long forgotten about that matter.”

A pity that Xiao Yu’er had fainted long ago, and did not hear what they said at all.

Before Xiao Yu’er woke up, he already felt that intoxicating fragrance.

He thought that he is still in that house in the inn, but once he opened his eyes, he immediately knew that he was wrong. There is no inn in the world that will have such a magnificent room, and no inn would certainly have such fragrant bedspreads, such soft beds. Later, he noticed two young girls standing at the head of the bed.

They were wearing soft, delicate clothes and on their heads, a brightly colored floral crown.

Their faces may be prettier than the fresh flowers, but on such a pretty face, there was no expression or color at all, looking as if they were carved from ice.

Xiao Yu’er rubbed his eyes and mumbled, “Could it be that I am dead, and could this be Heaven?”

The girls stood there unmoving, their gaze looking expressionlessly straight

ahead. Not only did they seem not to have heard him, but they seemed to have not seen him at all.

Xiao Yu'er's eyes rolled and he grinned, "Naturally I am not dead, because if I am dead, I will never be in Heaven, and Hell will definitely not have fairies as pretty as you."

He thought that they would laugh, but who would have expected that they still did not take a look at him.

Xiao Yu'er rubbed his nose and asked, "Can't you see me?… Could I have suddenly learned the art of invisibility?"

The girls did not even move their eyeballs.

Xiao Yu'er sighed, and said "I originally thought of seeing you smile, I think you must look very pretty when you smile, but now I can only admit defeat. Go find that ghastly Mr Steel here then."

The girls were actually still ignoring him.

Xiao Yu'er jumped up and said loudly, "Say something! Why aren't you talking? Could it be that you are deaf, blind, mute?"

He jumped down to the ground and stood in front of them barefooted for a while, and walked two rounds around them, furrowed his brows and mumbled, "Could it be that these two are not human? Could they have been carved from ice?"

He actually reached out his hand, to pinch that girl's nose.

That girl suddenly waved her hand lightly, her long fingers, as supple as spring, but the five fingernails, red with the sap from the Balsam Flowers, looked like five small knives aiming straight at Xiao Yu'er's throat.

Xiao Yu’er fell back to the bed with a somersault and laughed loudly, “So, although you can’t bear to talk, but at least you can move.”

That young girl again stopped moving like a statue.

Xiao Yu’er said, “Even if you do not wish to talk to me, but at least you should smile. If you keep on having such a straight face, you’ll get old especially easily.”

He jumped down the bed again, and found a pair of soft silk shoes, wore it, and suddenly said slowly, “There was a person in the past, who was careless in whatever he does. One day when he was going out, he wore two shoes, both were for the left foot. He only felt that it was inconvenient when he walked, but did not realize he has worn his shoes wrongly. Until he reached his friend’s house, that friend told him, and only then did he realize. He hurriedly ask his servant to go home and change his shoes. That servant was gone for half the day but when he returned, he was empty-handed. Can you guess why?”

As he said this, Xiao Yu’er failed to control his laughter. He continued as he tried to control his laughter, “That person thought it weird too, so he asked his servant why his shoes were not changed, and that servant replied ‘No need to change, that pair of shoes at home, were both for the right foot.”

He has not finished his words when he was already bending over in laughter, but that two young girls did not even twitch their eyes.

Xiao Yu’er also felt that there’s no meaning laughing on his own, and sighed, “All right, I admit I can’t make you smile. But I have a friend named Zhang San, could make people laugh very well. One day, he went for a walk with two other people and saw a lady standing under the tree, just like the two of you, icily. Zhang San said that he can make this lady smile, and his two friends naturally disbelieved him. So Zhang San said ‘I can make her smile with just one word, and I can make her angry with another word, do you want to bet with me, the wager would be a feast.’ That two friends naturally accepted the wager immediately.”

Xiao Yu’er had always been a good talker, and right now he was telling his story with delight and drama. Although that two girls are still not looking at him, but they can’t help but want to hear how this ‘Zhang San’ can use a single word to

make a person laugh and to use another word to make that person angry.

Xiao Yu'er continued, "So that Zhang San walked to the front of that lady, suddenly knelt down in front of a dog that was next to the lady and said 'Father'. That lady, on seeing him acknowledging a dog as Father, can't help but laugh, but who would have expected that Zhang San would kneel down in front of her and said 'Mother'. That lady immediately became so angry that her face was red and her teeth clenched. So Zhang San really won this wager."

He has not finished his words when the young girl on the left with a round face could not help but let out a puff of laughter. Xiao Yu'er clapped and laughed loudly, "You laughed! You laughed! You still laughed!" But that young girl had just revealed her smile when her expression suddenly turned ashen.

No one knows when Mr Copper had walked in, and looking at her frostily, asked icily "Do you think he's very funny?"

That young lady was shaking and fell to the floor in a kneel, stammering, "Servant… servant did not talk with him…"

End of Chapter 68

Chapter 58

Chapter 69

Mr Copper asked fiercely, “But you smiled because of him, right?”

That young girl was so frightened that she could not even speak, and suddenly covered her face and cried. Mr Copper said calmly, “Go out now.”

That young girl cried hoarsely, “I beg of you… beg of you to spare servant’s life, servant will not dare to do it in future.”

Xiao Yu’er exclaimed in shock, “Spare her life?… You… You want to kill her?”

Mr Copper replied icily, “Kill, not necessarily, but only cut off her tongue, so that she can never laugh in future.”

Xiao Yu’er was extremely startled, “She only laughed, and you want to cut off her tongue!”

Mr Copper said coldly, “This can only be blamed on you, you should not have made her laugh.”

Xiao Yu’er shouted, “I only told her a joke, you… you don’t have to be jealous!”

Mr Copper suddenly struck with his palm again, and Xiao Yu’er actually could not avoid it at all, and fell to the ground with this slap. But he was still angrily shouting, “It doesn’t matter that you slap me, but you must never punish her because of this matter.”

Mr Copper's eyes flashed with fury again, "You…. You dare to speak up for her?" He looked extremely angry, that even his body was shaking in fury.

Xiao Yu'er said loudly, "This matter cannot be blamed on her, if someone has to be blamed then it should be me."

Mr Copper quivered, "Fine…. Fine! You would rather that I hit you then to let me punish her. You… you are just like that father of yours, sentimental beings!"

As he said the words 'sentimental beings' he suddenly gave a roar, and with a back flip of his palm, sent that round faced young girl flying out of the door, who fell to the ground like a pile of mud, never to move again!

Xiao Yu'er jumped up and shouted, "You… you actually killed her!"

Mr Copper's whole body was shivering, "That's right, I killed her. She can never escape with you secretly again."

Xiao Yu'er was stunned and livid, "Are you crazy? Since when is she going to escape with me secretly?"

Mr Copper said, "It will be too late if I kill her after both of you have escaped."

Xiao Yu'er stared at him with huge eyes and hissed, "You're crazy, you're really crazy… I originally thought that you may have an icy temper, but you're not a cruel or vicious person. Who would have expected that you would treat a girl so brutally."

He got angrier as he spoke, and suddenly flew over, both his palms extended.

By now, the level of Xiao Yu'er's martial arts can be compared to any famed martial arts family in that era and the two palm attacks which he shot out in fury also integrated the essence of two largest sects, Wudang and Kunlun's palm attacks. Not only can Xiao Yu'er use these skills at ease now, he can fully display

all their force as well.

But who would have expected that these two palm attacks, which could have shaken the Martial Arts realm, became like child's play in front of Mr Copper. My Copper lightly bent his body, and his whole body looked as if it has been broken in half.

His palm also attacked at the same time, and if it was not seen with one's own eyes, no one would believe that an attack could be made from such a position.

Xiao Yu'er felt his body shake, and he seemed to have fallen to the ground with the attack. Although he was not hurt, but he was scared stunned by this strange martial arts. Mr Copper lowered his head and looked at him, smiling coldly, "With martial arts like yours, at the most you can receive fifty strokes from Hua Wu Que. I originally thought you can have a good fight with him, but who knows that you are such a disappointment."

Xiao Yu'er said through gritted teeth, "How many strokes of his that I can receive, what farting business is it of yours?"

Mr Copper was actually not angry, but instead took out a yellow silk scroll and said calmly, "Inside here there are three strokes that can counter Floral Palace's martial arts move. If you can master it within these three months, you might not win Hua Wu Que, but at least you can block a few moves of his."

He actually wanted to teach Xiao Yu'er martial arts, this is even more unbelievable than ingots falling down from the sky. Xiao Yu'er was tongue-tied and asked, "You… what do you mean by that?"

Mr Copper threw the silk scroll in front of him and walked out with a cold smile.

Xiao Yu'er shouted, "Do you actually want Hua Wu Que to kill me, or me to kill Hua Wu Que? What's the problem with you?"

Mr Copper suddenly turned around and said icily, "Your life, is destined to have

a unfortunate ending, it's the same whether you kill Hua Wu Que, or if Hua Wu Que kills you."

Mr Copper walked out without turning back and closed the door with a bang. Xiao yu'er was stunned for a while, lifted his head, and realized that tears were rolling down the eyes of the young girl standing alone in the room. However this time, Xiao Yu'er dare not talk to her anymore. He really could not bear to see a lively and pretty young girl die because of him again.

That young girl stood there numbly, and even though her tears were flowing down her cheeks, she did not raise a hand to wipe them. Xiao Yu'er sighed and opened that silk scroll. On it were truly three wondrous moves, every move was sharp, simple yet effective, and exactly the nemesis of the kind of complicated moves that Hua Wu Que uses.

On the silk scroll, not only were there clear pictures, there were also detailed word instructions. Unless one has an expert understanding of Floral Palace's martial arts, he would never be able to invent such moves.

Floral Palace's martial arts were all along the greatest secret in the martial arts realm, how would Mr Copper understand it so well, isn't it strange.

But Xiao Yu'er did not think of this point. Right now he does not want to think of anything at all, but just looked at the scroll in a daze.

Sometime later someone sent in food, and they turned out to be camphor tea duck, black bean fish, chicken sticks… every one of them were authentic Sichuan cuisine, as well as a large pot of excellent aged Huadiao (wine).

Xiao Yu'er smiled, and ate his fill, but left a plate of roasted oxtail and half a camphor tea duck, as if he was talking to himself, mumbled "These two dishes are not spicy, it's up to you whether you want to eat it."

That young girl still stood there, not even moving the tip of her fingers. Suddenly she turned around, used her hand to tear off the half of the duck and ate it clean.

If she did not eat it, Xiao Yu’er would have expected it, but now she is actually eating, Xiao Yu’er was feeling quite perplexed, that he was stunned.

But that young girl, after eating a drumstick, looked as if she could not eat anymore, but she was still forcing herself to finish that half of the duck.

Her mouth was chewing, but her eyes were staring unblinkingly at the hourglass on the table, the gold colored sand flowing down, signifying the passing of time.

Xiao Yu’er can’t help but give a bitter smile. Time, is extremely precious to him right now, but he can only look at the time passing by right in front of him and yet have no idea at all. Suddenly that young girl walked over, right in front of him, and whispered, “Can you still eat?”

She actually opened her mouth suddenly to talk. Xiao Yu’er was shocked. That young girl continued, “It’s all right to talk now, no one will come.”

Only now did Xiao Yu’er smile, “My stomach is about to burst, I can’t even eat an ant now.”

That young girl added, “You better eat a little more, these two days, I’m afraid we’ll have nothing to eat.”

Xiao Yu’er was again shocked and asked “Why?”

That young girl’s eyes shot out brightly and said each word clearly, “Because we are going to start escaping now, and during our escape, there will be nothing to eat, and even water will not be available.”

Xiao Yu’er was shocked stiff, and asked numbly, “Escape? … You mean running away?”

“That’s right. I kept on eating just now, so that I will have the strength to escape!”

“But Mr Copper…”

The young girl added, “This is the time when he rests, at least within these four hours, he won’t come here.”

“Are you sure?”

The young girl assured, “He has never changed this habit for over ten years, it seems like more than ten years ago, a girl of the same status as me also escaped with someone at this time.”

Xiao Yu’er was enlightened, “No wonder he was so furious just now, so he was afraid that history would repeat…”

Tears welled up in that girl’s eyes again and she asked, “Do you know who was the girl he killed earlier?”

Xiao Yu’er’s expression changed and he asked, “Could she be your… your…”

Tears finally flowed down the girl’s eyes and she quivered, “She is my sister.”

Xiao Yu’er was stunned for a moment, and said sorrowfully, “Sorry, I should not have made her laugh earlier.”

The young girl replied with hatred, “My sister followed him for seven years, but he can be so brutal over such a small matter. But you do not know my sister at all and yet you argued for her, and even risked your life for her…”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “Is it because of this reason that you took the risk to save me?”

He suddenly held her cold hands and said seriously, “But after what happened ten over years ago, he must have taken strict precautions, how can we escape?”

That young girl said, “If we were in his restricted palace, we would not even

have an ounce of a chance to escape, but here, is only a place where he rests temporarily.”

By this time, her face revealed for the first time a bitter smile, and pulling at him, said “Besides, not only did I find this place, but it was also done up by me. We might not be able to escape for certain, but we must at least try. It’s better than waiting for death here.”

Xiao Yu’er glanced around and can’t help but ask, “What place is this actually?

“This is a temple.”

“This is actually a temple?” His eyes looked at the surrounding grand décor, his nose breathing in the intoxicating fragrance, and could not believe that this is actually a temple.

The young girl said, “This is originally a quiet ancient temple, but after a whole day of decoration by us, it became like this.”

Xiao Yu’er sighed, “You people are indeed extremely capable.”

He suddenly smiled and said, “But time is precious, why are we not going yet? If you want to chat, we’ll have lots of time after we escape.”

The young girl said, “We need to wait for someone to collect the cutlery before we can leave, or else we’ll be found out immediately that we are not in the house.

Xiao Yu’er laughingly said, “That’s right, I’m careless about small matters, seems like every girl is more meticulous than me.

That young girl looked fixedly at him and asked slowly, “Do you know a lot of girls?”

Xiao Yu’er said with a bitter smile, “I really hope I can know a few less… what

about you? The boys that you know…”

The girl said coldly, “I don’t know a single one.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “At least you already know me now. My Surname is Jiang, I’m Jiang Xiao Yu, what about you?”

The girl was quiet for a moment before saying slowly, “Why don’t you call me Tie Ping Gu.”

Xiao Yu’er seemed to be stunned, and smiled bitterly “Your surname is also Tie? Why are there so many girls with the surname Tie…”

Before he could finish his words, Tie Ping Gu waved to interrupt his sentence.

There was a soft sound coming from outside the door. Xiao Yu’er hurriedly lied on the bed, and a solemn girl dressed in purple came in with a woman dressed in green. Tie Ping Gu stood there, not even looking at her.

That girl in purple walked to her and said coldly, “Your sister is dead.” Tie Ping Gu also replied icily, “I know.”

The girl in purple asked, “Are you sad?”

Tie Ping Gu responded, “If I am sad, are you happy?”

The girl in purple suddenly turned around, her pair of cold yet furious eyes happened to be facing Xiao Yu’er, and Xiao Yu’er made a face at her. By now that woman in green has already cleared the cutlery.

The girl in purple suddenly said, “You can go out as well.”

Xiao Yu’er was stunned, and forced out a smile, “You’re saying that I can go out?”

The girl in purple turned around again to stare at Tie Ping Gu, saying frostily “You obviously know that I am referring to you, why are you still not leaving?”

Xiao Yu’er was shocked, his heart almost stopped. However Tie Ping Gu asked icily, “Who asked me to leave?”

The girl in purple replied with a cold laugh, “You can change shift now, isn’t it good that I’m asking you to take a rest.”

Tie Ping Gu did not say another word, turned around and walked out.

Xiao Yu’er looked at her walking out and although he was feeling anxious, he can’t think of any plans at all. That girl in purple is staring at him again, and said each word slowly, “You do not wish for her to leave?”

Xiao Yu’er yawned and smiled, “It’s best that she leaves. I’m sick of looking at that stern face of hers. Although you’re not that much better than her, but a new one is always better than an old one. I’m born to have this habit of liking the new and discarding the old.”

The girl in purple smiled coldly, “If your eyes dare to look at me, I will dig them out.”

Xiao Yu’er saw that Tie Ping Gu has quietly returned, and deliberately laughed loudly, “Although your mouth is saying that you don’t want me looking at you, but your heart is willing. For all I know you even wish for me to hug you, to kiss you. Or else why would you transfer her away and stay here yourself?”

The girl in purple was so livid that the color on her face changed, and she stammered, “You… you dare to say such words to me?”

Xiao Yu’er stuck out his tongue and laughed, “You’re not a male tiger, why wouldn’t I dare, I even want to take a bite out of you.”

He saw that Tie Ping Gu is already behind the girl in purple and deliberately made her madder.

The girl in purple shouted, “Don’t you think that I cannot kill you, at least I can break your..”

Before she could finish her words, her head suddenly drooped down, followed by her body slumping down on the ground, and not a noise was made.

Tie Ping Gu had chopped down on her neck with her palm.

Xiao Yu’er jumped up and asked, “Aren’t you afraid others will find…”

Tie Ping Gu coldly interrupted him and said, “This is a rare chance, I’ll just have to risk it. Besides, the people here will never be concerned about the matters of others. Even if she did not show herself for three days, no one would look for her.”

As she spoke, she had already moved the bed half a foot out, reached out her hand and ran it along the wall for a while. A narrow door immediately appeared from the wall.

Tie Ping Gu went in with a push and said with a low voice, “Follow me in quickly.”

Once inside the wall, there was a corridor, winding and deep, not knowing where it would lead. The eerie and damp air makes one nauseous.

Xiao Yu’er was both shocked and ecstatic, and walked a distance with his nose pinched, until he could take it no longer and said, “I did not think a temple would actually have such a complicated underground tunnel, when did you find out about this?”

Tie Ping Gu replied, “I already found it when I was cleaning up this place.”

She added, “I guess that this ancient temple was built during the Wu Hu uprising (Wu Hu: Collective term for non-chinese tribes, usually nomadic). At that time roving bandits and thieves were rampant, and human lives were

cheaper that those of a dog or a pig, so many became monks to avoid trouble. But the temple is also not a safe place, so the monks built this complicated tunnel to avoid being killed by escaped soldiers or bandits."

Xiao Yu'er sighed, "You're really different from the other girls that I know. You have brains… In this world, there are less and less girls with brains, and there are some who have brains, but are too lazy to use it. They keep thinking that it's enough as long as they have a pretty face." Tie Ping Gu seemed to have smiled again, and said "But this can only be blamed on men."

Xiao Yu'er commented, "Oh?"

Tie Ping Gu added, "Because men all do not like smart girls, they're afraid that the girls would be better than them, so the smarter the girl, the more she has to pretend to be stupid and weak. Since men by nature like to feel that they are better than women, like to protect women, so why shouldn't women let them think a little more, and suffer a little more."

Xiao Yu'er laughed loudly, "So the way you say it, it is men who are the stupid ones…. But, you don't even know a single man, how would you understand men so well?"

Tie Ping Gu replied, "Women are born to understand men, but men will never understand women."

Xiao Yu'er sighed and said, "This phrase is indeed correct. If a man thinks he understands women, then he won't be far from days of suffering."

At this time the both of them are actually filled with fear and trepidation, so they kept finding topics to talk about, because conversations usually can relax and calm an anxious mind.

In this dark and eerie tunnel, when one does not even know if one's life is save, if the two of them maintain silence, won't that be even more unbearable? The tunnel is getting more and more damp, more and more dark.

Xiao Yu’er extended his hand to touch, and on both sides it’s no longer the smooth wall, but hard, rough, stone wall overgrown with moss. He also felt that the ground is uneven, and finally could not stand it but had to ask, “Could this temple’s side be against the middle of a mountain?”

Tie Ping Gu did not reply, but lighted her exquisite flint.

This is indeed the middle of the mountain, and the criss-cross network of tunnels was as tight as spiderwebs. No one knows where the wind was coming from, and the breeze was causing the hairs to stand. Xiao Yu’er laughed, “In such a place, even if Mr Copper has supernatural skills, it won’t be easy to find us. Tie Ping Gu replied, “But if we want to leave, it might not be easy too.”

Xiao Yu’er was startled, and asked hoarsely “You… you don’t know the way out either?”

“Of course I do not know.”

Xiao Yu’er asked in amazement, “Then you… why do you say that we can escape?”

Tie Ping Gu replied, “As long as there is a path, we will naturally have hope of escaping.”

Xiao Yu’er answered with a bitter face, “Miss, aren’t you looking at things too simply. Do you know that some of these tunnels in a hill are actually dead ends.”

“But there are some who leads to the outside, right?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Even if there is a path, but these tunnels are even more complicated and dangerous than Zhugu Liang’s Eight Chart Diagrams. Sometimes you can go around in circles for three months and find out in the end that you’re back where you started.”

He heaved a long sigh, “As far as I know, since ancient times, the number of people who are trapped to death in this kind of mountains, if they were to come

together, even the King of Hade's Sen Lo Hall would be bursting from the seams."

Tie Ping Gu was walking in front, and without even turning her head, said icily, "Since that's the case, it's not too many if another two are added."

Xiao Yu'er asked, "You… You're not anxious at all?" Tie Ping Gu said coldly, "If you're anxious, you can still go back…"

Xiao Yu'er was stunned, and said with a bitter smile, "Don't be angry, I was not blaming you, it's just that…"

Tie Ping Gu suddenly turned her head around and yelled, "You think that I do not know the dangers here? But no matter what, we still have half a chance of escaping, it's still better than sitting there waiting for death, right?"

Xiao Yu'er stuck out his tongue and smiled, "If I knew you would be so angry, I wouldn't have said these words."

Tie Ping Gu stared at him fiercely for a while, and suddenly sighed, "I really did not expect you to be such a weird person."

Xiao Yu'er replied with a laugh, "I really did not expect either that your temper would be so great." His mouth kept on talking, but his eyes were not lazy.

At this time, he suddenly realized that on the thick moss on the wall, he seems to be able to see an arrow. Tie Ping Gu's gaze shifted, obviously she saw it as well.

She immediately followed the direction that the arrow was pointed in. After walking for over ten feet, there was really was another arrow on the corner of the wall.

However, Xiao Yu'er still stood there, not moving at all.

Tie Ping Gu furrowed her brow and asked, “Now that we obviously can leave, why are you standing there and not moving?”

Xiao Yu’er grinned, “If you follow this arrow, in another moment, you’ll be able to see Mr Copper. But I do not wish to see that face of his again.” Tie Ping Gu was stunned, and asked “Aren’t these arrows meant to show the way?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “If the arrow is meant to show the way, but not the way out.”

Tie Ping Gu asked, “How do you know?”

Xiao Yu’er said, “They were afraid they would be lost as well, and be trapped to death in here, so they carved these arrows, right?”

“That’s right.”

Xiao Yu’er continued, “In order to hide from the bandits, so they hid here, until they know that the bandits have left, where do you think they would go then?”

“Naturally it’s back to the temple.”

She said the words without much thought, and suddenly realized, saying hoarsely “That’s right, these arrows must be showing the way back to the temple. They only want to hide in these mountains for a while, so why would they indicate the way out.

Xiao Yu’er clapped and laughed, “I’ve already said, you’re a very smart girl. You finally understand. I think you pretended earlier not to have thought of this point.”

Tie Ping Gu lowered her head, her face blushed to the roots of her hair. She suddenly passed the torch to Xiao Yu’er and said, “You… you lead the way.”

Xiao Yu’er sighed and mumbled, “So the smarter the girl, the more she has to

pretend to be stupid and weak. So now you want me to crack my brains more and use more effort."

He has not finished his words but Tie Ping Gu is already stamping her foot with her reddened face, saying "We'll take it that you're right about this matter, it's no big deal anyway."

Xiao Yu'er looked at her with a grin, and after staring at her for a long moment, finally said very slowly, "I just want you to blush, to be angry. Only when you're angry do you truly behave like a girl. I really cannot tolerate that icy look of yours."

Tie Ping Gu was about to put on a stern look but Xiao Yu'er has already turned and walked with a big laugh. She can't help but change the stern face that she just put on into a smile and muttered, "Was I really blushing? I really do not know how I look like when I blush, I'm afraid this is the first time in my life."

Xiao Yu'er followed the arrow, and after every ten over feet, at the corner, he would find another arrow there. However, if the arrow was pointing forward, he would walk back, and if the arrow was pointing to the left, he would go right. Every time he passed an arrow, he would try to destroy that arrow. Tie Ping Gu followed behind him for a while before she could not help but ask, "The way you are walking, will there be a way out?"

Xiao Yu'er said with a smile, "Although I do not know if we can walk out, but the way we are walking, at least we are moving further and further away from that temple."

By now the tunnel is getting more and more narrow, and Xiao Yu'er sometimes cannot walk through them at all. By now, the directional arrows were gone as well.

Xiao Yu'er sighed and said, "Now, we'll have to depend on our luck, we might as well walk forward with our eyes closed."

As he spoke, he extinguished the torch. Tie Ping Gu stopped talking, and only felt her hand being held by Xiao Yu'er. Her heart suddenly started jumping, in the

darkness, this heartbeat seems especially loud. Tie Ping Gu can't help but blush again, and can't wait to find a hole to hide into.

Xiao Yu'er was heard saying with a laugh, "If a person's heart were to beat, no one else can make it stop."

With a 'humph' Tie Ping Gu wanted to hit his arm, but her hands stopped suddenly, and she stood there in a daze. She suddenly realized that all these years, this actually is the first time she felt that she is made of flesh and blood.

In the narrow tunnel, walking was difficult, and sometimes they even had to climb. To walk on such paths in the darkness, is really not a comfortable thing. Tie Ping Gu's clothes were torn, maybe some parts of her body are already bleeding, but she did not feel any pain at all, and felt as if she's walking in the clouds.

After walking every short distance, Xiao Yu'er would light the torch and take a look at the surroundings, but later, the brilliance of the torch was getting weaker and weaker.

Xiao Yu'er knows that the torch is about to be used up, so he dared not use it too much. He knows that in such a place, if there were totally no light, then it's a sure way to die. The path was even more difficult to traverse now.

Tie Ping Gu's footsteps finally became heavy. Later, she felt her whole body in pain, dizzy with blurred vision, hungry and thirsty. Naturally her constitution is not like Xiao Yu'er, who seems to be made of steel, so how could she take such hardship. If not for Xiao Yu'er talking to her and making her laugh, she won't be able to move even a single step. Actually Xiao Yu'er himself also could not walk anymore. If it were others, when they reach such a dire strait, even if they do not become crazy, they would be wailing and shouting by now.

However, Xiao Yu'er was born with a weird character. It may be easier to make him die, but to make him anxious, make him not laugh, that would be so much more difficult. Tie Ping Gu finally could not take it and said, "Let's rest for a while before moving on."

Xiao Yu’er said with a low voice, “We must never rest, once we rest, we can forget about moving again.”

“But I… I’m already…”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “Think about it, since ages past, very few people would have been at this mysterious tunnel strolling hand in hand. This is such a beautiful, such a flirty and romantic thing. Others will never have such a chance in their lifetime, why don’t we enjoy it a little more.”

Tie Ping Gu replied dejectedly, “A pity I… I am not the person you love.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “Who said you’re not, right here right now, besides you, is there anyone else in the world who is closer to me now?”

Tie Ping Gu cried out, and suddenly fell into Xiao Yu’er’s arms. Her face was burning like fire, and this fire, is spreading from the bottom of her heart!

End of Chapter 69

Chapter 59

Chapter 70

Tie Ping Gu has never been close to a man. The fire of her youth had been suppressed for too long, and besides, now that one is on the brink of death, the sensibilities are even more fragile.

Tie Ping Gu herself did not expect that she would fall into Xiao Yu'er's arms, but now that she's in it, she felt no shred of regret at all. She only felt Xiao Yu'er's hands, already slowly hugging her shoulder.

Tie Ping Gu stammered, "Life, life is really full of wonders, only now do I realise… I do not know you a few days ago, but now… now…"

Xiao Yu'er suddenly asked, "Do you know, what am I thinking about now? The thing that I want to do most now is take a look at your face."

Tie Ping Gu replied, "No… I beg of you, no…"

But the torch is already lighted. Tie Ping Gu used her hands to cover her face, she is blushing again. She stammered, "The torch… is almost used up…"

Xiao Yu'er laughed, "The torch may be precious, but to be able to see your look now, no matter what precious thing that has to be sacrificed, would be worth it."

Tie Ping Gu's hands slowly lowered, and she asked, "Really?"

Xiao Yu'er said with a laugh, "What a pity there's no mirror now, or else I

would want you to know that, the way you look now, is so much prettier than the icy look you had in the past."

Tie Ping Gu's eyes stared at Xiao Yu'er, and asked slowly "Would you blame me if we really cannot find out way out?"

"Blame you? Why would I blame you?"

Tie Ping Gu explained, "You would not die if you were there, but now…"

Xiao Yu'er chuckled, "If that's the way, you should be blaming me. If not for me, you won't be suffering like this."

Tie Ping Gu said with a sweet smile, "I don't even take myself as a woman, what more about others? Others may look upon me as a fairy or demoness, but will never look upon me as a woman."

Xiao Yu'er laughed, "But you are definitely a woman, I can use a thousand ways to prove it."

Tie Ping Gu laughed, "I myself know it now, so even if I were to die now, I'll still be happy."

The flame on the torch, slowly became the size of a pea.

Tie Ping Gu stared at the flame, her eyelids getting heavier, and said with a low voice, "I also know, that you're treating me like this not because you really like me, but just to console me, so that I can have a final moment of happiness.

Xiao Yu'er laughed "You… you think too much."

The corners of Tie Ping Gu's mouth curved up into a small smile, and she said softly "But I'm still grateful to you, it's just that I am… I am really tired, please let me sleep. Even if I never wake up from my sleep, I'll be satisfied…"

Xiao Yu’er looked at Tie Ping Gu’s eyelids slowly closing, and can’t help but sigh.

Right at this time, there was a ‘swoosh’ sound, and there was a line of fat and huge rats, joined from nose to tail, running past them.

Tie Ping Gu was startled, opened her eyes and her body curled up in fright.

Xiao Yu’er was full of joy and said loudly, “You don’t have to sleep, we’re saved.”

Tie Ping Gu asked, “But these are just rats.”

XiaoYu’er replied, “Look, these rats are fat and huge, they certainly do not belong in the mountains. There’s not even a grain of rice here, so they can never have such fat rats.” Tie Ping Gu’s eyes shone as well, and said, “You mean these rats came from outside the mountain?”

Xiao Yu’er affirmed, “That’s right, this place must be near the brink, there must be a pathway nearby.”

As he spoke, he was already walking towards the direction that the rats came from.

Luckily the torch is not totally extinguished, in a short time he found a medium sized hole, and there was a faint ray of light coming from outside. He immediately dragged Tie Ping Gu over and squeezed through the hole.

Outside turned out to be a treasure cave, chests of gold and, silver and precious stones were piled there. Although it’s not considered a lot, but it’s still a considerable amount.

Xiao Yu’er was stunned, and laughed, “I’m not money mad, but heaven always want me to discover some kind of mysterious treasure. I really cannot understand why there are so many treasures in the world.”

Tie Ping Gu held onto a chest, and suddenly exclaimed, “This is not some mysterious treasure. These chests have only been here for a few days, there’s not even a layer of dust on it.”

He lifted his hand for a look, and there really was no dirt on his hands.

He suddenly realized that on the cover of every chest, there was a piece of red paper stuck on it, and on the paper there were actually the four words ‘Duan He Fei’s Property’.

This discovery almost made him jump.

These treasures must be those goods that Jiang Bie He and his son had stolen, which were hidden by Jiang Yu Lang here. He must have thought that this place is extremely secreted, but did not expect that it would be found out by Xiao Yu’er. Xiao Yu’er was so surprised and delighted, that he almost wanted to shout with joy.

Tie Ping Gu’s body suddenly leaned nearer, and whispered, “There’s someone outside!”

They saw that a stone slab that is shaped like a door, there seems to be light streaming in. Xiao Yu’er walked over quietly, and really saw that beside a huge stone outside, two people were sitting across each other.

The person facing this side, was pale looking, and surprisingly it was Jiang Yu Lang. The one sitting opposite Jiang Yu Lang, was extremely large and tall, but his face could not be seen clearly.

Beside that huge rock, there were a lot of meat and wine, but neither of them was eating or drinking, only concentrating on looking at this huge rock in front, their two pairs of eyes opened widely, unblinkingly.

Tie Ping Gu can’t help but whisper, “What’s so nice about that rock, why are those two people so absorbed with looking at it? Could they be mad?”

Xiao Yu’er swallowed his saliva a few times and lamented, “From what I know, this person is not only sane, but his brain is clearer than anyone else.”

Tie Ping Gu asked, “You know him?” Xiao Yu’er’s eyes were still staring at those meat and wine, and affirmed, “Mmm.”

Tie Ping Gu asked again, “Then why are they staring at that rock?”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “Maybe they are hoping that flowers would grow out of that rock.” His eyes finally shifted away from the meat and wine, towards the rock.

The rock was square and straight, nothing extraordinary about it at all. But in the middle of the rock, there was a line, and on the left and right side of the line there was a small piece of fatty meat. The eyes of the two of them were staring at the fatty meat, not moving at all.

Xiao Yu’er was also perplexed by their actions, and can’t help but laughingly said “I know that lad has no problems in the past, but now I’m not too sure. Could it be he has forgotten he’s supposed to use his mouth to eat the meat, and not use his eyes to look at it.”

Tie Ping Gu unconsciously swallowed her saliva as well and whispered, “If you know him, why don’t you go teach him.”

Xiao Yu’er gave a bitter smile and said, “How I wish I could teach him how to eat, but a pity that as soon as I walk out now, he would want to eat me. He can’t wait to eat me up.”

Tie Ping Gu sighed again, and can’t help but ask, “What about the other person?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “I still can’t see who the other person is, looks like…”

He has not finished his words, when suddenly a rat ran out from the darkness, up that huge rock, bit a piece of fatty meat from the front of the burly man, and fled with it.

Jiang Yu Lang's expression immediately changed, and said with a bitter smile, "Fine, you win again this time."

That burly man laughed loudly, "Now, you already owe me a 1.3 million taels. You should have lost most of your things over there!"

Jiang Yu Lang replied coldly, "Don't worry, there's a lot more."

The burly man laughed madly, "I am having fun gambling now, if you were to lose everything so quickly, I'll wrangle you."

As he laughed, he sliced another small piece of fatty mean and placed it on the rock.

Tie Ping Gu realized what was happening, and can't help but say laughingly, "So these two are gambling, the person whose meat placed in front of him is taken by the rat, will be the winner. This type of gamble, is really rarely seen in the world."

Xiao Yu'er grinned, "But this type of gamble is very fair, no one can think of cheating."

Tie Ping Gu asked, "What happens if the rat doesn't come?"

Xiao Yu'er replied, "If the rat doesn't come, they'll just wait. The more one is itching to gamble, as long as there's a gamble, he won't mind even if he has to wait a few days and nights." Tie Ping Gu chuckled, "That's right, right now it seems like they have gambled for more than a few days and nights."

Xiao Yu'er asked, "Do you know who is this person who has his back to us? He is 'Compulsive Gambler' Xuanyuan Sanguang. If he does not gamble until he loses all his possessions and money, he would never walk away."

Tie Ping Gu asked in surprise, "Compulsive gambler? Could he be one of the 'Ten Evils'…" Tie Ping Gu was quiet for a moment, when she suddenly asked, "Do

you know who the ‘Ten Evils’ actually are?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “You’ve really asked the correct person, there are really not a lot of people in the world who knows more about the ‘Ten Evils’ than me.”

He counted off his fingers, saying “Ten Evils, referring to ‘Bloody Hands’ Du Sha, ‘Dagger in Laughter’ Ha Ha’er, ‘Neither Man nor Woman’ Du Jiao Jiao, ‘Half Human, Half Ghost’ Yin Jiu You, ‘Does not eat human head’ Li Da Zui.”

As he said these, Tie Ping Gu’s body seem to be shaking a little, and her expression changed, but Xiao Yu’er did not look at her at all, but continued, “And there is ‘Mad Lion’ Tie Zhan, ‘Charm to Death without Compensating with Life’ Xiao Mimi, ‘Compulsive Gambler’ Xuanyuan Sanguang, ‘Harm others without benefit to oneself’ Bai Kaixin, and in addition the brothers Ouyang Ding and Ouyang Dang.”

Tie Ping Gu commented, “So according to what you’ve said, won’t there be eleven people?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “It’s because these Ouyang Brothers are never apart from each other, no matter what they do, they’ll be together, so they can only be counted as one person.”

Tie Ping Gu slowly lowered her head and asked, “Are these people really extremely evil?”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “Actually there are a lot more people in the world who are more evil than them. It’s just that the way they do things are extremely peculiar, and they have extremely weird habits.”

Tie Ping Gu asked, “What do you mean by that?”

Xiao Yu’er explained, “For example, this ‘Does not eat human head’ Li Da Zui, on normal days, not only is he amicable, he can also be considered a talent in both scholarly and martial pursuits. But once his weird habit happens, he can even eat his own wife. Those who have met him, would never expect that he

could do such a thing.”

As he said the name ‘Li Da Zui’, Tie Ping Gu shivered again, and was stunned for a moment, before asking gently, “Could it be that you know them?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “Not only do I know them, to tell you the truth, I grew up with them.”

Tie Ping Gu was again startled, and asked, “You… do you know where they are now?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “I’m afraid they’re in the vicinity of Turtle Hill.”

He suddenly paused, and asked with a laugh, “Why are you asking in so much detail?”

Tie Ping Gu forced out a smile and said, “I was just curious, who would have expect that there would be such weird people in the world?”

Naturally their voices were very low, and by now Jiang Yu Lang and Xuanyuan Sanguang were so engrossed that they would have forgotten their own birth dates, so naturally they would not hear the conversation.

Jiang Yu Lang suddenly smiled, and said “We have gambled for seven, eight days, but neither of us have lost everything, aren’t you annoyed?”

Xuanyuan Sanguang replied, “Not annoyed, not annoyed. Even if we were to gamble for another three years and six months, I will still not be annoyed.”

Jiang Yu Lang said, “But at the rate we’re gambling, I am feeling a little annoyed.”

Xuanyuan Sanguang immediately stared at him with large eyes and raised his voice, “Even if you’re annoyed, you still have to gamble with me.”

Jiang Yu Lang laughed, “I’m not saying that I’m not gambling, it’s just that I’m thinking of upping the stakes.”

Xuanyuan Sanguang laughed loudly, “When I gamble, I normally complain about small stakes and not large ones, the bigger the stakes the better. How big do you want it to be, speak.”

Jiang Yu Lang replied slowly, “The things you have with you, are obviously worth seven to eight hundred thousand taels, and now that you’ve won 1.3 million taels from me, then let this bet be two million hundred taels.”

Xuanyuan Sanguang clasped his hands and smiled, “Win or lose in one bet, this is hearty, but…” he suddenly stopped laughing and shouted, “I have already seen, in that cave of yours, there’s only two to three million taels at the most, and now that you have lost half, where else can you find so much money to gamble with me?

Jiang Yu Lang replied, “There is at least a million taels remaining in the cave.”

“Then what about the other million?”

“The other million, will be topped up by a person.”

Xuanyuan Sanguang laughed madly, “You son of a turtle is worth a million?”

Jiang Yu Lang’s expression did not change, and replied with a slight smile, “I may not be worth a million, but there is someone who is worth a million.”

Xuanyuan Sanguang asked, “Where?”

Jiang Yu Lang laughed, “Are you going to estimate the worth?”

Xuanyuan Sanguang stared, “Of course I need to estimate, when it comes to the gambling table, even relatives would not be spared. Even if a son were to bet with the father, the accounts must be settled clearly, not a single cent can be

less.”

Jiang Yu Lang replied with a slight smile, “Since this is the case, I will bring her here then…”

Behind Xuanyuan Sanguang, on a protruding rock, was a copper lamp. Jiang Yu Lang took that copper lamp and walked out, smiling at the same time, “Please rest assured, I will return immediately.”

Xuanyuan Sanguang laughed, “I will naturally be assured, you son of a turtle’s possessions are all here, and you’re anxious to recoup your losses, it’ll be strange if you don’t come back.” He tore off a chicken drumstick, and chewed it with a drink of wine.

Tie Ping Gu was at a loss at the scene before her, and she suddenly sighed, “Once these people start gambling, their stakes are at least a million taels of silver, it’s almost as if their silver are stolen money.”

Xiao Yu’er grinned, “Who said these silver are not stolen?”

Tie Ping Gu replied, “Even if it’s stolen, that would require some effort. To lose everything at once, isn’t it a pity.”

Xiao Yu’er said, “This is called easy come, easy go, besides, a compulsive gambler would even lose his wife and son without feeling any heartache.”

Tie Ping Gu can’t help but laugh, “Could it be he wants to use his wife as stake?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Even if he has a wife, she’ll not be worth a million. What tricks is that lad up to, even I cannot fathom. There’s not a lot of people who are worth a million.”

By now Jiang Yu Lang has walked in with someone, the person pulled in by him, was slender, and is a girl. Only her face is covered by a veil, and it could not be seen.

Xuanyuan Sanguang furrowed his brows and asked, “Why did you bring a woman?”

Jiang Yu Lang smiled, “Of course it’s a woman, if it’s a man, he won’t be worth much.”

Xuanyuan Sanguang laughed loudly, “But the leftover goods from your hands, I’m afraid it’s not even worth a cent.”

Jiang Yu Lang replied with a straight face, “Although this lady have followed me for a few days, but I have not touched her at all.”

Xuanyuan Sanguang rebutted, “A hungry cat that does not steal fish, I don’t believe you.”

Jiang Yu Lang laughed, “If you do not believe me, you will know with a try.”

He placed the copper lamp on the rock, but this time he did not put it behind Xuanyuan Sanguang, but behind himself instead. The light shone from above his shoulder, shining right in front of Xuanyuan Sanguang.

It doesn’t matter where a lamp is placed, it’s a small matter, naturally no one would bother, but Xiao Yu’er can’t help but furrow his brows and mutter, “What is this lad up to, he’s bringing this lamp in and out, there must be a reason.”

What evil Jiang Yu Lang is capable of, naturally no one knows better than Xiao Yu’er.

That lady with the black veil, stood there like a piece of wood. Jiang Yu Lang raised his hand to remove the veil on her face but she still stood there numbly without moving at all.

Under the light, her face is truly so pretty that it does not bear any taint of the mundane world. Xuanyuan Sanguang and Tie Ping Gu, on seeing that face, was pleasantly surprised. Xiao Yu’er, on seeing that face, almost cried out in shock.

Murong Jiu, this girl is actually Murong Jiu. After she was chased away by Third Missy, she walked in a daze aimlessly and walked out of the city in a daydream. Others who saw her may think it weird, but on seeing her grand clothes, her refined beauty, no one dared to do anything bad to her. Who would have expected that this piece of news would actually find its way to Jiang Yu Lang.

He immediately thought that this girl must be Murong Jiu, so he immediately stopped all his current work and rushed back. Coincidentally he met a famished Murong Jiu on the way.

Jiang Yu Lang was of course not afraid that she would reveal his secret, so he took her along to hide the stolen loot here. Who would have expected that there would be someone behind him, and Xuanyuan Sanguang has already been following him!

When Xuanyuan Sanguang saw Murong Jiu's face, he can't help but was stunned for a moment, before he sighed, "A beauty, really a beauty, a pity that these twenty years, I am no longer interested in any beauty. You better take her away!"

Jiang Yu Lang smiled, "This lady may be beautiful, but it's not this face of her that is valuable, but her status."

Xuanyuan Sanguang laughed loudly, "Could she be a princess then?"

Jiang Yu Lang replied, "she may not be a princess, but she's not that much different from a princess.

Xuanyuan Sanguang asked angrily, "Who is she actually? Why do you, son of a turtle keep talking in circles?"

Jiang Yu Lang replied slowly, "She is Miss Murong Jiu of Jiu Xiu Villa."

Xuanyuan Sanguang can't help but feel surprised, and his expression changed, "The Ninth Miss of the Murong Family, how did she end up in your hands?"

Jiang Yu Lang replied, “She was harmed by someone evil and lost her senses and her way. The eight sisters and the eight son-in-laws of the Murong Family could not find her. I was lucky and found her unexpectedly.”

He continued with a smile, “Please think about it, if someone were to send her back to her sisters and brothers-in-law, how grateful would Qin Jian, Nangong Liu and the rest be. Would the appreciation gift be any less?”

Xuanyuan Sanguang thought for a while, and with a clap of his hand, exclaimed “Fine, I’ll gamble with you!” Suddenly someone was heard shouting, “It cannot be gambled!”

With this sudden shout from Xiao Yu’er, not only were Xuanyuan Sanguang and Jiang Yu Lang shocked, even Tie Ping Gu was startled.

Xiao Yu’er was not anxious. He leaned towards Tie Ping Gu’s ears and whispered, “You’ll follow me out, whatever you want to eat, just take and eat it. Don’t ever be shy, I already have a plan to deal with that lad.”

Only after he finished his words did he stride out and say with a smile, “The friend who hid under the cesspool eating shit, could you have forgotten about me?”

When Jiang Yu Lang saw Xiao Yu’er, he was even more surprised than if he had seen a ghost, and took two steps back, saying hoarsely, “You… how is it that you’re here?”

Xiao Yu’er grinned, “I’m like a lingering ghost, sure to follow you son of a turtle.”

He was clever beyond words, and extremely adept at copying, so when he learnt Xuanyuan Sanguang’s tone of voice, it was very convincing. With a hard slap on his shoulder, Xuanyuan Sanguang laughed loudly, “If it was someone else stepping out from inside, I’ll be surprised too, but you mischievous imp, even if you were to climb out from the ground, I won’t think it any strange.”

Xuanyuan Sanguang was bending over in laughter, but Xiao Yu'er has already started eating and drinking. Murong Jiu looked at him numbly, as if she knows if, as if she doesn't know him.

Jiang Yu Lang saw that behind Xiao Yu'er there was actually another incomparable beauty, whose table manners were exactly like Xiao Yu'er, like a hungry ghost reincarnated. He was staring at the sight, not knowing what to do at all.

With much difficulty, Xuanyuan Sanguang controlled his laughter and was panting as he asked, "Little brother, I have been gambling all my life, why do you say that I cannot gamble this time?"

Xiao Yu'er said through a mouthful of meat, "Because once you gamble, you will be tricked."

Xuanyuan Sanguang asked, "I am an old gambler, that son of a turtle can only be considered a little gambler at most, how could he have tricked me. Besides this type of gamble is the most fair, no one can cheat, unless he is a rat spirit."

Xiao Yu'er said slowly, "You said this type of gambling is the most fair, you have won a lot of times as well, right?"

"That's right."

Xiao Yu'er continued, "Do you know how you won?"

Xuanyuan Sanguang said, "I'm having a streak of good luck these two days."

Xiao Yu'er replied, "No."

Xuanyuan Sanguang furrowed his brows and asked, "Could there be another reason?"

Xiao Yu'er replied, "It's because…." He deliberately took a glance at Jiang Yu

Lang, and immediately said while shaking his head, “No, I cannot say.”

Xuanyuan Sanguang jumped up and asked, “Why can’t you tell me?”

Xiao Yu’er said, “I’m not in good health these past few days, I’m afraid that lad will fight it out with me.”

Xuanyuan Sanguang fumed, “If that son of a turtle dare to touch a finger on you, see if I don’t break his bones one by one.”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “If I fight with him, will you help me?”

Xuanyuan Sanguang replied, “Of course.”

Xiao Yu’er smiled broadly, “Good, then I can speak assuredly.”

He continued with a grin, “You should know that rats are the most afraid of light, and would only show themselves at night. However once a lamp is lighted, there will be nothing they can do.”

Xuanyuan Sanguang laughed, “I didn’t expect you to know about rats so well too.”

Xiao Yu’er chuckled, “Fish and rats, are in the same boat, and will get a headache on seeing a cat. Who else but me would understand them?”

Xuanyuan Sanguang was breathless from laughing again, and asked, “But this... what has this got to do with anything?”

Xiao Yu’er continued, “The rats here, must have moved in here recently from outside, it could be there’s an evil cat outside who chased them into the cave. Who would have expected that there is no rat inn here, if they were not famished, they would not dare to steal meat right in front of you...”

Xuanyuan Sanguang said with a laugh, “And it also requires me not to move.

Anyone who can't take it and move, the rat would not dare to eat the meat in front of him."

Xiao Yu'er said, "But you forgot another point, just now, the lamp was behind you. Your body blocked the light, that's why you won a few times continuously."

Xuanyuan Sanguang clapped his hands and exclaimed, "Indeed correct, you are indeed a mischievous imp, that you can even think of such a thing."

After a while, Xuanyuan Sanguang seemed to be enlightened, "I understand, that son of a turtle has now changed the position of the lamp, and the light is shining right at the meat in front of me. He calculated that I will surely lose, that's why he upped the stakes."

Xiao Yu'er laughed, "Exactly, not only can he win back the money he lost to you this time, he can cheat your money as well."

Xuanyuan Sanguang felt fury and amusement at the same time, and said "If not for your reminder, I would have lost it all."

Xiao Yu'er turned around and looked at Jiang Yu Lang, "How is it? Have I spoken correctly?"

The expression on Jiang Yu Lang's face had changed long ago, but he still said with an icy smile, "If you must use the heart of a scoundrel to measure the intention of a gentleman, there's nothing I can do."

Xiao Yu'er laughed loudly, "Jiang Yu Lang, you're full of evil ideas. Others may not know it, but will I not know it too? Why are you still pretending in front of me?"

Jiang Yu Lang replied frostily, "I'm afraid it's just that I'm down on my luck, that's why I saw a ghost."

Xiao Yu'er laughed loudly, "That's right. To have met me, you must have been down on your luck for the last eight reincarnations. Now that I've caught you

red-handed, you shall follow me and explain to Duan He Fei.”

Jiang Yu Lang looked at him, and looked at Xuanyuan Sanguang, before saying with a lowered head, “Since things have come to this, I have nothing else to say, but…”

He suddenly grabbed Murong Jiu’s wrist and placed himself behind her back, and said with a sinister laugh, “But don’t you want this Miss Murong’s life anymore?”

End of Chapter 70

Chapter 60

Chapter 71

Xiao Yu'er was secretly startled, but he laughed loudly and said, "If you think to threaten me with Murong Jiu, then you are wrong. Unless you do not know that she keeps wanting to take my life, so why would I save her."

Xuanyuan Sanguang also laughed and said, "I have long lost interest in women, her life or death, has got nothing to do with me."

Without a change of expression, Jiang Yu Lang said with a slight smile, "Since that is the case, why aren't the two of you attacking me yet?"

Xuanyuan Sanguang replied, "I have no desire to kill you."

Xiao Yu'er also laughed, "Friend who eats shit, I'm afraid I'll dirty my hands if I kill you."

Jiang Yu Lang smiled, "Since that is the case, I shall make a move. This Miss Murong, will naturally have to follow me."

Xiao Yu'er laughed loudly, "Go then! You took away Murong Jiu, there's no need to fear that no one would want to settle scores with you."

Jiang Yu Lang smiled frostily, "This you do not have to worry, if some one asks me, I'll just say that I took Miss Murong away because I was worried that she will be harmed by you. If not for Jiang Xiao Yu, would Murong Jiu have ended up in such a state?"

Xiao Yu’er sighed, “Like father like son, you and your father, don’t have any other skills. But the skills of pinning blame on others and pretending to be good men, no one else can really compare to you. But you stole Duan He Fei’s silver, the fact is here, that you cannot deny.”

Jiang Yu Lang said, “What silver, my hands are empty, where are the silver. Now whoever has the silver, is the person who stole them, such reasoning is so simple.”

Xuanyuan Sanguang suddenly exclaimed, “Now you son of a turtle are trying to blame it on me!”

Jiang Yu Lang replied with a cold laugh, “You said that I’m blaming it on you, I’ll say that you’re blaming it on me. Why don’t we see, whether those in the martial arts world will believe the words of you, ‘Compulsive Gambler’, or me Jiang Yu Lang.”

Xuanyuan Sanguang was furiously stunned, and said with a bitter laugh, “If you son of a turtle were born a few years earlier, I will have no place in the ‘Ten Evils’.”

Jiang Yu Lang laughed loudly, “You flatter me, I am only…”

Before he finished his words, there were suddenly a few screams, coming from outside.

The screams were not only especially shrill, but long as well. The person who screamed, seemed not only to have witnessed an extremely cruel, chilling event, but also seemed to be suffering from a pain that a normal person would never be able to tolerate. The screams, jarring on the ear, are enough to make anyone’s blood congeal.

Jiang Yu Lang’s expression changed the fastest, and the most ashen. Dragging Murong Jiu, he was about to turn around and run out.

Xiao Yu’er shouted, “Since the person who came can make his men emit such

chilling shrieks, he must be extremely frightening. It doesn't matter if you want to go out and die, but Murong Jiu…." His words suddenly stopped, in the darkness, there were already five shadows!

Although at this point in time no one can see their faces, but the eerily evil air they brought in with them, is enough to make everyone's palm break out in cold sweat.

In the darkness, a series of continuous, hair-standing squeaking sounds were heard, and the five persons walked slowly over.

The first thing Xiao Yu'er saw, was their miserable, eerie, shining blue eyes, followed by their terrified expressions. The blood flowing from the five of them, seemed to be a scary blue. The five of them were all wearing long black robes reaching to the ground, their right hands holding a silver whip, but their left hands holding a steel cage, and that nauseating squeaking sounds, were coming out from the steel cages.

Xuanyuan Sanguang shouted, "Friends, who are you? Why are you here?"

His shout was as loud as thunder, causing reverberations all around the valley, and was using this shout to reveal his internal energy to scare the opposite party.

But who would have expected that the five men in black did not even blink their eyes. The eerie blue eyes kept flitting among Xiao Yu'er and the other's faces, and they did not talk at all.

Jiang Xiao Yu had already retreated and was shouting, "The Ninth Miss of Jiu Xiu Villa and 'Compulsive Gambler' are all here, if friends know them, you better retreat quickly, any later and you won't be able to leave even if you want to!"

He was quick witted, and on seeing that there's something wrong with the other party, hurriedly used Xuanyuan Sanguang and Murong Jiu's reputation to scare them. These two names are of some influence, besides, even if the other party is not frightened, he was using the names of others, it has nothing to do with him at all, so the other party won't even look for him. The five men in black

still remained unperturbed, their steps unwavering.

Tie Ping Gu suddenly cried out in alarm and pulling Xiao Yu'er's hands, stammered, "Rats… so many rats in the cage."

Several dozens of rats were in the steel cage squeaking. Xiao Yu'er may not be afraid of rats, but to see the several dozen pairs of shining eyes, a huge pile of furry rats, he can't help but feel his goosebumps rising.

The leader of the men in black laughed and said, "That's right, rats… us five are here only to find rats, nothing to do with humans. If everyone were to stay still and not move, I will certainly not offend you."

His words may be polite, but the voice is even more nauseating than the cries of the rats. Xuanyuan Sanguang can't help but ask, "What are you catching the rats for?"

That man in black said with a laugh, "Our leader only loves rat meat, so we were ordered to catch them, but all the rats around a hundred miles radius of here have already escaped into the mountains, that's why we followed them here."

Xiao Yu'er laughed with sudden understanding, "No wonder these caves have an exceptional number of rats, so they chased them here. And I originally thought there was an evil cat outside."

Xuanyuan Sanguang's expression changed slightly, as if he thought of a person, and asked fiercely, "Friends, who is your master?"

That man in black no longer spoke, but waved his hand.

From the mouths of the five of them emitted the sound of a bamboo flute, this sound seems like the whistling of leaves, yet it is not. The sound makes one feels dread and nauseous.

Tie Ping Gu has already covered her ears, Xiao Yu'er also felt uncomfortable

hearing the sound, but his sense of curiosity is the strongest, and on witnessing such a strange thing, he only wanted to take a good look.

Xuanyuan Sanguang stared with huge round eyes, but there was a look of fear in his eyes.

Xiao Yu'er can't help but whispered, "Who is this friend who loves rat meat? Do you know?"

Xuanyuan Sanguang replied, "Mmm."

He seemed to have thought of a very frightful thing, and was lost in his thoughts. Xiao Yu'er was talking into his ear, but he did not hear a single word at all.

Right at this time, there were strange sounds coming out from beneath the dirt floor, like a few thousand, a few hundred rats, all squeaking, trying their hardest to escape and squeeze out!

The men in black immediately placed the steel cages they held in their hands in five different positions.

Right at this time, a large pack of rats, from the cracks on the mountain walls, the dark corners, ran out in waves, so many that it's immeasurable.

All the rats that Xiao Yu'er have seen in his lifetime, were not even one-tenth of the number of rats now. Never in his dreams could he imagine that there would be so many rats in the world.

If right now, it were a pack of hungry wolves or tigers or leopards, Xiao Yu'er might not necessarily feel afraid, but such a large pack of rats, is making his face turn pale, his body turn cold. The wine and meat he just ate, were almost bursting out from his chest, and he nearly vomited them out.

Although he could still control himself, but Tie Ping Gu could not, and with a 'wa', vomited all over the floor. The rats were running past them, and the few

highly skilled martial arts exponents, all can't help but jump up, leaping onto the huge stone, squeezed together.

Tie Ping Gu covered her eyes with her hands, refusing to open them even if it means death, but Xiao Yu'er eyes were opened widely.

A few thousand, few hundred rats were running past his own legs, this is not a sight that everyone can witness, so how can he bear not to see.

The men in black kept on whistling on the bamboo, the whips in their hands dancing, and chasing the packs of rats into the steel cages. The steel cage may not be small, but it's not large either, but the rats kept running in, just like packing ducks, squeezing themselves in even though it's full. One piled on another, a pack piled onto a pack.

Until the five cages were so packed, it looked like five large meat dumplings, did the men in black put their whips down and stopped their whistling. The rest of the rats immediately looked like they have been pardoned, and scurried away in all directions again. In the blink of an eye, none were left. The cave immediately returned to its original silence, Tie Ping Gu secretly took a glance before she dared to put her hands down. Her face was wet with cold sweat, as if she had just woken up from a nightmare.

Xiao Yu'er heaved a long sigh before saying with a bitter smile, "Only now do I know that rats are so scary."

Xuanyuan Sanguang coughed dryly and said, "Thousands and hundreds of rats, really look very different from ten or eight rats. Si Chuan has the most rats, but I've never seen so many before."

Jiang Yu Lang giggled, "I was not really afraid, I just find it revolting."

The leader of the men in black laughed loudly, "What this friend said is correct, not only are rats not scary, but they are extremely tasty."

Xiao Yu'er said with a cynical look, "Tasty?" The man in black said with a

strange smile, “If you don’t believe it, you’ll know once you try.”

He actually scooped up a furry rat from the cage and wanted to pass it to Xiao Yu’er’s hands.

Xiao Yu’er hurriedly shook his hands and said with a smile, “A gentleman will not take what another likes. Since the rats are so tasty, you better keep it for yourself.”

The man in black chuckled, “A pity, a pity. Although you look very brave, but you don’t even dare to eat a rat, or else once you have a taste of rat’s meat, you would find that eating other meat would be like chewing wax.”

The goosebumps on Xiao Yu’er’s body stood up again, and he said loudly, “Since friend has already found your rats, shouldn’t you be gone by now.”

Jiang Yu Lang suddenly said with a sinister smile, “You’ve always loved being a busybody, why aren’t you interfering this time?”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “If there’s someone who likes to eat rat meat, that’s his own business, why should I bother. It’s the same as you liking to eat shit, I can’t interfere in that.”

Jiang Yu Lang’s expression changed slightly, and looking at the man in black, asked “Is friend really leaving?”

The man in black replied, “As I have already said, we’re here for the rats, and have nothing to do with humans.”

Jiang Yu Lang sighed, “Doesn’t friend know that there is something better than rats in here?”

The man in black took a look at Murong Jiu and Tie Ping Gu and replied with a weird laugh, “The disciples in our sect, all feel that women are not as cute as rats…”

Jiang Yu Lang pulled Murong Jiu aside, far away from Xiao Yu'er and Xuanyuan Sanguang, before saying with a grin, "Aren't money and jewels cuter than rats as well?"

The man in black's eyes shone, and asked, "Money and jewels? Where?"

Jiang Yu Lang's eyes rolled towards the back for a glance, and said with a smile, "With these two around, I dare not say."

Xiao yu'er sighed and said with a bitter smile, "I'm so weird, why didn't I kill you in the past."

Jiang Yu Lang laughed loudly, "Even if you want to kill me, I'm afraid it'll not be easy."

The few men in black looked at one another, carried their steel cages and walked towards the cave behind. Xiao Yu'er blocked their path with a flash and said with a grin, "There's no rats behind, you better return."

The man in black said with a grin, "It's best that friend knows, you may not dare to eat rats, but the rats will dare to eat you."

Xiao Yu'er smiled, "I have not taken a bath for a few days, my flesh is very dirty, I'm afraid even the rats won't want to eat it."

The man in black laughed loudly, "Good, you're a very interesting person, your courage not small…"

Just as he said the word 'small', the whip in his palm flew out.

The whip was black and shiny, made of unknown material, but it's weight quite heavy. The man in black's strength was not little as well, and the whip flew out, steady and heavy, the sound of the whip whistling through the air.

But Xiao Yu'er caught the whip with a stretch of his hand and said with a smile,

“Friend might not know that rats may cause me a headache, but humans, I am not afraid of them.”

The expression on the man in black had already changed, and was trying to snatch his whip back but the whip seemed to have attached itself to Xiao Yu’er’s hands. He used all his strength but could not even move it an inch.

Xiao Yu’er said with a grin, “The rats don’t know me, and I don’t know the rats, so even if you catch and eat all the rats in the world, I won’t bother about you. But if you have other intentions, I won’t be courteous.”

The man in black said with a cold smile, “If you don’t find trouble with us, we won’t find trouble with you, but if you’re thinking of blocking our path, we will not be courteous!” As soon as he finished speaking, his mouth suddenly emitted the sound of the bamboo flute again.

The two men in black next to him opened the door to the steel cages in their hands and the rats that were packed in the cages all scurried out like arrows.

Xiao Yu’er was startled, tens and hundreds of rats were climbing onto him, squeaking and biting. Xiao Yu’er was both shocked and disgusted, and he can’t shake or chase them off. He had no choice but to release the grip on the hand holding the whip.

Five whips immediately made their way towards him.

There were rats all over Xiao Yu’er’s body, how could he have fought the whips, so he could only dodge and retreat, and kept shouting, “Xuanyuan Sanguang, aren’t you coming to help?” But Xuanyuan Sanguang’s face had already turned green. He hesitated for a moment before walking over slowly.

The man in black said fiercely, “Xuanyuan Sanguang, since you have already guessed who we’re under, do you still dare to strike?”

Xuanyuan Sanguang was startled, and actually retreated. Xiao Yu’er shouted, “Xuanyuan Sanguang, are you like a woman, afraid of rats?”

Xuanyuan Sanguang might as well turned his head away, refusing to look at him.

The rats on Xiao Yu'er's body were not getting any lesser, in fact, it was getting more. He felt pain, itch and numb, and who knows how many bites had the rats taken out of him. That five silver whips were flogging towards him like poisonous snakes. By now Xiao Yu'er is truly anxious.

No matter what he met, he'll always have a way to deal with it, but these body full of furry rats were turning him into a frenzy and he does not know what to do at all.

Jiang Yu Lang can't help but laugh loudly, "For someone who thinks he's the smartest in the world, and he can't even deal with rats… Jiang Xiao Yu, would you have expected to die in the hands of rats."

Xiao Yu'er has already suffered a few lashes of the whips, and can't help but heave a long sigh, "I really did not expect…"

Suddenly, a shadow flashed past, and someone held a man in black by his neck and threw him out from behind, the whip in his hand snatched away as well.

The other four men in black exclaimed in alarm, and four whips lashed out at this person, but without knowing why, the whips seem to disobey them. Your whip lashing at me, my whip lashing at you. The four of them were actually fighting amongst themselves.

Xiao Yu'er laughed loudly, "Hua Wu Que, I did not think that you'll actually come."

The person who came is naturally Hua Wu Que, beside his 'Shifting Flower Grafting Jade' martial arts, who else can make the four of them hit themselves.

On seeing him, Xiao Yu'er naturally heaved a sigh of relief. On seeing him, Jiang Yu Lang was also very happy, thinking that Hua Wu Que is saving Xiao Yu'er so

that he can kill him personally.

Hua Wu Que's whip danced about, chasing all the rats on Xiao Yu'er's body away.

The five men in black were all shocked stiff, their tongues tied, and looking at Hua Wu Que numbly, not daring to lash out with the whips on their hands.

The leader of the men in black asked dazedly, "Who might friend be? Why are you interfering?"

Hua Wu Que replied calmly, "Even if you do not know me, shouldn't you know my martial arts?"

The man in black thought for a while, and his expression changed, "Shifting… Shifting Flower Grafting Jade." The man in black stamped his feet and exclaimed, "Since the people from Floral Palace are here, I can only take my leave."

Xiao Yu'er laughed, "You've caused my body to be full of rat droppings, and you're thinking of leaving now?"

That man in black said with an icy smile, "I'm afraid it's not up to you to say such words, just based on you… humph!" Hua Wu Que asked, "Are you looking down on him?"

Hua Wu Que smiled slightly and said, "Since that is the case, without the help from rats, why don't you have another fight with him. It doesn't matter if the five of you attack together, I will not strike."

The man in black sniggered, "If you do not strike, this lad…"

Before he could finish his words, Xiao Yu'er had already struck out with his fist. He obviously saw Xiao Yu'er's punch coming towards him, but he just could not dodge it. Before he could even flick his whip, his body was already flying out from the punch.

The other four men in black pounced at the same time, but Xiao Yu'er made a few false moves and in a short moment the five were staggering from his beatings, their faces bruised. Hua Wu Que said with a slight smile, "Do you know his capability now?"

None of the five men in black could speak at this point in time, they were all lying on the ground, unable to get up. Xiao Yu'er laughed loudly, "I did not expect you to be worse than rats, can't even take a beating." The men in black dare not reply, nor move.

Xuanyuan Sanguang kept making eye and hand signals at Xiao Yu'er, his intention to ask Xiao Yu'er to let them go. Xiao Yu'er furrowed his brows and said, "My hands are not painful anymore, stand up quickly."

Not only did the men in black not stand up, but their bodies huddled up into a ball instead.

Xiao Yu'er laughed loudly and said, "Five adults, and you still have the cheek to laze on the ground, don't tell me you're waiting for your Teacher's Wife to come and carry you up?"

The men in black were originally trembling, but now they were not moving at all.

Xuanyuan Sanguang hurriedly made his way over, dragged a man up, with with only one look, his expression changed. He slowly put the man in black down and sighed, "I'm afraid they will never be able to stand."

Once Xuanyuan Sanguang touched their bodies, fresh blood oozed out from their mouths, noses, eyes and ears, and even those blood were a scary blue.

Xiao Yu'er was stunned, "The five of them only suffered a few punches, don't tell me they're so upset they had to commit suicide?"

Hua Wu Que said with furrowed brows, "Maybe they thought that you would not let them off, so they…"

Xiao Yu’er stamped his feet and exclaimed, “Even if they made my body to be full of rat droppings, I won’t kill them. Could these people have eaten too many rat meat, and became as narrow minded as rats.”

Xuanyuan Sanguang said with a bitter laugh, “These son of turtles died just like that, and they died really quickly.”

Xiao Yu’er said, “That’s right, could it be they hid poison in their mouths, ever ready to die.”

Xuanyuan Sanguang furrowed his brows and squatted, turning over the mouth of the man in black. Immediately there was a ghastly blue liquid as think as ink flowed out from his mouth, emitting a nauseating stink.

Xuanyuan Sanguang sighed, “You’re right, these bastards actually hid the poison in their teeth.”

Xiao Yu’er said with furrowed brows, “But why do they want to commit suicide? I have no intention of killing them, or forcing them to talk, could it be that they’re tired of living?”

Xuanyuan Sanguang searched the body of the man in black and only found a few taels of silver and nothing else, not even a handkerchief.

These people actually did not bring anything with them except for silver.

Xuanyuan Sanguang thought for a moment, and suddenly tore the body’s clothes, and exclaimed hoarsely, “The matter that you cannot understand, the answer is right here.”

On the chest of the man in black, were surprisingly ten large words.

These ten ghastly blue words seemed to be burned using phosphorus, and almost burnt to the bone, the scar embedded deeply in the flesh, so that there is no way it can be removed. The ten words are, ‘The followers of Wu Ya, rather be

killed than humiliated'.

Xiao Yu'er muttered, "The followers of Toothless Gate, rather be killed than humiliated… what kind of a daft meaning is this?"

Xuanyuan Sanguang sighed, "This means that when they cannot defeat others, they should kill themselves quickly so that they will not disgrace their master. If they do not commit suicide now, their deaths would be ten times more horrible when they go back."

Xiao Yu'er asked, "You mean they were afraid of their master's torture when they return, that's why they'd rather commit suicide now, correct?"

Xuanyuan Sanguang affirmed, "Exactly."

Xiao Yu'er said, "But they got a beating here, their master doesn't know at all, as long as they don't say it out, would I have said it out instead?"

Xuanyuan Sanguang replied, "These son of turtles may be measuring the actions of a gentleman with the heart of a scoundrel, and thought that you…"

Hua Wu Que suddenly interrupted, "That is not the reason."

Xiao Yu'er asked, "What would you say is the reason?"

Hua Wu Que slowly replied, "When I saw them, there were originally seven of them."

Xuanyuan Sanguang clapped his hands, "That's right, the five of them came in, and left two in a secret place. That two saw that the situation was not right, and might have slipped away secretly. The five of them deduced that they would surely return to report, so instead of suffering at a later time, they might as well have a clean death now."

Xiao Yu'er stared at Hua Wu Que, "When you came in, didn't you see the other

two?”

Hua Wu Que said with a bitter smile, “I heard your shouts and dashed immediately in, I did not notice anything else.”

Xiao Yu’er suddenly slapped his own head and shouted, “Oh no, we’ve actually been muddled by these stupid rats that five, six living humans slipped away from us without us actually knowing.”

Xuanyuan Sanguang glanced around and also exclaimed hoarsely, “That’s right, that little bastard Jiang has slipped off.”

Xiao Yu’er stamped his feet and said, “When you came in, I still saw him, at that time he seemed to look very happy, thinking that you’re here to kill me. Later he must have realized that the situation is not right so he immediately escaped… ai, this lad has always been an imp, I should have specifically kept a close watch on him.”

Hua Wu Que was silent for a moment, and with a small smile, said, “It might be good that he left on his own accord.”

Xiao Yu’er stared at him “You saw him earlier, right?”

Hua Wu Que replied, “I seemed to have caught a glance.”

“But you still let him leave.”

Hua Wu Que sighed, “No matter what we were once acquainted…”

Xiao Yu’er shouted, “Then why did you let him take Murong Jiu with him?”

End of Chapter 71

Chapter 61

Chapter 72

Hua Wu Que heard Xiao Yu'er mention that Murong Jiu had already been taken away by Jiang Yu Lang and can't help but feel startled, "Miss Murong?…. Was Miss Murong with him as well?"

Xiao Yu'er asked, "You… you didn't see her?"

Hua Wu Que was stumped, and replied "I only saw a girl next to him, but I didn't think she would be Miss Murong. At that time I was only concerned about you, and the light here is so dim, I did not take a clear look at her face."

Xuanyuan Sanguang suddenly slapped Xiao Yu'er's shoulder and said, "But the girl who came out with you would slip away as well?"

Xiao Yu'er furrowed his brow, "That's right! Why did she slip away as well? Could it be she's afraid of seeing Hua Wu Que?"

Hua wu Que asked, "Who is this girl?"

Xiao Yu'er replied, "Her name is Tie Ping Gu…. Do you know her?"

"I've never even heard of this name."

Xiao Yu'er tapped his head with his finger and mused, "Since you do not recognise her, why did she escape? I really cannot fathom…"

Tie Ping Gu really did have a reason, and her reason is extremely valid.

Hua Wu Que knew her originally, he have not heard of the name ‘Tie Ping Gu’, is because her name was not Tie Ping Gu then. Tie Ping Gu would naturally recognize Hua Wu Que.

Once she saw Hua Wu Que, her expression immediately changed and turned her head instantly, until she was sure that Hua Wu Que did not notice her did she slip away with the greatest speed.

By now it’s close to dusk, the setting sun lighting up the sky, reflecting on the lush green mountain, the slight breeze carried a fragrance. Tie Ping Gu took a deep breath, and could not describe how she felt.

For over ten years, this is the first time she got her freedom, the first time she could stand on her own. She can do whatever she wants, can go wherever she wants. But instead she does not know what to do. Jiang Yu Lang followed her and slipped out. He was originally happy when he saw Hua Wu Que, but he saw that the way Hua Wu Que looked at Xiao Yu’er had changed and immediately felt that things were not right.

Jiang Yu Lang also felt strange that Tie Ping Gu would slip away. Once Tie Ping Gu revealed her skills, Jiagn Yu Lang was even more surprised.

This young girls excellent lightness skill may be surprising, but the weirdest thing is in the way that she flew, with a uniquely dignified pose, which bears some semblance to Hua Wu Que’s extraordinary moves.

Jiang Yu Lang’s eyes immediately narrowed. He was surprised, bewildered, and with a roll of his eyes, he immediately dragged Murong Jiu and gave chase.

Jiang Yu Lang will never let any opportunity go, but he did not realize that, the praying mantis is hunting the cicada, but the canary is right behind. There were two more people following him.

By the time Xiao Yu’er, Hua Wu Que and Xuanyuan Sanguang came out, besides a few bodies, there was not a living being there.

Xiao Yu’er looked at the bodies and sighed, “These people may have been brought here by Jiang Yu Lang, but Jiang Yu Lang could abandon and not bother about them, but we…”

Xuanyuan Sanguang said, “You don’t have to bother about such things, burying the dead, is my expertise.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “Then what do you want me to do?”

Xuanyuan Sanguang sighed, “You have to make preparations to deal with someone you’ve never met before, the most poisonous, evil, nauseating and also the most headache inducing enemy.”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “Are you referring to that toothless (Wu Ya) lad!”

Xuanyuan Sanguang replied, “I am referring exactly to Wei Wu Ya.”

Xiao Yu’er said, “I did not kill those five people.”

Xuanyuan Sanguang retorted, “Do you think he’s very reasonable! As long as you have some brush against his men, he’ll never finish with you.”

Xiao Yu’er took a deep breath and said, “You’ve made this ‘toothless’ person out to be so formidable, who is he exactly!”

Xuanyuan Sanguang asked, “Have you heard of the name ‘Twelve Zodiacs’! He is the Rat in the Twelve Zodiacs…”

Xiao Yu’er guffawed, “I thought who you were referring to, so it’s the Twelve Zodiacs… I’ve also had my fair share of experiences with those in the Twelve Zodiacs, but they can’t seem to do anything to me.”

Xuanyuan Sanguang replied, “The reason why the Twelve Zodiacs became famous, is because of Wei Wu Ya. When they were at the peak of their fame, when people in the martial arts realm hear of the words ‘Twelve Zodiacs’, they

won’t be able to sleep at night. At that time I’m afraid you were not even born.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “Looking at the way you say it, I’m lucky that I was not born early.”

Xuanyuan Sanguang continued, “Don’t talk about others, even us ‘Ten Evils’, even though we’re not afraid of anything, but when we hear the three words ‘Wei Wu Ya’, we’ll still get a headache for a few days.”

Only now was Xiao Yu’er moved, and said, “A character that can cause even the Ten Evils to have headaches, he must be of some calibre.”

Hua Wu Que suddenly said, “I’ve heard of this name as well.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “Could it be that Floral Palace is also having headaches over him.”

Hua Wu Que replied slowly, “When I left the Palace, my Teacher wants me to specially take note of two people, one of which is Wei Wu Ya.”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “What about the other one?”

Hua Wu Que replied with a bitter smile, “Another person is Yan Nan Tian, Hero Yan.”

Xiao Yu’er was silent for a moment before asking, “Where is he now?”

Xuanyuan Sanguang replied, “The Twelve Zodiacs could not raise their heads high these recent years, is because Wei Wu Ya suddenly disappeared ten over years ago. Some said he was injured by the Floral Palace Princess, so he went into hiding. Others said that he was practicing a mysterious form of martial arts, so he did not wish to see others….”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “Where do you think… he will hide himself?”

Xuanyuan Sanguang replied with a sigh, “If he wants to hide, I’m afraid even ghosts won’t be able to find him.”

Xiao yu’er furrowed his brows and mumbled, “Could it be that he’s hiding at Turtle Hill… the person those ‘Harm others without benefit to oneself’ brothers said before they died, could it be him…”

He suddenly slapped Xuanyuan Sanguang’s shoulders and asked with a smile, “After you bury the dead, what else are you thinking of doing?”

Xuanyuan Sanguang replied, “I actually wanted to find someone and have a gamble, but once I remember that Wei Wu Ya has appeared again, I’ve actually lost my interest for gambling.”

Xiao Yu’er said, “Then I shall trouble you to send the silver in the cave to Duan He Fei, and tell Duan He Fei who was the person who kept these silver.”

He continued with a smile, “It doesn’t matter if you return him the silver and then win it back from him. Duan He Fei loves to fight crickets, and loves to eat meat, if you gamble meat eating with him, he’ll certainly oblige.”

Even if Xuanyuan Sanguang wanted to decline, it’s too late. Before Xiao Yu’er had even finished his words, he’d already dragged Hua Wu Que and left like the wind.

Xuanyuan Sanguang could only shake his head and with a bitter laugh, said “Damn, it’s really not darn easy to reject what Jiang Xiao Yu ask you to do.”

As Xiao Yu’er walked, he related what had happened to him.

Naturally Hua Wu Que was surprised on hearing it, and even he does not know what plans this ‘Mr Copper’ has, and can’t help but start to feel suspicious about Mr Copper’s background.

When he related what had happened to him, Xiao Yu’er also felt surprise, and can’t help but ask, “Since Hero Yan will only let you off after I’ve been found,

then why is it that you're alone now? Where has he gone to?"

Hua Wu Que replied, "I don't know why but these two days, I suddenly felt uneasy, as if some catastrophe is about to happen. I've never felt anything like this in my life."

Xiao Yu'er laughed, "The one facing a catastrophe the last two days is me, why would you feel uneasy, that's really weird."

Hua Wu Que answered, "I guess Hero Yan also noticed that I was looking a little out of sorts, so he asked me what I wanted to do, and I told him I would like to come out for a walk… I had thought that Hero Yan would not agree, but who would have known that he actually did"

Xiao Yu'er asked hoarsely, "You want to go, and he just let you leave!"

"That's right."

Xiao Yu'er sighed, "Yan Nan Tian is really Yan Nan Tian, really different from that Mr Copper. To tell you the truth, to meet someone like him, is your great fortune."

Hua Wu Que kept silent. When he respects someone in his heart, he won't say it out, besides, the person whom he respects is Floral Palace's enemy."

Xiao Yu'er suddenly laughed, "But you're truly a gentleman as well, that's why he's assured. If the person he met was me, I'm afraid he won't let me off so easily too."

Hua Wu Que smiled and asked, "Why do you think that you're not a gentleman?"

Xiao Yu'er was silent for a moment, and said slowly, "Maybe because I've never seen a gentleman since I was young, I don't even know what a gentleman is like, and by the time I see one or two gentleman, they always disappoint me…"

Hua Wu Que smiled, “Hero Yan is still waiting for me, you…”

Xiao Yu’er suddenly interrupted, “When you see him, don’t say that you’ve seen me, all right?”

Hua Wu Que was puzzled, “Why? Aren’t you coming with me to see him?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “I… I was thinking of going to Turtle Hill, but he will certainly not allow me to go.”

Hua Wu Que was even more puzzled, “You want to go to Turtle Hill? Why?”

“I’m going to save some people.”

Hua Wu Que was stunned, “Could they be the Ten Evils? But they… but they….”

Xiao Yu’er said with a bitter smile, “They may not be good people, but I was brought up by them. It doesn’t matter if I don’t know about this matter, but since I know it now, I cannot not bother, besides… I want to find that Tie Ping Gu on the way as well. Her martial arts may be good, but she has never left her home, she won’t know the dangers of the world and could be tricked anytime. Since she saved me once, at least I have to save her once too…” He made a monkey face and laughed, “You must know, the feeling of owing a debt to a woman is never good.”

Tie Ping Gu also doesn’t know if it was the fragrance of cooking that lured her here, anyway, she had entered this small town, and realized that she is famished. Although she also ate something in that cave, but when a person has been hungry for two, three days, how could her hunger be satiated be easily. The table which the dishes were placed, were shining with a layer of grease under the light, more than ten green headed flies were flying around the table full of dishes.

This kind of place, usually even if there’s an eight men carriage carrying her here, Tie Ping Gu would not go in, but now, she’d crawl in even if she has to. The way Tie Ping Gu looks now, really does not resemble a good guest.

Her face is full of dirt and sweat, her hair messy like a bird's nest, her clothes dirty and torn. Even if she does not look like a prisoner who has just escaped from her cell, she looks like an escaped mistress from a wealthy family. A pity that she is also like most of the other people in the world, who only saw the dirt on others, but never their own.

There were only three guests in the shop, all were staring at her with big eyes, but Tie Ping Gu could not fathom why these people were looking at her.

The shop staff finally walked over and said with a forced smile, "Would Miss like a bowl of noodles? Our shop's Yangchun Noodles is half a catty (about 300g) per bowl."

Tie Ping Gu took a deep breath and said, "Noodles, I'm not used to eating it. Give me a roasted chicken, a plate of fish fillets, a plate of fried potatoes, half a slab of ham with the skin removed and steamed, add a little rock sugar, a bowl of bamboo shoots and mushroom soup… oh, that's right, give me some of those braised vegetables on the tray over there."

These dishes, to her, were really quite ordinary. She already felt that she's doing an injustice to herself. With her voracious appetite now, she almost could eat a horse.

But the three guests at the side, on hearing her say such a long string of dishes, burst out into laughter. Even the shop staff was staring with big round eyes and scratching his head.

Tie Ping Gu stared at him and said, "Why, don't your shop even have these few dishes?"

The shop staff said slowly, "We have these dishes, but our shop also has a rule!"

Tie Ping Gu asked, "What rule?"

“Our shop survives on a small profit margin, we can’t afford to be owed money, so all guests who come will have to pay first.”

Tie Ping Gu was stunned. Why would she be carrying silver taels, she only knows that silver taels are dirty and heavy, she absolutely did not think that they would be so useful.

The shop staff smiled a superficial smile and said, “A meal has to be paid for, doesn’t Miss know this rule?”

The three guests at the side laughed loudly, and one of them said with a laugh, “Why don’t Miss come over this table here and eat with us. We may not have roasted chicken here, but there’s still half a duck head left, you can make do with it and take it with wine.”

Tie Ping Gu only wished that she had never been born, never walked into this ghastly place. She felt that although it feels bad sitting here, but walking out like that would be an even bigger loss of face, so much so that she is at a loss as to what to do next.

Jiang Yu Lang walked in right at this time, he has really chosen a great time.

He walked to Tie Ping Gu and bowed respectfully, in his hands he held ten over shiny yellow golden spindles, saying with a smile, “Uncle knows that Cousin had come out in a hurry and may not have brought enough money, so he asked me to send some pocket money over.”

The shop staff was immediately stunned, the three guests at the side were stunned as well.

The most stunned, naturally is Tie Ping Gu. Of course she recognizes Jiang Yu Lang as the bad egg that Xiao Yu’er was talking about, but she could not guess what this is all about.

She could only look on as Jiang Yu Lang sat next to her. Murong Jiu is like a puppet, smiling dazedly, sitting down with him dazedly. However that shop staff

became very cute, bending his back, with a smile, sending dishes and wine. In an instant, the table was filled with food.

Jiang Yu Lang used the hot tea to wash Tie Ping Gu's chopsticks and said with a smile, "This braised vegetable is quite fresh, Cousin why don't you just make do and eat some first."

Tie Ping Gu now suddenly has a 'cousin', and she really doesn't know whether to be angry or to laugh. However, Jiang Yu Lang really understands a girl's heart. When Tie Ping Gu was at her most embarrassed, he helped her regained her face, so how could Tie Ping Gu not feel gratitude. After the meal, Tie Ping Gu paid up grandly, and she can't help but feel happy about it. But as for the remaining gold, she is embarrassed to take it.

She has not spoken a single word to Jiang Yu Lang, and is still ignoring him now, and walked out on her own. Since Jiang Xiao Yu dislike this person, then this person must be nothing good. Tie Ping Gu walked in front, Jiang Yu Lang followed behind. Tie Ping Gu finally can't help but ask, "What else do you want?"

Jiang Yu Lang said with a smile, "I was only afraid that Miss would find it inconvenient wandering on your own, so I thought to offer some help to Miss."

Tie Ping Gu replied, "You don't have to bother about my affairs." She may be saying it, but her heart has already been touched.

There were people walking up and down the streets, but none of whom she recognize. The lights in the distance were getting less and less, the darkness even scarier.

She really does not know where to go. She suddenly realized that if a person wants to live a carefree life in this world, it's really not as easy as they imagined.

Jiang Yu Lang did not make any noise for a long time, could he have gone? Tie Ping Gu suddenly realized that she's afraid that he will be gone.

She hurriedly turned her head, Jiang Yu Lang was still following behind her with

a grin.

Although she heaved a sigh of relief in her heart, but yet she shouted, “Why are you still following me?”

Jiang Yu Lang said with a smile, “The sky is getting dark, doesn’t Miss want to take a rest?”

Tie Ping Gu chewed on her lips. She’s really tired, but where should she rest?

Jiang Yu Lang’s eyes shone, and he smiled, “Even if Miss does not wish me to follow you, at least let me help Miss find an inn.”

This time, Tie Ping Gu is unable to say anything to reject him.

But once an inn was found, Tie Ping Gu immediately closed the door solemnly, and said loudly, “You can leave now, the further the better.”

This time Jiang Yu Lang was actually very obedient. Tie Ping Gu waited for a while and did not hear anything from him and laid on the bed, heaving a sigh of relief.

She thought of Jiang Xiao yu, thought of Hua Wu Que, and thought of Jiang Yu Lang… why is Jiang Xiao Yu at odds with him? He doesn’t seem to be too bad a person. But Tie Ping Gu is really too tired, and she slept suddenly.

Once she woke up the second day, she immediately felt extremely hungry.

There were a few times Tie Ping Gu wanted to ask someone to send food, but she stopped herself each time. The more she wanted to bear with the hunger, the more she could not do it.

Suddenly she heard a waiter outside say with a smile, “Master Jiang has asked me to send Miss your breakfast, will Miss be eating now?”

After she's eaten, Tie Ping Gu finally realized how scary she looks now. She wished she could throw the mirror on the table far away, her whole body feeling numb.

Right at this time, the waiter returned again. This time he carried many pieces of beautiful and soft new clothes, a set of exquisite combs, expensive rouges, soft shoes and socks. These things, can Tie Ping Gu reject them?

When Tie Ping Gu has changed into these clothes and cleaned herself up, Jiang Yu Lang's voice appeared, "I wonder if I can come in?"

Now, Tie Ping Gu's stomach is filled with food sent by him, on her body is the clothes and shoes sent by him, can she not let him come in?

By lunchtime that day, Jiang Yu Lang naturally had not left, and Tie Ping Gu no longer had to intention to ask him to leave. Now, she only feels that she really cannot do without him.

This naturally is also a small inn, and in the small dining hall of the small inn, there's only the two of them. According to Jiang Yu Lang, "That Miss Murong is not feeling well, that's why she's not yet awake."

Actually, Jiang Yu Lang had sealed her sleeping acupoint, and wrapped her up in her blanket. She may be just a puppet, but Jiang Yu Lang is also not willing for her to come and disturb them.

Naturally there won't be any great dishes in a small inn, but Jiang Yu Lang still ordered a table of food, and two flasks of wine, and said with a smile, "If Miss does not object, I'll like to have a little drink."

Tie Ping Gu did not reply, but when the wine came, she snatched over the flask, poured a huge cup to the brim and drank it up in a gulp. She only felt a burning and hot sensation, spilling down her throat, so burning that she her tears almost flowed. When has she ever drank before.

Jiang Yu Lang was secretly laughing on seeing this but instead he said, "If Miss

has not drank before, it's best that you do not drink, if you were to become drunk…. Ai." His face was a pretense of sincerity, as if he's really concerned that Tie Ping Gu would become drunk. Actually he can't wait for her to be dead drunk immediately.

Tie Ping Gu lifted her head and drank another cup, Jiang Yu Lang sat next to her sighing, but he was actually extremely happy.

After drinking a cup of wine, Tie Ping Gu only felt her whole body was warm and comfortable, and felt like flying. By the time she drank the fourth cup, she only felt that this 'wine' is really the best drink in the world, and did not think that's it's spicy or bitter. By her fifth cup, she had already forgotten all her troubles.

By now Jiang Yu Lang is really pouring the wine for her. Jiang Yu Lang smiled and said, "I did not expect Miss to be such a good drinker, come, let me offer Miss another toast."

Tie Ping Gu drank another cup, and suddenly stared at Jiang Yu Lang, asking "Are you really a good person, or a bad person?"

Jiang Yu Lang replied with a slight smile, "Does Miss think that I look like a bad person?"

Tie Ping Gu furrowed her brows, "You don't look like one, but… why did Jiang Xiao Yu said you're nothing good."

Jiang Yu Lang asked with a bitter smile, "Is Miss very well acquainted with him?"

Tie Ping Gu replied, "Not too bad…. Not really acquainted."

"If Miss were to find out what he is like in future, you would understand… ai, that Miss Murong, if not for him, she would not have become like that."

Tie Ping Gu was stunned for a while, and poured another cup and gulped it

down.

Jiang Yu Lang smiled, “With such atmosphere, I really shouldn’t mention such troubling matters.”

Tie Ping Gu suddenly laughed foolishly, “That’s right, we should talk about happier things. What happy things do you have to say, say it quickly. I’ll drink a cup for every happy thing that you say.”

What talent does Jiang Yu Lang have, if he wants to talk about happy things, he won’t be able to finish even if he talked for three days and nights. He spoke about one matter after another, Tie Ping Gu drank one cup after another, laughing as she drank.

Later she was still laughing even when Jiang Yu Lang had stopped talking, and even later, she couldn’t even laugh if she wanted to. She slipped down from the chair, unable to get up.

Jiang Yu Lang’s eyes gleamed, and tested, “Can Miss still hear me?” Tie Ping Gu can’t even make a sound.

Jiang Yu Lang pulled her up from under the table and felt that her whole body is so limp as if there’s not a bone in her body. If Jiang Yu Lang wants her to go east, she’ll go east, if he wants her to go west, she’ll go west.

Suddenly someone laughed loudly, “Excellent planning indeed, Brother, I am really impressed.”

Jiang Yu Lang was startled and he put Tie Ping Gu down before he suddenly turned around. He saw two people, one tall and one short, walking in with booming laughter.

End of Chapter 72

Chapter 62

Chapter 73

The light in the little hall was very dim. These two people, one tall and one short, standing in the gloomy shadow, were actually emanating an inexplicable eerie feeling. Their looks were not exceptionally special, but the expression, the posture, the eerie blue eyes, it's as if they do not live on this world at all.

Jiang Yu Lang's heart had already tied into a knot, but he showed no expression on his face, and said with a slight smile, "Are the two of you referring to me?"

The short person said with a silly laugh, "I have also seen numerous flirts, play boys, but if we're talking about tactics to handle women, none of them were half as good as Brother here."

Jiang Yu Lang laughed heartily, "Your ability to tell jokes, is indeed marvelous."

The short person said with a creepy laugh, "Now this Miss is in Brother's hands, now that we see that Brother will soon have warm, soft body in your arms, won't Brother let my brother and me be happy as well?"

The tall person said coldly, "What we mean, is that if Brother would like to have a good time, you have to give us brothers some benefits as well, or else…"

Jiang Yu Lang rolled his eyes, and he said with a wide smile, "Could it be that the two of you want a share as well?"

The short person laughed, "That we wouldn't dare, just that since Brother has a new person, then the Miss in the blanket, you should at least give to us

brothers.”

Jiang Yu Lang laughed loudly, “So the two of you really do know quite a bit.”

The tall person replied coolly, “To be honest, ever since Brother started following this Miss, your every move has been seen clearly by us.”

Jiang Yu Lang laughed loudly, “Marvelous, marvelous. I did not expect Brothers to be so interested in me. Please take a seat quickly, and allow me to offer a toast to the two of you.”

The tall person said, “Wine, we could use, but the snacks to go with the wine, my brother and I carry it with us.” He actually took out a rat from his sleeve, put it in his mouth and started chewing.

Jiang Yu Lang was stunned, and laughed, “So you are from the same place as that five friends, no wonder you are so well-informed about me.”

The tall person said icily, “Besides wanting to ask Brother to give us Miss Murong, we would also like to find out from Brother about something!”

“What thing?”

The eyes of the tall person gleamed murderously, and said “The three people in the cave, who are they really? And how are they related to you?”

Jiang Yu Lang beamed, “Those three people, one is named Xuanyuan Sanguang, one is named Jiang Xiao Yu, one is named Hua Wu Que. Since the two of you saw what happened, you should know that they are my enemies?”

That person smiled sinisterly, “Good, very good.”

Jiang Yu Lang tried to test them, “Those five friends earlier, could they have been….”

That person exclaimed, “That’s right, they’ve been killed by them!”

Jiang Yu Lang heaved a sigh of relief, and added, “So this means that, we have a common enemy, I really should offer the two of you a toast.”

That person said, “Very good, after Brother has drank this wine, then come with us!”

The short person continued, “As for this Miss, during the journey Brother could always…. Haha, my brother and I will certainly prepare a comfortable and large horse carriage for Brother.”

Jiang Yu Lang asked in surprise, “Where does the two of you want me to go?”

That person smiled, “We would like to trouble Brother to come back with us, so that we can lure those three people.”

Jiang Yu Lang suddenly laughed, “Your meaning, I have fully understood. Since the two of you are thinking of luring the three of them for revenge, it will also be beneficial to me, so why would I not agree?”

The short person laughed loudly, “Brother is really an understanding person, we should offer you a toast as well.”

The tall and short person lifted their cups and emptied it in one gulp.

But they have just lifted their heads, the wine has yet to go down their throats, and Jiang Yu Lang’s cup has already flown out with a ‘whoosh’, hitting on the tall person’s throat. That person roared, the wine spurted out from his nose and he fell over.

The short person was startled, and before he could react, Jiang Yu Lang’s palms had already struck out like lightning.

His skills may not be as good as Xiao Yu’er’s, but it was vicious enough. There

were two sounds of ‘pak, pak’ and the short person fell down as well.

Jiang Yu Lang smacked his hands and said with a cold smile, “Just the two of you and you want to bring me away, you’re still far from it.”

The two of them laid straightly on the ground, unmoving, but they were not dead yet. Jiang Yu Lang only sealed their acupoints. Tie Ping Gu slid down from the chair again. In this darkening dusk, her rosy cheeks really looked cuter than anything else. Therefore he called loudly to the staff to carry his ‘two drunk friends’ to the room next door, together with that ‘sick lady’. Although the two of them don’t look drunk at all, but most waiters are smart people, and know when they should open their eyes and when they should shut them.

The waiter left the lighted accounts room, and stood in the little dark courtyard. Of course he did not come to eavesdrop on others intentionally, but if some slight noise were to come from this room, he would of course not cover his ears. He did not want to be a gentleman.

It’s just like a turtle who met with something, and hid his head in his shell. As long as he doesn’t see it, he feels at ease.

By now, Tie Ping Gu has sobered.

She only felt her whole body in pain, in so much pain that it seems like it’s splitting, and she’s also having a headache. Alcohol has become like a little ghost, sawing through her brain from the inside.

Then, she suddenly realized a sleeping Jiang Yu Lang lying next to her. She used all her strength and screamed. She used all her strength and pushed Jiang Yu Lang down.

Jiang Yu Lang laid on the floor, and actually started crying! The person who should cry is someone else, but he actually did it first.

Jiang Yu Lang cried bitterly, “I know I’ve done wrong, I know I’ve let you down, I only ask that you forgive me…”

Tie Ping Gu gritted her teeth, her whole body shaking, “I… I wish I could…”

“If you hate me, then kill me, I… I really could not control myself, I was drunk too, we should not have drunk.”

He suddenly jumped up the bed and cried loudly, “I beg you to kill me, kill me, maybe I’ll feel better.”

Tie Ping Gu had originally really wanted to kill him, but now… now there was not an ounce of strength in her hands. She was originally full of sadness and hatred, full of anger, but Jiang Yu Lang actually cried first, and crying so bitterly too, that she is now at a loss.

Jiang Yu Lang peeped at the changes in her expressions through the gaps in his fingers, and sobbed even more miserably. He knows that a man’s tears, is sometimes even more useful than a woman’s.

Tie Ping Gu finally also fell on the bed, and cried bitterly. Besides crying, she has no other ideas.

Jiang Yu Lang’s eyes revealed a self-satisfied smile, but he still said through miserable cries, “What I have done may be wrong, but my heart is sincere, if you believe me, I will prove to you, I’ll never let you down in this lifetime.”

He touched Tie Ping Gu’s body again, but Tie Ping Gu did not avoid him, and naturally Jiang Yu Lang understood the meaning very well.

He suddenly hugged her tightly and cried loudly, “Either you forgive me, or kill me… you can kill me, but you cannot make me not like you, I’ll like you even in death…”

Tie Ping Gu still did not move, Jiang Yu Lang knew that he had succeeded. He leaned next to Tie Ping Gu, and uttered the world’s most gentle and sweet words, he knows that this is what she needs most right now.

Tie Ping Gu's cries really weakened, she's always been all alone, she originally felt at a loss, with no one to rely on, but now she suddenly realize that she's no longer lonely. Jiang Yu Lang couldn't help but laugh happily, and said gently, "You don't hate me anymore?"

Tie Ping Gu mustered up her courage, popped her head up, and while biting her lips, said "As long as you're telling the truth, as long as you don't forget your words today, I…" Suddenly, a shrill scream came from the room next door. Although this scream was very short, but it's enough to make one's hair stand on hearing it.

With the greatest speed that a person can make to ensure that everything is in place, Jiang Yu Lang dashed out of the room like an arrow, he seemed to have forgotten about Tie Ping Gu immediately.

Jiang Yu Lang dashed out, but he did not go into the room where the scream came from, but opened the three windows of the room first instead. Then, he lighted a lamp and threw it through the window! The oil lamp smashed onto the floor, and the flame started burning on the floor.

The flickering firelight, made this dark and damp little room look even more eerie and mysterious. He saw that Murong Jiu was still well in the blanket and unconsciously heaved a sigh of relief.

But he had not finished breathing out in relief, when he realized that that tall and short person had disappeared, they've turned into two puddles of blood!

This scene caused even Jiang Yu Lang to shiver, and yet he felt relieved.

That dangerous and cruel man, if he was here to kill these two, then why should he object or feel afraid?

By now, a person had appeared in the flickering fire.

This person's face, seems translucent under the light, so translucent that one can almost see his eerily blue skeleton.

Those eyes of his, doesn't look like human eyes, but like a kind of vicious man-eating beast who has been hungry for a few days and nights.

Jiang Yu lang is not an ignoramus, and is not easily shocked, but when he saw this person, his heart almost stopped beating! This person also stared at Jiang Yu Lang icily, and said each word slowly, "Was it you who sealed their acupoints?"

Jiang Yu lang forced out a thin smile and said, "Exactly, I was wondering what to do with them, and since you have gotten rid of them, I really do not know how to express my gratitude."

He has already realized that this person is far more dangerous that imagined, so he hurriedly tried to befriend him, but this person still stared at him coldly. He suddenly laughed, revealing snow white teeth that looked like a beast's, and said slowly, "I am their Master! They were originally my slaves!"

Jiang Yu Lang sucked in a cold breath of air, and said, "But you… killed them, not me."

That person suddenly pulled up a corpse from the blood puddle and tore off it's shirt. In the flickering firelight, there were ten shining blue words on the body: "The followers of Wu Ya, rather be killed than humiliated!"

Jiang Yu Lang almost vomited, and said hoarsely, "This… what does this mean, I don't understand."

That person said slowly, "Since these two have been humiliated by you, I can only kill them, so that they will no longer make me lose face."

Jiang Yu Lang sighed, "I've killed sometimes as well, but I've always had a very valid reason, for example…"

The fire that was burning on the ground, was suddenly extinguished, the surroundings were again as dark as a cemetery, but this person's eyes, was still shining blue in the darkness. He asked coldly, "For example what?"

Jiang Yu Lang said, “For example, when I know that someone is going to kill me, I’ll usually kill him first!”

His eyes gleamed as well, on the ready to strike anytime.

Although he strongly believed that this person is not someone to be trifled with, he also strongly believes that he himself is also not to be trifled with easily.

Who would have expected that person to laugh suddenly.

His laughter sounds like a rat gnawing on wood, causing goosebumps to rise all over one’s body. He said with a loud laugh, “When I want to kill someone, I won’t talk so much to him.” Jiang Yu Lang was surprised, “Why don’t you wish to kill me?”

That person replied coolly, “If within seven days, you can take me and find Xuanyuan Sanguang, Jiang Xiao Yu and Hua Wu Que, not only will you not die now, but you will live a long life instead."

Jiang Yu Lang sighed, “They are also my enemies, if you can kill them, naturally I’ll be very willing to bring you to look for them. A pity that it’s not an easy task to kill these three, but quite easy to be killed by them. If you failed in killing them and ended up being killed instead, won’t I be implicated as well.”

That person asked fiercely, “What would make you believe that I can kill them?”

Jiang Yu Lang replied, “That will depend on what you can do to make me believe.”

That person laughed icily, “I have more than a thousand ways to make you believe, if you would like to witness the miraculous skills of the followers of Wu Ya, I don’t mind letting you see one…”

He seemed to have waved his hand, and a type of eerie blue flame shot out,

landing on the wall. The flame was not very strong, and it extinguished immediately upon touching the wall, without burning at all. But once the flame flashed, this person is already in the courtyard. He did not fly out the window at all, but how did he get out? In Jiang Yu Lang's shock, he suddenly realized there's another large hole in the wall.

Jiang Yu Lang was shocked stiff. This person's lightness skill may be shocking, but it did not scare him. But this kind of non-burning, but destructive flame, he has really never seen it before.

This person is now next to him, his gleaming eyes staring at him, and said each word slowly, "Do you want to see anything else?"

Suddenly another person was heard laughing madly, "The marvelous skills of the followers of Wu ya, I don't think it's anything much!" Amidst the mad laughter, a shadow is already descending with the speed of a meteor.

End of Chapter 73

Chapter 63

Chapter 74

This person's shape is not extremely tall or large, but seems to be as solid as a mountain!

That follower of Wu Ya seemed to be worried about his aura, and took three steps back, saying fiercely, "Who dares to be so rude towards the followers of Wu Ya?"

"It is Yan Nan Tian!" These five words were like shooting stars, able to light up the land!

Yan Nan Tian shouted, "Who are you to Wei Wu Ya? Where is he now?"

Although that person was afraid, but he still laughed madly, "You don't have to look for my Teacher, the four head disciples of Wu Ya's followers have all wanted to look for Yan Nan Tian to exchange moves. I did not expect that I, Wei Bai Yi, would be luckier than others…"

Jiang Yu Lang suddenly exclaimed angrily, "Who are you, to have the audacity to be so rude to Hero Yan!"

Amidst the shout, he had already jumped across, striking his lightning fast palms three times at Wei Bai Yi. These three palms were brilliant and lively, and it's the orthodox moves of Wu Dang!

The Wu Dang Palm is the most popular palm moves in the martial arts realm, and Jiang Yu Lang of course is up to no good when he secretly learned this kind of palm moves.

He used al his strength in the three palm attacks, and it actually encompassed the essence of Wu Dang Palm. Wei Bai Yi laughed madly and said, “You dare to strike against me as well?”

He only knows that he can fight off Jiang Yu Lang with only two or three moves, but he does not know that Jiang Yu Lang may be a coward, but he is definitely not a fool.

He actually belittled Jiang Yu Lang’s martial arts. Suddenly, Jiang Yu Lang gained the upper hand, and he was unable to change circumstances back in his favor.

Jiang Yu Lang knows that Yan Nan Tian will definitely not let him be disadvantaged, and with Yan Nan Tian supporting at the side, what else is there to be afraid of. The bolder he is, the faster his moves. Wei Bai Yi’s martial arts may be strange and vicious, but there was nothing he could do to him.

Suddenly Wei Bai Yi’s body started turning, four to five eerie blue flames suddenly shot out! But it could not be seen where they are being shot!

Yan Nan Tian roared, and a gush of air from his palm flew out, pushing Jiang Yu Lang’s body away, shattering apart the eerie blue flames, and causing Wei Bai Yi to stagger back a few steps.

By now the roar has become a loud cry, and amidst the cry, Yan Nan Tian’s body had leaped into the air like a dancing roc. Wei Bai Yi lifted his head and looked up, his bravado completely deserted, by the time he thought of hiding, there is no way he can hide. He roared madly and blood spurted out from his mouth, and fell down, facing heavenward!

Yan Nan Tian grabbed him by his collar and asked angrily, “Where is Wei Wu Ya?”

Wei Bai Yi opened his eyes, looked at Yan Nan Tian and replied with an sly smile, “The followers of Wu Ya, rather be killed than humiliated…”

This time when he opened his mouth to talk, there is already a putrid blue liquid flowing out of his mouth, and when he finished saying these ten words, he can never say another word again.

Yan Nan Tian let him down and said with a long sigh, “It’s unexpected that the followers of Wei Wu Ya, would be such vicious and mad disciples…”

He suddenly turned towards Jiang Yu Lang and said with a broad smile, “But you… are you a disciple of Wu Dang?”

Only now did Jiang Yu Lang regain his thoughts, and immediately bowed and said with a smile, “Disciple of Wu Dang, Jiang Yu Lang, pays his respects to Elder.”

Yan Nan Tian helped him up and laughed loudly, “Good, good, that the orthodox sects will have such an outstanding disciple like you, even if they were to recruit a few more madmen, I would not worry.”

Jiang Yu Lang’s expression became even more respectful, and said with a bow, “But if not for Elder who coincidentally happened to be here today, disciple would have lost his life.”

When he said the word ‘coincidentally’, his heart was full of delight, for if Yan Nan Tian had come a moment earlier, had heard a few more words of his, right now he could be lying together with Wei Bai Yi on the floor.

Yan Nan Tian said with a smile, “This is really a coincidence, if not for the fact that I have arranged to meet my little friend here, I wouldn’t be here as well.”

He slapped Jiang Yu Lang’s shoulder and laughed loudly, “His name is Hua Wu Que, if you have been roaming in the martial arts realm these recent years, you would have heard this name.”

Jiang Yu Lang’s expression did not change and said with a smile, “Junior have not left the mountains for long, as to the heroes in the martial arts realm, I’m still not that familiar.”

He had been looking out, and until now, there were still no movement from Tie Ping Gu, and this made him secretly heave a sigh of relief. He continued, “When disciple arrived just now, that Wei Bai Yi was about to strike a Miss Murong, this lady is still lying in the room right now, would Elder want to take a look.”

Yan Nan Tian’s expression changed, “Miss Murong? … could she be from the Murong Family.” As he spoke, he was already leaping in. Naturally Murong Jiu was still lying on the blanket.

The room was dark but Yan Nan Tian only took two looks and said, “This child’s sleeping acupoint has been sealed. This acupoint may not be a fatal one, but because the strength used to seal it was too heavy, and her acupoint has been sealed for at least twelve to fourteen hours.”

Jiang Yu lang exclaimed hoarsely, “Has it been twelve to fourteen hours? In that case, this Miss’s strength must have been damaged greatly.”

Yan Na n Tian said somberly, “That’s right, her vitality has been severely damaged, if I were to suddenly unseal her acupoint how, I’m afraid she will need to wait three months before she can recover.”

Jiang Yu Lang asked, “Then… then what can be done?”

Yan Nan Tian replied, “When I use my internal energy to regulate her blood flow, any disturbance is the most taboo, if I am interrupted, not only will her condition become more severe, even I would suffer. But with your protection, I need not worry.”

Jiang Yu lang smiled along and said, “Elder, rest assured. Disciple may not be capable, but I’m confident that nothing will go wrong in such a minor matter.”

Yan Nan Tian laughed loudly, “If I’m not assured about you, would I take this risk… if I can’t even trust the disciple of Priest Zi Xu, who else can I trust?”

Therefore he sat cross legged on the bed, both his palms pressed onto Murong

Jiu's back. Although the room is still very dark, but the look of gravity could still be seen on his face.

Jiang Yu Lang stood behind him, and the corners of his mouth curved up into a sinister smile unconsciously.

Why isn't there any movement from Tie Ping Gu? It's because she had left long ago. Jiang Yu Lang's honeyed words may have appeased her anger, but it made her more ashamed. When she sobered, she felt as if she had betrayed herself.

She hated herself, why did she not kill Jiang Yu Lang. She hated herself for not being able to bring herself to strike. She knows that since she was unable to strike just now, she'll forever be unable to strike.

She hated herself, why did she make it so easy for someone to steal the most precious thing in her whole life, and she seemed to have fallen in love with this hateful thief in spite of that.

Tie Ping Gu dashed out in a huff. This inn was at the edge of the little town. Running out of this little town, the earth seemed even darker, she can't see any roads nor differentiate the directions.

Suddenly, there were two human shadows walking over in the darkness. These two shadows seemed to be of the same size and height, as if they were cut from the same mold.

They stopped far away, naturally Tie Ping Gu can't see their faces clearly, but with such a quiet, dark night, no matter how soft a voice is, it will still sound very clearly. One of them said, "Jiang Xiao Yu, you really do not wish to see him?"

The three words 'Jiang Xiao Yu' traveled to Tie Ping Gu's ears, and she almost wanted to fly towards him and hurl herself into his arms.

But she knows that now she no longer has the right to be in anyone's arms. She can only grit her teeth and bear with it.

The slight breeze really carried Jiang Xiao Yu's voice with it! He said with a laugh, "You've said it wrongly, it's not that I don't wish to see him, just that 'right now' I don't wish to see him."

Hua Wu Que continued, "How would you know that he will definitely stop you! Maybe…"

Xiao Yu'er interrupted, "Of course he may let me go, but I don't wish to take this risk. Since I have made up my mind to do this, then I must do it!"

Hua Wu Que said, "But since you have accompanied me all the way here…"

Xiao Yu'er asked, "Where would Hero Yan be waiting for you."

Hua Yu Que pointed, "At an inn in that small town just in front, this small town only has one inn, I will definitely not lose my way."

When she heard that, Tie Ping Gu's heart jumped again… Jiang Yu Lang is still at that inn right now, and they are going to that inn as well. Although she hates Jiang Yu Lang to the core, but once she heard that Jiang Yu Lang is in danger, she forgot everything and strangely started being concerned about him.

Xiao Yu'er was heard replying slowly, "I originally wanted to ask you to accompany me to Turtle Hill, but I know that since you have made an appointment with others, you will not break your word, right?"

Hua Wu Que was silent for a moment and said, "With our parting today, I wonder…" He suddenly stopped talking, and have no wish to continue.

Xiao Yu'er pounded his shoulder heavily and said softly, "No matter what, we will have a chance to meet again…" He has not finished his words and was already walking out with large strides. Hua Wu Que thought for a while and ran after him, saying, "It's still early now, I'll send you off as well."

Tie Ping Gu looked at their silhouettes slowly disappearing, her body shivering, and gritting her teeth, she suddenly jumped up and ran back towards that inn.

The window was opened and inside and outside the window, lay three bodies. A burly stranger was on the bed helping a lady regulate her energy flow.

Jiang Yu lang's eyes were shimmering with a strange light, the corners of his mouth revealed a cruel smile, staring at that man's back and slowly raising his hand!

Tie Ping Gu dashed to the front of the window, and without finding out what was actually happening here, just blurted out, "Jiang Yu Lang, you…"

Once the three words 'Jiang Yu Lang' were out of her mouth, Yan Nan Tian had already turned around suddenly, and the color on his face changed, he is too late!

Jiang Yu lang's palms have landed on his back heavily!

Yan Nan Tian roared angrily, a mouthful of fresh blood spurted out onto Murong Jiu's slim body! Jiang Yu Lang was also frightened into taking a few steps back by this roar, retreating to the wall.

Yan Nan Tian's hair was in disarray, his eyes piercing, and he shouted hoarsely, "Rat, I saved your life, and you dare to make a sneak attack on me?"

Jiang Yu Lang was so petrified that his legs have turned soft, his back stuck to the wall, he slid down with a 'plonk', not even having the strength to climb up again.

Yan Nan Tian clenched his fists tightly, walked over step by step and shouted, "Who are you actually? Why did you sneak an attack upon me? Speak!"

How would Jiang Yu Lang dare to raise his head to look at him, but he sneaked a peek at Tie Ping Gu who was outside the window. There's no more spark in the eyes, just a piteous look.

On seeing that Jiang Yu Lang actually using such a vicious method to harm

someone, Tie Ping Gu was shocked and angry, but when she saw his pitiful eyes, her heart softened again.

Without knowing why, she leaped over in confusion, she hit out a palm with a bellow in confusion, and Yan Nan Tian finally collapsed!

Jiang Yu Lang jumped up in joy and said with a laugh, “You want to know who I am? Fine, I’ll tell you, I am the son of the Hero of Jiang Nan, Jiang Yu Lang! What Wu Dang disciple, in my eyes they’re not even worth a fart!”

Yan Nan Tian was startled, and shocked, and he finally closed his lids slowly, and laughed madly, “Good! Good! I have roamed the world, but never did I expect to die today at the hands of a rat like you!”

Jiang Yu Lang smiled sinisterly, “Since you are so rude with your words, I will let you suffer a little more before you die!”

Tie Ping Gu kept staring at her own hands in a daze, and suddenly she held on to Jiang Yu Lang with these hands and said, “He is about to die, why must you be so cruel again.”

Jiang Yu Lang caressed her face with a smile and said, “Fine, you ask me to spare him, I’ll spare him…”

Tie Ping Gu pushed his hands away and said, “Hua Wu Que is coming!”

The smile on Jiang Yu Lang’s face disappeared immediately, and he asked hoarsely, “You saw him?”

Tie Ping Gu bit her lips and replied, “And Jiang Xiao Yu!”

Jiang Yu Lang did not speak further, but pulled Tie Ping Gu and walked. He walked out the door, but came back, and carried up Murong Jiu from the bed. Anything that is beneficial to him, he will never give up.

They actually left this little town very easily. Later, Jiang Yu Lang suddenly asked, “You said you saw Hua Wu Que, how did you recognize him?”

Tie Ping Gu’s eyes gazed into the distance and was silent for a long moment before saying each word clearly, “Because I am also from the Floral Palace…”

Xiao Yu’er and Hua Wu Que walked slowly, the night is so dark and quiet, that they could hear the silent breathing of the earth. Suddenly, a loud roar was heard from afar!

Xiao Yu’er and Hua Wu Que suddenly paused in their steps. Without saying a word, the both of them ran towards the sound of the roar.

At the door of the inn, there’s a person lying on the ledge of the door vomiting. This happens to be the owner of the inn. He saw with his eyes, heard with his ears a series of cold blooded murder happening in his shop, but there was nothing he could do except to vomit, as if he is trying to throw up the discomfort and shame he felt.

Xiao Yu’er and Hua Wu Que still did not talk, but just exchanged a look and ran into the inn together. They saw in that house with the lamp Yan Nan Tian who had collapsed in a pool of blood!

This is just like a mountain that suddenly collapsed in front of them, this is just like the earth suddenly splitting in front of them, they were immediately shocked stiff!

Yan Nan Tian struggled, and opened his eyes. On his slowly hardening face, he revealed a trace of bitter smile, and said, “You… you are here…. Very good… very good…”

Hua Wu Que finally went over and kneeled down, asking hoarsely, “Has Junior come too late?”

Yan Nan Tian smiled sadly, “To be able to see the both of you before I die, I shall die without regrets!”

Xiao Yu’er had already carried him up in tears, crying loudly, “You will not die, no one can kill you!”

Hua Wu Que actually started shouting, “Who did such a vicious thing? Who?”

Yan Nan Tian replied, “Jiang Yu Lang!”

Hua Wu Que took a long breath, and said each word slowly, “I must kill him, to avenge you!”

Yan Nan Tian smiled again and turned towards Xiao Yu’er.

Xiao Yu’er has been looking at him closely, and now he suddenly exclaimed, “No need for him to kill Jiang Yu Lang, Jiang Yu Lang is mine. No matter who Elder is, I will avenge Elder regardless of anything else!”

Hua Wu Que was shocked, and asked hoarsely, “No matter who Elder is?… Who else could Elder be if not Hero Yan?”

‘Yan Nan Tian’ has started laughing loudly. Although it pained him to laugh, and beads of sweat as large as soy beans were on his forehead, but he still laughed endlessly. He looked at Xiao Yu’er and laughed, “I thought I could fool everyone, who would have expected that I could not fool you in the end.”

Hua Wu Que exclaimed again, “Could it be that Elder is not Yan Nan Tian, Hero Yan?”

‘Yan Nan Tian’ replied, “Yan Nan Tian is only my first good friend in my life…”

Hua Wu Que asked hoarsely, “Then Elder, you …?”

‘Yan Nan Tian’ said, “My surname is Lu.”

Xiao yu’er asked, “Lu Zhong Yuan? Could Elder be the ‘Nan Tian Hero’ Lu Zhong

Yuan!”

Lu Zhong Yuan smiled, “You have heard of my name?”

Xiao Yu’er sighed, “Disciple have heard of Elder’s heroic name since I was five years old, that ‘Bloody Hands’ Du Sha, although he almost died at Elder’s hands, but he still respects Elder very much.”

Hua Wu Que asked, “But… but why would Hero Lu want to pretend to be Hero Yan?”

Lu Zhong Yuan replied, “Be.. because Yan…” His breathing became fast, his strength even weaker, even talking would cause him great pain now.

Xiao Yu’er said, “I think I can guess a little about this matter, why don’t I say it out for Hero Lu. If I’m correct, Elder can nod his head, If I’m wrong, Elder can always speak on his own.”

There was a look of approval in Lu Zhong Yuan’s eyes, and he nodded his head with a slight smile, “Fine!”

Xiao Yu’er thought for a while, and said “Ever since Hero Yan escaped from the Valley of Evil, although he has slowly regained his senses, but he has not totally recovered the use of his martial arts for the time being, right?” Lu Zhong Yuan nodded his head.

Xiao Yu’er continued, “After he left the Valley, he looked for Hero Lu, right?”

Lu Zhong Yuan replied, “That’s right.”

Xiao Yu’er said, “On the way, he already realized that some major catastrophe is about to happen in the martial arts realm, and hated himself for being unable to stop it, so he wanted to ask Hero Lu to help him, right?”

“Right.”

Xiao Yu'er continued, "He was afraid that his martial arts would be lost, so once he saw Hero Lu, he told you the secrets to his martial arts."

Without waiting for him to finish talking, Lu Zhong Yuan was shaking his head and struggling to say, "More than ten years ago, I was defeated by Wei Wu Ya. Only at that time I realized that my martial arts were not up to par, and was about to retire…" His face revealed a look of pain again.

Xiao Yu'er immediately continued, "So this time Hero Yan begged Elder to come out of retirement, and Elder is afraid that your martial arts would still not be up to par, so you asked Hero Yan to reveal the secrets of his martial arts, right?" Lu Zhong Yuan nodded with a smile.

Xiao Yu'er added, "Because of this reason, and because Hero Lu does not want to take credit for others, so this time when you came back to the martial arts realm, you borrowed Hero Yan's title."

He continued with a smile, "With Hero Lu's status and reputation, naturally he does not wish to use Yan Nan Tian's martial arts to boost the name of 'Nan Tian Hero', I wonder if I have guessed correctly?"

Lu Zhong Yuan replied with a smile, "Besides this, there's another point."

Xiao Yu'er thought for a while again, and said "Could it be that Hero Yan deduced that once he leaves the Valley of Evil, all the evil people in the Valley would leave it in a swarm. He was even more afraid of these people doing more evil in the martial arts realm, and knows that only the three words 'Yan Nan Tian' can scare them, so he begged Elder to impersonate him for the time being."

Lu Zhong Yuan used all his remaining strength and asked despite his pain, "You are really a smart person, but… but I… I believed that not only have I learnt Yan Nan Tian's martial arts, I even asked Wan Chun Liu to changed my looks. As for Yan Nan Tian's voice and smiles, I think that I have imitated him well, I really cannot understand how you can see through me?"

"When Elder saw me first, you should have mentioned Wan Chun Liu, but Elder

totally forgot about this person. From that moment, I started having my suspicions. Besides, Elder's expressions, although is exactly the same as what was said about Yan Nan Tian ten over years ago, this is not only abnormal , but absolutely impossible." He continued sadly, "Because I know deeply the pain that hero Yan endured these ten over years, and after such suffering, no one can remain unchanged!"

Lu Zhong Yuan can't help but say sadly, "That's right, Yan Nan Tian has… has really changed a lot." His voice was so weak that even Xiao Yu'er almost couldn't hear him.

In his heart there're these words that he did not say out loud, if he is the real Yan Nan Tian, how could he not have recognized that the Jiang Bie He of today is the Jiang Qin of yesteryear! But since he had promised Jiang Bie He, he can only keep this secret.

Xiao Yu'er heaved a long sigh and said, "Now I only beg that Elder tell me, Hero Yan, Uncle Yan, where is he right now?" Lu Zhong Yuan did not reply, he has closed his eyes yet again.

End of Chapter 74

Chapter 64

Chapter 75

Now, the ‘Nan Tian Hero’ has been buried. In this breezy little town, although the funeral is unavoidably simple, it is also a solemn affair.

Xiao Yu’er and Hua Wu Que stood solemnly in front of Lu Zhong Yuan’s tomb, and with a cup of wine, paid their last respects to the heroic spirit of the great hero of their times.

In the deepening dusk, the earth slumbers, it’s now deep into autumn. Until night descends, the stars ascend, only then did they leave dejectedly.

Hua Wu Que looked heavenward and sobbed, lamenting, “The thieves are not eliminated, the martial arts realm is not at peace, Hero Lu really died too early a death… He did not even have time to reveal Hero Yan’s whereabouts and died with hatred.”

Xiao Yu’er smiled bitterly, “Maybe it’s because he does not wish for anyone to disturb Hero Yan’s peace, maybe… Hero Yan has already passed away, and he did not wish to say it out and make me sad.”

Hua Wu Que replied sadly, “I wish I can still see Hero Yan in this lifetime, or else…”

Xiao Yu’er suddenly puffed up his chest and said loudly, “Of course you can still see him, of course he will not die, he has not seen me become famous, how can he die in peace?”

Hua Wu Que stared at him, and smiled “That’s right, if Hero Yan is not willing

to die, no one can make him die, even the King of Hades is no exception. One day, I will be able to see him again."

Xiao Yu'er looked heavenward and laughed, "Well said, the way you speak, is almost the same as me, in another 75 days, even if I die, you can live for me."

Hua Wu Que's expression suddenly became sad again. He was silent for a long moment before suddenly saying, "Now you are rushing to Turtle Hill?"

"Let's go together, I guarantee that you'll watch an exciting and lively show."

Hua Wu Que lowered his head and said, "A pity I can't go with you."

Xiao Yu'er was stunned for a moment before saying loudly, "We only have 75 days left, and you actually won't accompany me?"

Hua Wu Que looked at the distant stars, and said slowly, "If what I am doing is successful, you and I can become more than 75 days of friends."

Xiao Yu'er stared at him for a while, and asked loudly, "You want to return to Floral Palace?"

Hua Wu Que sighed, "I only want to go back and clarify, why do they insist that I kill you."

Xiao Yu'er laughed loudly, "Do you think they will tell you?"

Hua Wu Que was silent for a long moment, and replied with a slight smile, "Jiang Xiao Yu, could it be that you've already bowed down to fate?"

Xiao Yu'er was stunned, and laughed loudly, "Fine, go then, no matter what, you and I will surely meet one more time, this is enough to make one happy at the thought of it!"

Here, the flowers were in full bloom. Chrysanthemums, peonies, rosebuds,

plums, peach blossoms, orchid, moonflowers evening primrose, tulips… these flowers should not be blooming at the same place, and even more so, should not be blooming at the same time, were all blooming right here.

This is the deep mountain, the cliffs, it should be permeated dark fog and cold wind, but here, the sun is like rays of gold shining on the flowers, the weather so gentle that it's been spring forever.

Whoever comes here, will be enchanted by this sea of flowers, and forget their troubles in the mundane world, and even more so, forget about danger, forget everything. But this is the world's most mysterious and dangerous place, this place is Floral Palace!

But this time, there is a young girl who is climbing up, regardless of everything.

She was wearing snow-white clothes, but now it's stained with mud and blood. She was very pretty, but now her face is frighteningly gaunt.

Anyone can see that she has spent a lot of effort, tolerated immense hardship before she came to this mysterious place.

When she reached the place, she collapsed. Her lips were cracked, her stomach acidic, she could not stand, but can only crawl.

She'll crawl her way up even if she has to. The young girl who is climbing up, is Tie Xin Lan.

Of course she knows the mystery and danger of Floral Palace, but she must come regardless, the intention is also to ask the Floral Princesses a sentence, 'Why must Hua Wu Que kill Jiang Xiao Yu?"

Now, she sees a sea of vibrant blooms, and unconsciously heaved a long sigh of relief. No matter what, all pain has passed! She fainted, and she thought that she would never wake again.

When she awoke, she found herself lying quietly on a soft and fragrant bed.

The sun is gone, but the lamplight seems to be even more brilliant than sunlight. She shut her eyes, and when she opened them again, she saw Hua Wu Que.

Hua Wu Que was also looking at her gently, in these brilliant rays of light, he looks even more like a prince in a fairytale, so handsome, suave, and unreachable.

Tie Xin Lan groaned and asked, “Hua Wu Que, are you really Hua Wu Que.”

Hua Wu Que smiled gently, and said tenderly, “It’s me, I am standing right next to you, you do not have to be afraid.”

Tie Xin Lan suddenly struggled to get up, and begged hoarsely, “I beg of you, take me to see the Floral Princess, I came here regardless of hardship, with only the aim of begging her to see me just once.”

Hua Wu Que smiled bitterly, “I came back, also to beg an audience with her, but a pity, they’ve long left the palace.”

Tie Xin Lan collapsed on the bed and asked hoarsely, “They both are away?”

Hua Wu Que continued, “For both princesses to leave the palace at the same time, this is a very rare occurrence.”

Tie Xin Lan exclaimed piteously, “Why is my luck always so bad, I… I…” The words choked in her throat, she covered her head with the silk blanket, unable to talk anymore.

Hua Wu Que was silent for moment before slowly saying, “I think… I know the reason for your coming. I also thought of coming back to ask her the same thing, but I did not expect them to have left the palace for so long.”

Tie Xin Lan wept silently beneath the blanket, and suddenly asked, “During the past few days, have you already seen him?”

There’s no need to say aloud the name, others would know who the ‘him’ she was referring to.

Hua Wu Que replied with a gentle smile, “He’s very well now, you do not have to worry for him.”

Although he tried his best to pretend nonchalance, but his smile inevitably carried a sense of bitterness.

Tie Xin Lan finally stuck her head out from beneath the blanket, and mumbled, “Do you know, where is he now?”

Hua Wu Que tried his best to smile a little happier, and said gently, “I know, as long as you recover, I can bring you to look for him.”

Tie Xin Lan stared at him, tears flowing down her cheeks unconsciously, and said with a shivering voice, “You… why are you always so good to me, you… you…”

Suddenly, a strange sound was heard coming from the outside. This sound is neither shrill nor piteous, but it makes one’s hair stand up involuntarily.

The sound at first sounds like an iron saw sawing through wood, but on hearing it again, sounds like silkworms chewing on mulberry leaves. On closer hearing, it sounds like knives and swords rubbed against one another making anyone who hears it grit their teeth and weaken their legs. Later, screams of young girls are heard.

Hua Wu Que’s expression colored slightly, and said, “I’ll go out and take a look.”

He knows very well that although most of the disciples of Floral Palace are young girls, but none of them will be alarmed so easily. To be able to shock them into screaming, it is certainly no easy matter. Tie Xin Lan checked that she is neatly dressed, and jumped down from the bed, saying, “I’ll go with you.”

The two of them rushed out, only to see the young girls all hiding beneath the eaves, all frightened stiff, and some were even shivering in fright. On second look, amongst the sea of flowers, there were countless things moving.

Tie Xin Lan cried hoarsely, “Rats! Where did so many rats come from!” It’s really rats!

Thousands and hundreds of rats as large as cats, were weaving among the flowers, nibbling at the flower stems, eating the precious flowers.

Although the disciples of Floral Palace all were highly skilled, but still, they are all girls. They are not afraid of tigers, but to see so many rats, their legs all turned soft. Hua Wu Que leaped out and shouted, “Are those who have come disciples of Wei Wu Ya?”

There was silence everywhere, and no one could be seen. This sea of flowers, which countless hours have been spent to grow them, is now unkempt in the blink of an eye. Hua Wu Que was both stunned and furious, but faced with so many rats, there’s nothing he can do as well.

In Floral Palace, he can’t use fire to burn them, or water to drown them. Even if he were to chase them, these rats were not afraid of humans at all. He could not imagine the famous Floral Palace not being able to do anything to the most useless and crafty animal.

By now, a series of mad laughter could be heard from the darkness.

A shrill voice was laughing madly and saying, “A pity the Floral Princesses are not home, or else if they were to witness their precious flowers eaten up by our rats, I’m afraid they would be vomiting blood.”

By now, Hua Wu Que had calm down instead. He is no longer stunned or angry, it was as if he did not see even a single rat.

There was a slight smile on his face and he asked slowly, “Since the senior of Wu Ya Sect is here, why won’t you come out and see us?”

In the darkness, that person laughed loudly, “This lad is quite composed, do you know who he is?”

Hua Wu Que still did not move, and said lightly, “I am Hua Wu Que, also a disciple of Floral Palace!”

That person replied, “Hua Wu Que, I seemed to have heard this name.”

He has not finished his words, when in the dark corner, there was an eerie blue light suddenly, and in the flickering light, two human shapes slowly appeared.

These two people were tall and skinny, like bamboo poles, one wearing a green robe and the other wearing a yellow robe, but their faces were a glossy green, as if they were wearing masks. Without knowing why, they make one’s hair stand upon seeing them, and make one nauseous as well.

The bluish eyes of the man in green looked up and down Hua Wu Que a few times, and laughed wickedly, “Since you know that my brother and I are disciples of Wu Ya Sect, it shows that you are quite knowledgeable. So for you to die so young, I can’t help but feel that it’s a pity for you.”

The person in yellow laughed, “His name is Wei Qing Yi (Qing Yi = Green Robes), my name is Wei Huang Yi (Huang Yi = Yellow Robes). We did not want to kill you originally, but this time our Teacher is coming out to the martial arts world again, and the first thing he wants destroyed is Floral Palace, we don’t have a choice as well.”

The young girls, on hearing such inexplicably ugly laughter, on seeing those two people surrounded by rats, not one of them dared to strike.

Wei Qing Yi’s shoulder moved slightly, and Hua Wu Que flew up into the sky immediately, and instantaneously, there was a blue light shooting out from Wei Qing Yi’s palm!

But by now, Hua Wu Que has already moved away, and where the blue light stuck, a young girl had collapsed to the floor in a scream, but Hua Wu Que did not turn back, both his palms striking out at the top of Wei Qing Yi's head!

Wei Qing Yi did not expect that his speed would be so fast, he took a wrong step and received the attack with his own palm. Wei Huang Yi also struck out with his palm, but who would have expect that Huq Wu Que's mid-air palm attack is actually a false move. In the middle of the attack, he suddenly retracted his hand and did not receive Wei Qing Yi's palm, but made an empty circle instead.

Wei Qing Yi only felt his palm attack losing it's strength, and at this moment when the old strength is lost and he has yet to gather new strength, another strange force has swept his palm attack to the side. Without knowing why, this palm that was stuck out, was actually meeting Wei Huang Yi's extended palm.

With a 'pak' sound, both palms met, followed by another sound. Wei Qing Yi's arm, was actually broken by the impact from Wei Huang Yi!

Hua Wu Que actually used his alarming speed and making a calculated risk, used the marvelous 'Shifting Flower Grafting Jade' and gained the upper hand!

After the palm exchange, Wei Qing Yi and Wei Huang Yi were both stunned.

Although Wei Huang Yi was not injured, but on seeing that he has injured his partner, was even more flustered, his leg stomping down on the rats. The rats all escaped in fright.

Although Hua Wu Que gained the upper hand in one move, but he just stood there smiling, and did not take the opportunity to attack. This is because he has already tested these two person's martial arts with his one move, and knows that they are not easy to deal with. He knows that he gained the upper hand through luck this round, and he should not be greedy for victory and press on an attack. He still wants these two to be tricked yet again. By now the rats have scattered all over, and weaving in all directions again.

Tie Xin Lan suddenly gritted her teeth, and pulled off a log of wood from the window eaves, and dash out with gritted teeth. She lifted the log in her hands and smashed it down on a rat.

The rats that were originally spreading out, now scurried towards Tie Xin Lan. Tie Xin Lan could feel cold shivers in her heart and her arms have turned soft, but she gritted her teeth and refused to retreat.

Finally one of the young girls hiding under the eaves dashed out. As long as one of them comes out, the rest will follow. As long as they can kill one rat, their courage will be emboldened.

Ten over gentle and pretty looking young girls, sweating, panting, has forgotten everything except to fight it out with the rats wholeheartedly! The rats finally lost, most of them beaten to death while the rest escaped.

The young girls stared at the bodies of the rats and stared at their hands, they almost could not believe these rats were killed by them. This feels just like a nightmare!

The, some of them threw down the logs and started vomiting, some shouted and laughed as if they've gone mad, and some started hugging one another, crying loudly.

These happenings, is something that will never happen in Floral Palace, but it has happened, because after this furious battle, they have subconsciously loosened up.

Only Tie Xin Lan, once she stopped, she went to look for Hua Wu Que immediately! But Hua wu Que is gone! Even Wei Qing Yi and Wei Huang Yi are gone too!

Tie Xin Lan looked around in a panic, feeling flustered and scared. She was totally concentrating on dealing with the rats earlier, that she forgot to take a look at what's happening here!

Hua Wu Que may be highly skilled, but since these two people dared to create trouble at Floral Palace, they can't be weak either. Hua Wu Que was up against the two of them, and he may not be their match. Tie Xin Lan was almost mad with worry.

Suddenly, she realized that among the crushed flowers, there seems to be a body. The right arm is broken, there's a big, gaping bloody hole in the chest, the ghastly greenish face swollen up from a beating.

It's indescribable how horrific that person looked, and Tie Xin Lan dare not look at it any longer! She hurriedly averted her eyes, and inadvertently saw Wei Qing Yi's left hand.

On the first two fingers of his claw-like hands were two bloody eyeballs! Obviously he had dug it out from his own eyes! She started tearing unconsciously.

Suddenly, she heard a deep and frantic breathing, like the breathing of an injured beast, coming down from the cliff above. She immediately rushed there! She saw a person with a bloodied face, his arms hanging, squatting and panting underneath a tree, his eyes are now two bloody caves!

But this person is not Hua Wu Que either, but Wei Huang Yi. Obviously under the influence of the marvelous 'Shifting Flower Grafting Jade' move, his eyes have been gouged out by his own companion!

End of Chapter 75

Chapter 65

Chapter 76

On seeing that the person with the bloodied face is not Hua Wu Que, Tie Xin Lan may have heaved a sigh of relief, but seeing this person who is more vicious than wolves, seeing this cruel but strange scene, she can't help but start shivering.

Luckily she saw Hua Wu Que immediately! Hua Wu Que was now standing far away beneath a tree opposite Wei Huang Yi.

Every vein and muscle in his body is tensed up, his pair of eyes staring unblinkingly at Wei Huang Yi's pair of hands. Although both of them stood there motionless, but such a situation is more tense than anything else. Even Tie Xin Lan, who was standing on a cliff far away, was almost breathless from the tension.

Suddenly Wei Huang Yi roared madly and leaped towards Hua Wu Que! Although he now has no eyes to see, but he can listen with his ears! This leap is not only incomparably fierce, but the direction extremely precise.

But right at this time, Hua Wu Que's right and left hand both flicked a piece of stone, while he himself burrowed under Wei Huang Yi's body with lightning speed! With a crack, a tree that was wider than a face basin which was behind Hua Wu Que was broken by Wei Huang Yi's body! He actually did not collapse, but with a jump, turned back again.

He turned his head left and right, and laughed eerily, "Hua Wu Que, I know you are there, you cannot escape. Today neither of us shall leave here alive, I want to die here with you!"

Actually he has no idea where Hua Wu Que is. Hua Wu Que is opposite him, but his head unconsciously turned left and right.

Looking at him, Tie Xin Lan felt both fear and pity, if not for the fact that Hua Wu Que is still not out of danger now, she really cannot bear to continue watching.

Obviously Hua Wu Que could not bear it too, and can't help but sigh, saying sadly, "I really cannot bear to strike against you, I would advise you to…"

Wei Huang Yi suddenly jumped up and roared, "I do not need your pity, I… even if I cannot find you, I do not need you…" He could not continue his words, but he started beating his own chest, his mouth emitting a quiet humph, although he was not crying, but it's ten times more piteous than crying.

Tie Xin lan actually can't help but weep as she witnessed this scene. Even if Wei Huang Yi is the world's most evil and cruel person, she still cannot bear to see him endure such suffering. She can't help but sigh, "You better leave quickly, I know that Hua… Master Hua will never stop you."

Wei Huang Yi laughed hoarsely, "Leave… don't you know that the followers of Wu Ya, rather be killed than humiliated…"

Amidst the mad laugh, he suddenly leapt up with all his strength, straight towards Tie Xin Lan who was on the lower cliff, and laughed sinisterly, "You should not have talked, although I cannot kill Hua Wu Que, but I can kill you!"

Tie Xin Lan is already stunned by his mad look, and did not know how to evade him at all.

Before Wei Huang Yi finished his words, he is already on the cliff, his steel like arms clutching at Tie Xin Lan, laughing madly, "Even if I die, there must at least be one other to accompany me!"

Tie Xin Lan only felt as if her body is breaking, that face flowing with fresh blood, that two bloody black holes, is right in front of her, she was so shocked

that she could not even scream!

Suddenly there was a ‘puff’, and Wei Huang Yi’s mad laughter broke off suddenly, his arms suddenly slack. He took half a step back and plunged down the cliff.

Hua Wu Que is already in front of her. Tie Xin Lan could not take it any longer and threw herself into Hua Wu Que’s arms, crying loudly.

Hua Wu Que caressed her hair and said sadly, “I could not bear to kill him initially, I…”

Tie Xin Lan cried bitterly, “I was wrong, I should not have spoken, or else you won’t have to force yourself to kill a sightless person. I… why do I always make a mess out of things.”

Hua Wu Que replied gently, “Do you think you’re wrong? You’re just too soft hearted, you’re not at fault, you only want to do everything well. You’ve tried your best.”

Tie Xin Lan said through her tears, “You’re always so good to me, and yet I… I…”

Hua Wu Que dared not look at her any longer, he turned his eyes, lowered his head and stared at the body of Wei Huang Yi beneath the cliff. He heaved a long sigh and mumbled, “The followers of Wu Ya, what formidable followers of Wu Ya, Jiang Xiao Yu, can you handle them?”

With just a passing sentence from him, he changed the subject to Xiao Yu’er.

Tie Xin Lan’s body really trembled, the gratitude and feelings she felt in her heart for Hua Wu Que, really turned into concern for Xiao Yu’er immediately.

Hua Wu Que sighed, “The followers of Wu Ya are already so formidable, much less Wei Wu Ya himself. Jiang Xiao Yu oh Jiang Xiao Yu, I really can’t help but worry for you.”

Tie Xin Lan finally could not take it and asked hoarsely, “Jiang Xiao Yu, could he have already…”

Only now did Hua Wu Que turn his head back, and said solemnly, “I’m afraid he has already arrived at Turtle Hill now, I’m afraid he is soon going to meet Wei Wu Ya!”

On the second day, Hua Wu Que brought Tie Xin Lan and journeyed straight towards Turtle Hill.

Either consciously or unconsciously, he was keeping a distance from Tie Xin Lan. When travelling he will be following behind Tie Xin Lan, while eating he will deliberately look for something to do, and only come to the table when Tie Xin Lan had finished eating. Even when they stayed at inns at night, he does sleep in the room next to Tie Xin Lan’s but will find a room far, far away.

Their hearts were heavy, and there was hardly a smile the entire day.

After travelling for two days, they stayed the night in an inn. Hua Wu Que went to his room very early to sleep, but how can he really sleep.

Hua Wu Que stared at the flickering candlelight, thinking of Xiao Yu’er, thinking of Tie Xin Lan, thinking of the Floral Princesses, and thinking about that mysterious ‘Mr Copper’. Everyone was tied into a dead knot in his heart, and he really does not know how he should handle it. Suddenly there was a light knock outside his door.

Hua Wu Que took it as the innkeeper coming to add water, and said, “The door is not closed, come in.”

He really did not expect that the person who was pushing the door and coming in is Tie Xin Lan.

Under the light, she was wearing snow white clothes, her long jet black hair flowing over her shoulders, her eyes seemed to be a little swollen, her eyes

seemed a little dazed.

But she lowered her head, her dazed eyes never looking up. Hua Wu Que felt as if his heart has gone into sudden spasm.

Tie Xin Lan said with her head lowered, “I… I can’t sleep, I have something I wish to tell you.”

“Please sit.” He really does not know what he should say, and could only say the two words ‘please sit’, but he does not know how cold and how distant these two words sound.

She hesitated for a long while, and as if she was mustering up her courage, said sadly, “I knew for the past few days you deliberately treated me coldly, distancing yourself from me.”

Hua Wu Que was silent for a moment before he sat down heavily and sighed, “You want me to speak the truth?”

“You’ll have to say it sooner or later, why not say it now?”

Hua Wu Que carved out a section of wax from the candle stand, and pinched it with his fingers, as if he is pinching his own heart.

“You know, once humans get close to one another for a long time, they will inevitably develop feelings, especially during times of misery and difficulty.” He said each word slowly, with much difficulty.

Tie Xin Lan stared at the wax in his palm in a daze, as if the thing he is pinching is her heart.

“I’m not afraid that you will let him down, but I’m afraid of myself, I…” He gritted his teeth, and continued “I can’t bear to throw your emotions into confusion, if I get too close to you, not only will I suffer, you will suffer as well.”

Tie Xin Lan lowered her head again. Tears already flowing from her eyes.

She suddenly lifted her head, and looked at Hua Wu Que with tears in her eyes, saying loudly, “But I…I am a lonely girl, I only wish to treat you as my real brother, I hope you can believe me…”

Hua Wu Que did not speak.

Tie Xin Lan continued, “I came only to tell you, you do not have to avoid me, or be on your guard against me. As long as in our hearts, we are above board, we need not fear letting anyone down, nor fear what others might think.”

Hua Wu Que finally smiled and said, “Only now do I realize you’re very courageous. This courage, is not normally seen, but at the correct time, you are more courageous than anyone else.”

Tie Xin Lan let out a long breath, and also smiled, “After saying these words, I really feel much better now, I really feel like having a drink in celebration.”

Hua Wu Que suddenly stood up and laughed, “I too feel much better, and I also feel like having a drink to celebrate.”

After the two of them spoke out what was troubling their hearts, it was as if they have suddenly opened a lock. A pity that there is no more wine and food in the inn, so the two of them walked out into the streets.

The lights on the street are sparse, and the shops have all closed, only the furnace of a noodle shop at the corner is still burning. Whiffs of fragrance from the beef soup, seem to be extremely concentrated in the night breeze.

Tie Xin Lan said with a smile, “Drinking wine at a small noodle shop like this, is quite an experience as well, just that I wonder if you’ll find it dirty?”

Hua Wu Que gave a little smile, “Do you really see me as the kind of people who would only drink wine in a classy restaurant?”

Tie Xin Lan suddenly laughed, and they have not even reached the noodle stall when she shouted, “Give us half a catty of beef, and a catty of wine.”

Next to the noodle stall there were two wooden tables placed haphazardly, which were both empty right now. Only a skinny person clad in black was squatting on the long bench in front of the stall, drinking his wine.

In the hazy heat and under the lamplight, the man in black’s skinny face, seemed to be even more dried up than the braised vegetables in the little wooden cabinet. But his pair of eyes, were brighter than the stars in the sky.

He was on the bench, chewing on a duck head and drinking his wine at the same time, but his thoughts seem to be at a far away place.

A downtrodden person, sitting on a bench at a noodle shop drinking, chasing after his lost youth and joys. This is a very common scene, and Tie Xin Lan and Hua Wu Que did not pay him much notice.

They chatted freely, but later they suddenly realized that no matter what they chatted about, it all seems to have some relation to Xiao Yu’er.

Hua Wu Que smiled, “Such a fine night, with wine and meat, this should have been enough, but I keep feeling that there is something lacking, and only now do I realize what is lacking.”

Tie Xin Lan lowered her head, “You mean… lacking a person?”

Hua Wu Que sighed, “Without him, how can you and I be truly happy?”

Tie Xin Lan was silent for a moment, and lifted her head, “Do you think, there will be a time when the three of us can drink together?”

Hua Wu Que replied, “Why won’t there be?”

He raised his cup with a smile and said, “Come, let us toast to Jiang Xiao Yu.”

Once the three words ‘Jiang Xiao Yu’ was uttered, the person in black suddenly threw down his duck head, put down his wine cup, and his eyes shot towards them like lightning.

Tie Xin Lan downed her cup in one gulp, her face even redder. Although she was smiling, but there were tears in her eyes, and said sadly, “If I am also a man, how good that would be…”

He raised his head, and suddenly realized that a skinny, skeletal man in black, have walked to them, a pair of shining eyes kept looking at both their faces. Hua Wu Que and Tie Xin Lan were both stunned.

That man in black looked them up and down a few times, and suddenly asked, “You are Hua Wu Que?”

Hua Wu Que was even more astonished, “Exactly, you are…”

That man in lack did not listen to his words at all, and has turned to Tie Xin Lan, “You are Tie Xin Lan!”

Tie Xin Lan nodded her head, so shocked that she could not speak.

That man in black’s eyes became even larger, and asked “Did you just drink a toast to Jiang Xiao Yu?”

She knows that Xiao Yu’er have quite a lot of enemies, she thought that this man in black is also here to look for trouble, but who would have expect this man to actually pull over a stool, sat down and said, “Good! You drank a toast to Jiang Xiao Yu, I must at least drink three toasts to you!”

He actually lifted the wine jar, and poured for all of them. Tie Xin Lan and Hua Wu Que looked at the wine in front of them, and do not know if they should, or should not drink it.

That man in black have already downed his wine and stared at them, saying

“Drink! Could it be you’re afraid that the wine is poisoned?”

Hua Wu Que was still suspicious, but Tie Xin Lan had already replied loudly, “Sorry, we do not have the habit of drinking with strangers. If you want to offer a toast to us, at least you must tell us who you are?”

The man in black replied, “You don’t have to bother who I am, you just have to know I am Jiang Xiao Yu’s friend.”

Tie Xin Lan stared at him for a while, and said “Fine, since you are Jiang Xiao Yu’s friend, I will drink this cup.”

The man in black turned towards Hua Wu Que and asked, “You?”

Hua Wu Que smiled slightly, “I will drink three cups.”

That man in black laughed loudly, “Good, you’re very good, a good friend indeed.”

He drank three cups with Hua Wu Que, and continued, “With such stars, sitting here with such a beauty drinking wine, and yet your heart did not forget Jiang Xiao Yu, good… good, I’ll offer you another three toasts!”

The wine bottle is almost empty. Although the eyes of the man in black is still sharp, but his expression carried a tinge of tipsiness. He no longer cared if others were drinking, or if others were talking, only downing the wine into his stomach cup by cup, looking up at the sky once in a while, as if he’s waiting for someone. Who is he waiting for?

Tie Xin Lan stared at him, and can’t help but ask again, “Are you really friends with Jiang Xiao Yu?”

The man in black widened his eyes, “Jiang Xiao Yu is not some remarkable or important person, why would I pretend to be his friend?”

He paused and suddenly said, “If you see him, you can send him my regards.”

Tie Xin Lan tested him and asked, “When we see Xiao Yu’er, who should we say you are?”

The man in black said with a low voice, “Just tell him it’s his Big Brother.”

Tie Xin Lan suddenly stood up and asked fiercely, “Who are you really!”

“Didn’t I just tell you…”

Tie Xin Lan smiled icily, “Bullshit, Xiao Yu’er will never acknowledge anyone as his Big Brother, do not think to fool me.”

The man in black suddenly laughed loudly, “Fine, fine, you are really Xiao Yu’er’s bosom friends, I’ve always wanted him to call me Big Brother, but he always called me just brother.”

Tie Xin Lan can’t help but ask again, “Hey, you seemed to be troubled? Right?”

The man in black stared again, “Troubled? What troubles could I have?”

Tie Xin Lan continued, “If you really treat us as Jiang Xiao Yu’s friends, why don’t you tell us your troubles, maybe… maybe we can help you.”

The man in black suddenly threw his head heavenward and laughed madly, “Help! Would I need anyone’s help!” His high pitched laughter, was actually full of pain and anger.

Tie Xin Lan wanted to ask further, but was stopped by Hua Wu Que’s eye signal. In the distance, the night watcher’s drum could be heard, it is already three in the morning.

The man in black suddenly stopped his laughter, and stared at Hua Wu Que and Tie Xin Lan, saying “All right, each of you shall offer me three toasts, and

that would be considered helping me.”

After drinking six cups of wine, the man in black looked heavenward and laughed, “I should be spending the night alone, but who would have expect me to meet you, and drink the night with me away, this is also considered one of the greatest happy moments in my life…”

The man in black suddenly stood up, as if he had something to say, but he did not say a single word, but turned around and left.

He walked to the front of the noodle stall and emptied everything in his arms, and there were actually a few bars of gold, over ten pearls, and he threw it on the stall, saying “This is to pay for the wine, all for you.”

The noodle stall boss was stunned, by the time he wanted to say ‘thanks’, that man in black has already walked far away, the yellowish lamplight, cast his long shadow on the floor. He looked so lonely and dejected.

Hua Wu Que said slowly, “On the night before his death, he thought he would have to spend it alone, he actually could not find a friend to spend his last day with.”

Tie Xin Lan exclaimed hoarsely, “The night before his death?”

Hua Wu Que sighed, “Can’t you tell…” He suddenly stopped speaking, and flew over, dragging Tie Xin Lan with him.

The man in black was staggering, as if he was walking very slowly, but in a blink, he suddenly disappeared, as if he had been suddenly swallowed up by night. After flying past a few roofs, Hua Wu Que put Tie Xin Lan down and told her, “I’m going to chase him, you’ll wait here!”

Tie Xin Lan can only wait. But her heart cannot remain calm.

Who is this man in black? Why would he die? Xiao Yu’er and him… a flash of a shadow, Hua Wu Que was already in front of her.

Hua Wu Que said, “Come with me!”

The two of them flew past a few more roofs, and Tie Xin Lan can’t help but ask, “How do you know he’s about to die?”

Hua Wu Que sighed, “He kept taking note of the time, obviously he has some important task to do.”

Tie Xin Lan concurred, “I’ve noticed this as well.”

Hua Wu Que said slowly, “But since he is Jiang Xiao Yu’s friend, how can we sit there and watch him die?”

Tie Xin Lan chewed on her lips, and said, “His Lightness Skill is considered extremely highly skilled, even if he can’t defeat the other party, he should be able to escape. But he did not harbor any hope of escape, his opponent, won’t he be very frightening.”

Hua Wu Que replied seriously, “That’s why you must be extra careful, I’ll be there, so you must never strike unnecessarily.”

Tie Xin Lan suddenly realized that at the foot of the hill in the near distance, there is a large temple, it looks as majestic as the mansion of a wealthy family.

At this time, at this instance, the backyard of this temple is still aglow with lights. Tie Xin Lan commented, “Could he have come to this Taoist temple.”

Hua Wu Que interrupted, “When he went in, his actions were extremely careful. With his Lightness Skill, others would definitely not find out for the time being, that’s why I rushed back to look for you.”

Tie Xin Lan glanced over, and saw that although the lights in the temple are not extinguished, but there is no sound of human activity at all, and she can’t see even a trace of danger.

Hua Wu Que furrowed his brows and said, “You wait here, I’ll go in and take a look.”

Tie Xin Lan held him back, and said with a lowered voice, “I think there must be something amiss here, it could be that he had set up a trap with someone, and deliberately lured us here!”

Hua Wu Que smiled slightly, “If this person really meant to trick me, then all the more I want to take a good look.”

He gentle pushed Tie Xin Lan’s hands away, and with a flash, disappeared into the darkness.

Looking at his disappearing back, Tie Xin Lan smiled bitterly, “I can’t imagine that this person’s temper is exactly like Xiao Yu’er’s sometimes.”

Hua Wu Que moved to the backyard from the dark roof, and realized that this lighted backyard, is no longer a temple. Regardless of the design of the building or the décor in the rooms, there is not much difference from those of a wealthy family.

The weirdest thing is, there is no sound of any human activity in the backyard at all, nor could anyone be seen. But in the elaborately decorated hall, on the lush carpet, was a ferocious tiger lying prone.

The hall seems to be bigger in size than this, but there was yellow curtain so long that it was touching the ground in the middle, which separated half of the hall, the tiger lying in front of the yellow curtain. Why is there a need to separate this hall with the curtain, and what secret could there be behind it?

He went over silently in the darkness, not because he is extremely fearless, but because he is confidant about his Lightness Skill. He naturally did not let out any sound as he moved. Who would have expected that right at this time, the ferocious tiger which seemed to be sleeping, suddenly leaped up with a roar that shook heaven and earth, that caused the leaves in the courtyard to fall from the trees.

End of Chapter 76

Chapter 66

Chapter 77

Hua Wu Que's Lightness Skill might be one of the most marvelous in the world, but this tiger need not use its eyes to see or its ears to hear. It only needs its nose to sniff, and no matter who it is that enters the backyard, none can escape its notice. Since that person in black has already entered the courtyard, it seems unlikely that he can avoid calamity. After Hua Wu Que's surprise, he can't help but feel a sense of regret.

The lights in the hall were flickering, the ferocious tiger had already stood up. Other animals really cannot compare to the ferocity of the tiger, and even Hua Wu Que was secretly alarmed.

Just at this time, a gentle voice came from the back of the yellow curtain, saying softly, "Little Kitten, sit down, don't learn to be a guard dog and scare the guest." The ferocious tiger actually walked over obediently and sat down, like it has suddenly turned into a kitten.

Hua Wu Que was stunned at the sight, and saw from the back of the curtain, a soft, dainty hand as clear as jade, lightly caressing the tiger's back. The gentle, voice said with a hint of laughter, "Since you are here, why don't you come in and take a seat."

Hua Wu Que thought to himself, "Did that man in black experience exactly the same thing that I am experiencing now? Did he go in? What happened to him after he went in?"

He deduced that since the man in black came with thoughts of certain death, he will definitely not withdraw. This hall may be a tiger's den, but he will still barge in! Once he thought of this, Hua Wu Que hesitated no longer, and walked

in with a large step!

He smiled a little, and walked in step by step, like a polite guest who has come to visit his friend. A tinkling laughter came from behind the curtain, saying “What a handsome and suave gentleman, dare I ask for your esteemed name.”

Hua Wu Que clasped his fists together and replied, “I am Hua Wu Que, and I wonder what is Miss’s name?”

A giggle raised from behind the curtain, “I am married, how dare I call myself Miss… your humble lady is surnamed Bai.”

Hua Wu Que replied, “So it’s Madam Bai.”

Madam Bai replied, “I wouldn’t dare, Master Hua, please take a seat.”

Hua Wu Que really sat down, and said, “Thank you, Madam.”

This is a habit that Hua Wu Que cannot change. As long as others is polite to him, even if he knows that they are going to kill him, he will still be polite to them as well.”

Madam Bai laughed again, “Sir has come from afar, but your humble lady cannot come out and be a better host, I hope that Sir will forgive me.”

Hua Wu Que replied, “To be able to speak with Madam separated by a curtain, I am already feeling very honored.”

Madam Bai suddenly laughed loudly, “I am already being very polite, but I did not expect you to be even more courteous. At the rate that we’re being polite to each other, I’ll feel embarrassed about asking why you are here, and you’ll feel embarrassed to say it. Such polite talk, why don’t we dispense with it.”

Hua Wu Que replied with a slight smile, “Being courteous before using force, this is the way gentlemen fight. In my opinion, it’s better to be more polite.”

Madam Bai asked, “We have no enmity with each other, and you do not even know what I look like, how do you know I am being courteous with you before using force? I do not have the intention of ‘using force’ with you at all.”

Hua Wu Que answered, “A stranger who comes to visit in the night, even if Madam were to meet that person with arms, it is still expected.”

Madam Bai tittered, “Although I do not know the reason for your arrival, but seeing that you look gentle and suave, and scholarly and well articulated as well, you do not look like a bad person at all. If you were like that person who came in earlier, I may not make things difficult for you, but others will not let you off.”

Hua wu Que heaved a long sigh, and said solemnly, “I thank Madam for your praise, but I am here precisely because of that person who came earlier.”

Madam Bai exclaimed, “Aiyo, could you be friends with that sneaky little black devil?”

Hua Wu Que replied, “If Madam can enlighten me on his whereabouts, I will be extremely grateful.”

“Even if I tell you his whereabouts, do you have the capability to save him?”

Hua Wu Que replied, “In front of Madam, I dare not belittle myself.”

Madam Bai laughed heartily, “Good, what a good ‘dare not belittle yourself’, since that is the case, why don’t you show me some moves, let me see if you really have the ability to save him.”

Hua Wu Que smiled slightly and said, “I shall demonstrate my humble skills.”

He sat there without moving, but his whole body suddenly flew up, the heavy red sandalwood chair seemed to be glued to his body.

Madam Bai laughed loudly, “Good, with skills like yours, no wonder you said you dare not belittle yourself, but I’m afraid…”

Hua Wu Que raised his brow, “Afraid of what?”

Madam Bai continued, “We have two guests here, who did not see eye to eye with that little black devil, and who knows what happened, but they ended up fighting as they spoke! Hai, that friend of yours may look fierce, but he is not a match to that two friends of mine.”

Hua Wu Que asked hoarsely, “Could he have already perished at the hands of others?”

Madam Bai replied, “Your friend seemed to have been taken away by my friends, but I do not know where they have taken him.”

Hua Wu Que was stunned, and for a moment did not know what to do.

He also could not decide who this Madam Bai is, or decide if her words are true or false. Besides, even if he knows that she’s lying, there is nothing he can do. He can’t leave, he can’t stay, his mind is in a blank.

Who would have expected that Madam Bai would actually giggle, and said “But you need not worry, if you really want to look for him, I can bring you there.”

Hua Wu Que replied happily, “Thank you, Madam.”

But Madam Bai sighed and said, “It’s just that I have been locked up here, and cannot move, so how can I bring you there?”

Hua Wu Que looked at that delicate hand caressing that ferocious tiger who is as well trained as a house cat, and mumbled, “Madam is the owner of this house, and this tiger is kept by Madam, who could have imprisoned Madam here, I really cannot fathom.”

Madam Bai sighed again, “This is a long story, come and lift up this curtain first, then I’ll tell you.”

Hua Wu Que hesitated, “could this be a trap?”

Madam Bai replied, “And you still call yourself highly skilled, don’t you even dare to lift this curtain?”

Hua Wu Que suddenly stood up, and pulled open the curtain. Once the curtain was drawn, he was shocked speechless.

The front half of the hall was exquisitely and grandly decorated, but the back half of the hall, which was separated by the curtain, has no decorations at all. The ground was filled with hay, and there was a water trough at the corner. This is not a place fit for a human to stay, it looks more like a pig’s sty, a horse’s stable.

This scene is enough to make one shocked, but the most startling thing is, the neck of this pretty lady dressed in finery, was clasped in steel, and the other end of the steel was nailed deeply into the wall. Hua Wu Que seemed to have been nailed to the ground as well, unable to move at all.

Madam Bai looked at him and smiled sadly, “Now you understand why I cannot bring you there.”

Hua Wu Que secretly sighed, and said “This… who did this, who…”

Madam Bai lowered her head, and said each word slowly, “My husband!”

Hua Wu Que almost jumped up and cried hoarsely, “Your husband?”

Madam Bai replied sadly, “That’s right, my husband is the most easily jealous and most unreasonable man in the world, he kept thinking that once he leaves, I will flirt with other men.”

Hua Wu Que stared at her blankly, unable to talk at all.

Madam Bai continued, “You see that I am quite finely dressed, and think this is strange, right?”

She carried on with a long sigh, “If someone were to take a look at me, he will kill that person. How that you have seen me, even if you do not save me, he will still look for you to settle scores.”

Hua Wu Que smiled bitterly, “What I hate most, are people who bully women and girls. Even if I did not require Madam’s help, even if such a thing did not happen, I will still save Madam no matter what.”

Tie Xin Lan laid in the darkness, and waited for a long time. Suddenly, she heard an earth-shattering roar of a tiger, but after that roar, the surroundings reverted to quietness, with no movements at all. This quietness worries Tie Xin Lan more than no movement at all.

She waited for a while more, and became more anxious as she waited, until she could take it no longer, she finally jumped out from her hiding place. No matter what she must take a look to see what had happened.

Tie Xin lan leaped up to the top of the wall. She had just jumped up the wall when suddenly there was a flash of light. It was a specially made lantern, a ray of light flashed past her face like lightning.

Then, in the darkened main hall, someone laughed slowly, “And I thought who could it be, so it’s Miss Tie Xin Lan.”

Tie Xin Lan was stunned, and almost froze on the wall, and asked hoarsely, “Who are you?”

“Miss need only to walk in and take a look, and you will know who I am.”

Tie Xin Lan felt both surprise and suspicion, so how would she dare to walk into this darkened main hall rashly.

That person laughed and added, “Since Miss is already here, it’s better that you come in and take a look, or else, even Miss’s two friends cannot leave with their level of martial arts, with Miss capabilities, do you think you are able to leave?”

Tie Xin Lan started shaking, “Could Hua Wu Que have already fallen into other’s trap, and have met with misfortune?”

That person replied in the darkness, “Under the pillar next to the stone steps, there’s a lamp and a flint, Miss better light the lamp before coming in. Others have always said that under the light, I am a very handsome man.”

Tie Xin Lan hesitated again, “What devious plot can this be?”

But no matter what, light can usually bring some courage to people, the danger of darkness is larger. Therefore she searched for the lamp and lighted it. Tie Xin Lan held on to the lamp tightly, and walked into the main hall slowly.

There is no one in the main hall at all. The huge incense urn, the faded yellow curtain, the enormous yet legendary statues of gods… the lamp seem to have suddenly dimmed.

Tie Xin Lan can’t help but felt a cold shiver, and asked loudly, “Who are you exactly? Why are you hiding?”

No one answered, and there is no one to be seen as well. Could it be that those wooden statues are playing tricks on a mortal girl?

Tie Xin Lan dare not lift her head, but she can’t help but lift it. The enormous mountain god, was riding on a ferocious tiger, and looked as if he is smiling sinisterly at her.

Tie Xin Lan almost felt like throwing down the lamp and running away. The copper lamp turned cold, her hands have started shaking. Suddenly, mad laughter could suddenly be heard from behind the statue.

Someone laughed loudly, “Tie Xin Lan oh Tie Xin Lan, you are really quite brave.” This voice shockingly sounded like it was coming from the wooden statue.

But Tie Xin Lan instead composed herself and asked with an icy smile, “Since you invited me in, why are you hiding behind the statue and dare not see me.”

That person laughed loudly, “A woman’s bravery, is sometimes really more than a man’s. I had wanted to give you a scare, but did not expect you to see through the loophole.”

Following the laughter, a person turned out slowly from behind the statue, the flickering lamplight shone on his pale face and sharp eyes. He is indeed a very handsome man. But when Tie Xin Lan saw this man, she was even more surprised that if she had seen the devil.

She exclaimed hoarsely, “Jiang Yu Lang, it’s you!”

Jiang Yu Lang smiled, “That’s right, it’s me. I played a trick on you earlier, were you frightened?”

Tie Xin Lan retreated step by step, “You… what do you want?”

Jiang Yu Lang smiled a little, “We are old friends, why are you so afraid on seeing me?”

Even Tie Xin Lan’s toes have turned cold, but she forced a thread of smile on her face and said, “Who said that I’m afraid, I’m very happy as well.”

As she spoke, her legs were still moving backwards. She suddenly threw the lamp in her hands towards Jiang Yu Lang’s face and flew out of the main hall. She suddenly ran into someone’s arms!

Tie Xin Lan need not use her eyes to see, and she already knew who this person is. This person’s clothes is soft and smooth, so smooth that it feels like a foul

poisonous snake.

This person's hands are also soft and smooth. He actually hugged Tie Xin Lan lightly and asked gently, "Why did you escape, do you fear me?"

Tie Xin Lan's whole body weakened, her whole body started shivering. She did not even have the energy to push him away.

Jiang Yu Lang lightly caressed her shoulder and asked slowly, "Tell me, what are you actually afraid of?"

Tie Xin Lan tried her best to calm her racing heart. She stamped her feet and cried, "I'm going to ignore you, you scared me half to death just now, why should I be bothered with you?"

She knows that she is definitely not Jiang Yu Lang's match. She knows that at this point in time, a girl's wiles is her only weapon.

Jiang Yu Lang really smiled, and laughed loudly "You're really an adorable woman, no wonder both Xiao Yu'er and Hua Wu Que are smitten over you."

Tie Xin Lan interrupted, "You think that you cannot be compared to them?"

Jiang Yu Lang squinted his eyes and asked, "How do you think I fare compared to them?"

Tie Xin Lan replied, "They are still kids, but you… you're already a man."

Jiang Yu Lang laughed heartily "You really have good taste, a pity why you did not let me know earlier!"

He hugged Tie Xin Lan even tighter, Tie Xin Lan almost felt like vomiting.

However, she said with a coquettish smile, "Are you stupid, do you need to wait for me to tell you."

In this cooling night breeze, in this quiet darkness, with such a gentle and beautiful woman in his arms… no matter how formidable Jiang Yu Lang is, his heart should have softened as well.

Tie Xin Lan's voice became even more gently, and said slowly, "Now, I don't mind telling you, actually I have already…"

She has been ready for some time, right now energy has gathered in her arm and with all the strength in her body, she hit towards Jiang Yu Lang's waist.

But her hand had only just moved, and Jiang Yu Lang has already pressed down the acupoint on both her shoulders. She can't even exert an ounce of strength now. Jiang Yu Lang, this devil, had already seen through her intentions.

She only felt Jiang Yu Lang's hands slide down her back, and along the way pressing another seven to eight acupoints and immediately she cannot move even her fingers.

But Jiang Yu Lang's hands continued moving along her body, and he chuckled, "I know you have already taken a liking to me, I will not let you down tonight."

His cold and gentle hands, have already slipped into her clothes. The skin on Tie Xin Lan's body started trembling under his fingers. This is her virginal territory, and now it has been invaded by this evil man. She felt as if her soul had left her body, her heart had left her chest. She felt like dying! The warm air coming out from Jiang Yu Lang's mouth covered her ears.

Jiang Yu Lang laughed quietly, "You need not be afraid, I'll be very gentle towards you, extremely, extremely gentle… you will immediately realize, that comparing Xiao Yu'er and Hua Wu Que to me, they are really just kids."

Tie Xin Lan bit on her lips and did not scream at all. She knows that at this point in time, not only is screaming and struggling useless, it will instead excite Jiang Yu Lang's beastly impulses further. She is already prepared to accept this disastrous fate. She shut her eyes, her tears flowing like a river.

Who would have expect that right at this time, Jiang Yu Lang's hands suddenly stopped moving. Before Tie Xin Lan could realize what was happening, Jiang Yu Lang had already pushed her away. She fell helplessly, and landed on the floor. She immediately saw a woman.

This woman was dressed in snowy white clothes, on her pale face, her eyes looked at Jiang Yu Lang without moving. In her icy eyes, there was neither anger nor sadness.

Jiang Yu Lang clapped his hands and said with a forced smile, "This lass here is treating me like a fool, she actually wanted to trick me, so how can I not teach her a lesson."

That girl still looked at him icily, not speaking at all.

"Are you jealous?" He caressed her face with a grin, and continued, "You don't have to be angry, and all the more you don't have to be jealous, you know that you are the only person I truly like in my heart." The girl just stood there unmoving like a piece of wood, letting him touch her.

That girl finally spoke. She stared at Jiang Yu Lang and said each word clearly, "I don't care if you're lying or not, from now on, if I see you touch even a finger of another woman, I will kill you immediately and then commit suicide in front of you."

End of Chapter 77

Chapter 67

Chapter 78

Jiang Yu Lang stuck his tongue out and laughed, “You’re really full of doubts, with such a pretty wife like you, would I be eyeing others?” He caressed Tie Ping Gu’s neck and kissed her on her cheek.

She lowered her head, her eyes seemed to be a little wet, and continued softly, “You must know, you’re not only the first man in my whole life, but also the only person who has been so close to me in my life. No matter what you have done is real or fake, as long as you treat me like this forever, I’ll be satisfied. Even if you were to commit other evil deeds, I… I… “ She bit down on her lips, unable to continue her words.

Tie Xin Lan looked at her, and listening to her words, can’t help but secretly sigh in her heart, “What a lonely woman this is, and what a pitiful woman. She obviously knows that Jiang Yu Lang is being false towards her, and yet she accepted his false affections, could it be that she cannot tolerate any more loneliness?” Tie Xin Lan felt pity and pain at the same time.

There’s actually a secret tunnel under the hall.

This tunnel can lead to a few underground rooms, and Tie Xin Lan was sent to a very comfortable room by Tie Ping Gu.

She immediately realized that the ‘man in black’ is already in this room. He was draped over a chair, obviously his acupoints were also sealed by someone.

What surprised Tie Xin Lan was the young lady sitting opposite this ‘man in black’.

This young lady has a pair big and pretty eyes, but a pity that this pair of huge eyes which should be sharp, is now filled with a layer of haze.

She stared dully at that ‘man in black’, as if she’s thinking about something. That ‘man in black’ also stared dazedly at her.

“Why is Murong Jiu here as well?” Tie Xin Lan can’t help but gasp in surprise.

Jiang Yu Lang looked at them and laughed loudly, “There’s also an old friend of yours here, right?”

Tie Xin Lan gritted her teeth, and managed to stop herself from scolding him.

Jiang Yu Lang walked towards Black Spider and laughed, “Brother Spider, another friend has come to see you, why are you ignoring her?”

Only now did Black Spider seem to rouse from his dream, and taking a look at Tie Xin Lan, asked in shock, “You? … Why are you here as well?”

Tie Xin lan replied with a bitter smile, “We had wanted to… wanted to come and help you.”

Jiang Yu Lang raised his head heavenward and laughed madly, “A pity that no one else in the world can save you now!”

Tue Xin lan gritted her teeth and said, “Don’t you forget, there’s still Master Hua…”

Jiang Yu Lang was breathless from laughing, and continued with another bout of laughter, “Hua Wu Que is now waiting for others to save him.”

Hua Wu Que finally released the lock on Madam Bai’s neck.

He heaved a long sigh and asked, “Can Madam stand up now?”

However Madam Bai's body collapsed onto the hay and said breathlessly, "How can I stand up now?"

Hua Wu Que was stunned, "Why can't you stand up?"

Madam Bai sighed, "Silly, can't you see that I don't even have an ounce of strength now."

Her address of him actually changed from 'Master' to 'Silly'. Hua Wu Que could only reach out to support her arm.

However, Madam Bai seemed to be paralyzed on the floor, and he was unable to help her up. If not for the fact that his legs were steady, he would have been dragged down onto the hay by Madam Bai.

He can only reach out to support Madam Bai's waist.

Madam Bai suddenly started squirming and giggled, "… me to death, so you're not a kind person as well, you're deliberately making fun of me."

Hua Wu Que blushed again, and said, "That is not my intention."

Madam Bai bit her lips and said, "Who knows if that's really not your intention!"

Hua Wu Que dare not look at her eyes, and turned his head around, saying "If Madam still does not get up, I will have to…"

Madam Bai said smoothly, "Silly, a big man like you, have you lost your senses once you meet with such a small problem?"

Hua Wu Que sighed, "So what would Madam like me to do?"

"If you can't help me up, can't you carry me up?" Her cheeks were flushed, her

ample bosom raising up and down…

If it was Jiang Yu Lang, it'll be strange if he does not dash forward to carry her. If it was Xiao Yu'er, he would have given her a tight slap, and then ask her what is her intention.

But Hua Wu Que, all the women in the world are his bane. Not only will he not be rude to them, but he will not show his temper towards them.

Even up to this point in time, he has not realized that this dainty and weak lady, is actually ten times more dangerous than the white ferocious tiger at the side.

Hua Wu Que was silent for a moment before he sighed and said gently, "If Madam really cannot stand up right now, I will just wait here."

Madam Bai rolled her eyes and laughed, "What if I can't stand even after two hours?"

Hua Wu Que replied, "I have always been very patient."

Madam Bai chuckled, "What if I still cannot stand after three days and nights, are you going to wait three days and nights?"

Hua Wu Que is still not angry, and replied with a slight smile, "I know that Madam would never let me wait three days and nights."

She suddenly sighed lightly, jumped up and leaped into Hua Wu Que's arms.

Only now did Hua Wu Que became alarmed and asked, "Madam, you…"

"Oh no, my… my husband is back."

Hua Wu Que's face colored as well and asked hoarsely, "Where?"

Madam Bai started trembling and stammered, “At…. Right at…”

Suddenly a person can be heard shouting from outside, “Right here!”

With a loud bang, the window on the left side was shattered to pieces, a burly man flew straight in from the shattered window frame.

He was wearing a multicolored brocade outfit, his complexion tanned, his reddish beard that looked like iron, his eyes so bright that no one would dare to stare at him.

Hua Wu Que had long wanted to push Madam Bai away, but Madam Bai held on to his neck tightly, refusing to let go, as if she is frightened to death.

Naturally that burly man’s eyes were almost cracking at the sight and he roared, “S.lut, look what you’ve done?”

He leaped into the hall with one jump, and that ferocious tiger walked over wagging its tail, like an obedient pet dog. However, with one punch, the burly man sent the ferocious tiger which was more than a hundred kilos almost flying, and it landed about ten feet away. The man jumped on his feet and scolded, “What a useless thing, I wanted you to keep an eye on this b.itch but you only know how to sleep.”

The ferocious tiger did not make any sound at all, but stood up with a flip, and squatted at the side obediently. Looking at it’s dejected look, it looked even worse than a sick cat.

Hua Wu Que was completely stunned by the sight, and can’t help but say, “Please hold your temper for a moment, and listen to me…”

It would not have been so bad if he had not spoken, but once he spoke, the burly man flew into a bigger rage and roared, “Listen to you what, listen to you my a.ss! My front leg has just left the house and you adulterous couple have done something shameless. I have long known that this b.itch is a born s.lut, that she would actually take a liking to a young brat like you!”

Madam Bai instead shouted, “To tell you the truth, we have been together for two, three years, once you leave, we will become intimate, so what can you do?”

The bury man looked heavenward and roared, beating his own chest and hollered, “How deathly infuriating!”

But Hua Wu Que was ten times more infuriated than him, and gasped, “Madam… Madam Bai, I have no enmity with you, you… why did you…”

Madam Bai said gently, “Good man, what are you afraid of, anyway since things have come to this, why don’t we lay it clear to him, right?”

Hua Wu Que was so angry that his hands were shaking, and spluttered, “You… you…”

The burly man shouted angrily, “It’s useless even if you lay things clear, if you adulterous couple are thinking of making me a cuckold, you’re dreaming!”

He dashed over with a roar, striking with his fist!

The force of the fist attack actually caused all the flames in the hall to flicker, and Hua Wu Que’s clothes were also fluttering from the force!

He really did not want to fight this unwarranted battle, and with a shake of his body, lightly avoided the attack!

The burly man was even more enraged and yelled, “Rascal, no wonder you dare to steal another’s wife, so you have some skills!”

Amidst his shout, another three punches were thrown. Hua Wu Que moved and avoided the strikes, if it’s possible not to retaliate, he really would prefer not to fight back.

But not only was that burly man’s punches powerful, his styles were extremely

sharp and vicious. His martial arts ability far exceeded Hua Wu Que's expectations.

Hua Wu Que really had no choice but to fight back now. He struck with his left fist, and his right hand skillfully drew half an arc.

This is exactly the amazing 'Shifting Flower grafting Jade' which had stunned the world. No matter who the person is, once they have been lured by this strange pull, the moves that they execute will all end up on themselves.

Who would have expected that the man would give a roar, and his body moved stiffly back, and he actually forcefully stopped his own fist attack halfway!

The power of his punch was so forceful, that he must not have any reserve energy left, and now that the force of his attack suddenly rebounded, no one should be able to block that.

Hua Wu Que did not expect that this person can actually nullify the powers of 'Shifting Flower Grafting Jade'. Besides 'Yan Nan Tian', this is the second person that he has ever seen doing it! He cannot help but be startled at the depth of this man's powers, it is unimaginable!

The burly man looked at him and smiled sinisterly, "So you're from Floral Palace, no wonder it's so strange… but with that little skill of yours, what can you do to me Bai Shan Jun. It would be better if you asked your Teacher out."

He attacked with his fists again, his powers even more intense, as if he does not take into regard the earth shattering 'Shifting Flower Grafting Jade' at all. Now he has no choice but to fight back.

The martial arts of Bai Shan Jun, have evoked a feeling of hostility. Since he have suddenly met with such a strong opponent, he always wants to see who is the better!

Madam Bai stood at the side clapping and cheering, "That's right, no need to fear fim. For my sake, you should have had it out with him!"

Although Hua Wu Que heard the cheers, but the more he thought about it, the more unhappy he is, but now it's like he's riding on a tiger, difficult to dismount even if he wanted to.

He really cannot fathom what tricks this Madam Bai is up to!

Bai Shan Jun's fist attacks are becoming more vicious. He seemed to be using all his strength in his every strike and every punch, so much so that it looked like he has used up all his strength, but when his second punch flew out, it's power seemed to be equally vicious as the first punch.

However, Hua Wu Que's body moved like a wild goose, like a swimming dragon, dancing around the hall. Bai Shan Jun's attack may be so powerful that it causes his clothes to flutter around like a dance, but it still could not do anything to him.

Madam Bai laughed affectionately, "Good man, I really did not see that you actually have such good martial arts. With a lover like you, what do I have to fear. Hurry up and kill this old man, then we can forever become husband and wife in peace."

Her words were becoming more outrageous, and Hua Wu Que is unable to seal her lips nor stop himself from listening, and although he could remain calm, but he was still a little distracted. However, Bai Shan Jun's fist attacks allow no room for any distraction.

Madam Bai suddenly gasp in alarm, "Aiyo, be careful of his next move Tiger Claws Grabbing the Heart!" Amidst her scream, Bai Shan Jun really struck out with his fingers as he roared like a tiger.

This move does not seem to be particularly powerful, Hua Wu Que just stepped back slightly and avoided it, but he was feeling perplexed as to why madam Bai would suddenly scream. He knows there must be a trick somewhere.

But there is no time for him to think now. He took another step back and the back of both his knees were struck by a secret weapon.

He fell stiffly down, still unaware that the secret weapon was thrown by Madam Bai. But Madam Bai had already walked over and hugged Bai Shan Jun's neck, sighing affectionately, "I thought I had fallen in love with someone else, but once you started fighting, I realize that the person I love will always be you. I would rather kill all the men in the world then to see others lay a finger on you."

Hua Wu Que sighed and closed his eyes, thinking in his heart, "Hai, women…"

Only now did he understand why Xiao Yu'er finds women a headache.

He heard Bai Shan Jun laugh madly, his laughter getting nearer and nearer, and finally reaching his side. He shut his eyes tightly, and did not feel like talking, listening and all the more, seeing.

Bai Shan Jun laughed wildly, "Now you should know my wife's prowess. Whoever is associated with her, will certainly meet with misfortune. You're so young, and don't look stupid, why of all things must you do this?"

Hua Wu Que gritted his teeth, having no wish to defend himself. However, Bai Shan Hu grabbed him by his collar and dragged him away.

He felt Bai Shan Jun put him down on a short cot and flipped him over, facing down, and he actually took off his pants.

Hua Wu Que immediately shouted in alarm, "You… what are you trying to do?" He struggled to lift his head and opened his eyes!

He saw Bai Shan Jun standing next to the cot grinning, but there was no trace of viciousness on his face. He was holding a shiny black horseshoe, and said slowly, "The viciousness of my wife's secret weapons, even the Yan Nan Tian of yesteryear would have a slight headache on hearing them. Both your legs have been struck by one, if I don't use this Magnetic Steel Star to suck them out, you can forget about walking for the rest of your life."

Hua Wu Que was both surprised and suspicious, and asked, "You… why are you

saving me?”

Bai Shan Hu suddenly chortled loudly, “Do you think I really believe my wife’s words?”

By now he has extracted two small needles as fine as a cow’s hair from the back of Hua Wu Que’s legs. The needles may be small, but when it was pinned in Hua Wu Que’s legs, his whole body became so weak that he could not move even his finger.

Now that the needle has been sucked away, Hua Wu Que immediately regained his strength miraculously, and stood up with a flip. He stared at Bai Shan Jun and asked, “Since you do not believe her words, then earlier why… why were you so furious?”

He seemed to have fallen into dense fog, unable to understand anything at all.

Bai Shan Jun slapped his shoulder and smiled, “Lad, I know you have been confused, sit down and listen to me then.”

Hua Wu Que smiled bitterly, “I was thinking of seeking some clarification.”

Bai Shan Jun actually sighed as well, and also said with a bitter smile, “Do you know, there is a type of strange people in the world, if others were to love or respect her, she would feel tortured. If you were to humiliate and torture her, she would instead feel more comfortable and happy.”

Hua Wu Que was surprised, but can’t help but think it’s a little funny as well, and asked, “Are there really people like that in the world?”

Bai Shan Jun smiled bitterly, “Naturally there is, my wife is one of them.”

“She… how did she end up like that?”

Bai Shan Jun sighed, “It seems that she has been like that since young. Not

only does she like others to torture her since young, but she will also torture herself. When she's older, this behavior became worse. She can't even stay in a normal house and insist of decorating her place to look like a horse stable, and even want me to chain her up."

Hua Wu Que sighed, "So she willingly suffers it, and I had thought…"

Bai Shan Jun continued, "Although I know this problem of hers, but sometimes I really cannot bear to hit or, nor am I willing to, so she often angers me deliberately so that I will beat her up."

Hua Wu Que sighed, "What happened today, I guess must be for this reason then."

Bai Shan Jun said, "She is slowly growing old, and kept thinking that I will grow sick of her and find another love, so she will frequently try to stir my jealousy…"

"Actually all these acts of Madam Bai are unnecessary, your love for your wife, since the beginning, has never changed, right?"

Bai Shan Jun lifted his head and laughed, "That's right, I only care about her happiness, but I let Friend here become disadvantaged. The truth is, it's our fault, to hit or to punish, I will let Friend decide, how about that!"

Hua Wu Que arranged his clothes and said with a slight smile, "To tell you the truth, I was feeling a little angered over this matter. But after listening to your words, not only do I sympathize with your situation, I also greatly respect the depth of your love towards your wife. Besides, I have lost in your hands and became your prisoner, so you should decide on what to do with me."

He suddenly stopped talking, because he had just taken two steps, when he suddenly realize that although he can move effortlessly now, but he was unable to breath deeply to his waist.

Hua Wu Que asked calmly, "Why did you secretly do something to my waist?"

Bai Shan Jun seemed to be startled, and replied hoarsely, “Really? I guess it must have been when I was pulling out the needles for you earlier, and carelessly struck that ‘Gossamer Needle’ into some acupoint at your waist.”

Hua Wu Que said slowly, “It’s right under the ‘Laughter Acupoint’.”

Bai Shan Jum seemed anxious, and interrupted, “If it’s near the Laughter Acupoint, then it’ll be troublesome. I really dare not pull the needle out for you rashly, or else if I’m not careful, and that Gossamer Needle were to pierce your Laughter Acupoint, even the gods won’t be able to save you. I can only stand and see you laugh madly for three days, until you die from laughter.”

Hua Wu Que was silent for a moment and said, “Since that is the case, I can only take my leave, and find another way.”

Bai Shan Jun sighed, “If you were to walk recklessly now, the Gossamer Needle would move with the movement of your blood, and pierce your Laugher Acupoint. No matter how careful you are, you still cannot take more than seventy steps.”

Hua Wu Que paused in his steps and turned around slowly, staring at him quietly. After a long, long moment, he heaved a long sigh and said with a bitter smile as he shook his head, “The ways of you and your wife, are really difficult to fathom. Your wife does not wish to be a human, but would rather be a horse. We shall not speak about her, but you…”

Bai Shan Jun stared at him for a long while before slowly saying, “You really still do not know who I am?”

Hua Wu Que replied, “I have never been very experienced.”

Bai Shan Jun laughed, “That’s right, the disciples of Floral Palace, naturally would not take note of the figures in the martial arts realm… but the name ‘Twelve Zodiacs’, have you never heard it being mentioned before as well?”

Hua Wu Que gasped in recognition, “That’s right, ‘Shan Jun’ refers to tigers, no

wonder not only do you use tiger to represent you, but you kept a tiger as a slave. ‘Ma’ (horse) refers to the ‘tiger’s wife’, no wonder your wife would rather be a horse than a human.”

Bai Shan Jun laughed loudly, “Since you already know who I am now, then all the more you should know that those in the ‘Twelve Zodiacs’ are enemies with Floral Palace. Since you are now in my hands, are you not afraid?”

With no change in his expression, Hua Wu Que replied lightly, “If you had wanted to strike, you need not have saved me earlier. Since you saved me earlier, I guess there is something that you need my help with. Since you require my help, would I still be afraid?”

Bai Shan Jun laughed loudly again, but as he laughed, he suddenly became serious again, and said “That’s right, I really have something to ask of you. As long as you tell me the secret to this skill Shifting Flower Grafting Jade, not only will I release you immediately, but I will agree to any request of yours.”

Hua Wu Que suddenly laughed as well, “If you think that the secret of Shifting Flower Grafting Jade can be obtained so easily, then you will be greatly disappointed.”

Bai Shan Jun’s expression changed, “You dare to not reveal it?”

Hua Wu Que replied with ease, “There are many ways to make people talk in the world, some use life and death as threats, some use torture, some use wealth or women. Why don’t you try all of them, and see if you can make me talk.”

Bai Shan Jun was silent for a moment before he suddenly smiled and said, “I have no plans to think about, nor do I wish to waste my energy, so it seems like I can only leave. If you wish to stay, then stay, leave if you want to, I can’t be bothered with you. But in case you want to look for me, you just need to shout and I will come.”

He was actually leaving as he said he would, and before he had finished his words, he had walked away.

This move is out of Hua Wu Que's expectations again, and for a moment he felt at a loss. Bai Shan Jun had just walked out the door when he turned back again and said with a smile, "But don't you forget as well, don't ever take more than seventy steps, or else the taste of dying from laughter, is really worse than dying by any other means."

End of Chapter 78

Chapter 68

Chapter 79

Hua Wu Que looked at Bai Shan Jun walking out the door. He could have followed behind him, but he can only stand there dismally, unable to move at all.

He knows that Bai Shan Jun's words were not meant to deceive him. Although he can walk out, he does not wish to gamble with his life, to gamble if he can take more than seventy steps. Right at this time, he suddenly heard a roar.

The windows in the room were originally tightly closed, but after the roar, a gust of wind suddenly blew up, and the lamp started wavering. All the chairs and tables also seemed to collapse from the wind! Hua Wu Que's face colored, the tiger has already entered the hall.

The tiger has already regained its authority as the king of the jungle. Although it's steps were slow, but every step seemed to carry the weight of a thousand kilos!

A pity that he can't even gather his strength now, and is defenseless against even a chicken, much less a tiger. Since the tiger has come straight in, he can only retreat step by step.

The ferocious tiger is now in front of him, it's tail erect like a flag pole, followed by a leap, a heave and a cut, and this is something that the Hua Wu Que now cannot block.

Cold beads of sweat starting flowing down Hua Wu Que's forehead! If he does not call out to Bai Shan Jun for help now, it is unavoidable that he will be torn to pieces by tiger claws and made into a meal for the tiger.

Although he does not wish to die, and look upon life as something extremely precious, but for someone like him, how can he willingly cry for help?

There was another roar, a few vases shattered into pieces with a ‘clang’!

Jiang Yu Lang has walked out, laughing madly. Listening to his gloating laughter, Tie Xin Lan’s limbs felt cold.

She knows that although Jiang Yu Lang is evil, but he’s a coward. If he is not confident that he can defeat Hua Wu Que, he would not be gloating so much now, or be so assured!

Tears, have already started flowing out from her eyes.

Suddenly Black Spider laughed coldly, “A woman after all. Death, what’s the big deal about it, is there a need to cry so miserably?”

Tie Xin Lan chewed her lips and said, “You… you think that I am feeling sad for myself?”

Black Spider suddenly stared at her, “Could it be because of that Hua person?”

Tie Xin Lan lowered her head, and Black Spider asked loudly, “If it was Xiao Yu’er who died, would you be this sad as well?”

Tie Xin Lan suddenly lifted her head and looked at him for a moment before smiling sadly, “If he dies, do you think I can still live?”

“Since that is the case, then why are you feeling sad for others… a woman can only be sad for a man. The lives and deaths of other men, she should not take it to heart.”

Tie Xin Lan heaved a long sigh and said dejectedly, “The affairs of my heart, you will not understand, you will never understand, no one else would

understand.”

Tie Xin Lan turned her gaze towards Murong Jiu. Murong Jiu was still standing there dazedly, and have not moved even her finger at all, as if she will never move again.

Tie Xin Lan smiled sadly, “Aren’t you here because you want to save others as well?”

Black Spider shouted, “That’s right, I came to save her! But I am willing to die for her. Other than her, even if other women were to die in front of me, I might not even lift a hand.”

Tie Xin Lan looked at him and said sorrowfully, “But no matter how good you treat her, or how true, she will not know.”

Black Spider stared at her angrily and said each word slowly, “Let me tell you, how good I treat her, I do not need her to know, nor is there a need for her to treat me well. I love her means I love her, there are no other conditions!”

Tie Xin Lan quivered, “Even if she will not love you in future, or even ignore you, you will still love her?”

Black Spider replied loudly, “That’s right, I love her, not because I want her to marry me. As long as she can live well, it doesn’t matter even if I die.”

Tie Xin Lan was silent for a moment, and tears dropped again. She said melancholically, “If a woman in her whole life, can have this kind of love, it won’t matter even if she dies, she is already satisfied…”

She lifted her head, suddenly realizing that Murong Jiu’s face is full of tears now.

Tie Xin Lan was shocked and ecstatic, and said loudly, “Can you understand our conversation? Can you understand his feelings now?”

Although tears kept flowing from Murong Jiu's eyes, but her gaze was still dull. A flicker of excitement and joy had shone on Black Spider's face, but now the shine had dimmed again.

Tie Xin Lan said gently, "You don't have to feel bad, although she has lost her senses now, but your true feelings have obviously touched her. As long as your heart remains unchanged, the day will come when she will be able to feel it all."

Suddenly a person was heard giggling, "The day will come…. Heh heh, I'm afraid that day will never come."

Jiang Yu Lang sauntered in again. Tie Xin lan asked in surprise, "Why did you come back for?"

Jiang Yu Lang grinned, "Naturally I came to see you." He strolled over to Tie Xin Lan and extended his hand to touch her face.

Tie Xin Lan immedialty shrieked, "You… don't you forget, that lady in white said…"

Jiang Yu Lang laughed loudly, "Naturally I would not forget her, so I've already given her some calming medicine. Now she is sleeping soundly, so even if you were to scream yourself hoarse, she will not hear."

Tie Xin Lan started trembling involuntarily and screamed, "If you touch even a finger of mine, I will…. I will tell her."

Jiang Yu Lang chuckled, "No, you won't tell her. I guarantee that when she wakes up, you will not be able to talk at all."

His hand have slipped slowly from her shoulder to her chest.

Even Tie Xin Lan's blood have run cold, and she stammered, "Ple… please, don't do that, please kill me."

Jiang Yu Lang laughed, “Kill you? Why would I want to kill you now? The lover of Jiang Xiao Yu and Hua Wu Que, if I don’t enjoy myself, won’t I be letting them down?”

With a loud laugh he carried Tie Xin Lan and said with a wicked grin, “To tell you the truth, I want to have you irregardless of everything, not really because I have really taken a liking to you, but because Hua Wu Que and Jiang Xiao Yu…”

Tie Xin Lan can no longer hear his words, she had passed out.

Although Black Spider was gritting his teeth so tightly that it was chattering, but he can only watch as Jiang Yu Lang carried her out the door, watch as she is about to be violated.

The ferocious tiger got ready to pounce, Hua Wu Que can almost see himself dying at the claws of the tiger.

Right at this time, he suddenly noticed a painting that was hanging by his side was stuck firmly to the wall and the frame at the bottom was also stuck tightly to the wall.

Without a thought, Hua Wu Que reached out and with a pull of the frame, the whole painting suddenly sank in and a door appeared. He immediately dashed in.

There was another earth shattering roar, but Hua Wu Que had already shut the secret door.

Although Hua Wu Que would like to take a look at the situation within the door, but he really did not dare to carelessly take another step. With every step that he took, the next step could be a fatal step!

But right then there was a trembling voice that drifted out, “Please, don’t do that, please kill me!”

Shockingly, this is Tie Xin Lan’s screams.

A hot rush of blood flooded to Hua Wu Que's head, and without any care, he walked over with large steps!

Jiang Yu Lang was gloating and was just about to carry Tie Xin Lan out the door when he suddenly realized someone was standing at the door, blocking his path.

The light shone on this person's pale, furious but handsome face, and it's actually Hua Wu Que, but there were no trace of Bai Shan Jun and Madam Bai.

Jiang Yu Lang felt as though he had been whipped and immediately staggered a few steps back.

Hua Wu Que stared at him furiously. If at this moment he can gather even an ounce of energy, Hua Wu Que will not let this vicious and despicable scum continue to live on this earth.

Luckily Jiang Yu Lang does not know that he does not have the power to hurt, so even if Jiang Yu Lang had borrowed another gut, he would never dare to strike against him.

Hua Wu Que only sighed in the darkness and said slowly, "Aren't you going to put her down?"

Jiang Yu Lang's face was full of smiles when he respectfully placed Tie Xin Lan on the chair.

Hua Wu Que said, "I do not wish to hurt you either, you… better leave quickly."

Jiang Yu Lang looked as if he has been given a big pardon and escaped in a flash, all the while smiling awkwardly, "Little brother will obey… little brother will obey!"

Black Spider can't help but roared, "Hua, what do you mean by that? This kind of person, why don't you kill him?"

Hua Wu Que replied with a bitter smile, “It will dirty my hands if I kill him, just let him go.”

He was afraid that Jiang Yu Lang might be eavesdropping, so naturally he dare not reveal the real reason.

Black Spider retorted angrily, “You’re afraid of dirtying your precious hands, but I’m not afraid. Release my acupoint quickly, I’ll go and settle scores with him.”

Hua Wu Que was stunned, where can he find the strength to unseal other’s acupoints? He can only pretend not to have heard.

Black Spider was furious, “Aren’t you willing to help me as well? Will I dirty your hands as well?”

Hua Wu Que can only lower his head, and walked towards Tie Xin Lan. It took him more than ten steps before he reached her, and he felt that the walk was so long that it’s frightening.

Black Spider laughed frostily, “Good, very good, so you’re that kind of a person. We have really seen wrongly. A person like you, if your finger even touches me, I’ll feel nauseous instead.”

Hua Wu Que sighed secretly, he has nothing he can say.

He has never been insulted thus in his whole life, but now he can only endure it, because if he were to reveal the truth now, and if Jiang Yu Lang heard it, all of them can forget about living. The only person Jiang Yu Lang fears now is him, and isn’t he on his guard against Jiang Yu Lang as well. By now Tie Xin Lan has slowly regained consciousness.

Once she saw Hua Wu Que, her teary eyes immediately brightened, and gasped with happiness, “You’re here! You’re really here, I just know that no one can hurt you, I’ve known long ago that you will surely come and save us.”

Black Spider laughed coldly, “If I need someone like that to save me, I’d rather die.”

Tie Xin Lan asked curiously, “You… why do you speak to him like that?”

Suddenly a person was heard commenting, “Master Hua cannot even save himself now, where can he find the energy to save you, can’t the two of you tell? Why must you force him so?”

Amidst the mad laughter, Jiang Yu Lang had sauntered in again. Hua Wu Que can only look at him walk in, unable to say anything at all.

Tie Xin Lan was shocked stunned, and asked hoarsely, “This… is this true?”

Hua Wu Que heaved a long sigh and said slowly, “Jiang Yu Lang, I did not wish to kill you, but do you really want to come and seek your own death?”

Jiang Yu Lang laughed loudly, “That’s right, I have come to seek my death. Now I am going to carry Miss Tie away, and die on top of her.”

His words may be bold, but no matter what he was still a little apprehensive towards Hua Wu Que, so he walked around him before he dared to go near Tie Xin Lan and carried her up.

Tie Xin Lan screamed, “You… you dare…”

Jiang Yu Lang saw that Hua Wu Que still had not struck, so he became even bolder, and laughed loudly, “Why won’t I dare? Or can our Master Hua do anything to me at all?”

He carried Tie Xin Lan and retreated backwards step by step towards the exit, his eyes still staring at Hua Wu Que.

Hua Wu Que’s perspiration rained down his body. He has already walked fifty, sixty steps, the next step could mean his death!

Jiang Yu Lang laughed wildly, “Hua Wu Que oh Hua Wu Que, why don’t you come over? Where has the martial arts which you thought best in the world gone to? Do you really want to watch me carry your lover up the bed?”

He has already retreated to the door, but deliberately stopped.

Hua Wu Que’s body was shaking. Death, may be frightening, but the more frightening thing is, he knows that if he dies, Tie Xin Lan’s ill-fated outcome still cannot be changed.

Jiang Yu Lang’s hands, invaded Tie Xin Lan’s chest again, and laughed sinisterly, “Look, what a soft chest this is, what smooth skin, the body of a virgin, should have belonged to you totally, but now, it belongs to me. I can enjoy it however I like it!”

Hua Wu Que suddenly walked over step by step!

He knows that even if it means death, even if he knows that he cannot save Tie Xin Lan, but he cannot watch Tie Xin Lan being molested in such a way!

Jiang Yu Lang’s laughter suddenly stopped.

He looked at Hua Wu Que’s frighteningly pale face, and asked in shock, “You… you dare to walk over?”

Hua Wu Que took a deep breath and said, “Put her down.”

Jiang Yu Lang’s gaze flickered, and suddenly realized that although Hua Wu Que’s expression looked serious, but his steps were light, the way a person who does not know any martial arts at all would walk.

Jiang Yu Lang immediately laughed loudly again, “Hua Wu Que, you cannot scare me! I have already seen through, that you have been injured by Bai Shan Jun and his wife, and you can’t even exert an ounce of your martial arts, right?”

Hua Wu Que gritted his teeth and did not speak, still walking forward step by step.

He naturally knows that Jiang Yu Lang spoke the truth, and knows that he is walking towards death, but death is the only way for him now, there are no other choices!

Jiang Yu Lang shouted fiercely, “Good lad, you really have guts! But if you dare to take another step nearer, I will kill you!”

Hua Wu Que sighed secretly, and took another step forward. He suddenly realize that death is not as frightening as he imagined.

Tie Xin Lan can’t help but screamed, “Hua Wu Que, please, don’t come over. I… I’m all right, and I am no good for you, so why place me in your heart?”

Jiang Yu Lang smiled sinisterly, “Don’t you forget, each person only has one life.”

Hua Wu Que replied slowly, “That’s right, life is indeed precious, there is nothing that can exchange for it…”

He smiled slightly, and continued, “So, if I were to die for someone, there’s no need for any exchange of terms with you. Whether she is good to me, or whether she loves me, it doesn’t really matter.”

Tie Xin Lan has gone hoarse from crying, unable to say anything more.

Black Spider finally can’t help by shouted, “A good man! I, Black Spider has never bowed down to anyone in my life, but towards you… I was wrong about you earlier, now I solemnly apologize to you, you… you can go in peace.”

Hua Wu Que smiled, “Thank you.”

He took another step forward again!

Jiang Yu Lang seemed to have been frightened by this relentless courage, he never expect that Hua Wu Que would be like Xiao Yu'er, who will really stake their lives when it is really needed! Life, to others is naturally precious, but in their eyes, they seem to treat it very lightly.

End of Chapter 79

Chapter 69

Chapter 80

Jiang Yu Lang saw that Hua Wu Que is walking slowly towards him, and finally laughed sinisterly, “Fine, since you want to die, then I shall grant you your wish! Killing someone would not spoil my mood for enjoyment.”

His palm is already holding a secret weapon, getting ready to throw it out!

Who would have expected that at this time, Hua Wu Que’s body suddenly started shaking, as if he has been pierced by needles, and then, he actually started laughing madly. His laughter sounded maniac, and Jiang Yu Lang cannot imagine that the gentle Hua Wu Que can actually emit such maniac laughter, and can’t help but ask hoarsely, “Have you gone crazy?”

When Hua Wu Que took the last step, he suddenly felt a needle piercing the weakest and softest part of his whole body, and a strange feeling, painful and ticklish, went straight to his heart.

He can’t help but laughed madly, unable to control it at all, but the energy which was blocked, suddenly surged forward!

Jiang Yu Lang was stunned, and a fistful of silver needles suddenly flew out like rain!

Hua Wu Que shouted amidst his laughter, “You… you dare!”

As he shouted, his hands drew an arc, and the roomful of secret weapons, suddenly disappeared all at once, as if it has been swallowed by the sea, not knowing where they have gone to!

Black Spider's expression changed, "What a brilliant move of Shifting Flower Grafting Jade!"

Jiang Yu Lang was so frightened that his face turned ashen and he shouted in alarm, "Were you pretending just now?

Hua Wu Que replied, "That's right…. Haha… put her down!"

Jiang Yu Lang stammered, "I… I'll put her down, and you'll let me off?"

Jiang Yu Lang stammered, "I… I'll put her down, and you'll let me off?"

Hua Wu Que laughed loudly, "Let… let…."

Jiang Yu Lang knows that once he said something, he will surely keep his word, so he dared not quibble further. He put Tie Xin Lan down, turned around and ran, disappearing in the blink of an eye!

Hua Wu Que laughed madly, but his heart has turned cold! Bai Shan Jun's words are indeed true!

Hua Wu Que gritted his teeth but it could not stop the laughter, so he can only try not to think of this for the moment, and released Tie Xin Lan's acupoint.

Tie Xin Lan stared at him and asked in surprise, "You have tricked all of us, and made us worry for you so, do you think it's very funny?"

Hua Wu Que knows that Tie Xin Lan has misunderstood again, but he could not explain. At this time, he is still afraid that once Tie Xin Lan finds out the truth, she will be upset because of him.

He can only turn around and unseal Black Spider's acupoint first.

Black Spider also asked furiously, “Do you think this joke is very funny?”

Hua Wu Que secretly sighed, who can see the pain in his heart! Others can only see that he seems to be laughing smugly. He dragged Tie Xin Lan up and ran out.

No matter what, Black Spider is very experienced in the martial arts realm, and he finally realised that something is wrong. He was furrowing his brow and thinking about it when he suddenly realized that Murong Jiu is looking at him dully.

He immediately cast aside all thoughts, dragged Murong Jiu and ran out as well!

Tie Xin Lan came in from this tunnel, naturally she knows the way out of the secret room.

Taking advantage of the dark night, they ran into the wilderness. The stars in the sky were slowly disappearing, the quietness of the woods made Hua Wu Que’s laughter sound even more piercing to the ear.

Tie Xin Lan can’t help but ask, “Can you stop laughing now?”

Hua Wu Que’s heart is almost breaking, and he almost wanted to reveal the truth.

But he suddenly thought that, instead of letting Tie Xin Lan wait and see how he dies horribly, why not just let her misunderstand forever. He is dying soon anyway, why make others sad as well?

Tie Xin Lan stamped her feet, “You… If you continue laughing like that, I’m going to leave!”

Hua Wu Que secretly sighed, but he still laughed loudly, “Go then! Haha… Anyway I already know that the person you love is not me… hahaha, go quickly!”

Tie Xin Lan's body trembled and she quivered, "You really want me to leave?"

Hua Wu Que laughed madly, "Yes!"

Tie Xin Lan looked at him dazedly, and retreated step by step. Hua Wu Que is already looking heavenward and laughing wildly, not even giving her a glance.

Tie Xin Lan gritted her teeth and stamped her feet, "Fine, I'll go, I… only now do I realize that you're that kind of a person."

She turned around and ran wildly, her tears flowing down her face. Hua Wu Que was still laughing continuously.

He already knows that he will surely die. He watches as the person he treasures most leaving him, even those that he risked his life to safe does not understand him at all, but he… can only laugh endlessly, laugh endlessly…

The dark, quiet woods, is filled with his sad yet mad laughter. The last lone star, also disappeared into the gray night solemnly.

Hua Wu Que's tears finally flowed uncontrollably down his face as well.

Since young, he has grown up in a cold and heartless world, he never knew what it is like to shed tears, but now… he is crying as he laughed!

Suddenly, Tie Xin Lan came up to him again, looked at him quietly.

Hua Wu Que hurriedly wiped his tears and laughingly asked, "Why have you come back?"

There was a look of fear on Tie Xin Lan's face and she trembled, "Tell me, what is this really all about?

Hua Wu Que replied, "What is it about?… Haha, I just find that you're funny! Hahaha, can't you even be chased away?"

Tie Xin Lan answered, “I know you’re not that kind of person, I cannot leave!”

“You’re not leaving? Haha, fine, I’ll leave!”

He have not even turned around when Tie Xin Lan embraced him, “Tell me, you… have you suffered some strange injury?”

Hua Wu Que laughed loudly, “How I can be injured?”

Tie Xin Lan only felt that his hands are as cold as ice, and berated, “Why won’t you tell the truth?”

Hua Wu Que felt like knives were slashing at his heart, but he can only laugh, laugh without stop.

Tie Xin Lan cried again, “I know it’s because of me that you became like that, you…”

Hua Wu Que laughed wildly, “Because of you… haha, you better go look for Jiang Xiao Yu quickly, go quickly, go quickly!”

Tie Xin Lan cried, “I’m not going, I’m not going to look for anyone, I must accompany you, no one can make me leave.”

Hua Wu Que asked, “What about Jiang Xiao Yu?”

Tie Xin Lan’s tears were glowing and she quivered, “Xiao Yu’er? … I’ve long forgotten about him.”

Hua Wu Que laughed loudly, “But you still cannot forget him, haha…. Love, is not an exchange, hahaha, if you love someone, no matter how he treats you, you will still love him.”

Tie Xin Lan stammered, “I… I…” She finally collapsed onto the floor and cried

bitterly.

Hua Wu Que looked heavenward and laughed, “You better go and look for him…. Take care of him, all right? … Haha… I hope that the two of you will live happily for the rest of your lives…”

The sounds of his laughter suddenly became further away! When Tie Xin Lan lifted her head, Hua Wu Que is missing.

She knows that she can never catch up with him, so she could only cry and scream hoarsely, “Hua Wu Que, you rascal… If you die like that, how can I marry Xiao Yu’er? If you die like that, our whole lives, will there be another day of happiness?”

She used all her strength and shouted, “Hua Wu Que, Hua Wu Que… come back!”

But by now, how could there be a response from Hua Wu Que? Only the cold wind coursing though the woods, seemingly emitting the sounds of sad sobs… When the day breaks, Hua Wu Que’s life will come to an end! He knows that his life will be even shorter than a moth in the cold wind!

Is he going to wait for death just like that?

Hua Wu Que was actually sitting down in dejection, but now he suddenly jumped up.

He looked heavenward and laughed madly, “Hua Wu Que oh Hua Wu Que, at least you’re still living now! You can at least make use of this short life to do something! Even if you were to die, you should not die quietly!”

Heaven and earth resonated with his loud laughter.

He turned around and flew back towards that Shan Jun Temple. The main hall is still dark and eerie.

Hua Wu Que leaped in and with a flying kick, sent the statue of the Shan Jun God falling down, and continued with a mad laughter, “Bai Shan Jun, come out!”

Amidst his mad laughter, Hua Wu Que lifted the statue and threw it heavily into the courtyard, laughing loudly, “Bai Shan Jun, listen, I may be dying, but I will still want to kill all of you vicious people to rid the world of evil!”

Suddenly there was a tiger’s roar, that white tiger had dashed in like an arrow.

Hua Wu Que welcomed it amidst his laughter, and with an evasive move of his body, avoided this ferocious tiger’s unstoppable attack, and with a turn of his back and a palm strike, chopping down on the tiger’s neck!

The movement of Hua Wu Que’s body is like a dragon proudly dancing in the air. How can that ferocious tiger get near to even his clothes, and after three leaps, it had used up its strength!

Hua Wu Que struck with his palm again, and the ferocious tiger is now lying on the floor, unable to move!

There was no one else in the courtyard as well!

Hua Wu Que was full of grief and anger but there was no avenue for him to vent his frustration. He kicked open a door, grabbed a table and threw it far away. The table was smashed to pieces, but even if the whole courtyard was destroyed by him, what use is there?

Hua Wu Que shouted and laughed, “Bai Shan Jun, Bai Shan Jun! Where are you! Why won’t you come out and fight with me!”

Now he only wishes for a fight, and even if he perish in the fight, he is willing!

Hua Wu Que felt a rush of hot blood gushing up, and drops of fresh blood splattered as he laughed wildly, the blood landing on his clothes like flower petals.

He only felt as if his energy is used up, his body swaying, almost falling! His anger, seems to have turned from strong to weak, fading away.

Hua Wu Que suddenly realized that right now he only wishes for someone to be at his side, it doesn't matter who, he really does not want to die alone!

He only hopes to die in battle! But no one seems to be bothered with him, he hopes to die in a crowd, but he almost has no more energy to walk out!

Hua Wu Que staggered backwards and fell into the chair, his eyes staring blearily at the approaching dusk, only hoping that death will come with dusk. He has given up hope, he is actually waiting for death!

But he still cannot help but laugh, laugh continuously, laugh madly. He is laughing the life out of his body, but cannot laugh the bitterness out from his heart!

He can escape everything, but how can he escape his own laughter. This laughter is like a poisonous maggot attached to his bone, which will trap him until he dies!

Now he would not mind giving up everything, if only he can stop this maddening laughter. He tried to cover up his ears, but how can he not hear his own laughter.

This laughter is making him crazy, to make the laughter stop, he is ready to end his own life!

Right at this time, from the boundless dusk, a shadow suddenly appeared!

The fog was thick, like dense smoke, Hua Wu Que finally took a clear look at her face. That beautiful face also seems to carry a deathly look that is devoid of hope!

Madam Bai! This person is actually Madam Bai! She finally appeared after all!

Hua Wu Que had thought that he would dash over as soon as he sees her, but who would have expect that right now he just sat there dully, looking at her dully.

Hua Wu Que thought that she must have come to kill him, but who would have expect

that she only stood quietly in front of him, looking at him quietly.

Hua Wu Que suddenly laughed madly, “You’ve come at the right time, since you’ve arrived, why have you not struck?”

Madam Bai only looked at him without speaking.

“So you’ve only come to watch me die?”

Madam Bai still did not talk.

“Very well, it doesn’t matter why you’ve come, I’m still grateful to you, I was just feeling lonely.”

Madam bai suddenly heaved a long sigh and said sadly, “Poor man, don’t you even have the courage to beg for life?”

Hua Wu Que felt a stab of pain in his heart, and he laughed hoarsely, “You wished for my speedy death, but now you want me to live, don’t you think that my suffering is enough?”

Madam Bai replied, “But I also know that I’ve let you down, and can only beg for your forgiveness.”

Hua Wu Que laughed madly, “Why do you have to say such words? Are you trying to lie to me again?”

Madam Bai lowered her head sadly, “I know that you will never believe me,

but… but can you come with me to see something?”

Hua Wu Que sat there unmoving, his laughter hoarse.

Madam Bai lifted her head and looked at him, quivering, “I only beg of you this one time, no matter that, this won’t cause you any greater harm, right?” The look in her eyes seemed to be full of genuine plea.

Hua Wu Que laughed hoarsely, “That’s right, I am about to die, who else can harm me?”

Finally, he did follow her out.

After passing a few rooms, Hua Wu Que suddenly saw a person hanging upside down across the beam, with fresh blood all over the body, a long knife pierced through the chest.

Hua Wu Que cried hoarsely, “Bai Shan Jun is dead!”

The mad laughter covered the surprise in his voice, and there was even a sense of disappointment in his voice, but definitely no joy. Although he wished to fight with Bai Shan Jun, although he wanted to get rid of this person, but when suddenly faced with the horrible death of this person, he thought of how short a person’s life can be, and can’t find any joy in the death of his opponent.

Madam Bai said slowly, “I want you to see for yourself his body, and precisely because I feel that I have let you down…”

“You killed him?”

Madam Bai heaved a long sigh, “That’s right, it’s I who killed him!” Hua Wu Que staggered back, unable to utter a single word.

Madam Bai secretly took a peep at Hua Wu Que and said, “Why I treated you thus, is because I wanted with all my heart to retain his love. For him, I will not

hesitate to harm anyone, or hesitate to do anything…”

The tears in her eyes fell again, and she almost could not talk with her sobbing.

Hua Wu Que asked, “Since you treat him thus, then why did you kill him?”

She suddenly threw herself into Hua Wu Que’s arms and cried bitterly, “He actually did not take into regards our relationship as husband and wife, he… he… he actually wanted to kill me!”

Hua Wu Que did not push her away at all.

Under such circumstances, he still cannot bear to push a woman who is crying so bitterly in his arms… A bitterly crying woman, lying in the arms of a madly laughing man, next to a bloody corpse hanging from the beam, the strangeness of such a scene is really quite indescribable.

Hua Wu Que asked, “So… you killed him.”

Madam Bai replied, “Actually I would not have hesitated to die for him, but when he really came to kill me, I could not tolerate it any longer. The torture and grievances of the past twenty years, the suffering and pain of the past twenty years, all burst out at that instant. I can’t help but drew my knife and stabbed towards him!”

She continued, heartbroken, “I had thought that this stab would unlikely have injured him, but who would have know that he never expected me to retaliate, so he was totally thrown off guard. This stab of mine, really…. really took his life!”

What can Hua Wu Que say? His laughter is slowly getting hoarse, his legs are slowly getting soft. All the strength is his body has been laughed out!

Hua Wu Que suddenly said, “There is no need to mention what has passed, I… I will not hate you again…”

Madam Bai asked, “You forgive me?”

Hua Wu Que nodded his head, “Have you finished your words?”

Madam Bai replied, “I’ve said what I have to say, you… don’t you have anything to say to me?”

Hua Wu Que asked, “I… I only hope that you…”

Naturally he hopes that Madam Bai can stop his life threatening laughter, but at this point in time, he still cannot utter any words of pleas in front of a woman.

Madam Bai looked at him quietly for a moment before saying solemnly, “Actually there’s no need for you to verbalize it, I should have taken that Gossamer Needle out from your laughter acupoint long ago. But you have exerted too much strength earlier and the needle is now deeply embedded in the acupoint. I am powerless to help you take it out now.”

Hua Wu Que felt a stab of pain in his heart, and suddenly pushed Madam Bai away, turning around to leave. At this point in time, he knows that his fate has decided that, he can only laugh until he dies! Who would have expected Madam Bai to block his path and said, “You can’t leave yet.”

Hua Wu Que could not take it any longer and felt his anger rushing up, but he forced it down again, and said “Since things have come to this, why do you still want me to stay?”

Madam Bai said, “There is still one person who can save you in this world. Although I cannot save you, but I can increase your life span for another three days, and I can bring you to that person within three days. If you want to live, then you should have the courage to beg him! You’re young, it’s not a disgrace to beg others, but it is a real disgrace if you dare not continue living.”

Hua Wu Que guffawed, Even if I beg him, he may not save me, so why should I…”

Madam Bai interrupted, “I understand that person very well, as long as you go, he will certainly save you.”

She continued slowly, “Besides, you are not going there to beg him, you’re just going there to treat your illness. If a sick person does not see the physician, then this person should not be respected, but laughed at instead!”

She kept justifying the reasons, and Hua Wu Que was finally moved. No matter how much a person does not fear death, if there is a chance to live, that person would still not wish to die.

Hua Wu Que finally nodded his head. He can never reject such sincere pleas.

End of Chapter 80

Chapter 70

Chapter 81

Hua Wu Que and Madam Bai has already left, the big hall seems even more quiet, even more eerie. The light from the setting sun shone on the fresh blood on the corpse, the fresh blood revealed an eerie blue color under the light.

By now Jiang Yu Lang had strolled back, and clasping his hands, laughed, “Elder is really shrewd, I am really impressed.”

The ‘dead person’ hanging on the beam suddenly laughed, “This ploy may be good, but only people like that Hua guy will be tricked. If it were you or me, I’m afraid we would not have believed a woman’s words so easily.”

This ‘dead person’ leaped down from the beam, his right hand pulling off the blade’s handle stuck to his chest, his left hand pulling off the tip of the blade stuck on his back. So this knife is in fact two broken parts, which were stuck on Bai Shan Jun’s body.

Hua Wu Que sat in the carriage in a state of semi-consciousness. Madam Bai had given him a very strong sedative, and once the effect of the medicine kicked in, he felt like sleeping. Luckily the carriage is very comfortable. He does not know where Madam Bai got this carriage from, nor does he know who the carriage driver is, and all the more he doesn’t know where the carriage is heading towards. A dying man, what is there not to trust towards others!

On an evening three days later, the carriage came to a hillside and slowly stopped. Flowers filled the hillside, and it looked like a painting.

Looking afar, the river is like a ribbon, the round sun behind the hill is like fire.

The setting sun shone on the river, making it look even more sparking and magnificent.

Hua Wu Que secretly sighed, “Even if I were to die on this journey, to be able to die at such a place, the journey would not have been in vain.”

Madam Bai heaved a long sigh, and said, “That person has an extremely weird temperament, I… I have no wish to see him.”

She opened the carriage door and helped Hua Wu Que down the carriage. Pointing towards the front, she said, “Do you see that pavilion over there?”

Amidst the green trees and red flowers, there was a pavilion, a stream flowed next to the pavilion, shimmering in a shade of jade, and under the sunset, it looks even more colorful, it’s brilliance unmatched.

Hua Wu Que’s life is almost at an end, and to suddenly arrive at this place, he suspected that he is already in heaven. The faint fragrance of the flowers blew over with the wind and he was stunned for a moment before he nodded and said, “I see it.”

Madam Bai contined, “After you pass by that pavilion, you will see a stone door hidden among the vines on the side of the hill. The stone door is never closed, so you can just walk in.”

Hua Wu Que secretly sighed, “Certainly someone living in this kind of place will not be a nobody. I am lucky enough to meet such an esteemed person, and it should be a happy thing, but what a pity I am in such a state now.” Hua Wu Que asked, “What is his name?”

“Her name is Su Ying.”

Hua Wu Que thought to himself, “Su Ying… Su Ying… We do not know each other at all, yet I am here to beg you to save my life, I’m afraid you will only think this hilarious.”

Madam Bai added, “After you’ve seen her, maybe she will ask who brought you here, you only need to say my name… that’s right, my maiden name is Ma Yi Yun.”

Hua Wu Que replied, “I’ll remember.”

Madam Bai smiled sadly, “Although my life in future would be like a living dead, you do not have to be concerned about me. From now on, there will not be another woman with such a bitter life like me…”

She suddenly stopped talking, turned around and ran back into the carriage. The carriage immediately rode off in a rush. Hua Wu Que was stunned for a moment, and he cannot even tell what he is feeling now.

This woman had harmed him so much, but now he felt only gratitude, only trust, and not an ounce of suspicion or hate.

The carriage wove past a few hills, and suddenly stopped. At the side of the hill, under the vines, were three people, and they were Tie Ping Gu, Jiang Yu Lang and Bai Shan Jun. Hua Wu Que had already walked into that stone door which had been dyed green by the vines.

Behind the stone door, the quietness of the cave makes one who is in it to be totally lost in time.

Hua Wu Que hated his own laughter, that destroys the quietude that makes one forget the world. He used his strength to cover his own mouth, but the laughter still came out.

After walking for a while, he is now deep in the cave and the walls on both sides of the hill slowly became closer, but after walking a few more steps, the area suddenly opened up. It seems that he is no longer on earth, but in heaven.

There is a valley in front, with the white clouds in the sky, flowers all over the land, the clear stream and weird looking rocks. They all seemed intertwined, exquisitely mixed up.

From afar the cry of a crane was heard, and three to five white cranes, accompanied by two brown deers wandered over. They don't seem to be afraid of humans, but looked as if they are welcoming this guest who has come from afar.

Hua Wu Que was still feeling affected by the scene when that white crane had already lifted his clothes and led him towards the stone path which was covered by flowers.

A clear stream flowed past, and next to the stream sat a person.

She sat there with lowered head, as if in deep thought, but also as if telling the swimming fishes in the water how youth can be easily lost, and the loneliness of living in the hills.

Her long black hair hung over her shoulder, her light, flowing clothes white as snow.

Hua Wu Que was unconsciously brought here by the welcoming crane. The person's silhouette was a mirror image of the silhouette reflected in the water, he was staring unconsciously.

The young lady in white also turned around and took a look at him. It doesn't matter if she had not turned back, but now that she turned back, all the fragrant flowers in the valley seemed to have suddenly lost their color. Her brows were like a painting, her dainty dimples like jade, her exquisite lips may seem a little too big, her wide forehead may seem a little too high, but her eyes that looked like an autumn's moon, like shining stars, is more than enough to compensate for everything.

She may not be as dazzling as Tie Xin Lan, or have the simple beauty of Murong Jiu, or as charming as Little Fairy… she may not be considered very beautiful. But her incomparable grace, will make one feel inferior, and dare not belittle her.

Right now, there is a thread of surprise in her eyes, a thread of complaint, as if she's asking this crude guest why is he laughing so weirdly.

Hua Wu Que unconsciously blushed, and said, “I… I am Hua Wu Que, and have come especially to see Su Ying, Old Master Su.”

That young girl in white replied slowly, “I am Su Ying.”

Hua Wu Que was really stunned. He had thought that since this ‘Su Ying’ can cure him, he must be an aged person, a famed physician in the martial arts realm, a highly skilled exponent who has retired. He never imagined that Su Ying would actually be a young lady who is not more than twenty years old.

Su Ying’s eyes rolled, and asked lightly, “My mountain abode is extremely deserted, I wonder who is the one who showed you the way?”

“This… I…” He really could not imagine why Madam Bai would want him to come and beg this young girl to save his life. Faced with such a slight smile, such cold eyes, how can he express his request?

Su Ying continued, “Since you have come from afar, don’t tell me you can’t even say a single sentence?”

Her words may sound polite, but she seemed to be looking down on this guest who is laughing distressingly. Her mouth was still talking, but her eyes have wandered back to the swimming fishes in the water.

Hua Wu Que suddenly said, “I came here by accident, I’m really sorry for disturbing Miss’s peace…” He bowed slightly and actually turned around and walked away.

Su Ying did not turn around as well, until Hua Wu Que’s back is almost lost among the flowers did she suddenly called out, “Sir, please stop.”

Hua Wu Que can only halt his steps and asked, “Does Miss have anything else?”

Su Ying replied, “Come back.”

These two words may sound a little impolite, but the tone has become indescribably gentle, indescribably persuasive, no man in this world would remain unaffected upon hearing such a tone. Hua Wu Que walked back unconsciously.

Su Ying still did not turn around, and said slowly, “You did not come here accidentally, but came with a purpose. It’s just that you saw that Su Ying is actually a young girl, you felt a little disappointed, right?”

Hua Wu Que really did not have anything to say.

Su Ying continued calmly, “Just because you are this kind of a person, who feels that pleading before a young girl is a loss of face, so although you came with a purpose, you left with an excuse, right?”

Hua Wu Que was stunned again.

The young girl only took a short glance at him, but this glance seemed to have bored through his heart. No matter what his heart was thinking, it seemed that nothing can be hidden from this pair of beautiful eyes.

Su Ying sighed lightly, “If you still want to leave, of course I will not stop you, but I must tell you, you will never walk out of that stone door outside!”

Hua Wu Que trembled, and before he can speak, Su Ying had added, “Now your heart is about to be torn, there is a deathly cast on your face. In the whole world, there are only three who can save you, and I…”

She continued lightly, “I am one of them, and I’m afraid also the only one who will extend a hand to save you. If you do not know how to treasure your own life at all, won’t that be a disappointment to others!”

This is a large and comfortable house, with large windows on all four sides. Now the sky is getting darker, the candle lighted, the fragrance of the flowers in the valley floated in with the warm night wind, the stars in the sky also shone in.

Su Ying opened the last window, that slender hand, seemed so pale that it's almost transparent.

The area without windows, was filled with ancient pine bookshelves, the pinewood also emitted a light fragrance in the night wind. There were large and small compartments on the shelves, and on it were placed books of all kinds, big and small bottles, some made of jade, some made of stone and some carved from various types of wood.

These things filled the four walls, and seemed a little haphazardly placed at first glance, but on a closer look, they look so elegant and exquisite, that the most brash person were to walk into this house, a little of his brashness would be wiped out.

But there is a very weird matter about this house, which is, in such a big house, there is only a chair and nothing else.

This chair is also extremely weird. It did not look like a normal armchair, nor did it look like those commonly found in a lady's boudoir.

This chair actually looked like a very, very large chest, just that there is an indent in the middle, so that whoever sits on it will look like he's engraved into it. Hua Wu Que had already walked in.

He only felt that although this young girl's words sounded gentle, but one is unable to argue with her as well. He also felt that her although her words sounded icy, but one is unable to reject her. Su Ying had already seated herself on that only chair.

Hua Wu Que can only stand there, and in his heart he does not know whether to laugh or cry.

The armrest of the chair was very wide, and actually looked like a chest as well, which can be opened.

Su Ying had already opened up the lid on top and reached inside and gently

pulled. There was a ‘creak’ sound.

The floor in front of Hua Wu Que suddenly split open, revealing a hole, and a bed rose up slowly from that hole.

Su Ying said calmly, “Now there is a bed for you to lie on, what else do you want?”

Hua Wu Que replied, “I… I would like some tea.”

This is not the words that he really wanted to say, but he unconsciously said them. He really would like to test how great this young girl’s abilities are as well.

Su Ying replied, “Ah, I actually forgot. A guest have come from afar, and even if there is no wine, but a cup of tea should have been offered long ago.”

As she spoke, her hand pulled something in the chest again.

Suddenly sounds of water could be heard from behind a bookshelf on the wall, followed by the shelf moving aside on its own, a small wooden man slid out slowly from behind the bookshelf.

There really was a tea tray on the wooden boy’s hands, and on the tray there were two jade cups, the water in the cup looked milky. Su Ying smiled slightly, “I’m terribly sorry, there’s no tea here, but this hundred year’s stone milk should be able to pass off as a welcome to a guest, please.”

Hua Wu Que can’t help but said, “Zhugu Wu Hou’s (also known as Zhugu Liang) wooden ox* can’t even be compared to it’s ingenuity.”

(*ancient transport vehicle, http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Wooden_ox)

Su Ying smiled slightly, “Mr Kong Ming’s (courtesy title of Zhuge Liang) wooden ox is well used on the battlefield, but if it’s used to serve tea and guests, it seems a little too aggressive for that.” What she meant was, even Zhuge Wu

Hou is not worth her notice.

By now it's late in the night, the starlight is not enough to lend shine on anyone's face and although there were copper lamps on the bookshelves, they were not lighted. Hua Wu Que can't help but ask, "Can it be that Miss can light the lamp without even using your hands?"

Su Ying said, "I'm a very lazy person, a lazy person will usually think of many ways…"

Her hand gently pulled again, and between the copper lamps, immediately stuck out the flints and with the sound of a 'choke, the sparks flew. The copper lamps were really lighted.

Su Ying said with a laugh, "Look, even if I were to sit here without moving, I can still do a lot of things."

Hua Wu Que laughed loudly… really laughing loudly, and replied, "From what I see, even if you were to light the lamp and serve tea personally, it would be so much easier than making such mechanisms. How can a lazy person like you think of the most troublesome way?"

Without knowing why, he really wanted to knock her down a peg. He is not that kind of a person, but now maybe all the laughing have made him lose his normal sensibility.

Su Ying replied coldly, "A person like me, would I pour tea for you?"

Hua Wu Que answered, "Why don't you have a maid or servant, won't this way be much easier as well?"

Su Ying replied icily, "I'm afraid these people's uncouth ways would taint me."

Hua Wu Que is speechless again. Su Ying stared at him quietly, and continued slowly, "You said these words, because you think that I am too formidable, so you want to suppress me, right? I don't mind telling you, no one in the world can

suppress me, I am forever high above. You need not waste your efforts."

Hua Wu Que laughed loudly, "Actually you're just a weak girl, anyone can push you down with a palm."

Su Ying replied, "You actually can tell that I do not know martial arts, your eyesight is really not bad."

"Thank you"

Su Ying added, "Your martial arts is very good, right?"

Hua Wu Que answered, "It's passable."

Su Ying continued, "But now you are the one begging me to save you, and not me who is begging you to save me. You can tell from this that there are many things in the world which cannot be settled by martial arts. Man is the leader of all animals, because he is intelligent, not because he is strong. If we were to compare strength, even a donkey would be stronger than a man."

Hua Wu Que can only feel a surge of anger rising up, and wanted to leave again, but Su Ying chose this time to suddenly smile and walk over, saying gently, "Now, you will lie down honestly. After I let you take a bottle of medicine, your terrible laughter will stop immediately."

Faced with such an adorable smile, such gentle voice, how many men in the world can still be angry. Besides, the words that she has spoken, are what Hua Wu Que would most like to hear.

Hua Wu Que is not afraid of death, but this laughter… now he cannot think of anything more horrible than 'laughing'. The laughter finally stopped. Hua Wu Que fell into a deep sleep after taking the medicine.

Suddenly a person can be heard giggling, "Good sister, you really have your way, no matter how fierce a man is, he will become obedient like a little puppy in front of you…" Walking in after the sound of the giggles, was Madam Bai.

Su Ying did not even take a look at her, but said calmly, “Why have you come now, you’re worried about me?”

Madam Bai smiled, “It’s just that everyone knows how proud Sister is, so they wanted me to come plead with Sister, to bear with it this time. As soon as this lad tells us the secret of ‘Shifting Flower Grafting Jade’, we will kill this lad immediately to appease Sister’s anger…”

Only now did Su Ying glance at her icily, “You think that my way of treating him is not good.”

Madam Bai smiled condescendingly, “Not that it’s not good, but… now we are trying to trick him into revealing the secret, so…”

Su Ying replied coldly, “You think that I should be more gentle towards him, should try to gain favor with him, give him some drugs, and if need be even take off all my clothes and fall into his arms, right?”

Madam Bai giggled, “Anyway this lad is about to die, so there’s no harm in letting him take some advantage.”

Su Ying had already added coldly, “To tell you the truth, if I really use such methods on him, he will never speak. Such methods can only be used on your husband.”

Madam Bai fluttered, “But… but…”

Su Ying replied, “To deal with a person like him, will need methods like mine, only then will he acquiesce. Because I have treated him thus, he will never think that I have a favor to ask of him, and he will never be on his guard against me. Or else why would I deliberately let him see that I do not know martial arts? You should know that although I have never learnt such silly stuff, but if I were to pretend to be a highly skilled martial artist, I can still put up a convincing act.”

Madam Bai beamed, “Only now do I understand. Sister, your methods are

really unparalleled.”

Su Ying smiled lazily, “It’s good that you understand, now you better hide far away. By this time tomorrow, I will make him honestly reveal the secret of ‘Shifting Flower Grafting Jade’…”

End of Chapter 81

Chapter 71

Chapter 82

When Hua Wu Que woke up the second day, his laughter has really stopped. He only felt his whole body feeling weak, without an ounce of strength, lying on the bed, unable to even get up at all. There is no one in the house, sounds of birds chirping and the fragrance of flowers surround him, with thick shades covering the windows.

Suddenly a person could be heard shouting weirdly from behind the house, “Go out, go out, I’ve said that I won’t eat this root or bark, why are you always making me eat it.”

Su Ying could be heard saying gently, “This is not roots or barks, it’s ginseng.”

That person roared, “Who cares if it’s ginseng or what seng, I said I won’t eat it and I won’t.”

Su Ying actually laughed, “I’ve never seen anyone like you. Fine, fine, I’ll take it out if you won’t eat it.”

A person like her would actually tolerate such behavior from another. Hua Wu Que was feeling perplexed after hearing these, and can’t help but secretly guess what kind of a person would this man be who can treat her thus. After a while, Su Ying walked in with her head lowered.

Once she stepped into the house, she immediately regained her haughty yet refined expression, only that she still held the ginseng soup in her hands.

Hua Wu Que sighed secretly, “That person won’t eat it, so she will bring it for

me instead?” Although he really needs it now, but he has secretly decided, if she brought the ginseng soup for him, he won’t eat it either.

Who would have expected that Su Ying would walk to the window and throw all the soup out the window instead. She would rather throw ‘that person’s’ thing away than to let others eat it.

Su Ying had walked over to the bed and asked slowly, “Are you feeling better now?”

Only now did Hua Wu Que remember the unbearable pain of not being able to stop laughing, only now did he feel as if he is in heaven, and can’t help but sigh, “Thank you, Miss.”

Su Ying replied, “You do not have to thank me now.”

Hua Wu Que’s expression changed, “Wh… why?”

Su Ying answered, “Your laughter may have stopped now, but that gossamer needle is still in your acupoint. It’s just that my medicine have forced it slightly to the side and is no longer touching your Laughter acupoint, but once you exert your strength, your old illness will still recur.”

Hua Wu Que expressed in alarm, “This… what can be done?” He would rather sacrifice everything now than to laugh like that again.

Su Ying replied, “This gossamer needle is already deeply embedded, even a treasure like the black stone may not be able to draw it out. Only your own internal strength may be able to force it back.”

Hua Wu Que replied, “But… but I can’t even exert an ounce of strength now.”

Su Ying said icily, “Naturally you cannot do it now, if you can, you will have no need to look for me.”

Hua Wu Que asked, “Does Miss have any methods which can let me internal energy flow unhindered.”

Su Ying said calmly, “Naturally I have, now you only have to tell me the essence of all the internal martial arts you have learnt, and I will help you from the side to make your internal energy flow and force out the poisoned needle.”

She had said it so lightly, as if this is a most normal thing, as if as long as she gave the instructions, Hua Wu Que would reveal the secret to his internal martial arts.

It’s because she knows that this is the only way to talk that won’t let Hua Wu Que think that all these is a trap they have much effort in laying. Hua Wu Que really did not think of it.

But the secret to ‘Shifting Flower Grafting Jade’ is the biggest secret in the martial arts realm, and for him to just reveal it, he can’t help but have some hesitation.

Su Ying looked at him quietly for a moment before saying slowly, “Are you afraid that I will secretly learn your internal energy?”

Hua Wu Que replied, “That is not my intention, it’s just that…”

Su Ying smiled lightly, “A person like me, if I have the love for martial arts, even if I am not the world’s number one martial artist, I would be close to being number one.”

She sighed and continued coldly, “Martial artists are all like you, always treating your own martial arts like some treasure, so how would you know that this thing to me, is not worth even a single cent.” Before she finished her words, she had already walked away with a throw of her sleeves.

Hua Wu Que cried out hoarsely, “Miss, please hold.”

Su Ying did not turn her head, and only said icily, “Although it’s up to you

whether to say it, but I might not want to listen to it.”

Hua Wu Que sighed, “The internal energy I learn, is called ‘Shifting Flower Grafting Jade’, which is…”

When dusk arrived, Bai Shan Jun and his wife, together with Jiang Yu Lang and Tie Ping Gu, had already waited a long time, and they can’t help but reveal their anxiety on their faces.

Jiang Yu Lang can’t help but say with a laugh, “I really cannot imagine what kind of a person this Miss Su Ying is, that you two Elders would fall over her so.”

Madam Bai smiled, “Little lad, let me tell you, when you see her, I’m afraid you won’t even know how to speak.”

Jiang Yu Lang laughed, “Elder is making it sound so mysterious. Don’t tell me that I will suddenly stop talking, opening my mouth and yet can’t say a word.”

A fairy wearing a colorful feathered robe, under the setting sun, glided over, a snowy white crane with a red head was actually walking in front of her, a deer walking obediently behind her. The gentle evening breeze, messed up the strands of her hair, she lifted her hand and lightly pulled… just a light pull like that, is enough to make the men in the world stop breathing. A painting like that, is not something that anyone can draw.

She may not be born beautiful, but that certain grace is without compare. Jiang Yu Lang only felt that his soul seems intoxicated, how can he even speak.

Madam Bai glanced at him with a hidden smile, and walked up, laughing, “Good Sister, you’ve really come.”

Bai Shan Jun came forward in welcome as well and smiled, “The secret of ‘Shifting Flower Grafting Jade’, I guess Sister must have gotten it out.”

Su Ying replied, “That’s right, I’ve got it.”

Bai Shan Jun and his wife were ecstatic, and beamed “Thank you, thank you…”

Su Ying replied icily, “You need not be in such a hurry to thank me now.”

Madam Bai stuttered, “Then… then…, could Sister have already written down the core of ‘Shifting Flower Grafting Jade’?”

Bai Shan Jun added, “Right, right, naturally Sister would write it down for us. Old woman, why are you so anxious?”

Su Ying replied calmly, “I don’t intend to write it out for you now either.”

Bai Shan Jun was stunned, “Then… then… Sister, you mean to say…”

Madam Bai smiled condescendingly, “When would Sister tell us then?”

Su Ying replied, “Maybe in three to five days, maybe a year or half, maybe ten or eight years, when I’ve had enough fun, I’ll naturally tell you.”

Bai Shan Jun and his wife looked at each other, stunned for a moment, before Madam Bai smiled and said, “Good Sister, don’t joke, if we were to wait ten or eight years, won’t we die of anxiety.”

Su Ying replied, “Whether you die of anxiety or not, that’s your problem, what has it got to do with me.”

Madam Bai asked anxiously, “But… but Sister, haven’t you already promised me…”

Su Ying interrupted coldly, “I only promised you that I will make Hua Wu Que reveal the secret to ‘Shifting Flower grafting Jade’, but I did not promise to tell you the secret.”

Bai Shan Jun and his wife were stunned, unable to say a single word.

Su Ying turned around slowly and said, “It’s difficult to receive guests in the deep mountains, so I will not keep you, you better go back.”

Madam Bai said, “Sister, please hold.”

Su Ying replied lightly, “You should know that I will never change my words once I’ve said it, so why bother.”

Madam Bai sighed, “I just want to ask, how is that Hua person now?”

Su Ying furrowed her brows, “You can rest assured, I will never let him off. He can forget about seeing anyone in this lifetime now.” As soon as she finished her words, she walked away without even turning back.

Bai Shan Jun and his wife can only stare with their eyes wide open, neither of them dare to stop her.

After a while, Tie Ping Gu sighed, “This lady sure is arrogant.”

Jiang Yu Lang instead said, “Obviously this lass has no means of defense, why didn’t Elder just capture her.”

Bai Shan Jun sighed, “The old man treats her like a treasure, whoever dares to touch even a finger of hers, it’ll be strange if the old man doesn’t have it out with that person. My wife and I have no intention of irking that old man now, so we can only let her off.”

Madam Bai sighed as well, “Besides, don’t think that she is defenseless, but she is full of tricks, the few of us may not necessarily be able to capture her.” Jiang Yu Lang smiled slightly and did not speak.

Bai Shan Jun looked at him for a moment, his eyes suddenly glittered, “You are not convinced?”

Jiang Yu Lang took a glance at Tie Ping Gu, and just smiled.

Bai Shan Jun clapped him heartily on the shoulder and laughed loudly, “Good lad, I’ve long heard that you have a way with women, you can go and try. That lass might be looking for love, she may really tell you after all.”

Jiang Yu Lang glanced at Tie Ping Gu from the corner of his eye and laughed, “What ways can I have with women, Elder must be joking.”

Madam Bai had already hugged Tie Ping Gu and giggled, “Good Sister, let him go, sister-iin-law here will guarantee that he will not dare to have a change of heart. If he dares to betray you, I will ask Xiao Bai to bite his head off.”

Jiang Yu Lang sauntered into the valley. The night breeze blowing into his face, the fragrance of the flowers caressing his face, his body felt light, as if there’s no weight on his bones at all.

With regards to women, he feels that he’s an old hand, especially young women like her. He only need to go into action and they will fall into his hands.

What assured him further is that this girl does not know martial arts at all. Even if he does not succeed, he can at least retreat safely, without a hair on his body harmed.

Besides, when it’s necessary, he can still force himself on her. By then nothing can be changed, so need he still be afraid that this girl would not bow to him obediently.

Furthermore, even if this Miss Su has a weird temper, and would rather die then to tell him, anyway he had already taken advantage of her, it will always be others who is on the losing end, and never him. The more he thinks about it, the happier he is, so happy that he is almost flying.

Suddenly someone asked coldly, “Who are you? What right have you to come barging in here?”

It turned out that he was so jubilant that he did not realize that Su Ying had

already been staring at him coldly for a long time.

Once he saw Su Ying, Jiang Yu Lang immediately gave a pitiful look and lowered his head, sighing, “I have taken the liberty to barge in, and it’s really discourteous…”

Su Ying interrupted, “Since you know it’s discourteous, then you should leave quickly now.”

Jiang Yu Lang had actually prepared lots of honeyed words, thinking that it’s enough to touch any girl’s heart, but who would have expected that there seemed to be an ice wall in front of Su Ying, which did not give him any opportunity to penetrate at all.

He had not even spoken a single sentence of his prepared words and Su Ying had already turned and walked back icily. Jiang Yu Lang rolled his eyes and suddenly called out, “Miss, please hold. Miss, you must at least save my life.”

Su Ying really turned her head around and said with furrowed brows, “If you are sick, then you should see a physician. This place is neither a clinic, or are there plans to open one, why did you come here?”

Jiang Yu Lang replied dejectedly, “If others could save my life, would I dare to come and trouble Miss. A pity that although there are many famed physicians, most of them are frauds. If they were to have even a tenth of Miss’s capabilities, I would… ai, I would not need to travel so far to come and disturb Miss.”

As the saying goes, ‘There may be a thousand or million loopholes, but there will never be loopholes in being obsequious’. Jiang Yu Lang knows this point better than anyone else. Su Ying’s expression really warmed up, but she still said coldly, “How do you know I can cure your illness? Who told you?”

Jiang Yu Lang replied, “It… it was an Elder, who could not bear to see me die, therefore he gave me a way out and brought me here.”

He lowered his head further and said with a bitter smile, “This Elder would not

allow me to reveal his name, but in front of Miss, how dare I lie. The person who guided me here, is Elder Bai, Bai Shan Jun and his wife."

Su Ying's expression really warmed further, and said with her head shaking, "This couple really know how to find problems for me."

Jiang Yu Lang saw her expression and knows that there is hope, so he immediately continued his act and actually knelt down, "This illness of mine, cannot be cured by others anyway, if today Miss refuses… refuses to pity me, I might as well die in front of Miss."

Su Ying's eyes, clear as autumn's water, stared at him for a while before she softly sighed, "You really know how to bug people…" As she spoke, she turned around and walked away again.

Jiang Yu Lang shouted, "Miss, you can't leave, Miss must at least save my life."

Su Ying turned around and smiled, "Silly, I'm leaving, but don't you know how to follow me?"

This smile, is enough to make Jiang Yu Lang's bones go weak, and this expression of 'silly', is making Jiang Yu Lang's heart itch even more, so much so that he does not know what to do.

Su Ying brought him to that bright porch. The candles are already lighted, the bed is still there, but Hua Wu Que, who was on the bed, is nowhere to be seen.

Su Ying asked, "Now you can tell me, what illness have you contacted? Where do you feel unwell?"

What illness could Jiang Yu Lang have, so in anxiety, he blurted out, "My… my stomach is in great pain."

Su Ying's expression immediately became stern, and said icily "But I see that you don't look like you're in great pain."

Jiang Yu Lang was stunned for a moment. If it was someone else, that person would have blushed by now, but Jiang Yu Lang indeed live up to the name of an adept liar, and with a roll of his eyes, said with a smile, “In front of Miss, how would I dare to behave improperly. Besides, no matter who that person, on seeing a fairy-like person like Miss, would forget all about his pain.” His words have just hit the right note.

Su Ying smiled and said, “Since your pain stops upon seeing me, then what else is there to cure?”

Jiang Yu Lang beamed, “If I can accompany Miss, it doesn’t matter even if I die of pain, it’s just that… just that…”

His internal energy has already reached a deep level, and right now he secretly adjusted his energy and on his forehead, beads of perspiration as large as beans immediately appeared. Su Ying seemed anxious and exclaimed, “Look at you, already in such pain, lie down quickly.”

She gently held Jiang Yu Lang’s hand, and Jiang Yu Lang, being a wolf in sheep’s clothing, immediately leaned on her and breathed into her ears, “Thank you, Miss.”

Su Ying was actually not angry at all, and Jiang Yu Lang became bolder and his arms reached out as well. Who would have expect Su Ying to escape with a twist and she pouted, “If you do not lie on the bed obediently, I shan’t be bothered with you.”

Jiang Yu Lang hurriedly agreed, “Yes, yes, I’ll be obedient.”

Su Ying chuckled, “Only an obedient child is a good one, Big Sister will buy candies for you.”

Her anger rises and falls easily, she seems angry yet happy, she really is a woman of many emotions, making one forget oneself.

Jiang Yu Lang’s heart itches so badly that he really does not know how to

scratch it. He pointed to his stomach and said, “I’m in pain... the pain is worse now, come quickly… quickly and take a look.”

Su Ying really walked over, “Where’s the pain?”

Jiang Yu Lang held her hand to massage his stomach and said, “Here… right here.”

Su Ying’s soft and slender hands really massaged his stomach lightly and asked gently, “Are you feeling better now?”

Jiang Yu Lang closed his eyes, “Better now… but you must not stop, I’m in pain once you stop.”

Su Ying’s hands really did not stop massaging, really dare not stop.

Jiang Yu Lang was secretly feeling smug and hilarious, and thought to himself, “Others keep saying how formidable this Miss Su is, but in my opinion, she’s just a young girl who has just began to understand the feelings of the heart. I only need to execute a little ingenious plan of mine, and didn’t she fall into my hands immediately.”

Suddenly he caught a whiff of fragrance and Su Ying’s slender hands have reached the side of his mouth, in her hands she held a pill with a fresh fragrance and said gently, “This Clearing Soul Suppressing Pain Pill is a concoction I made specially. Not only can it stop pain, it’s also very nourishing. Eat it now and your stomach will not feel any pain immediately.”

Jiang Yu Lang shook his head, “I won’t eat it.”

Su Ying furrowed her brows. “Why won’t you eat it?”

Jiang Yu Lang replied, “Once I eat it, my stomach will no longer be in pain, if my stomach is not in pain, then won’t Miss refuse…. refuse to massage for me anymore.”

Su Ying smiled, “Naughty… all right, you eat it, and I’ll still massage you.”

This expression of ‘naughty’ is enough to make Jiang Yu Lang’s soul float away, so he might as well say coquettishly, “Is this pill bitter?”

Su Ying covered her mouth and laughed, “Not only is this pill not bitter, but it’s very sweet instead, just like sugar. Come, open your mouth obediently, I’ll feed it to you.”

Jiang Yu Lang closed his eyes and opened his mouth, feeling really comfortable in his heart.

Suddenly a person can be heard shouting outside, “Where’s the wine? There’s no more wine, Little lass Su Ying, bring me wine quickly.”

Su Ying furrowed her brows and her hands actually stopped, and said “You’ll lie here obediently, I’ll be right back.”

She actually seemed a little anxious, and have rushed out without even finishing her words. However, she turned back and said, “If you stand up and run around, I’m not going to be bothered with you then.”

In the distance that person shouted again, “The lass named Su, are you deaf? Why aren’t you here yet.”

Su Ying actually smiled, “Coming, coming, I’ll go and bring some wine for you now.”

Jiang Yu Lang was secretly feeling perplexed, “This Miss Su is really interesting. Others treat her courteously and yet she’s cold towards them. This person keep calling her lass, and does not treat her like a person at all, but instead she yields to him. I wonder what ability this brother has to make her so obedient.”

He really felt like climbing out of bed and taking a peek but he changed his mind, thinking that now that there’s hope, he better not act rashly and spoil the plan. So he might as well close his eyes and imagine that this beauty will soon be

in his arms, and the secret that everyone in the martial arts realm is yearning for will soon be in his hands.

He almost can't help but want to laugh, and mumbled, "Bai Shan Jun oh Bai Shan Jun, do you think I will tell you after listening to this secret? If you really think that I'll tell you, then you are the world's greatest fool."

Suddenly someone laughingly asked, "Who did you say is the world's greatest fool?"

Jiang Yu Lang was secretly startled, but he immediately smiled and said, "Whoever that dares to call Miss a lass, that person is the world's greatest fool."

Su Ying laughed, "That is an old muddle headed person, an old drunkard, we need not be bothered about him."

Once Jiang Yu Lang heard the word 'old', he was greatly relieved, and when he heard the word 'we', he was so overjoyed that he can't help but laugh loudly, "Yes, yes, yes, we need not be bothered about him."

Su Ying asked, "You're laughing so happily, your stomach's not in pain anymore?"

Jiang Yu Lang immediately furrowed his brows and said, "Pain… the pain is greater now, I beg that Miss help massage me again."

Su Ying covered her mouth and smiled, and massaged his stomach again. Jiang Yu Lang felt his whole body weaken, as if he's in heaven. After massaging for a while, Su Ying asked slowly, "Actually, in your heart, you think that I am the world's greatest fool, right?"

Jiang Yu Lang was stunned, and carried on with a smile, "How would I dare to think that, unless I've gone crazy?"

Su Ying said slowly, "You think that I'm very young, and have not met much men, so I must be easily tricked. You think that you have a way with women, just

a little ploy of yours and you can make me throw myself at you, and even tell you truthfully the secret to ‘Shifting Flower Grafting Jade’… is that right?”

Only now was Jiang Yu Lang shocked, and he said with a forced smile, “There… there’s no such thing, Miss, you’re…. you’re too…”

Su Ying calmly interrupted, “Besides, you know that I know no martial arts at all, so even if I see through your plan, I can’t do anything to you, so you became even bolder, right?”

In his shock, Jiang Yu Lang wanted to leap up, but without knowing why, his whole body was so weak that there’s not an ounce of energy left. He can’t help but exclaim, “Miss please do not accuse wrongly a good person, I have no such intention at all.”

Su Ying replied, “Not only do you have such intentions, but if it is necessary, you even thought to force yourself on me. Anyway I am powerless to resist, so after the deed is done, what can I do but to obey?”

She could actually count all the rotten ideas in Jiang Yu Lang’s mind. As Jiang Yu Lang listened, he started to sweat and he fluttered, “Miss you must not malign me, if I have such thoughts, then I’ll die a horrible death.”

Su Ying smiled, “At this point in time, do you think you can die nicely?”

Jiang Yu Lang stammered, “I… I…. Miss… ai!”

Su Ying’s hands were still massaging his stomach, now she suddenly pressed down hard and Jiang Yu Lang roared, in so much pain that his whole body started to break out in cold sweat.

He did not know himself that he would actually be so afraid of pain.

Su Ying smiled, “You wanted me to massage your stomach, so I massaged it for you, do you know why I was so obedient?”

Jiang Yu Lang stammered, “I… I do not know, I beg Miss to stop massaging…”

Su Ying laughed, “Now that you feel pain, you want me to stop massaging. But I know that your stomach is in much pain, and you’re seriously ill, so how can I bear to stop massaging you.""

Jiang Yu Lang shouted, “I’m… not sick… not sick at all.”

Su Ying’s expression turned somber, “You are not sick? Why did you lie to me?”

Her hands pressed down again, Jiang Yu Lang shouted, “I’m sick, sick…”

Su Ying beamed, “That’s right, not only are you sick, but your illness is serious as well, and it’s getting worse, until such time that even if a leaf were to land on your arms, you would feel as if it’s a knife slicing.”

Jiang Yu Lang exclaimed in alarm, “Please… Please save me, Miss, save me…”

Su Ying’s hands continued massaging gently, but Jiang Yu Lang no longer found comfort in that. He only felt as if all the bones in his body are being massaged into pieces.

He heard Su Ying sigh, “There’s no way I can save you now, because I took the wrong medicine just now. The one I gave you, is not the Clearing Soul Suppressing Pain Pill, but Hundred Illness and Pain Life Ending Pill…”

Jiang Yu Lang was startled, “Hundred Illness and Pain Life Ending Pill? What medicine is that?” He has really never heard such a name in his whole life.

End of Chapter 82

Chapter 72

Chapter 83

Su Ying cried, “Because a sick person who takes this pill, his illness will worsen ten times, if a person who’s not sick took this pill, he will immediately be plagued by a hundred illnesses, and his whole body will be in great pain…”

Jiang Yu Lang cried hoarsely, “Miss… I have no enmity with Miss, why would Miss want to harm me thus."

Su Ying laughed, “Didn’t you say that you are deathly sick! I did not wish to treat you as a shameless liar, so I gave you this medicine out of the kindness of my heart. If you were really sick, then it means you weren’t lying… besides, I was afraid that your illness will take a long time to heal, so I kindly massaged your stomach to help the medicine work faster.”

She sighed and continued sadly, “Look, I was being so nice to you, and you didn’t even thank me.”

Jiang Yu Lang was shocked, scared and in pain, the sweat on his head running down like rain and he stammered, “Miss Su… Elder Su… I… only now do I know your prowess, please, on the account of Bai Shan Jun and his wife, let me off.”

Su Ying replied, “Aiyo, I actually forgot that you’re Bai Shan Jun and his wife’s friend.”

Jiang Yu Lang stuttered, “Miss… Miss must not forget it.”

Su Ying sighed, “That’s right, since you are their friend, I can’t just watch you die of illness here, no matter what I have to save you… a pity that this medicine is

not a poison, so there's no antidote. You've eaten it down… what can be done?"

Jiang Yu Lang pleaded, "Please, Miss, Miss must certainly have a way out."

Su Ying clapped her hands and exclaimed, "That's it, I've thought of a way."

Jiang Yu Lang asked in joy, "What way?"

Su Ying replied, "I only have to split your stomach open and take the pill out."

Jiang Yu Lang choked, "Split my stomach open?"

Su Ying said gently, "Don't you worry, I will certainly cut it gently, and take the pill out gently, you will not feel an ounce of pain."

Jiang Yu Lang can't help but reply with a bitter look, "Once the stomach is cut open, the person would be dead, would he still feel pain?"

Su Ying clasped her hands and laughed, "You're really a smart person."

She chuckled, "This is the secret method that has been passed down our family for stopping pain. Cut off the hand if it hurts, cut off the leg if it hurts, cut of the head if it hurts, cut up the stomach if it hurts, it's guaranteed to be a miracle cure."

As she spoke, she walked away, mumbling, "Where's the knife… where's the knife…:

Jiang Yu Lang exclaimed in alarm, "Miss… Miss please don't…"

Su Ying asked, "Don't you want me to cure you anymore?"

Jiang Yu Lang replied hoarsely, "No, no."

Su Ying sighed, “Since you refuse, there’s nothing I can do, but this is your own idea, you can’t blame me for not saving you, right?”

Jiang Yu Lang agreed, “Right, right, right. Extremely right.”

Su Ying asked, “Do you know now, who is the world’s greatest fool now?”

Jiang Yu Lang said with a bitter look, “It’s me, I am the world’s greatest fool, greatest scoundrel, greatest…” He actually can’t help but start bawling.

Su Ying smiled, “Useless, such a big man and still crying, it really makes me feel bad seeing this.” Her hand reached into the armrest of the chair again and lightly pressed, and the bed suddenly bounced, together with Jiang Yu Lang on it. A hole appeared on the ground behind the bed and with a scream, Jiang Yu Lang fell into the hole, sliding down as if he was on a slide.

Su Ying smiled lightly, “One crying, one laughing, these two are really a match made in heaven, so I’ll let you keep each other company…”

As she spoke, the bed settled on the ground again, the hole covered up again.

In the distance that person can be heard shouting again, “There’s no meaning in drinking alone, Lass Su, come and accompany me.”

Su Ying sighed and said with a bitter smile, “He is really the bane of my life, why am I at a loss once I see him.”

Behind this porch the flowers grew thick like cotton, on the little hill grew fine trees. At the bottom of the hill there’s a cave, the lamp inside shining as bright as day, and decorated even more comfortably than the room of a rich young girl. But at the mouth of the cave there are iron bars, thicker than a little child’s arms.

Right now, inside the cave, a person was sitting at the side of the table drinking wine by the cupful. His head was hanging, his feet bare, he was wearing a loose and large white robe, and he looked extremely hilarious indeed.

He was facing the inside, and his face cant be seen clearly, but he kept yelling “Lass Su, if you still won’t come, I will…”

Su Ying said gently, “Aren’t I here now? I’ve never seen someone as impatient as you.”

That person banged the table and yelled, “Are you complaining that I’m impatient now? I’m born with a temper like that, if you’re not used to seeing it, you can not look!”

Su Ying lowered her head, her tears almost flowing out.

That person suddenly laughed, “But if I have no wish to see you, why would I be so anxious to ask you here. As people always said, a day without meeting, is akin to three autumns without meeting, but I cannot not see you for even a single moment.”

Su Ying can’t help but break into smiles amid her tears, and biting her lips, said with a laugh, “I know that this life of mine, will surely die of frustration because of you.”

That person laughed loudly, “You must never die, once you’re dead, who will drink with me?”

He turned around as he laughed, the light shone on his face.

His face was spotted and there were countless knife scars, and he seems like a horribly ugly person at first. However, on a closer look, it seems that there’s not a single scar on his face. His eyes were large and bright, his nose straight and upright, his thin lips, lazy smile…isn’t this person the one who cannot be cut away, cannot be abandoned, making one think of him day and night, the loveable and yet hateful Xiao Yu’er?

Su Ying saw Xiao Yu’er turn around, and her eyes shone. She said with a gentle laugh, “Since you want me to come and drink with you, why didn’t you bring the

cup over.”

Xiao Yu’er blinked his eyes and said with a grin, “Since you’ve come to accompany me to drink, why won’t you come in.”

Su Ying shook her head and smiled, “I’ll drink with you outside here, isn’t it the same?”

Xiao Yu’er replied with a straight face, “How can that be the same, you must sit beside me, talk with me, only then can I drink my wine. Didn’t I say earlier how much I miss you.”

Su Ying’s eyes glimmered, her cheeks showing a slight blush, and she lowered her head and said with a smile, “I’m outside here anyway, you can still see me.”

Xiao Yu’er suddenly jumped up and scolded, “You stinking lass, stupid lass, who wants you to come and drink with me, scram quickly!”

Su Ying was actually not angry at all, and just laughed, “Anyway, even if you try to flatter me, I won’t go in, if you scold me, I stilll would not go in.”

Xiao Yu’er roared, “Why won’t you come in, are you afraid I’ll eat you up? I’m not Li Da Zui.”

Su Ying smiled, “I know you do not eat humans, but once I open the door to go in, you will take the chance to dash out, right?”

Xiao Yu’er snarled and said frostily, “You are not the worm in my stomach, how do you know what I’m thinking?”

Su Ying only laughed lightly, not saying anything at all.

Xiao Yu’er walked a few rounds inside and suddenly stopped in front of her, saying with a smile, “I know you’re a good person, and you treat me very well. You’re not angry even when I scold you, but why must you lock me up here?”

Su Ying said slowly, “You’re one who loves action, and impatient as well. If I do not lock you up, you must have long gone by now, but you have not recovered from your injury yet. Once you move, it will become worse.”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “So you have good intentions after all.”

Su Ying smiled, but who would have expected Xiao Yu’er to suddenly jump up again and shouted, “But I care naught for you good intentions. Whether I live or die is none of your business, so don’t think that just because you saved me, I will obey you and be grateful to you…”

Su Ying lowered her head and said, “I… I did not ask you to be grateful to me, right?”

Xiao Yu’er walked another seven, eight rounds inside, and suddenly smiled, “Tell me the truth, why did you save me, I really cannot understand why.”

Su Ying was silent for a moment before saying slowly, “That day, I happened to go to ‘Heaven Outside Heaven’…”

She had only said one sentence when Xiao Yu’er jumped up again and yelled angrily, “What ‘Heaven Outside Heaven’, that is just a rat hole.”

Su Ying smiled in surprise, “Fine, even if that is a rat hole, you need not be so angry.”

Xiao Yu’er asked loudly, “Why shouldn’t I be angry, now I get a headache once I hear the word ‘rat’.”

Su Ying replied, “But you are the one who said the word, I didn’t say it.”

Xiao Yu’er pulled a face, “I get a headache hearing others say it, so naturally I get a worse headache hearing myself say it.”

Su Ying tried to control her laughter and said, “Can’t you not say it then, no one forced you to say it.”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “My mouth itches if I don’t say it, I…” As he said these, he himself can’t help but almost burst out laughing, he himself felt that he is really quite unreasonable. He turned his head around, controlled his urge to laugh and said, “Why didn’t you continue talking?”

Su Ying continued, “That day, I happened to go to Heaven…. to ra…” She suddenly realized that she cannot say the words ‘Heaven Outside Heaven’, nor the word ‘rat’, and can’t help but feel the hilarity of it. She could only bit on her lips and said, “That day, I went to that place to collect the herbs they bought for me, but who would have expected that I’ll see you there. You were there coincidentally as well.”

Xiao Yu’er commented, “It’s my bad luck that I went to that ghastly place, and it’s your bad luck to bump into me.”

Su Ying smiled and continued, “But when I saw you that day, you did not look like you’re having any bad luck at all. Although the clothes you wore were tattered and torn, but your bearing was as if you wore the world’s most magnificent and expensive clothes.”

Xiao Yu’er sat down, propped his leg up and asked, “Besides that? Not only was I regal, but I’m not too bad looking as well.”

Su Ying covered her mouth in a smile, “That’s right, you’re really not too bad looking, especially your eyes.”

Xiao Yu’er raised his voice, “My brows, my nose, my mouth are not good looking then?”

Su Ying giggled, “From the top of your head to your toes, there’s nowhere which it’s not good looking… is that enough?”

Xiao Yu’er drank a mouthful of wine, and laughed, “Hmm… that’s better…”

Su Ying was laughing so hard that she almost couldn't breathe, "I am not one who is easily shocked, but when I saw you, I…"

Xiao Yu'er laughed loudly, "When you saw me, your eyes turned straight, your mouth gaped open, you looked as if you've seen a big head ghost. At that time I really felt like stuffing a large egg into your mouth."

Su Ying guffawed, "That was because I was feeling perplexed. How did you manage to find… find that place."

Xiao Yu'er was silent for a moment, and replied with a frown, "Of course there must be a reason for that, but you… you need not know it, because no matter how I manage to find that ghastly place, it's none of your business."

Su Ying sighed, "What bewildered me even more, is that you were not afraid at all when you were there."

Xiao Yu'er laughed coldly, "What is there to be afraid of, I've seen lots of places that are even more horrible and terrifying."

Su Ying asked, "But have you seen anyone more… more frightening than Wei Wu Ya?"

It was as if Xiao Yu'er could not speak anymore suddenly, the hand that was holding onto the wine cup seems to be shaking, that even the wine in the cup is almost spilling over.

Su Ying sighed again, "From the time I was seven or eight, I had to see him almost every two to three days, but until now, when I see him, I still feel like shivering as well."

Xiao Yu'er banged the cup on the table and shouted, "I am not afraid of him, I just felt sickening, that face of his, that look is totally not human at all… He looks as if Heaven had taken a rat, a fox and a wolf, tore them up, and then mixed with a bottle of poison and a bowl of stinking water, a living ghost made out of

these.”

Su Ying can’t help but laugh again, “This mouth of yours is really wicked, but you have really described him so well.”

With a ‘humph’, Xiao Yu’er suddenly laughed as well, “To tell you the truth, when I saw the two of you, I really felt like laughing in my heart. The two of you sitting together, it looks like a fragrant crispy pigeon placed next to a pile of dog shit, there’s nothing more incompatible than that in the whole world.”

Su Ying lowered her head, and was silent for a moment before saying slowly, “He may not be a good person, but to me… to me he’s always been nice. These ten over years, he has never rejected any of my requests. No matter what I wanted, he will agree.”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Humph, an ugly person flattering a little beauty, that is the most logical thing in the world.”

Su Ying was silent for a moment again, then she beamed and said, “He saw you barging in suddenly, and even had the guts to stare at him and yell, he was really shocked as well. For so many years, I have never seen anyone who could make his face change color, but when he saw you, it seems that even his eyes have turned green.

Xiao Yu’er raised his head and laughed madly, “It was most likely that he thought those rotten metal pieces outside the cave would be enough to stop me, but those things, in my eyes, is just child’s play.”

Su Ying replied, “It’s precisely because you were able to break through his eighteen traps, that’s why he was a little wary of you, so even though you were yelling at him, he just sat there unmoving.”

Xiao Yu’er interrupted, “Since he already knows my capabilities, why did he order those fools to their deaths?”

Su Ying explained, “He did not strike himself, but ordered his disciples to strike,

because he wanted to test the level of your martial arts first. He knows that those people are not your match as well."

Xiao Yu'er laughed loudly again, "Do you think that I know not what he was thinking? That's why I deliberately made it such that he cannot guess the basis of my martial arts."

Su Ying laughed, "Wei Wu Ya really did not expect that even he would not be able to see the basis of your martial arts."

Xiao Yu'er added, "That's why he kept sitting there and did not strike, right?"

Su Ying agreed.

Xiao Yu'er asked, "He can just sit there and see those people being beaten to death?"

Su Ying sighed, "Those people may be his disciples as well, but they have not been allowed into the inner hall yet, and are not the few of his beloved disciples. Besides, he does not take into heart at all the life and death of others. As long as it's beneficial to him, even if he have to cut his own son's head off as a gift to another, he would not even frown on it."

Xiao Yu'er exclaimed angrily, "I've long known that this person is inhumane! Who would have expected that he'll be worse than a beast!"

Su Ying sighed, "Who would have known that you would be tricked by him in the end."

Xiao Yu'er glared, "What do you know, when it comes to battle of the wits, he's far from it."

Su Ying replied, "But you… you're still…"

Xiao Yu'er sighed as well, "He may not win me in a battle of wits, but I cannot

win him in a battle of strength. To tell you the truth, I really did not expect that beast's martial arts to be so powerful."

Su Ying replied, "It was said that twenty years ago, his martial arts were already one of the best in the world, that the 'twelve Zodiacs' can terrorize the martial arts realm, is solely because of his ability…"

Xiao Yu'er said, "He was not boasting. Those in the 'Twelve Zodiacs', I have seen two as well, but their martial arts are not even a tenth of his."

Su Ying said, "Twenty years ago, he thought that he was invincible, but later he met the Floral Palace Princesses, and it seems that he suffered a great loss, that's why he retired and hid here. These twenty years, he has been practicing his martial arts day and night. According to him, even if both the Floral Princesses were to attack together, he might not be afraid of them."

Xiao Yu'er laughed loudly, "Now he's boasting. Don't talk about the Floral Princesses coming themselves, even if the disciples of the Floral Princesses were to come, he would not have an easy way out."

Su Ying's eyes shined, and asked, "How many disciples does the Floral Princesses have?"

Xiao Yu'er replied, "I don't know about the females, but there's only one male."

Su Ying's gaze fixed on him, "You… you and him are friends?"

Xiao Yu'er sighed, "I could have been friends with him, but now… now it seems like we must be enemies."

Su Ying smiled, "Very good, excellent!"

Xiao Yu'er stared, "What's so good?"

Su Ying lowered her head with a smile, no longer talking.

Naturally Xiao Yu'er did not understand her thoughts, and all the more did not know that Hua Wu Que is about to die. He stared at her for a moment before continuing, "I also knew that he wanted me to sit, and had wanted to use devious means to harm me. I was afraid of fighting with him based on brute strength, but I'm not afraid of a battle of wits, that's why I sat down immediately."

Su Ying smiled again and said, "There's actually a trap on his chair, he just have to press with his hand, and the person sitting on the chair will fall into an abyss of knives. No matter how good that person's martial arts is, he will not survive."

Xiao Yu'er asked, "Is it really that powerful?"

Su Ying replied, "Not only is his martial arts formidable, he is also well versed in other unorthodox skills. He thought that he only had to release the trap and you will certainly die, so he did not wish to waste his energy fighting you."

Xiao Yu'er commented, "I'm afraid he would never have thought that after he had triggered the trap, I would still be safely seated without moving."

Su Ying mused, "Not only was he perplexed at that time, I was befuddled as well."

Xiao Yu'er laughed loudly, "To tell you the truth, I've long realized that there's something wrong with that chair, so although it looked as if I was seated, but my butt did not touch the chair at all."

Su Ying smiled, "You're really an imp."

Xiao Yu'er continued, "I took the opportunity to scold him a little more, but who would have expected that old beast would have a shorter temper than me, and he actually jumped up to fight with me. Once I saw that he was about to strike, I knew I was going to be in trouble."

“But you still fought with him for quite a while, That great battle, I’ve never seen one like it before.”

Xiao Yu’er sighed, “That old beast really is quite skillful, not only is his martial arts formidable, his strokes vicious, even his attacks were slick and underhanded. Even if my martial arts were better than his, I won’t be able to take any advantage of him at all.”

Su Ying said, “He himself had also made this comment, even if those whose martial arts are better than him, that person might not necessarily win, because no matter what strokes he executed, he made sure that he would not be at the losing end.”

Xiao Yu’er added, “Precisely because he retained 30% of his strength while fighting, that I can take him on for such a long time, but in my heart I knew, as soon as I’m careless, I would die in his hands.”

Su Ying sighed, “There really aren’t any survivors among those he defeated.”

Xiao Yu’er continued, “Since I know that sooner or later I will suffer under his hands, and I cannot even escape, I then decided, even if I were to die, I do not wish to die in the hands of someone like him.”

Su Ying fluttered, “That’s why you… you…”

Xiao Yu’er said, “That’s why I retreated step by step, until I reached the side of the wall.”

Su Ying said, “There’s also a trap on the side of that wall, once you step on it, knives will come flying out immediately.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “Do you think that I didn’t know that?”

Su Ying was surprised, “You knew? Why did you still go over if you knew?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed loudly, “It’s because I could see that there’s a trap along the wall, because I knew he wants to lure me there, that’s why I deliberately pretended to be forced to a corner by him, and stepped on that trap. When the flying knives shot out, I pretended that I could not dodge and received a knife.”

Su Ying was stunned and asked hoarsely, “Why? Why did you deliberately let yourself be trapped.”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “Because I did not wish to die in his hands.”

“But do you know that there’s poison on the flying knives?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Even if there’s poison in the knives, it’s so much better than his ghastly claws. If I were clawed by him, death will be a certainty, that’s why I would rather take the knife.”

He continued with a loud laugh, “I deduced that once he saw me injured by the knife, he would not continue the fight, or else I would have to fight him to the death… So now you should know that I was not really tricked by him.”

Su Ying looked at him for a moment, and heaved a long sigh, “If we were to compare the dexterity in reacting to situations, the remarkable methods, the quick turn of wits, I’m afraid no one in the world can really compare to you.”

Xiao Yu’er pulled a face, “Don’t you know that I am the smartest person in the world?”

End of Chapter 83

Chapter 73

Chapter 84

Su Ying guffawed, and after a while, she said slowly, “But if you have not met me, you, the smartest person in the world, would still not survive, you… how should you repay me.”

Who would have expected Xiao Yu’er to laugh coldly instead, “Even if you did not save me, someone else would.”

Su Ying was again surprised, “Who?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Zhang San, Li Si, Wang Er, Ma Zi*, I don’t know who right now, but someone will certainly save me. Do you think I look like a short lived person?”

(Zhang San, Li Si, Wang Er, Ma Zi = same meaning as Tom, Dick or Harry)

Su Ying chewed her lips lightly, “So that means that I should not have saved you.”

Xiao Yu’er made a noise of agreement.

Su Ying continued, “I should have waited and see, see which idiot would come and save you.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed loudly, “That’s right, anyone who saves me is an idiot, you’re absolutely correct.”

Su Ying stamped her foot, “You… you…”

Xiao Yu’er propped his feet up and smiled lazily, “Anyway, even if there are no idiots saving me, I still would not die. ‘The good are never long lived, the bad will live a thousand years’, have you heard of this saying?”

Su Ying finally could not take it but burst out laughing, she chuckled “You… you little rascal, you really make others helpless.”

Xiao Yu’er grinned, “No matter what, you really should not have saved me, I’m afraid you are regretting that now.”

“Regret? … No matter what I do, I have never regretted anything before.”

She continued calmly, “After you were poisoned by the knife the other day, you lost consciousness not soon after. Wei Wu Ya was sure that you will certainly die, so he ordered others to carry you out to feed the rats.”

Xiao Yu’er stuck his tongue out and asked hoarsely, “Feed the rats?”

Su Ying replied, “Hmm.”

Xiao Yu’er felt his whole body itch, but he continued to laugh, “So lucky, so lucky.”

Su Ying asked, “So now you know that you were lucky.”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “It’s not me who is lucky, it’s those rats who were really lucky.”

Su Ying was stunned, “You said the rats were lucky?”

Xiao Yu’er said with a straight face, “From the top to the bottom, from the inside to the outside, even my veins, skin and bones are all rotten. If the rats were to really eat me, it would be strange if they do not vomit or have diarrhea.”

Before he can finish his words, Su Ying was already laughing so hard that she bent over.

Xiao Yu’er asked, “Are you feeling very happy?”

As Su Ying laughed, she suddenly stopped, and looked at him for a moment in a daze, before saying with a sad sigh, “Do you know, ever since I was born, I’ve never laughed so happily before.”

Her eyes suddenly reddened, she lowered her head, not talking further.

Xiao Yu’er stared at her for a long time, rubbed his nose and laughed, “Don’t be sad, I may be saying otherwise, but I’m still grateful towards you in my heart.”

Su Ying replied with her head lowered, “I know you may be saying bad things, but in your heart… in your heart you’re still a kind person, whereas some people may speak beautifully, but their hearts are uglier than anything else.”

Xiao Yu’er lifted his head heavenward and laughed loudly, “Do you think you’re very smart? Do you think you can see through people’s mind?”

Su Ying shook her head, not speaking. A while later, she continued slowly, “Actually I had no chance to save you that day, but an important guest of Wei Wu Ya came coincidentally, so he brought that person in to talk, because he never liked others to see me."

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “Because everyone else is born better looking than he is, of course he’s afraid others will snatch you away.”

These words seemed to have triggered off Su Ying’s melancholy. She lowered her head again, and only continued after a while, “Only after he left, was I able to tell that two little disciples of his to carry you here. I told them that there’s a kind of flower which must use a dead person as a fertilizer before it can bloom well…”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “Those two idiotic disciples may believe such words, but

how can Wei Wu Ya possibly believe it!”

Su Ying replied, “His disciples all fear him, that they dare not even utter a single word when they see him.”

Xiao Yu’er stretched lazily, and said “Could it be that you thought it would be such a pity for a smart man like me to die, that’s why you saved me.”

Su Ying smiled, “I do not know why I saved you either, maybe… maybe it’s because of the air you had around you when you saw Wei Wu Ya, maybe it’s because after you were injured by the poisoned knife, you still looked at me and smiled… Someone who would smile at me before he died, how I can see him really die.”

Xiao Yu’er clasped his hands and laughed loudly, “That smile of mine, is really useful.”

Su Ying asked, “Could it be… could it be that you smiled at me, because you wanted me to save you?”

Xiao Yu’er chuckled, “I’m about to die, what else is there to smile about.”

Su Ying bit her lips and asked, “You… why didn’t you just lie to me, just said that it’s because after you saw me, you were enchanted, so you unconsciously smiled…”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Now that you’ve already saved me, why should I still lie to you. Besides… the look when you’re angry, is so much better looking then when you’re smiling.”

Su Ying can’t help but break into a guffaw, and asked “Why exactly were you looking for Wei Wu Ya?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Haven’t I said the reason the other day?… I went to look for Wei Wu Ya, because I wanted to save my friend.”

Su Ying asked, “How do you know that your friend is there?”

Xiao Yu’er explained, “My friend secretly left signs along the way, the signs pointed towards that… that ghastly ‘Heaven Outside heaven’.”

Su Ying was silent for a moment before saying slowly, “But I can tell you, for these past three months, no one had gone to that place, only you… you’re the first person who barged into that place!”

Xiao Yu’er leaped up and shouted, “It can’t be!”

Su Ying asked, “How do you know if that’s not faked?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Besides they themselves, there will never be anyone else who can make those signs.”

Su Ying sighed and said, “Maybe they themselves dare not barge into that place, so they made you explore the area for them, to scout for them. Maybe they dislike you, so they’re sending you to your death!”

Xiao Yu’er collapsed onto the chair, his eyes staring straight ahead in a loss, mumbling, “Impossible, impossible… they raised me from young, why would they harm me now?… Why would they harm me?”

He suddenly jumped up again and dashed towards the iron bars, shouting “Let me out, let me out quickly, I want to find them and get to the bottom of this.”

Su Ying said gently, “You have not recovered from your injury, and the poison has not been purged totally, how can you leave…. You are the world’s smartest person, but why are you so impatient?”

Suddenly a person laughed sinisterly, “How gentle! How caring!”

Xiao Yu’er was shocked, and raised his voice, “Who is that?”

There’s no change in Su Ying’s expression at all, even the muscles on the sides of her mouth did not move. She only turned around slowly, and said calmly, “This place rarely sees any guests, no matter who comes, I will still welcome him.”

Someone giggled amongst the flowers, “A pity that I came at the wrong time, right?”

Su Ying smiled, “It doesn’t matter even if you do not wish to come out, it’s just that the flowers are thorny, and there’s poison on the thorns. If something were to happen to you, please don’t blame me for not knowing how to receive guests properly.”

Before she could finish her words, there was a person amongst the flowers jumped up, as if he had been kicked on the buttocks. This person has a triangular face, an eagle nose, and mousy eyes. The features make one nauseous on seeing it, but of all things, he was wearing a shiny brocade shirt.

When he saw Su Ying, he actually bowed his head and said, “I just made a little joke, and did not expect Miss Su to be a little startled by it, please forgive me.”

Xiao Yu’er saw that this person is actually someone that Su Ying knows, and is actually playing a prank on her, so he felt more at ease. But this person does not only look irritating, his words were even more irritating. Xiao Yu’er wanted so much to give him a ‘little’ slap, followed by a ‘little’ kick.

Su Ying’s expression turned somber, and asked coldly, “Why have you come? Didn’t your teacher tell you that this place is not for you to come as you will?”

That person simpered, “With my little guts, how would I dare to barge into Miss Su’s cave, but this time it is Teacher himself who asked me here.”

Su Ying rolled her eyes and said, “He asked you to come? Why have he asked you to come?”

That person’s eyes closed into a straight like and said with a smile, “He asked

me to come take a look, the flower that must use a dead body as fertilizer, to see how beautiful it can actually bloom. He has a guest who would like to take a look at this strange flower."

Once these words were said, Su Ying and Xiao Yu'er can't help but feel startled.

Su Ying's icy features immediately warmed up, and she said with a smile, "Since that is the case, I'll bring you to take a look at that flower."

That person replied, "But now I have no need to see it. Since the fertilizer is still drinking wine, naturally that flower has not bloomed, right?"

Su Ying's eyes shone, and she cajoled, "Then you… what do you intend to do?"

"With my little guts, how would I dare to lie to Teacher, unless…" That person grinned and continued, "Unless Miss can make my guts bigger."

Su Ying smiled, "And how can your guts become bigger?"

That person looked at Su Ying through narrowed eyes and said, "As they always say, 'The guts of a lewd is greater than heaven!' Have Miss not heard of this saying before?"

Su Ying's expression changed slightly, but she still smiled and said, "You're not afraid your Teacher would be jealous?"

That person chuckled, "That's right, Teacher will indeed be very jealous, if he were to know that the fertilizer is drinking wine… hee hee, by then I'm afraid he would not be too courteous towards Miss"

Su Ying chewed on her lips and replied, "Actually why do you need to threaten me, I had already wanted to be with you…" As she spoke, her hands seemingly leaned onto the bars unconsciously.

That person suddenly laughed loudly, "Could it be Miss is thinking of letting the

fertilizer out to silence me… hee hee, as soon as Miss's hand touches it, I will leave immediately. In a little while, Teacher would come over!"

Su Ying really put her hands down and said with a smile, "You're really a suspicious person. But this is not the place to…. to talk, let's go into the house!"

That person hurriedly shook his hands, "No need, no need… I've long heard that Miss's house is full of intricate traps, if I were to follow Miss in, I'm afraid my little life will be in danger."

Su Ying said gently, "Then you… you're thinking of here…" She smiled coquettishly, and walked over step by step.

Who would have expected that person to retreat a few steps suddenly, exclaiming, "Don't come over…"

Su Ying giggled, "Since you want me… why won't you let me go over?"

That person smiled sinisterly, "Naturally I want Miss to come over, it's just that I want Miss to take off your clothes first, and you must take off everything, not a single item to be left."

Su Ying replied, "Whether I know martial arts or not, don't you already know?"

That person said, "Although Miss does not know martial arts, but you're full of tricks, so how can I take it, it's just that…" He continued with a grin, "If Miss were to take off all your clothes, then I would be much relieved. If a woman is totally naked, there's no tricks that she can play."

Xiao Yu'er was almost bursting with anger while witnessing the scene from the side. This person is wilier than a fox, more slithery than a snake, no matter who is the person who meets someone like him, that person must be in really bad luck.

However Su Ying smiled, and her slender hands, really reached up to loosen her clothes.

Xiao Yu’er can’t help but cry out, “So infuriating I can die.”

Su Ying said gently, “You will certainly not die, and I will certainly not…”

Suddenly, there was a ‘swoosh’ sound, an extremely sharp, extremely strong sound of the wind swished past. That person was startled and turned around, but there was nothing behind.

He was stunned for a moment before he turned back slowly and mumbled, “Could I have seen a ghost.”

A green bamboo flew over with a ‘swoosh’, and impaled him onto the ground, fresh blood spurting like rain. That person twitched on the ground for a moment, and then he can never move again!

Even with Xiao Yu’er’s eyesight, he still could not see how this person fell. The speed of the attack by the killer, is really shocking!

Su Ying’s face paled, and she asked, “Who… who is the Elder who have lent a helping hand, please come out so that I can offer my gratitude.”

The wind blew past the leaves, making rustling noises, but there was no reply.

Xiao Yu’er raised his voice, “At a time like this, you still won’t let me out so that I can go take a look?”

Su Ying sighed, “If I were to let you out now, is akin to harming you. I have never cared about the life or death of another person on my whole life, but only you.”

Xiao Yu’er replied angrily, “I’d rather die, what can you do?”

Su Ying smiled, “Once I’ve decided on something, I will never change… even if you were to really commit suicide now, I’ll think of all ways to save you.”

Xiao Yu’er exclaimed, “You… you’re not human, you’re a female spirit.”

Su Ying covered her mouth and smiled, “A female spirit with a little imp, isn’t it a match made in heaven?”

As she spoke, she blushed, and she ran away with reddening cheeks.

Xiao Yu’er looked at her, as if in a daze, and then he mumbled with a bitter smile, “There’s actually a woman like this in the world, what a rarity. It seems like she’s intent on following me, this is really a troublesome matter.”

Su Ying can be heard saying from far away, “You wait here, I’ll go and take a look where that Elder is, I’ll be back immediately.”

Xiao Yu’er can’t help but call out, “That person’s martial arts in unfathomable, you… you be careful.”

Su Ying laughed, “Don’t you worry. You’re not dead yet, so I can’t bear to die as well. Besides, since this Elder saved me, how can he harbor evil intentions towards me.” The sound of her voice got further, disappearing into the trees and flowers.

Xiao Yu’er shook his head and sighed, “This person seemed weaker than everyone else, but who would have expected her to be so brave, and so stubborn?”

As Su Ying walked amongst the flowers, she smiled and said, “This place may look beautiful, but there are deathly traps everywhere. Elder, you have saved me, if you are injured here, how can I feel good?”

She is faced with a mysterious person, with unfathomable skills, but she was not concerned with her own safety at all. Instead, she kept saying that she’s afraid the other party will be hurt. A pity that even if that person heard her, he was not appreciative at all, and still ignored her.

Su Ying sighed, and muttered “This person is really strange, since he saved me,

but he dare not see me, why is that so?”

The lamps at the porch are still lighted, and no one can be seen. That ‘chair’ is still there, and does not seem like it has been touched by anyone else.

Su Ying went in a circle and returned to that cave… and only now did her expression change. The bars on the cave has been deactivated by someone, and Xiao Yu’er has already disappeared! Could it be that he has escaped regardless of everything? Impossible, he will never escape on his own, he can never deactivate the iron bars. Those who can deactivate the iron bars, are only Wei Wu Ya and his head disciple Wei Ma Yi. Could it be that they’ve come here and captured Xiao Yu’er?

If it were someone else, that person would have certainly panicked once he thought of this point, and totally helpless as well, but Su Ying calmed down instead.

If Xiao Yu’er has really been captured by Wei Wu Ya, then where have that martial arts exponent who saved her earlier have gone to? Could it be that he left immediately after he saved her?

Besides, if it was really Wei Wu Ya who had come, how is it possible that Xiao Yu’er did not make any noise at all, and just let himself be captured?

Su Ying secretly sighed, and suddenly she heard in the distance someone scolding in alarm. This voice is made by Xiao Yu’er.

Xiao Yu’er watched Su Ying walked away, and was about to lift his wine cup when suddenly there was a ‘clang’, and a small stone struck onto the iron bar, with sparks flying. Then, the iron bar rose slowly.

Xiao Yu’er was both surprised and overjoyed, and for a moment he was actually stunned. In the darkness a shadow appeared like a spirit, with long robes and a tall hat, his eerie gaze staring icily at Xiao Yu’er, but he did not speak.

Xiao Yu’er heaved a long sigh and asked, “You’ve come to save me?”

That person replied, ‘Yes.”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “The person who killed Wei Wu Ya’s disciple, is it you as well?”

That person replied, ‘Yes.”

Xiao Yu’er queried, “Who are you actually? Who do you want to save me?”

That person smiled coldly, “If you do not wish to come out, I don’t mind putting the iron bars back down again…”

Xiao Yu’er rolled his eyes and smiled, “You have to know, no matter what is the reason you saved me, I will not show appreciation, and all the more I will not repay you in gratitude.”

That person replied, “If you were to repay me, I would not have saved you.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “Since we are now clear on this, I must at least let you save me once then.”

Others have saved him, but not only is he not thankful, it seems that he wants other to be grateful to him instead, and that person is not in the least offended at all.

Xiao Yu’er leaped out and with a smile, mumbled “Miss Su Ying, my apologies. I may come and see you when I am free in future. As for your kind intentions towards me, I am thankful…”

That person seems to be floating, riding on the wind as he moved. Xiao Yu’er followed behind and smiled, “Your Lightness Skill is not bad at all, but where exactly are you bringing me?”

End of Chapter 84

Chapter 74

Chapter 85

That person replied, “You will know when you are there.”

Xiao Yu’er suddenly paused in his steps and said, “Don’t think that because you saved me, I will follow you. If you do not clarify right now, then I’m very sorry, you will go your way and I am going to go mine.”

That person turned his head around and laughed, “No wonder others say that you’re most difficult to deal with and to offend, now it seems that it’s all true…”

His suddenly stopped talking and with a lowered voice, said “Be careful, someone is coming, it could be Wei Wu Ya.”

Xiao Yu’er was really startled, and asked “Where is that person?”

That person held on to his hand, and suddenly smiled icily, “Right here!”

Xiao Yu’er was shocked again, and felt half his body go weak. It turned out that he had locked his pulse point, his five fingers steel-like, so how can Xiao Yu’er struggle out of his grasp. He asked hoarsely, “You… what are you doing?”

That person did not speak, but with lightning fast speed his left hand had pressed on various acupoints.

Xiao Yu’er asked angrily, “Are you crazy, since you saved me, then why did you sneak an attack upon me?”

That person laughed coldly, “Just because you did not expect it, or else how could I have succeeded?”

As he spoke, he used a rope to hang Xiao Yu’er from a tree.

Xiao Yu’er was both startled and furious, and yelled in anger “You’re crazy, beast, what do you actually want?”

But that person did not even take another look at him, but just clapped his hands and walked away.

Xiao Yu’er can’t help but berated, “Crazy, crazy, why do I keep bumping into crazy people.”

Su Ying heard Xiao Yu’er’s admonishments and was surprised and overjoyed. No matter what, at least Xiao Yu’er is still in this valley. She was just about to run over when she suddenly heard a voice saying icily from the darkness, “You do not have to look further, I am here!”

A person walked out slowly, as thin as a skeleton, with hempen garments and tall hat, high cheekbones, nose hooked like an eagle, his gaze freezing, and filled with arrogance. Su Ying can’t help but feel startled, before heaving a long sigh and saying, “So it’s you!”

The man in hempen clothes uttered, “Humph!”

Su Ying smiled, “I had felt earlier that the way that person killed is a lot like you, but I did not expect…”

The man interrupted coldly, “You did not expect that I will come, right?”

Su Ying sighed, “I really did not expect it, since you fell out with that old man, it’s been four years…. Four years and three months where we did not have news of you.”

The man looked heaven looked heavenward and said, “And you still remember me.”

Su Ying lowered her head, “How can I forget you, you’ve always treated me so well.”

The man suddenly said angrily, “Who said I was good to you, in the whole world, I’ve never been good to anyone.”

Su Ying asked, “You did not?”

The man heaved a long sigh, and said loudly, “That’s right, and it’s also because of you. I cannot stand the way that he someone with a foot already in the grave, and yet… yet he wants to treat you like his forbidden fruit. If someone were to take even a look at you, he’ll go crazy.”

Su Ying was silent for a moment before she said, “But now, you still came back.”

The man replied, “I come and go as I please, who can dictate me.”

Su Ying said, “That’s right, even that old man was a little ambiguous about you. He frequently said that although he has many disciples in his whole life, but only you managed to get his true teachings.”

The man laughed icily, “Do you think that he is the one who taught me my martial arts? Humph… Wei Wu Ya is selfish and demanding by nature, who does not know about that. He accepted so many disciples, because he wants some servants which he need not pay. Since when has he really taught his martial arts to others… he only taught me a few basic moves and he wants me to lay down my life for him!”

Su Ying asked, “Then your martial arts..”

The man said coldly, “My martial arts were stolen bit by bit…. When he was practicing martial arts, I was secretly watching, secretly learning.”

Su Ying sighed, “He really did not treat his disciples well, but towards you… then why do you come back now?”

The man replied, “I… I only wanted to come back for a look.”

Su Ying’s eyes shimmered, and she smiled, “You came back because you wanted to see me, right?”

The man said loudly, “Now I already know, you are a heartless person. No matter how well others treat you, you would not remember it, or be grateful about it.”

Su Ying felt extremely maligned, and she said with lowered head, “I… Am I really this kind of person?”

The man affirmed.

Su Ying replied, “But still, you killed Wei Shi Ba because of me, you cannot stand him bullying me, so obviously, you still treat me well, right?”

The man suddenly laughed loudly.

Su Ying blinked, and asked, “What are you laughing about?”

The man suddenly stopped his laughter, and said each word slowly, “To tell you the truth, I have long given up hope on you! I may disdain those who expose others secret, or who shamelessly tell on others, but no matter who you like, I will never put it to heart again!”

Su Ying looked at him quietly for a moment, and slowly replied, “Then, why did you kidnap the person that I like?”

The man smiled frostily, “You will know the reason soon enough, do you wish to take a look at him now?”

Su Ying answered, “What do you think?”

The man replied, “Fine, follow me!”

Xiao Yu’er saw that it was actually Su Ying who came with that man, and they seem to be very familiar with each other. He was startled and surprised, and can’t help but yelled, “Who is this crazy person? You know him?”

Su Ying saw that Xiao Yu’er is actually tied up a tree, and can’t help but sigh and say with a bitter smile, “The world’s smartest person, how did he end up like that?”

Xiao Yu’er angrily replied, “Because I did not expect this person to be crazy, the things he does really makes one flabbergasted.”

Su Ying replied, “Among Wei Wu Ya’s disciples, his martial arts is the highest. When those in the martial arts realm mention ‘Taking Lives Without Mercy’ Wei Ma Yi (Ma Yi = hemp cloth), who would not be terrified. Why else would you be tricked by him as well.”

Xiao Yu’er was shocked for a moment before he heaved a long sigh, “This person is actually Wei Wu Ya’s disciple, it seems like I’ve really seen a ghost.”

Wei Ma Yi said coldly, “Since we’ve met, is there anything you would like to say?”

Xiao Yu’er made a face at him and said, “Words there are none, but I do have a fart, do you want to smell it?”

He was hanging upside down, and a person’s face when seen upside down, is already quite funny, and now that he’s making a monkey face, that look is really hilarious. Su Ying can’t help but guffawed in laughter.

Wei Ma Yi is of course feeling vexed, but on seeing his look, can’t help but want to laugh as well. He immediately turned his head, stared and Su Ying and

asked, “This is the one you like?”

If it was any other woman, even if their heart is full of liking, they will definitely be embarrassed to say it out, but Su Ying did not even lower her head and just replied, “That’s right.”

Wei Ma Yi smiled coldly, “I’ve thought that you have high standards, who would have expected that you’ll actually like this crazy fool.”

Su Ying smiled, “He is not too bad, or else I… how can I be mesmerized by him?”

Wei Ma Yi was stunned, “Such words, and you dare to utter them.”

Su Ying replied, “Why won’t I dare to say how I feel? This is nothing shameless. If one were to be surreptitious or furtive about it, liking someone but dare not say it out, now that would be shameless… do you agree?”

Wei Ma Yi’s yellow waxen face seemed to have blushed, and he said with a cold laugh, “You may like him, but he may not necessarily like you.”

Su Ying replied, “I only have to like him, it doesn’t matter if he likes me or not, and you need not be concerned.”

Wei Ma Yi cried out, “Humph, you…” He had wanted to argue, but he only uttered ‘humph’, and was unable to continue.

Su Ying continued with a smile, “Besides, even if he doesn’t like me now, I have ways to make him like me.”

Once he heard this, Xiao Yu’er can’t help but laugh loudly, “Good, well said, I actually feel that I’m liking you a little now.”

Wei Ma Yi’s face seemed to turn green, then pale, and he said fiercely, “Since that is the case, if he is dead, you will certainly be very sad, right?”

Su Ying smiled slightly, “I’ve long known that you will use him to threaten me, what do you actually want? Or are you too embarrassed to say?”

Wei Ma Yi looked at her eyes that seems like spring water, looked at her slightly heaving bosom under her light clothes, and felt his heart beat faster, his lips dry, and said, “… I want you…”

Suddenly he shouted and turned around abruptly, and punched himself in the chest seven, eight times. His eyes not daring to look at her, he yelled, “I only want you to tell me the secret you heard yesterday!”

Su Ying suddenly laughed, “Actually, even if you wanted me, I would have given myself to you, a pity that you do not have the courage, and missed such a great opportunity.”

Wei Ma Yi roared angrily, turned around and grabbed her shoulders, shouting hoarsely, “You… you stinking lass, little s.lut, you… you… you…” He only spoke one sentence, and could not continue. Suddenly his palm struck out, aiming a slap towards Su Ying’s cheeks, but who would have expected that Su Ying did not dodge at all. Instead she turned her face towards him, and said, “Hit me if you want to, but can you bear to strike me?”

The pale starlight, shone through the leaves on the tree, illuminated her face. Her iris were like silk, her cheeks were like fresh flowers, delicate and fragile. Wei Ma Yi’s palm stopped suddenly in midair, unable to strike further.

However Su Ying leaned her body forward, closed her eyes and said, “Hit me, why aren’t you hitting me?”

Wei Ma Yi’s body seemed to be shaking, in his heart he wishes so much to embrace this soft and fragrant body, but he did not have the guts to really reach out.

Xiao Yu’er felt both anger and amusement on witnessing the scene, when he suddenly noticed Su Ying’s slender hand. On her hand, there is now a shiny ring, and no one knows when she put it on.

Hanging upside down, his eyes were on a level with this ring, and he could see clearly under the starlight that there is actually a very sharp and thin silver needle on the ring.

Su Ying was twisting her waist, her mouth mumbling something, and this hand that has the ring, was going to hug Wei Ma Yi's neck.

The delicate skin on Wei Ma Yi's neck, only needs to be slightly pricked by this silver needle, and he can forget about living. And right now he is breathless, his heart pumping, his eyes reddening, and his mind seem to have floated somewhere, so how could he have expected that this deathly thing is less than an inch away from him.

Who would have expected Xiao Yu'er to suddenly shout, "Be careful of her hand! There's a poisoned needle on her fingers!"

Wei ma Yi roared and raising his hand, pushed Su Ying away.

Su Ying knocked into a tree and she stared at Xiao Yu'er, exclaiming hoarsely, "You… are you crazy?"

Su Ying bit her lips, not talking anymore. Wei ma Yi was both startled and furious, but he really does not know why Xiao Yu'er would save him instead, so he just stood there staring, not talking as well.

Xiao Yu'er laughed, "I saved him, because I also wanted to hear that secret of yours."

Su Ying asked, "… what did you say?"

Xiao Yu'er added, "You'd rather offer him your body, then to reveal the secret, so obviously you look upon this secret as something more important than your own body."

Su Ying replied, "He would not dare to kill me, because if he kill me, he can

forget about knowing that secret.”

Xiao Yu’er interrupted with a laugh, “I want to hear this secret, and only if he threaten you, will you have no choice but to reveal it. If he’s killed by you, I’m afraid you will never reveal this secret, so I won’t be able to listen to it as well.”

Su Ying stamped her foot, “But since I saved you, can’t it be that I will tell you the secret in future?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “That is two different matters. You saw that I was about to die, and you were anxious, only then will you reveal the secret. When I have been saved, you will be worried that I’ll leave, by then you will use this secret to threaten me, and I can’t tell how long will it take before you’re willing to reveal it. How can I wait for so long then.”

He continued with a loud laugh, “To tell you the truth, after you save me, I might leave immediately, by then won’t I be unable to know the secret forever, and won’t I be frustrated for the rest of my life.”

These words that he said, even Wei Ma Yi can’t decide if he wants to laugh or cry when he heard them, and Su Ying is naturally so furious she is about to burst. She shouted, “Since this secret is so important, if you hear about it, how could he let you off. You… you think of yourself as the world’s smartest person, but why didn’t you think of this point.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed loudly, “If I can hear Taoist teachings in the morning, then I can die contented in the evening.* I only have to listen to such an exciting secret, it doesn’t matter if I die.”

*From the analects of Confucius

Su Ying looked at Xiao Yu’er, looked at Wei Ma Yi, and suddenly smiled coquettishly, “Interesting, interesting; that there would actually be a person like this, a situation like this in the world. Actually I would not have revealed this secret for anyone at all, but for you…”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “For me, you are willing to divulge?”

Su Ying turned towards Wei Ma Yi, her expression immediately somber, and said slowly, “Actually, even if I tell you the secret to Shifting Flower Grafting Jade, it’s useless as well. Anyway you cannot master it, nor break it…”

Wei Ma Yi have not spoken, but Xiao Yu’er’s expression had changed, and he cried hoarsely, “What did you say? The secret to Shifting Flower Grafting jade?"

Su Ying replied, “That’s right, the secret to Shifting Flower Grafting Jade, is also the greatest secret in the martial arts realm. He and his Teacher, because of this secret, have never had a good meal or a good rest for the past twenty years.

Xiao Yu’er stared hard and said, “You… you know the secret to Shifting Flower Grafting Jade?”

Wei Ma Yi is already getting impatient, and he shouted, “As long as you tell me, it’s my business if I can master it or not.”

Su Ying replied, “Fine, listen well…”

Before she could finish her sentence, Xiao Yu’er suddenly shouted, “Heaven and Earth, by the imperial edict of the Jade Emperor, the Bodhisattva Guan Yin with her willow stalk and bottle, together with the King of Hell, Cow Head and Horse Face, come and save me quickly!”

He was screaming and yelling, shouting and crying. Whatever Su Ying said, Wei ma Yi can’t hear a single word at all, and with a large step towards him, he roared, “Are you crazy?”

Xiao Yu’er made a monkey face at him and grinned, “I’m not crazy, it’s just that I have no wish to listen to this secret already.” Once he said these words, Su Ying was stunned again.

Wei Ma Yi was livid and roared, “You actually tried everything to listen to this secret, and now that the secret of Shifting Flower Grafting Jade is about to be

revealed, even death would be worth it. And now why do you not want to listen to it anymore?”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “Other secrets I might want to listen, but as for the secret of Shifting Flower Grafting Jade… heh heh, I knew it since I was three, so it won’t be interesting if I hear it again.”

Wei ma Yi was stunned, “You… you know it as well?”

Xiao Yu’er said, “This secret, if revealed by Su Ying, you can forget about mastering it even if you practiced until you are 100 years old. Besides, you may not even live beyond 50.”

Su Ying giggled, “The words are quite true.”

Xiao Yu’er added, “But if the secret is revealed by me, you will be able to master it within three days, because what I know, is the shortcut to Shifting Flower Grafting Jade.”

Wei Ma Yi’s face heated up on hearing this, and can’t help but ask, “If you can really divulge it, I…”

Xiao Yu’er replied with a straight face, “I don’t need your gratitude, I only want you to release me.”

Wei Ma Yi agreed, “Yes, yes, yes, I will certainly…”

Xiao Yu’er interrupted, “Fine, listen well, you will practice as I speak.”

“The technique of Shifting Flower Grafting Jade, the first step is to use your hands as feet, and stand upside down. Lift your head, open your knees and breath calmly.”

Wei Ma Yi asked with furrowed brows, “What kind of martial arts is that?”

Xiao Yu’er replied with a straight face, “You have to know, the greatest thing about Shifting Flower Grafting Jade, is that everything is in reverse, so the posture for practicing it, naturally must be that way as well.”

Although Wei Ma Yi was still doubtful, but as long as he can master Shifting Flower Grafting Jade, he really does not mind sacrificing everything. As long as there is a slight chance, he will not give up. Su Ying watched from the side pouting, not talking as well.

Wei Ma Yi straightened his body, and was already upside down, his legs slightly apart, his head lifted high, looking exactly like a toad.

Xiao Yu’er looked with a straight face, not a trace of a smile can be seen at all, commenting, “Bend your knees a little further, lift your head a little higher.”

Wei Ma Yi was really quite obedient, and immediately followed the instructions, asking, “Is this all right?”

Xiao Yu’er said, “More or less, just make do with it.” After he said this, he did not continue.

Although Wei Ma Yi’s internal strength is profound, but this pose is really killing. No matter how highly skilled a person is, while in such a pose, they will definitely feel the strain.

After a while, Wei Ma Yi’s head was sweating, and he can’t help but ask, “How much longer must I wait?”

Xiao Yu’er said, “All right, now your inner energy has sunk to your chest, you can consider the first step prepared. Before you start on the second step, let out a fart first.”

Wei Ma Yi angrily replied, “I think you’re bull shitting.”

Although he is stunned and furious, but because he feared that the preparation will all be in naught, he dared not stand up.

Xiao Yu’er said, “You must know, farts are bad gasses in a person’s body. I want you to fart, because I want you to force out the bad gasses in your body first, before you can start practicing martial arts.”

End of Chapter 85

Chapter 75

Chapter 86

When Wei Ma Yi heard that Xiao Yu'er wanted him to fart, he thought to himself, this sounds logical. It must be known that for one with great internal energy, he can control the pulse in his own body with ease, so letting out a fart is nothing difficult at all. Su Ying has already covered her nose and turned around, her shoulders shaking, as if she's trying to control her laughter.

Xiao Yu'er said with a straight face, "This fart must be released after you remove your pants."

Wei Ma Yi stammered, "Remove… remove…" His face is red from blushing, and he can't even complete his words.

Xiao Yu'er added, "This step is called removing the pants to let out a fart, a good fart."

It must be known that he is not a fool, he can even be considered sly and devious, it's just that he was too anxious to master Shifting Flower Grafting Jade, that he seemed to have lost his senses. As the saying goes, 'with the arrival of benefits, out goes logic', that's why Xiao Yu'er had a chance.

By now Wei Ma Yi thought that something is not right, and he flipped over and fumed, "This… what kind of martial arts is this really?"

Still with a straight face, Xiao Yu'er answered, "This martial arts is called 'A Fool letting out Farts', this is a lot more formidable than Shifting Flower Grafting Jade."

Wei Ma Yi clenched his fists, his whole body shaking, almost dying from anger. Su Ying could not take it any longer and burst out into laughter.

Only now did Xiao Yu'er laugh and say, "Fool, do you think if I really know Shifting Flower Grafting Jade, I would still be tied on this tree by you? You tricked me, so if I do not trick you as well, I'll be letting you down."

Su Ying giggled, "But you… you're too much in doing that."

Xiao Yu'er laughed, "Those who want to take advantage of me, are bound to take some losses."

Wei Ma Yi roared, "You want to trick me, then I shall have your life!" As he roared, he leapt over.

However, Xiao Yu'er shouted instead, "Heaven and Earth, Heavenly soldiers, big and small ghosts, if you don't come and save me, I am going to curse."

"A person like you, even ghosts would not save you." Wei Ma Yi's finger is already aiming towards Xiao Yu'er's mute acupoint.

Right at this time, someone suddenly said eerily from the darkness, "You're not a ghost, how would you know that ghosts would not save him?"

This voice sounded flighty and dispersed, with no sense of life at all, it does not sound like it came from a living being. And when the voice was emitted, it seemed to be coming from the west, but at the end of the sentence, it has already moved to the east.

In the deserted woods at night, to suddenly hear a voice like that, really makes one turn cold.

In the darkness, at the top of the tree, there really was a grayish shadow, his hempen clothes fluttering in the wind, looking extremely eerie, not like a living person at all.

Wei Ma Yi is after all not a mediocre person, so when he saw the other party's outline, he was able to hold his temper and walk over slowly. He said coldly, "Since you wish to become a ghost, I will grant you your wish!"

As he spoke, a rain of silver needles shot towards the treetop.

From the bottom to the top, it's not easy to exert enough strength, but the wrist power of Wei Ma Yi is really remarkable. The speed of those silver needles is in fact faster than the speed of a shooting arrow.

The person on the treetop screamed and dropped down like falling leaves. Wei Ma Yi laughed coldly, "Let's see if you can still pretend to be a ghost."

Before he can finish his words, someone laughed, "Dying the first time will become a ghost, dying two times will still become a ghost, look over here again."

Wei Ma Yi turned around in alarm, that grayish shadow is suddenly at the treetop ten over foot away to the left, a pair of grayish eyes staring at Wei Ma Yi in cold laughter.

No matter how highly skilled or bold Wei Ma Yi is, right now his limbs can't help but feel cold. Right at this time, someone suddenly laughed behind him, "Such a big man, and frightened by ghosts?"

Wei Ma Yi suddenly flipped over, and saw a beaming round faced monk, swaggering over. Wei Ma Yi puffed himself up and said fiercely, "Are you a ghost then?"

That monk laughed, "Monk is not a ghost, Monk is a ghost-catching monk."

Wei Ma Yi smiled icily, "Since that is the case, then Monk can go and catch that ghost."

The Monk replied, "That is not a ghost…. Haha, the ghost is not there." That monk suddenly pointed at the dark woods at the side. Wei Ma Yi can't help but look towards where his finger was pointing, and saw that suddenly there was

someone sitting in the darkness, in his hands holding something alive and munching it with relish.

Wei Ma Yi looked around, his heart strategizing on how to deal with his enemies, on how he can defeat the opposing parties at one go, his mouth instead smiling and asking, “How can ghosts be as delicious as this?”

That monk said, “Haha, he does not believe… why don’t you let him take a look.”

That person in the woods chuckled, and threw the thing in his hands towards Wei Ma Yi and Wei ma Yi instinctively reached out to grab it. He only felt that the thing was soft and tender, and on closer look, realized it’s half an arm, with obvious teeth marks on it, and it has been cooked as well.

Only now was Wei Ma Yi truly startled, and felt half his body go numb. He hurriedly threw this half-eaten human arm far away. That person in the woods reached out to grab it and grinned, “The people here all have a stinking rat smell, and cannot be eaten. I had a hard time finding an edible human, and through my frugality was able to make it last for three days. Now there’s only half an arm left, won’t it be a waste for you to throw it away?” As he spoke, he chewed voraciously again, with cracking sounds as he chomped.

Wei Ma Yi can’t help but puked, and unconsciously retreated, asking hoarsely, “Who… who are you people actually? What do you want?”

Suddenly another person said icily, “There’s only one person here, if you have anything to say, you can tell it to me!”

Amidst the talk, a person walked over with large steps. That person was tall and skinny, with clothes white as snow, sleeves so long it touched the ground, his pale face so cold that it’s like ice. He’s really uglier than a ghost. Wei Ma Yi exclaimed fiercely, “Fine, even if you’re human, I will make you into a ghost!”

The speed of his attack is really as quick as lightning, and as he spoke he had already struck out.

His five fingers were filled with internal energy, and even an iron rock, if grabbed by him, will be crushed. However, that man in white seemed unable to deflect his attack in time, unable to dodge as well.

Wei Ma Yi grabbed that person's hand with ease, and suddenly felt that the hand was icy cold. It was not a human hand that he is holding. In his shock, the man in white had already laughed sinisterly and said, "Release your hand!". With a splitting sound, his long sleeve has torn into two, and Wei Ma Yi saw that his opponent's 'hand' had already slashed through his palm, fresh blood flooding out immediately. The hand of this man in white, is actually a steel hook!

Although the injury on Wei Ma Yi's palm was not serious, he is worried that there might be poison on the hook, so he dared not meet the fight head on. He retreated, getting ready to run away. Suddenly, someone angrily shouted, "How can the disciples of Wu Ya be people who will escape, no matter if they are human or ghosts, what are you afraid of?"

This person is skinny and small like a boy, on his indescribably ugly face, was a very nicely grown beard. The long beard swayed with the wind, almost touching the ground.

On his head was a gold headpiece, his long robe glowing blue, looking extremely hilarious yet funny at the same time. That man-eating ghost in the woods exclaimed in alarm, "Wei Wu Ya is here! Even the ghosts are afraid, better escape!"

By then everyone, whether ghosts or humans, escaped in a flash, leaving only Xiao Yu'er hanging on the tree. Even Su Ying is no where to be seen.

Wei ma Yi sighed and said with a bitter smile, "Only now does disciple know, no matter what, I am still incomparable to Teacher."

Wei Wu Ya smiled frostily, "It's good that you know."

He waved his sleeve and added, "Where did that person injure you? Is it poisoned? Hold your hand out and let me take a look."

Wei Ma Yi extended his hand slowly, and suddenly struck towards Wei Wu Ya.

Although this attack is quick, but Wei Wu Ya seemed to be prepared for such an attack, and with a dodge of his body, retreated about a ten feet away, and burst out angrily, “What a cursed disciple, to be so rude towards your Teacher.”

Wei Ma Yi laughed madly, “Your art of disguise may be good, but if you are thinking of disguising yourself as Wei Wu Ya, you’re still far from it!”

That Wei Wu Ya laughed as well, “Good, you actually saw through me, but let me ask you, in what way was my impersonation incorrect?”

Wei Ma Yi laughed loudly, “Don’t you know that he is born handicapped, both his legs are like a baby’s, and he walked as if he crawled. He’s afraid that others would see it, so he never walked on his own.”

There was laughter, and that monk jumped out from the darkness again, waving his hands and laughing, “Xiao Jiao has met your match this time.”

That man-eating ghost suddenly appeared as well and chortled, “An ugly and strange person like Wei Wu Ya, it’s difficult to find a second one in the world. It’s really not easy to impersonate him, I’ve long said that your hard work will be all for naught.”

That person’s body grew, and suddenly she was taller by two feet, and said “Now I’m only thinking of what are the ways to make Wei Wu Ya take a few steps.”

Wei Ma Yi suddenly somersaulted, and flew like an arrow back to where Xiao Yu’er was. He drew out a jade green dagger and pointed it at Xiao Yu’er’s throat, shouting “Are you here to save him?”

That man-eating ghost laughed loudly, “You want to kill him, but can you kill him?”

Amidst his laughter, Xiao Yu’er who was unable to move and hanging upside

down on the tree, suddenly could move! Not only can he move, his movements were faster than lightning. Both his hands moved, and hit Wei ma Yi's various acupoints. In his shock, Wei Ma Yi did not even have the chance to retaliate and he has already been subdued. Xiao Yu'er took his dagger, pointed it at his throat and chuckled, "You have been tricked again."

Wei Ma Yi could only stare at him, gritting his teeth. At a time like this, what else can he say. Xiao Yu'er looked at him, grinning, "Now you should know, it's not easy to take advantage of me. If you take advantage of me, sooner or later I would take it back, together with interest."

That man-eating ghost sauntered over, and after sniffing Wei Ma Yu's neck, immediately revealed a look of extreme joy. He clasped his palms and laughed, "Wonderful, wonderful, this person no longer has any rat smell. If more onions and ginger were added, together with superior quality soy sauce to stew, it is at least still edible."

Wei Ma Yi's eyes were filled with fear, and staring at him, he asked hoarsely, "You… are you 'Does not eat human head' Li Da Zui?"

That man-eating ghost looked heavenward and laughed, "I have not roamed the martial arts realm for over twenty years, I did not expect that there's still people who will remember my name."

Wei Ma Yi's whole body weakened. If it was someone else who wanted to eat him, he might not believe that person, but if Li Da Zui said he wants to eat him, that is not a joke at all.

Xiao Yu'er grinned, "Why are you scaring him, if his bitter gall breaks from the fear, won't the meat be wasted then."

Suddenly a person floated down from the treetop, his white hempen gown dancing in the wind, and settled in front of Wei Ma Yi. He looked at him with a grin and said, "You only recognize 'Does not eat human head' Li Da Zui? Do you recognize me?"

This person is the one who was hit by Wei Ma Yi's secret weapon and fell from

the treetop earlier, and on his white hempen hairpiece, there was a silver needle. Obviously, although it did not strike him, but it was a close shave at least.

Wei Ma Yi took a look at him, closed his eyes and sighed, “Pretending to be a ghost, I should have guessed that you are ‘Half Human Half Ghost’ Yin Jiu You.”

However that person snapped a branch, lifted his eyelids and said, “Open your eyes bigger and take a look; where is Yin Jiu You.”

Wei Ma Yi can only open his eyes and glanced over, and saw that on the treetop there is still a person in hempen clothes floating on the treetop, dressed exactly the same as the person in front of him.

So there were two people who were pretending to be ghosts earlier, no wonder it was ‘suddenly in front, suddenly behind, suddenly to the left, suddenly to the right’, once the trick was revealed, it’s not worth even a single cent.

Wei Ma Yi heaved a long sigh and said with a bitter smile, “Ten Evils, how many have arrived today?”

That person said, “Not too many, only six, old man here is ‘Harming others without benefit to oneself’ Bai Kai Xin, have you heard of my big name?”

Wei Ma Yi replied coldly, “I have long heard that of the ‘Ten Evils’, Bai Kai Xin can be considered the most useless one. It’s just that those in the martial arts realm added you in to make up the numbers.”

Bai Kai Xin’s expression changed, but he still laughed loudly and said, “Don’t you try to sow discord. I am already forty-eight, and will no longer be tricked by such.”

That monk clapped, “Bai Kai Xin have really grown up, it’s just that you’re obviously fifty-two, why did you say you’re forty-eight. You’re not a woman, why the need to hide your age.”

Bai Kai Xin stared, “I have not married, if I don’t hide a few years, who would

want to marry me.”

He tapped Wei Ma Yi’s shoulder and added, “You must remember, this monk has knives hidden in his smiles, he’s the worst.”

Wei Ma Yi sighed, “What a good ‘Dagger in Laughter’ Ha Ha’er!”

His eyes flitted over to that pale looking man in white, “You are…. You are…”

That man in white flicked his long sleeves, revealing his hands… his right hand is actually a shiny steel hook, his left hand shiny, and red as blood!

Wei Ma Yi cried hoarsely, “Bloody… bloody hands Du Sha!”

Du Sha replied, “Humph!”

Wei Ma Yi laughed miserably, “Good, good, good, so it’s true that six of the ‘Ten Evils’ are here. That I, Wei Ma Yi were to end up in your hands, what else can I say?”

Du Sha said coldly, “That’s right, you can only die!”

He walked over step by step, with a flash of light, his steel hook taking a swipe towards Wei Ma Yi’s throat.

Li Da Zui hurriedly grabbed his hands, “This cannot be done.”

Du Sha asked fiercely, “What do you want?”

Li Da Zui smiled, “How would little brother here dare to interfere in Big Brother Du’s affairs. It’s just that, there’s already not much flesh left in him, if you kill him before cooking him, there will be a great loss of blood, and the meat would have much taste left.”

Du Sha agreed.

He slowly put his hands down, but Wei Ma Yi had already stammered in alarm, “Li Da Zui, you and I are after all both in the martial arts realm. I will die with no complaints if you kill me, but how can you… how can…” He only felt a wave of nausea, and vomited out everything in his stomach.”

Li Da Zui pinched Wei Ma Yi’s flesh and mumbled, “A person of this size, I’m afraid just two catties of soy sauce, a catty of cooking wine, ten cents worth of ginger and spring onions would be enough, of course, and another five cents worth of five spices and aniseed.”

Wei ma Yi’s body went numb, and finally stammered, “Please, I… I beg of you…”

Li Da Zui carried Wei Ma Yi up with his hands and laughed, “Everyone, I am hungry, and will make a move first…”

He has not finished his words but Wei Ma Yi had already fainted after emitting a maddening roar. Ha Ha’er clapped his hands and laughed, “Fainted from fear, fainted from fear, Li Da Zui really has a few capable tricks.”

Bai Kai Xin touched Wei Ma Yi’s head and said, “When this lad wakes up, he will certainly listen to us obediently. If we want to pick Wei Wu Ya’s rat hole, we’ll need to rely on this lad’s help.”

Ha Ha’er agreed, “Exactly the case, or else why need we spend so much effort to scare him.”

Xiao Yu’er stretched lazily and laughed, “But pity me, that I had to hang on this tree for an hour more.”

Du Jiao Jiao looked at him for a moment before suddenly exclaiming, “That lass Su obviously was about to reveal the secret to ‘Shifting Flower Grafting Jade’, why did you stop her instead?”

Bai Kai Xin added, “That’s right, why did you stop her, aren’t you going to fight it out with Hua Wu Que soon? If you can find out the secret to ‘Shifting Flower Grafting Jade’, won’t it be a sure win?”

Xiao Yu’er smiled lazily, “If I know the secret to his martial arts, then what’s the point of fighting with him?”

Bai Kai Xin stared at him for a while before heaving a long sigh and commented, “So you are a good person.”

He suddenly laughed loudly, clapped his hands and said, “A child brought up by Ha Ha’er, Li Da Zui, Big Brother Du, Du Jiao Jiao, Yin Jiu You, the five of you, would actually be a good person… a sheepdog that comes from a den of foxes, don’t the five of you feel ashamed?”

Yin Jiu You, Du Sha’s expressions changed slightly.

End of Chapter 86

Chapter 76

Chapter 87

However, Li Da Zui laughed loudly immediately, “You’ve also learnt Du Jiao Jiao’s method? And come to sow discord?”

Du Jiao Jiao giggled, “He was beaten by Xiao Yu’er, and have been upset about it.”

Ha Ha’er added, “What’s the use of being upset? Haha, even ten Bai Kai Xin will not be able to defeat one Xiao Yu’er. If you want to vent your anger, you better give up that thought.”

Bai Kai Xin was not angry, but grinned instead, “What is there for me to be upset about? If one day the fox is eaten up by the dog, then I will be really not ‘upset’.”

Once these words were spoken, even Li Da Zui’s expression turned a little awful.

Xiao Yu’er seemed not to have noticed, but clapped and laughed loudly, “Harming others without benefit to oneself, really harming others without benefit to oneself.”

Before he could finish his words, someone else with a tinkling laughter said, “The ‘Ten Evils’ really live up to their names, I am extremely awed.”

On a tree whose trunk is as wide as four people hugging it in a circle, a door suddenly opened. It turned out that this tree is hollow, and if anyone hides inside, others can forget about finding that person.

Su Ying walked out from inside the tree slowly, bowed slowly and smiled, “The world famous Ten Evils are here, and I was amiss in receiving you, please forgive me.”

Ha Ha’er laughed loudly, “Miss please do not stand on ceremony, people like us are born lowly, if someone were to treat us a little more respectfully, we would think that he has something bad up his sleeves.

Li Da Zui suddenly jumped up and shouted, “Go away, go away, go away quickly, or else I cannot stand it anymore!”

Du Jiao Jiao asked, “What can’t you stand?”

Li Da Zui explained, “Look at this lass’s tender skin and white flesh, I am almost salivating, but I know that Xiao Yu’er will never let me eat her. If she doesn’t leave, I’ll go crazy.”

As he spoke, he had already walked out like the wind with Wei Ma Yi on his back.

Bai Kai Xin jumped up as well, “I am leaving as well. Looking at this dainty beauty, even a bachelor like me feels something. I better leave quickly, out of sight out of mind, in case Xiao Yu’er and I fight over her in jealousy.”

As he spoke, he somersaulted and jumped more than thirty feet away, and was gone in the blink of an eye.

Ha Ha’er followed him out and said with a laugh, “That’s right, if I don’t go, even a monk will feel stirrings in his heart.”

Du Jiao Jiao giggled, “Luckily half of me is still a woman, or else…” She took a glance at Xiao Yu’er, and with a coquettish smile leaped up the treetop and disappeared.

Yin Jiu You smiled eerily, “If Miss becomes sick of being a human, you can come

and look for me. Being a ghost is sometimes more interesting than being a human. Pretty female ghosts are all the rage these days."

Su Ying pursed her lips and smiled, "Thank you for your guidance, but my life now is still quite interesting."

Yin Jiu You pointed at Xiao Yu'er and laughed loudly, "If you fall in love with this person, it won't take long before you realize that life is boring…" By the time he finished his sentence, the sound of his laughter is already more than a hundred feet away.

Du Sha stared at Xiao Yu'er and smiled, "How long more are you planning to hang here?"

Xiao Yu'er laughed, "I'm afraid not much longer."

Du Sha asked, "Do you know where you can find us?"

Xiao Yu'er replied, "I know"

"Good."

He has already flown out of the woods, but suddenly turned his head around and added, "Be careful, when pretty women want to eat humans, even the head would be devoured."

Su Ying giggled, "Elder please do not worry, my appetite has always not been good, I've always been a vegetarian."

The woods is suddenly quiet again. Su Ying looked at Xiao Yu'er with a hidden smile, "When Wei Ma Yi hung you up on the tree, these people are already here?"

Xiao Yu'er laughed, "They've come at the right time."

Su Ying continued, “But you still pretended that you cannot move and tricked me.”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “I was not tricking you at first. Wei Ma Yi tricked me once, so how can I let him off just like that, I must at least let him know my prowess.”

Su Ying said, “You may not be tricking me at first, but in the end you still tricked me.”

Xiao Yu’er shrugged his shoulders, “If you want to see it that way, there is nothing I can do.”

Su Ying added, “You know that I treated you very well, so you made use of this point to trick me, and let me be worried about you, be anxious about you. I came to save you regardless of everything, but you made use of this situation to threaten me to reveal my secret instead.”

She stared at Xiao Yu’er unblinkingly, her eyes as dark as the seawater in the darkness. Xiao Yu’er twisted his head around, but suddenly turned back again and laughed, “I’ve said long ago that I’m not a good person. Whoever treats me well, that person would be in trouble.”

Su Ying sighed and continued slowly, “Most of the people in the world are afraid that they will become too evil, but you’re just the opposite. You seem to be afraid that you will become too good, so you keep doing things to prove that you’re not a good person… why is that so? I’m afraid even you don’t know why, right?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “I’m afraid this is because I’m a born crook.”

Su Ying looked at him for a moment, and suddenly smiled, “But do you know, you’re not as bad as you think you are?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “Why don’t you tell me about it.”

Su Ying said slowly, “Because you grew up with those bad people, so in your

heart, you keep thinking that you cannot become too good."

Su Ying paused, and continued, "Besides, you think that if you become too good, you'll be letting those who brought you up down, so sometimes you had no choice but to do something bad to prove yourself…"

Xiao Yu'er suddenly laughed loudly and interrupted her, "We have only met for a few days, and you think you know me very well?"

Su Ying replied, "Actually I do not understand very well at first, but after seeing those people, I understood."

Xiao Yu'er replied, "Oh?"

Su Ying added with a smile, "These people can be considered geniuses among the bad people, so innately bad, that they can make something so unscrupulous, vicious or cruel out to be something that is interesting instead."

Xiao Yu'er said, "You do not have to scold them like this, they did not offend you."

Su Ying said each word clearly, "Haven't you realized by now, it was them who lured you into that… that rat hole."

Xiao Yu'er laughed loudly again, "What a joke, this is really a joke, why would they want to trick me?"

Su Ying replied, "Maybe it's because they have already realized, you are actually not as wicked as them. They think that you may betray them, so they deliberately left those secret marks to lure you into that rat hole, thinking of using Wei Wu Ya's hands to eliminate you..."

Xiao Yu'er stopped laughing, and shouted, "Then let me ask you, since they want me dead, why did they save me earlier?"

Su Ying's eyes shimmered, "This may be because they suddenly decided that you are useful again, it'll be a pity to kill you, maybe they did not wish to kill you with their own hands."

Xiao Yu'er suddenly jumped up and yelled, "What a fart, I do not believe a single word you said."

Su Ying sighed, "It's not necessary that you believe my words, but you must be on the alert, that's all."

Xiao Yu'er laughed, "You're asking me to be alert? I think you should be the one to be more alert."

Su Ying sighed, "You're right, I'm afraid this place will really become a place of trouble in future. It seems like there's no way I can continue staying here. But you.. have you found out something?"

Xiao Yu'er said with ease, "A person who is hung up on a tree, will always see a little more things than others."

Su Ying pressed on, "What have you actually seen?"

"I saw two people."

Su Ying smiled, "Even if you saw twenty people, it's not something unusual."

Xiao Yu'er continued, "But these two people are very unusual."

Su Ying replied, "Oh?"

Xiao Yu'er added, "These two people have long been hiding behind that small rock over that side. When my friends came to save me, they're already there, but they did not seem willing to bother about the business this side. Only until Wei Ma Yi and you walked into the woods here, they flew immediately and slipped to the house over that side, and their Lightness Skill are actually top notch…"

Not only was Su Ying not surprised, but she smiled instead and said gently, “So you do care about me.”

Xiao Yu’er smiled coldly, “If you like to live in your own fantasy, there is nothing I can do, but now is not the time for you to do so, that two people…”

Su Ying interrupted him again and said sweetly, “You need not be worried for me. That is a very interesting couple, who frequently does things because they think they are smart. The man is a little better, but the woman keeps thinking she is a lot smarter than others, but actually she’s a lunatic.”

Xiao Yu’er made a face and said, “Those who think themselves as smart, mostly have some problems, but I am an exception, because I am indeed smarter than others.”

Su Ying asked, “Have they left?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Not only have they left, but they took away two large bags of things…”

Su Ying was stunned, “When did they leave?”

Xiao Yu’er said, “Just now, when you were most happily laughing.”

He deliberately sighed and said, “Now, I’m afraid you can’t laugh at all.”

Who would have expected Su Ying to just roll her eyes and laughed again.

She said with a smile, “What they stole are not two bags of things, but two people.”

This time Xiao Yu’er was really surprised, and asked hoarsely, “Stole two people? Are they alive?”

Su Ying replied, “Can’t really consider them alive, but not dead as well. They can be only considered as two half dead people.”

Xiao Yu’er heaved a long sigh and said, “Seems that this couple really have a little problem.”

Su Ying suddenly smiled, “But they have actually done you a great favor.” Xiao Yu’er was stunned again.

Su Ying continued, “One of the two that they stole away, is the enemy whom you are going to fight with.”

Xiao Yu’er’s heart started to sink, and stammered, “You… you, you mean to say… Hua Wu Que?”

Su Ying replied with a smile, “That’s right!”

Just like a cat whose tail has been stepped on, Xiao Yu’er jumped up and screamed, “You mean Hua Wu Que has been taken away? Why didn’t you say so earlier?”

Su Ying replied with a bitter smile, “How would I know he had been taken away? Why didn’t you tell me earlier?”

Xiao Yu’er suddenly slapped himself on the cheeks left and right, “That’s right, why didn’t I tell you earlier! Why didn’t I stop them?…” As he lamented, he sped out of the woods like a crazy man.

By the time Su Ying wanted to stop him, he is so far away that he cannot be seen. Su Ying is the only person left in the woods, and she was stunned there for a long moment, mumbling, “Su Ying… Su Ying… are you just going to let him leave like this?”

She suddenly seemed to have made a big resolution, and hurriedly turned around back to the house. She kept mumbling to herself, “Xiao Yu’er… Xiao Yu’er… I won’t let you leave just like that, because I know that I will never find

another person like you, so no matter where you go, I must find you.”

She had just disappeared into the little house, when under a large tree in the woods, a rock suddenly moved to the side.

There was actually a hole under the rock! And a person actually came up from that hole!

As he looked as Su Ying disappearing, the corners of his mouth curved up into a vicious smile and muttered, “You do not have to worry, no matter what that lad has gone to, I will help you find him.”

At a hidden area behind the mountain, there was suddenly a long neigh. It turned out there is a horse carriage hidden there, and the carriage driver is actually Tie Ping Gu.

Her brows were deeply furrowed, and it seems like it’s not because she was anxious from waiting, but because there are too many, too complicated things in her mind.

Suddenly there were two ‘swooshing’ sounds, the wooden leaves on the carriage moved slightly.

Tie Ping Gu said with a lowered voice, “Has Elders returned?”

Bai Shan Jun’s voice was heard replying, “It’s us.”

Madam Bai’s laughing voice added, “Don’t you worry, your Yu Lang is lying here right now.”

Tie Ping Gu gave a sudden whip and the horse carriage dashed out.

After passing a level lands, they are getting deeper and deeper into the mountains. It turned out that the carriage is not going out of the mountains, but deeper into the mountains.

At this time Jiang Yu Lang's moans can be heard coming from the carriage.

His body curled up into a ball, he stammered, "Cold… cold, I'm chilled to death."

But not long after, he was sweating profusely, and kept crying out, "Hot, so hot I can die."

On the journey, he was alternating between feeling chilled to the death or feeling so hot he could die, and was in so much torture that Madam Bai can't help but shake her head and sigh, "I don't know what poison that lass has given him, which has been torturing this child thus."

Bai Shan Jun suddenly laughed coldly, "This lad is neither our relative or friend, but just someone who has come to us, so why must you feel so bad for him?"

Madam Bai caressed his face and said, "Silly old man, do you really think I was feeling bad for him? I only feel that that lass's methods are really good, take a look at our Master Hua…"

Bai Shan Jun sighed as well, "This Hua fellow's situation now, is really worrisome." Hua Wu Que seemed to have become an idiot. He sat there dully, not talking or moving, his gaze clouded over, as if his whole body is numb, without feeling at all.

The Hua Wu Que now is no different from a dead person, the only difference is that he is breathing. No matter what others ask him, he seemed not to have heard.

In the dark woods, there was actually a small stone house, which looks like a house that practicing monks used to mediate in the days of old, but has now become a hiding place for Bai Shan Jun.

Hua Wu Que was actually carried in. Not only can he not hear, he cannot even walk now.

Madam Bai looked at him and furrowed her brows, “Do you think he’s really become like this, or is he pretending?”

Bai Shan Jun replied, “That is difficult to say.”

Tie Ping Gu was carrying Jiang Yu Lang and sitting under the tree outside the stone house. She still dared not face Hua Wu Que, and dare not enter.

Right then Bai Shan Jun’s eyes shimmered and he suddenly dashed out, asking “Is he feeling cold or hot now?”

Tie Ping Gu sighed and said, “Right now he feels his whole body is in pain, I don’t know…” Before she could finish her words, she suddenly felt her shoulders go numb, and the two main acupoints on her left and right shoulder has been sealed with lightning fast speed by Bai Shan Jun.

Bai Shan Jun asked, “I heard you escaped from Floral Palace, right?”

Tie Ping Gu gritted her teeth and said, “You… since you already know, why do you still ask me.”

Bai Shan Jun smiled sinisterly, “Since that is the case, then let me borrow the use of your body.”

He grabbed Tie Ping Gu by her hair and lifted her up.

Jiang Yu Lang, who was in Tie Ping Gu’s arms, immediately fell to the ground, but he stammered out in a laugh, “No… no problem, Elder… Elder can just borrow it!”

This person is truly vicious and evil, who says whatever the situation asked for. When he knows no one will bother about him even if he cries out in pain, he stopped shouting. Bai Shan Jun dragged Tie Ping Gu into the stone house, dashed towards Hua Wu Que and asked fiercely, “Do you recognize this woman?”

Hua Wu Que's eyes just stared straight at Tie Ping Gu, not shaking nor nodding his head at all.

As Bai Shan Jun smiled evilly, his hands suddenly rose up and ripped the clothes on Tie Ping Gu's chest, revealing that luscious yet soft bosom.

Tie Ping Gu gritted her teeth, not begging nor shouting, because she has long learnt to accept whatever comes her way, and knows that crying for help is useless.

Hua Wu Que sat there, his face expressionless, his eyes still staring hugely, looking at Tie Ping Gu in a daze.

Bai Shan Jun cried fiercely, "You still do not recognize her? Fine, then I'll let you have a clearer look!"

A few more ripping sounds, Tie Ping Gu's willow slim and firm body, with the lure of a mature woman's body, is now totally naked in front of Hua Wu Que.

Her long and slim limbs which were tightly closed together, and her chest were slightly shivering from the cold wind of the deep mountains. Although tears of shame have slid from her eyes, but her fiery eyes also revealed sorrow and hatred, staring straight at a Bai Shan Jun with detestation.

However Bai Shan Jun was only staring at Hua Wu Que's eyes.

But Hua Wu Que did not avert his eyes at all, only staring at Tie Ping Gu in a daze. That smooth little tummy, those long, slender legs… in Hua Wu Que's eyes, it just looked like wooden logs to him.

Bai Shan Jun cried angrily, "You are seeing your fellow disciple treated like this, and yet you do not care, aren't you afraid you will lose the faces of everyone in your Floral Palace?"

Although his words were roaring, Hua Wu Que seemed not to have heard a

word at all.

Bai Shan Jun smiled sinisterly, “Fine, since you are not afraid of losing face, I might as well make it a bigger loss for you.”

He carried Tie Ping Gu’s naked body, and actually wanted to…

End of Chapter 87

Chapter 77

Chapter 88

Madam Bai had been watching from the side with a hidden smile, and only now did she walk over, tapped Bai Shan Jun's shoulder and laughed, "Enough, enough. Don't tell me you really want to turn the play into reality, satisfy your own desires under the pretense of work, taking advantage of the situation. If this act continues, I am going to be jealous."

She tapped Tie Ping Gu's body and said with a smile, "This is just an act, don't be angry."

Tie Ping Gu closed her eyes, her tears finally flowing out.

Madam Bai furrowed her brows and said, "Look at you, you hateful old man, to scare a little Miss thus."

Bai Shan Jun laughed, "If she's angry, she can rip my clothes off as well."

Madam Bai removed her outer clothing and wrapped Tie Ping Gu in it, saying gently, "When men sees pretty ladies, they can't help but want to take some advantage, you don't have to feel bad…"

She carried Tie Ping Gu out and placed her gently next to Jiang Yu Lang, saying with a smile, "Better let you two little lovebirds get cozy."

It's not known whether it was deliberate or not, but she did not unseal Tie Ping Gu's acupoint, as if she knows that after this incident, Tie Ping Gu would secretly run away. Although Jiang Yu Lang has turned pale from the pain, but he still pretended to laugh and said, "Still a kid after all, others just played a trick and

you cried.”

Tie Ping Gu can’t help but berated him, “You… you… are you still human?”

Jiang Yu Lang looked around, and seeing that Bai Shan Jun and his wife were still in the house, he heaved a long sigh and said with lowered voice, “When in the house of others, one has no choice but to acquiesce. Now that we’re in such straits, if we were to be stubborn, can we still live?”

Tie Ping Gu gritted her teeth, “I am not afraid of death. I’d rather die than to be bullied like a dog.”

Jiang Yu Lang replied, “Those who are not afraid of death are all fools. But do you want to take revenge to vent your anger?”

“Of course.”

Jiang Yu Lang smiled, “Then you should know that the dead are unable to seek revenge!”

Bai Shan Jun and his wife sat in the house, looking at each other, their expression indescribably downcast. After much difficult planning, they managed to steal Hua Wu Que from Su Ying’s hands, for the purpose of again trying to find out the secret from him.

But now all their hard work is for naught.

Madam Bai heaved a long sigh, stood up and walked out of the house. Bai Shan Jun was not in the mood to ask her where she was going as well, but just stared at Hua Wu Que with a bitter smile.

After a moment, suddenly he heard Madam Bai exclaiming in shock outside, “Come out quickly and take a look, what is this?”

Bai Shan Jun rushed out of the house, but only saw Jiang Yu Lang and Tie Ping

Gu lying there, heads together, as if asleep. Madam Bai was standing under the tree in a daze.

There's nothing under the tree at all, only a pile of fallen leaves.

There was surprise and excitement on Madam Bai's face, and she said, "Look what is this?"

Among the fallen leaves, there's a little hole, like a rabbit's hole, or a fox's lair.

Bai Shan Jun replied, "But this is just a hole, have you never seen such a hole before?"

Madam Bai suddenly turned her head back and stared at him with large eyes, as if a gingko tree has suddenly grown on Bai Shan Jun's face.

Bai Shan Jun smiled and commented, "Have you never seen me before as well."

She bent down and swept away the fallen leaves around the hole, and now it can be seen that the four edges of this hole were smooth and neat, and there is no other way out underneath.

Madam Bai said, "Take a closer look at this hole."

Bai Shan Jun's expression changed, "I understand! This hole is dug by a person!

Madam Bai clapped her hands, "That's it, such a small hole, who can hide in it?"

Bai Shan Jun furrowed his brows, "But he has not shown himself for twenty years, and it's rumored that he has died long ago."

Madam Bai replied lightly, "Think, would a person like him die? Who can kill him?"

Bai Shan Jun sighed, “That’s right, the good do not live long, the bad will live a thousand years…”

Madam Bai giggled, “You’re still jealous of him?”

Bai Shan Jun replied with a stern look, “Even if your old lover is coming soon, you need not smile so happily in front of me.”

Madam Bai hooked her arms around his neck and smiled coquettishly, “Silly old man, if I like him, why would I have married you?… come…”

However Bai Shan Jun pushed her away and said loudly, “No.”

Bai Shan Jun kicked violently at the fallen leaves and said, “The thought that that lad might be around here, I have no mood whatsoever. I am staying here.”

Madam Bai asked, “Why?”

Bai Shan Jun said each word slowly, “To wait by the tree stump for the rabbit.”

Jiang Yu Lang is in so much pain that he could die, so how could he have fallen asleep… he only closed his eyes and pretended to be asleep.

When he heard the couple making so much commotion over a hole, he can’t help but feel perplexed as well, and on hearing the couple flirting with each other, he felt hilarious. But when he heard that the small hole can actually hide a person, he almost wanted to blurt out, “Such a small hole, even a five year old kid would find it difficult to hide in there, how can an adult hide in it? Unless this person is a dwarf?”

Lastly he heard Bai Shan Jun said, “To wait by the tree stump for the rabbit!” (Chinese idiom)

A thought suddenly passed through his mind and he secretly thought, “The

person they're waiting for, could it be the 'Rabbit' of the Twelve Zodiacs?"

It must be known, although the Twelve Zodiacs are the bandits and curse of the martial arts realm, but they thought that being called cows or horses too uncouth, so they referred to the classics and found themselves graceful names.

The rat is called 'Wu Ya'; the cow 'Yun Liang' (Transporting the grain); the tiger 'Shan Jun (Master of the mountains); the rabbit 'Dao Yao' (Pounding medicine); the dragon 'Si Ling Zhi Shou' (Leader of the Four Supernatural Beasts); the snake 'Shi Lu Shen Jun' (Deer Consuming God); the pig 'Hei Mian' (Black face); the horse 'Ti Wei' (Kicking the stomach) but also known as 'Tiger's wife'; the goat 'Chi Shi' (Shouting at stones); the chicken 'Si Cheng' (Heralding daybreak); the monkey 'Xiao Guo' (Offering fruits), the dog 'Ying Ke' (Welcoming Guests). These twelve graceful names, came from poems. The 'Rabbit' of the twelve zodiacs is surnamed 'Hu', and the name is taken from 'Pounding medicine on the moon', but no one knows if this person is male or female.

Because there is not many people in the martial arts realm who can see the real face of this Herbalist Hu, so no one knows what he actually looks like!

Bai Shan Jun really sat under the tree and 'waited by the tree stump for the rabbit'

Madam Bai looked at him quietly for a moment, and suddenly smiled, "You're going to spend so much effort waiting here, what if the rabbit doesn't come?"

Bai Shan Jun replied, "Since he was here before, he will surely know that you will come back here. With you here, would he not come?… Heh heh, maybe he is already secretly following us, waiting for a chance to meet you."

Madam Bai giggled, "I'm already an old woman, what's there to see?"

Bai Shan Jun smiled icily, "Beauty lies in the eyes of the beholder. To others, you may be an old woman, but in his eyes, you may still be a little beauty."

On hearing this, Jiang Yu Lang really felt like laughing. He cannot imagine that

this old couple would actually be flirting right here.

Suddenly Bai Shan Jun exclaimed softly, “He’s here!”

Jiang Yu Lang can’t help but open his eyes to peek, and saw a dried log about three feet long and a little thicker than a person’s head, rolling over from afar.

Not only can this log roll on the ground on its own, but it seemed to have eyes as well. Where there are wood or stones blocking the way, it can actually change direction on its own. To actually witness such a strange sight in the abandoned woods, if it were other times, even if Jiang Yu Lang has guts, he would surely be frightened as well.

But now he already knows that this dried log must be related to that Herbalist Hu, and guessed that Herbalist Hu may very well be hiding inside this log, so it doesn’t seem so frightening anymore. He just felt perplexed and thought, “This log is not much bigger than a pillow, can a person hide in it?”

Bai Shan Jun stared unblinkingly at this log, his eyes seemed to be smoking, his hands clenched tightly into a fist.

Madam Bai lightly pressed on his hands and smiled flirtingly, “It’s an old friend we have not met for a long time, you can’t behave like the past and fight upon seeing each other.”

That log actually laughed and said, “We have not met for years, I did not expect you virtuous couple to be still as loving as ever, it really calls for congratulations.”

Bai Shan Jun shouted, “How do you know if we’re still as loving, have you been spying on us all this while.”

That log laughed, “If it’s not as loving as ever, why would there be such a strong air of jealousy. This fact is very obvious, and need no eyes to look, right?”

A head actually emerged suddenly from the log.

Although Jiang Yu Lang already knows that there's someone in the log, but he can't help being startled at that moment… that a human head would suddenly pop out of a log, no matter what, this is a very creepy sight.

This hair on this head is all white, but there's not much beard on the chin. His eyes were round and bright, like two enormous pearls.

The weirdest thing is, not only is this head not small, but it's a little larger than the average person. The log may be hollow, but it would still be a tight fit for the head.

Not only is the head big, but the ears are even bigger, and they're big and pointed, almost identical to a rabbit's ears but twice as big.

How can a dwarf have such a large head, such large ears?

Jiang Yu Lang can't help but feel even more startled. Although he still wished to pretend to be asleep, but he cannot bear to close his eyes. Looking at Tie Ping Gu, she was also staring with wide open eyes.

Madam Bai giggled, "We have not met for more than ten years, I did not expect you to be as playful as ever."

That person laughed, "This is called, a leopard can never change its spots."

Bai Shan Jun laughed frostily, "If you think that women still like playful men, you are wrong."

That person grinned, "Oh, has the trend changed now? I remember that playful men have always been popular."

Bai Shan Jun retorted, "Playful men are naturally still popular, but playful old men… heh heh, it will only give one goose pimples, makes one feel nauseous."

Seeing that there are still men fighting over her, Madam Bai was indescribably overjoyed and thought, “It seems that I’m not old yet.”

But she pretended to be angry and said with a stern face, “Whichever of you start quarrelling, I will ignore that person.”

Bai Shan Jun roared, “Don’t you forget, I am your husband, you cannot ignore me even if you want to.”

Madam Bai giggled, “Look at you, it’s not as if I’m really ignoring you, why must you be so uptight.” Her eyes shone, her cheeks reddened, she really looked like she is now suddenly ten over years younger.

That person sighed and said with a laugh, “Old Brother Bai, it seems that you’re really lucky. I’m afraid even when you’ve gone into the coffin, this little sister-in-law of mine would still be as young as a miss.”

Bai Shan Jun roared, “Are you cursing me? Even if I’m dead, you won’t get a chance as well.”

Amidst his roar, a punch struck out.

With a ‘whoosh’ sound, that log was actually smashed to smithereens by the gush of air from his punch and a person jumped out from the log and dashed up a tree.

Jiang Yu Lang could not even catch a good glimpse of this person’s shadow,

This person’s large head poked out among the leaves and grinned, “The man has no heart to harm the tiger, but the tiger has the intention to injure the man… But Old Brother Bai, the reason I came this time, is not to fight with you.”

Bai Shan Jun roared, “Why are you here? This tiger may not eat humans, but eating a rabbit is nothing at all.”

That person smiled calmly, “If you hurt me, I’m afraid you will never have the fortune of hearing the secret to ‘Shifting Flower Grafting Jade’ in your life.”

Bai Shan Jun was stunned, and his face immediately was full of smiles and he laughed, “Younger Brother Hu, you and my wife are old friends, have you forgotten her character?”

That person asked, “What about her character?”

Bai Shan Jun replied, “She loves others being jealous over her. Since I am her husband, naturally I often have to think of ways to make her happy, actually…”

Before he could finish his words, he was slapped in the face. Madam Bai stared at him and asked, “Actually what?”

Bai Shan Jun was not angry at all, but grinned, “Actually I really like you too, but I like that ‘Shifting Flower Grafting Jade’ as well.”

Madam Bai rolled her eyes, but smiled as well. She stared towards the tree and laughingly chided, “Irritating rabbit, aren’t you coming down?”

That person laughed loudly, “Yes, I’m coming right down.”

He leaped down with a smile, but he’s not a dwarf at all, but a seven feet tall man, and seems to be a head taller than Bai Shan Jun.

Jiang Yu Lang’s eyeballs almost popped out. He really cannot imagine how such a large person can hide in such a small piece of log.

Suddenly he saw Bai Shan Jun walking over and looked at him with a smile. “So you have been awake a long time.”

Jiang Yu Lang did not even blush, and said with a smile, “I am in a daze, and did not actually sleep very soundly.”

Bai Shan Jun added, “Let me tell you, this is the world famous Herbalist Hu. Those in the martial arts realm, not a single person does not know that Herbalist Hu’s ‘Locking Shrinking Bone Skill’ is a rare skill in the martial arts realm, and there is no other like it in the world.”

Jiang Yu Lang exclaimed hoarsely, “Locking Shrinking Bone Skill? Could it be the secret that Priest Wu Wei had in yesteryear but which he will not impart?”

Bai Shan Jun laughed, “So you do have some knowledge. So now you should understand.”

“I understand.”

Bai Shan Jun suddenly stared, “Since you understand, why aren’t you going further away. Or could it be you want to listen to that secret as well?”

Although he was extremely reluctant, he had no choice but to leave. Tie Ping Gu also gritted her teeth and stood up, and helped him into that house.

The wind blew past, and blew up the robes Tie Ping Gu was wearing, revealing a pair of long, straight and legs so pale that it makes one giddy.

Herbalist Hu’s eyes seemed to have been locked, and smiled “This lady’s legs are really not bad.”

Bai Shan Jun walked over and whispered with a smile, “Not only are her legs extremely nice, other places… heh heh.” Before he could finish his words, his ears were suddenly pinched.

Madam Bai gritted her teeth and scolded with a smile, “Old lecher, to see how improper you are, I wonder how many women you have toyed with outside without my knowledge, is that right? Speak quickly!”

Herbalist Hu laughed, “From what I know, Old Brother Bai have always been faithful to you.”

Madam Bai stared at him, “You need not speak up for him, you’re not much better.”

Herbalist Hu exclaimed, “Aiyo, then you’re really misunderstood the good.”

Madam Bai guffawed and released her hands, “Men… out of ten, nine are lechers.”

Bai Shan Jun rubbed his ear and smiled, “Let’s not talk about inconsequential things, back to the topic, Younger Brother Hu, do you really know that secret?”

Herbalist Hu laughed loudly for a moment before continuing, “I saw you drag Old Man Wei’s eldest disciple Wei Ma Yi here, and after muttering for half a day, asked him for look for a lady named Su.”

Madam Bai interrupted, “Su Ying, that is Old Man Wei’s precious, don’t you know?”

Herbalist Hu smiled, “Of course I know now, but at that time I was puzzled, since you have a way, why ask others to walk it for you. Later I saw you secretly following him.”

Madam Bai replied, “That lass refused to learn martial arts, but Old Man Wei taught her all about traps and machines, and it seems that she has surpassed Old Man Wei in that aspect!”

End of Chapter 88

Chapter 78

Chapter 89

Herbalist Hu continued, “I never managed to learn about traps and machines, so I dared not roam recklessly, hence I found a place to hide. After a moment, I saw Wei Ma Yi tricked a young lad to the area where I was hiding, and sealed that lad’s acupoints as well and hung him up.”

Bai Shan Jun commented, “At that time we heard someone scolding from afar, I guess it must be that lad scolding Wei Ma Yi.”

Madam Bai furrowed her brows and asked, “How does that lad look like?”

Herbalist Hu replied, “He seems not older than twenty, his build is about the same as mine, his face is full of scars, and extremely ugly, but strangely, he doesn’t look at all irritating, but quite lovable instead.”

Madam Bai said, “It’s rumored that in recent years, a little devil appeared in the martial arts realm, called something Yu, seems like Xiao Yu. This person’s martial arts may not be very good, but he’s full of tricks, and cunning as well. Anyone who offends him, will surely be tricked by him. Even someone like Jiang Bie He gets a headache on seeing him.”

Herbalist Hu was silent for a moment before he smiled and said, “That’s right, that lad is this person. He’s really an imp. Wei Ma Yi can be considered a formidable person, but later he was thoroughly duped by him…”

Bai Shan Jun can’t help but interrupt, “How is this person related to the secret of ‘Shifting Flower Grafting Jade’?”

Herbalist Hu replied, “Let me ask you, how many people in the world knows the secret to ‘Shifting Flower Grafting Jade’?”

Madam Bai answered, “There may be a few who know it, but there is none who will reveal it.”

Herbalist Hu smiled, “That’s right, but, now I have a plan to let one of them reveal it.”

Madam Bai asked, “Who can you make to talk?”

Herbalist Hu replied, “Su Ying!”

Madam Bai sighed, “If you can make that lass speak, then I can make a bottle speak as well.”

Herbalist Hu smiled, “You do not believe me?”

Madam Bai sighed again, “All right, what plan do you have, let’s hear it.”

Herbalist Hu lowered his voice, “This plan of mine, involves that fish (Xiao Yu).”

Madam Bai furrowed her brows, “What plan is that? I do not understand.”

Herbalist Hu explained, “That Su lass, is besotted with Xiao Yu, if we can catch that fish, no matter what we want Su Ying to reveal, she would not dare to refuse.”

Madam Bai replied, “I’m afraid this plan is not too reliable. According to what we know, that lass’s heart is harder than stone, there is no man in the world that she holds in regard.”

Herbalist Hu assured, “It will surely work, I saw with my own eyes that it worked.”

Madam Bai said slowly, “But, if we want to net that fish, it might not be easy.”

Herbalist Hu laughed loudly, “Then we’ll need sister-in-law yourself to make the net.”

Madam Bai smiled and cast a coy look at him, “Don’t you worry, the more mischievous the man, the better I can handle him.”

Hua Wu Que is still sitting in the house dazedly, like a wooden log.

When Jiang Yu Lang and Tie Ping Gu walked in, they were talking about her legs outside. Listening to those lecherous laughs, Tie Ping Gu can’t help but want to weep again.

Tie Ping Gu suddenly grabbed Jiang Yu Lang’s hands tightly and asked, “Why don’t we take the opportunity to escape now?”

Jiang Yu Lang replied, “If you escape alone, you might be able to run two to three miles, but you will still be caught. If you were to carry me, I’m afraid you cannot even reach half a mile.”

Tie Ping Gu asked, “Then you… what do you intend to do?”

Jiang Yu Lang replied, “Wait, wait for a chance, tolerate, tolerate with all your might.”

He suddenly smiled, “Do you know, when it comes to tolerating, I’m afraid no one in the world can be better than me.”

This statement is really not false. This person can be really vicious, and patient, or else he would have died many years ago in the dungeon of ‘Charm to Death without Compensating with Life’ Xiao Mimi.”

Tie Ping Gu lowered her head, not speaking further. By this time Bai Shan Jun and his wife as well as Herbalist Hu had stepped in.

Madam Bai walked towards Jiang Yu Lang, and gently massaged his shoulders, asking gently, “Is it still painful with this?”

Jiang Yu Lang replied, “Pain… it’s still painful, but it seems… seems to be better…”

Before he can finish his words, he suddenly screamed like a pig being slaughtered. The hands that Madam Bai were massaging his shoulders with, were suddenly infused with internal energy.

Half of Jiang Yu Lang’s pain may be faked, but the other half is real as well. Right now, the internal energy of Madam Bai’s palms were forcing their way through the acupoints in both his shoulders and he immediately felt as if countless needles were poking him all over his body, and all his joints seemed to have shattered.

Madam Bai was still full of smiles and asked gently, “Are you feeling better now?”

Jiang Yu Lang cried miserably, “Beg… beg of you…. let go…. Save…”

Tie Ping Gu had also rushed over and leapt towards Madam Bai. However, Bai Shan Jun’s movements were as fast as lightning and pulled her arm over.

Madam Bai said with a smile, “I am just massaging his bones and you are already feeling pained for him, if I kill him, won’t you go crazy then?”

Actually Tie Ping Gu is almost going crazy now, and is now screaming madly, “You cannot do this… you cannot…”

Madam Bai replied slowly, “As long as you agree to help us with something, I will let him go immediately.”

Without a thought, Tie Ping Gu immediately replied, “I agree, I agree…”

Madam Bai sighed and mumbled, “I did not expect that between a man and a woman, the power of love would be so great.”

She finally released her hands, lightly tapped Jiang Yu Lang’s face and smiled, “Little lad, seems that you really do have some ability, to be able to make a woman follow you so wholeheartedly. This ability is really quite something.”

Herbalist Hu suddenly laughed, “The depth of Su Ying’s infatuation over that fish, is much more than hers.”

Bai Shan Jun laughed loudly, “If that is the case, then this plan of ours will certainly work.”

Madam Bai said, “Now you will stay here, we’ll hand these two over to you…”

Bai Shan Jun replied, “Don’t you worry.”

Tie Ping Gu is still draped over Jiang Yu Lang, quietly sobbing.

Madam Bai pulled her up and said, “You come with me… but you must remember, if you disobey and spoil our grand plan, this lover of yours will die in your hands!”

Although Xiao Yu’er felt a burning impatience, he did not walk very quickly.

He knows it’s useless to walk quickly, and walking quickly may make him miss some things that he should take notice of, and now he cannot afford to miss a single thing.

Although night has passed, but half the mountain was still covered in fog, and the eyes cannot see far. The leaves in the distance seemed to be floating on the mist, the branches hidden.

Even the secret signals that Ha Ha’er, Li Da Zui and the rest left behind cannot be easily found, and naturally it’ll be more difficult than ascending heaven than

to find the traces left behind by martial arts experts.

But sometimes the more difficult the matter, the more patient Xiao Yu'er became instead. First, he went to look for a little stream, and washed his face. He calmed himself down, smoothened the flow of his breathing for a moment, and took a look at his own injury to see if it has healed.

After he exercised his internal energy, he realized that there's not much difference between now and before he was injured, the only difference is that he had lain on the bed for too long, and his legs felt weak.

He can't help but smile and mumble, "That lass spoke of my injury as something so serious, I knew she was scaring me so that I won't leave…. Ai, women. Whoever believes the words of a woman, that person will become a woman's slave for the rest of his life."

But when he thought of Su Ying's gentleness and feelings, he can't help but feel a twinge of sweetness in his heart. No matter what, if a person is being loved, it's always a very happy matter.

Wei Wu Ya's cave is in a secret place on the west side of the mountain.

Although Xiao Yu'er is fearless, but he has been defeated once by Wei Wu Ya, so he was still wary and dared not travel towards the west.

He sat on a rock next to the stream and after a long moment, while he was still wondering where he should start looking for Hua Wu Que, he saw on the upstream, something red floating down the running stream.

Since Xiao Yu'er is unwilling to miss any clues, naturally he would not want to miss this thing right now. He immediately chopped a branch off, leapt to a large rock in front and hooked this thing up.

It turned out to be a woman's skirt, and there were flowers embroidered on it. The craftsmanship exquisite, and it looks like a dress a lady from a wealthy family would wear.

But the waist area of the skirt is torn, as if it has been ripped off the person by force.

Xiao Yu’er furrowed his brows, “How is it possible that there would be a woman who wear such a dress in the deep mountains? Could this woman have met with a lecher?”

He had originally thought that this is the work of Wei Wu Ya’s men, but Wei Wu Ya’s cave is in the west, while the stream flowed from the southeast.

Right at this time, something else flowed down the stream, and it’s also red. This is a pair of embroidered ladies shoes.

But the Xiao Yu’er now is not only feeling curious, but also outraged. He felt that this lecher has gone overboard, no matter what he has to be taught a lesson.

Next to the stream were rocks overgrown with moss, and extremely slippery but with Xiao Yu’er’s Lightness Skill, naturally he is not afraid of slipping.

He jumped on these rocks and after jumping three to five feet, he picked up from the water a bright red embroidered undergarment which has been shredded to pieces.

Xiao Yu’er furrowed his brows, “Don’t you think this is too much? Although most women are not good, but men who bully women are worse.”

As he went forward, another undergarment floated over. This undergarment is sky blue in color, but also shredded.

Xiao Yu’er exclaimed hoarsely, “So it’s not only one, but two women.”

He stopped instead, and suddenly realized that in the deep mountains, there will never be two women like that. Women who wore such clothes, are a rarity even in the streets.

Right at this time, a scream was heard upstream! The scream was shrill, it's really a woman's voice.

Xiao Yu'er stood on the rock, and after a while, the corners of his lips curved up into a mysterious smile and he mumbled, "Women, women… why it is that no matter where I go, I will surely meet strange women?"

At the end of the stream, there is a waterfall flowing down from the top of the peak and at the bottom was an enormous rock.

The waterfall fell on the enormous rock, and the water spread out in all directions into the stream. On the enormous rock were two women.

They were almost totally naked, and the waterfall was splashing down on them from the top. The pressure of such water is obviously extremely great.

Their long and firm legs were involuntarily convulsing from the force of the water, their long, black hair were spread over the gray rock.

When Xiao Yu'er arrived, he can't help but feel stunned.

This image may be horrendous, but also filled with the lure of sin, enough to let any man in the whole world to blush, the heart to beat faster, unable to control himself.

The mist from the water, the floating clouds, the clear stream, the waterfall, naked beauties, horrendous torture… this is so outrageous that it's unbelievable.

Xiao Yu'er mumbled, "Who did this? This person is absolutely a crazy genius!"

The two women were groaning, as if they have sensed someone has approached, and cried, "Help… help…"

Xiao Yu'er shouted, "Are you unable to move yourselves?"

That woman only cried out, “Please… save us!”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “Who did this to you? Where is he?”

That woman’s cries grew weaker, her mouth seemed to be saying something, but Xiao Yu’er can’t hear a single word clearly. The rock he is standing on is still twenty feet away.

With Xiao Yu’er’s Lightness Skill, twenty odd feet is nothing to him. All the men in the world, if they were to have his skills, and on seeing such a scene, will certainly leap over.

Who would have expected that Xiao Yu’er did not save them, nor did he leave.

He actually sat down on the rock, and stared… Such an action is really out of the ordinary and besides him, there is no other person in the world would be able to do such a thing.

The women on the rock, are naturally Madam Bai and Tie Ping Gu. Now, Madam Bai is stunned as well. Every scheme and every trap that she planned had always been strange, sudden and thorough, sometimes even unbelievable.

Every scheme that she planned would have a touch of cruel, sinful lure, that is so irresistible that one cannot help but fall into the trap.

This time, she knows that the other party is also a smart person, so naturally she put even more effort into the plan. She knows that no matter who it is, after being hung on the tree for so long, would certainly need to drink… and especially the smart ones, will find a place to drink, because a smart person, before he carries out any task, would first calm themselves.

As long as it’s a man, on seeing the evidence of a woman being raped flowing down the stream, will certainly come upstream to find out what had happened.

Therefore she waited here, showing off her still beautiful and alluring body.

She is sure that no man in the world would not come over on seeing such a situation.

But she still could not put her mind at ease, she is still worried that time has weakened the lure of her body, so she pulled Tie Ping Gu in as well.

She knows that this name ‘Xiao Yu’er’ was spoken from Jiang Yu Lang’s lips, and naturally knows that Tie Ping Gu had once saved Xiao Yu’er.

Because when Jiang Yu Lang came to seek help from them, not only had she grilled Jiang Yu Lang on his background, she was not lax with the girl that Jiang Yu Lang brought with him as well.

To gain her trust, Jiang Yu Lang told her everything about Tie Ping Gu… naturally Jiang Yu Lang would not help another keep secrets.

Therefore she thinks that there is no reason that Xiao Yu’er would not come. Dripping water can pierce a hole through a rock, much less the force of the waterfall; This rock has been grounded round and smooth by the waterfall, and in the middle of the rock there is a hollow, but the surrounding area is so slippery that no one would be able to stand properly on top.

Madam Bai is lying in the hollow. Once Xiao Yu’er jumps on this rock to save her, she only have to push lightly and Xiao Yu’er would fall into the water.

And right now, Herbalist Hu is lying underwater, with a reed in his mouth, the other end above water so that he can breath. Once Xiao Yu’er falls into the water, it’ll be like a fish swimming into a net… when a person falls into water, he will naturally flail his limbs, and his weak points will be exposed. Herbalist Hu would be concentrating instead, so naturally he will be captured easily.

Under the rushing waterfall and above the slippery rock, this is an extremely dangerous position. Even if Xiao Yu’er is extremely skilled, once he comes over, there is no way that he will not fall down.

Madam Bai placed herself in such a dangerous position, it is really a devious

plan, but never in her dreams did she expect that not only did Xiao Yu'er not come over, but he did not leave as well. He just sat far away and looked, as if he is watching a show.

Xiao yu'er was sitting there in a relaxed manner, and he actually took off his shoes and started washing his feet in the stream. The expression on his face is indescribably happy.

After another while, he actually started clapping and singing!

"Clear stream to wash feet, such happiness! Beauties to feast the eyes, such happiness! With such in life, what more can one ask for?"

Madam Bai was livid with anger on hearing it and can't help but scold through gritted teeth, "This Xiao Yu is inhumane… could he have seen through my ploy?"

The later sentence, is naturally asking Tie Ping Gu, because the sound of the falling water is so loud that even if she raised her voice a little more, only Tie Ping Gu would be able to hear her.

Tie Ping Gu was originally full of shame and hatred, but now she can't help but laugh secretly and deliberately replied, "He must have seen through it."

Madam Bai replied with hatred, "This plan is seamless, how can he see through it?"

Tie Ping Gu replied, "Many have said that he is the smartest person in the world, it seems that they are not wrong."

Her skills are below Madam Bai's, and the rush of the waterfall has made it difficult to breath, but now she is feeling so happy that not only can she say everything in one breath, but her voice was not soft either.

Madam Bai asked coldly, "Are you trying to give him hints? But it's best that you do not forget, your lover is still in my hands. If this is not successful, you will become an unwed widow."

End of Chapter 89

Chapter 79

Chapter 90

Once Jiang Yu Lang was mentioned, Tie Ping Gu's heart dropped immediately. Although she hoped that Xiao Yu'er would not be tricked, but all the more she can't bear to let Jiang Yu Lang die. Tie Ping Gu dare not speak again.

After a while, Madam Bai asked instead, "I know you saved him once, right?"

Tie Ping Gu affirmed it.

Madam Bai pressed, "Why isn't he saving you now?"

Tie Ping Gu replied, "Maybe… maybe he did not recognize me…"

Madam Bai said quietly, "That's right… when men see a naked beauty, their eyes will only stare at her body, and usually will not look at her face."

Tie Ping Gu's face reddened in a fiery blush, she suddenly felt Xiao Yu'er's eyes staring at her. How she wish she could cover her chest, her legs… but for Jiang Yu Lang, she dare not even move.

Madam Bai said coldly, "Now, you must quickly turn your head a little more, and cry for help… your cries must not be too loud, but it must not be too soft either, you must make it sound exhausted, understand?"

Tie Ping Gu immediately cried out, "Help… help…"

She turned her head, and instead realized that Xiao Yu'er had already finished

washing his legs and was half lying on that rock with his hand supporting his head, and he looked asleep.

Naturally Madam Bai saw it as well, and gritted her teeth, “What a sly lad, what is he really up to?”

She heard someone talking from beneath the rock, “Weren’t my words correct, this fish is very difficult to capture.”

It turned out that Herbalist Hu could not bear it any further as well, and half his head rose out of the water.

Madam Bai hurriedly said, “Get down quickly, don’t let him see you.”

Herbalist Hu smiled, “No matter how skilful he is, can his eyes see around corners? How can he look behind the rock?”

Madam Bai sighed, “In your opinion, has he seen through this plan?”

Herbalist Hu queried, “But why didn’t he come over?”

Madam Bai said, “Maybe this lad is born with a suspicious nature, and will have some suspicions towards any matter, so he is not coming over first, but taking his time there to gauge our reaction?”

Herbalist Hu said with a bitter smile, “But we are suffering here, and he is enjoying himself there. In this waiting game, how can we win him?”

Madam Bai said, “What else can we do but wait? This lad is even more slippery than a fish, if he were to see through us this time, netting him would be even more difficult than ascending heaven the next time.”

Herbalist Hu heaved a long sigh and said, “Since that is the case, it seems that we can only wait with him, but how long can you take it?”

Madam Bai was silent for a moment before continuing with a bitter smile, “Since things has come to this, we’ll just take each moment as it comes…”

Who would have expected at this time, Xiao Yu’er suddenly stood up.

Madam Bai was surprised and overjoyed, and whispered, “Get down quickly, the fish is about to be hooked.”

Without waiting for her to finish her words, Herbalist Hu had already dived underwater, and that reed poked out of the water again.

Xiao Yu’er mumbled, “I don’t think this is a trick, or else they will not be able to bear with it for so long.”

As he spoke, he wore his shoes, and dipped his feet into the water. Obviously he was also worried that the rock over there would be too slippery, so he was wetting the soles of his shoes. Madam Bai knew that he would be coming over soon, and the joy in her heart cannot be described with words, but Tie Ping Gu almost wanted to burst into tears.

At this point in time she almost forgot about Jiang Yu Lang, almost wanted to cry out immediately, telling Xiao Yu’er not to come over and get tricked, because in the split second between life and death, the morals that are deep in a person’s heart will usually suddenly win over selfishness.

A pity that Madam Bai also understands this point very well, and with a low voice, said each word clearly, “Remember, do not forget about your lover.”

Tie Ping Gu’s heart froze, and bit her own tongue, feeling a stab of pain in her chest; She may not have screamed, but her tears have flowed.

Suddenly Xiao Yu’er was heard shouting, “Misses, do not be afraid, I am coming to save you!” Amidst the shout, he was already leaping up, flying towards the rock.

Xiao Yu’er struck a pose for some time to ready himself, and Madam Bai

thought that his leap must be light and graceful, but who would have expected that his skill is neither light, and his posture was extremely awful as well.

When a person spend so much effort throwing the net, he will always hope that he'll catch a big fish, but this 'fish' seems to be a really small one.

Madam Bai secretly sighed, "It's true that most clever men are not hardworking. If I had known that his martial arts is so atrocious, I would not wasted so much effort."

As she was thinking, she suddenly heard a splash and the water splattered all over… Xiao Yu'er did not leap onto the stone with his jump, but leapt into the water instead.

There were sounds of gulping, and he seemed to have swallowed a few mouthfuls of water, his nose bubbling in the water, and later he actually started shouting, "Help… help… I'm drowning…"

The savior, is now crying out to be saved instead.

Madam Bai found the situation both infuriating and hilarious. She really did not imagine that not only is this lad's martial arts so terrible, but his water skills is worse than his martial arts. At this point in time Xiao Yu'er can't even scream for help, but there were bubbles coming up from beneath the water, and it seems that this little fish is about to drown.

Madam Bai secretly scolded, "If not for the fact that I still have use of you, I'll let you drown today."

By this time she no longer has any misgivings, and was going to sit up, but the force of the water from the top is really too strong, and her strength is almost used up. She only managed to sit up halfway when she was pushed down by the water again.

That reed has turned around from behind the rock. Madam Bai saw that since Herbalist Hu has come to catch the fish, she might as well save her strength.

The water is very clear, Herbalist Hu opened his eyes underwater and saw that this little fish is now looking like a drenched puppy instead, and he could almost catch him once he extend his hands.

But who would have expected that Xiao Yu'er would suddenly leap out of the water.

He flicked his fingers lightly, and a little black pill was flipped out of his fingers, and it actually dropped into that hollow reed coincidentally. Herbalist Hu was breathing when he suddenly felt something drop down the reed. After being underwater for so long, he was naturally breathing very hard, and by the time he wanted to exhale, it was too late.

With lightning fast hands, Xiao Yu'er pulled the reed out of his mouth and with a gulp, he swallowed that thing.

He only felt that this thing was salty, wet and smelly, and even has the smell of salted fish. He was just opening his mouth to spit it out but water rushed in instead. After gulping two mouthful of water, even if he had swallowed dog poop, he can forget about spitting it out.

Madam Bai only heard the splashing of water, and just as she was wondering what happened, Xiao Yu'er had already pulled out the reed and at the same time sealed her 'Tong Quan' acupoint on the sole of her feet.

By the time Herbalist Hu jumped out of the water like a toad who was struck by an arrow, Madam Bai has already become a dead horse, lying on the stone and unable to move.

Herbalist Hu leapt onto the rock and immediately opened his mouth, trying to vomit so hard that even his tears and nose was running.

He saw Xiao Yu'er, who had already returned to the rock on the other side, looking at them with a grin, as if nothing had happened.

Only now did Madam Bai realize that the fisherman is now being fished instead.

She was startled and furious and called out, “Quick… unseal my acupoint quickly.”

Herbalist Hu was rubbing his eyes and panting as he asked, “What… what acupoint?”

Madam Bai replied, “Tong Quan acupoint.”

Herbalist Hu was just thinking of it when Xiao Yu’er commented with a lazy smile, “If I were you, I will certainly not save her.”

Herbalist Hu’s finger really paused in mid-air, and asked, “Why?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “Do you still have the energy to save others? Why don’t you think of a way to save yourself first.”

Herbalist Hu’s face turned ashen, “That… what was that?”

Xiao Yu’er grinned, “If it’s not poison, could it have been a tonic pill then?” Herbalist Hu weakened.

Xiao Yu’er continued, “If you want me to save you, you better sit there obediently and don’t move.”

Madam Bai interrupted, “No matter what, you can unseal my acupoint first and we can force him to hand us the antidote.”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Just with the two of you, you can’t even force me to fart.”

With the two of them talking back and fro, Herbalist Hu was stuck in the middle, not knowing whether to listen to Madam Bai, or to Xiao Yu’er.

Tie Ping Gu witnessed the scene with surprise and joy, and after being stunned for a moment, suddenly thought, “What a better time to jump if not now?” She immediately rolled down the rock into the water.

Madam Bai was frantic with impatience and asked, “You… why are you still not moving?”

Herbalist Hu sighed and said with a bitter smile, “I do want to save you, but my own life is more important after all.”

Madam Bai stared at him, so furious that she is at a loss for words.

By now Tie Ping Gu had swam over with a struggle, and just as she was about to jump on the rock, she suddenly remembered that she is not wearing even a stitch, so how can she face others?

However, Xiao Yu’er’s eyes looked towards her and even smiled. Tie Ping Gu wished that she can hide her face in the water.

Xiao Yu’er said, “You want to tell me to turn my head around, right?”

Tie Ping Gu hurriedly nodded her head.

Xiao Yu’er said, “All right, I’ll turn around then, but I must first ask you, you were not shy while lying there earlier, so why are you suddenly shy now?”

Tie Ping Gu stammered, “I… I only…”

Xiao Yu’er said lazily, “You wanted to trick me earlier, right? A pity that the one who got tricked is not me, but someone else.”

This sentence is like a whip, and Tie Ping Gu’s face paled, and stammered, “You… why do you malign me thus?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed coldly, “I malign you… haha, then I want to ask you instead,

since you can move and talk earlier, why didn't you warn me not to be tricked?"

Tie Ping Gu replied, "It's because I… I…" She finally realized that she really has nothing to say, and her tears flowed unknowingly.

Xiao Yu'er said, "You don't have to cry, I am not Hua Wu Que, and have never has his nature of caring for females. Even if you were to cry until a river flows, I still will not pity you."

Tie Ping Gu's body started shivering and she said hoarsely, "I did not ask you to forgive me, I… I will never beg you as well…"

Xiao Yu'er suddenly stared and shouted, "But I must still ask you, why did you betray me? Why? Why?…"

Tie Ping Gu started wailing and replied hoarsely, "Because I think that you are an arrogant, selfish jerk who thinks you're so special. You think that you're better than others, so I want you to die in the hands of others!"

Xiao Yu'er was stunned for a moment, and he actually laughed and said with a grin, "The louder a woman speaks, usually her words are not true. The way you say it, I think that you're not deliberately tricking me, you must have your difficulties, maybe I really should forgive you."

Tie Ping Gu was tongue-tied, and was stunned. She only felt that this person's actions and words, not a single one will not shock others.

Xiao Yu'er continued slowly, "Maybe you have someone close who is in their hands, and to save that person's life, you can only betray me."

He sighed and added, "If that is really the case, I really cannot blame you, because I know that for the person she loves, a woman will not hesitate to betray herself as well."

This words really touched a chord in Tie Ping Gu's heart, and she can't help but cry again. She really did not expect this hateful Xiao Yu'er would really be able to

understand another's pain, understand another's thoughts.

Xiao Yu'er asked gently, "But who is this person? Is he worth you sacrificing so much for him?"

Tie Ping Gu cried as she said, "You… you know him, I cannot reveal his name."

Xiao Yu'er's expression changed, but his voice was still gentle, "Do you mean Jiang Yu Lang?"

This time Tie Ping Gu really kept her mouth shut. But by keeping her mouth shut now, is akin to acknowledging it. Xiao Yu'er suddenly jumped up and raised his voice, "Fine, fine, fine, you actually betrayed me because of that little bastard Jiang Yu Lang. Do you know what a rotten person that lad is, that even if he was beheaded a hundred times, it would still not be enough."

Tie Ping Gu was stunned again.

Xiao Yu'er stared at her and after a moment, suddenly sighed, "Actually I still should not blame you, that lad is full of honeyed words that even women who are ten times smarter than you would have been tricked as well."

Tie Ping Gu stood in the water at a loss, not knowing whether to laugh or to cry.

By now Xiao Yu'er had calmed down, and stood up with a grin and commented to Herbalist Hu, "Very good, you are very smart, and did not strike rashly. But a smart man like you, married a wife who keeps stripping, isn't that a let down!"

Herbalist Hu sighed, "I don't have a wife."

Xiao Yu'er was stunned for a moment before laughing loudly, "Marvelous, marvelous. So this means that, you are smarter than I imagined… but if a woman like her has no husband, she'll surely turn crazy, where is her husband?"

He rolled his eyes, and immediately continued with a smile, “Her husband would naturally be watching over Jiang Yu Lang, right?”

Herbalist Hu can only sigh, “Exactly.”

Xiao Yu’er suddenly leapt up and flew towards that huge rock. This time he leapt lightly, and lightly landed on the rock, and certainly will not fall into the water again.

Madam Bai bit her lips until it bled.

Xiao Yu’er looked at her with a grin and said, “For an old woman like you, you don’t really have a lot of fats on your body, which is not easy. Since you have a husband as well as a lover, why do you still want to look for me?”

Madam Bai said through gritted teeth, “Since you are so smart, why can’t you guess?”

Without even thinking, Xiao Yu’er immediately replied, “Because amongst the three of you, there must be one who had secretly seen how anxious Su Ying was over me, so you thought of using me to threaten Su Ying and make her reveal the information that Hua Wu Que refused to reveal.”

Before he could finish his words, Madam Bai is already stunned. Although she had asked him to guess, but she did not expect this darn Xiao Yu’er would really guess it correctly, as if he had witnessed it all from the side. Madam Bai felt as if she had swallowed bitter water, but unable to spit it out.

Xiao Yu’er added, “But even if you want to trick me, you do not have to take off your own clothes and torture yourself thus. I’m afraid this is because you have this perverse liking by nature to let others see you naked… some crazy people like to pee in front of women, I’m afraid they have the same perversion as you.”

Madam Bai was so furious that her lips quivered, and she can’t help but start berating him.

She used almost all the vicious words in the world to scold him, but Xiao Yu’er seemed not to have heard a single word, and did not even take another look at her.

Tie Ping Gu was still soaking in the water on the other side, not daring to stand up, and not knowing what else to do either. The stream was freezing, and she was so cold that her lips had turned pale. She felt sadness, pain, shame, and thought that there is no more meaning in living, and was about to knock herself dead.

Xiao Yu’er suddenly said loudly, “You know that Miss Tie had saved my life, and is also my good friend, but now she is soaking in the water, not daring to come out. Do you think I will feel bad?”

Herbalist Hu replied, “I would think that you will… will feel a little bad.”

Xiao Yu’er retorted angrily, “Since you know that I feel bad, why aren’t you taking off your own clothes and give it to her.”

Without daring to say anything more, Herbalist Hu can only take off his outer clothes and threw it towards Tie Ping Gu. Tie Ping Gu caught it with her hands, but was unsure whether to wear it or not.

She heard Xiao Yu’er say, “When Tie Ping Gu is wearing her clothes, if you dare to take a single look at her, I will dig your eyes out, understood?”

Herbalist Hu felt both angry and funny, and secretly thought, “Haven’t I seen enough earlier, even if you want me to look now, how can I have the mood or the appetite to do so.”

Tie Ping Gu finally wore the clothes in the end.

Xiao Yu’er tried to control his smile and mumbled, “I wonder if she has worn the clothes.”

Herbalist Hu can’t help but reply, “She has.”

Xiao Yu’er suddenly roared, “I did not expect that you still peeked!”

Herbalist Hu stammered, “No… No…”

Xiao Yu’er laughed loudly, “Actually, since you have seen everything earlier, you’re only taking another peek now, there’s nothing to it, you need not be afraid.”

Herbalist Hu stared at Xiao Yu’er, and also felt as if he has swallowed bitter water but unable to spit it out.

His martial arts is not weak, his brains are not bad either, and he thought of himself as exceptional as well, but who would have expected that now he is being fooled by an underage kid. He really wished that he can cast aside everything else and have a good fight with this hateful rascal.

Xiao Yu’er shifted his gaze and suddenly tapped his shoulder and said with a smile, “You don’t have to feel bad, only a fool would not treasure his own life. You submitted to me because you want me to save you, and this is where you’re smart.”

Herbalist Hu sighed, and slowly felt that he is great after all, “To be able to submit thus, is really not something that can be easily done by others, so what’s so shameful about it?” Once he thought of this, the earlier thought of fighting with Xiao Yu’er flew out of his mind.

Xiao Yu’er laughed even happier, and said, “Now, you only have to do one more thing for me, and I will give you the antidote.”

Herbalist Hu sighed, “Since that is the case, I am willing to hear your instructions.”

Xiao Yu’er said, “Bring me to her husband.”

Once Herbalist Hu thought that Hua Wu Que is still in Bai Shan Jun's hands, and using Hua Wu Que to threaten him, he need not be afraid that Xiao Yu'er would not give him the antidote.

Once he thought of this, his eyes brightened and he immediately bowed and replied, "Certainly!"

Herbalist Hu took a glance at Madam Bai and can't help but ask, "But what about her?"

Xiao Yu'er laughed, "Since she like to strip and bath, might as well let her bath herself clean here."

After a short while, the stone house is already in sight. The wind blew past the woods, making shuffling noises, but the house is quiet, not a sound to be heard at all.

Xiao Yu'er suddenly reached out and gripped Herbalist Hu's wrist and said with a low voice, "They are in that house?"

"That's right."

Xiao Yu'er furrowed his brows, "Three living adults in the house, but why is there not a single sound at all?"

Tie Ping Gu can't help but blurt out, "I… I'll go and take a look first."

However, Xiao Yu'er's other hand grabbed her as quickly and said with a serious expression, "Since we're already here, why are you so impatient!"

Tie Ping Gu hemmed and hawed, "If you still remember that I… I was good to you, I only beg that you do not kill him."

Xiao Yu'er stared, "Not kill him! Keep him alive so that he can harm others?" Tie Ping Gu's head lowered further, tears flowing.

Xiao Yu’er was silent for a moment before saying with hatred, “Seems like that little beast have cheated you quite badly, but I have told you long ago, I am not a gentleman. If you expect me to repay you in gratitude, you are mistaken.”

Tie Ping Gu replied sadly, “You may sound vicious, but I know your heart is not like that, you… you… you won’t kill him, right?”

Xiao Yu’er stamped his feet and suddenly cast Herbalist Hu’s hand aside sharply and said fiercely, “Tell them to come out now, do you hear?”

Herbalist Hu cleared his throat and called loudly, “Brother Bai, come out, I have returned.”

The words sounded in the empty mountain, echoing in the distance. But it was still quiet in the stone house, no reply at all.

Xiao Yu’er furrowed his brows, “Could this Bai person be deaf.”

Herbalist Hu’s eyes shimmered and he said, “Why don’t I go in and have a look.”

Xiao Yu’er thought for a while and said with a low voice, “All right, you walk first, but do not walk too fast. If you make any unexpected moves, I will break your hand first!”

Herbalist Hu heaved a sigh, and walked over step by step. As he reached the door, he saw Jiang Yu Lang curled up in a corner alone, his whole body shaking.

Bai Shan Jun and Hua Wu Que have disappeared!

End of Chapter 90

Chapter 80

Chapter 91

Herbalist Hu and Tie Ping Gu were both shocked and puzzled, but Xiao Yu'er, on seeing Jiang Yu Lang, can only feel the fumes of anger bursting up, and couldn't care less about anything else.

Jiang Yu Lang saw them as well, and said with a dry laugh, "So it is Brother Yu who has arrived, it has really been a long time."

Xiao Yu'er burst out scolding, "Who is brother with a little beast like you. A pity the last time the shit did not drown you, or else how would Hero Yan have died in the hands of you little beast."

He became angrier as he spoke and suddenly leapt over, his fists beating down like rain.

Jiang Yu Lang has no energy to attack at all, and can only scream in pain, "Brother Yu please have mercy, little Brother here is fatally ill, and cannot take the beating."

Xiao Yu'er shouted furiously, "If you're afraid of being beaten, then why didn't you do less evil acts."

Tie Ping Gu stood at the side, looking with tears streaming down her face but she dare not stop him. Although he did not use all his strength, Jiang Yu Lang is now bruised and his eyes swollen. Even though Tie Ping Gu turned her head away, unable to witness the scene any longer, she knows that Xiao Yu'er no longer has the intention to kill him, or else he could have killed him with just two punches, and need not waste so much energy now.

Jiang Yu Lang cried out, “Ping’er, why aren’t you pulling him, you saved his life once, he will listen to you, can you bear to see me being beaten to death?”

Tie Ping Gu secretly sighed, “It’s not that I’m not saving you, I just hope that after this lesson, you will change for the better. As long as you have the intention to change, even if I were to die for you, I’ll be willing.”

However, Jiang Yu Lang suddenly laughed madly and said loudly, “Fine, beat me to death if you have the guts, then you can forget about seeing Hua Wu Que for the rest of your life.”

Xiao Yu’er’s fist immediately paused in mid-air, only now did he remember that Bai Shan Jun and Hua Wu Que are supposed to be in the house as well.

Xiao Yu’er pulled him up from the ground and asked fiercely, “Where is Hua Wu Que? Are you telling?”

Jiang Yu Lang replied slowly, “If you want to see him, then you should beseech me respectfully.”

Xiao Yu’er’s fist sprung out again and shouted, “Little bastard, beseech my a.ss.”

Jiang Yu Lang laughed icily, “Fine, hit me, but a fist cannot find answers. If it were anyone else, would he have spoken after getting a few punches? Won’t your punches be even more forceful after I’ve spoken.”

“I, hit you? When have I ever hit you?” He actually slapped the dust on Jiang Yu Lang’s body away, helped him to a seat and said with a smile, “It has been a long time Brother Jiang, how have you been recently?”

Jiang Yu Lang laughed loudly, “Fine, fine, just that I was bitten a few times by a mad dog earlier.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed loudly, “A mad dog will usually only bite another mad dog.

Brother Jiang is not mad, and not a dog as well, so how can there be a mad dog biting you.”

Jiang Yu Lang laughed loudly as well, “If that is the case, little brother here might have seen wrongly.”

Xiao Yu’er replied with a laugh, “Brother Jiang must be missing little brother, that even your eyes are red from crying, that’s why your eyesight is not so clear.”

Jiang Yu Lang replied, “That’s right, little brother kept thinking, how has Brother Yu been recently, will he suddenly have epilepsy or piles? Once I think of this, little brother here gets very worried, haha, very worried.”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “Little brother thought that a person like Brother Jiang will certainly be free from illness and pain, but who would have expected that when I see you today, Brother Jiang seemed to have epilepsy, or else why would you be shaking on the ground.”

The two of them debated, one speaking after the other, as if they’re engaged in an opera.

Herbalist Hu watched from the side, finding the scene hilarious, and at the same time can’t help but lament that the saying ‘the young surpasses the old’ is really quite true. In the past, although there were a few quick and cunning powerful characters in the martial arts realm, but when compared to these two youths, they are obviously not as good.

And he cannot imagine where Bai Shan Jun and Hua Wu Que would be? If Bai Shan Jun took Hua Wu Que away, why would he leave Jiang Yu Lang here? He heard Xiao Yu’er comment again, “The mountains are secluded, Brother Jiang is sitting alone in here, aren’t you afraid that there will be some blind, evil ghosts who will come and seek Brother Jiang to take your life?”

“This, Brother Yu does not have to worry. Little Brother here is a little short of cash right now, if there’s any souls or ghosts who really dare to come, I will capture and sell him in exchange for a few silver taels and buy some wine. Besides, I was not sitting here alone earlier.”

He finally went to the point with the last sentence.

However Xiao Yu'er pretended not to understand, "Oh, I wonder who else was here?"

Jiang Yu Lang grinned, "One of them is surnamed 'Hua', would Brother Yu recognize the name?"

Xiao Yu'er asked, "Is it Hua Wu Que? Little brother is just about to look for him over some matters, but I wonder where has he gone to now?"

Jiang Yu Lang replied with a straight face, "Little brother knows that he has some issues with Brother Yu, and am afraid that he will seek trouble with Brother Yu, and had wanted to do a little something for Brother Yu and just kill him."

Xiao Yu'er laughed, "If Brother Jiang had really killed him, that would spare little brother a lot of trouble. Killing someone is always easier than interrogating him, right?"

Jiang Yu Lang laughed as well, "Later little brother thought about it, if Brother Yu wants to kill him personally, my flattery would have gone amiss? Therefore little brother only gave him some drugs."

Herbalist Hu can't help but ask, "Bai… Bai Shan Jun was drugged by you as well?"

Jiang Yu Lang replied with a grin, "It's not too seriously drugged, after about three to five days, they will wake up. A person who has been drugged for three to five days, even if he wakes up, I'm afraid he will only become a retard or handicapped person."

Xiao Yu'er rolled his eyes, and suddenly laughed loudly. Jiang Yu Lang immediately laughed loudly along with him as well, and the two of them laughed so hard that they were almost tearing.

Tie Ping Gu and Herbalist Hu looked at them in shock, not knowing what the two of them were laughing about.

Xiao Yu'er clasped his stomach and laughed, "Interesting, interesting, my stomach is about to burst from laughter."

Jiang Yu Lang asked, "What is Brother Yu laughing about?"

Xiao Yu'er suddenly stopped laughing and stared at Jiang Yu Lang, "It seems that although Brother Jiang has not died from your illness, but you're not too far from it, yet you can carry two large men weighing seventy to eighty kilos and hide them. Isn't this the most ridiculous joke?"

Jiang Yu Lang laughed loudly, "Brother Yu's imagination is really good, a pity that Master Hua…"

Xiao Yu'er finally felt some anxiety and can't help but ask, "What's wrong with Master Hua?"

Herbalist Hu sighed, "Not only has Master Hua's acupoint been sealed, but he seemed to have suffered a great shock, and his mind is already in a stupor, I'm afraid… afraid he is unable to walk."

Xiao Yu'er cocked his head, tapping the side of his forehead with his finger, and tapped for about 17, 18 times before the corners of his mouth revealed a slight smile, and muttered, "After they collapsed, you carried them out?"

Jiang Yu Lang replied, "This sickness of mine, will relapse at will. When it relapses the pain is so agonizing that even being carried will be torturous, much less carrying others, but when it does not relapse, there's no problem carrying a person."

Xiao Yu'er's eyes flitted towards Herbalist Hu, and Herbalist Hu nodded his head.

Jiang Yu Lang smiled, “Little brother here is not lying, right?”

Xiao Yu’er grinned, “Not lying, not lying… but after you carried them out, why did you come back? Or could it be that your body itches, so you came back to wait for a beating?”

Jiang Yu Lang’s expression did not change, neither was he angry, but instead replied with a smile, “Ping’er is still in their hands, even if little brother here knows that Brother Yu is coming and wants to cut me into a thousand pieces, I still have to wait here and see Ping’er one more time.”

Xiao Yu’er’s mouth curled, and he smiled, “Since when has Jiang Yu Lang become such an affectionate person. Interesting, interesting, really interesting…”

Tie Ping Gu could not take it any longer and collapsed beneath Jiang Yu Lang’s feet, bawling her heart out.

Xiao Yu’er sighed and mumbled, “Silly lass, if this lad says that his fart is fragrant, would you believe him as well?”

But Tie Ping Gu only asked with tears flowing, “Are your injuries serious? Is it painful?”

Jiang Yu Lang gently caressed her hair and said softly, “Even if I am in pain, as long as I see you, I won’t feel the pain.”

Xiao Yu’er suddenly shouted, “Enough, enough, I’m having goosebumps, have the love sage finished his act?”

Jiang Yu Lang asked, “What instructions does Brother Yu have?”

Xiao Yu’er sighed and said with a bitter smile, “Now that the goods are in your hand, you are the boss, so just tell me your price.”

Jiang Yu lang said very slowly with a smile, “This illness of mine, is all thanks to Miss Su… and Brother Yu is on good terms with this Miss Su?”

Xiao Yu’er sighed, “If I do not know her, I would not have so much trouble.”

Jiang Yu Lang smiled, “This is not considered much trouble, as long as Brother Yu asks Miss Su here and cure this illness of mine, little brother will invite Master Hua out immediately as well and cure his illness.”

Xiao Yu’er sighed, “Fine, let’s go.”

Jiang Yu Lang said, “Little brother here will accompany you as well.”

Xiao Yu’er grinned, “I can’t bear to leave you all alone here as well.”

Herbalist Hu suddenly said, “It doesn’t matter if this trip is not made, because that Miss Su will be here shortly.”

Jiang Yu Lang was surprised and asked with furrowed brows, “How do you know she’ll be coming here?”

Herbalist Hu smiled, “Just like this Miss Tie and you… Miss Su is also attracted to Xiao… Master Xiao Yu. Once Master Xiao Yu leaves, she will follow.”

Jiang Yu Lang clasped his hands and laughed loudly, “But even if Miss Su has left to look for Brother Yu, she might not be able to find her way here.”

Herbalist Hu said with a slight smile, “This you do not have to worry, she will certainly find it.”

Jiang Yu Lang thought for a while and smiled, “That’s right, you had wanted to use Brother Yu to threaten her, naturally you would have left clues along the way for her to find her way here.”

Xiao Yu’er sighed and said, “Since that is the case, we will just wait here for her

then.”

Madam Bai moved inch by inch on the rock, and finally found the correct position, using the force of the waterfall to unseal the acupoint on her sole.

She finally got up halfway with much difficulty, and was just wondering what to do, when she suddenly realized that among the grass on the shore, a pair of eyes were staring at her.

This person’s face is full of dirt, and it seems like the face has not been washed for a very long time, but the pair of eyes is large and bright, as if finding the scene interesting.

Madam Bai rolled her eyes, and instead puffed her chest a little higher, and said with a coquettish smile, “Little lad, have you never seen a woman bath before?”

That person seemed to be stoned, and shook the head numbly. That person suddenly smiled and said, “You need not be afraid of me, I… I am also a female.”

As she spoke, she had already stood up from among the grass. Although her clothes were dirty and tattered, it showed off even more of her alluring silhouette.

Madam Bai was stunned, and her expression even seemed a little disappointed. Not only is this young lady not ugly, she is actually quite a rare beauty.

Madam Bai kept staring at her, and suddenly smiled and tried to question her, “Looking at Miss’s appearance, have you traveled a long way?”

The young lady lowered her head and agreed.

Madam Bai continued, “The mountains here are not green, nor the stream sparkling, so why have Miss rushed all the way here?”

A tinge of worry suddenly appeared between that young lady's brows, and she was in a daze for a long moment before replying dejectedly, "I… I came to look for a person."

Madam Bai suddenly thought of something and said, "You will certainly not recognize him, and he might not be here either."

No matter what, that a lonely young lady would actually dare to come into the deep mountains to look for a person, it is certainly not an ordinary matter, so there must be something to it. However, that young lady seemed to be leaving.

Madam Bai hurriedly smiled and asked, "Miss, what is your name? Can you tell me?"

The young lady blushed and replied with a smile, "My name is Tie Xin Lan."

Tie Xin Lan finally sat down next to the stream.

She felt that although this lady would actually be so bold as to bath naked in the stream, but she is so beautiful, so affable as well.

She has spent the past few days in sadness, confusion and pain. She came here, naturally to look for Xiao Yu'er, to look for Hua Wu Que.

So what if she really found them? She does not know either.

For the first time, Tie Xin Lan felt more relaxed, and can't help but take off her shoes, whose soles have been worn through, and extended her slender legs into the stream.

Her legs were aching and swollen from the walk, and now that it's soaking in the cool water, that wonderful feeling is enough to make her feel as if she's floating among the clouds. She can't help but let out a small sigh and closed her eyes.

Madam Bai paid attention to her expression, and said with a gentle smile, “Why don’t you learn from he and have a satisfying bath?”

Tie Xin Lan’s face blushed again and asked, “Bath here?”

Madam Bai said, “I bath here everyday, and besides you, I’ve never seen anyone else.”

Tie Xin Lan chewed on her lips and asked, “Is there really…. Really very few people who will come here?” Obviously she was a little tempted.

Madam Bai laughed, “If there are people who frequent this place, would I dare to bath here?”

Tie Xin Lan was even more tempted. She took a look at Madam Bai, and lowered her head with a blush again, “I… I think I’ll just wash my feet.” Tie Xin lan is still in doubt.

Madam Bai had already closed her eyes and smiled, “Hurry, what’s there to be afraid of… after you’ve bathed, you’ll know how comfortable it is.”

Tie Xin Lan took a look at her, and took a look at the clear green water… She is really so filthy that she itches, and this water is really a temptation that no one can resist, She hid among the grass and removed her clothes swiftly. Although there was no one peeping, but the sunlight has already secretly crawled up her generous bosom.

Her whole body was blushing red, and her heart almost jumped out. She hurriedly jumped into the little stream and hid in the water. The cooling water, with a hint of warmth immediately surrounded her body.

Only now did she heave a sigh of relief and smiled, “Ready.”

Madam Bai opened her eyes and looked at her, smiling, “Comfortable?”

Tie Xin Lan nodded her head.

Madam Bai said, “All right, I’m coming down now, you can help me.” Only now did she really heave a sigh of relief as well, and slowly slid into the water.

The current was indeed very strong, and with her weakened legs, if no one were to help her, she really would not have the strength to swim to shore. Even if she is not drowned, the current would have swept her away.

Tie Xin Lan hurriedly helped her and asked anxiously, “You… you are leaving?”

Madam Bai laughed, “I’m only going to the shore to keep a look out for you, just rest assured and bath.”

Tie Xin Lan was relieved and smiled, “But you must not go too far.”

Madam Bai giggled, “With a little beauty like you showering here, can I bear to go too far?”

Tie Xin Lan blushed all the way to her ears, and dare not even lift her arms out of the water. She realized that a woman’s eyes, can sometimes be as scary as a man’s.

With her help, Madam Bai finally reached the shore and she smiled, “All right, I’m going to wear my clothes now, and you’re not allowed to peep either.”

Actually Tie Xin Lan had already closed her eyes, not daring to look at all. Once she sees her body which was as white as snow, Tie Xin Lan’s heart seemed to keep pounding… she again realized that a woman’s naked body is not only temptation to a man, sometimes it’s the same to a woman as well.

Although the clothes were dirty and torn, it’s better than nothing at all. Even if Madam Bai’s hide was thicker than a wall, she still dare not run around naked.

Tie Xin Lan closed her eyes for a long while, and only heard Madam Bai

comment, “The material of this dress is not too bad, a pity that it’s really too dirty.”

Tie Xin Lan can’t help but open her eyes for her look and she was so shocked that she paled, and exclaimed hoarsely, “How can you wear my clothes?”

Madam Bai grinned, “If I don’t wear your clothes, whose shall I wear then?”

Tie Xin Lan cried out, “If you wear my clothes, than what about me?”

Madam Bai laughed, “Then you can bath here a little longer, anyway there’s quite a lot of people who will pass by here, although they’re all men, but not all men are lechers. Maybe there’ll be one or two kind hearted ones who will take their pants off for you to wear…”

It would have been better if she did not say anything, for once she said that, Tie Xin Lan became so anxious that she was about to cry. However Madam Bai was laughing so hard that she was bending over, and continued with a coquettish laugh, “Have you ever worn a man’s pants? Although it’s a little big, but it’s loose and airy, and it’s more comfortable than those split-seat pants that you wore when you were a kid.”

Tie Xin Lan blushed and cried hoarsely, “You crazy woman, wicked woman, give me back my clothes.” She almost can’t help but dash out of the water, but Madam Bai was already ignoring her, walking away with a laugh.

Tie Xin Lan was so furious that she was yelling, “You’re not human, you’re a beast, a b*itch…”

Without even turning her head back, Madam Bai laughed, “Go on scolding, after a few more curses, the men nearby will all be attracted here by you.” Tie Xin Lan was so shocked that she dare not utter another word.

Her body bent over in the water, her tears already flowing. She did not believe that an adult can be so anxious that he will cry like a child, but now she realizes that anything can happen in this world. Once she thought of that, she wished

that she could just drop down dead.

End of Chapter 91

Chapter 81

Chapter 92

On the left side of the stream, was a forest. Madam Bai walked through the forest hurriedly.

Suddenly, she realized that there's a dress swaying on a branch in front, with a red base and embroidered with a colorful begonia lightly covered by frost, looking extremely realistic under the sunlight.

A set of beautiful, elegant woman's clothing, this temptation is too great for Madam Bai. She really did not wish to wear this set of torn clothing that she has to see her husband. Madam Bai was tempted.

She stared at that dress, her footsteps slowed, but she was still a little hesitant, and dared not reach out her hands to take the dress.

Madam Bai told herself, "There must be some trick. I'm in enough trouble, why do I need more." Once she thought of this, she did not even wish to take another look.

But that begonia is really exquisitely embroidered, the workmanship on the dress is so delicate, the material, the color, is indescribably pleasing.

Madam Bai finally made a decision and thought to herself, "This is just a set of

clothes, it can't possibly grow teeth and bite me."

This really is just a set of clothes. There's nothing wrong or strange about it, and anyone who took it down from the tree won't be in any trouble at all.

Madam Bai helped herself and immediately took off her tattered clothes and wore the new one. The soft silk rubbing on her freshly showered skin, is like the hands of a lover.

But this pair of hands is really dishonest. Madam Bai suddenly felt her body itching. In the beginning, it seems that there's a little worm crawling around the collar, and slowly making its way down her back.

Later, this little worm seemed to have become ten, hundreds, thousands… crawling on every part of her body.

She's going so crazy with the itch that she can't even walk. She kept scratching with her hands but the more she scratches, the more itchy it becomes, and not only her body, but even her heart itches as well.

She felt comfortable and terrible, felt like crying and laughing… later she just collapsed onto the ground and started laughing morosely.

Sudden a tinkling laughter was heard saying, "Are you comfortable wearing this dress?" So it turns out that the problem is with the dress after all.

Someone walked over from afar, only wearing a gown white as the moonlight. Seen under the gentle sunlight, anyone's soul would have been mesmerized. She turned out to be Su Ying.

Madam Bai's eyes almost popped out, and she cried hoarsely, "It's you? This dress is yours?"

Su Ying gave a slight smile, "I made it and was just about to wear it for the first time, do you think it's nice?"

But Madam Bai can no longer speak, and can only keep on furiously rubbing her body on the tree trunk, and stammered, “What is on the dress?”

Su Ying smiled lazily, “Nothing much, just some herbs, it will fade after a few days.”

It was as if someone was stepping on Madam Bai’s neck, and she let out a scream.

Right now she is going crazy with the itch, and hopes that someone will give her a good whipping, with not a moment to lose. If it will take another few days, she’d rather kill herself.

Madam Bai tore away the clothes like a mad woman and cried hoarsely, “I have no enmity with you, why must you harm me thus?”

Su Ying replied icily, “You should think again, have you offended me before?”

Although Madam Bai took off all the clothes, she still itches. She was crawling on the floor, twisting her body, crying and begging, “Good Miss, good Sister, I know I’m wrong, please let me off.”

Su Ying smiled, “Then let me ask you, did you steal Hua Wu Que away?”

At this time and place, Madam Bai would not dare to deny, and she immediately nodded her head, “It’s me, I deserve death.”

Su Ying’s expression turned solemn and asked, “Where have you hidden him?”

Madam Bai replied, “Just behind the hill, in that little valet, there’s a small house…”

Su Ying was silent for a moment before she said each word slowly, “Have you really hidden him in that place?”

Madam Bai said with a bitter smile, “In front of Miss, when have I ever lied?”

Su Ying’s expression seemed to have changed a little, and she sighed with a shake of her head, “In the remote mountains, there would actually be such a sturdy stone house built there, didn’t you feel anything weird about that?”

Madam Bai is in no mood to further pursue this matter anyway, and can only beg bitterly, “I’ve said everything, you should let me off now!”

Su Ying smiled slightly and asked, “Where did you come from earlier?”

Madam Bai was stunned for a moment before replying, “That little stream there.”

Su Ying replied, “Then you should go back there.”

Tie Xin Lan’s limbs were frozen cold, but her eyes kept darting around, afraid that there’ll be some man who might suddenly rush over.

Luckily it was quiet all around, with not a shadow to be seen.

Tie Xin Lan also wanted to secretly climb out and run away, but where can a naked girl run to? What if she meets a man… she dare not even imagine further.

Suddenly, there was a naked lady running towards her and with a ‘splash’, jumped into the stream, panting.

Tie Xin Lan was surprised and overjoyed, and was actually too shy to look. However, out of the corner of her eyes, she realized that this lady is the same one who tricked her of her clothes earlier. Tie Xin Lan was so shocked that her eyes widened in surprise, unable to speak.

Tie Xin Lan suddenly leapt over and grabbed her hair, yelling, “Where is my clothes? Give it back to me.”

Suddenly someone was heard saying with a smile, “Is this your clothes?” Tie Xin Lan turned her head around and saw Su Ying!

Su Ying stood on the edge of the stream, looking like a lotus which has just bloomed.

Tie Xin Lan only felt that in her whole life, she has never seen such a beautiful woman. Although she is a woman as well, she was also dazed at the sight of her.

Su Ying smiled, “If you do not want to continue bathing, then come up and wear it!”

Although Tie Xin Lan was still shy, but she had to get up. She hastily grabbed her clothes and hid into the bushes in a flash.

Madam Bai smiled condescendingly and said, “I feel like coming up as well.”

Su Ying replied nonchalantly, “Come up if you wish! No one is stopping you.”

Madam Bai climbed onto the rock, but who would have expected that once the top half of her body left the water, and the wind blew over it, she started itching again, so itchy that she almost died.

Su Ying said with a laugh, “As soon as you do not feel the itch, you can come out anytime.”

Madam Bai asked, “How… how long would that take?”

Su Ying smiled, “Maybe half a day, maybe two to three days… since you like bathing, then you might as well have a good bath.”

Madam Bai was stunned, and almost fainted.

By now Tie Xin Lan had wore her clothes and walked out, and with a polite bow, said, “Thank you, Miss.”

Although her clothes were tattered and torn, but a beauty who had just stepped out of the bath, her fair legs like frost, her pale arms fairer than snow, her blushing cheeks as cute as an apple.

Su Ying can't help but grab her hands and said with a smile, "Such a pretty girl, inspiring kindness on anyone who sees you, men should be kneeling in front of you in rows to beg you, why must you trouble yourself to look for them."

Tie Xin Lan blushed again, and stammered, "I… I…"

Su Ying smiled, "Who is the person who has such good fortune?"

Tie Xin Lan replied, "He… he…"

Su Ying laughed, "You don't have to tell me, I won't know him anyway."

Tie Xin Lan followed her for a few steps before lightly sighing, "It's best that you do not get to know him as well."

Su Ying lost her humor and asked, "Why? Could it be anyone who gets to know him will become unlucky?"

Tie Xin Lan actually nodded her head and said , "Yes!"

Su Ying suddenly turned her head around, stared at her and asked, "What is his name?"

Tie Xin Lan did not notice the change in her expression, and said with a soft sigh, "His surname is Jiang, others call him Xiao Yu'er."

The three words Xiao Yu'er, made Su Ying's heart start beating immediately like a drum. She realized that this young lady walking next to her, turned out to be her rival in love.

Looking at Tie Xin Lan's face, which is pretty as a flower, she felt a pang of jealousy and thought, "Xiao Yu'er, Xiao Yu'er, you really have good taste."

Tie Xin Lan suddenly laughed and said, "Sometimes he can make you expire from anger."

Su Ying blinked, and smiled, "You hate him a lot?"

Tie Xin Lan lowered her head, "Sometimes I really do hate him, but sometimes…"

Su Ying smiled and continued, "But sometimes you like him, like him so much that you can die?"

Tie Xin Lan bit her lips, and only smiled foolishly.

Su Ying stared in a lost for a moment before suddenly raising her voice, "But he may not necessarily like you, right?"

Tie Xin Lan was dazed for a moment, her eyes slowly become more gentle, the corners of her lips revealing a trace of a sweet smile, lowered her head and said softly, "Although he treats me unkindly sometimes, but sometimes… sometimes he treats me quite nicely as well."

Su Ying felt as if there were needles pricking her heart, and wished that she could dig out Tie Xin Lan's heart and prick it as well, so that she will never dare to think of Xiao Yu'er again.

Tie Xin Lan was totally oblivious to her expression, her eyes staring at a cloud in a daze. This cloud seems to have taken on the image of a grinning Xiao Yu'er.

Su Ying turned her head away, not looking at her and deliberately said loudly, "Even if he treats you very nicely sometimes, but it cannot prove that he likes you for a certainty. Maybe he treats every girl the same, maybe, he treats others better than you."

Tie Xin Lan replied softly, “As long as he is nice to me, I won’t mind how he treats others.”

Su Ying asked, “Won’t you get jealous?”

Tie Xin Lan smiled and said, “There are many men, who cannot be owned by only one woman by nature. Xiao Yu’er is this kind of person. Since I understand him so well, I should not be jealous.”

Su Ying had wanted to hurt Tie Xin Lan, but who would have expected that Tie Xin Lan was not upset at all, while she herself almost expired from fury. After a moment, she can’t help but comment, “Maybe this is because he is the only man you know, that’s why you are so faithful towards him. If you get to know a few more men, you will realize that there are a lot more who are better than him.”

Tie Xin Lan’s expression suddenly changed, her head going even lower.

Only now did Su Ying noticed the change in the expression, and her eyes gleamed. She added, “Besides him, is there another one in your heart?”

Tie Xin Lan blushed, and did not speak.

Su Ying smiled, “My guess must be correct, no wonder you’re not jealous over him.” Tie Xin Lan blushed redder.

With a twinkling laugh however, Su Ying added, “If a woman has two men in her heart, it may be problematic, but it’s very interesting as well…”

Tie Xin Lan lowered her head, adjusting her clothes, and after a moment, suddenly said, “I had planned to leave my life in Xiao Yu’er’s hands, it doesn’t matter if he treats me nicely or badly, I will never change, but who would have expected…”

Su Ying rolled her eyes and smiled, “But the other man treated you extremely well, that you are unable to reject, right?”

Tie Xin Lan's tears fell, and stuttered, "But he treated me well, not because he wants to possess me…"

Su Ying continued, "But the more he does that, the more you feel guilt towards him, right?"

Tie Xin Lan agreed.

Su Ying said, "I know, he must be the same as Xiao Yu'er, smart, humorous, cute, but sometimes a little irritating… but only a little irritating."

Tue Xin Lan replied, "You're wrong."

"Oh?"

Tie Xin Lan continued, "He is the extreme opposite of Xiao Yu'er, so much so that there is not a single point where they are similar. He is always polite to girls, and can't even tell a joke."

Su Ying replied, "A man that is like a dog, I don't like this kind at all."

Tie Xin Lan stammered, "But… but…"

Su Ying smiled, "But someone likes it very much, right?"

Tie Xin Lan blushed again, "I… it's not that I like… like him, it's just that not only has he saved my life, but he treated me very… very…"

Her voice became even softer than a mosquito buzzing, and she was stuttering, stammering, as if she's holding an egg in her mouth.

Su Ying helped to finish her words with a coquettish smile, "Not only has he saved your life, but he took care of you extremely well. Even if you do not like him, but you must be grateful to him, right?"

Tie Xin Lan chewed on her lips, stunned for a moment, before suddenly saying, “Even if I like him, he will not like me.”

Su Ying smiled, “If he doesn’t like you, why is he treating you so well? Could there be something wrong with his brains then?”

Tie Xin Lan lowered her head, “Maybe he took care of me because of Xiao Yu’er.”

This time Su Ying was really surprised, and she asked hoarsely, “He treated you well because of Xiao Yu’er, this I really do not understand.”

Tie Xin lan explained slowly, “He said he hopes that Xiao Yu’er and I can… can be together.”

Su Ying asked, “Could he be Xiao Yu’er’s friend.”

Tie Xin Lan thought for a while before replying, “Sometimes they can really be considered good friends. If they know the other is in danger, they will rush there to save him regardless of their own life, but sometimes they will want to fight to the death.”

Su Ying suddenly understood who is the person she is referring to, and was stunned for a moment before mumbling, “This is indeed marvelous, absolutely marvelous.”

Su Ying’s eyes shimmered, and suddenly held her hands and said gently, “Once I saw you, I felt an affinity. If you do not dislike me, I wonder if you will accept me as a younger sister?”

Such a gentle request, coming from such a pretty girl’s mouth, who can resist it.

And so Tie Xin Lan became Su Ying’s elder sister.

The sun was shining brightly, the forest so dense and green, the chirping of the surrounding birds accompanying the sound of the flowing stream, and in the gentle breeze there seems to be the intoxicating fragrance of flowers.

Tie Xin Lan never imagined that she can be so happy. After all these time, she almost thought that she can never be happy again.

Su Ying held her hands and said with a smile, “Since you are now my sister, I cannot let you look for Xiao Yu’er.”

Tie Xin Lan asked, “Why?”

Su Ying explained, “Men are all cheap. The more anxious you are to look for him, the more conceited he will be. If you ignore him, he may come crawling to you instead.”

Tie Xin Lan smiled and asked, “Then… what would you want me to do?”

Su Ying replied, “You don’t have to do anything, just sit quietly and wait, and I will have a way to make him look for you.”

Tie Xin Lan lowered her head, “But you don’t even know what he looks like…”

Su Ying interrupted, “Now that you mention it, I remember now, is he a lad with very big eyes, and although his face is full of scars, but he did not look unpleasing at all. He keeps grinning and when he walks, he swaggers, as if he thinks he is very superior, very great.”

Tie Xin Lan asked in surprise, “How do you know, he even said he’s the smartest person in the world.”

Once she thought of Xiao Yu’er, Su Ying also felt a sweetness in her heart, and said with a coquettish smile, “If he said he has the thickest skin in the world, that would not be false at all.”

Tie Xin Lan asked, “When did you see him?”

Su Ying replied, “Not too long ago, only about two days ago.”

Tie Xin Lan sighed and said, “But this person cannot stay still for even a minute. You saw him two days ago, who knows where he could have gone to by now?”

Su Ying smiled, “Don’t you worry, as long as he’s in these mountains, I will have a way to find him.”

Without waiting for Tie Xin Lan to speak, she continued, “For safety’s sake, I will bring you to a place now. The master there can be considered my godfather. He may look very fierce, but he is kind hearted, especially towards me, he treats me extremely well.”

Tie Xin Lan laughed, “Even a god-sister like me would want to tear out my heart as a gift to you, much less your godfather.”

Su Ying pouted, “You want to give me your heart, haven’t you given it to Xiao Yu’er?”

She saw that Tie Xin Lan blushed, and laughed, “My godfather is surnamed Wei, if he knows you’re my sister, he will certainly take good care of you, but you must not forget, his looks is very frightening.”

Tie Xin Lan replied, “If I find him frightening, then I’ll just look less at him.”

Su Ying clapped her hands and exclaimed, “That’s right, this is really the best idea.”

She held Tie Xin Lan’s hands and walked out of the woods. The mountains were secluded, there seemed to be a sense of peace between heaven and earth, making one feel that being alive is a wonderful thing.

After walking for a while, Su Ying suddenly stopped and exclaimed, “Aiya! I almost forgot I have another appointment.”

Su Ying rolled her eyes and added, “Just walk up the hill from here, after a while you will find a large forest, that is where my godfather lives.”

Tie Xin Lan asked, “You… you want me to go alone?”

Su Ying replied, “It doesn’t matter if you go alone, you just have to walk into the forest and someone will receive you naturally.”

Tie Xin Lan said, “But they do not know me.”

Su Ying thought for a moment, and took down a pearl hairpiece from her head, saying “You just have to show them this pearl hairpiece, and say I told you to come, they will certainly be respectful towards you and arrange everything for you.”

Although Tie Xin Lan was unwilling, she still went.

She is now like a duckweed without hate, floating wherever the stream takes her. She does not even know herself what she should do, and can’t make any decisions.

Su Ying watched as she walked further away, and had just let out a soft sigh when someone suddenly commented, “What a pitiful, silly lass, cheated and not knowing about it.”

Someone else said, “Haha, this Miss Su did not sell her to you, so you came here pretending to be compassionate?”

The third person giggled, “I originally thought that that Tie lass was not bad, but when compared to this Miss Su, she literally looks like a stupid fool.”

The fourth person laughed loudly, “Our Xiao Yu’er must never have a stupid

fool as a wife.”

Amidst the laughter, four people suddenly appeared among the rocks and trees. The looks of these four people, is so strange that one wonders how they came to be together.

The first person had disheveled hair and a dirty face, and wearing oily and torn clothing, looking just like a poor beggar, but in his hands he held an expensive jade snuff bottle.

The second person had a round face, a round tummy, and although is not young, he looks like a little kid, and kept laughing loudly, like the Laughing Buddha.

The third person’s hair was full of pearl and jade hairpieces, the powder on the face half an inch thick, as if wearing a mask, making it difficult for one to tell if she’s originally pretty or ugly, old or young. Her make-up was obviously that of a woman, but she was wearing men’s clothing. However, on her feet she was wearing red satin embroidered shoes with pearls.

The fourth person is a man with a huge build, his eyes moving around, with a complacent look. However, his mouth is frightening large, as if it’s large enough to stuff his own fist in.

End of Chapter 92

Chapter 82

Chapter 93

Although Su Ying does not know that these four people are the famed Bai Kai Xin, Ha Ha'er, Du Jiao Jiao and Li Da Zui, but she has seen them before.

She has also seen with her own eyes, how these four dealt with Wei Ma Yi. Now that these four suddenly appeared together and surrounded her, so although her feelings are usually not shown on her face, the expression on her face changed unknowingly.

Li Da Zui laughed loudly, "Miss Su, you need not be afraid, my appetite has not been very good these two days, I must wait for at least a few more days if I want to eat you."

Du Jiao Jiao giggled, "Such a clever girl like her, even if you bear to eat her, I would not agree."

Bai Kai Xin commented, "From what I see, just eat her and be done with it."

Ha Ha'er said, "Good. Ha ha, you really harm others without benefit to yourself. If Li Da Zui eats her, how would it benefit you."

Bai Kai Xin added, "At least I can rest assured, and won't be sold by her."

Su Ying's eyes shimmered, and she suddenly smiled and said, "Have the four of you feeling disgruntled for Tie Xin Lan?"

Du Jiao Jiao sighed, "Come to think of it, that silly lass is actually quite pitiful."

Su Ying laughed, “If the four of you think that I am tricking her, why didn’t you stop her earlier?”

Bai Kai Xin made a face and said, “She is neither my daughter nor my wife, what business is it of mine whether she is tricked or not? Why should I be a busybody.”

Ha Ha’er added, “Besides, it’s not too bad to ask her to Wei Wu Ya’s place, haha, if Wei Wu Ya really took a liking for her, that would be so amazing beyond words.”

Su Ying asked in surprise, “Since that is the case, why have the four of you come then?”

Li Da Zui said, “We are looking for you to discuss a deal.”

Su Ying asked, “A deal? What deal?”

Ha Ha’er said, “Ha ha, naturally it’s a deal which will benefit both sides, but I wonder if you will agree.”

Su Ying smiled, “If it’s a deal which will benefit both, why would I not agree?”

Du Jiao Jiao replied, “Fine, let me ask you, you wish to marry Xiao Yu’er, right?”

Su Ying smiled and said, “It’s not just a wish, I must marry him.”

Du Jiao Jiao asked, “But are you certain that he will marry you?”

Su Ying smiled, “The less certain the matter, the more interesting it is, isn’t that so?”

Du Jiao Jiao said, “Good, now we can help you, and ask Xiao Yu’er to marry you, but you must promise us one thing as well.”

Su Ying rolled her eyes and asked with a smile, “You are confident that you can make him marry me.”

Du Jiao Jiao replied, “Of course we are confident, don’t you forget, we raised Xiao Yu’er, how can we not know his temperament.”

Su Ying asked, “What do you want me to do then?”

“Bring him into Wei Wu Ya’s cave alive, and bring him out again alive.”

Su Ying asked, “Why would you want to do that?”

Du Jiao Jiao explained, “Because we want to get him to take something.”

Su Ying thought for a moment and said, “What if he refuses to go?”

Du Jiao Jiao smiled, “He may not have gone, but now he has no choice but to go, because you have helped us, you have sent Tie Xin Lan there.”

Su Ying replied slowly, “What if I do not agree?”

Li Da Zui chuckled, “If you do not agree, my appetite will immediately become better.”

Su Ying smiled, “I believe that my flesh, no matter how it is cooked, will still be delicious, but I must advise you never to roast it. Such tender meat, it’ll be a real pity to roast. The best is stewed, the meat will then retain its freshness and tenderness.”

Li Da Zui and the rest looked at one another in dismay after hearing it, shocked motionless instead.

Li Da Zui laughed dryly, “You have just reminded me, the taste of stewed human flesh, is really the best in the world. It’s really been a long time since I

tasted it.”

Su Ying replied, “It’s best that you carve off the flesh from my body while I’m still alive, and when seasoning, you must not add vinegar, because human flesh is already slightly sourish.”

Li Da Zui laughed dryly, “Thanks for the advice. I have eaten countless humans, but I did not expect that you’re more of an expert than me.”

He took two steps, but Su Ying was sitting there calmly, not looking like one who is about to be eaten, but more like one who is about to be served food.

Du Jiao Jiao suddenly said, “Li Da Zui, come here for a moment, I have something to tell you.”

She pulled Li Da Zui to the side and whispered, “Have you eaten anyone like that before?”

Li Da Zui grinned and took a glance at Su Ying, who was sitting on the other side, and can’t help but scold softly, “This lass looks as if she likes to be eaten by me, I really do not know what she has up her sleeves.”

Du Jiao Jiao added, “Think about it, if she is not confident, why else would she be so calm, and it even seems that she’s afraid she’ll die too comfortably, even advising you to carve her alive. Think, would there be anyone like that in the world.”

Li Da Zui was silent for a moment before saying, “You mean…”

Du Jiao Jiao continued, “From what I see, let’s forget it. It’s not easy for us to live until now, we better not rock our boats and end up perishing in that lass’s hands. Now that would really be an injustice.”

Li Da Zui agreed solemnly, “Your words ring true.”

Su Ying laughed gaily and asked, “You’re still not coming over. Any more waiting and my flesh is going to grow old.”

Li Da Zui laughed loudly, “Your flesh is too sour, I can’t be bothered to eat it.”

“I did not expect that my flesh would be sour, could it be that I had too much vinegar (Consuming vinegar is another expression of jealousy*) usually.” She stood up slowly, and said, “Since you won’t give me face, then I can only take my leave.”

*http://channels.crienglish.com/chin...nt.aspx?id=5251

Suddenly Bai Kai Xin shouted, “I am different from him. He’s a glutton, I am lecherous. Gluttonous people are usually a little more gutless, but lecherous people are different…”

He walked towards Su Ying step by step and laughed loudly, “As the saying goes, the guts of a lecher are greater than heaven, you should have heard of this saying?”

Su Ying can’t help but took half a step back, but there was still a slight smile on her face and she said, “If you find bachelorhood a bore, I can be your matchmaker. At the stream over there, there’s a beauty bathing. Not only is she much prettier than me, but she is also more enticing and understanding.”

Bai Kai Xin giggled, “But I took a liking to you, I don’t want anyone else.”

As he spoke, his pair of large hands made a grab for Su Ying.

Even if there are a thousand marvelous plans in Su Ying’s mind, she can’t use even a single one now. When a woman meets an impatient lecher, there really aren’t any tricks that can be used at all.

With a ‘swoosh’, a piece of Su Ying’s clothes were torn off by Bai Kai Xin.

Right at this time, someone suddenly commented calmly, “How can a man bully a woman thus.”

The words were spoken calmly and slowly, but he appeared faster then the wind, quicker than lightning.

Bai Kai Xin only saw a shadow dropping down from heaven and with a shout, struck out with his palm.

Li Da Zui and the rest suddenly saw a blurred shadow, suddenly heard a crisp clap and Bai Kai Xin’s body is already hanging from a tree like a ball.

Taking another look at Su Ying’s side, there is now a suave and handsome young man. His clothes might look a little tattered, but it cannot hide the air of regality around him.

Although this person saved Su Ying, but when Su Ying saw him, her expression changed instead and she cried hoarsely, “Hua Wu Que!”

Hua Wu Que smiled slightly, his gaze swept over Li Da Zui and the others and said slowly, “Who else would like to strike?”

Li Da Zui and the rest were stunned as well. Although Hua Wu Que does not know them, but they do know Hua Wu Que.

They have seen with their eyes how Hua Wu Que, with his extraordinary skills, managed to scare the Murong Sisters away, and with a single stroke threw Bai Kai Xin onto the tree.

Li Da Zui laughed loudly, “We have long been irritated by this old lecher, now that sir has punished him, that is for the best.”

Du Jiao Jiao smiled as well, “A pity that sir’s strike is a little too light…”

Ha Ha’er added, “Haha, if sir can throw him further, so that we cannot see

him, that would be good."

Bai Kai Xin struggled, thinking to jump down from the tree, and shouted, "I just wanted to touch her, but that big mouth wanted to eat her."

They did not deal with the outsider, but ended up fighting amongst themselves instead. Hua Wu Que has never seen anyone like that, and can't help but sigh and said, "All of you are really quite loyal…"

Before he could finish his words, Li Da Zui is already rushing towards Bai Kai Xin with a roar. Bai Kai Xin could not seem to avoid him in time and was flown more than thirty feet away with one punch, and screamed, "Big mouth, you dare to hit others?"

Li Da Zui roared, "I've wanted to beat you to death twenty years ago!"

As he scolded, he ran after him, but who would have expected that with a hook of Bai Kai Xin's leg, he fell over as well and the two of them were entangled into a ball.

There were sounds of fists punching, angry shouts and curses, and although the curses were so bad that it should not be heard, the way they fought was even worse that it should not be seen.

Hua Wu Que had thought that they would be some martial arts exponent, but now it seems that they are even worse than those scoundrels who would fight to the death over three coins.

However Ha Ha'er was clapping and laughing loudly at the side, "Good, well fought, haha, grab his hair quickly. That's right, grab harder."

Du Jiao Jiao said, "But we can't let them go on fighting like this. If one of them got killed, won't we have to waste money on his funeral, better go and pull them apart."

By now Li Da Zui and Bai Kai Xin have moved their fight to behind the tree, and

the both of them were panting like dogs but refused to stop.

Du Jiao Jiao and Ha Ha'er hurried over as well and shouted at the same time, "Do not fight further… someone's going to get killed if you continue fighting!"

So the two of them went behind the tree as well, seemingly trying to stop the fight.

Hua Wu Que looked at them, and can only shake his head with a bitter smile. For him to meet such scoundrels, besides shaking his head, what else can he do?

Su Ying suddenly smiled a little and said, "Master Hua, you have been tricked by them."

Hua Wu Que asked, "What trick?"

Su Ying smiled, "Do you really think they were fighting?"

Hua Wu Que was stunned, "Could it be…"

Su Ying covered her mouth and laughed, "They were just thinking of a way to escape. Although the martial arts of those two are not that great, but if they were to really fight, none can touch even the other's finger within three hundred strokes."

Hua Wu Que leapt over, and truly not a shadow could be seen behind the tree.

On the trunk however, there were four lines; "Many thanks for showing mercy, sorry for leaving without a word, maybe we do not have guts, but it may not be true that we are not loyal."

Hua Wu Que was stunned for a moment, and can't help but said with a bitter smile, "Really tricked, I am ashamed."

Su Ying smiled, "Those four are full of tricks, and not many are like them. If a

gentleman like Master Hua was not tricked by them, now that would be a strange thing.”

Hua Wu Que smiled as well, “A gentleman, that may not be so as well… just earlier there were a few people who were tricked by me.”

Su Ying asked, “Oh? Who?”

After she asked that question, she understood and smiled, “That’s right, the ones who were tricked must have been Bai Shan Jun and his wife, is that right?”

Hua Wu Que nodded with a small smile, “It is them.”

Su Ying rolled her eyes and said, “Although I trapped you with drugs, but that drug is not harmful to humans, once exposed to the wind the drug will lose its effect. It’s just that they must have sealed your acupoint, so you still could not escape.”

She smiled slightly and continued, “Were you pretending to be very seriously poisoned, so that they would not be on their guard against you, but you were secretly using the internal energy of ‘Shifting Flower Grafting Jade’ to unseal your acupoint and escape.”

Hua Wu Que laughed, “Intelligence such as Miss’s is really rarely seen.”

The smile on Hua Wu Que’s face suddenly disappeared and he said with a sigh, “Although Miss may be unparalleled in your intelligence, but I do know there is someone… even if Miss meets him, I’m afraid even you would be at a disadvantage.”

Su Ying lowered her head and sighed as well, saying slowly, “You’ve spoken rightly, not only do I know who you are referring to, but I’ve already been at a disadvantage.”

Hua Wu Que can’t help but reveal a look of surprise on his face, and was about to ask further, when Su Ying suddenly smiled and said, “Even a gentleman like

Master Hua has learned to trick others, I'm afraid it's because you learnt from this person… have I spoken correctly?"

Hua Wu Que can't help but laugh, "This is called, being influenced by surroundings."

Su Ying said, "But a gentleman will always be a gentleman, that's why although I treated you that way, not only did you not seek revenge, but you saved me instead."

Hua Wu Que's expression suddenly turned solemn, "Do you know why I saved you."

Looking at the sudden change in his expression, Su Ying also felt a little startled, but she still said with a laugh, "I've already said, it's because you're a gentleman."

Hua Wu Que told her seriously, "I must tell you three things. Firstly, the secret to Shifting Flower Grafting Jade must not be revealed to outsiders. Whoever knows, there is only death! This is a strict rule of Floral Palace, no one is to be excused."

Although Su Ying was still laughing, but her laughter does not sound so melodious anymore.

Hua Wu Que continued, "Secondly, no matter what things the disciples of Floral Palace has to do, they must do it with their own hands, and never let others interfere nor ask others to do it for them."

Su Ying asked, "Third… thirdly?

Hua Wu Que said, "Thirdly, I am also a disciple of Floral Palace, no matter what, I cannot break the rules of Floral Palace."

Su Ying sighed, "So that means, you saved me because you want to kill me personally, right?"

Hua Wu Que turned his head around, not looking at her and said each word slowly, “Although I am unwilling, but it must be done.”

Su Ying replied, “Then… then I must tell you three things as well.”

Without waiting for Hua Wu Que to ask her, she continued, “Firstly, don’t you forget, I could have a lot of opportunities to kill you, but I did not, so won’t it be a sin if you kill me now?”

Although Hua Wu Que did not speak, he can’t help but sigh.

Su Ying continued, “Secondly, although I know the secret to Shifting Flower Grafting Jade, but I will never learn such martial arts, and I have never told anyone else. If you kill me, aren’t you being ruthless?”

Hua Wu Que seems to be slightly swayed.

Su Ying said, “Thirdly, don’t you forget, I am a woman, and defenseless as well. A big man like you bullying a weak woman, not only is that rude, but repulsive as well.”

Hua Wu Que unconsciously lowered his head.

Looking at the change in his expression, Su Ying’s eyes gleamed, but she said coldly, “If you must do such a sinful, ruthless, rude and repulsive matter, of course I can do nothing about it, but if Tie Xin Lan were to find out, she will certainly be disappointed with you.”

Hua Wu Que suddenly lifted his head.

Su Ying said slowly, “That’s right, Tie Xin Lan… she kept telling me, you are the most gentle, most courteous man. I believed her originally, but now…”

She deliberately sighed and stopped talking.

Hua Wu Que's fingers were already shaking a little, and he asked, "You… you know Tie Xin Lan?"

Su Ying lifted her head, and said nonchalantly, "I can't really consider us close, but we have just become sworn sisters."

Hua Wu Que looked as if he was suddenly whipped, and was stunned for a moment before asking while shaking his head, "Impossible… this is impossible! Where is she?"

Su Ying replied, "Even if I tell you where she is now, you would not dare to look for her."

Hua Wu Que's eyes shone and his expression changed, "Wei Wu Ya, you sent her to Wei Wu Ya."

Su Ying smiled, "Wei Wu Ya may treat others cruelly, but he's very nice to us sisters."

Hua Wu Que stamped his feet and suddenly turned around, and cried out, "The secret of Floral Palace, you will never tell another?"

Su Ying replied, "If there is a second person who knows, it's not too late for you to kill me then."

Hua Wu Que heaved a long sigh, "Although it may be too late then, but… but I still believe you. He stamped his feet again, and leapt forward.

End of Chapter 93

Chapter 83

Chapter 94

On seeing that Hua Wu Que is flying off, Su Ying suddenly said, “The one who was trapped with you is called Jiang Yu Lang, do you know him?”

Hua Wu Que paused and unconsciously sighed again, “I wish I do not know him.”

Su Ying sighed, “Why didn’t you kill him? Leaving this person alive will create endless troubles.”

Hua Wu Que said, “He is sick and injured now, how can I strike him?”

Su Ying laughed bitterly, “That is the problem with gentlemen, but if you do not have this problem I’m afraid even I…”

She saw that Hua Wu Que was moving again and immediately shouted, “Wait, I have something else to tell you.”

Hua Wu Que can only stop again and asked, “What is it?”

Su Ying suddenly smiled, “Tie Xin Lan was not wrong, you really is a gentle and adorable man, and you really treat her well.”

Everyone knows how impatient Xiao Yu’er is, and for an impatient person to just sit there and wait for someone, is almost killing him. Xiao Yu’er is as anxious as a cricket caught in fire, and kept on pacing the floor, kept on asking Herbalist Hu, “Are you sure Su Ying will certainly find her way here?”

Herbalist Hu was initially very confident and said with certainty, “Yes!”

But later, even Herbalist Hu became a little impatient, and can’t help but ask, “The poison I have, I’m afraid it’s about to react?”

Xiao Yu’er suddenly jumped up and shouted, “Let me tell you, if Su Ying does not come, I will never remove the poison for you.”

Herbalist Hu said with a bitter look, “Whether Miss Su comes or not, what business is it of mine, but if your poison reacts…”

Xiao Yu’er shouted, “If the poison reacts, you can only count yourself unlucky. You deserve death anyway, who told you to say that Su Ying will certainly come.”

He really is being unreasonable now, because he is almost going crazy from the wait.

Herbalist Hu was even more impatient than him. His clothes which has just dried, is now soaked with sweat.

Only Jiang Yu Lang does not look anxious at all. He sat there grinning, as if it doesn’t matter to him whether Su Ying comes or not. It turns out that he suddenly realized that the effect of that irritating medicine has dispersed, and he is slowly starting to feel comfortable, slowly beginning to feel his strength.

Xiao Yu’er was almost wearing out his eyeballs from looking out, but there were still not a single trace of Su Ying to be seen. Finally he can’t help but ask, “Let’s go, doesn’t matter if she’s coming or not, let’s go and look for her first.”

Jiang Yu Lang said slowly, “If we go and find Miss Su now and come back again to save Master Hua, I’m afraid Master Hua would already be…”

He deliberately paused in his speech, and as expected Xiao Yu’er can’t help but jump up and shouted, “Afraid what? Speak!”

Jiang Yu Lang said slowly, “To tell the truth, the place where I hid Hua Wu Que is not very comfortable, in fact it is a little stuffy, if after a long period of time, someone may be suffocated for all you know.”

Xiao Yu’er jumped up and was thinking of leaping over but only halfway before he forced himself to stop, and the look of anger on his face immediately replaced by a smile, and said with a laugh, “Brother Jiang is a smart person, you should know that if Hua Wu Que dies, it won’t benefit Brother Jiang at all.”

Jiang Yu Lang sighed and said, “Of course little brother knows, it’s just that…”

Xiao Yu’er immediately interrupted, “If you save him, I will be responsible of asking Su Ying to give you the antidote.”

Jiang Yu Lang gave a bitter smile and said, “Little brother has thought it over, and felt that everything in the world is just an illusion. Life and death, is just a dream. Little brother is not taking to heart whether the antidote can be obtained.”

For him to suddenly say all these great philosophies, Xiao Yu’er stared at him with huge eyes, “You… you are really Jiang Yu Lang? Marvelous, marvelous, so Brother Jiang is the reincarnation of an old monk.”

Jiang Yu Lang sighed again and said, “Although little brother no longer takes this human skin of mine to heart, it’s just that…”

He turned his head to look at Tie Ping Gu and said sadly, “It’s just that her… the love she has shown me, makes me unable to put it down or abandon it.”

Tie Ping Gu looked at him morosely, tears shimmering in her eyes, but does not know if it’s shock, love, belief or disbelief?

Jiang Yu Lang commented with a sigh, “After what happened this time, little brother will no longer have any intention of competing with brother in the martial arts realm, and can only hope to make a complete break from all enmity, and find a secluded forest with her and spend the rest of our lives peacefully,

but…” He continued with a pitiful laugh, “But even though little brother has this intention, alas I have committed too many wrongs in the past. Little brother also knows that Brother Yu will certainly not let me off, right?”

Xiao Yu’er said with a straight face, “As the saying goes, lay down the butcher’s knife and become a Buddha immediately. Little brother would admire Brother Jiang for doing that, so why would I find trouble for Brother Jiang?”

Jiang Yu Lang was silent for a moment before saying slowly, “Brother Jiang is knowledgeable, I’m sure you will know that there is a kind of wild fungus called Nu’er Hong (Blushing Girl).”

At this point in time Tie Ping Gu can’t help but ask, “What is this Nu’er Hong?”

Xiao Yu’er answered, “This Nu’er Hong is a kind of poisonous fungus which grows in extremely dark and damp places, and it’s said that no matter who eats it, they will contract a weird illness within three to five days.

Tie Ping Gu asked, “What weird illness?”

Xiao Yu’er explained, “There’s nothing much to this illness initially, just that one would feel sleepy and disoriented, like being lovesick. Unless he can find a bunch of ‘Er Po’ (wicked woman) grass every few months and eat it together with the roots, or else the lovesickness will become more serious, and in less than a year, that person would die.”

Although Tie Ping Gu thought that the plants were very well named and extremely interesting, but once she thought that if a person were to unfortunately eat this kind of poisonous fungus, that would certainly be not interesting.

Xiao Yu’er laughed and continued, “For Brother Jiang to suddenly mention this at this point in time, could it be that you want little brother to suffer from such lovesickness as well?”

This time Jiang Yu Lang did not even bother to deny and just replied simply,

“Exactly.”

However Xiao Yu’er smiled and said, “Such a precious thing, where can you find it in such a short time?”

Jiang Yu Lang replied, “If Little brother were to look for it elsewhere, even if I search for another three to five years, I might not be able to find it, but coincidentally, there are some nearby. As soon as Brother Yu agrees, little brother will pick it for Brother Yu immediately.”

Tie Ping Gu finally can’t help but cried hoarsely, “Are you crazy? How can you say such words? He… how can he possibly agree to it?”

Jiang Yu Lang ignored her, and continued slowly, “Brother Yu must know as well that the ‘Er Po’ grass, although is as rare as Nu’er Hong, but it can be grown, and little brother coincidentally knows the way to grow it.”

Xiao Yu’er rolled his eyes, but did not speak.

Jiang Yu Lang continued, “After this matter is done, little brother will immediately find a secluded place to live, and spend my effort growing the Er Po grass for Brother Yu. If Brother Yu wants to stay healthy, naturally you will try your best to save my life.”

Only now did Herbalist Hu knows that his grand plan is to use this matter to threaten Xiao Yu’er, so that Xiao Yu’er will not create trouble for him in future.

But isn’t this thinking too naïve, and Herbalist Hu almost wanted to laugh, and looking at Jiang Yu Lang he secretly sniggered, “Do you think Xiao Yu’er is a fool? This kind of matter, even if you kill me, I will not agree to it, must less this Xiao Yu’er who is more slippery than a fish.”

It seems that Xiao Yu’er had been rolling his eyes for half a day before he replied with a grin, “You do not trust me, so how can I trust you? How would I know if you will grow the Er Po grass for me, how would I know if I will really get to eat Er Po grass?”

Jiang Yu Lang sighed, “Little brother’s poison has also not been cleared, it’s still very easy for Brother Yu to kill me.”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “But what if I cannot find you?”

Jiang Yu Lang said with a laugh, “If Brother Yu really wants to look for me, even if little brother goes to high heaven or underground, I still would not be able to hide from you.”

For a smart man like Xiao Yu’er, how can he actually utter such stupid words, and it made Jiang Yu Lang’s reply appear even more marvelous, making it seem like he is talking nonsense.

But Xiao Yu’er seems to believe him, and only asked another question, “If I eat this Nu’er Hong, you will save Hua Wu Que?”

Jiang Yu Lang assured, ‘If little brother were to go back on my words, Brother Yu can take my life anytime.”

Xiao Yu’er sighed and said, “All right, I agree.”

Xiao Yu’er actually agreed. No one would have agreed to such an arrangement, but he actually agreed.

Herbalist Hu looked at Xiao Yu’er in a daze, and secretly thought, “Lunatic, lunatic, so this person is actually a lunatic. Others said that people who are too smart, will sometimes become lunatic, it seems that such a saying is not wrong at all.”

Tie Ping Gu also stared in shock, stunned into speechlessness.

Jiang Yu Lang really took out a bunch of extremely vibrant looking Nu’er Hong. Xiao Yu’er really swallowed it with a grin.

He wiped his mouth and actually laughed loudly, “Excellent, excellent. I did not expect this Nu’er Hong to be one of the most delicious things on earth. I have never tasted such fresh and tender thing in my life.”

At this point in time, Jiang Yu Lang can’t help but reveal a look of glee in his eyes, but he deliberately sighed and said, “The beauties of an era, are usually jinxes on the country or city, the most fatal poison, are also usually one of the delicacies in the world. Only good medicine, are bitter to the taste.”

Xiao Yu’er grabbed his hand and said with a laugh, “Nice words are usually used to trick others, Brother Jiang better speak less, and hurry to save a life instead.”

Where the stone house is situated, is already extremely secluded. Jiang Yu Lang took Xiao Yu’er and walked further, and the paths became more and more winding and dangerous.

But his illness have stuck again, after two steps and he’ll need to catch his breath, after another two steps and he’ll trip and fall. His legs were like the strings of the pipa (musical instrument), which kept vibrating.

Xiao Yu’er is almost going crazy with impatience, and in the end he can’t stand it any longer so he carried him up and said, “Where is that place actually, tell me and I’ll carry you there.”

Jiang Yu Lang replied, “How can I trouble Brother Yu thus.”

Xiao Yu’er gave a snort of laughter and said, “It’s all right, your bones are very light, it’s not a drain of energy at all for me to carry you.”

Tie Ping Gu stamped her feet and said, “I beg the two of you, can you please stop bickering.”

Jiang Yu Lang sighed, “How would I dare to bicker with Brother Jiang, it’s just that…”

He suddenly stopped talking, and his finger pointed upwards, saying “Can Brother Yu see that hole up there?”

Xiao Yu’er followed the point of the finger and looked up, and saw that on the side of the mountain overgrown with moss, there really is a dark hole, and there’s a stone ledge protruding out from the mouth of the hole.

Jiang Yu Lang said, “This place is not bad, right?”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “Why didn’t you use a rock to seal the mouth of the hole?”

Jiang Yu Lang replied, “Master Hua is unable to walk now, I’m not afraid of him running away anyway.”

Xiao Yu’er suddenly glared at him and raised his voice, “If the hole is not blocked, how could he have suffocated to death?”

Without any change in his expression, Jiang Yu Lang said nonchalantly, “Maybe he won’t be suffocated, but in a cave in the wild mountains, there might be some poisonous snakes or ferocious beasts….”

Before he could finish his words, Xiao Yu’er had already leapt up.

Jiang Yu Lang added, “Why don’t Brother Yu put me down first to take a look and see if this is the right place.”

The stone ledge was also overgrown with moss, making it extremely slippery. Xiao Yu’er put him down and he dared not even stand up, but crawled to the mouth of the hole to take a look. He suddenly shouted, “Master Hua, little brother has come to save you, can you hear?”

Only his echo could be heard in the hole, but there was no reply from Hua Wu Que at all.

Jiang Yu Lang furrowed his brow and said, “Master Hua, you… you… what’s

wrong with you, why….”

Xiao Yu’er stamped his feet and dragged Jiang Yu Lang back so that he can lie at the mouth of the hole. Looking inside, the hole is so dark that one cannot even see one’s extended hand. He cannot see anything at all.

Jiang Yu Lang asked, “Brother Yu, can you see Master Hua?”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “What tricks are you trying to play, why…”

Before he could finish his words, he suddenly felt a huge force knocking onto him from the sole of his feet. Before he could even scream, his body had fallen straight down the hole like a dropping leaf.

The Jiang Yu Lang who could not even walk earlier, has now become so full of energy. He jumped up and dashed to the mouth of the hole and shouted, “Brother Yu… Xiao Yu’er…”

Xiao Yu’er did not reply and after a moment, there was a ‘plonk’ sound. This hole is terribly deep.

Jiang Yu Lang raised his head heavenward and laughed loudly, “Xiao Yu’er… Xiao Yu’er, you are not my match after all, you have been tricked by me after all.”

Tie Ping Gu looked up from the bottom. What happened on the ledge, she could not see clearly as well, and now that she heard Jiang Yu Lang’s conceited laughter, she exclaimed in surprise, “What have you done to Xiao Yu’er?”

Jiang Yu Lang laughed loudly, “If I don’t kill him, must I wait for him to kill me then?”

Tie Ping Gu was stunned and furious, and asked hoarsely, “Have you not changed for the better? Weren’t you thinking of spending a peaceful life with me, why…”

As she spoke, she wanted to jump up as well but just as she was jumping, she suddenly remembered that she's only wearing Herbalist Hu's long coat, and there's nothing inside. If she jumps up, Herbalist Hu would get a good view from the bottom. So she can only drop down quickly, cover the long coat and kept stamping her feet.

Herbalist Hu was also shocked still, and after a moment, can't help but ask, "Since Xiao Yu'er has already been poisoned by Nu'er Hong, won't you be able to use this to threaten him in future, and make him obey you. Now that you've killed him, won't it be a pity."

Jiang Yu Lang laughed, "What you do not understand, Xiao Yu'er will not understand as well, that's why he got tricked. That Nu'er Hong is only a lure, so do you understand now?"

Herbalist Hu was stunned again. He felt that the malevolence and deviousness of Jiang Yu Lang's plan, and the viciousness and shrewdness in which it was executed is something that one would never even dream of.

Jiang Yu Lang laughed loudly and said, "Xiao Yu'er oh Xiao Yu'er, you keep saying that you are the smartest man on earth, now do you know who should be the smartest person in the world?"

Herbalist Hu can't help but ask, "But what about Hua Wu Que? Has he been killed by you as well?"

Jiang Yu Lang laughed, "Did you think Hua Wu Que was stupid? Let me tell you, he knows how to trick others as well. He deliberately pretended to be dumb so that you will not be on your guard against him, and he took the opportunity to escape."

Herbalist Hu was stunned for a moment before asking with a bitter smile, "Then, what about Bai Shan Jun?"

Jiang Yu Lang said, "At that time I had a very bad relapse and was in a daze. I did not look properly, seems like he went after Hua Wu Que."

Herbalist Hu suddenly jumped up and exclaimed, “Oh no, my poison has not been nullified, I still need him for the antidote.”

Jiang Yu Lang suddenly smiled icily and said, “Very well, you can go down and look for him then.”

Amidst the icy laughter, his palm suddenly extended and aimed it towards Herbalist Hu.

Herbalist Hu had just jumped up the ledge and although he could have avoided this attack, but he did not have the chance to catch his breath yet. If he were to jump down immediately, he will be able to avoid the attack, but he has not changed the flow of his breathing, so even if he can avoid being injured from the jump to the ground, his stance will certainly be unstable. If at that time Jiang Yu Lang pressed on his advantage and jumped down as well, it would be difficult for him to avoid this attack.

It’s extremely slippery on the ledge, so Herbalist Hu deduced that since Jiang Yu Lang is attacking on the ledge, his lower body must be unstable and if his lower body is unstable, the strength of his attack must not be very strong then.

Jiang Yu Lang struck with his palm, but Herbalist Hu did not avoid it at all and risked taking the attack, but his leg kicked up, aiming a sweeping kick towards Jiang Yu Lang’s lower body.

This move is defending by attacking, by attacking the enemy to save oneself and is the epitome of an excellent move. However, if one is not an experienced martial arts exponent, one would never dare to use such a risky maneuver.

Jiang Yu Lang laughed, “What a good Second Master Rabbit, you really have some capabilities!”

He suddenly leapt up, both his legs already kicking in midair.

Herbalist Hu never imagined that at a place like this, he would dare to use a move like that, and in his surprise, he can’t avoid the attack even if he wanted to.

It must be known that Herbalist Hu did not have time to recover after the kick he executed earlier, so his lower body would definitely be unstable. The tip of Jiang Yu Lang's foot is already aiming towards his throat.

He can only use his hands to block it, but the strength in the hands cannot be compared to the strength in the legs. Even if he managed to receive this kick, he will certainly be kicked down the hole by Jiang Yu Lang. But if he can grab Jiang Yu Lang's foot, he would be dragged down together as well. This move may be almost unscrupulous, but under the circumstances, he couldn't care less.

Who would have expected that while in mid-air, Jiang Yu Lang would still have enough energy to change his stance.

In the blink of an eye both his legs had executed seven to eight kicks. Not only was Herbalist Hu unable to grab his feet, but he can't even tell from which direction the kicks are coming from.

Only now did he realize that not only is Jiang Yu Lang viciousness and cunningness incomparable, but his martial arts is beyond his expectations as well. He knows that he is unable to defend any further, and can't help but heave a long sigh, his body suddenly tumbled on the rock and actually jumped down the hole with the fathomless bottom.

Tie Ping Gu stood there in a daze, not moving at all. Jiang Yu Lang deliberately showed off and turned a somersault in midair before dropping next to her like a large butterfly but she did not seem to have noticed.

Jiang Yu Lang grinned, "Did you see the few kicks I executed earlier?"

Without even looking at him, Tie Ping Gu said dully, "Saw it."

Jiang Yu Lang continued, "That is the essence of Northern Sect's Springing Leg technique 'Eight Styles of Crouching Fish' and Hu's Castle's 'Shadowless Kick', Wudang's 'Meteor Steps', Kunlun's 'Flying Dragon Stance', the combination of the unique skills of four kinds of martial arts with changes made. I've given it a nickname, called 'Kicking others to death without paying with life, unparalleled

devil's leg in the world', don't you think it's marvelous?"

Tie Ping Gu replied coldly, "Extremely marvelous."

Jiang Yu Lang smiled, "You have such a highly skilled martial artist as a husband, aren't you happy?"

Tie Ping Gu suddenly turned her head and ran away.

Jiang Yu Lang hurriedly flew after her and blocked her path, saying with a smile, "What are you doing? We have not been together for a long time, and now that my illness is cured, we can show some attention to each other, why are you ignoring me?"

Tie Ping Gu said with an icy smile, "You better find someone else to pay attention to. A clever and highly skilled hero like you, how can I be compatible with you?"

Jiang Yu Lang smiled, "Find someone else, find who? The only person I like is you!"

He hugged Tie Ping Gu up and kissed her face.

Tie Ping Gu did not even struggle but stamped her feet and said, "You… you… you won't let go?"

Jiang Yu Lang said with a grin, "I'm not letting go, I just won't let go, even if you hit me to death, I still can't bear to let go."

His hand has already reached into the robe, and Tie Ping Gu's struggles finally became less vigorous. She said, "Let go of me first, I want to ask you something."

Jiang Yu Lang grinned, "Ask away, I'm not covering your mouth anyway."

Tie Ping Gu asked, "Let me ask you, you've killed Xiao Yu'er, aren't you happy

enough, why must you kill Herbalist Hu as well?”

Jiang Yu lang replied, “I saw the way that lad was looking at you lecherously and I almost went crazy. I wished I could kill him there and then.”

Tie Ping Gu asked, “You… you killed him, because of me?”

Jiang Yu Lang laughed, “I don’t know why either, but when someone else take even a look at you, I get very angry. Besides, he even had intentions on you… besides me, whoever dares to touch even a finger of yours, I will kill him even if it cost me my life.”

As he spoke, his hands moved even more.

The look of fury on Tie Ping Gu’s face has long disappeared, and there’s a heady blush on her cheeks instead. Not only is her voice shaking, even her body is shaking as well.

Jiang Yu Lang pressed his lips to her ears and said two sentences softly.

Tie Ping Gu immediately blush and said with a struggle, “No, not here.”

Jiang Yu Lang replied, “There’s not even a ghost here, who would see, come on…”

Before he could finish his words, and without even knowing why herself, Tie Ping Gu suddenly flew out of his arms and at the same time let out a scream.

Jiang Yu Lang was also shocked and unconsciously looked up the direction she has flown. He saw Tie Ping Gu’s pale limps struggling in the air, but her body was shooting up like a rocket, and actually flew about seventy, eighty feet up and landed right on a tree.

This tree is growing slanting out of the side of the mountain, and Tie Ping Gu’s robe was coincidentally hooked onto a branch, her naked body hung up like a

sheep.

Jiang Yu Lang could not even imagine how she was hung up, and can't help but cry out, "Jump down quickly, I'll catch you."

However, Tie Ping Gu seemed to be stunned from the scare and dare not even move. There was not a trace of blood on her face and the look in her eyes was extremely terrified. But her eyes were not looking at Jiang Yu Lang.

Jiang Yu Lang can't help but follow the line of her sight and only now did he realize that somehow, right in front of him stood a person in white with long flowing hair.

Her snow white clothes were dancing in the wind but her body stood there unmoving like a log, and on her face she wore a mask carved out of wood, looking like a spirit who had suddenly emerged from underground.

With a simple sweep of her hand and she can throw Tie Ping Gu up eighty to ninety feet, and make her land right on the tree as well. The kind of strength and martial arts required for such a feat will shock anyone who hears of it.

When a man is just getting excited and if someone were to spoil his moment, that person would certainly be in a fury. Jiang Yu Lang only felt a ball of fire in his stomach and totally forgot about all other things and he yelled furiously, "What's the problem with you, why must you find trouble with me."

The person in white still stood there, not moving, not talking as well. Jiang Yu Lang was even more furious and can't help but strike out with a fist.

The person in white still did not move, but the sleeves of her robe swept slightly, and the punch that Jiang Yu Lang was executing suddenly turned back without knowing why.

With a 'bang', that punch actually landed on his own head.

Jiang Yu Lang's face immediately swelled up, but his brains is now clearheaded

from the punch. He felt his legs almost giving way and stammered, “You… can you be the Princess of Floral Palace?”

The person in white commented icily, “A person like you, are you fit to utter the four words Princess of Floral Palace?”

Jiang Yu Lang fell to his knees and uttered, “I am really not fit to say these four words, I deserve to be beaten.”

He really is a smart person. Without waiting for the person in white to strike, he had already started hitting himself, and he really used a lot of strength, his hits heavy.

The person in white looked on coldly, not speaking at all.

End of Chapter 94

Chapter 84

Chapter 95

She did not speak, so Jiang Yu Lang dare not stop. His fair and handsome face became like a pig's liver in no time at all, with fresh blood flowing down the corner of his mouth.

Tie Ping Gu was heartbroken on seeing the scene and can't help but cry out, "Princess, please let him off."

Only now did the person in white lift her head and said, "You are pleading for him, but who will plead for you?"

Tie Ping Gu lowered her head and said, "Your servant knows that she has sinned greatly, and dare not beg Princess for forgiveness."

The person in white replied, "Very good, then let me ask you, where have you brought Xiao Yu'er?"

Tie Ping Gu replied, "Xiao Yu'er, he…"

She suddenly remembered that if she tells the truth, if Princess were to find out that Xiao Yu'er had already died in the hands of Jiang Yu Lang, Jiang Yu Lang may be torn into a million pieces immediately.

The person in white asked, "What's wrong with Xiao Yu'er? Why don't you speak?"

Tie Ping Gu replied, "He… he is here as well, but I'm afraid he's along the

eastern side.”

The person in white replied, “Fine, I will go and look for him now, and I hope you are telling the truth.”

By now Jiang Yu Lang has collapsed onto the ground, but he still dare not stop.

The person in white chided, “Enough, stop.”

Jiang Yu Lang struggled to climb up and kowtowed, “Thank… thank you Princess.”

The person in white said, “Now, I want you to keep an eye on her here, if anyone hurts her, I will take your life, if anyone takes her away, I will take your life as well, understand?”

Jiang Yu Lang replied, “I understand.”

When Jiang Yu Lang lifted his head, that person in white had already disappeared like a spirit.

He can’t help but sigh and said with a bitter smile, “That is the Princess of the Floral Palace, so the Princess of Floral Palace is like that, I did not expect that I will meet her today, I’m afraid I’m in luck.”

Tie Ping Gu sighed, “Luckily it’s only the Younger Princess today. If it’s the Elder Princess, I’m afraid both of us would be dead by now.”

Jiang Yu Lang looked into the distance, lost in thought.

Tie Ping Gu said, “When she comes back, we still would not be able to live. You’ve killed Xiao Yu’er, she will never let you off.”

Jiang Yu Lang asked, “Why? Didn’t she want Hua Wu Que to kill Xiao Yu’er?”

Tie Ping Gu replied, “That’s right, but she will only allow Hua Wu Que to kill Xiao Yu’er personally, but won’t allow anyone else to touch even a finger of Xiao Yu’er. Even she herself, will never hurt Xiao Yu’er.”

Jiang Yu Lang exclaimed in surprised, “But why is this so? This is really strange!”

Tie Ping Gu replied, “I can’t guess the reason as well. The sisters are already strange to begin with. No matter what, you must let me down quickly. Half my body is numb, she has sealed my acupoint.”

Jiang Yu Lang sighed, “Even if I save you, we still would not be able to escape from her clutches.”

Tie Ping Gu said, “We must at least try. When she comes back, it’ll be death anyway. If we can escape now and find a place to hide, we may be able to spend a few more happy days.”

Jiang Yu Lang lowered his head and did not speak. After a while, he suddenly lifted his head and said, “But if you do not tell her Xiao Yu’er was killed by me, she won’t kill me, right?”

Tie Ping Gu was stunned, “Maybe…”

Jiang Yu Lang continued, “Since you have already lied to her earlier, why don’t you continue lying?”

Tie Ping Gu stammered, “But… but I…:”

Jiang Yu Lang said gently, “Since you are going to die anyway, why must you make me die with you? If you are really good to me, you should sacrifice yourself to save me, I will never forget you then.”

Tie Ping Gu was totally stunned. She really cannot imagine that Jiang Yu Lang would actually say such inhumane words.

Suddenly a person was heard chuckling, “Marvelous, marvelous, I have not heard such marvelous words for a long time.”

Another person said with a laugh, “If this brother here is a girl, Xiao Mi Mi will certainly feel ashamed on seeing him.”

A third person said, “Haha, I’m afraid even two Xiao Mi Mi cannot be compared to one of him.”

A fourth person laughed loudly, “Ever since the Ouyang brothers died, you people keep worrying that you can’t find someone to make up the numbers, now isn’t there a ready one right here.”

The laughter was continuous, and four people walked out.

These four people, one has an especially large mouth, one looks neither male or female, one is full of smiles, and the last one looked like a beggar, but carried a hemp bag on his back.

This hemp bag kept moving, and groans were coming out from inside the bag. The groans sounded extremely strange as well.

The person who groaned, sounded as if he’s in pain, in discomfort, but also sounded like he’s very comfortable and the groans make one’s heart itch on hearing it.

The one who looks like a beggar carried a branch in his left hand, and used the branch as a whip, whipping the bag once in a while.

As he whipped, the groans in the bag became even more overwhelming, and the person mumbled something, which sounded like she’s almost pleading, “Please… whip harder, please…”

That beggar looking person put down his whip instead, refusing to hit any further, and instead smiled at Jiang Yu Lang, “There’s actually someone who loves to be beaten, have you seen it before?”

Jiang Yu Lang has really never seen anyone like that, nor even heard of anyone like that. Although he is very good at adapting to situations, right now he was totally stunned.

Tie Ping Gu, who was on the tree, was feeling ashamed and anxious, and unknowingly passed out.

The four who came, were without a doubt Li Da Zui, Du Jiao Jiao, Bai Kai Xin and Ha Ha’er. But who is the person in the hemp bag who likes to be beaten?

Li Da Zui had already walked to Jiang Yu Lang and said with a wide smile, “Friend, what’s your surname?”

Although Jiang Yu Lang does not know their background, on seeing that they all looked surreptitious, he dared not offend them.

He coughed dryly before replying with a condescending smile, “I am Jiang Ping, and I wonder what your great names might be.”

Li Da Zui laughed, “Brother may be young, but I’m sure you’ve heard of the name ‘Ten Evils’?”

Ha Ha’er added, “Haha, look at his mouth, you should know who he is.”

Jiang Yu Lang’s gaze traveled to their faces, his palms unconsciously sweating.

Du Jiao Jiao giggled, “Little brother, don’t you worry, we have no bad intentions coming to see you.”

Jiang Yu Lang suddenly smiled as well, “You are all seniors in the martial arts realm, naturally you will not find problems with an unknown junior like me. Not

only am I very much assured, but to be able to see the glory of seniors, I am extremely happy."

Du Jiao Jiao giggled, "Look, this child can talk so well, as if he has honey on his lips."

Ha Ha'er added, "Haha, someone like that, even a monk like me will take a liking to him! No wonder the little lady on the tree is willing to sacrifice her life for him."

Jiang Yu Lang replied with a straight face, "That lady on the tree, although is acquainted with me, but we're just acquaintances, there's no romantic connection between us at all, Elder must be joking."

Du Jiao Jiao added, "Since you are acquainted, she is being hung naked on the tree, why aren't you saving her?"

Jiang Yu lang sighed, "Although I feel like saving her, but… but a respectable distance should be kept between men and women. Now that her modesty has unfortunately been insulted and she is naked, if I were to save her, won't it be very inconvenient."

Du Jiao Jiao commented, "So this means that you really are a gentleman."

Jiang Yu Lang replied, "Although I have roamed the martial arts realm, but I have not forgotten about courtesy and righteousness."

Du Jiao Jiao suddenly started giggling loudly, and pointing at Jiang Yu Lang, said, "Look, isn't he something. Forget about Xiao Mi Mi, even if the Ouyang Brothers were to see him, they would have to make him their teacher."

Ha Ha'er added, "Haha, the words of the Ouyang brothers, out of three sentences at least one will be true, but he only said four and a half sentences, out of which four sentences are lies."

Jiang Yu Lang replied, "Elder is joking again, how would I dare to lie in front of

Elder.”

Ha Ha’er said, “You dare not lie? Haha, that is another lie.”

Du Jiao Jiao interrupted him and said coquettishly, “Every word you spoke is true? Fine, then let me ask you, if you are Jiang Ping, then there’s a little rascal called Jiang Yu Lang, who would he be then?”

For a lie to be busted right in front of him, and still maintain a composed look, maybe only one or two people out of ten thousand would be able to do it. Naturally Jiang Yu Lang is one of them. His face did not turn red, his expression composed, he laughed instead.

Du Jiao Jiao looked at him, as if finding him more and more interesting, and also asked him with a smile, “What are you laughing about?”

Jiang Yu Lang replied, “To lie in front of Elders, won’t it be akin to flaunting the axe in front of Lu Ban’s door (*Lu Ban’s building skills and invention of useful tools won him reverence as the founder of builders), selling the ‘Hundred Family Names’ (http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hundred_Family_Surnames) in front of Confucius. For me to bite off more then I can chew, isn’t it funny then?”

Ha Ha’er clapped his hands and laughed loudly, “Well said, well said, haha, this flattery is heaped right on us, and heaped just appropriately so as well.”

Jiang Yu Lang added, “Before Elders spoke to me, I’m sure you have found out all about my background.”

Du Jiao Jiao smiled, “That’s right, not only do we already know that you’re called Jiang Yu Lang, the precious son of the Hero of Jiang Nan, but we also know that your little lover was originally from Floral Palace.”

Du Jiao Jiao continued, “Do you know why we are so concerned about you.”

Jiang Yu Lang smiled slightly, “Could it be that Elders wanted to do something

for me?”

Du Jiao Jiao laughed, “If I have a daughter, I’d rather marry her off to Li Da Zui than to you. At least Li Da Zui won’t eat her up, but you, I’m afraid you won’t even spit out the bones after eating a person.”

Jiang Yu Lang smiled, “Elder, you think too highly of me, how can I compare to Elder Li?”

Li Da Zui replied, “You need not be polite. At the most I eat humans one by one, but you like to swallow them in groups. Those people in ‘Double Lion Escort’, weren’t they swallowed up by you in one night?”

Without any change in his expression, Jiang Yu Lang smiled, “Why did Elders do such a thorough check on me?”

Du Jiao Jiao replied, “Maybe you do not know, but ever since the Ouyang brothers died, there’s actually only nine left out of the ‘Ten Evils’.”

She continued, “Besides the Ouyang brothers who have already died, Compulsive Gambler seemed to be slowly changing for the better these years and is becoming a good boy. Mad Lion Tie Zhan’s problem seems to be getting worse as well, when no one is fighting with him, he’ll fight with himself, and that ‘Mesmerizing others without paying with life’ Xiao Mi Mi, who knows which cave is she hiding in now. So ever since we left the mountains, we suddenly realized that the name ‘Ten Evils’ is slowly losing it’s ability to scare others in the martial arts realm.”

Naturally Jiang Yu Lang knows where Xiao Mi Mi is…. Xiao Mi Mi has already been trapped by him and Xiao Yu’er in the underground prison, and she can forget about coming out in this lifetime.

But he just smiled slightly and said, “Could Elders be looking for someone to take over the Ouyang brothers’ place?”

Du Jiao Jiao replied, “That’s right, if we want to boost up the name of the ‘Ten

Evils' again, we must find a new force to be reckoned with."

Jiang Yu Lang's gaze shimmered, and he smiled, "But this person is indeed difficult to find. From what I know, there's not many in the martial arts realm that is qualified to be seen on the same level as Elders."

Du Jiao Jiao looked at him and smiled, "There's one right in front, you are one of them."

Jiang Yu Lang hurriedly replied, "I dare not live up to it."

Ha Ha'er laughed, "Haha, you need not be so polite. You are so young and yet you have such accomplishments. In another six months, I'm afraid even us will lose to you."

Jiang Yu Lang looked as if he's startled by all the attention, and kept saying, "I can't, I can't. For Elders to think so highly of me, how can I repay you?"

Li Da Zui clasped his hands and chortled, "Interesting, interesting. For you to say something like that, this shows that you're really an interesting person, and worthy of us thinking highly of you."

Bai Kai Xin suddenly said, "But lad, you must not be tricked by them. They want you to join them only because they want you to do something for them."

This person's nickname of 'harming others without benefit to oneself' is really true. He did not speak for half a day but once he opened his mouth it's certainly to pull others down.

Jiang Yu Lang smiled, "Elder may have your good intentions, but if I can have the chance to help Elders, it'll be my honor. Elders please do not hesitate to say what you want of me."

Du Jiao Jiao replied, "There's a very formidable person in the martial arts realm, called Wei Wu Ya. He lives right in these mountains, naturally you would know that, but do you know which honored guest is now in his rat hole?"

She suddenly changed the subject towards Wei Wu Ya, and the smile on Jiang Yu Lang's face disappeared immediately. He coughed a little and said with a dry laugh, "If there is only one person in this world whom I want to have nothing with, he would be Wei Wu Ya. Even if everyone else in the world is dead, I still will not want to have anything with him. Whether there's a honored guest in his cave, I will never know, nor would I want to know."

Du Jiao Jiao replied, "A pity that this honored guest is someone you know."

Jiang Yu Lang can't help but feel shocked, "I know him? How would I know him?"

Du Jiao Jiao continued, "Wei Yu Ya does not have a single friend in his life at all, even those in the 'Twelve Zodiacs', will look as if they've seen a ghost when they see him, and scramble to avoid him."

Jiang Yu Lang laughed, "This is precisely the saying, the rat crossing the street and everyone is shouting to hit it. I have seen a few who are willing to be in cahoots with poisonous snakes and ferocious beasts, but to be friends with a rat, I'm afraid there's not even one."

Du Jiao Jiao smiled, "You're wrong. There is one person who is willing to be friends with a rat."

Li Da Zui added, "In fact this person has already twisted Wei Wu Ya around his little finger, no matter what he says, Wei Wu Ya will listen to him. Wei Wu Ya has never treated someone else so well in his whole life."

Jiang Yu Lang smiled, "So it would mean that this person is really quite capable."

Du Jiao Jiao asked, "Do you know who this person is?"

There is finally a look of curiosity on Jiang Yu Lang's face and he said, "I really cannot think of a friend who is so resourceful."

Du Jiao Jiao giggled, "Who said he is your friend… you may not have such a resourceful friend, but you have a resourceful old man, have you forgotten?"

Now Jiang Yu Lang was truly stunned, and exclaimed hoarsely, "It's my father?"

Du Jiao Jiao replied, "That's right. Wei Wu Ya's honored guest, is the Hero of Jiang Nan, Jiang Bie He."

Jiang Yu Lang was stunned for a moment before heaving a long sigh, "I did not expect my father to be friends with Wei Wu Ya." Although he was sighing, but he can't help but reveal the gleam of happiness in his eyes.

Du Jiao Jiao smiled, "What's wrong with making friends with Wei Wu Ya, with such a stong backing, even if the Floral Princesses were to find trouble with him, he need not fear."

Jiang Yu Lang almost couldn't control himself and wanted to laugh, but he probed, "What does Elders want me to do then?"

Du Jiao Jiao and Li Da Zui exchanged a look, and Li Da Zui said, "If you become Wei Wu Ya's honored guest, then naturally you can move around the cave with ease..."

Jiang Yu Lang asked, "Could it be that Elder would like me to find out something?"

Li Da Zui clasped his hands and laughed loudly, "That's right, to talk to someone with brains like yours, is really a joyful thing."

Li Da Zui and Du Jiao Jiao exchanged another look, and Du Jiao Jiao smiled, "It's not a very big matter, but, we have a few chests and it seems like they have landed in Wei Wu Ya's hands. Why don't you go and take a look if the chests are

really there? If it's there, then where is the location, and after that we can think of a way together to get them out."

Jiang Yu Lang's gaze shimmered, obviously this matter is getting interesting, but he still maintained a nonchalant look on his face and said with a slight smile, "I wonder what kind of chests they are? What is inside the chests?"

Ha Ha'er said, "Haha, it's just a few tattered chests, they're black and look awful and heavy. No one else will ever have such awful chests, so you'll know once you see them."

Du Jiao Jiao smiled, "There were originally some jewels in the chest, but Wei Wu Ya could have already taken the jewels out."

Jiang Yu Lang asked, "Since the chest is empty, then why must Elders still look for it?"

Du Jiao Jiao sighed, "In another's eyes, they may just be tattered chests, but to us, they are priceless treasures."

Jiang Yu Lang's eyes shone even brighter and he asked, "Priceless treasures?"

Ha Ha'er clarified, "Haha, this priceless treasure, you can't even sell it for a silver tael. It's just that the paint on the chest is slightly different, so in our eyes they become extremely precious."

Du Jiao Jiao asked, "Do you know what that paint is made of?"

Without waiting for Jiang Yu Lang to reply, she continued, "It's made of blood, the blood of our enemies. We are getting old, so old that even our ambitions have been eroded. Only those few boxes, can let us reminisce about our glorious days, so no matter what, we must not let them end up in the hands of others."

Jiang Yu Lang seemed stunned, and did not speak for a long moment.

Du Jiao Jiao said, “If it’s the common treasures, no matter how much it is, if it has landed in Wei Wu Ya’s hands, we would have given up as there’s no point in us risking our lives. Even if we were waiting for money to spend, we would snatch it from others, won’t it be much easier?”

Li Da Zui clenched his fists and said softly, “But if these few boxes were lost, it can be considered the end of our whole lives. Little brother, no matter what, you must help us, we’ll certainly not forget to reward you.”

Jiang Yu Lang lowered his head and stared at his hands, as if he has never seen this pair of hands before. He was totally lost in thought.

Li Da Zui asked, “Little brother, do you not trust our words?”

Jiang Yu Lang replied, “Since those chests are worthless in other’s eyes, Wei Wu Ya will certainly not take a liking to it as well. If he has taken out the jewels in the chests, he may have thrown the chests away long ago.”

Du Jiao Jiao said, “We have thought of this question as well, therefore, if Wei Wu Ya has already discarded the chests, then we’ll trouble little brother to find out where he has thrown the chest.”

She continued with a smile, “Although you are one of us now, we would not let you work in vain. Once the job is completed, we will certainly think of a way to get ten thousand gold taels and a few thousand beauties to let you enjoy yourself, and we guarantee to help you keep all your secrets.”

Jiang Yu Lang’s face was full of joy and he asked, “Does Elder want me to go immediately?”

Du Jiao Jiao replied, “Of course the faster the better.”

Jiang Yu Lang can’t help but take a glance up the tree, “What about her…”

Du Jiao Jiao said, “Now you should know, if you are together with her, there’ll only be trouble and nothing good will come out of it.”

Jiang Yu Lang sighed and said, “Even if there’s something good, it’ll not be as much as the trouble it brings.”

Du Jiao Jiao smiled, “Exactly, besides, although her looks are not bad, and her figure is good as well, but as soon as you finish the job, I’ll be in charge of finding ten other girls who are even more mesmerizing then her.”

She leaned towards Jiang Yu Lang’s ears and said with a coquettish smile, “And I can teach them a few things first, skills that will make you ecstatically delirious.”

Jiang Yu Lang’s beam is so huge that he can’t even keep his mouth closed and said, “Since that is the case, I will go immediately. But, after I complete the task, how should I contact Elders?”

Du Jiao Jiao replied, “Regardless of your success, three days later, just take a walk around the mouth of the cave, we’ll think of a way to speak to you.”

Jiang Yu Lang agreed, “All right, that’s settled then, it’s a deal.”

Without saying anything more, without taking another look at Tie Ping Gu, he immediately left like the wind.

Li Da Zui looked as Jiang Yu Lang left, and furrowed his brows, “This lad left so quickly, I think it’s a little risky.”

Ha Ha’er said, “Haha, that’s because he’s afraid the Floral Princess will come and settle scores with him, so he wants to hide in the rat hole quickly.”

Bai Kai Xin said icily, “I don’t think he really believe all our words, if you think that he’ll really look for the chests for you, you must be dreaming.”

Du Jiao Jiao smiled, “What I’ve said is reasonable, why shouldn’t he believe it? Besides, this lad is greedy for both wealth and beauty, ten thousand gold taels and ten beauties, it will certainly move him.”

Bai Kai Xin said, “Even if he finds the chest, he may not give it to you.”

Du Jiao Jiao laughed, “If he doesn’t give it to us, what would he want to do with a few empty chests?”

Ha Ha’er laughed loudly, “That’s right, that lad is a smart person. He’ll just have to use a few empty chests to exchange for gold and beauties, he will certainly do such a lucrative job.”

Bai Kai Xin can’t help but laugh, “After the exchange, I must tell him what’s so good about those old and tattered chests, we must see how his face change.”

Ha Ha’er replied, “Haha, his expression then will certainly be uglier than your butt.”

As the mention of the word butt, Bai Kai Xin’s eyes drifted towards the top of the tree and with narrowed eyes he smiled and said, “Hey! Little Miss, the wind is very stong up there, aren’t you afraid of catching a cold?”

Tie Ping Gu was still unconscious, but Li Da Zui furrowed his brows and said, “You’re still carrying one on your back, are you having designs on someone else again?”

Bai Kai Xin grinned, “This little miss is all alone, and of all people she had to meet a heartless lover. She’s really pitiful, if I do not comfort her, who will.”

Du Jiao Jiao laughed, “Very well, comfort her quickly then. But when the Floral Princess comes knocking, do not blame us for not helping you.”

With a cough, Bai Kai Xin grinned, “To speak the truth, such a piteous person like her, I really cannot comfort much as well. Besides, I already have one in my bag, and although she’s a little older, but the older ones are more experienced.”

Du Jiao Jiao laughed, “Now you finally understand the ways between men and women, a pity that men are better when they are young and strong, or else I…”

Bai Kai Xin chortled, “Luckily I am older, or else if you take a liking to me, that would really be the world’s greatest trouble.”

End of Chapter 95

Chapter 85

Chapter 96

Du Jiao Jiao stared at him, “What trouble?”

Bai Kai Xin smiled, “There’s not much other trouble, it’s just that, no one can figure out when you’re a man and when you’re a woman. If I got the timing incorrect, won’t it be very dangerous.”

Li Da Zui clasped his hands and laughed, “Marvelous, marvelous, I really did not expect that a crude person like you can actually say something so marvelous. Could it be that you have slowly been influenced by me.”

Bai Kai Xin replied, “That’s right, the ancient people have rightly said that birds of a feather, flock together, and ‘being influenced by surroundings’. After spending says and nights with such a learned person like Brother Li, even my speech will naturally become more refined.”

These two were born loggerheads and although they are both listed in the Ten Evils, but they do not see each other frequently. But once they meet, they either quarrel or fight.

Bai Kai Xin has a lot of enemies in the martial arts realm as well, but because of Li Da Zui, he’d rather hide himself like a dog in the martial arts realm than to hide in the Valley of Evil.

For him to say such words now suddenly, even Li Da Zui was stunned.

Du Jiao Jiao laughed, “Have you two rascals had enough? If you have, then let’s go back quickly!”

Ha Ha'er added, "That's right, I'm afraid Big Brother Du is waiting anxiously there now. Haha, the two of you should know that if Big Brother Du gets angry, it's nothing to laugh about."

Bai Kai Xin sighed, "I did not expect a cold person such as Big Brother Du would actually treat that Xiao Yu'er so well. He's afraid that Xiao Yu'er won't be able to find his way and insisted on waiting there. If he knows that Xiao Yu'er can never arrive, he will certainly be very sad. We better return quickly so that we can console him."

Li Da Zui chortled, "You really think that Xiao Yu'er has been killed by that Jiang Yu Lang?"

Bai Kai Xin stared at him, "Didn't you hear it earlier?"

Li Da Zui laughed, "Don't you worry, if Jiang Yu Lang can really kill Xiao Yu'er, then he won't be just a little rascal, he'll be a living god."

Ha Ha'er added, "I'm afraid even if a living god won't be able to kill Xiao Yu'er. Haha, I'll be the very first to put my mind at ease."

Du Jiao Jiao smiled, "If Xiao Yu'er is really dead, I will at least shed a few drops of tears, why would I be so happy instead?"

Bai Kai Xin asked, "Since that is the case, why do you want to harm him, and deliberately left those marks to lure him to that rat hole. Don't you intentionally want him to die in the hands of that huge rat?"

Du Jiao Jiao laughed, "That's because we know that even that huge rat cannot kill him."

Bai Kai Xin smiled icily, "I don't think you're really that kind hearted? You're just afraid that he will join Yan Nan Tian to harm you, so you want to use another's hands to kill him."

Li Da Zui angrily replied, “Why doesn’t anything decent even come out of your dog’s mouth?”

Bai Kai Xin angrily retorted, “You do not dare admit to what I’ve said?”

Du Jiao Jiao giggled, “It doesn’t matter even if we admit it, but let me tell you, even if he was killed because of us, I will still weep for him…”

At this time there really was a drop of tear dropping from the top of the tree. Luckily they have already left the woods, and no one noticed it.

Tie Ping Gu did not really faint, but, with her in such dire straits, what else can she do but pretend to faint? Every word that they spoke, she heard them all.

She did not expect Jiang Yu Lang to be so hypocritical towards her, and all the more she did not expect that Jiang Yu Lang would actually abandon her so easily.

Her heart has long been broken. It’s only when they have all left that she can’t contain herself any longer and started bawling. She really hoped that she could die immediately.

She cannot imagine why she would have so many feelings for that little beast.

Maybe she has tolerated the loneliness in Floral Palace for too long, suppressed her feelings for too long, so that once it erupted, she cannot contain it. She had never known the taste of tears, but now her tears cannot stop flowing.

Without knowing how much time has passed, she suddenly realized that a pair of eyes were staring at her unblinkingly, but this pair of eyes is not as greedy or hateful as other’s.

Not only is this pair of eyes beautiful, but as bright as the first star in a spring night, making anyone who sees it want to bow down to it. Tie Ping Gu has never seen such alluring eyes.

The owner of this pair of eyes smiled.

She asked gently, “Miss, what’s your surname?”

Tie Ping Gu can’t help but reply, “My surname is Tie.”

Tie Ping Gu looked at her unworldly grace, looked at her elaborate clothes, and thought of her own situation and her tears dropped again.

That young girl said gently, “You must not wish to see me at a time like this, but you need not feel bad. There are too many bad people in the world, and girls like us, will certainly be bullied. If you know that there are others in the world who are in worst situation than you, maybe you won’t feel so bad.”

Tie Ping Gu can’t help but ask, “Can there really… really be people who are even more unfortunate than me in the world?”

The young girl replied, “Why won’t there be? Do you know, in every city in the world, there will be a few pitiful girls, who are being violated by people they do not know, or even people they hate, and they even have to flatter those very people who violate them.” She really knows how to console others, because she understands the human heart very well.

Tie Ping Gu really stopped crying and after a moment, can’t help but ask, “Can you help me down? I will certainly… certainly be very grateful to you.”

The young girl sighed, “You don’t have to thank me. I would like to save you too, a pity that I can’t even climb up a ladder. Such a tall tree, I get dizzy even looking at it.”

Tie Ping Gu asked, “You… don’t you know even a little martial arts at all?”

The young girl laughed, “You seemed very surprised, right? Actually there are more people who do not know martial arts in the world than those who do. Most normal people don’t know martial arts.”

Tie Ping Gu heaved a long sigh and said dejectedly, “Then you… you better leave quickly!”

The young girl replied, “At least I can do something for you. Are you cold? Why don’t I start a fire under you?”

Tie Ping Gu only remembered her shame, her sadness and her fear earlier, and totally forgot about the cold. Only now did she realize that she’s shivering from cold, and the breeze blowing on her body is like a knife slicing through.

The young girl really picked some dried branches, took out a very exquisite flint, and started a fire under the tree.

The young girl smiled, “My name is Su Ying.”

“Su Ying, you are Su Ying?” Tie Ping Gu was startled again, and cant help but cry out in alarm.

Tie Ping Gu was silent for a moment before asking, “Have you come here looking for a person?”

Su Ying was a little surprised as well and asked, “How do you know? Can it be that you… you know the person I am looking for as well?”

Tie Ping Gu replied dejectedly, “That’s right, I know him.”

Su Ying sighed and said with a bitter smile, “It seems that all the pretty girls in the world know him, don’t you think it’s strange. It seems that I have quite a few competitors.”

Tie Ping Gu replied, “I will not compete with you, I’m afraid no one will ever compete with you in future as well.”

Before she could finish her words, her tears fell again.

Su Ying's face colored suddenly, and she asked hoarsely, "What do you mean by that."

Tie Ping Gu weeped, "He… he has been killed!"

Su Ying was totally stunned, then she suddenly laughed loudly, "You must have made a mistake, how can Xiao Yu'er possibly be killed? Who in the world can kill him? If he doesn't kill others, it's already a blessing."

Tie Ping Gu replied sadly, "I did not believe that anyone in the world can kill him either, but this time I must believe it, because this time I saw it with my own eyes."

Su Ying started shaking, and she stammered, "You saw with your own eyes, who… who killed him?"

Tie Ping Gu replied, "That person is called Jiang Yu Lang, he pushed Xiao Yu'er into the hole on the cliff over there. The hole is extremely deep, and besides, Xiao Yu'er has been poisoned…"

Before she could finish her words, Su Ying had already started running towards the cliff.

The cliff is ten thousand feet high, it's edges as sharp as a knife, and that hole is at least a hundred feet from the ground. Although there may be places where one can stop on inside, but even someone who is good in lightness skill may find difficulty leaping up, much less Su Ying who does not know martial arts at all.

The usually calm Su Ying, can't help but lose control this time.

Tears is already flowing down her face and she stamped her feet, "Why didn't I learn martial arts? Who said that martial arts is useless…"

Tie Ping Gu asked, "Can you go up?"

Su Ying replied, “No matter what, I must think of a way to get up there, and I will find a way!”

As she spoke this sentence, her tone suddenly became very firm. After saying these words, she wiped the tears away immediately, and refused to cry again.

Even if she wanted to cry, it will have to wait, because she knows now is not the time to cry, she knows that the eyes cannot help her solve any problems at all.

Tie Ping Gu saw the change in her, and saw her determination, and can’t help but secretly sigh, “I cannot imagine a defenseless girl would actually have such strong confidence, such determination, but me?...”

Herbalist Hu has a stroke of luck.

The cave that he dropped into, is really deeper than he imagined. The outside of the hole is at most hundred over feet high, but the inside is at least six times deeper.

To drop down from a height of five hundred feet, even if this person’s lightness skill is unparalleled in the world, he still can’t avoid being smashed to pieces.

Herbalist Hu thought that he will certainly perish! Before he had time to think a third thought, there was a ‘splash’ and he fell into the water. It turns out that there’s a pond at the bottom of the hole.

Herbalist Hu was initially stunned, but shock quickly turned into joy. Since he did not fall to his death, naturally Xiao Yu’ er did not fall to his death as well.

He wanted to jump up from the water, but the water was deep and he went headlong into the water, drank two mouthfuls of salty and dirty water which almost chocked him.

He heard Xiao Yu’er chortling, “I was just feeling lonely. What joy that a friend would drop down from the sky. A pity that there’s no wine here, so I can only

offer you two mouthfuls of dirty water.”

The cave may be very dark, but there’s still some light coming from the top. Herbalist Hu rubbed his eyes and saw Xiao Yu’er.

Xiao Yu’er was sitting on a huge rock at the side. His stomach is filled with the incurable Nu’er Hong, and he had been pushed into this hole where even someone with wings will find difficulty escaping from, and yet he was grinning. He doesn’t look worried at all, but very happy instead.

Herbalist Hu swam towards the rock and climbed on it as well and can’t help but ask, “You… aren’t you worried?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “If being worried can get me out of here, I’ll start getting worried long ago.”

Herbalist Hu was silent for a moment before he asked dumbly, “Can the antidote still be used after touching water?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Don’t worry, I kept the antidote well hidden, water can’t get at it.”

Herbalist Hu coughed and laughed dryly, “Now that Brother Yu is in the same danger as I, we can be considered friends who are on the same boat. Shouldn’t Brother Yu give me the antidote now.”

“No.”

Herbalist Hu asked, “Wh.. why?”

Xiao Yu’er grinned, “As long as I don’t give you the antidote, you will continue to obey me. Even if I were to have a son in future, he will not be as obedient as you. With such an obedient person next to me, isn’t that a very happy thing, so why should I give you the antidote?”

Herbalist Hu said with a tortured look, “But… but I…”

Xiao Yu’er said, “Rest assured, your poison will not react so soon.”

They naturally spoke softly, but because of the sound traveling in a huge empty space, and with the water in the cave, if they were to raise their voices a little louder, anyone outside would hear them immediately.

But they did not expect that the words spoken outside can be heard inside as well. The people outside, on seeing that there’s no one around, and will certainly not expect that there’ll be ears along the next wall, will naturally not be on their guard when they speak.

When Jiang Yu Lang was uttering sweet nothings to Tie Ping Gu, Xiao Yu’er can only sigh and shake his head. There were a few times Herbalist Hu wanted to speak but was stopped by him.

Suddenly he heard Tie Ping Gu’s cry of alarm, and Xiao Yu’er thought that she was being bullied by Jiang Yu Lang, but by now Jiang Yu Lang’s cry of alarm can be heard as well.

Later, they heard the conversation between Jiang Yu Lang, Tie Ping Gu and the Floral Princess. After hearing the conversation, Xiao Yu’er was really stunned.

Only now did he realize that Tie Ping Gu is a disciple of the Floral Palace.

After a while, Xiao Yu’er mumbled, “So Tie Ping Gu turns out to be from Floral Palace, no wonder she slipped away once she saw Hua Wu QUe the other day! Then that ‘Mr Copper’ and “Madam Wood’ must be the Floral Princesses in disguise. No wonder the Floral Princess wants Hua Wu Que to obey ‘Mr Copper’ and ‘Madam Wood’. But why would the Floral Princesses want to disguise themselves?”

He thought through everything, and got a headache from thinking about it. The more he thinks, the more confused he gets.

The thought of the awe inspiring and frightening Floral Princess, would actually be tricked by him, so much so that she was waiting outside the toilet for him to poop, he can't help but laugh.

Suddenly Herbalist Hu laughed, "Excellent, excellent. The Floral Princess had just left, and a few of the 'Ten Evils'has arrived. I think that lad Jiang Yu Lang will be in for a hard time."

Only now did Xiao Yu'er's attention returned and after listening for a while, he beamed, "Those who came are 'Neither man nor woman' Du Jiao Jiao, 'Does not eat human head' Li Da Zui, 'Daggers amidst laughter' Ha Ha'er and 'Harming others without benefit to oneself' Bai Kai Xin."

Herbalist Hu asked, "Do you know them very well?"

Xiao Yu'er replied, "I'm afraid there's no one else in the world who knows them better than I do."

Herbalist Hu was suddenly alert and he asked, "Then why don't you ask them to rescue you quickly?"

Xiao Yu'er smiled, "Wait, I want to listen on what they are up to."

When they revealed that Wei Wu Ya's honored guest is Jiang Bie He, Xiao Yu'er was surprised and realized that on the day he was seriously injured, the person who came to Wu Ya's cave is Jiang Bie He. If not for the fact that Jiang Bie He came, Su Ying might not be able to save him. Once he thought of that, Xiao Yu'er can't help but smile again. He heard Herbalist Hu comment, "That's strange, why do they place so much importance on a few chests?"

Xiao Yu'er replied with a laugh, "The downfall of youth is ambitions, the downfall of old age is greed. The older one gets, the more importance is placed on wealth, to the point that they forget that once they die, they cannot take even a single cent with them."

Herbalist Hu replied, "But all they want is just a few chests."

Xiao Yu’er smiled and did not speak further, but there was a glint in his eyes. After a while, he heard Du Jiao Jiao and the rest talking about him.

Once he heard that the directional signs were really laid by them to lure him into a trap, Xiao Yu’er’s expression changed unconsciously. He was silent for a moment before shaking his head with a bitter smile, “I did not expect that it’ll be as Su Ying deduced, even you want my life. But do you know, I’ve long found out the secret about Uncle Yan, but I did not think of taking your lives at all?”

He sighed a few times, and was suddenly happy again, and laughed, “But if a person were to die and can get a few drops of tears out of Du Jiao Jiao, that would really not be easy.”

What Xiao Yu’er is most capable of, is that however dire the situation is, he will surely find a way to make himself happy.

But Herbalist Hu has no such capability at all. Naturally he now knows that Xiao Yu’er will not ask Du Jiao Jiao and the rest to save them.

Herbalist Hu stood there dejectedly, unable to get his spirits up at all.

Xiao Yu’er tapped his shoulder and smiled, “Don’t worry, even if they do not save me, there will be someone else who will.”

Herbalist Hu was about to ask further, when Su Ying’s conversation was heard from the outside.

When they heard the later part, Herbalist Hu can’t help but sigh and say, “Miss Su is really devoted to Brother Yu. With the affection of such a beauty, Brother Yu you are indeed lucky.”

However Xiao Yu’er sighed as well, “If you think that is luck, then I can give it to you.”

Herbalist Hu only smiled, and after a while, can’t help but ask, “But I really

cannot think what plans she can think of.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “If you can think of the plans she has, you won’t be so unlucky now.”

Suddenly they heard Tie Ping Gu exclaim, “Miss Su, the stone ledge is extremely slippery, you won’t be able to climb up.”

From her tone of voice, it seems that she was feeling anxiety over Su Ying, and obviously Su Ying must be having a hard time climbing up. Xiao Yu’er can’t help but sigh, “Her legs must be fair and tender, if they were scratched, it’ll really be a pity.”

Herbalist Hu sighed as well, “She looks so weak, but little did I expect her to have such strong determination.”

Xiao Yu’er said, “But for a smart person like her, to use such a stupid method, is really quite disappointing.”

By now Su Ying’s voice cannot be heard at all from outside, but Tie Ping Gu kept screaming in alarm once in a while. Obviously Su Ying is in the dangerous position of falling down the cliff any minute.

Herbalist Hu smiled, “Once a woman has affections for a man, there will never be any reasons, besides, women’s reasoning is something that men will never understand.”

Xiao Yu’er sighed, “That’s right, once I bump into women, I can only count myself unlucky!”

Suddenly Tie Ping Gu cheered, and Su Ying can be heard saying loudly, “Xiao Yu’er, I’ve come to find you, can you hear me?”

The words were coming from the hole at the top, and with the echo in the empty cave, not only can Xiao Yu’er hear her, his ear drums were almost shattered by the volume. Herbalist Hu was about to say something when Xiao

Yu’er covered his mouth and whispered, “You must never reply her, or else she might jump down instead.”

Su Ying’s face can be seen at the mouth of the cave, but because the hole is too deep and the lighting in the cave is dim, so Xiao Yu’er can see her, but she cannot see Xiao Yu’er.

Xiao Yu’er can even see that her face has been scratched, and her whole face is wet, either from sweat, or tears.

Su Ying cried out, “Xiao Yu’er, why don’t you answer me? You… how can you be so useless, that even a little beast like that Jiang Yu Lang can kill you, isn’t that such an embarrassment.”

Xiao Yu’er whispered close to Herbalist Hu’s ear with a smile, “Now she’s trying to antagonize me into talking, but I won’t be tricked by her.”

Su Ying cried out again, “… I spent so much effort saving you, and you died just like that, aren’t you letting me down, you… you really disappoint me.”

Xiao Yu’er still would not speak. By now there is nothing that Su Ying can say, and she can’t help but start bawling. Herbalist Hu saw that usually her every move is so elegant, and no matter what happened, her expression was always calm, and never did he imagine that she could bawl like a child as well.

Tie Ping Gu said, “Didn’t you say so yourself earlier, that there are more unfortunate people than us in the world. Even I have stopped crying, so why do you cry?”

Su Ying cried bitterly and said, “Don’t worry, once I cry this time, I will not cry in future, that’s why I must have a good cry this time. You need not console me.”

Without knowing how much time has passed, Su Ying’s cry not only did not stop, but her cries became even more heart wrenching, as if she is really trying to

cry out all her tears at once. Tie Ping Gu exclaimed, “Please, do stop crying, if you continue to cry, I… I’ll also…”

Without even finishing her words, she started crying as well.

Su Ying suddenly stopped crying and said, “Although we’ve only met, but we’ve an affinity. I hope that in future you will think of a way to block this hole with a rock, so that no one can disturb us.”

Tie Ping Gu stammered, “You… how can you die? From what I know, you and Xiao Yu’er have not made any pledge to each other, why do you want to die for him.”

Su Ying replied, “I don’t feel that I’m dying for him, I just feel that there’s no meaning in living.”

Herbalist Hu was moved and said, “Brother Yu, things have come to this, aren’t you going to speak?”

Xiao Yu’er sighed, “Do you really think she will die? She’s just scaring people. Don’t you know, a woman’s greatest capability is to cry, create a scene and threaten to die.”

“But she…”

Before he could finish his words, they suddenly heard Tie Ping Gu scream. Su Ying is already falling down from the top.

End of Chapter 96

Chapter 86

Chapter 97

Only now was Xiao Yu'er truly shocked. He used all his strength to leap up, thinking of carrying Su Ying's body in mid-air, but the force of Su Ying's fall was too great and although Xiao Yu'er's martial arts has greatly improved, he still can't catch her. There was a splash and the both of them fell into the water at the same time.

A shower of water droplets flew out and it was only after a while that Xiao Yu'er can be seen coming out from beneath the water, drenched. Carrying Su Ying, he jumped onto the rock.

Herbalist Hu can't help but smile and said, "She's not deliberately saying those words to scare people, right?"

Xiao Yu'er sighed and said with a bitter smile, "This lass is really different from other women. I can't help but begin to suspect if she really is a woman."

He had thought that Su Ying must have fainted from fear. Who would have expected that although 'this lass's' body is more fragile than a peach flower in spring, but her mind is stronger than an old bamboo in winter. Not only did she not faint, but she seems quite comfortable, quite intrigued, her large eyes staring unwaveringly at Xiao Yu'er.

Xiao Yu'er was surprised for a moment, and suddenly released his hold and threw Su Ying onto the rock, shouting, "Let me ask you, what do you mean by this. I'm not in any dog arse way related to you, why do you want to die for me? Do you want me to be grateful to you? Be your slave for the rest of my life?"

Su Ying replied slowly, “I do not wish for you to become my slave too, I only want you to become my husband.”

Xiao Yu’er was again shocked, and pointing at Su Ying, asked Herbalist Hu, “Did you hear that? Did you hear what the lass said? Such a thick skinned woman, I’m afraid you’ve never seen one like that?”

Su Ying smiled, “No matter what, he has finally seen one now, his eyes have certainly feasted.”

Xiao Yu’er stared at her for a long time before suddenly sighing and while shaking his head, said “Let me ask you, you are willing to die for a man, but this man gets a headache once he sets eyes on you, don’t you feel even a little bad at all?”

Su Ying replied, “Why must I feel bad? I know that although you keep saying you have a headache, but in your heart you must like it a lot. If you do not care about me at all, why did you jump up to catch me just now?”

Xiao Yu’er replied coldly, “Even if it’s a dog who dropped down, I would still go and catch it.”

Su Ying smiled, “I know you deliberately said such vicious and harsh words, deliberately pretended to be cold and fierce because you are afraid, so I will never be angry.”

Xiao Yu’er stared and said, “Just what am I afraid of.”

Su Ying replied slowly, “You’re afraid I’ll climb over you in future, and even more afraid that you will fall madly in love with me in future, so you deliberately made yourself that way to protect yourself, because you want others to think that you’re a heartless person. But if you’re really heartless, then you won’t have done all these.”

Xiao Yu’er jumped up, “Bullshit, absolutely bullshit.”

Su Ying laughed, “When a person’s heartfelt feelings are revealed by someone else, he’ll certainly be upset. Although you’re scolding me, but I don’t blame you.”

Xiao Yu’er stared at her for a long moment before mumbling, “Heaven, heaven, why did you let me meet such a woman.” As he spoke, he suddenly somersaulted into the water and hitting his own head, said “Finished, finished, I’m finished. If a man were to meet such an emotional woman, he can only shave his head and become a monk.”

Su Ying smiled, “Then there will be one more monk who drinks and eat meat, and a nun who drinks and eat meat.”

Even Xiao Yu’er can’t help but feel surprised, “Nun who drinks and eat meat?’

Su Ying explained, “When you’ve become a monk, naturally I can only become a nun. When I am a nun, naturally I will be one who drinks and eat meat, or could it be that only monks are allowed to drink and eat meat but not nuns?”

Xiao Yu’er groaned and sunk into the water.

Herbalist Hu almost wanted to burst out laughing from witnessing this scene and thought to himself, “This Xiao Yu’er usually can antagonize everyone with his words, I cannot imagine that he has met his match today. This Miss Su is really intelligent, she had known long ago that if a woman wants a man like Xiao Yu’er to give in to her, she must use the same method on him.”

Xiao Yu’er’s head is still submerged in water, and he still refused to come up. It seems that he’d rather drown than die of exasperation.

Su Ying ignored him as well, and asked Herbalist Hu instead, “You should be able to see by now that he likes me.”

Herbalist Hu can only agree.

Su Ying smiled, “Think about it, if he doesn’t like me, why would he hide his

head in the water I used to wash my feet and still not find it smelly?”

Before she could finish her words, Xiao Yu’er shot out of the water like an arrow.

By now the water has stared to rise, and only the rock on that side is still above water, with Su Ying sitting right in the middle of the rock. If Xiao Yu’er doesn’t sit next to her, he will have to jump back into the water again.

Xiao Yu’er can only sit next to her. Su Ying asked with a laugh, “Aren’t you the smartest person in the world? Why were you tricked by Jiang Yu Lang?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “I liked it, I liked being tricked by him, what business it is of yours?”

Su Ying said gently, “I know you will never be tricked by him, you’re just deliberately making fun of him, right?”

She is really smart, she knows that she has really irked Xiao Yu’er’s temper, and if she doesn’t stop now, Xiao Yu’er would really be furious with her. That would have turned the tables on her. So she suddenly changed her tack, suddenly became indescribably gentle.

Xiao Yu’er said coldly, “You need not flatter me. This time I was really tricked by him. For a person to be tricked once in a while, it’s nothing.”

Su Ying knows that he is slowly simmering down, but it’s best that she do not antagonize him further, so without waiting for Xiao Yu’er to speak, she turned to ask Herbalist Hu, “You must know what this is all about, you tell me.”

Herbalist Hu coughed, “This will have to start from Hua Wu Que, he…”

When he reached the part about ‘Nu’er Hong’, Su Ying can’t help but exclaim, “He really ate that ‘Nu’er Hong’?”

Herbalist Hu sighed, “He really ate it, because he ate this poisonous plant, that’s why he thought Jiang Yu Lang would not harm him further, that’s why he got pushed down here.”

Su Ying said, “So he’s doing this just to save Hua Wu Que, that’s why he was willing. For a person to sacrifice himself to save his friend, it’s really noble, really noble…”

As she spoke, she suddenly started shivering, and finally said hoarsely, “But didn’t you think that Hua Wu Que might have left long ago, and Jiang Yu Lang was just threatening you with a lie.”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Of course I thought of that.”

Su Ying’s voice quivered, “But do you know that once the poisonous effects of this ‘Nu’er Hong’ were to start, it’ll be worse than death.”

Looking at her anxious expression, Xiao Yu’er was no longer angry, and grinned, “My life has been too happy, if someone can make me suffer a little, that’s not too bad as well.”

Su Ying stared at him with wide eyes, “You… you’re not worried at all?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “You’re already feeling worried for me, so why must I feel worried for myself?”

Su Ying was stunned for a moment before sighing, “When everyone thought that you will be tricked, you were not, when everyone thought that you won’t be tricked, but you got tricked instead. Sometimes I really wonder what tricks you have up your sleeves.”

Xiao Yu’er crossed his leg and laughed loudly, “My tricks, is to make sure others can’t second guess me. If a person’s actions are always within other’s expectations, there’s not much difference between living and dying for him.”

Su Ying replied with a bitter smile, “That’s right, when you die, there will

certainly be a lot of people who will be shocked, but a pity you will not be able to see it then.”

Xiao Yu’er grinned, “Not necessarily, I may be peeping from inside the coffin for all you know.”

When Su Ying jumped down, Tie Ping Gu fainted as well.

These past few days, she has really suffered, and her body is extremely weak, unable to withstand any more excitement.

In her state of semi-consciousness, she seemed to have heard some conversation from the hole, but she cannot be sure. She no longer have any faith in herself.

She remembered the quiet days while in the Floral Palace. Although at that time she thought her days were too empty, too lonely, but now… now she would give anything to have that kind of life again.

She again remembered the two days she spent with Xiao Yu’er in the cave. In that dark cave, there were no food, no water, not even hope. Although her body was suffering from the torture that no one would be able to withstand, but her spirit was happy. As long as Xiao Yu’er was holding her hands, all pain would have melted into sweetness.

Of course, she thought of Jiang Yu Lang as well. Although Jiang Yu Lang was evil, was hateful, but there were times when he was adorable, especially his gentle touches, tender honeyed words were unforgettable.

With so much love and hate mixed up in her heart, how can death possibly be so easy? Streaks of tears were on Tie Ping Gu’s face, and even the strong wind was unable to dry them.

She looked at the hole that Su Ying just jumped down and said dejectedly, “Why can she die so easily, but I can’t? Why don’t I have her determination? Didn’t she have more reasons than me to live on?”

Tie Ping Gu stuck out her tongue and bit down on it hard!

Tie Ping Gu did not die, but suddenly fainted. When she woke up, the first thing she saw was that eerily frightening copper mask.

Princess Yao Yue was looking at her icily. That frosty look, is really more frightening than that eerie mask. But even more chilling, were her words. Princess Yao Yue asked, “Is your man gone?”

Tie Ping Gu lowered her head, “Yes.”

Princess Yao Yue continued, “But he did not save you.”

These two sentences were like two arrows that pierced right through Tie Ping Gu’s heart. Although she never wanted to remember this matter again, she dare not refuse to answer. She can only fight to control her tears and said, “He… he dare not rescue me.”

Princess Yao Yue laughed coldly, “Since he dare to escape, why doesn’t he dare rescue you?”

Tie Ping Gu could not hold in her tears and finally weeped.

Princess Yao Yue said, “You need not cry, this is your just desserts. You should have known long ago that few men are good, why do you still let yourself get tricked?”

Tie Ping Gu suddenly raised her voice, “There are some good men, although some of them do things weirdly, but they are very kind at heart.”

Princess Yao Yue asked, “Who are you referring to?”

Tie Ping Gu replied, “I am referring to Jiang Xiao Yu.”

Princess Yao Yue's cold eyes suddenly burned like fire, and with a back hand slapped her across the face and said hoarsely, "Do you know that none of those surnamed Jiang are any good, and Jiang Xiao Yu is the same as his shameless parents."

Tie Ping Gu retorted, "I only know that he is kind and adorable…

Princess Yao Yue cried furiously, "If you speak one more word about him, I will kill you immediately."

Tie Ping Gu replied, "You can seal my lips and stop me from talking, but you cannot stop me from thinking about him. He is already dead, if you kill me, I can go and see him immediately. This is something that you cannot stop as well."

Princess Yao Yue's body suddenly started shaking violently, because she remembered the scene when Jiang Feng and Hua Yue Nu died, the words that Hua Yue Nu said before her death were exactly the same uttered by Tie Ping Gu now.

But she did not know that Tie Ping Gu said those words to antagonize her. Tie Ping Gu naturally knows how cruel the punishment is for those why betrayed Floral Palace. Ever since the incident about Hua Yue Nu, Princess Yao Yue became even more vicious and cruel than anyone else.

What Tie Ping Gu wish for now, is a quick death.

What angered Princess Yao Yue even more is that Xiao Yu'er had actually died in the hands of someone. The effort that she has spent for the last ten over years was all wasted. Because for the past twenty years, the words that Hua Yue Nu said before her death, the expression on Jiang Feng before his death, were as fresh as a burning flame, constantly burning her soul.

The pain is almost making her insane, but she bore it with all her might, because she knows that one day, Jiang Feng's two sons will face a wretched fate that she has designed with her own hands.

She fantasized countless times about what will happen after Hua Wu Que kill Xiao Yu'er with his own hands. Only when she is thinking of this will her pain lessen. But now, Xiao Yu'er has already died in the hands of another?

Although Tie Ping Gu could not see her expression, she has never seen anyone's gaze that was as frightening. It seemed that she was unable to stand, her body leaning on the tree trunk. After a moment, it seems that there were actually tears in her eyes. Even in her dreams, Tie Ping Gu cannot imagine why that would be so.

After another moment, Princess Yao Yue said calmly, "Is Xiao Yu'er really dead?" Tie Ping Gu nodded her head.

Her eyes, which was looking into the distant suddenly turned towards Tie Ping Gu. Tie Ping Gu unconsciously shivered, and said. "But… but the person who killed him, is not me."

Princess Yao Yue said, "That's right, you did not kill him. But if you did not take him away, how could he have died in the hands of another?"

Tie Ping Gu replied, "I know that I am wrong, kill me."

Princess Yao Yue said each word slowly, "I also want you to suffer the pain of twenty years. Everyday, I will carefully carve a piece of your flesh. Now I want to dig your eyes first, so that you will not be able to see, and cut out half your tongue, so that you cannot speak."

Tie Ping Gu naturally knows that these are not empty words. If the Floral Princess wants someone to suffer for twenty years, then it will never be one day less.

Right at this time, there was a sudden loud laughter from the valley!

End of Chapter 97

Chapter 87

Chapter 98

“I did not expect Xiao Yu’er to be so great, that even after his death, the Floral Princess will feel sad for him.”

The laughter seemed to be coming from all directions, that even Princess Yao Yue cannot figure out where the person is.

But her expression immediately calmed instead, and she said with a low voice, “Who is it that dares to utter such nonsense here?”

That person still continued laughing loudly, “Can’t you recognize my voice now? Have you forgotten, when I was shitting, you were still smelling my smelly gas at the door!”

Princess Yao Yue’s body shook, and said “You are Xiao Yu’er? You’re not dead? Where are you?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “I’m right in front of you, can’t you see me?”

Princess Yao Yue turned her gaze and asked, “Are you in the belly of these mountains?”

Xiao Yu’er said, “I can’t come out, that’s why I can only wait here for you to rescue me. I concluded that you will certainly save me, right?”

Princess Yao Yue took two deep breaths before replying, “That’s right, I will certainly save you.”

Xiao Yu’er added, “But if you do not let Tie Ping Gu go immediately, I’d rather die here.”

Princess Yao Yue was stunned, and fumed, “How dare you?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Why wouldn’t I dare? If I feel like living now, I’ll live and if I feel like dying now, I’ll die. No matter how capable the Floral Princess is, there’s nothing you can do to me, right?”

Princess Yao Yue was so furious that she started shaking.

Xiao Yu’er added, “Now that the time has almost come for my appointment with Hua Wu Que, you won’t want me to die just like that, right?”

Princess Yao Yue stamped her feet and said, “All right, I’ll let her go without harming a hair of hers.”

Xiao Yu’er continued, “After I’m dead, there’s nothing I can do if you kill her then, but when I’m still alive, I can only be assured when I see her living comfortably.”

Princess Yao Yue fumed, “What do you want exactly?”

Xiao Yu’er said, “This hole may be deep, but it’s all water below. No matter who jumps down, he will never fall to his death.”

Before he could finish his words, Princess Yao Yue had already lifted Tie Ping Gu and threw her out.

With a casual throw, she actually threw Tie Ping Gu more then a hundred feet away, and right into the hole as well, and making it look easier than a kid throwing a ball.

After a moment, a ‘splash’ was heard.

Xiao Yu’er again laughed loudly, “Excellent, excellent. I did not expect the respected Floral Princess would actually be so dumb. Now that you have given her to me, I need not listen to you anymore, right?”

Princess Yao Yue was shocked and furious, so angry that she is at a loss for words.

Xiao Yu’er continued, “Hua Wu Que is not here as well, so what is the use even if I come out? You get angry once you see me, and I get uncomfortable seeing you as well, I might as well stay here and not see each other.”

Princess Yao Yue replied, “But the three month deadline is here.”

Xiao Yu’er said, “That’s right, the time is here, so you should find Hua Wu Que quickly, I’ll wait for you here.”

Princess Yao Yue asked, “You’ll wait here?”

Xiao Yu’er said, “This hole is like a large wine tank, even if you were to drop down, you can forget about escaping. So what is there for you to worry?”

He added with a loud laugh, “Besides, there’s nothing you can do even if you’re worried. Now I am the one making decisions, if I do not wish to go out, even ten Floral Princesses can’t ask me out.”

There is really nothing the Floral Princess can say to rebut, so after a moment, she said “Isn’t Hua Wu Que here as well?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “That’s right, he is here. It’s just that there’s a lot of rat holes in this mountain, and you may not necessarily find him so soon. If you take too long to find him, I’m afraid I would have starved to death, so you better find me some food. You should know my taste, right?”

Princess Yao Yue replied, “That’s right, I do know.”

She was so furious that even her voice has changed. Suddenly she struck out with her palm and with a crack, that enormous tree was broken in half.

The water in the belly of the mountain rose even higher, and the area of the rock that was still above water is no bigger than a large round table. Xiao Yu'er, Herbalist Hu, Su Ying and Tie Ping Gu can only squeeze together on the rock.

The tree outside had been broken by Princess Yao Yue, and the happier Xiao Yu'er smiled. Besides him, everyone else was dejected, unable to smile at all.

Tie Ping Gu stole a glance at Xiao Yu'er and stammered to Su Ying, "I… I said I treated him… treated him well, that was to antagonize the Floral Princess, actually I…"

Su Ying laughed loudly, "You need not explain, I am not a jealous pot. Besides, you're not the only one who treats Xiao Yu'er well, it doesn't matter even if you treat him nicely."

Although she said it 'doesn't matter', but anyone would be able to smell the jealously in her words. Xiao Yu'er blinked, and laughed as well, "You treat me well, but I wasn't bad in treating you either. If not for you, I would be able to find out more secrets about the Floral Princess."

Tie Ping Gu blushed so hard that she dare not even lift up her head.

Su Ying can't help but interrupt, "What secrets does the Floral Princess has?"

Xiao Yu'er replied, "I want to know what enmity she has exactly with my family, since she hates anyone surnamed Jiang to the core, but why won't she strike herself, and why did she dress up as the ghastly 'Mr Copper' and force Hua Wu Que to kill me. Not only did she lie to me, but she's behaving suspiciously towards her own disciple as well. At this point in time, I'm afraid Hua Wu Que is still unaware that Mr Copper is actually his Teacher."

Su Ying thought for a while and said with a bitter smile, "This thing is indeed strange, there's absolutely no logic to it as well."

Xiao Yu’er sighed again, “The logic behind all these, may only be known to the two sisters themselves, but as long as I am alive, they will never reveal it.”

Su Ying smiled, “Maybe you wanted the Floral Princess to think that you have died, that’s why you might as well let Jiang Yu Lang push you down. Maybe you already know there’s water in this hole and you won’t fall to your death.”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “How would I know that there’s water in this hole?”

Xiao Ying smiled, “The sun had not set then, maybe a ray of sunlight happened to shine in and was reflected on the water surface below.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “Even if that was the case, but even I should know that with such a deep hole, I won’t be able to come out once I fall in.”

“Naturally you will have a plan, and you will have more than one plan.” Su Ying pursed her mouth and smiled, and added “Since any conversation outside would be heard clearly in this hold, you will certainly know who is walking past outside. And you’re not a mute, why can’t you ask others to save you.”

Herbalist Hu was surprised and said, “But… but at that time he did not know that sound can travel in this hole.”

Su Ying explained, “Maybe you do not know, but he grew up in a mountain valley, so naturally he is very certain on such matters.”

Herbalist Hu sighed, “If that is the case, then I am really very ignorant.”

Su Ying continued, “But there’s a loophole in this plan. The mountain here is secluded, if no one were to ever walk past, he would have been trapped to his death here. If the person who walk past is not his friend but his enemy, he would not dare to call for help.”

Herbalist Hu rubbed his head and said, “That’s right, what if no one walked past, what if the person who walk past is his enemy, what can be done then?”

Su Ying replied, “That’s why he has another plan.”

Su Ying added, “Don’t you forget, this mountain is situated at the mouth of a river, and the water in the belly of the mountain is river water. River water will rise and fall with the tide and when the tide rises, the water in here will rise as well. When the tide falls, the water in here will recede as well.”

Herbalist Hu stared blankly for a moment before saying with a bitter laugh, “That’s right, I should be able to think of this logic as well.”

Su Ying said, “Since the river water can flow in here, then there must be an exit here that leads straight to the river. Once the tide recedes, we’ll be able to find this exit…”

She smiled slightly, and turned her head towards Xiao Yu’er, asking, “Is what I have said correct?”

Xiao Yu’er replied icily, “Do you think you’re very smart? All really smart women should know, no matter which man she is talking to, she should always know a little lesser than that man. Your problem is that you know too much. This kind of woman, most men would not want.”

Su Ying replied, “But you’re not most men. A person like you, there’s only one in the whole world… besides, you should know such logic as well, so I still know a little lesser than you.”

Xiao Yu’er can’t help but laugh loudly, and after a moment, he sighed again and mumbled, “It seems that sooner or later I will one day be mesmerized by this lass.”

Right at this time, something suddenly dropped down from the top. Herbalist Hu and Tie Ping Gu were both shocked, but Xiao Yu’er smiled instead and said, “The Floral Princess is indeed obedient, she’s sent us our dinner.”

There’s really quite a lot of things Princess Yao Yue sent, a large bag thoroughly

filled. As Xiao Yu'er ate, he noticed that the water has started to fall.

Before the water has finished receding, Herbalist Hu had already jumped down, trying to look for a way out. However Xiao Yu'er lied down on the rock and started sleeping instead.

Su Ying gently caressed his jet black hair and said worriedly, "He's really tired. He has really suffered a lot these few days."

She turned her head around and smiled at Tie Ping Gu, "If it was someone else who suffered as much as him, who has as many setbacks as him, even if that person is not depressed, he will certainly blame heaven or others. But look at him, he did not seem to take it to heart at all. A man like this, how can you blame me for liking him."

Tie Ping Gu smiled, but her tears is almost flowing out. Su Ying can be proud of the man she loves, but what about her? What her man brought her, is only shame and misfortune.

After a moment, Su Ying suddenly asked, "Do you know Tie Xin Lan?"

Tie Ping Gu replied, "I know she treats Xiao Yu'er very well, but…"

Su Ying interrupted, "But besides Xiao Yu'er, she can still like someone else. But for me, other than Xiao Yu'er, I will never love anyone else. So I must never let her snatch Xiao Yu'er away, no matter what plans I must use, I must…"

Right at this time, Herbalist Hu suddenly exclaimed, "It's here, it's right here, I found it!"

There really is an exit leading straight to the river in this mountain. Although it looks like a narrow and winding passageway, but someone who is not too fat can still crawl through it.

Su Ying shook Xiao Yu'er awake and said with a smile, "If you want to sleep, then have a good rest after you've gone out. We can leave now."

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Why should I leave. Didn’t you hear that I am going to wait here for Hua Wu Que?”

Su Ying asked hoarsely, “You… you’re really waiting for him?”

Xiao Yu’er stared at her, “Of course it’s real, this meeting has been arranged three months ago.”

Su Ying replied, “But… but after he arrives, the Floral Princess will certainly force him to fight with you.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “The word fight is used inappropriately. With such highly skilled martial arts exponents like us, the word used should be dueling.”

Su Ying anxiously replied, “But you are not dueling, you are fighting for your lives.”

Su Ying turned his body around again, and stamping her feet, said, “But you… you are not his match now, because I know the wonders of that ‘Shifting Flower Grafting Jade’, is really the world’s greatest.”

Xiao Yu’er suddenly laughed and said calmly, “But do you know, in the whole world, I am the only one who knows how to break the martial arts moves of Floral Palace.”

Su Ying was stunned, and asked hoarsely, “You really know… how did you know?”

Xiao Yu’er grinned, “Naturally someone taught me. The secret to Floral Palace’s martial arts, there is no one else in the world who would know it better than her.”

“Why would the Floral Princess teach you the moves that will break her own martial arts move? Is she crazy?”

Su Ying was startled for a moment before adding, “Even if you can break the martial arts of the Floral Palace, you will never kill Hua Wu Que, right?”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “Whether I kill him or not, how is it related to you?”

Su Ying replied, “Of course it’s related. If you don’t kill him, he’ll kill you. If you stay here, it’s…”

Xiao Yu’er suddenly jumped up and roared, “Whoever wants to leave can leave, anyway I am certainly going to wait here!”

Herbalist Hu was initially happily standing next to the exit, just waiting to leave this cave and he’ll be able to get the antidote. Once he heard Xiao Yu’er’s words, he only felt his legs go weak, unable to stand at all. His hands leaning on the side of the cave, he stared dumbly at Xiao Yu’er and kept panting, and suddenly asked breathlessly, “I… I feel that something’s not… not right, I’m afraid the poison… poison has taken effect.”

Su Ying asked, “Is he the one who poisoned you?” Herbalist Hu nodded his head vigorously.

Su Ying rolled her eyes and asked, “How did that poison taste like?”

Herbalist Hu said with a piteous look, “Salty, wet, and a little… a little smelly.”

Su Ying suddenly laughed, “He’s just deliberately scaring you, that is most certainly not poison. You thought the poison had taken effect earlier because it’s all your own imagination playing tricks on you.”

Herbalist Hu was stunned, “If it’s not poison, what is it?”

Su Ying laughed, “I don’t know what it is either, for all you know it’s a dirt ball he rubbed from his feet.”

Herbalist Hu’s face changed between being red and pale. He suddenly turned

around and like a wild dog who has just been kicked, dashed out and ran away like the wind.

His only wish is that he will never see Xiao Yu'er again in his lifetime. He'd rather meet a hundred big headed ghosts than to meet Xiao Yu'er again.

Su Ying's gaze turned towards Tie Ping Gu and asked, "You do not wish to leave as well?"

Tie Ping Gu lowered her head, not knowing what to say.

But if she were to leave, she really does not know where she should go. The world may be large but there doesn't seem to have anywhere that she can go.

Su Ying asked, "Don't you want to see Jiang Yu Lang again."

Tie Ping Gu replied, "I…"

She thought that she will surely be able to say with conviction, 'I will never see him again!', but without knowing why, the words were at her mouth, but she just could not say it out.

Su Ying seemed to have seen through her thoughts and with a smile, said "I know you must want to see him, because even if you no longer like him, don't you want revenge?"

Tie Ping Gu sighed, "But I don't know how to take revenge." She did not want to say these words initially, but without knowing why, she said them.

Su Ying continued, "Do you know why you feel so terrible now. Because you feel that he has let you down, he abandoned you, you feel that he has never taken you to heart, that's why your heart is breaking, right?"

Tie Ping Gu was silent, because Su Ying's words, is really what she was thinking.

Su Ying added, “If you want to take revenge, then you must make him suffer, make him think you’re the one who abandoned him, make him think that you did not take him to heart at all, by that time, he’ll come begging you like a dog.”

Tie Ping Gu lowered her head and thought for a long time, a gleam slowly filling her eyes.

Su Ying asked, “Now do you understand what I mean?”

End of Chapter 98

Chapter 88

Chapter 99

Tie Ping Gu replied, “I understand.”

Su Ying smiled and said, “Very good, as long as you follow my instructions, you need not fear that he will not look for you. The time when he comes looking for you, is the time for you to vent your anger.”

Tie Ping Gu can’t help but smile as well, but she suddenly sighed again, “But I… now I….”

Su Ying said, “You feel that you’re all alone, with nothing on you, and no one to rely one, so you’re a little afraid, right?”

Tie Ping Gu silently nodded her head.

Su Ying smiled, “Don’t you forget, you’re a very beautiful, very alluring girl, and you’re young. This is already a woman’s greatest asset. Just with that, you can put most men on the world on your palms, just with these, you will be able to hold your head high no matter where you go.”

Tie Ping Gu really lifted her head and said with a smile, “Thank you.”

She took a glance at Xiao Yu’er, as if she wanted to say something, but without saying anything, she left, left without even turning her head back.

Xiao Yu’er was stunned for a moment, and roared, “You’ve made everyone else leave, why won’t you leave?”

Su Ying replied calmly, “Leave? Why would I leave, isn’t this place very comfortable?”

Xiao Yu’er pleaded, “I beg of you, leave quickly. My head is now three times bigger than anyone else’s, if you do not leave, I may become crazy right now.”

Su Ying said nonchalantly, “If you fume at the sight of me, can’t you leave yourself?”

Xiao Yu’er was shocked for a moment, and laughed instead, “Fine, little lass, I take my hat off you. Ever since I was born, no one has been able to make me so angry, I have finally met my match.”

Su Ying did not pay attention to him, but instead started wrapping the left over food carefully, mumbling to herself, “This place is extremely damp, if the food is left here for a few more days, I’m afraid it will soon turn moldy.”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “So what if it turns moldy, don’t tell me you’re thinking of taking it outside?”

Only now did Su Ying turn around and say with a smile, “Do you think the Floral Princess will be able to find Hua Wu Que immediately?”

Xiao Yu’er stared at her for a long moment, and suddenly jumped in front of her and asked, “You know that Jiang Yu Lang lied to me, so you must have seen Hua Wu Que, right?”

Su Ying sat down on the rock and crossed her legs. After staring at Xiao Yu’er for a long moment as well, she said slowly, “That’s right, I did meet him, and I know where he has gone, but I can’t tell you right now.”

Xiao Yu’er raised his voice, “Why can’t you tell me?”

Su Ying replied, “Because I’m afraid you’ll be angry.”

Xiao Yu’er spoke louder, “If I become angry then I’m an a*shole.”

Su Ying shook her head and laughed, “Because you’ll never become an a*shole, no one would suddenly become an a*shole, right?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “All right, if I become angry, I’ll do anything that you ask me to?”

Su Ying beamed and said, “All right, I’ll tell you, Hua Wu Que has gone to look for Tie Xin Lan.”

Xiao Yu’er asked hoarsely, “He went to look for Tie Xin Lan? Where would he know where Tie Xin Lan is?”

Su Ying replied, “I told him.”

Xiao Yu’er was truly surprised now and asked, “You told him? Where would you know where Tie Xin Lan is? How did you recognize her?”

Su Ying explained, “I’ve already become sworn sisters with her, don’t you know?” Xiao Yu’er’s mouth gaped open, unable to talk at all.

Su Ying asked, “You have not seen Tie Xin Lan for a long time, right?”

Xiao Yu’er agreed.

Su Ying continued, “Do you know, for the past two months, Tie Xin Lan has always been with Hua Wu Que?”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “It’s not a bad thing that they can be together. I was worrying about her, but now I can put my mind at ease. I know that Hua Wu Que has always treated her very well.”

Su Ying’s eyes gleamed, but she lowered her head and asked, “Why didn’t you ask me where Tie Xin Lan is right now?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “You can’t possibly have sent her to that rat hole?”

Su Ying replied, “That’s exactly where she is.”

The smile on Xiao Yu’er’s face froze like a rock, and then he jumped up more than thirty feet high, and landed right on the rock in front of Su Ying and roared, “You noxious lass how can you send her there.”

Su Ying replied, “She is my sister, that place is very safe, no one will bully her there.”

Xiao Yu’er fumed, “But Hua Wu Que is going there to look for her now, that big rat would not let Hua Wu Que off, you… aren’t you harming them, I… I… I…”

He was so livid that he could not say another word but he grabbed Su Ying’s hand and snarled, “If I don’t give you a good beating today, I would be letting them down.”

Su Ying said with a smile, “You said you won’t be angry, how can a great man eat his own words in front of a little lass like me.”

Xiao Yu’er was stunned, and jumped thirty feet high again.

Su Ying said gently, “Actually you need not be anxious, Hua Wu Que won’t die. Besides, he wanted to kill you, so he can’t be considered your friend. If he can’t come, then you need not be in a dilemma, right?”

Xiao Yu’er hit his own head hard and raised his voice, “Do you think you were helping me? Do you think that I’ll surely be happy when he’s dead? To tell you the truth, if Wei Wu Ya were to really kill him, I will…”

Suddenly someone was heard shouting outside, “Xiao Yu’er, where are you, can you hear me?”

That was surprisingly Hua Wu Que's voice.

Xiao Yu'er and Su Ying were both stunned, Hua Wu Que is actually here and well, and so soon too.

Xiao Yu'er shouted, "Hua Wu Que, I am here, put a rope down and I'll be able to go up."

After a moment, Hua Wu Que's head can be seen leaning in from the top, and the expression on his face was full of joy and concern.

Xiao Yu'er was beaming from ear to ear, and laughed loudly, "Good lad, we've not seen each other for two months and neither of us has changed."

Hua Wu Que dropped a long rope down and said with a laugh, "I can't see you when you're below, come up quickly."

Looking at the two of them, Su Ying was feeling extremely perplexed. No matter how she sees them, they don't look like enemies who are about to fight.

Xiao Yu'er was just climbing up the rope when he jumped down again and asked her with a straight face, "Little lass named Su, you still do not wish to leave?"

Su Ying lowered her head, "You leave alone, I don't wish to see you being killed."

Xiao Yu'er roared, "You do not wish to see, all the more I want you to see. You do not wish to leave, all the more I want you to leave, let's see how you can resist me."

Su Ying retreated and asked, "You… you dare?"

Although she pretended to look very angry, but in her heart she was indescribably happy, because she knows that her hands is slowly beginning to

feel Xiao Yu’er’s heart.

Hua Wu Que stood next to Princess Yao Yue with lowered head, his face has become expressionless.

To Hua Wu Que, not only is Princess Yao Yue his strict teacher, but also his foster mother. He has never seen any trace of a smile on her face since young.

He also dare not behave impudently in front of her, because not only does he respect her, is grateful to her, but also a little afraid of her.

Now, Xiao Yu’er finally saw Princess Yao Yue’s face.

She has already removed that horrible copper mask, but her face is even colder than that mask, and no one could see any trace of expression on her face.

Xiao Yu’er could not imagine that in the whole world, for a person who is thirty would actually look so young, and all the more he could not imagine that such a beautiful person would let someone take a look and no longer dare to take another look.

Even Xiao Yu’er, after taking a look at her, felt a cold shiver rising from the bottom of his feet, as if he suddenly saw a beautiful spirit in the icy night.

He did not even notice Tie Xin Lan was next to her.

However Tie Xin Lan is so excited she is shaking. She saw Xiao Yu’er leaping down from the rock and can’t help but immediately ran towards Xiao Yu’er.

But she took only two steps when her body suddenly hardens. She suddenly remembered Hua Wu Que. How can she abandon Hua Wu Que once she saw Xiao Yu’er?

She stood between Xiao Yu’er and Hua Wu Que, not knowing whether to advance or retreat. She only wished that she has never been born.

By now Xiao Yu’er saw her as well, and greeted her with a smile, “It’s been a long time, have you been well?”

Tie Xin Lan seemed not to have heard his words, but suddenly turned around and ran towards a large tree at the side with her head lowered. This tree just happens to be right between Xiao Yu’er and Hua Wu Que as well.

Su Ying’s eyes have never left Xiao Yu’er. She noticed that although Xiao Yu’er is still smiling, but that smile has become very stiff. She took a look at Hua Wu Que, whose head was still lowered, not lifting even once.

Su Ying can’t help but secretly heave a long sigh. Looking at these three person’s complicated and intricate relationship, besides sighing, what else can she do?

Princess Yao Yue’s eyes, which were sharper than a knife, colder than ice, were staring at Xiao Yu’er as well. Xiao Yu’er heaved a long sigh, and lifted his head to stare at her as well, and said with a smile, “The things you’ve delivered are not too bad, but a pity there’s no chili. The next time you give me a treat again, you must never forget that I love spicy food.”

There’s not much expression on Princess Yao Yue’s face, but Hua Wu Que looked up in surprise. He really could not imagine that there would be anyone in the world who dares to talk to Princess Yao Yue like that.

Princess Yao Yue spoke, “Now I will give you another six hours. Within the six hours, you can try adjusting your internal flow and gather your energy, but you’re not allowed to leave this place!”

Xiao Yu’er clapped his hands and laughed, “The Floral Princess really lives up to her name, who will never take advantage of others at all. You know that I’m tired, so you’re letting me rest first.”

However Princess Yao Yue had already turned around and said, “Wu Que, you’ll follow me.”

Xiao Yu’er spoke up, “I would like to say a few words to Hua Wu Que, is that all right?”

Without even turning her head, Princess Yao Yue replied icily, “No!”

Xiao Yu’er raised his voice, “Why not, could it be that you’re afraid I will tell him that you’re Mr Copper.”

By now Hua Wu Que has also turned around, and did not turn his head back as well, but Xiao Yu’er can see that when he heard those words, his whole body was shaken. Xiao Yu’er smiled, because he has achieved his goal.

Princess Yao Yue walked to the tree at the furthest end before she turned around, as if she’s speaking to Hua Wu Que, but Hua Wu Que had his back facing them.

Su Ying said gently, “Six hours is not a long time, you better have a good rest.”

It is morning now, the sun is slowly rising.

Su Ying gathered the surrounding fallen leaves, piled it under the tree and pulled Xiao Yu’er there to sit on it, just like a wife making the bed for her husband.

Tie Xin Lan is still standing under the tree on that side, tears already gathering in her eyes. She suddenly felt that her existence in this world, seems to be an excess.

Since she did not walk to Xiao Yu’er earlier, all the more she cannot walk over now. Since she did not return to Hua Wu Que’s side earlier, all the more she cannot go back now.

She also knows that under such circumstances, Xiao Yu'er and Hua Wu Que, will never walk to her side. The Floral Princess has used her cold hands and tore their friendship into two. If friendship no longer exists between the two, then her situation would become even more pitiful, even more awkward.

She knows that the best thing she can do now is to go far, far away, the further the better, then no matter what happens, it will not be able to hurt her.

But now that two of the closest person in her life, is about to have a life and death duel right here, how can she leave? How can she bear to leave?

Xiao Yu'er lay down on the fallen leaves and closed his eyes.

Others were nervous, some were in pain, but he languidly crossed his legs, and his mouth softly humming a mountain song, as if this matter is of no relation to him at all.

Su Ying stood next to him, holding her head and looking at him. After looking for a while, she sighed softly and asked, "Did you see Tie Xin Lan?"

Xiao Yu'er replied, "Didn't you see that I've already greeted her earlier."

Su Ying chewed on her lips and said, "But she… she's really pitiful, you really should go and console her."

Xiao Yu'er suddenly opened his eyes and stared, "Why must I go and console her? Why can't she walk over?"

Su Ying sighed, "She's really in a difficult position now…"

Xiao Yu'er replied, "She's in a difficult position, but I'm not? Besides, she put herself in that difficult position, who asked her to stand there and refuse to come over? There's no nail pinning her feet down."

Su Ying sighed again, "Since you won't go over, then I will."

Xiao Yu’er asked, “Do you know how to read lips?”

Su Ying replied, “No.”

Xiao Yu’er sighed, “It would be nice if I can hear what the Floral Princess is telling Hua Wu Que right now.”

Su Ying replied, “Even if you can’t hear, you should be able to imagine. She’s most likely telling Hua Wu Que what methods he should use to kill you.”

Xiao Yu’er was silent for a long moment before saying slowly, “When I was in the hole earlier, Hua Wu Que was still talking and laughing with me. But he ignored me when I came out, and did not even take a look at me.”

Su Ying said, “If you grew up in the Floral Palace, you would not have a mind of your own as well once you see the Floral Princess.”

Xiao Yu’er gave a bitter smile, “Then it would seem that the Valley of Evil is much better than the Floral Palace, at least those in the Valley of Evil are still human, but those in the Floral Palace are a bunch of living ghosts, a bunch of moving corpses.”

Su Ying smiled and said gently, “You take a rest, I’ll be right back after saying a few words there.”

Xiao Yu’er stared at her, “Why must you go over? I’m not feeling too good now as well, why aren’t you accompanying me here?”

Su Ying’s eyes shimmered and she asked, “Don’t you want to know how did she and Hua Wu Que leave that rat hole?”

The tears on the fallen leaves have already dried up, but Tie Xin Lan’s tears have not dried up. She heard Su Ying walking towards her, and she gritted her teeth, determined not to let her tears fall.

Su Ying walked to her side quietly, but she did not even lift up her head. The breeze was blowing at her hair, a fallen leaf was struggling in her disheveled hair, trying to fly up.

Su Ying gently pulled out this piece of leave and asked quietly, “You’re angry with me, right?”

After a long moment, Tie Xin Lan stood up slowly and said, “You need not be sad. If I had known that you’re my rival in love, I will not tell you the truth either.”

Su Ying heaved a long sigh and holding her hands, smiled, “I really did not expect you’ll be this kind of girl. Right now I hope that you’re a fierce, vicious, and cunning woman, then I will feel much better.”

Tie Xin Lan looked at her for a moment, and suddenly said, “But no matter what, you will not give up Xiao Yu’er because of me, right?”

This is really not a very smart question, and even she herself does not know why she would ask such a question.

Su Ying looked at her straight in the eye and replied, “That’s right, I will not give him up because of you, because if I give him up, it may create a bigger dilemma for you, right?”

Tie Xin Lan’s head lowered again. This sentence is like a needle piercing right through her heart, causing her to be at a loss for words.

Only until the leaves in her hands has been pinched into powdery pieces did she reply quietly, “I really should not say those words to you, and Xiao Yu’er did not put me in his heart in the first place as well. Maybe you’re the only one who is worthy of him.”

Su Ying replied, “Xiao Yu’er did not forget you. If he really did not have a place for you in his heart, he would have walked over here long ago.”

Tie Xin Lan was stunned for a moment and asked, “You… why did you tell me this? Why don’t you let me give up?”

Su Ying smiled sadly, “Maybe it’s because I want to have Xiao Yu’er too much, so I do not want him to hate me in future. I want to let him choose for himself. If the person he likes is you, even if I kill you, it’s useless.”

Tie Xin Lan’s head lowered further. She slowly chewed on these words, and felt pain and bitterness in her heart, because her feelings are getting more and more conflicting, more and more complicated. She asked herself secretly, “If the person Xiao Yu’er chose is me, would I really be happy?”

Su Ying suddenly smiled, “Have you seen my Godfather? Did he look very scary?”

Tie Xin Lan replied, “I did not see him.”

End of Chapter 99

Chapter 89

Chapter 100

Su Ying asked in surprise, “When you reached the woods that side, didn’t anyone come and receive you? Have you gone to the wrong place?”

Tie Xin Lan sighed and replied, “I did not go to the wrong place. When I reached that place, I saw a lot of rats burrowing here and there and I was so frightened that I collapsed immediately onto a tree, but who would have expected that there would actually be a corpse hanging on the tree. Looking in the distance, there were a few more corpses hanging on the other trees. I was just wondering what to do when Hua… Master Hua came.”

Su Ying was totally stunned, her palms starting to sweat.

Tue Xin Lan sighed, “From what I see, some great change must have happened over there, you… you better go and take a look.”

Without waiting for her to finish her words, Su Ying had already turned around and ran, but after a few steps, she stopped. No matter what, Wei Wu Ya is her benefactor. If anything untoward were to happen to Wei Wu Ya, she can never ignore it, but now… now that Xiao Yu’er is looking at her, how can she leave?

She stood there stunned, not knowing what to do at all.

Su Ying finally returned to Xiao Yu’er’s side. No matter what has happened, she cannot abandon Xiao Yu’er here at this moment.

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “Looking at your expression, could it be that the Floral Princess has already killed Wei Wu Ya?”

Before Su Ying could reply, a person suddenly floated in with the wind.

She is equally cold as Princess Yao Yue, equally beautiful, just that her pair of eyes that were as bright as autumn's water still has a hint of gentleness in it.

Her body seemed to be even lighter than a falling leaf, and landed next to Hua Wu Que. Hua Wu Que immediately kneeled down in respect.

Xiao Yu'er stared hard and said, "I'm afraid that would be Princess Lian Xing. She's exactly made from the same mold as her sister, it's just that she is breathing when compared to a dead person."

Su Ying replied with a bitter smile, "But these sisters can make those in the martial arts realm fear even to mention their names. If they are only breathing when compared to a dead person, then all those in the martial arts realm must be dead."

Xiao Yu'er laughed loudly, "You're wrong. When a person is alive, he'll surely cry, laugh, be happy, be sad, be afraid as well. People like them, there's no meaning in being alive."

He deliberately laughed loudly so that the Floral Princesses can hear him. But the Floral Princesses did not even take a glance towards this side.

Xiao Yu'er chortled, "I regarded them as dead people, for all you know they are already regarding me as dead, so no matter what I say, they will not be angry."

Although he was laughing as he said these words, but when Su Ying heard it, she felt indescribably sad, and almost cried.

She really cannot see how Xiao Yu'er can hope to live on. Even if he can win Hua Wu Que, can kill Hua Wu Que, but he will still die in the hands of the Floral Princesses. Xiao Yu'er said to her, "Can you smile? As long as you smile, I'll be happy even if I have to die."

Su Ying really smiled. But if she had not smiled she may still be able to control her tears, and now that she smiled, her tears fell as well.

A gust of wind blew up the fallen leaves and Princess Lian Xing suddenly appeared in front of Xiao Yu'er and said coldly, "It's almost time, do you know?"

Xiao Yu'er replied, "I am wishing that the time will come faster, or else I'm afraid I'll be drowned by tears."

Xiao Yu'er rolled his eyes, and grinned, "I do have a question to ask you."

Princess Lian Xing asked, "What question?"

Xiao Yu'er said, "A beautiful woman like you, why are you still not married? It can't be that for all these years, not one man fell in love with you?"

Princess Lian Xing suddenly turned around, and Xiao Yu'er can see that the two veins behind her neck is vibrating, and the fine green veins on her face seem to be suddenly dancing in the wind.

After a while, she said each word slowly, "Stand up!"

This time Xiao Yu'er was really obedient and immediately jumped up, asking, "Is it time to strike now?"

He saw that Hua Wu Que who was under the tree on the other side turning around slowly as well.

Su Ying suddenly grabbed Xiao Yu'er's hand and said, "You… don't you have anything you want to tell me?"

Xiao Yu'er replied, "No." Su Ying's fingers released their hold one by one, and she took two steps back, tears flowing out of her eyes.

Princess Lian Xing said, "Hua Wu Que, Xiao Yu'er, the two of you listen well.

Starting from now, you will both walk fifty steps forward, once you've reach the fiftieth step, you can strike. No matter who wins or loses in this battle, no third party is allowed to help. Whoever is a busybody, will be killed immediately, there will be no mercy."

Su Ying can't help but cry out, "You will not help as well?"

Before Princess Lian Xing can reply, Princess Yao Yue had answered icily, "If she becomes a busybody, I will want her life as well."

Su Ying asked, "What if you yourself interfered?"

Princess Yao Yue said, "Then I will take my own life."

Su Ying wiped away her tears and said loudly, "Xiao Yu'er, did you hear that? The words of the Floral Princess are like the wind, and she won't retract them, so I beg of you not to lose to him no matter what, all right?"

But she did not know that in the battle today, the loser may face only death, but the fate of the winner would be worse than death. If Xiao Yu'er can die in the hands of Hua Wu Que, then he'll be a lot luckier than Hua Wu Que.

The sky is getting gray, dark clouds becoming heavier, and a few dried leaves on the branches are still fighting the western wind, but that is just a useless struggle before death.

Xiao Yu'er had started to walk forward. Hua Wu Que is also starting to move his feet slowly.

Yao Yue, Lian Xing, Su Ying and Tie Xin Lan, four pair of eyes, were all staring unwaveringly at Xiao Yu'er and Hua Wu Que's steps.

The four of them may all be thinking different things, but they are equally nervous.

Tie Xin Lan knows that in a swift moment, one of the two will fall, and she does not know herself who is it that she would wish to fall.

In the depth of her heart, she knows that if one of the two is to fall, then she won't be in a dilemma anymore, she won't need to choose, and things would become a lot simpler.

She even tried to deny that she harbored such a thought, because such a thought is too selfish, too mean, too heartless, too venomous…

But in Su Ying's heart there is only pain, and no dilemma at all, because she has already decided that if Xiao Yu'er were to die, then she will not live alone as well. Although she knows that chances of Xiao Yu'er winning is not large, but she is still wishing for a miracle, wishing that Xiao Yu'er can defeat Hua Wu Que.

And what about Lian Xing and Yao Yue? Now that their plan is beginning to happen, their patience is finally about to be rewarded, and the hatred in their heart will soon be avenged.

They can only fantasize that only when one of the two falls, will this pain lessen, because only when that time comes can they reveal this shocking secret. This secret is like a heavy metal chaining their heart for the last twenty years, and they can only wait for the time when the secret is revealed before they can be free, or else they will forever become slaves of this secret.

But now, they can only wait.

Who would have expected that Xiao Yu'er had only taken three steps when he suddenly turned around and smiled at Su Ying, saying, "Right, I just remembered I have something to tell you."

Su Ying felt emotions rushing up, hot tears flowing out again. No matter what, Xiao Yu'er will certainly treat her differently from others.

She tried to control her tears and said, "Tell… tell me, I am listening."

Xiao Yu’er said, “I would advise you to find someone to marry while you’re still young, or else it’ll be more difficult the older you get. When you’re fifty years old, you’ll become old crones like them.”

This is actually the last words of Xiao Yu’er. At a time like this, he can still say such words.

Su Ying only felt that her heart seemed to be bounded tightly by a handkerchief, and after a moment, she gritted her teeth and replied, “Don’t you worry, I will certainly not wait that long.”

A sentence lightly uttered by him shattered Su Ying’s heart, and also made Lian Xing and Yao Yue start shaking, their faces pale.

But he behaved as if he has never said such words.

Most strangely, at this point in time, everyone was hoping in their hearts that he will defeat Hua Wu Que. Of course Su Ying would want him to win, but Tie Xin Lan can’t bear to see him being defeated.

Without knowing why, she always thought that Hua Wu Que is stronger, so he can withstand more pain, that’s why she’d rather hurt Hua Wu Que than to hurt Xiao Yu’er.

Even more strangely, even Yao Yue and Lian Xing were hoping that Xiao Yu’er would win. Maybe they would not admit it themselves, but it is the truth. Because if Hua Wu Que were to defeat Xiao Yu’er, then they would have to reveal this secret in front of Hua Wu Que. Although they raised Hua Wu Que for the purpose of revenge, but after so many years, they would have some feelings for the child that they watch grow up.

They were secretly counting Xiao Yu’er’s steps! “Eleven, twelve, thirteen…”

The corners of Princess Yao Yue’s mouth unknowingly curved up slightly in a cruel smile.

Now, Xiao Yu’er and Hua Wu Que has already walked the fortieth step.

Xiao Yu’er kept staring at Hua Wu Que. Although there were no expression on Hua Wu Que’s face, his eyes were always avoiding him.

No matter how slowly they walked, they will still have to take the fiftieth step. Lian Xing and Yao Yue unconsciously gripped their fists tightly.

But Tie Xin Lan and Su Ying can’t even hold their hands tightly. Their hands were shaking so badly, like the dried leaves blown by the western wind.

Right at this time, Xiao Yu’er suddenly collapsed!

At such a tense moment, so tense that one can stop breathing, Xiao Yu’er actually fell for no rhyme or reason.

Hua Wu Que was totally stunned, Tie Xin Lan was surprised as well and Su Ying was even more shocked. They were so nervous that blood was coursing through their body and now, all the blood seem to be suddenly drained, their brains is suddenly empty and no one knows how to handle this sudden turn of events.

Even Yao Yue and Lian Xing were stunned, and the expression on their faces changed greatly.

After Xiao Yu’er fell to the ground, he suddenly started shaking, and the shakes were getting more violent, until his body slowly curled up into a ball.

Princess Lian Xing stamped her feet and said, “What is happening to you?”

Princess Yao Yue cried out furiously, “He’s pretending to be dead, kill him quickly.”

Hua Wu Que lowered his head and said, “He is defenseless now, how can disciple strike?”

Princess Yao Yue replied, “Since he dare not fight with you, that means he admit defeat, why can’t you kill him?”

Hua Wu Que lowered his head, not striking, and not speaking as well.

Princess Yao Yue said angrily, “Why are you still not striking, you don’t mean that every time he feigns death, you will let him go. Have you forgotten our sect’s rules, you dare to disobey my words?”

Beads of perspiration rolled down Hua Wu Que’s head, and he looked at Xiao yu’er with lowered head and asked quietly, “Why won’t you stand up and fight with me? Must you force me to kill you under such circumstances?”

Xiao Yu’er suddenly grinned and said, “You better kill me quickly, I will never blame you, because you cannot be considered as the person who killed me, the person who killed me is Jiang Yu Lang.”

Princess Yao Yue’s expression changed and she asked, “What do you mean by these words?”

Xiao Yu’er sighed and said, “Because if I have not been poisoned, then I will not lose the strength to strike, and I may not die. So even if I die now, you need not feel apologetic, because I did not die at your hands.”

He suddenly turned and stared at Princess Yao Yue and said each word slowly, “Jiang Yu Lang will be the person who really killed me.”

Princess Yao Yue and Princess Lian Xing exchanged looks, surprised again.

After a moment, Princess Lian Xing asked fiercely, “What poison has he given you?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Nu’er Hong.”

Princess Lian Xing heaved a long sigh and looking at Princess Yao Yue, said

solemnly, “Looking at him now, it really looks like the symptoms of Nu’er Hong’s poison reacting.”

Princess Yao Yue’s face was totally pale and after a moment, she suddenly smiled icily and said, “This person is full of tricks, how can you believe his words.”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “It’s up to you whether to believe my words. Luckily when I was poisoned, there were a lot of witnesses.”

Princess Yao Yue immediately asked, “Who are they?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “There’s Tie Ping Gu, and someone called Herbalist Hu, and of course there’s Jiang Yu Lang who poisoned me.”

Lian Xing and Yao Yue exchanged looks again and the two of them suddenly flew off simultaneously. A gust of wind blew past and the both of them were already under a tree many feet away.

Princess Yao Yue and Princess Lian Xing reached the tree at the same time.

Princess Lian Xing asked, “What are your wishes?” Princess Yao Yue’s lips have turned pale and she did not speak.

Princess Lian Xing said, “If this Jiang Xiao Yu has really been poisoned by Jiang Yu Lang, then he really cannot be considered to have died in Hua Wu Que’s hands. If that is the case, won’t our plan become totally meaningless?”

Princess Yao Yue stammered, “I… I have suffered the pain for twenty years.”

Princess Lian Xing’s gaze lowered slowly with the fall of her hands and said, “You have suffered the pain for twenty years, and was I happy for the last twenty years?”

After a moment she continued, “But the pain we have suffered for the last twenty years is certainly not deserved, because in the whole world, only the two

of us knows this secret, only the two of us knows that they are brothers. If we do not reveal this secret ourselves, they will not know even when they die."

Princess Yao Yue's expression slowly warmed, and said, "That's right, they will never know."

Princess Lian Xing said, "Therefore sooner or later, they will die in the hands of the other, their fate has already been decided and besides the two of us, no one can change this."

She added slowly, "And the two of us will certainly not change it, right?"

Princess Yao Yue replied, "That's right."

Princess Lian Xing continued, "So we need not be impatient now, our wait may be painful, but aren't they in no less pain as well? We can watch them as they struggle with their fate, just like a cat watching the struggling mouse under it's paw. Besides, we've already waited twenty years, so why not wait for another two or three months?"

Princess Yao Yue said icily, "I know what you mean. You want to remove Jiang Xiao Yu's poison before ordering Hua Wu Que to kill him. You want him to thoroughly die at the hands of Hua Wu Que, right?"

There was a flash of gratifying smile in Princess Lian Xing's eyes and she said gently, "That's right, because that is the only way to make Hua Wu Que feel pain and regret, feel that living is worse than death. If you order him to kill Jiang Xiao Yu now, he will forgive himself, and even kill Jiang Yu Lang to avenge Xiao Yu'er. Then our plan would have become meaningless."

Princess Yao Yue was silent for a moment before saying, "But do you know if Xiao Yu'er is really poisoned?"

Princess Lian Xing replied, "We can find this out immediately."

Xiao Yu'er is still on the ground, shaking. Tie Xin Lan, Su Ying and Hua Wu Que

were not looking at him at all. Their eyes were staring unwaveringly at the Floral Princesses.

A pity that not only can they not see anything, but they can't hear a single word as well. They can only see that Princess Yao Yue's icy face was filled with venomous hatred and an aura of death. The more they looked, the more anxious they became and cold sweat unconsciously broke out in their palms for Xiao Yu'er.

Without knowing how much time has passed, the Floral Princesses finally walked over slowly. Hua Wu Que wanted to walk towards them, but he stopped his step as soon as he started it.

Princess Yao Yue walked to Xiao Yu'er and asked solemnly, "When you were poisoned, Tie Ping Gu saw it as well, right?"

Xiao Yu'er agreed, "Umm."

Princess Yao Yue said, "All right, tell her to come out, I'll ask her."

Xiao Yu'er grinned, "Did you think that there's only one way out of the belly of that mountain?"

Princess Yao Yue smiled coldly, "If there was another way out, why didn't you leave?"

Xiao Yu'er replied with an icy smile as well, "I did not leave, because I did want to honor my appointment with Hua Wu Que, but Tie Ping Gu has long gone. If you do not believe me, why don't you go down yourself for a look."

Before he could finish his words, Princess Yao Yue had already flown up the cliff like a cloud. The rope that Hua Wu Que threw down earlier was still tied there.

Princess Yao Yue slipped into that hole like a swimming fish and after a short while, flew out like a light breeze and the expression on her face seemed a little

surprised.

Xiao Yu’er smiled and asked, “Do you believe it now?”

Princess Yao Yue replied, “Humph.”

Xiao Yu’er added, “Then you should know as well that if I do not wish to fight with Hua Wu Que, I could have left with Tie Ping Gu long ago. There’s no need to wait till now and pretend to be dead.”

Princess Yao Yue was silent for a moment before saying, “Then do you know where Jiang Yu Lang is right now?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Of course I know. But I’m afraid once I reveal the place, you would not dare to look for him as well.”

Xiao Yu’er deliberately added one more sentence to agitate her, and added icily, “Maybe this is the only place that you dare not go, because I have not seen a woman who does not fear rats.”

Princess Yao Yue’s eyes gleamed and she asked, “Could you be referring to Wei Wu Ya? He’s in these mountains as well?”

Xiao Yu’er said with a cold smile, “Of course he’s in these mountains. Do you really not know, or are you pretending not to know?”

But there was no change in expression on Princess Yao Yue’s face at all. Although Xiao Yu’er was deliberately antagonizing her, she was unaffected at all.

Obviously, Wei Wu Ya holds no importance to her at all, and instead Xiao Yu’er is placed on a much higher scale than him.

At this point in time, Su Ying also felt that things are getting stranger and thought to herself, “No matter what, Wei Wu Ya is still a formidable character in the martial arts realm, and he does not mind hiding himself for the last twenty

years to formulate a set of martial arts just to counter Floral Palace's martial arts. Obviously he has great enmity with Floral Palace, but the Floral Princess has never taken this person to heart. But Xiao Yu'er has never even seen what the Floral Princess looks like and she does not even let go of any minute detail about him, to the extent of controlling her temper, so that Hua Wu Que can kill him personally. Why is that so?"

Slowly, she is beginning to feel that this matter is really mysterious and complicated.

Xiao Yu'er said, "All right, I'll bring you there, but I really can't walk now. Who will come and give me a hand?"

Hua Wu Que and Tie Xin Lan looked as if they wanted to extend their hands, but Hua Wu Que realized that the Floral Princesses were looking at him frostily, so he immediately turned his head around and looked at Tie Xin Lan, as if he wanted Tie Xin Lan to help Xiao Yu'er. But Tie Xin Lan realized that Hua Wu Que was looking at her and she immediately lowered her hand.

Su Ying smiled and said gently, "If you do not find me too slow, then let me help you."

Su Ying helped Xiao Yu'er and they had walked quite a distance but Hua Wu Que was still standing there in a daze while Tie Xin Lan's head dropped even lower, her tears flowing again.

Princess Lian Xing took a glance at Hua Wu Que, and took another glance at Tie Xin Lan and suddenly took Tie Xin Lan's hand and said gently, "You will walk with me."

Never in her dreams would Tie Xin Lan expect that the Floral Princess would take care of her, and does not know whether to feel surprise or joy. She only felt a soothing power flowing in from her palm and unconsciously flew out with Princess Lian Xing.

Hua Wu Que saw Princess Lian Xing actually holding Tie Xin Lan's hand and felt surprise and joy as well, but suddenly he thought of something and his brows

furrowed in sadness again.

Princess Yao Yue asked calmly, “Can you leave now?”

This may be a very common sentence, but to Hua Wu Que’s ears, there’s another feeling, because he realized that the Floral Princess has seen through what he is feeling.

And he does not speak to others what he feels.

End of Chapter 100

Chapter 90

Chapter 101

Xiao Yu’er said, “No matter what, Wei Wu Ya has treated you well, and you’ve also acknowledged him as your godfather. Now that the Floral Princesses are going to look for him, not only are you not anxious, but you’re leading the way instead. What logic is this?”

Su Ying did not speak, and after a moment, sighed softly.

Xiao Yu’er continued, “I know you must be hiding something and not saying it, could it be that earlier Tie Xin Lan….” He suddenly stopped talking, because by now Princess Lian Xing has caught up together with Tie Xin Lan.

Xiao Yu’er rolled his eyes and suddenly smiled at Tie Xin Lan, “How long have we not met? I’m afraid it’s been more than two months?”

Tie Xin Lan did not seem to expect that Xiao Yu’er would talk to her suddenly and in that instant, she seems to be at a loss, her face reddening and unable to speak.

Xiao Yu’er turned around again and smiled at Su Ying, saying “Look, it’s just been over two months and she has become so distant with me. I just asked her a question and she actually blushed.”

Su Ying sighed again and said “She has suffered enough, why must you continue to torture her.”

Xiao Yu’er turned towards Tie Xin Lan again and smiled, “Did you hear that, she said I’m torturing you. I’m just asking after you, can this be considered torturing

you?”

Tie Xin Lan can only shake her head, and the rims of her eyes reddened again.

Xiao Yu’er sighed and said, “I think, these past two months, many things must have happened. Because I realize that it’s only been a little more than two months since I last saw you, but you have changed a lot.”

Tie Xin Lan felt a stab of pain in her heart, and her tears unconsciously flowed down her cheeks, because she also realized that she has really changed.

In the past, as long as she sees Xiao Yu’er, no matter what happens or who else is beside her, she will run towards Xiao Yu’er regardless of anything. In the past, as lone as she sees Xiao Yu’er, she will forget everything.

But now Hua Wu Que’s position in her heart is getting bigger and bigger day by day, because for the past two months, a lot of things has really happened.

Even if she can forget how Hua Wu Que saved her life time and again, but how can she forget that when she was injured, the care and concern Hua Wu Que showed her?

Besides, even if she can forget all these, how can she forget the many unforgettable things that happened during that long journey.

She has only to close her eyes, and she can almost see Hua Wu Que manically laughing in pain, manically laughing and telling her not to bother about him, because he did not wish to see her in pain because of him.

When one knows that one is about to die, but is still concerned about another’s happiness and sadness, and disregard his own impending death, such feelings, how deep is it? Such feelings, who can forget it?

Princess Lian Xing looked at her all these while, and suddenly said icily, “Do you feel that you have changed as well?”

Tie Xin Lan stammered, “I… I…”

Before she can finish her second word, she was already sobbing uncontrollably.

Princess Lian Xing turned towards Xiao Yu’er and said coldly, “You need not ask her further, you should already know her answer.”

She did not wait for Xiao Yu’er to speak and suddenly smiled, “But maybe you’d rather not know, right?”

However Xiao Yu’er grinned at her and said, “If you think that I’m feeling bad, then you must have seen a ghost.” Is Xiao Yu’er truly not feeling bad at all? Only he will know the answer himself.

Su Ying was really walking slowly, and after walking for more than an hour, they can only see a dense forest in the distance. Xiao Yu’er said, “After that forest in front, is Wei Wu Ya’s rat hole…”

Before he could finish his words, he saw a fat and huge rat scurrying out from the forest and with a flash burrowed into the grass at the side.

After another moment, they heard some movement amongst the grass, like choppy waves, as if there were a lot of rats running about.

Xiao Yu’er raised a brow and said, “Wei Wu Ya have always treated these rats as his darlings, why would he let them run about now?”

Although Su Ying did not speak, but she was feeling even more worried. She is sure that right now something big must have happened at Wei Wu Ya’s cave, or else these rats would certainly not run out.

The wind were blowing even more impatiently and her steps unconsciously hastened. In the gloomy sky, someone can be seen hanging on a tree, swaying with the wind.

Xiao Yu’er raised his brow and said, “That’s strange, how is it possible that someone hanged himself at Wei Wu Ya’s front door?”

This person is really dead from hanging!

There’s no injuries on his body, but on the left side of his face, it was red and swollen, as if he was given a heavy slap before he died.

Princess Lian Xing raised her brow and asked, “This person is a disciple of Wei Wu Ya?”

Xiao Yu’er did not reply, but loosened the person’s clothes. And saw that on his chest there were really two lines of blue words. ‘The followers of Wu Ya, rather be killed than humiliated.’

Xiao Yu’er said, “Now you should know. I guess someone wanted to go into Wei Wu Ya’s rat hole and he could not stop that person and was given a tight slap instead. He’s afraid that Wei Wu Ya would take care of him so he was so frightened he hanged himself first. It seems like he’s not the only one who hanged himself.”

There really is more than one person who hanged himself. In the forest, there were more than ten hanging corpses, each of them with a swollen left cheek, and some of their bones in the cheek were even shattered.

Xiao Yu’er mumbled, “This person’s arm strength is really powerful, just a simple slap and he smashed their faces, I wonder who could it be? He actually dare to come and create trouble for Wei Wu Ya, he must be quite brave.”

He lowered his head and realized that on the ground there were lots of bloody teeth. Obviously this person’s slap not only broke other’s bones and made the face swell, but actually knocked the teeth out from them as well. These ten over people looked as if they did not even have the chance to retaliate.

Xiao Yu’er can’t help but secretly feel startled. He knows that the martial arts of Wei Wu Ya’s disciples are not weak. After staying silent for a moment, he

mumbled, “It seems like the person who struck them, his martial arts is at least a few times better than mine.”

Su Ying was getting more and more worried, because she knows that Wei Wu Ya’s martial arts is not that much higher than Xiao Yu’er. If this person’s martial arts is many times better than Xiao Yu’er, then Wei Wu Ya would most likely have perished under his hands.

Xiao Yu’er continued, ‘But this person obviously did not use his real skills and was just conveniently slapping out. Not only were they unable to block, they can’t even avoid it. Obviously this person struck quickly, his speed is even much faster than mine. Just a slap from him can smash their bones, apparently his internal strength is a lot stronger than mine.”

Su Ying turned around to look and saw that the Floral Princesses looked extremely serious, obviously they agreed with Xiao Yu’er’s deductions. After a moment, Princess Yao Yue suddenly said, “How long do you think they have been dead?”

This question was actually posed to Xiao Yu’er. Obviously the Floral Princess who disregard everything else, is now beginning to take into regard Xiao Yu’er’s opinions.

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Only when a person has been dead for more than three hours, will his body become totally cold.”

Princess Lian Xing asked, “Then when do you think this happened?”

Xiao Yu’er answered, “Before dusk yesterday.”

Princess Lian Xing asked, “How do you know?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Because I know five hours ago, that Miss Tie was here. If these people were not dead, they would certainly bring her into that rat cave, so when Hua Wu Que arrives, he will certainly have to fight with Wei Wu Ya, and when you come looking for Hua Wu Que, you’ll certainly clash with Wei Wu Ya as

well.”

Princess Lian Xing took a look at Hua Wu Que and said, “That’s right.”

Xiao Yu’er continued, “But obviously you did not find Hua Wu Que here, so we can see that at that time Hua Wu Que and Miss Tie left on their own accord, right?”

Princess Lian Xing said, “Then why can’t it be that they died five hours ago? Why must it be before dusk yesterday?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “It is noon now, five hours ago, the sky is still dark.”

He suddenly smiled at Princess Lian Xing and added, “If you were to come and find trouble with Wei Wu Ya, would you have come at night?”

Princess Lian Xing was silent for a moment before replying calmly, “No.”

Xiao Yu’er said, “That’s right, you most certainly will not, because if you look for someone at night, won’t you be lowering your own status. Besides, the darker it is, the more advantageous it is for people like Wei Wu Ya. You are fighting with Wei Wu Ya at the place that he lives in so you’ll have lost the advantage in location, so if you come at night, you’ll lose the advantage of light.”

Princess Lian Xing took a look at Princess Yao Yue, and although she did not say anything, but from her eyes it seems that she has revealed a hint of appreciation.

Xiao Yu’er said, “Looking at the way this person struck, we know that he must be aboveboard in the way he does things. Besides, for someone who can accomplish his standard of martial arts, will certainly not be stupid. Therefore I can be sure that he will certainly not come at night. Since he did not come at night, then it must have been before dusk yesterday.”

He clapped his hands and grinned, “Does everyone think that my suggestion is good?”

Princess Yao Yue said icily, “Such reasoning is already very obvious and simple, anyone would have seen that.”

Xiao Yu’er chortled, “Since you can tell as well, why did you still ask me.”

Princess Yao Yue’s expression turned somber, and no longer bothered about him. With a sway of her body, she flew towards the forest. Xiao Yu’er made a face behind her back and laughed, “You don’t have to be angry. Actually I know that although you’re not saying it out, but you admire me secretly.”

After the forest, there was a mountain wall in front, separating heaven and earth like a screen. Interlocking vines grew on the wall, totally covering the color of the mountain rocks.

Princess Yao Yue did not see any holes or caves, and turned around and asked, “Where is the place that Wei Wu Ya stays?”

Although she was looking at Princess Lian Xing when she spoke, actually she knows that Princess Lian Xing does not know as well, so naturally this question is aimed at Xiao Yu’er.

However Xiao Yu’er deliberately pretended not to know, and raised his head heavenward, mumbling, “I thought that it would rain, who would have expected the weather to turn better again.”

Princess Yao Yue stared at him and said fiercely, “Where is Wei Wu Ya’s cave?”

Xiao Yu’er seems to be stunned and said, “Such a simple and obvious thing, why do you need to ask me?”

Princess Yao Yue’s face paled from anger, speechless.

Su Ying helped Xiao Yu’er walk over, and swept a section of vines away.

The vines were grown tightly together, but more than half of them has dried

up and died. Sweeping away the vines, a dark cave was revealed, and not even a trace of light can be seen inside.

Xiao Yu’er said, “This is it, everyone, please come in.”

With Wei Wu Ya’s reputation and the scores of disciples he has, no one would expect that he’ll actually live in a little cave that’s worse than a dog hole.

Everyone can’t help but feel surprise, especially Hua Wu Que. He saw that Su Ying’s cave is so elegant and exquisite, and thought that Wei Wu Ya’s residence would certainly be a bigger eye opener. He can’t help but ask, “This is where Wei Wu Ya lives?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “That’s right, are you feeling perplexed?”

Hua Wu Que wanted to say something else, but after taking a look at Princess Yao Yue, lowered his head again.

As Xiao Yu’er spoke, he has already going in. His body was stumbling, his steps unsteady, obviously he has not regained any strength.

Princess Yao Yue furrowed her brows and said fiercely, “Stop there!”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “Why do you want me to stop? Who knows what strange thing has happened in this rat cave, for all you know we’ll be walking towards death. Isn’t it good that I’m checking out the place for you first?”

Princess Lian Xing replied, “Precisely because the first person to walk will be in danger, that’s why she wants you to stop.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed loudly, “I did not expect you to be so concerned about me. Thank you, thank you. But since I’ve been poisoned, it’s very boring to be alive, and dying is just what I needed.”

Princess Yao Yue said frostily, “You won’t be able to die.”

Xiao Yu’er felt a swish of the wind, and Princess Yao Yue has already flown in front of him through a gap next to him which was less than a feet, without even touching his clothes.

On witnessing such Lightness Skill, Xiao Yu’er can’t help but sigh and mumble, “If Wei Wu Ya is already dead, that would be his fortune, or else if he were to end up in the hands of these two great Princesses, he’ll most likely end up like me, unable even to die.”

Everyone followed Princess Yao Yue and walked for ten over steps and turned left, and this dark and narrow cave suddenly opened up into a wide passageway.

On both sides of the passageway were stones as smooth and shiny as white jade and on the top it seems that there’s light shining through but the source of light cannot be seen.

Tie Xin Lan, Hua Wu Que and the Floral Princesses really did not expect that there will be another world in this cave, and can’t help but more or less reveal looks of admiration and surprise on their faces.

Xiao Yu’er grinned and said, “Are all of you feeling perplexed? Wait till you see what is inside, it will be an even stranger scene. Although I have never been to the palace, but I think the palace may not be any prettier than Wei Wu Ya’s rat cave.

He laughed as he spoke, as if he’s afraid that others won’t be able to hear him. The passageway was filled with his echo, his laughter can be heard everywhere.

Princess Lian Xing said icily, “Even if you do not speak, no one will think that you’re a mute.”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “Are you afraid Wei Wu Ya will hear?”

Without waiting for Princess Lian Xing to reply, he continued with a laugh, “If I want to find someone and create trouble, then I must walk in openly. If I’m

afraid of being heard and behave furtively, then I cannot be considered a true hero."

Princess Lian Xing did not reply, but just called out calmly, "Wei Wu Ya, listen, there're visitors from Floral Palace, come out."

Her words were not spoken loudly, but it covered Xiao Yu'er's laughter and each word was sent far away, but besides her echo, not a single sound was heard.

Su Ying's expression became even more worried.

By now Wei Wu Ya is most likely dead. If he is not dead, he will not wait for Xiao Yu'er to talk and laugh loudly, and all the more he will not wait for Princess Lian Xing to speak out, the traps in the passageway would have been activated long ago.

Suddenly Princess Yao Yue stopped walking and said, "Look, what is this?"

Everyone turned their eyes towards her and realized that on the ground, there's a line of footsteps, after every three feet, there'll be one. Even if the steps were taken with a measured ruler, it won't be as neat as this.

The stones on the ground of this passageway are the same as those on the walls, smooth and solid. Even if a knife was used to carve it, it won't be easy.

But this person's footsteps are even clearer than if it's carved with a knife.

Princess Lian Xing said, "This person came to look for Wei Wu Ya, why did he waste his energy here and vent his frustration on these stones."

Xiao Yu'er shook his head and laughed, "From what I see, the person who said these words is really a little dumb."

Princess Lian Xing fumed, "What did you say?"

Xiao Yu’er said, “From what I know, just in this passageway alone, there is at least ten over traps hidden here, and each one can take your life.”

Princess Lian Xing asked, “How do you know?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “Because I have tried at least thirteen types.”

He continued, “Since this person is here to seek trouble with Wei Wu Ya, he must know Wei Wu Ya very well, and he will surely be very careful walking in this passageway and all his internal strength filled and ready to be used anytime. Look at the distance between his steps, it’s so neat that we can imagine his situation at that time.”

Princess Lian Xing replied, “That’s right, when a person’s martial arts is at the peak, when he gathers his internal energy, his every move will surely be well structured.”

Xiao Yu’er said, “But he did not know when the traps will be activated, so his concentrated energy is ever at the ready to strike, that’s why he unconsciously left his footsteps on the ground.”

He took a glance at Princess Lian Xing and added with a laugh, “From this we can see that this person is not stupid, it’s just that his internal energy is too great.”

Princess Lian Xing’s expression turned somber and did not speak.

Princess Yao Yue said, “But none of the traps in this passageway was activated, right?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “That’s right. When the traps are activated, they will certainly leave some traces regardless of whether anyone was injured, and will need someone to clean up the place before it can return to normal. But once this person walked in, all the people in the cave seemed to have died, or else we would have seen at least ten or more types of traps on our way here.”

Princess Yao Yue said, “But when this person came, there must be someone still in the cave, so why weren’t the traps activated?”

Xiao Yu’er rolled his eyes and said, “Although I did not see the circumstance in which this person walked in, but I can imagine that he would be like us, announcing himself as he walked , ‘Wei Wu Ya, listen, so and so is here to see you!’ The traps were not activated, it must be that once Wei Wu Ya heard his name, he was shocked and knew that even if he activated the traps it would be useless, and was also afraid of antagonizing this person, so he might as well try to be more gracious.”

The two sisters took a glace at one another, as if they suddenly thought of a person. Only Xiao Yu’er knows that they have thought wrongly.

Su Ying suddenly said, “Looking at this person’s footsteps, he must be at least half a size bigger than the average person. Obviously his build must be very solid. A simple step of his is already three feet wide, obviously he has very long legs.”

She noticed that everyone’s eyes were looking at her, as if waiting for her to continue talking.

She continued, “From what I know, in the whole world, there is only one person with such great internal strength, and rumors said that his build is the same as this person.”

The Floral Princesses took another look at each other, and Princess Lian Xing asked quietly, “Who.”

Su Ying replied, “The great hero Yan Nan Tian!”

Naturally the Floral Princesses have long thought that this person is Yan Nan Tian, but now that they suddenly heard the three words ‘Yan Nan Tian’, the two sisters who is as calm as the snowy water on the frozen lake, cannot help but reveal a change in their expression. The two sisters can’t help but took a look at Xiao Yu’er, but immediately retracted their gaze.

Xiao Yu’er’s eyes were also studying the changes in their expressions.

Only Xiao Yu’er knows that this person is certainly not Yan Nan Tian, because even though Yan Nan Tian is still alive, his internal strength would not recover so quickly.

But he rolled his eyes, clapped and said, “That’s right, this person must be Hero Yan Nan Tian, besides Hero Yan, who else would be so highly skilled, have such great strength.”

Princess Yao Yue suddenly said, “This person will never be Yan Nan Tian!”

Princess Yao Yue added coldly, “Even if he is not dead, he would not be much different from being dead.”

Princess Lian Xing said, “That’s right, this person loves fame. In the past, he must do something that everyone knows every one or two months. If he is not dead, why isn’t there any news of him at all these past twenty odd years?”

Su Ying’s eyes shimmered, and she asked slowly, “Why don’t you go in and have a look, maybe he’s still in there.”

Before she could finish her words, the two Floral Princesses flew past the passageway.

Even Hua Wu Que and Tie Xin Lan were dragged along by them.

End of Chapter 101

Chapter 91

Chapter 102

Tie Xin Lan was coincidentally standing between Hua Wu Que and Xiao Yu'er again. She dare not even lift her head, her expression is so sad, so piteous.

Hua Wu Que's eyes were filled with dilemma and pain as well. He lifted his head, as if he wanted to say something, but did not utter even a single word and just continued walking quickly with his head lowered.

Who would have expected that Xiao Yu'er would suddenly pounce in front of him and say with a smile, "Thank you."

Hua Wu Que was silent for a moment before forcing out a smile, "There's nothing you need to thank me about."

Xiao Yu'er sighed and said, "Now that three months has past, I know that you no longer treat me as your friend, but you still helped me kept some secrets. Naturally I should thank you."

Hua Wu Que was silent for a long moment again. Every word he spoke, seemed to be filled with difficulty and after a moment, he said slowly, "You need not thank me, it's just that I've never been a talkative person."

Xiao Yu'er replied, "But you should be telling your Teacher this, and you did not say a single word. Naturally this is because of me, only friends will keep secrets for one another, enemies…"

The muscles on Hua Wu Que's face twitched and he said fiercely, "But I am not such a conniving person!" As soon as he spoke this sentence, he has dashed past

Xiao Yu’er and went in.

Xiao Yu’er sighed again and mumbled, “Precisely because you’re too much a gentleman, that’s why you don’t have the courage to rebel. Why can’t you learn to be like me, and become a traitor as well…”

Tie Xin Lan suddenly covered her face and dashed away.

Su Ying immediately called out to her loudly but she ignored her. There is only one thought in her mind, and that is to go far away from this place, far away from these people.

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “If a person is determined to leave, no one would be able to stop him.”

Although he is smiling, but no one would expect that Xiao Yu’er’s smile can actually be so miserable as well.

Su Ying said, “But you will certainly be able to stop her.”

Xiao Yu’er suddenly jumped up and shouted, “What do you want me to do? Do you want me to chain her down? Or do I have to go down on my knees, hold her legs and cry miserably!”

Su Ying looked at him dully, her gaze slowly blurring, the corner of her eyes slowly gathered two drops of crystal clear tears, which flowed down her pale face, landing on her clothes.

Xiao Yu’er turned his head around, not looking at her and said icily, “You should be happy that she’s gone, what are you crying about?”

Su Ying said through her tears, “Now I wish that I can be like her as well, and go far, far away, never to see you become angry because of her, be sad and troubled because of her.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed loudly, “I’m sad? I’m troubled? Why should I be troubled?”

Su Ying replied, “Because this time she’s leaving you, and not you’re leaving her.”

Such a simple sentence, but it involves the deepest and most complicated reasoning and just like a needle, pierced directly through Xiao Yu’er’s heart.

Xiao Yu’er jumped up again and said, “Since that is the case, why didn’t you leave?”

Su Ying can only use her tears in place of an answer.

Xiao Yu’er suddenly hugged her, his lips pressing down hard on her lips. He hugged her so tightly, as if he wants to crush her into pieces.

Su Ying seemed to have totally buckled, but suddenly, she used all her strength to hammer on his chest, calling out, “Let me go, let me go.”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “You… don’t you like…”

He suddenly released his hold, and covered his mouth with his hands, his lips seem to be bleeding and his expression changed, which seemed to be anger, or confusion. Su Ying had already retreated to the corner of the wall, panting hard.

Xiao Yu’er finally heaved a long sigh and said with a bitter smile, “Only now did I realize that I’ve made a mistake.”

Tears flowed down Su Ying’s eyes again, and she said, “You’re not mistaken, and it’s not that I do not wish you to… to hug me, but I really do not want you to hug of me, and yet think of someone else.”

Xiao Yu’er was silent for a moment, and just as he lifted his head, his words still unspoken, he realized that Princess Lian Xing was already standing at the end of the passage way and looking at them frostily.

In the middle of this place, there's a very, very huge stone chair, carved from a whole piece of rock. Although it's a stone, but it's clearer than jade, not a flaw or discoloring to be seen. The chilling air in the cave can penetrate into a person's body, but if one sits on this stone chair, he will immediately feel as warm as spring.

A stone chair like this, is unlikely that there will be another one in the world, but now this stone chair has been cut into two by a sword!

Princess Yao Yue and Hua Wu Que is in front of this stone chair, staring at the place where the stone chair was cut, the expression on their faces extremely serious.

Princess Yao Yue did not speak, and after a while, she suddenly took out a dark green short sword from within her spacious white robe.

The sword was seventeen inches long, and on a glance it did not look very polished, but on another look, one will feel that it carries a forceful, dense air that makes one find difficulty even in opening the eyes.

Princess Yao Yue seems to treasure this short sword very much, using her finger tips to gently hold the sword. She hesitated for a long moment before handing the sword to Hua Wu Que and said, "Use 90% of your strength and strike once on this stone chair."

Hua Wu Que replied, "Yes."

He received the sword with both hands, and realized that for a sword this short, it's heavy weight is beyond his expectations, and once his fingers touched the body of the sword, he felt a wave of cold air penetrating right into his heart.

Hua Wu Que dare not ask further, and with his right hand holding the sword and his left foot taking a step forward, and using a common stoke, the light from the sword cutting towards the stone chair like lightning.

He has gathered almost all his energy into his wrist. Even if this sword is not a sharp weapon made to cut gold or jade, but just a bamboo sword, this strike would still be enough to smash the stone to smithereens!

There was a ‘clang’, and sparks flew. This sword only managed to cut about one foot into the stone chair and it got stuck in the stone.

Hua Wu Que’s hand held onto the handle of the sword, stunned for a moment, cold sweat breaking out on his forehead.

The person who split this stone chair, even if he was using a similar precious and sharp sword, his internal energy would be more than ten times higher than his!

That there would actually be such a highly skilled person in the world, is simply unimaginable.

Princess Yao Yue seemed to have sighed, and said calmly, “I’ve long heard that the solidity of the Jade Tablet Stone is unparalleled in the world, now it seems like it’s really the truth. This person can split the Jade Stone into two, his sword skills are not bad either.”

Hua Wu Que can’t help but say, “This person’s sword skills may be great, but I’m afraid his internal strength will be even…”

Princess Yao Yue interrupted him and said icily, “The back of this chair is five foot high, and he can cut it with one stroke, but you can only cut about one feet with your attack, so you think his strength must me at least three times higher than yours, right?

Hua Wu Que replied, “Disciple is ashamed.”

He added, “When disciple struck at the stone, I felt that there’s still a lot of strength remaining, and I can cut it down to at least three feet, but I did not expect that once the sword cut in about a foot, all the remaining strength was used up. From this I know that the further I try to cut it down, the more difficult

it would be.”

Princess Yao Yue agreed, “That’s right.”

Hua Wu Que continued, “When disciple had cut one feet through this stone chair, I only used 30% of my strength, but when I went down another three inches, I have used up 70% of my strength. This person can split this stone chair down five feet with one stroke, his strength is surely more than three times of mine.”

Princess Yao Yue smiled slightly, “You’re wrong, you need not disparage yourself. In the whole world, there is none whose strength can be three times higher than yours, it’s just that you do not understand the logic behind this.”

Hua Wu Que lowered his head, “Yes, disciple is ignorant.”

Princess Yao Yue said, “That person can split the stone chair in one stroke, but you can’t, not because his strength is many times better than yours, but because he is more adept at using the sword than you.”

The logic behind these words may seem simple, but actually it’s the most complex martial arts logic. Hua Wu Que was carefully digesting the information, and realizing that it is extremely useful, felt surprise and joy.

Princess Yao Yue added, “This person is not only more adept than you, but his speed is faster as well, because ‘speed’ is ‘strength’, that’s why he can do what you cannot. If you were to fight with him, within fifty strokes, he will be able to block your sword attacks, within a hundred strokes, I’m afraid he’ll be able to take your head!”

Cold sweat beaded on Hua Wu Que’s forehead again.

Princess Yao Yue continued, “Besides this, when he was striking with his sword, he must be full of fury, thinking only to take someone’s life, and did not consider whether his stroke will be able to cut the stone chair into two. Therefore, the way he struck would naturally be different, but when you struck,

you're only thinking of how deeply you can cut into this stone chair. Your stance is already weaker by 70% compared to this person. If you're the same when fighting with others, that would be very dangerous."

Hua Wu Que dared not lift up his head on hearing these words, his sweat penetrating his layers of clothes.

Suddenly someone clapped and laughed, "The Floral Princess giving such a penetrating lecture about the theory of martial arts, it is indeed a eye opening information, that even I can't help but feel a little impressed with you."

Xiao Yu'er has already walked in with a grin. If it was someone else, whose mouth has just been bitten raw, he would surely try to cover the wound.

But Xiao Yu'er did not care at all, his eyes turned, and suddenly stared at that dark green short sword, and his countenance changed, "Could this be the legendary ancient weapon, the remarkable Fine Blood Zhao Dan Qing?"

Princess Yao Yue said icily, "Your eyesight is not too bad."

Xiao Yu'er said, "It seems that since ancient times, when remarkable weapons are being made, the blood of a living person must be used as a sacrifice to the sword before it can be made, and there are some who would not even mind killing themselves with the sword. Since the beginning of time, the history of every sword, will surely be a moving yet sad story!"

Princess Yao Yue replied, "This is not the time to tell stories."

Xiao Yu'er ignored her and continued, "Only this Fine Blood Zhao Dan Qing, when a person's blood was used as sacrifice, the sword still cannot be made. The sword maker's wife, son and daughter all sacrificed and killed themselves with the sword, but it was useless as well. In his grief, the sword maker himself jumped into the cauldron. Who would have expected that after he jumped in, the fire immediately flared up and after burning for a long one, a passing Taoist Priest managed to complete the making of the sword. Legend says that when this sword was taken out of the stove, the sky turned color, there was a loud thunder, which shocked the Taoist Priest, and coincidentally fell onto the sword,

thus becoming the first casualty of the sword since it's birth."

After he finished speaking, Xiao Yu'er smiled and said, "Of course these words are the stories of the descendants, and cannot be believed. Imagine, if all those people are dead, who would be able to tell the story?"

Princess Yao Yue replied, "That's right, it should not be believed, but there is one matter which you must believe."

Xiao Yu'er asked, "What is that?"

Princess Yao Yue said, "When the sword maker fell into the cauldron, in his fury and grief, he made a curse, saying that if this sword can be made, anyone who sees this sword in future, will certainly die under the sword." She stared at Xiao Yu'er icily, and said each word slowly, "Only this matter, you must believe it."

On hearing this, Su Ying can't help but shivered, and turned her head away, not daring to take another look at that cursed weapon.

Hua Wu Que suddenly took out the sword from the stone, and took it back to Princess Yao Yue with both hands. Princess Yao Yue's eyes shimmered, and she said calmly, "You keep it."

Hua Wu Que's expression changed, and he lowered his head and said, "Disciple…"

Before he could finish his words, Xiao Yu'er laughed loudly again, "You're giving the sword to him, is it because you want him to use this sword to kill me? But don't you forget, if the curse of the sword maker is really so effective, you will have to die under this sword as well?"

Princess Yao Yue's expression suddenly turned ashen as well, her gaze suddenly turned sharply towards Hua Wu Que, but Princess Lian Xing immediately interrupted and said, "Wu Que, go and find Tie Xin Lan."

Hua Wu Que seemed shocked and asked hoarsely, “She…” He took a look at Xiao Yu’er and shut up immediately.

Princess Yao Yue said, “She has left. With her strength, she won’t be able to go far, you will surely be able to catch up with her.”

Hua Wu Que lowered his head and said, “Disciple… disciple…”

Princess Lian Xing asked angrily, “What about you? Are you going to disobey my words?”

Hua Wu Que took another look at Xiao Yu’er, and although his expression was full of pain and hesitation, but he dare not speak further and dashed out immediately.

Xiao Yu’er seemed not to have noticed him at all, and asked, “When you came in, there’s no one in this rat hole already?”

After hearing those words earlier, Princess Yao Yue seems to be still troubled by it.

Princess Lian Xing said seriously, “Not a single person was seen.”

Xiao Yu’er furrowed his brows, “Then what about Wei Wu Ya, could he have escaped.” Although Su Ying did not speak, she can’t help but reveal a look of pleasant surprise.

Xiao Yu’er rolled his eyes, and said, “Can you help me walk around and take a look?”

Even if Wei Wu Ya is the world’s most cruel and vicious villain, but when he does things, he really goes all out to do it, and he actually almost dug out the entire belly of the mountain.

Besides this main cave that looks like a palace, countless small caves were built

on all four sides, each of them lined up like honeycomb cells.

Su Ying helped Xiao Yu'er walk over to each of them, and saw that every room was very neat, or rather very grand, and all of them has a very soft and comfortable bed.

Xiao Yu'er sighed, "I think I have not slept in such comfortable beds for two or three years, I didn't expect that these little rats would live a more comfortable life than me."

Su Ying said, "Wei… Wei Wu Ya may be very mean to his disciples, but as long as they do not commit any mistakes, the comfort for their daily living are not bad."

Xiao Yu'er asked, "But why would the rats want to move away? Could it be that they have known that the cat is coming? Even if Wei Wu Ya is extremely capable, but I don't think he can foretell the future."

Su Ying was silent for a moment before saying, "That's right, if this person came unexpectedly, Wei Wu Ya would never be able to know. If he escaped in a rush, then his departure would not be so orderly."

Xiao Yu'er added, "Besides, he has trained hard over the last twenty years here, and built so many traps, with the sole purpose of preparing himself to deal with Hero Yan and the Floral Princesses."

Su Ying nodded her head, "That's right, he did have this intention."

Xiao Yu'er said, "But now he has left, why is that so? Can you think of a reason why?"

Su Ying smiled bitterly, "I can't."

Xiao Yu'er continued, "Besides this, there's another matter I can't seem to reason it out."

Su Ying asked, “Oh?”

Xiao Yu’er said, “When I was seriously injured the other day, Wei Wu Ya suddenly left hurriedly to receive an honored guest. Only now do I realize that this honored guest is Jiang Bie He.”

Su Ying agreed, “That’s right.”

Xiao yu’er said, “Jiang Bie He may be the Hero of Jiang Nan, but the four words ‘Hero of Jiang Nan’, I’m afraid it’s not even worth a single cent on Wei Wu Ya’s eyes.”

Su Ying said, “So it seems that they have known each other long ago, or else Jiang Bie He would not be able to find him.”

Xiao Yu’er added, “This is something that I can’t figure out again. Jiang Bie He’s fame in the martial arts realm only started a few years ago, but Wei Wu Ya has been in hiding here for at least seventeen to eighteen years, so how did they get to know one another?”

He sighed and continued, “Since these two are now in cahoots, Wei Wu Ya has a greater advantage now, so he shouldn’t have left, but he did. Therefore I suspect that there must be some plot in this matter, or it could possibly be a trap they deliberately laid. Once I stepped in, I felt that there’s something wrong in this place.”

Suddenly someone asked, “What’s wrong?”

This voice suddenly came from behind them, but not only were Su Ying and Xiao Yu’er not startled, they did not even turn back for a look, because they know that the Floral Princess will certainly follow them, and they know that with the Floral Princess’s Lightness Skill, they will certainly not be able to detect her.

Xiao Yu’er said, “Although there’s not a single person here, but I feel that there’s a murderous air in here, as if we’ve walked into a grave and will never be able to leave.”

Princess Lian Xing said icily, “That is only your imagination at work.”

Xiao Yu’er said, “It may just be my imagination, but no matter what, I do not wish to stay in this place any longer. If you do not wish to leave, I’ll make a move first…”

Before he could finish his words, someone suddenly chuckled, “I’m afraid it’s too late for you to leave now.”

Although Xiao Yu’er’s life up to now is not considered very long, he has heard many types of laughter. However, no matter how horrible the laughter sound, when compared to this laughter, they become like music from heaven. And he also knows that in the whole world, only one person’s voice would sound so horrible.

The Floral Princesses and Su Ying’s expression suddenly changed.

Xiao Yu’er can’t help but cry out, “Wei Wu Ya is still here!” Since everyone in the cave has left, why is Wei Wu Ya still here?

That person chuckled, “That’s right, I am still here! I have waited a long time for everyone’s grand arrival.”

The laughter came from a stone room next door.

Amidst this piercing laughter, the stone wall of the cave suddenly opened miraculously, and a very small and exquisite vehicle with two wheels slid out from the stone wall.

This vehicle is made from a shiny gold metal, and looks very light and maneuverable, and on it sat a child like dwarf.

His knees were on the wheelchair, and his legs cannot be seen at all.

His eyes were crafty and vicious, having the color of dull gray that reminds one of desperation, but sometimes revealing a glimpse of innocent mischief, like a mischievous child.

His face was twisted and scary, looking like a hungry wolf that's waiting to eat someone up, but the corners of his mouth revealed a trace of a sweet smile.

What Xiao Yu'er said was correct, this person is really made up of poison and honey. You obviously know when he is going to kill you, but you can't help but pity him as well.

Once the Floral Princess saw him, she can't help but stiffen, not willing to get even another inch closer to him, like a person who has suddenly seen a poisonous snake.

Wei Wu Ya said lazily, "What you have said earlier is correct, this place is already a grave, you can forget about leaving!"

Princess Yao Yue's expression changed, "What did you say?"

Wei Wu Ya replied, "This place is the key position of the traps in all the caves, now that I have sealed all exits, even a fly can forget about flying out, not to mention humans."

In his surprise, Xiao Yu'er wanted to rush out to take a look, but he suddenly stopped, because he knows that since Wei Wu Ya can say something like that, he is certainly not lying.

He rolled his eyes and laughed instead, "You have sealed all exits?"

Wei Wu Ya replied, "That's right."

Xiao Yu'er laughed, "Then, you do not wish to leave either?"

Wei Wu Ya replied, "I no longer wish to leave."

End of Chapter 102

Chapter 92

Chapter 103

Xiao Yu'er chortled, "Who would believe your words? Even if you want to bury them alive here, you can find someone else to activate the traps, why do you want to accompany them to their deaths here?"

Wei Wu Ya said calmly, "Because I want to see them die with my own eyes, see with my own eyes the pain they suffer before death. I also want to see with my own eyes when tortured with hunger and fear, can they still maintain their saintly composure!"

Xiao Yu'er took a glance at the Floral Princesses, and saw that the sisters seem to have suddenly turned into two stone statues, not moving at all. Xiao Yu'er rolled his eyes and suddenly laughed loudly, "But you will do that, because you know that you are not their match, or else you could have killed them while dueling, without a need to sacrifice yourself as well, right?"

Wei Wu Ya sighed, "That's right, I had thought that these twenty years, my martial arts have improved a lot, enough to kill them, but until I met Jiang Bie He, I realized that I was wrong."

Xiao Yu'er can't help but feel startled, "Why must you wait until you see him before realizing that you're wrong?"

Wei Wu Ya said, "Twenty years ago, Jiang Bie He's martial arts were nothing at all, but now he can be considered one of the most highly skilled in the martial arts realm. Even his martial arts have improved so much these twenty years, much less the Floral Princesses. If the improvement of my martial arts is on the same pace of the Floral Princesses, then I will still be unable to defeat them even if I train for another twenty years. Besides, there are two of them, while there's

only one of me.”

He smiled, and continued, “That’s why I thought it over, and can only use this method.”

Xiao Yu’er said, “Since that is the case, it will still be very easy for them to kill you, you…”

Wei Wu Ya said icily, “These doors are all made from huge stones weighing ten thousand kilos, and not that it’s been sealed, I’m afraid even I won’t be able to open it myself.”

Xiao Yu’er was as still as a rock as well, unable to talk anymore.

Wei Wu Ya added, “Besides, even if you know that the doors have been sealed tight in here, you will still carry a glimmer of hope, and I am your only hope, so I take it that you will never kill me?”

He suddenly smiled, “Ying’er, why are you hiding outside, not daring to come in?”

Su Ying walked in with lowered head, her face frighteningly pale.

Wei Wu Ya stared at her for a long moment, then took a glance at the Floral Princesses and said, “I have always treated you well, do you know why?”

Su Ying lowered her head and replied, “I… I do not know.”

Wei Wu Ya smiled, “If you were to take a look at the two Princesses, and then look into a mirror yourself, you will know.”

Xiao Yu’er felt a lurch in his heart, and only now did he realize that besides the looks between Su Ying and the Floral Princesses, which bear a 70% similarity, they are all great beauties, their complexion so pale, their expression so cold, that they look like mother and daughter or sisters. Su Ying does not know

whether to feel surprise or joy, and asked, “You treated me well, is it because you want me to grow up to be like them?”

Wei Wu Ya said, “That’s right, or else of all the orphaned girls in the world, why did I save only you? I have always acceded to all your wishes, because I want to groom you into someone haughty and cold. I want you to stay there alone, because I want to nurture isolation in your character…”

Su Ying asked, “You tried all ways and means, just to make me turn out exactly like them?”

Xiao Yu’er clapped and laughed, “Now I understand, so your beloved is the Floral Princesses, but because you cannot have them, so love turned into hatred, that’s why you hate them to the core.”

He is the world’s smartest ugly dwarf, but he would actually fall in love with the world’s most dignified, most beautiful women. This thing is really unimaginable, strangely wonderful.

The more Xiao Yu’er thought of it, the more he felt it funny, and he was laughing so hard that he was panting.

But Wei Wu Ya looked very serious and said slowly, “Twenty over years ago, I made a special trip to Floral Palace, to seek their hand in marriage…”

Xiao Yu’er panted and laughed, “You… you went to seek their hand in marriage?”

Wei Wu Ya said with a straight face, “This is the union of intelligence and beauty, it is the world’s most serious, most compatible thing, why are you laughing!”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Yes, yes, yes. This matter is really the most compatible thing, but a pity that not only did they not agree, but they wanted to kill you as well, and that’s how your enmity started, right?”

Wei Wu Ya sighed, and although he did not say anything, his silence expressed his agreement.

Taking another look at the Floral Princesses, they were already shaking with anger.

Xiao Yu'er rolled his eyes and said with a grin, "It's your honor that a great hero like him would come and seek your hand in marriage, why didn't you agree to it? I feel that it's really a pity."

Wei Wu Ya laughed loudly, "You need not antagonize them to make them strike at me. Even if they killed me, you won't stand to gain either. If you're really smart, you should convince them not to kill me. When I cannot withstand the hunger myself, I may think of a way to open those sealed doors."

Xiao Yu'er stared at him for a long moment before saying, "That's right, you really do not have to die now. I still have a lot of questions for you."

Wei Wu Ya said, "The first thing you want to ask me, is who exactly is the person who came earlier and could cut the stone chair? Is that right?"

Xiao Yu'er replied, "Wrong, there's no need for me to ask you this now, because I understand now. No one came at all."

Wei Wu Ya laughed loudly, "No one came at all? Then could it be me who left those footprints in the passageway?"

Xiao Yu'er said, "The footsteps on the passageway were carved by you, that's why they are so neat."

Wei Wu Ya's eyes glimmered and asked, "Then who killed those people in the woods?"

Xiao Yu'er replied, "Naturally you killed them yourself. You slapped them, so naturally they dare not fight back or avoid the attack. If you want them to hang themselves, they won't dare to jump into the river instead."

Wei Wu Ya said, “So that means that the Jade Tablet Stone Chair was also cut by me?”

Xiao Yu’er said, “Since you can carve the Jade Tablet Stone into a chair, then you must possess a precious sword that can cut through metal like mud. Since this precious sword can be used to carve the Jade Tablet Stone into a chair, then it most certainly can cut it into halves… isn’t this logic very obvious?”

Wei Wu Ya sighed, “That’s right, this logic is really very obvious.”

Xiao Yu’er said, “You killed your disciples in the forest, and left those footprints on the passageway, solely to lure us in here.”

Wei Wu Ya replied, “This is very logical as well.”

Xiao Yu’er added, “But you’re afraid that once we walk in and realize there’s no one here, we’ll leave immediately, so you cut that stone chair into two to arouse our suspicious, and…”

He took a breath, and continued, “Since the doors here are all made from huge stones weighing a thousand kilos, to seal them up totally, is not something that can be done in an instant.”

Wei Wu Ya continued, “That’s why I want to put all of you to concentrate on that stone chair, so that I can have enough time to seal the door, right?”

Xiao Yu’er clasped his palms and answered, “Exactly the case.”

Wei Wu Ya suddenly laughed hard, so hard that he almost dropped to the ground from the wheelchair.

Xiao Yu’er stared at him, “What are you laughing about? Is my guess wrong?”

Wei Wu Ya laughed heartily, “Right, right, right, absolutely right, you’re really

the smartest person in the world.”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “As for this point, I am never modest about it.”

Wei Wu Ya said, “But I have some questions for you as well.”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Oh?”

Wei Wu Ya said. “You have been to my place before, you should know that this place is full of treasures, but why is there none now?”

Xiao Yu’er was stunned for a moment, and said, “This… this is naturally because you told your disciples to take it out.”

Wei Wu Ya replied, “Why would I want them to take it away? Since I am determined to die here, why didn’t I die with the treasures here, but give them away. Since I have never treated my disciples as humans, why should I let them have this big reward… can you think of the reason why?”

Xiao Yu’er’s eyes suddenly gleamed, “Because you want to leave this place after seeing us die.”

Wei Wu Ya said, “If I have such intentions, then all the more I won’t take the treasures away, because if I really want to leave, I will surely have to wait for all of you to die first. Would I then be afraid that people like you who are about to die with take my treasures away?”

Only now was Xiao Yu’er truly stunned. “So this means that, there really was a highly skilled martial arts exponent who was here? Who was the person who came?”

Wei Wu Ya replied, “You know this person as well.”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “How do you know I know him?”

Wei Wu Ya said calmly, “Because he asked about you.”

The expression on Xiao Yu’er’s face changed, and he suddenly laughed loudly, “Don’t tell me you want to say that the person who came is Yan Nan Tian?”

Wei Wu Ya stared at him and said each word slowly, “That’s right! The person who came is Yan Nan Tian!”

Xiao Yu’er was stunned for a long moment, and suddenly chortled, “If Yan Nan Tian came, how can you still be alive now and harming others?”

Wei Wu Ya laughed icily, “Did you think that his martial arts is better than mine?”

Xiao Yu’er’s expression changed again, but in an instant he beamed instead and said, “If he was really here, the footsteps on the passageway would have been left by him, and the stone chair would naturally be cut by him using his precious sword. The might of this one stoke is enough to move heaven and earth. With your skills, I’m afraid you can’t even hurt a strand of hair of his… I know your capability.”

Wei Wu Ya was silent for a moment before heaving a long sigh, “That’s right, just with the power of his sword, it’s enough to rule the world, I really am not his match.”

Xiao Yu’er said, “If he was really here, why didn’t he kill you?”

Wei Wu Ya replied calmly, “Naturally because there was a bargain.”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “What bargain?”

Wei Wu Ya replied, “I promised to hand him one person, and he promised not to harm me.”

Xiao Yu’er pressed on, “Who did you promise to hand him?”

Wei Wu Ya replied, “Jiang Bie He!”

Xiao Yu’er was stunned yet again, and asked hoarsely, “Jiang Bie He? Hero Yan actually was willing to let you off because of Jiang Bie He?”

Wei Wu Ya affirmed, “That’s right.”

Siao Yu’er asked, “Why did he want to save Jiang Bie He?”

Wei Wu Ya laughed, “He did not want to save Jiang Bie He, but wants to kill him.”

Xiao Yu’er can’t help but feel surprised again, “What enmity does he have with Jiang Bie He?”

Wei Wu Ya was silent for a moment before saying calmly, “Do you know who Jiang Bie He really was?”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “Who?”

Wei Wu Ya replied, “He was originally your father’s page boy Jiang Qin, and grew up in your household. Your father and him were master and servant in name, but were actually like brothers.”

Xiao Yu’er was so surprised that his mouth gaped open, unable to close it at all. He can’t help but ask, “Since Jiang Qin and my late father were like brothers, why would Hero Yan want to kill him?”

Wei Wu Ya explained, “Not only was Jiang Feng one of the world’s rare handsome man, he is also extremely wealthy. Many in the martial arts world are already having designs on him, but because of Yan Nan Tian, they dared not strike. Who would have expected that Jiang Feng’s senses would suddenly be blinded and actually eloped with a female disciple of the Floral Palace, and this woman is your mother.”

Xiao Yu’er replied angrily, “You better be more courteous in your choice of words.”

Wei Wu Ya grinned and continued coolly, “Although these two were dizzily in love and were disregarding everything else, but they do know that the Floral Princess will not let them off, so once they escaped back, Jiang Feng either sold or gave his properties away! He himself just took some basic necessities and roamed the world, staying in hiding to avoid trouble.”

Xiao Yu’er fumed, “So stinking robbers like you became jealous.”

Wei Wu Ya replied, “That’s right. Jiang Feng’s plan was to let Jiang Qin ride on to look for Yan Nan Tian first, while he himself will bring your mother through an old abandoned passageway and hurry to meet up with Yan Nan Tian. This plan is not too bad actually, and the route he took was actually very well hidden, but a pity that before Jiang Qin went to look for Yan Nan Tian, he came to look for us, the Twelve Zodiacs first.”

Xiao Yu’er said wrathfully, “No wonder you are acquainted with Jiang Bie He, so it turns out that you were already in cahoots and dealt with each other before.”

Wei Wu Ya smiled and said, “Although I know about this, but I did not strike, because even if I do not strike, I am not afraid that the rest won’t give a portion to me after they succeed. Besides I had something on at that time and was unable to leave.”

Xiao Yu’er said, “Those who struck were killed by Hero Yan. They should have known what Hero Yan was like, why did they still strike?”

Wei Wu Ya replied, “They had the intention of pushing this blame to Floral Palace, and let Yan Nan Tian thinks that it was the Floral Princesses who struck. Besides, Jiang Qin has noted down all the possessions that your father carried with him. Such a huge business deal, why would the Twelve Zodiacs let it go?”

Xiao Yu’er gritted his teeth, “But Jiang Qin should know what the Twelve Zodiacs are like. Since this deal is now made with the Twelve Zodiacs, what else

can he gain from this?”

Wei Wu Ya smiled, “He is not very greedy, he just wants 20% of the wealth. He also knows that we, the Twelve Zodiacs have always been fair in our deals, once we promise him a portion, we will never try to deny it. Besides, although your father treated him like his own brother, but in other people’s eyes, he’s still a servant in Jiang Feng’s household. If your father does not die, he can forget about being someone great for the rest of his life.”

He smiled slightly and continued, “Although this person is not very greedy, but he is extremely ambitious, with the sole intention of becoming famous in the martial arts realm, so he must kill your father first.”

Xiao Yu’er felt his hands and legs getting cold and was silent for a moment before saying, “But my father did not die in the hands of the Twelve Zodiacs ultimately, right?”

Wei Wu Ya replied, “What happened later, I’m not very sure about the details. I only know that when Yan Nan Tian got there, your parents are already dead, and only you were alive.”

Xiao Yu’er forced himself to contain the pain in his heart, and asked, “No matter who was the one who killed my parents, all these were caused by Jiang Qin. If he did not betray my father, these people will surely be unable to find them, right?”

Wei Wu Ya agreed, “Exactly.”

Xiao Yu’er said, “Since this is the case, why didn’t Hero Yan kill him at that time?”

Wei Wu Ya explained, “I’m afraid Yan Nan Tian did not know at that time that Jiang Qin is the root of the tragedy. By the time he found out, Jiang Qin has escaped. From then on, no one has ever heard any news about Jiang Qin in the martial arts realm, and no one has ever heard of any news about Yan Nan Tian. Only later did I hear that Yan Nan Tian has died in the Valley of Evil.”

He sighed again and said with a bitter smile, “Who would have expected that this piece of news is bullshit. Not only did Yan Nan Tian did not die, but his martial arts improved tremendously. And that Jiang Qin actually became the Hero of Jiang Nan.”

Xiao Yu’er was silent for a moment. He really cannot think of why Yan Nan Tian would suddenly appear? How can his injuries have healed suddenly? Could it be that some miracle has happened? Or is there another ‘Hero Nan Tian’ like Lu Zhong Yuan, who borrowed the name ‘Yan Nan Tian’? Who can this person be?

End of Chapter 103

Chapter 93

Chapter 104

Su Ying suddenly asked, “Has this Hero Yan killed Jiang Bie He already?”

Wei Wu Ya replied, “Not yet.”

Su Ying asked, “Why hasn’t Hero Yan killed him?”

Wei Wu Ya explained, “Because he wants to keep Jiang Bie He for Xiao Yu’er, so that he can take revenge with his own hands. As long as he cannot find Xiao Yu’er, Jiang Bie He will not die. If he can’t find Xiao Yu’er for the next 10 years, Jiang Bie he will live for the next 10 years.

Su Ying asked hoarsely, “In that case, is Jiang Bie He already…. already…” Although she did not finish her words, but her meaning is very clear.

Wei Wu Ya laughed loudly, “That’s right, Jiang Bie He will never die, because Yan Nan Tian will never find Xiao Yu’er. His martial arts may be 10 times better than Jiang Bie He, but he will never be as devious as Jiang Bie He. By keeping someone like Jiang Bie He next to him, is akin to walking the streets with a tiger. Sooner or later, he will die in the hands of Jiang Bie He.”

Xiao yu’er exclaimed furiously, “He spared your life and yet you treated him thus, can you still be considered human?”

Wei Wu Ya stopped his laughter and said with hatred, “Although he did not kill me, but he chased all my disciples away, and wanted them to take all my jewels with them. Isn’t this almost the same as killing me?”

Only now did Xiao Yu'er understand, and can't help but laugh, "I'm afraid not only did he chase your disciples away, even your precious rats were chased away, right?"

Wei Wu Ya gritted his teeth and said, "Humph."

Xiao Yu'er said, "So you feel that there's no meaning in living anymore, that's why you thought of this last move. But if you had treated your disciples a little better, would they have left while you were in trouble?"

Wei Wu Ya suddenly smiled sinisterly, "But now that I have all of you to accompany me in death, I am already very satisfied."

Suddenly the Floral Princess called out, "Jiang Xiao Yu, come over here."

Xiao Yu'er was unwilling to go over initially, but after thinking about it, he walked over. He took two steps, and turned around to look at Su Ying.

Su Ying looked as if she wanted to see Wei Wu Ya's reaction first, but suddenly changed her mind and just smiled at Xiao Yu'er, following him as well.

The two Floral Princesses were standing in the middle of the 'hall', and although their expression is still proud and cold, but it also seems that they now suddenly look small, lonely and pitiful.

They were still standing very straight, not sitting at all. They looked as if they have never sat down before.

Princess Yao Yue suddenly turned around, as if she's afraid that if she take another look at Xiao Yu'er, she will be unable to control herself and kill him.

Princess Lian Xing said slowly, "We have checked through this cave thoroughly earlier. The doors in here are indeed sealed."

Xiao Yu'er said, "I don't even have to check to know that this is certainly not a

hoax.”

Princess Lian Xing was silent for a moment before adding, “These doors are huge stones weighing a thousand kilos, and cannot be opened with sheer human strength, but I think Wei Wu Ya will certainly not be willing to trap himself to death here.”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “Could it be that you want me to find this way out?”

Princess Lian Xing was silent again, and said slowly, “I think, maybe you have a way to find out from Wei Wu Ya.”

Xiao Yu’er said, “Do you really think my capability is that great?”

Princess Lian Xing replied, “If he refuses to talk, then you shall kill him!” She took a glance at Su Ying and said, “I can see that he already hates you to the core, if there is a way for him to kill you personally, he will not miss it.”

Xiao Yu’er said, “These words are correct, bit a pity that if I fight with him, the one who die will not be him, but me.”

Princess Lian Xing said, “I know as well that your martial arts is not as good as his, but if I teach you six hours of martial arts, then he will certainly not be your match.”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Oh, you’re really that confident? I don’t really believe it.”

Princess Lian Xing said calmly, “The mystery and intricacies of our sect’s martial arts is not something that people can imagine.”

Xiao Yu’er suddenly stopped talking. He tilted his head and thought for a long time, and suddenly burst out laughing.

Princess Lian Xing fumed, “Do you think this is a joke.”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Why should I waste so much of my effort to fight with Wei Wu Ya?”

Princess Lian Xing can’t help but feel startled, and said, “If you can defeat him, and threaten him with death, he may reveal the last escape route.”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “Why would I want to escape? Isn’t this place very comfortable?”

Princess Lian Xing was so furious that her face paled, unable to speak further.

Xiao Yu’er said lazily, “I’ve been poisoned anyway, so I have to die sooner or later. Even if you can neutralize my poison, I may still die in the hands of Hua Wu Que. Since no matter how I see it, I still have to die, I might as well die here. This tomb is quite elaborately done up as well.”

Princess Lian Xing kept staring at him, and until he finished talking, she still stared at him for a long while, then suddenly said, “What if I guarantee that you will certainly not die in the hands of Hua Wu Que?”

Princess Yao Yue suddenly exclaimed heatedly, “The battle between you and Hua Wu Que must happen, nothing can change it…”

Xiao Yu’er sighed, “Since that is the case, there’s no way then, we can just all wait here for death.”

Princess Lian Xing said, “But don’t you forget, if I can make your martial arts win Wei Wu Ya, then you can win Hua Wu Que as well. If you can kill Wei Wu Ya, then you can defeat Hua Wu Que!”

Xiao Yu’er blinked, “You are the ones who brought up Hua Wu Que since young, not only is he your disciple, he’s almost your son. But I am the son of your enemy, if not for the fact that I know the gap between our martial arts level is too huge, I may have taken your lives long ago. But now you actually want to teach me martial arts, want me to kill your disciple, I’m afraid no one in the world will believe such words.”

Princess Lian Xing took a look at her sister, and Princess Yao Yue said, “Naturally there is a…”

Xiao Yu’er’s gaze shimmered, and waited for her to continue, but she just said those few words and suddenly stopped. Xiao Yu’er pressed on, “If you want me to believe it, it’s very easy too. As long as you tell me the reason behind all these, I will do whatever you want me to do, I will agree to anything.”

Xiao Yu’er stared at her and said calmly, “Or would you rather let Wei Wu Ya see your ugliness before your deaths then to reveal this secret? I can tell you that when a person is about to die, they not only look very awful, but very funny as well.”

Princess Yao Yue gritted her teeth and suddenly turned around. Princess Lian Xing followed her as well and turned around calmly, neither of them wanting to take another look at Xiao Yu’er, or listen to another word of his.

Xiao Yu’er stood there stunned like a log for a moment before suddenly turning towards Su Ying and asked, “You have known quite a bit about what is happening, right?”

Su Ying sighed, “Now I know that Aunty Jiang was formally a disciple of Floral Palace, later… later…”

Xiao Yu’er gritted his teeth and said, “Without a doubt, my parents died in their hands, they did not kill me then, but wants to kill me now to prevent further trouble. But why must they insist that Hua Wu Que kill me personally? If they were willing to strike themselves, I would have died many times over.”

Su Ying said, “They thought that you would hate Hua Wu Que a lot. If you do not look for them to seek revenge, then you’ll certainly look for Hua Wu Que. But who would have expected that your thinking is very open, and views that the enmity involving the older generation has got nothing to do with the younger generation, so they can only force Hua Wu Que to kill you. From what I see, there must be some complicated relation between you and Hua Wu Que.”

Xiao Yu’er’s eyes gleamed, but he furrowed his brows and said, “But it’s impossible that I could be related to Hua Wu Que. I was taken to the Valley of Evil immediately after I was born, and in this world, I have no relations left.”

The silence in the cave is not much different from that of a tomb, the light reflecting from the stone wall very gentle, like the moonlight, shining on Xiao Yu’er’s face. This was actually a happy, proud, stubborn and charismatic face, but now it appears indescribably dull, indescribably tired. Su Ying looked at him dully, her eyes seem to slow fill with tears.

Without knowing how much time has passed, Xiao Yu’er mumbled, “Su Ying, you must know that I am not afraid of death, but if I were to die just like that, I really cannot accept it… really cannot accept it!”

Su Ying said, “If the doors in here have really been sealed, then the whole cave should be like a tomb with no air at all, but… until now we don’t have any feeling of suffocation. Besides, any place with lack of oxygen, even a flame will not be able to stay lighted.”

Xiao Yu’er hit his own palm with his fist and said, “Good, as long as he has really left a way out, I will have a way to make him speak.”

Su Ying suddenly smiled, “Didn’t you say that you do not wish to leave?”

Xiao Yu’er made a face at her, “I was deliberately threatening them. Before the truth of this secret is revealed, not only can I not bear to let myself die, I can’t bear to let them die as well.” In desperation, there is now suddenly a glimmer of hope, and the two of them can’t help but feel more energetic and upbeat. Just as they were about to walk forward, there was a sudden sigh that came behind them. “You need not search, I am here!”

The stone platform which the stone chair was originally on, suddenly moved away. Wei Wu Ya was on his wheelchair, slowly rolling up from the bottom.

“I know that right now you must be planning, thinking of a way to make me reveal the place where air is coming from. Then let me advice you, you need not bother. Because when I was building these air holes, I was afraid the rats would

escape from these holes.”

Xiao Yu’er thought for a moment, and suddenly asked, “Are you afraid that we’ll die too quickly?”

Wei Wu Ya smiled, “That’s right. I spent so much effort to make you come to this place, how can I bear to let you die of suffocation so fast? Of course I’ll hope that the slower you die, the better, only then can I slowly appreciate the various unsightly ways that you will die. I can guarantee that there is nothing more interesting than this in the world.” He seems to find the thought amusing, and was laughing so hard that his whole body was twisted.

Xiao Yu’er actually smiled as well, and said, “We would like to ask you, what kind of ugly behavior would you expect us to make?”

Wei Wu Ya’s eyes gleamed, and he laughed, “You should know that the Floral Princesses will never casually sit down, finding everywhere else dirty. But I can guarantee, in less than three days, they will lie down on the beds that those stinking men had slept on. Usually they would refuse to eat anything else, but in another few days, they might even swallow a dead rat, or they may kill and eat the two of you, would you believe that?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed loudly, “If they will really eat me up, it’ll be quite marvelous as well, I’d rather be buried in their stomachs.”

Although he is laughing loudly, but he can’t help but secretly feel terrified, because he knows that what Wei Wu Ya said, is not entirely impossible.

Wei Wu Ya continued with a smile, “Besides, I know that the four of you are still virgins, not one of you have really tasted the joys of being a human. When death is impending, you may suddenly realize that to die just like that is a bad bargain, and you may think what doing that thing feels like.” His eyes were filled with lewdness, as if he is already imagining the situation then, and curled his body, laughing madly and added, “By then, I’m afraid you, little lad, will become a treasure.”

“Why don’t you want a taste of this yourself? Or can it be that you can’t do it

anymore?" Xiao Yu'er stared at his pair of spindly, crooked legs and laughed frostily, "So you can't do it since a long time ago, that's why you became a lunatic. I had thought that you were hateful, now I realize that you're actually very pitiful."

Wei Wu Ya suddenly roared madly and threw himself towards Xiao Yu'er. Xiao Yu'er twisted his body quickly, his palms extended in retaliation. Who would have expected that Wei Wu Ya's body would suddenly protrude ten over short swords, slicking towards his wrist. It turns out that on each of his fingers, he kept his nails three to four inches long, which are curled up usually, but once he fights, his internal energy flowed through his fingertips and his fingernails will spring out like swords. Under the light, the ten fingernails reflected darkly, obviously they contain deadly poison. If Xiao Yu'er was scratched even lightly, he'll be beyond saving.

With his one leap, there were actually three different subsequent moves hidden in it, the change in each move unexpected, the strokes weird and vicious, truly unparalleled in the world. Su Ying can't help but scream in alarm. Xiao Yu'er's body dropped to the ground and rolled over twenty feet away, this type of retaliation is not those of orthodox martial arts, but is something that Xiao Yu'er invented at that moment.

Who would have expected that Wei Wu Ya would twist his body and he landed back on the wheelchair. Just as Xiao Yu'er was about to leap over, the wheelchair suddenly started making circles around him.

In that instant, Xiao Yu'er only felt that Wei Wu Ya is surrounding him on his left, right, front and back, and is actually even more formidable than the famed 'Eight Diagrams Moving Body Palm'.

But no matter how fast a person can walk, he will never be faster than the turning of wheels. Xiao Yu'er felt giddy and almost wanted to fall even before Wei Wu Ya struck. Xiao Yu'er suddenly called out and flew straight up. This move is actually the most powerful move of Kun Lun Sect, 'Eight Formations of the Flying Dragon'. In the whole world, only 'Eight Formations of the Flying Dragon' can break Wei Wu Ya's such moves. Besides this, even if it was the abbot or leader of Shao Lin and Wu Dang, Wei Wu Ya will still trap them.

Who would have expected that just as he leapt up, Wei Wu Ya jumped towards him again, ten shiny and black fingernails aiming towards his throat. This person actually seemed to have become Xiao Yu'er's shadow, and Xiao Yu'er did not even have enough time to change his move and had to execute Shao Lin's 'Thousand Kilo Drop' in haste.

It's also not an easy task for the body to suddenly drop down while it is still leaping up into the air. But Xiao Yu'er indeed dropped down at this moment.

Who would have expected that just as he dropped down, 'swish, swish, swish', the sound of something darting through the air, three rays of dark light shot towards him from three different directions.

It turns out that although Wei Wu Ya's body has flown up, but that wheelchair is still turning, and this three rays of dark light was actually shot from the chair. This move is truly beyond Xiao Yu'er's expectations, if it was any other highly skilled martial artist from whichever sect, he will certainly die under this three dark boned arrows!

His body suddenly turned and twisted, and all the bones in his body seemed to have suddenly separated, and the three dark rays of light slicked past his clothes right at that instant.

Wei Wu Ya truly has numerous weird moves, making it difficult to fight him, and even his wheelchair will shoot out secret weapons once in a while, taking one by surprise.

Wei Wu Ya will suddenly join with the wheelchair as one, will suddenly split and attack separately, in less than thirty moves, Xiao Yu'er already felt as if he can't take anymore of this.

Xiao Yu'er seemed to have taken a wrong step, and suddenly shot out two palm attacks lightly. These two palm attacks does not look as if it's anything special, but without knowing why, Wei Wu Ya almost could not avoid it, and he cannot imagine where Xiao Yu'er learned this move from.

What is even more unexpected is that Xiao Yu'er's move suddenly changed

again, each move seems soft and light, as if there’s no strength in it at all. But every move is aimed towards loopholes that Wei Wu Ya himself did not think of, and it seems that although there’s no variety in the moves at all, but the changes in the moves are endless.

End of Chapter 104

Chapter 94

Chapter 105

Su Ying was almost crazed with anxiety, but now she beamed. It turns out that when Xiao Yu'er was in the most danger, he suddenly realized that the two Floral Princesses were exchanging moves in the distance as well. The moves they used, one attacking and the other defending, every move executed very slowly, as if they're afraid that others will not be able to take a good look.

No matter how stupid Xiao Yu'er is, he will know that they are teaching him martial arts. At this point in time, there's no way he can reject even if he wanted to.

He just off handedly executed one of Princess Yao Yue's move and it is indeed enough to startle Wei Wu Ya, and when Wei Wu Ya attacked, he used the moves executed by Princess Lian Xing to save himself. Without knowing why, after about ten over moves, Xiao Yu'er easily gained the upper hand.

By the time Wei Wu Ya noticed them, he is almost breathless from fighting with Xiao Yu'er. He cannot imagine why his own moves which are so strange, can be countered by such casual moves. But he did not know that these few moves from the Floral Palace, is not casual, but simplified. They have taken the essence of all the most complicated moves, and merged all the moves into a single one. After thirty over moves, Wei Wu Ya is beginning to weaken, running out of moves.

Who would have expected that right at this time, there was a sudden sound. This sound seems to have come from outside the cave, but the echo shook the whole cave. Xiao Yu'er was initially startled, which turned into joy. Wei Wu Ya's wheelchair has slid thirty feet away.

By now the sound kept coming in from the outside, and Princess Lian Xing's eyes can't help but reveal surprise and joy.

Wei Wu Ya said, "There's neither food nor water here. No matter how capable you are, you can only survive for another ten days at the most. By the time those people outside comes in, I'm afraid you'll be only a heap of bones."

Xiao Yu'er suddenly roared, "Since that is the cause, then we have no choice but to kill you?"

Wei Wu Ya replied, "That's right, kill me, and you can avoid embarrassing yourselves in front of me, but… isn't it a pity for you to kill me now. Why don't you follow me and see a few things first."

Xiao Yu'er took a glance at the Floral Princesses and said, "Fine, I will follow you, anyway I'm not afraid of you tricking me."

Wei Wu Ya said, "In front of the Floral Princesses and the world's smartest person, what other tricks do I have?" He wheeled his wheelchair down the underground passageway. The Floral Princesses followed behind him like shadows.

Wei Wu Ya went through a very narrow stone door. Could this stone door be the secret exit?

Xiao Yu'er hurried over but once he went in, he can't help but feel disappointed. Behind the stone door it's actually a six-sided stone room, with no other doors in it. The light in this stone room is especially dim, Xiao Yu'er seem to be able to see a stone coffin in front of him, and many stone statues in the distance. Xiao Yu'er can't help but ask, "What are all these stone statues?"

Wei Wu Ya giggled, "All these are my masterpieces, I'll go light the lamps so that you can see better." His laughter carried an indescribable feeling, once Xiao Yu'er heard this laughter, he knows that there must be something strange about these stone statues.

By now Wei Wu Ya has reached the stone wall and took out a flint, and lighted the ten over copper lamps placed in the niches on the walls.

By the time he lighted the fourth lamp, Xiao Yu'er was stunned.

All these stone statues were carved in the semblance of the Floral Princesses and Wei Wu Ya, and were almost the same size as the real person, separated into groups, the poses in each group different.

The first group looked as if the Floral Princesses were kneeling on the floor, tugging at the corners of Wei Wu Ya's clothes, begging him.

The second group of statues looked as if Wei Wu Ya was flogging them with a whip, the expression of pain on the Floral Princesses' face so detailed and lifelike.

The third group of statues look as if the Floral Princesses were flat on the ground, with Wei Wu Ya stepping on their chests, his hand holding a wine cup and drinking.

The later versions of the statues are not fit to be seen, but each statue was so life like and detailed.

Xiao Yu'er can't help but sigh, "I did not expect this madman to be such a genius."

The Floral Princesses were so furious that their bodies were shaking. Now they suddenly dashed forward and carried up a statue, throwing it into pieces.

All these solid stone statues, once in the hands of the Floral Princesses, became like paper. Several painstakingly crafted words became a pile of shattered stones in a blink.

Wei Wu Ya quietly witnessed the scene, not moving at all. Princess Lian Xing finally jumped in front of him and said furiously, "You beast, do you still think I will let you off this time?"

As she shouted, she has already grabbed Wei Wu Ya's collar and pulled him up from the wheelchair, throwing him heavily towards the stone wall.

There was a cracking sound and Wei Wu Ya actually shattered into pieces, but a person is made of blood and flesh, so how can he be 'shattered'?

Princess Lian Xing was stunned, and realized that this 'Wei Wu Ya' is carved from stone as well, just that it's wearing clothes.

No one knows when the real Wei Wu Ya had slipped away.

The only door in this stone room has been sealed, on four sides there are still walls, which are the walls of the mountain as well. The Floral Princesses threw such heavy statues at it but the walls did not even vibrate at all, so obviously it is extremely solid.

Su Ying was silent for a moment and said, "Since he has already trapped us, why did he want to lure us here then?"

Xiao Yu'er smiled bitterly, "There are too many reasons. Firstly, by keeping us here, he can move around freely, or even eat and drink. By the time we starve to death, he'll be able to leave. This plan he used, is called 'Fighting to stay alive in the face of death', a plan within a plan, the main purpose is to lure us here. All those words and things that was said and done outside, is all an act."

Su Ying lowered her head and quietly sighed. Xiao Yu'er continued with a bitter smile, "Now we're like a bunch of monkeys trapped in a cage, and can only perform tricks for him to see."

Su Ying can't think of what to say anymore, and after a while, Xiao Yu'er smiled and mumbled, "Even I cannot imagine what I would look like before I died, this would be quite interesting. I may very well eat you up, are you afraid?"

Su Ying said gently, "Then the two of us will forever be as one, why should I be afraid?"

Xiao Yu’er stared at her face for a long, long time before he sighed, “A pity that you’re a little too smart, or else I may really like you.”

Su Ying blushed and chewed on her lips, “I heard that once women gives birth, they become a little more stupid.”

If it was any other time, Xiao Yu’er would certainly roar with laughter on hearing such words, but now he felt a wave of sweet tenderness floating in his heart, and with it an indescribable pain as well. He does not know what this feeling is, but only knows that he has never experienced such a feeling in his whole life.

Without knowing how much time has passed, Xiao Yu’er suddenly stood up and walked towards that jade green stone coffin and lifted the lid of the coffin, placing it in front of the coffin. He then piled the shattered stones on both sides of the coffin.

The Floral Princesses have no idea what he is doing, and the more the look, the more perplexed they are. Although they feel like asking him, but they hoped that Su Ying would ask him instead. However Su Ying’s eyes were filled with love and tenderness, looking at Xiao Yu’er with a smile, not speaking at all, as if she understands his intentions.

Xiao Yu’er grinned and said, “Eat, drink, poop, pee and sleep, are the five things that a human must do. Although we don’t have anything to eat and drink now, but what we ate previously would still have to come out. Since we can’t make them stay in the stomach, or poop in our pants, so we can only use this method.”

The Floral Princesses were so angry their faces reddened, but they were at a loss for words. Xiao Yu’er has piled the shattered stones on two sides of the coffin into a wall, and with the lid of the coffin, it really looks like a latrine. He clapped his hands and laughed, “I have always respected the elders, if the two of you would like to use it, please go ahead first.” The Floral Princesses blushed and stamped their foot, turning their bodies around.

Xiao Yu’er looked at Su Ying and smiled, “What about you?”

Su Ying blushed as well, “I… I don’t… don’t feel like it now.”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “Since that is the case, I shall help myself.” As he spoke, he had already wriggled in and after a while, walked out languidly, sighing and mumbling along the way, “Relief, relief, I’m afraid there’s not many things in the world as relieving as this.”

He walked back and sat down, closing his eyes, as if he’s falling asleep. Su Ying finally could not take it and climbed up quietly, walking towards that side. Who would have expected that she had only started moving, Xiao Yu’er’s left eye suddenly opened and he said with a grin, “You feel like it now?”

Su Ying blushed and pouted, “You’re really a little bad egg.”

Without knowing how much time has passed again, Princess Lian Xing’s face slowly became red and swollen, and after a short moment, her legs seem to be shaking a little. The sound of Xiao Yu’er’s breathing was low and steady, as if he is asleep. Princess Lian Xing suddenly floated over like the wind. Even when she was fighting with the most formidable opponent, her speed was not that fast. Who would have expected Xiao Yu’er to suddenly guffaw and said, “I’m afraid now you won’t say that I’m rude, but will thank me instead.”

By the time Xiao Yu’er stopped laughing, the Floral Princesses have also sat on the floor finally. Only two, three days has passed, but to all of them, it felt as if ten years have gone by. Right at this time, a hole the size of a ricebowl opened up on the ceiling, and something dropped down onto the floor from the hole. It’s actually a pomelo.

Su Ying looked at this pomelo, her eyes wide. She never imagined that a pomelo can actually affect her so much, and taking a look at the Floral Princesses’ eyes, they have also changed because of a pomelo. Princess Lian Xing stared at this pomelo, already standing up slowly.

Xiao Yu’er laughed loudly, “I did not imagine the haughty Floral Princess, would actually want to pick and eat something someone threw onto the floor, interesting, interesting.” Princess Lian Xing’s body suddenly stiffened, but her

fingertips are shaking. However, her eyes are still staring at that pomelo unwaveringly.

Xiao Yu'er laughed, "But if I were to pick up food that others have thrown onto the floor and eat it up, no one would laugh at me, because my skin is almost as thick as a wall." As he spoke, he has already jumped up and took that pomelo.

Xiao Yu'er split the pomelo into halves, and the refreshingly fragrant juice spurted onto his face. He stuck his tongue out to lick and mumbled, "So sweet, so fragrant, it seems that having a thick skin is not such a bad thing after all." He suddenly turned around and smiled at Su Ying, adding, "But your skin has never been thin, so I should share this pomelo with you, right?"

Su Ying can't help but beam, and say gently, "Sometimes I really wonder, someone has the mouth of a rogue, but still has a kind heart."

Xiao Yu'er took a sniff at the remaining half of the pomelo and suddenly stood up to walk towards the Floral Princesses. He offered them the half pomelo with a grin and said, "This half is yours. I know you will surely not eat anything that others throw away, but this half a pomelo is given by me respectfully, you can rest assured and eat it." The Floral Princesses looked at each other, stunned.

After a moment, Princess Lian Xing can't help but ask, "You… why are you doing this?"

Xiao Yu'er was silent for a moment before saying slowly, "When a person is about to die but yet can maintain his own status and refuse to embarrass himself, even I would admire such a person."

Xiao Yu'er walked over with a grin, no smug look on his face at all, nor any sadness. He looked as if he'd just eaten a hundred pomelos and gave the half that he could not finish to others.

Su Ying split her half of the pomelo into two and said gently, "Since you have given me this half of the pomelo, it's mine, and naturally I want to share half with you."

Xiao Yu’er replied, “I don’t want it. Because your half is bigger than mine, I want your half.”

Su Ying chuckled, “If I have a child like you, he’ll be the death of me.”

End of Chapter 105

Chapter 95

Chapter 106

The forever high and mighty Floral Princesses, finally became as common as others. Only now did Xiao Yu'er feel that they are humans, and have the various needs of a human, and the various feelings of a human, and even tears. Would they reveal the secret now?

Su Ying rubbed her eyes and said quietly, "Do we really not even have one shred of hope now?"

Xiao Yu'er was silent for a moment, and also lowered his voice, "If we can hold our temper and quietly wait for death, there may still be hope."

Su Ying asked, "Since we're quietly waiting for death, what hope would there be?"

Xiao Yu'er said, "Wei Wu Ya wants us to die slowly, because he wants us to be in pain, to go mad, or even kill one another, because only then will he gain satisfaction. But now we're all very calm, if we were to just die quietly, he will certainly be unable to tolerate it, he will certainly make other moves, then that will be our chance."

Su Ying blinked, and said, "So we must now think of a plan to force him."

The Floral Princesses could not hear what they were saying, but after a while, Xiao Yu'er suddenly stood up and respectfully bowed to the two sisters, and said with a long sigh, "That I, Jiang Xiao Yu, is able to die and be buried together with the Floral Princesses, it's considered fate as well. Now that we're all about to die anyway, any enmity in the past shall be erased from now on. Why do you insist

that Hua Wu Que kill me, what secret could there be, I do not wish to ask further.” The Floral Princesses had no idea why he would suddenly say such words, and can only stare at him with wide eyes, waiting for him to continue talking.

Xiao Yu’er said, “Since Hua Wu Que is not here now, and there doesn’t seem to be any hope of us escaping this place, I only beg that you let me have a quick death. I am not afraid to die, but I really cannot withstand the wait for death.” The expression on the Floral Princesses’ face became more somber suddenly.

As he spoke, he secretly winked at the Floral Princesses. Princess Yao Yue was shocked, but Princess Lian Xing is already tugging at her sleeve quietly and said, “Fine, you’ll die then.”

Su Ying suddenly said, “I have two poison pills with me here, it’s what Wei Wu Ya prepared for his disciples.”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “I know how potent this kind of poison is, just one will be enough.”

Su Ying smiled sadly, “If you’re dead, I won’t be able to stay alive for even a moment longer, don’t you know that?”

Xiao Yu’er was silent for a moment and said, “Fine, we shall die together then, at least it won’t be lonely on the road to hell.”

Suddenly someone laughed loudly, “You can’t die, can’t die. You’re young and in love, if you live a day longer, you’ll have joy for a day longer, isn’t it a pity if you were to die now?”

Xiao Yu’er and Su Ying exchanged looks, and secretly thought, “He really is getting impatient.”

Wei Wu Ya continued, “If you’re feeling troubled, a few drinks will make you feel better, haha… take this as a gift from me.” As he spoke, a wine bottle dropped down from the small hole at the top. Xiao Yu’er had just caught it,

when another bottle dropped again. In a short moment, Xiao Yu'er was already cradling twelve wine bottles in his arms, and each bottle quite large as well.

Xiao Yu'er put the wine in front of the Floral Princesses and said, "It's still the same rules, each gets half. If you really do not take alcohol, then all the more you should have a few drinks now. A person would really have lived in vain if he has never tasted wine in his whole life." In an instant, he has already drunk half a bottle of wine.

If this is a very spicy drink, the Floral sisters may be able to resist drinking it, but this wine is top quality Bamboo Green, with a light and refreshing fragrance, making one feel comfortable upon smelling it. The light green color of the wine is pleasing to the eyes, and if anyone can really resist drinking it, that would be a really strange thing.

Princess Lian Xing took a glance at Princess Yao Yue and finally can't stand it and opened a wine bottle, taking a small sip. It might have been better if she had not drank it, but once she swallowed it, she felt warmth seeping into her diaphragm and can't help but shiver in response. Later, all the blood in her body warmed and her eyes gleamed. It might have been better if she had not drank it, but once she swallowed it, how can she resist taking another sip?

Xiao Yu'er tapped hard on the wine bottle and sang loudly, "Have you ever seen, the Yellow River's water flowing from Heaven, straight into the sea, never to return. Have you ever seen…" This is Li Bai's famous song 'Bring the wine', and although the Floral Princesses have read it before, but they've always felt that it's nonsense sprouted by a drunkard.

But now that Princess Lian Xing has drank a few mouthfuls of wine, after hearing just two verses, felt that this song is really imposing, a rarity.

By the time the song was finished, Princess Lian Xing unconsciously felt hot blood rising, warm tears in her eyes, and had already unknowingly drank a whole bottle of wine, her mouth mumbling, "My great horse, worth a thousand, come bring him out to exchange for fine wine, and we'll drink our worries away… come, Jiang Xiao Yu, I offer you a toast, and let us drink our worries away."

Su Ying looked at the scene in a daze, she cannot imagine that Princess Lian Xing would actually drink a whole bottle of wine, or even imagine that she would become like this. This is really not like Princess Lian Xing at all, it's like she has changed into another person.

Although Princess Yao Yue took two sips as well, but on seeing that she has drank half of the second bottle of wine, she can't help but furrow her brows and snatched the bottle away, saying, "You're already drunk, put the bottle down."

Princess Lian Xing suddenly exclaimed, "I don't want you to interfere, I want to drink! You have been controlling my whole life, now that I'm going to die, you still want to control me?"

Princess Yao Yue was startled and furious, but when she heard the last sentence, she can't help but heave a long sigh and took another sip as well and said quietly, "That's right, I am near death myself as well, so why should I bother about you."

Princess Lian Xing turned towards Xiao Yu'er again and smiled, "Come, let me offer you another toast, you're really a very cute child."

Xiao Yu'er does not seem to take it to mind at all, and said casually, "Since that is the case, why do you still want to kill me?"

Princess Yao Yue's expression suddenly changed, but Princess Lian Xing only grinned and said, "This secret, once you're dead, I will certainly tell you." At a time like this, she can still control herself from revealing the secret.

Xiao Yu'er said, "It's a deal then, but… what if you die before me?"

Princess Lian Xing said, "Then you can die with me, I will certainly tell you on the way to hell."

Xiao Yu'er sighed, "To be able to die with you, I can consider that I have not lived in vain. Do you think only Wei Wu Ya is crazy about you? Such a cute person like you, I… I really…" He could not speak further, but only stared at her face.

Princess Lian Xing's eyes wavered, and suddenly pointed at Su Ying and asked, "Am I cuter than her?"

Xiao Yu'er replied, "How can she be compared to you, if you're willing to marry me, I'll marry you right now."

Their conversation became more and more outrageous, treating everyone else around them as being dead, as if they did not see Su Ying's face turning pale or Princess Yao Yue shaking in anger.

Princess Lian Xing smiled as she collapsed into Xiao Yu'er's arms and smiled coquettishly, "I have never been so happy in my life, I…" Without waiting for her to finish her words, Princess Yao Yue had already flown over.

Suddenly she heard Xiao Yu'er say quietly, "Do you want to get out of here alive, or kill Wei Wu Ya to vent your anger!" Princess Yao Yue was stunned, and Xiao Yu'er lowered his voice further, "If you want to, then do as I say and extinguish all the lamps here."

Wei Wu Ya was really peeping all this time outside. When he saw Princess Lian Xing throwing herself into Xiao Yu'er's arms, his eyeballs almost popped out, and his body shaking with excitement, his palms sweating. Who would have expected that right at this time, the lights suddenly went off.

The room suddenly became so dark that one cannot even see one's extended fingers, nothing can be seen at all. Wei Wu Ya was so anxious he jumped up.

Various sounds were heard in the darkness, firstly the coquettish laugh of Princess Lian Xing, the furious roar of Princess Yao Yue, followed by a series of the sound of the wind generated by palm attacks. But now in the darkness, not a sound can be heard. This silence is even more alluring, more exciting than noise. Wei Wu Ya was almost crazed with impatience. He painstakingly arranged all these, so that he can witness this scene. For this matter, he has spent a lot of effort, even sacrificing everything.

But now he cannot see anything at all. He pushed his wheelchair like a crazed

man, took a lamp, thinking of shining the light down the small hole, but once the light moved to the hole, it was extinguished as well.

Xiao Yu’er laughed as he panted, “I won’t allow you to peek.”

Wei Wu Ya felt as if a fire is burning in his heart, or countless worms crawling about, and finally gritted his teeth and grinned evilly, “You don’t want me to see it, then I want to see it even if I have to die.”

He deduced that Princess Yao Yue must have been defeated by this time, and Princess Lian Xing and Xiao Yu’er would not have the time to deal with others now. Of course he need not consider Su Ying at all.

He waited for more than ten years for this day, so how can he miss such an opportunity. So he took another lamp and opened the knob on the door. The heavy stone door, slid open silently.

Wei Wu Ya was breathless from excitement, his hands were shaking, and so did the lamp. He pushed his wheelchair with all his might, and rolled over quietly. Who would have expected that right at this time, a sudden mad laughter roared out in the darkness.

Xiao Yu’er laughed madly and said, “Wei Wu Ya, you’ve finally been tricked once by me!”

In his shock, Wei Wu Ya’s heart sank. Where the light shone, he suddenly realized that Xiao Yu’er is not doing anything at all, and standing upright in front of him. He thought to retreat, but Princess Yao Yue had already blocked that door.

Xiao Yu’er grinned, “You lost to the world’s smartest person, would you feel bad? If someone were to write my biography or set up a monument for me, you will certainly be mentioned, then your name will go down in history too.”

Wei Wu Ya felt bitterness in his mouth and he exclaimed, “You… what do you want now!”

Xiao Yu'er's expression turned serious and he said with an icy smile, "Do you still want us to believe that all the exits in here have been sealed?" As he spoke, he walked towards Wei Wu Ya step by step, and taking a look at Princess Yao Yue, whose eyes are staring daggers and emanating a vicious air.

"You just want me to bring you out? That's very easy." Wei Wu Ya beamed, "I am moving towards the exit now, can't you see?"

Xiao Yu'er asked in bewilderment, "You're now…" He suddenly stopped talking, as if he has suddenly seen a ghost, the expression on his face filled with shock, his throat stuck, unable to talk at all. Xiao Yu'er pointed at Wei Wu Ya, his finger shaking.

Princess Yao Yue was standing behind Wei Wu Ya, and could not see his face.

Xiao Yu'er stammered, "You… you come over…. over here and see him." Princess Yao Yue hurriedly flew to the front of Wei Wu Ya, and was stunned as well.

The lamp, was still in Wei Wu Ya's hand, the flame swaying. In the swaying light, Wei Wu Ya's face has turned a deadly black, his eyes and mouth shut tightly, fresh blood flowing out from the corner of his eyes and mouth.

Princess Yao Yue can't help but take half a step back and said in shock, "He actually committed suicide." Wei Wu Ya's twisted mouth, seem to carry with it a hint of cruel smile. Princess Yao Yue stood there, stunned.

Su Ying's face paled, and she walked to the front of Wei Wu Ya and bowed a few times respectfully, a few drops of tears flowing down her face. Is she feeling sad for Wei Wu Ya? Or is she feeling sad for herself?

Suddenly Xiao Yu'er exclaimed in alarm, "Oh no." As he exclaimed, he has dashed towards that stone door.

Princess Yao Yue and Su Ying exchanged looks, not knowing what has

happened to him again. But now everyone has regarded Xiao Yu’er as the leader and now that Xiao Yu’er has cried out in alarm, the expressions on their faces also changed unconsciously.

By now Princess Lian Xing’s breathing was deep and steady, as if she is asleep. It turns out that during the darkness earlier, Princess Yao Yue had sealed her sleeping acupoint. And right now Princess Yao Yue carried Princess Lian Xing and followed Xiao Yu’er out.

They came out of the passageway, and that large cave is still quiet, nothing has changed, even the lamps on the four sides are still burning. But Xiao Yu’er stood there, his face totally pale.

Xiao Yu’er asked seriously, “Can you hear anything?”

Su Ying replied, “I don’t hear anything?” The surroundings are as quiet as a tomb!

Xiao Yu’er heaved a long sigh, “Precisely because you cannot hear anything, that is the frightening part.” Before he finished his words, Su Ying’s expression has changed.

If Hua Wu Que was outside digging a tunnel, there will certainly be sounds of stones being chipped or knocked, but now there’s no sound at all, obviously he has stopped. They have lost even their last hope.

Su Ying sat down at the side, hugging her head, as if she’s thinking very hard. Xiao Yu’er stood opposite her, looking at her quietly.

Xiao Yu’er stared dazedly for a moment before walking over and patting her on the shoulder, asking, “What are you thinking about?” Su Ying lifted her head and smiled, her eyes like the stars in a foggy night, so far, so hazy, so beautiful that makes it difficult for one to grasp.

She lightly hugged Xiao Yu’er’s leg and said, “I was thinking, Wei Wu Ya must have left for himself a last exit, this is unquestionable, but why can’t we find it?”

She chewed on her lips and continued slowly, “I have checked the four sides very thoroughly, all the exits have indeed been sealed, and if there’s a secret door on the wall of the mountain, we will certainly be able to tell.”

Xiao Yu’er suddenly smiled, “I already know where this last exit is.”

As soon as the words were spoken, Su Ying and Princess Yao Yue can’t help but jump up, and Princess Yao Yue has already flown towards Xiao Yu’er like the wind and asked, “Where?”

Xiao Yu’er lifted his finger and pointed, “There’s a protruding stone in that corner there, and under the stone there’s a larger air hole, you should be able to see it.”

Princess Yao Yue said, “That air hole may be a little bigger than the others, but the diameter is less than a foot, how can a person wriggle through it?”

Xiao Yu’er heaved a long sigh, “We only know that Wei Wu Ya will certainly leave a way out for himself, but we forgot one thing.”

Su Ying’s expression changed immediately, “That’s right, we have really forgotten the most important thing.”

Xiao Yu’er said each word slowly, “We all forgot that Wei Wu Ya is a dwarf with a twisted body. We may be unable to leave from that air hole, but he can wriggle his way out. Although he did leave a way out, we can only stare at it.”

Princess Yao Yue’s body shook, and she almost could not stand steadily. Now that all their hopes are dashed, besides death, there really is no other way out.

End of Chapter 106

Chapter 96

Chapter 107

Now she finally understood that Wei Wu Ya's plan is really well thought out, really seamless. The most extraordinary part about this plan is that although he did leave a way out, but others are unable to use it. Although he did leave food, others can forget about eating it. It's a cage full of disgusting live rats.

Princess Yao Yue felt her legs go weak, unable to support any longer, and finally poured a drink and swallowed it in one gulp.

Xiao Yu'er carried up a bottle as well and walked out, dragging Su Ying with him. Although Su Ying's heart is filled with sadness and doom, but it's also filled with gentle sweetness.

Who would have expected that Xiao Yu'er had just taken two steps, when he exclaimed hoarsely, "Oh no! We still had hope earlier, so everyone were on the same boat, thinking of escape, naturally we would work together. But now all hope is lost, she will not let me off." Just as he finished his words, a shadow moved in front and Princess Yao Yue is already in front of them. Xiao Yu'er smiled bitterly and looked at Su Ying, mumbling "Isn't my guess correct…. sometimes I really hope that I can guess a few things wrong occasionally."

Princess Yao Yue said icily, "Have you finished your conversation? I will give you a little more time, talk faster."

Xiao Yu'er suddenly laughed loudly, "Fine, sooner or later we will need to fight to the death, but since you said that you will let us talk a little more, then you must not be like Wei Wu Ya and eavesdrop at the side."

He dragged Su Ying to the corner and mumbled a few sentences, and as he spoke, Su Ying nodded her head, until in the end Xiao Yu'er could be heard saying, "Do you understand?"

Su Ying replied quietly, "I understand, but you… you must be careful too."

Princess Yao Yue smiled coldly, "It's no use no matter how careful he is, come over."

Xiao Yu'er grinned, "You want to kill me, why don't you come over yourself?" Princess Yao Yue was so furious that the color on her face changed, but who would have expected that as soon as Xiao Yu'er finished his words, he flew up and executed three lightning fast palm attacks.

These three palm attacks are swift, fierce and strong, and few in the martial arts realm will be able to escape from this three 'killer moves'. But in Princess Yao Yue's eyes, it's like child's play. She did not seemed to have moved at all, but Xiao Yu'er's palm attacks did not even get anywhere near to her clothes.

Su Ying took only one look and knew that Xiao Yu'er is certainly not Princess Yao Yue's match. It seems that she can't bear to watch any further and walked out with her head lowered. The more he fought, the more energetic he became, and there was no sense of fear at all. Every move of his is filled with strength, obviously he has used a hundred percent of his energy in it. But no matter how formidable his moves are, Princess Yao Yue need only to lightly wave her hands to deflect his attacks into nothingness.

Strange moves were executed, but until now, she has neither used the moves of 'Shifting Flower Grafting Jade', nor executed any deadly moves.

Xiao Yu'er blinked, and suddenly smiled, "Are you actually trying to kill me? Or are you having fun with me?" Without waiting for Princess Yao Yue to reply, he continued with a laugh, "Are you waiting to find out how I executed my strength before you kill me?"

Princess Yao Yue's expression changed slightly and she asked with a furrowed brow, "Why would I want to find out how you execute your strength?"

Xiao Yu'er replied, "Because if you cannot figure out the direction my strength is coming from, then you cannot execute 'Shifting Flower Grafting Jade', right?" His mouth kept on talking, his hands kept on attacking, but his eyes kept staring at Princess Yao Yue, never leaving.

The expression on Princess Yao Yue's face really changed again, but she said frostily, "When I want to use Shifting Flower Grafting Jade, I will use it, there's no need for you to be anxious."

Xiao Yu'er laughed loudly, "You need not lie to me, I have seen through you! The secret to Shifting Flower Grafting Jade, do you need me to explain it to you?"

Princess Yao Yue said icily, "You are not even fit to utter the four words 'Shifting Flower Grafting Jade'."

Xiao Yu'er replied, "Why am I not fit? What's so great about Shifting Flower Grafting Jade, it's just a martial arts move that uses the opponent's strength, not much different from Wu Dang's 'Moving a thousand pounds with four ounces of force', Shao Lin's 'Eighteen Falls', it's just that you're extremely fast in your moves and you can steal your opponent's strength before he can fully execute it. That's why in other's eyes, it became extremely inexplicable, and in addition you deliberately made it look more mysterious than it is, making a very simple thing into a very complicated, very mystifying matter, so others will think that this martial arts is formidable."

He kept on talking, and only took a breather now. Princess Yao Yue's expression revealed shock and asked fiercely, "What else do you know!"

Xiao Yu'er said, "Although I do not know how you manage to deflect the energy in your opponent's veins, but this is not important, because I already know the most important thing in your martial arts, which is to first figure out from where and which direction your opponent's energy is from!"

Princess Yao Yue exclaimed, "Humph."

Xiao Yu'er added, "Because the energy from most people is from the few acupoints around the pelvic area, so you need not spend much effort to figure out where their energy came from, but me…"

He continued with a chuckle, "The martial arts I learnt is different from everyone else, and I have at least seventy, eighty masters, even you are one of them. Precisely because the martial arts I learnt are too mixed, so my internal energy is not that great. It's my biggest disadvantage, but when fighting with you, this has helped me a lot instead."

Princess Yao Yue said, "Did you think…" She only spoke three words, and stopped.

Xiao Yu'er said, "Because my internal strength is not that great, and there's no sequence in the way I fight, so you cannot figure out where my internal energy is coming from in short notice, so you cannot even execute Shifting Flower Grafting Jade at all."

Amidst Princess Yao Yue's icy laughter, her slender fingers have already sealed the point between Xiao Yu'er's 'Qu Ze' and 'Tian Quan' acupoints, the movements of her hands as if she's plucking a flower.

These two acupoints belongs to the hand's 'yin' veins, and the two moves that Xiao Yu'er is executing now, the energy is coming right from this place, obviously she has figured out where Xiao Yu'er's internal energy is flowing from.

Who would have expected Xiao Yu'er to turn, and turn three feet away, and nothing happened to him at all. 'Shifting Flower Grafting Jade', which has never missed a target, became useless when used on Xiao Yu'er.

Now Princess Yao Yue is truly surprised. Since she has pinpointed that Xiao Yu'er's energy came from the hand's 'yin' veins, then she can never be wrong.

Xiao Yu'er laughed loudly, "You didn't expect that right, let me tell you, you thought that I used a lot of strength in that two moves of mine, but I did not use any strength at all. You wanted to use my energy to attack me, but there was no energy at all. This is my way of dealing with Shifting Flower Grafting Jade, do you

think this is a good idea?”

Princess Yao Yue’s expression changed, and she smiled coldly, “Very well, trust you to think of such a stupid idea. If you do not use any strength in your attacks, you’re already at a losing end, when two people fight, and you cannot win, isn’t that stupid?”

Xiao Yu’er nodded his head and grinned, “That’s right, I think this is really a stupid idea as well, but to deal with a person like you, sometimes the more stupid the idea, the better it works. Besides, you are the one who wants to kill me, I have no wish to kill you at all. As long as I can stop you from hurting me, I am satisfied.”

Princess Yao Yue exclaimed angrily, “Can’t I kill you if I do not use Shifting Flower Grafting Jade then?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “I do want to see what other capabilities you have that can kill me!”

Before he could finish his words, he could feel a wave of energy coming towards him, and Princess Yao Yue’s hands seem to have become seven, eight pairs of hands. Xiao Yu’er only felt that there seem to be Princess Yao Yue’s palms all around him, and could not tell which is real and which is fake, and all the more does not know how to dodge or defend.

He really cannot imagine that a person’s movement can be so swift. Although he forcibly avoided a few attacks, but he does not know whether he will still be able to avoid Princess Yao Yue’s next attack.

All she need now is a fatal strike! Suddenly Xiao Yu’er shouted, “Wait, I have some last words to say.”

Princess Yao Yue totally ignored him, and attacked with lightning speed, but after one move, she suddenly stopped, just that her palm is still inches away from Xiao Yu’er, and her eyes never leaving Xiao Yu’er’s face, and she said coldly, “At a time like this, what other tricks are you trying to play?”

Xiao Yu’er sighed, “You should know by now, no matter what, I will not be able to escape, or will there be anyone who will come and save me. I have no choice but to die at your hands. Then, at a time like this, you should tell me that secret.”

His expression was full of anticipation and plea, and looked indescribably pitiful, no one would expect Xiao Yu’er would actually reveal such a pitiful expression. Princess Yao Yue looked at him, and did not speak for a long time.

Princess Yao Yue suddenly said, “After you’re dead, I will certainly tell this secret to Su Ying.”

Xiao Yu’er exclaimed, “You… can’t say it to me?”

Prinecss Yao Yue replied, “No!” This reply is as determined as the past reply, there is no room for negotiation at all.

Xiao Yu’er heaved a long sigh, “You’re fiercer than a robber, and would not even agree to my last request before I die. If I were to ask for another thing, would you agree?”

Princess Yao Yue hesitated for a moment, and finally said slowly, “That will depend on what you’re asking.”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “I want to pee, can I?”

At a time like this, he can actually make such a request, and one wonders whether to cry or laugh. Princess Yao Yue’s pale face seems to be turning red with anger.

Xiao Yu’er continued, “I drank too much wine earlier, and I can’t hold it in any longer. If you do not agree, I will have to do it right here.”

Princess Yao Yue exclaimed furiously, “I will kill you right now!” Princess Yao Yue gritted her teeth and stared at him for a moment, and suddenly smiled coldly, “Fine, you can go, I don’t believe you still have any tricks left.”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “This place is like a dead end, I can’t possibly know the ’72 changes’, and change into a fly and fly out!”

He went back to the underground cave, and saw that Wei Wu Ya’s body is starting to shrivel, and it makes one want to puke upon seeing it.

Xiao Yu’er blinked, “You’re not coming in? Aren’t you afraid I’ll escape?”

Princess Yao Yue ignored him. There is only one exit in this cave, and naturally she knows that no matter how capable Xiao Yu’er is, there is no way he can escape.

After a moment, the sound of water flowing was heard, and when in her life has Princess Yao Yue ever heard such a ‘scary’ sound. Her face unconsciously reddened, and can’t help but cover her ears. Luckily no one will be able to pee for too long a time, and she only has to tolerate for a moment.

Who would have expected that after a long moment, the flowing sound is still ongoing. After another while, the sound can still be heard.

The more Princess Yao Yue waited, the more impatient and perplexed she became. Princess Yao Yue can’t help but call out, “Jiang Xiao Yu, why aren’t you out yet?”

There is only the sound of ‘flowing water’ inside, but no one replied.

Although Princess Yao Yue obviously knew that there’s no way Xiao Yu’er can escape, but she can’t help but feel suspicious, and after calling out two more times without hearing a reply, she can’t help but thought quietly to herself, “Could this little imp really found another way out. He already knew the way out is here, that’s why he devised such a plot so that he can escape, but trap us in here!” Once she thought of this, her limbs turned cold, and without a thought for anything else, she dashed in.

No, there is no change in here at all, there is still the sound of water flowing, it’s just that there’s a ‘wall’ blocking her line of view, and she can’t see if Xiao

Yu’er is in there. Once Princess Yao Yue dashed in, she waved her hand and emitted a gush of energy.

With a ‘crack’, the three walls made with the pile of stones and the coffin cover broke apart, and indeed not a shadow could be seen inside.

There were only a few wine bottles bundled together with a cloth rope, hanging in midair from the hole at the top, and there’s a small hole at the bottom of the bottles. The wine in the bottles flowed into the coffin, the sound continuous.

In her surprise, Princess Yao Yue suddenly saw a shadow dart out from the corner of her eyes. It turned out that Xiao Yu’er had been hiding behind that door, and when Princess Yao Yue’s turned her attention towards that side, he sneaked out. By the time Princess Yao Yue realized it, he is already outside the door.

When Princess Yao Yue wanted to give chase, the stone door had already closed noiselessly, and even Xiao Yu’er’s loud laughter was totally cut off. Only now was Princess Yao Yue totally shocked still.

No matter what she had faced in her whole life, she has never exclaimed in alarm, or begged anyone else, but now she can’t help but shout out, “Jiang Xiao Yu, open the door, let me out.”

After a while, Xiao Yu’er’s voice drifted in from the air hole at the top, and he chuckled, “Let you out, would I let you out to kill me?”

Princess Yao Yue bit her lips and said, “I… I promise not to kill you.”

Xiao Yu’er replied loudly, “Even if you do not kill me, I will not let you out, because even if you do not kill me, but I want to kill you. Don’t you forget the great enmity between us.” Princess Yao Yue’s heart pounded, there is nothing she can say further.

End of Chapter 107

Chapter 97

Chapter 108

Princess Yao Yue's head almost lowered.

Suddenly Xiao Yu'er said, "I really do not wish for you to die so horribly, as long as you promise me one thing, I'll let you out immediately."

Princess Yao Yue asked without thought, "What is it?" Once she said these words, she knew what Xiao Yu'er wants her to do.

Xiao Yu'er really said it, "As long as you tell me that secret, I will let you out immediately."

Princess Yao Yue sighed, "You…. You can forget about it…."

Xiao Yu'er asked, "You are willing to die together with Wei Wu Ya? If anyone were to come in here in future, and found the two of you dead in the same room, what will they think." He added with a laugh, "They will certainly say that, although Princess Yao Yue looks cold and haughty, but she actually had a secret lover, and the two of them actually came to this place for a rendezvous, and…"

He laughed and stopped, deliberately not continuing his sentence. Princess Yao Yue is already shaking.

Xiao Yu'er added, "Why don't you consider it, I will let you out when you say it. Anyway I won't have long to live after hearing this secret."

Princess Yao Yue did not speak. At least she is not rejecting him now. Su Ying,

who was next to Xiao Yu'er all this time, sighed and said, "At a time like this, why must you force her to reveal the secret? What good will it do you if she reveals it, it will only add to your troubles."

Xiao Yu'er did not answer her, but asked her instead, "You should know that, between me and Hua Wu Que, one must die in the other's hands. If he does not kill me, I have to kill him. But I do not believe that there is really such a thing as fate in this world, I must think of a way to change it, so I can only force her to reveal this secret. If I know why she insists that we duel, then I will have a way to solve it."

Su Ying said quietly, "But… but isn't your fate changed now! Now, you are unable to kill him, nor can he kill you, because you… you will die here."

Xiao Yu'er replied, "Who said I will die here? I am born lucky, no matter what dangers I face, calamity will certain change into fortune when the time comes. I can bet with you, someone will certainly come and save me."

Su Ying was silent for a moment before replying, "Actually Hua Wu Que will certainly think of a way to save you, but now, who knows what trouble he might be in himself, or else he would never have stopped."

Xiao Yu'er clasped his palms and laughed, "That's right, the people he is most likely to meet, will be Li Da Zui and the rest, because they have an appointment here, they will certainly come within these two days."

Su Ying asked, "Then, do you think they will think of a way to come in and save you?"

Xiao Yu'er smiled bitterly, "Of course not, now I know that they keep thinking that I will join forces with others to deal with them, so they wish that I would die faster. But they think that Wei Wu Ya kept some treasures, and they will not give up unless they come in. I guess that they will be here in less than a day."

Su Ying asked, "Do they have a way to come in?"

Xiao Yu’er replied, “With their capabilities, they will be able to come in even if the walls here are made of copper or steel.”

Su Ying finally smiled, “I hope that you won’t guess wrongly this time.” Before she could finish her words, sounds of clanging could be heard from outside.

Xiao Yu’er clasped his palms and chuckled, “You should trust me by now.”

Princess Yao Yue’s nervous disposition gradually calmed, and she was quietly adjusting the flow of her breathing, slowly going into meditation.

Xiao Yu’er said, “It seems that I have to tell her now that Hua Wu Que will be coming in soon.”

Su Ying’s eyes brightened, “That’s right, I will tell her first that Hua Wu Que is coming here, then tell her that if she refuses to disclose this secret, we will seal this place. I think even if she thinks this secret is important, it will never be as important as her own life.” Before the echoes of her voice have faded away, someone suddenly spoke behind them.

Princess Lian Xing said each word clearly, “You’re wrong, she really thinks this secret is more important than her life.” Although the words were spoken slowly and calmly, but to Xiao Yu’er and Su Ying’s ears, it sounded like a sudden bout of thunder. In the dim light, Princess Lian Xing’s face was as pale as paper. Princess Lian Xing continued, “Maybe if I have never been drunk it will be better.”

Her expression was still in a daze, as if she does not even know what she is talking about.

Xiao Yu’er’s eyes rolled, and suddenly smiled, “It seems like you’re feeling terrible, actually, it’s nothing shameful about being drunk. Everyday there are a least a few hundred thousand people who are drunk in this world, why should you feel bad? Did you think you have done anything? You fell asleep immediately after you were drunk, and only uttered a few words, it’s like you were dreaming.”

Princess Lian Xing slowly exhaled, and light slowly came back into her eyes, her pale face slowly gaining some color as well, and mumbled, “That’s right, I did have a dream, and it’s a very strange dream.”

Su Ying looked at him, full of admiration in her eyes, like she is really proud of him. Every girl will wish that her lover is generous, warm and kind. Although Xiao Yu’er had done some unscrupulous things in order to stay alive, but he does have a warm and kind heart towards others.

After a moment, Princess Lian Xing said slowly, “She can’t kill you now, let her off.” Her tone was very weird when she said this sentence, she was not being forceful in her request at all, but sounded more like an outsider trying to mediate.

Xiao Yu’er took a look at her, and without saying a single word, dragged Su Ying towards where the switch for the trap is. Princess Lian Xing did not follow at all.

They can’t help but to go down and have a look, but he did not expect Princess Yao Yue to really stay in the cave and not leave. Instead she sat down at the side of the wall. Princess Lian Xing stood far away, looking at her, lost in thought, the expression on her face a little startled, a little envious, and even a little jealous.

The more Xiao Yu’er sees it the stranger he felt. Although Princess Lian Xing’s expression was strange, Princess Yao Yue’s expression was stranger. Her face was neither red nor pale, but looked transparent. Under the light, it seems that every vein and every bone in her muscles can be seen clearly. This extremely beautiful face, has now become indescribably strange and frightening.

Su Ying exclaimed in alarm, “What is happening, could it be that she is… is already crazy?” Xiao Yu’er shook his head, and before he could speak, Princess Lian Xing had quietly retreated, standing there in a daze, not knowing what she could be thinking about. Su Ying and Xiao Yu’er were right in front of her, but she does not seem to have seen them.

Xiao Yu’er went forward to make conversation, saying “For a person’s face to turn transparent, it’s really rare, is this one of the martial arts you learn as well?”

He saw Princess Lian Xing's expression and thought that she will never answer this question, but who would have expected that although Princess Lian Xing still did not take a look at him, but she replied slowly, "That's right! The last stage of 'Clear Jade Skill' will cause this."

Xiao Yu'er probed further, "Then, this martial arts must be very formidable?"

Princess Lian Xing replied, "There are altogether nine levels in this martial arts, and once one reaches level six, he can duel with the best martial arts exponent, if he reaches level eight, he will be invincible. Twenty years ago, we have already reached level eight. To master level eight of this martial arts, it would have needed at least thirty two years of hard work, but we only took twenty four years, and this speed of advance has already exceeded all those before us. We thought that we would need another four to five years to reach the last level."

Xiao Yu'er knows that she has already been lured into conversation, so he did not speak further, but just waited quietly for her to continue. After a while, Princess Lian Xing really continued with a sigh, "Who would have expected that these twenty years, there is no improvement in our martial arts at all, as if we can only reach this level, unable to move on to the next level."

Su Ying can't help but ask, "But you… why can't you reach it?"

Princess Lian Xing stared at Xiao Yu'er and did not speak for a long time, as if considering if she should answer this question, and Xiao Yu'er waited patiently. After another long wait, Princess Lian Xing finally heaved another long sigh and said slowly, "It's because twenty four years ago, we had no distractions when we were practicing martial arts, but the last twenty years, we are like any other normal humans, we had troubles and pain, and no longer can we be as devoted as before."

Xiao Yu'er was silent for a moment before mumbling, "Twenty years ago?…. twenty years ago…." He stopped his mumbling, Princess Lian Xing's face slowly turned pale again, because she realized that Xiao Yu'er has guessed what is the troubles and pain that happened twenty years ago. Twenty years ago, isn't that the first time they set eyes on Jiang Feng.

Su Ying suddenly asked, “Now… could it be that Princess Yao Yue has reached the ninth level now?”

Princess Lian Xing replied, “That’s right.” There was a trace of envy and jealousy in her eyes again, and she said calmly, “I really did not think that for twenty years she was unable to achieve it, but at a time like this, a place like this, I… I really am happy for her.”

Xiao Yu’er chewed his lips, and laughed, “I’m afraid it’s because I have helped her.”

Princess Lian Xing sighed, “I’m afraid that’s exactly the reason, because after you have trapped her there, it really removed any chance of survival. At a time like this, a person’s mind would have some unexpected change, maybe in that instant, she understood. Maybe she herself cannot imagine that she will have such an unexpected gain.”

The sounds of the rocks being moved outside are still ongoing. Listening to those chipping sounds, Xiao Yu’er does not know how he feel. If Princess Yao Yue is really invincible, his days ahead would be even more difficult.

Who would have expected that right at this time, the sounds suddenly stopped. Su Ying and Princess Lian Xing’s expression changed, and waited patiently for a long time, hoping that the sound would start again. But they were disappointed.

After a day, there is still no movement outside at all, and this day feels even longer than a million years. This time, even Xiao Yu’er is unable to guess what can make the Ten Evils stop. Now there is no hope for them at all.

End of Chapter 108

Chapter 98

Chapter 109

Hua Wu Que did not find Tie Xin Lan at all. Tue Xin Lan seemed to have disappeared mysteriously.

With Hua Wu Que's lightness skill, no matter which direction Tie Xin Lan had gone, he will certainly be able to catch up, but he searched the whole of Turtle Hill and can't find even her shadow. By the time he returned dejectedly, Wei Wu Ya's cave has already been sealed.

This change of event caused Hua Wu Que to be shocked and at a loss, he shouted madly but no one responded. Obviously the Floral Princesses and Xiao Yu'er have been sealed in the cave, or they would not have left without a word. Hua Wu Que only felt his limbs go numb, at a loss as to what to do.

By the time he borrowed a shovel and an axe from a woodcutter in the hills, the sun is slowly setting, and the light from the setting sun shone on the ground, the dusk seems to be bloody red.

He used all his strength and started to cut into the mountain. At the beginning, the rocks seem to be very weak beneath his shovel, but later it became harder and harder, as hard as steel.

He knows that his strength is slowly weakening, but he cannot stop. He does not even know what has happened in the cave, and he is almost going crazy. By now night is falling, in the boundless twilight, a shadow suddenly appeared. She did not speak, but just stood there quietly, looking at Hua Wu Que morosely. Although Hua Wu Que did not hear her voice, but his senses seemed to have detected something, and he slowly stopped working and quickly turned around.

Then, he became like this shadow, standing there in a daze, unable to move. Never did he imagine that the person standing in front of him now, is actually Tue Xin Lan, whom he was unable to find earlier. As he was searching for Tie Xin Lan all over the mountain earlier, his thoughts were like his steps, never stopping.

He thought of many things that he wanted to say to Tie Xin Lan. But now, although he is facing Tie Xin Lan, he can't even speak a single sentence. Tie Xin Lan did not say anything either, and dare not even look directly at him, but quietly lowered her head, fiddling with her clothes that was blown up by the wind.

"You… where did you go earlier?"

Tie Xin Lan's head lowered further and said, "I did not go anywhere, I've always been here." The corners of Hua Wu Que's lips moved, as if he wanted to smile, but did not.

Therefore he lowered his head as well and said, "So you did not go far at all, no wonder I couldn't find you…"

Tie Xin Lan blinked her eyes and asked, "Did you see Wei Wu Ya earlier?"

Hua Wu Que replied, "I did not, there was no one in there at all, but I think Wei Wu Ya must have hidden himself and while they were caught off guard, sealed off all exits."

Tie Xin Lan lowered her head and smiled, "It seems that you really have a suspicious nature." Hua Wu Que can't help but lower his head and smiled as well, and realized that he is still holding Tie Xin Lan's hands. His heart skipped, and immediately wanted to release his hold.

But who would have expected that Tie Xin Lan would actually grab his hands unconsciously and said, "This cave has been sealed by your Teacher, it seems that she does not wish for others to go in again, I just hate myself… hate myself for not going in to take a look earlier." Hua Wu Que only felt his heart beating very quickly. He heaved a long sigh and forced a smile, "Actually there's nothing

much to see inside.”

Tie Xin Lan replied, “I hear that Wei Wu Ya loved to collect treasures, there are many things which are rarely seen in this world, didn’t you see any?”

Hua Wu Que replied, “I did not see anything, maybe he took them all away.”

Tie Xin Lan said, “Maybe you did not take any notice at all.”

Hua Wu Que wanted to say something else, but suddenly realized that her eyes looked strange. Her eyes used to be clean and clear, it’s just that these past few days, it showed a hint of worry, making one’s heart break on seeing it. But now, her eyes seems extremely sharp, as cunning as a fox, and carried with it an evil air which made one’s hair stand.

In the darkness of the night, her figure and movement, her expression and face, is the same as Tie Xin lan, only this pair of eyes… This pair of eyes can never belong to Tie Xin Lan. Hua Wu Que felt a chill in his heart, and thought of retreating.

But it is too late by now!

Hua Wu Que felt his palms go numb, and the numbness spread to his limbs. With his last ounce of strength, he sliced over with a backhand, but this ‘Tie Xin Lan’ has already retreated twenty, thirty feet. He wanted to give chase, but he can no longer move his arms and legs.

‘Tie Xin Lan’ smiled, “Hua Wu Que oh Hua Wu Que, seems that you’re a lot worse than Xiao Yu’er. If it’s Xiao Yu’er, he would have seen through me before I speak my third sentence.”

A thought flashed through Hua Wu Que, and he suddenly remembered the name ‘Neither Man nor Woman’ Du Jiao Jiao, but now he could not even stand properly, and before he could utter a word, he collapsed.

Someone was heard laughing icily, “You need not be too smug, from what I

see, your art of disguise is quite sloppy as well, didn't he still see through it in the end?"

Du Jiao Jiao laughed, "That's right, he did see through it in the end, but that's just because I did not have the time to learn more about Tie Xin Lan's look. I only studied her for an hour, if you can give me half a day's time, this lad may not even be able to see through me during the day."

Hua Wu Que has more or less guessed who these few people are, and also knows that now he has fallen in their hands, it's like a fat sheep being sent to the slaughterhouse. But he was not worried about his own situation at all, because he knows that the situation the Floral Princesses and Tie Xin Lan is in must be more dangerous than his.

Li Da Zui walked over with a big laugh and looked Hua Wu Que up and down thoroughly, his tongue clicking.

After clicking his tongue a few tines, he mumbled, "Good, good, very good, such good meat, there may not be even one in ten thousand people. It's just that it's a little too thin, if it was stewed, there'll be too little oil."

As he spoke, he seemed to be salivating, and he reached out his hand, as if he is going to squeeze Hua Wu Que's neck, like an old woman going to the market to buy chicken. Hua Wu Que was anxious and furious, but he could not stop him at all. Du Sha suddenly called out, "Stop!"

Li Da Zui's arm retracted halfway and said with a laugh, "I am not killing him now, what does it matter that I'm only squeezing him a little?"

Du Sha said coldly, "This person can be considered one of the heroes of our time. I may not be able to win him in a fight, but at least I must treat him with courtesy. It doesn't matter if you kill him, but you cannot humiliate him!"

Only now did Hua Wu Que hear something that is more befitting to a human, and can't help but heave a long sigh and say, "Thank you."

Hua Wu Que was silent for a moment before saying solemnly, “I am now in your hands, and have disregarded death, so I dare not ask for the word ‘respect’, it’s just that Tie Xin Lan…” He stared at Du Sha and said each word clearly, “Have Tie Xin Lan landed in your hands as well?” He did not ask anyone else, only Du Sha, because he can tell that among these five people, only this person with a murderous air will not lie.

Du Sha really replied, “Yes.”

Hua Wu Que still ignored the others, and only stared at Du Sha, “If you will let her go, I will die with no complains.”

Du Sha replied, “I don’t mind telling you, her father is my sworn friend, I wouldn’t make things difficult for her. Although Tie Zhan is considered one of the ‘Ten Evils’ but besides his proud character, if we consider only his deeds and his stout stature, he is definitely not below those people who consider themselves heroes…”

Hua Wu Que sighed, “Since you have said that, I am relieved. I would like to ask, my Teacher…”

He just said two sentences and Du Jiao Jiao interrupted with a smile, “You should put your mind at ease about this as well, they have been trapped by Wei Wu Ya in the cave, unless someone can borrow the mountain splitting axe from Ri Lian Valley, or else they can forget about coming out for the rest of their lives.”

Hua Wu Que felt his body turn cold, “Is this real?” Du Sha replied seriously, “I did not see them coming out.”

Hua Wu Que closed his eyes, no longer speaking.

End of Chapter 109

Chapter 99

Chapter 110

Du Jiao Jiao said, “Since Wei Wu Ya is able to trap them inside, he must have laid out detailed plans long ago, there certainly will not be any food that will drop down into the cave.”

Li Da Zui added, “That’s right, Wei Wu Ya must have planned long ago to starve them to death in there.”

Du Jiao Jiao continued, “But how long can you stay hungry?”

Li Da Zui’s eyes gleamed and replied, “If there’s no food, I can last at least half a month, but without water, I won’t be able to stand it after two days.”

Du Jiao Jiao laughed, “Exactly, no matter how strong a person is, if there’s no water for two days, he will still have to lie down. Even if the Floral Princesses is stronger than anyone else, still she will surely not be able to last more than three days.”

Ha Ha’er clasped his palms and said, “Haha, that’s right, why don’t we wait another three to five days before we go in”

Before he could finish his words, Bai Kai Xin had somersaulted out from the forest and was laughing loudly, “That’s right, why can’t we wait for another three days before we go in, haha, Du Jiao Jiao oh Du Jiao Jiao, you’re really a lot smarter than I imagined ”

Although Hua Wu Que’s eyes were shut, but his ears were not, and on hearing these words, his heart unconsciously sank, as if it has sunken into a bottomless

abyss.

Du Jiao Jiao said, “Since everyone has decided to stay here, there’s a few things that need to be done.”

Bai Kai Xin replied, “That’s right, since we have decided to stay here, then we should bring that two lasses here as well. Although that half human half ghost weirdo promised to keep an eye on them there, but I still don’t feel assured,”

Du Jiao Jiao agreed, “Exactly, I may have use for those two ladies, so, Ha Ha’er, we’ll have to trouble you to bring them here.”

Bai Kai Xin ‘humphed’ and asked, “What about me then? What do you want me to do?”

Du Jiao Jiao replied, “You will go find some food and drinks, enough to last us at least for these three days.”

Li Da Zui jumped up and exclaimed, “Why do you want him to go? That lad knows nothing about food, he can even survive on a cold bun. The food that he will bring back, I’m afraid even dogs would not want to take a sniff at it.”

Du Jiao Jiao laughed, “That’s right, lechers are usually not that particular about food, but it’s better than asking you to go. If you bring back a plump roasted human, then we will have to go hungry. In the small town at the bottom of the hill, there seems to be a blacksmith, go there and get some tools for splitting open the rocks. From what I see, it won’t be an easy task to cut through this cave.”

Ha Ha’er replied, “Haha, if it’s an easy task, the Floral Princesses would have come out long ago.”

The three of them split up, and the soonest to return was Ha Ha’er. He was leading a donkey, and the donkey was pulling a huge rock.

Hua Wu Que was waiting anxiously for Tie Xin Lan, but Ha Ha’er only brought

back a donkey. Hua Wu Que was both surprised and disappointed.

Right at this time, something stranger happened. From this rock, a very strange moaning sound was heard, accompanied by a giggling laugh.

Hua Wu Que almost could not believe his own eyes, nor believe his own ears. Du Jiao Jiao glanced at him and suddenly said, “Do you see this rock? This is a magic rock, it will eat people up, so it’s called Carnivore Rock, that Miss Tie of yours have been eaten by it.”

Hua Wu Que gritted his teeth, to control himself from speaking. Although Hua Wu Que does not believe it, but his eyes can’t help but keep looking towards that direction. His eyes may be looking, but in his heart there is still disbelief.

Who would have expected that with a wave of Du Jiao Jiao’s hands, that rock really opened. There are actually two people in the rock. And surprisingly it’s Madam Bai and Tie Xin Lan.

At a time and place like this, with a scene like this, Hua Wu Que is really shocked, but Ha Ha’er and Du Jiao Jiao were clapping their hands and laughing heartily.

Hua Wu Que finally realized as well, that this stone is actually made from canvas, and moss was stuck onto the canvas piece by piece. It’s so well made that it can pass off as the real thing, and with the darkness of night, even with Hua Wu Que’s sharp eyesight, he can’t immediately tell the difference.

Flipping open the canvas, there’s actually a metal cage made from fine steel, and Madam Bai and Tie Xin Lan were kept in this metal cage. Tie Xin Lan was stooped in a corner, covering her face with her hands, as if she does not wish for others to see her, nor does she wish to see anyone. Madam Bai was almost naked, and she kept wriggling about, giggling continuously, and also moaning continuously.

Hua Wu Que only took a glance, and he closed his eyes, unable to watch any longer. He can’t bear to see Tie Xin Lan’s appearance, nor bear to see Madam Bai’s appearance. Tie Xin Lan made him feel sad, but Madam Bai made him feel a

little nauseous.

Du Jiao Jiao smiled, “Tie Xin Lan, Miss Tie, do you know who we’re talking to?” Tie Xin Lan still covered her face with her hands, refusing to lift her head up.

Ha Ha’er said, “Why don’t you open your eyes to take a look, I guarantee that once you open your eyes, you will certainly be shocked.”

Hua Wu Que only hoped that Tie Xin Lan will not open her eyes, will not see him in such a situation, he will never want Tie Xin Lan to feel upset because of him. But Tie Xin Lan’s hands have already slid down, her head already lifted.

Her body started shaking immediately. She rushed over, her hands grabbing the steel cage, her eyes filled with sadness and despair. She did not scream or shout, but the look in her eyes is enough to break one’s heart. Hua Wu Que closed his eyes, hoping that the ground would suddenly split open and swallow him up forever.

Right at this time, Bai Kai Xin is back.

He brought back two large bags of things, and kept on panting, his mouth mumbling, “I would actually go through so much trouble to find things for you, I can’t even believe it myself.”

Du Sha asked, “Where is Li Da Zui? Why isn’t he back yet? Didn’t you go with him to that town?” Bai Kai Xin exclaimed, “Why would I go the same way as that big mouth wolf, if he can go to heaven, I’d rather go to hell.”

Du Jiao Jiao asked, “Then, where did you get these food from?”

Bai Kai Xin replied, “At the temple at the foot of the mountain. Did you think that the monks in the temple are vegetarians? Let me tell you, you’re in luck. This temple that I found, is opened by a monk who drinks wine and eats meat. Even a boss won’t let his staff eat more than a kati of meat, but they would eat meat by the kilos.”

From within his bag he took out a piece of meat and started chewing on it, mumbling again, “The mouth is used for eating, not for scolding, whoever uses it wrongly, the only person who will be unlucky is himself.”

Madam Bai, who was in the cage, suddenly jumped up and stared at that two bags. Her body is full of lined injuries, some were due to whipping, some were due to her own scratching, she has been so tortured that she no longer seems human, she has lost the dignity of being a human. Even the gaze in her eyes looks like a wild beast.

Du Jiao Jiao took out a bun and said, “You want to eat as well? So sorry, but I must want you to go hungry.”

Madam Bai did not speak, because the strange illness of her struck again.

Du Sha furrowed his brows and asked, “Why do you want them to go hungry!”

Du Jiao Jiao smiled coquettishly and replied, “Because I want to use them in an experiment, to see how long will it take to starve them to weaken them, by that time, we can start digging the hole.”

The last to return was Li Da Zui. By the time he came back, the sky is already bright. He had traveled for a whole night, but not only was he not tired at all, he was very excited instead.

Bai Kai Xin sniggered and said icily, “Look at him, he looks like the Ox Demon who has just eaten Tang Seng’s flesh.”

(Tang Seng: Tripitaka, or Tang Xuan Zang, a monk from the Tang Dynasty, made famous in the novel Journey to the West. According to the novel, any demon who ate his flesh would become immortal.)

Du Jiao Jiao interrupted, “Don’t you listen to his bullshit, tell us quickly what strange things you saw.”

Du Sha asked icily, “What actually happened?”

Li Da Zui explained, “By the time I left the mountains it was almost the ‘Zi’ hour (11pm – 1am), and I thought those in town would certainly be asleep by then. Who would have expected that the town was still brightly lit, the streets filled with people, and it was even more crowded than the temple fair in the city. So I thought it strange as well, and I pulled someone aside to ask, and I found out that there were two people who opened a gambling den in town. Not only those who stay in that town would gamble till daybreak, even those people in the surrounding hundred kilometers came as well, so this originally secluded town became even more crowded than a trading town.”

Ha Ha’er replied, “Haha, opening a gambling den is a lucrative business, why don’t we join in the fun, and I can have be a competition to that two lads.”

Li Da Zui laughed, “A gambling den like theirs, I’m afraid we can’t afford to open one. Because they are not intent on earning money with their gambling den, but to ease their gambling urges. Those who go there to gamble, if they win, the banker will pay their winnings, but if they lose, they just have to kow tow and they can leave. It seems that within three days, the two lads have lost several thousand taels.”

Bai Kai Xin opened his eyes wide and said, “There are people in the business of killing others, but no one will be in the business of making a loss, could there be something wrong with these two?”

Li Dai Zui replied lazily, “There’s nothing wrong with these two at all, it’s just that their gambling addiction is shocking, as long as someone will gamble with them, they’ll be ecstatic, and they never bother about winning or losing.”

Ha Ha’er suddenly clapped and said, “Haha, I know, a gambling addict like this, there can never be a second one in this world.”

Du Sha furrowed his brows, “It is really Xuan Yuan San Guang?”

Li Da Zui replied, “I saw him, but he did not see me, because at that time, besides the dice and cards in his eyes, he wouldn’t recognize his own father if he went. But the stakes there are really strange, a kowtow is considered one tael, a

slap on the buttocks is considered five coins, when he wins, sounds of heads being knocked on the floor and buttocks being slapped will be heard throughout the gambling den, and add that to his smug laughter, it's really lively."

Du Jiao Jiao asked, "What if he lost?"

Li Da Zui replied, "If he lost, there really would be piles and piles of silver taken out to pay the others, not a single cent less."

Du Sha suddenly asked, "The person who was banker with him, do you recognize him?"

Li Da Zui laughed, "Skinny and wrinkled, not very good looking, I've never seen that person."

Du Jiao Jiao replied slowly, "That may not be necessarily so, maybe I will be interested in this person."

Bai Kai Xin laughed, "I am quite interested in this person as well, I really want to see how he became friends with that compulsive gambler. For all you know, Compulsive Gambler's silver may be coming from his pockets."

Du Jiao Jiao rolled her eyes and smiled, "Since we're both so interested in him, then let us pay him a visit tonight."

Although it's deep into the night, but the town was really brightly lit, and those walking on the streets were mostly happy, but nine out of ten of them doesn't look like respectable characters.

But Du Jiao Jiao's appearance now, is very respectable. She is dressed up as a poor scholar who looks like he's got not much money, but a lot of flair. Naturally Bai Kai Xin can only be her follower.

Du Jiao Jiao chose to take a seat at a stall selling noodles, and ordered a bowl of noodles, a braised egg and a plate of braised beef. Bai Kai Xin can only stand at the side and watch.

The boss of the noodle stall is an old man, and as he cooked, he tried to make conversation, “Are you gambling as well?”

Du Jiao Jiao smiled and asked, “Have you ever seen the two persons who opened the gambling den?”

That old man sighed, “Those two are mad, especially the skinny one. When he’s not gambling, he looked as if his father had just died, a look of despair on his face, but once he gambles, he is immediately energetic. This time he has gambled for three days and night.”

Du Jiao Jiao asked, “Can they afford to lose?”

That old man replied, “It seems that they brought with them two huge carriages of silver. If the ancestors have not done anything wrong, would their family have a wastrel like him.” That old man was really polite in his conversation, so polite that it makes one feel good.

As they spoke, they have followed a few people to the only inn in the town. The inn was not very large, and now it’s almost bursting to the seams. Xuanyuan San Guang’s gambling den is right in this inn.

Du Jiao Jiao walked over, and everywhere there were people squeezing and pushing one another. She has never been tall, so she can’t even see where Xuanyuan San Guang is. But she finally heard Xuanyuan San Guang’s voice.

Someone laughed loudly and shouted, “Ge Lao Zi (Old Man Ge), will you sons of turtles come up one by one, any more squeezing and even your egg yolks will be squeezed out.” Du Jiao Jiao have not heard his voice for twenty years, but once she head the words ‘Old Man Ge’, she knew with certainty it must be Compulsive Gambler.

(Ge Lao Zi: A slang used in Si Chuan. Somewhat like an exclamation.)

Du Jiao Jiao rolled her eyes, pulled Bai Kai Xin to the side and suddenly sealed

the acupoints of the two people in front of them. They collapsed without a sound, and the others did not even take a look towards their direction. Du Jiao Jiao actually stood on top of these two people. And so she finally saw Compulsive Gambler Xuanyuan San Guang.

They are gambling on ‘odds and evens’ now, and on the table, there was a white piece of cloth, with a black line drawn in the middle of the cloth, odd is on the left side, even on the right.

Once the dice is shown, if it’s ‘odds’ then those who bet on ‘evens’ would kowtow and slap their buttocks. Such method of gambling, is really simple and easily understood, and very exciting as well.

Half of his cloths have slid down his body, his hair messy as well, but he just used a dirty and smelly towel to wrap his head, his whole face oily, his eyes bloodshot, looking exactly like a butcher.

In front of him were some meat buns, obviously not only did he not sleep, but there’s no time for meals as well, and only a bite was taken out of that bun. He looked totally disheveled, but his face is full of joy, and his voice may have become hoarse, but he’s still roaring at the top of his lungs.

Du Jiao Jiao stared at a person next to Xuanyuan San Guang, and Bai Kai Xin finally followed her gaze and took a look. This person is really dark and skinny, his appearance ugly, but his bloodshot eyes looked bright.

Xuanyuan San Guang shouted, “Sons of turtles, place your bets quickly, I’m going to open.” On both sides of the tables, bets were placed, some betted with a few copper coins, some with two stones, some even wrote a few words on a tattered piece of paper. At the side of the table, there were two who were still kowtowing, obviously they lost too much.

Xuanyuan San Guang shook a broken bowl in his hands, the dice rolling about in the broken bowl, the dark and skinny man staring at the side, his forehead sweating. Suddenly Xuanyuan San Guang roared, “Open!” and with a ‘bang’ the broken bowl was lifted from the table.

End of Chapter 110

Chapter 100

Chapter 111

Cheers immediately erupted from the crowd, and someone laughed loudly, “Seven points, it’s odd, I win.”

Xuanyuan San Guang laughed, “When there’s a winner there’ll be a loser, winners will be paid, those sons of turtles who lost come and kowtow first!”

He took a string of copper coins from the table and smiled as he counted, “Old Man Ge, fifty, you son of a turtle actually wanted to win from us fifty taels of silver…. Which one is it, come out quickly and kowtow.”

He asked three times, but no one in the crowd answered. Before he could finish his words, that dark and skinny man suddenly flew up like a large bird, somersaulted and pulled someone up by his hair.

That person screamed in alarm, “I didn’t place the bet…. I didn’t place the bet…” But that skinny man on tapped lightly with the tip on his foot on another person’s shoulder, and actually carried that person up in the air and flew back with a ‘swoosh’.

Du Jiao Jiao said with a low voice, “Not only is this person’s Lightness Skill superb, but his moves are so weird that I have never seen it before.”

Bai Kai Xin replied with a low sigh, “We seemed to have seen it before, it’s just that…” Du Jiao Jiao smiled coldly, “It’s just that we have forgotten it now, right?”

By this time the dark, skinny man has thrown a man clad in green with a plaster pasted on his temple onto the table, and that man was still shouting, “It

wasn't me, you've seen wrongly."

Xuanyuan San Guang grabbed him and roared angrily, "Old Man Ge, you son of a turtle thinks that our eyes are useless, you son of a turtle can try asking the people here, when have we ever seen wrongly."

The more he spoke, the angrier he became, and with a back slap gave the man a smack, and as he slapped, he scolded, "You can gamble shrewdly, gamble slyly but not cheat, you son of a turtle doesn't even know this rule and yet you dare to come and gamble… scram you son of a b*tch."

With a wave of his arms, he sent this person flying straight up, and naturally no one dared to go back on their bets. Immediately sounds of kowtowing and slapping resonated, and added with Xuanyuan San Guang's loud laughter, it really sounded quite festive.

Du Jiao Jiao shook her head and laughed, "I think this 'Compulsive Gambler' should change his nickname. The strange thing is that, why would this dark lad be as crazy as him? Or could their silver have dropped down from the sky?" She laughed, and continued, "Maybe this lad is too young to know how adorable money is, when he's my age, he will know that there's nothing as adorable as money in the world."

By now Xuanyuan San Guang is again roaring, "Son of turtles, have you placed your bets? I am going to open again."

With a 'bang' he placed that broken bowl on the table, when someone suddenly called out, "Please hold, wait for me." This voice is gentle and clear, it's actually a lady's voice, and it seems that the person who spoke is still outside, but her words traveled in clearly, over the sounds made by the surrounding noisy crowd.

Xuanyuan San Guang grinned and said, "The rules of the gambling den, is that since you're late, you'll have to place the next bet, but on the account that your voice sounded so nice, I will wait for a while." That voice laughed a tinkling laugh, "Thank you."

Her laughter sounded even nicer than her voice, and everyone can't help but want to see who this person is, and the people in front all turned their heads around and extended their necks to look.

They did not see anything at all, but only saw a group of people standing near the door suddenly falling down the two sides with gasps of alarm, and heard a man's voice shouting, "Scram, make way." Later, everyone saw five to six men as huge as towers wearing cotton clothes, their hands carrying leather whips, barging their way in.

Amidst the talking, another four large men walked in from the outside, two of them carrying two very large chests, and the chests seem very heavy. They carried the chests to the front of the gambling table and stood at the side with their arms crossed.

Xuanyuan San Guang's eyeball rolled about, and he laughed loudly, "I did not expect that a great Bodhisattva would come to this small temple of ours."

He slapped that skinny dark lad's shoulders hard and laughed, "Brother, haven't you kept saying that there's not enough kick gambling? It seems that the kick is now coming!"

There's no expression on that skinny dark lad's face at all, nor did he say anything. If not for the fact that his eyes are still opened, others will surely think that he has fallen asleep. Right at this time, three glowing young ladies strolled in.

It was very noisy in the gambling den, but once the three of them walked in, silence suddenly surrounded the place. Everyone was gaping, staring, and almost stopped breathing, because these three young ladies are really too beautiful, so beautiful that it makes one breathless.

Besides the difference in the color of their clothes, these three young ladies look as if they are made from the same mold, even the way they walk is the same. By now they have strolled to the front of Xuanyuan San Guang, and smiled.

The young lady in purple standing in the middle said, “Thank you for waiting, so sorry about that.”

Xuanyuan San Guang smiled, “No matter, I have not gambled with beauties for a long time, it doesn’t matter if I have to wait a little longer.”

The huge men had moved three chairs in from outside, and used their sleeves to clean it up before respectfully asking that three young ladies to take a seat.

Xuanyuan San Guang clapped his hands and called out, “Good, now Misses can place your bets, please!”

The young lady in purple nodded slightly to the huge man next to her, and that huge man immediately opened one chest, and everyone only saw silver rays almost blinding their eyes.

Xuanyuan San Guang’s eyes shone immediately as well, and laughed, “So it turns out that Misses have readied yourselves for a good gamble, now that Misses have found me, you’ve really gotten the right person!”

The lady in purple asked, “Is there a limit to the bets here!”

Xuanyuan San Guang laughed loudly, “Don’t you worry, it’s up to you how much to bet, the banker will still pay up.”

The lady in purple replied, “That’s the best.”

She waved her hand and said, “Fifty thousand, even!”

Once the two words ‘fifty thousand’ were uttered, everyone thought there was something wrong with their ears, but that huge man really placed fifty thousand taels of silver there.

Bai Kai Xin can’t help but ask, “Do you think those three beauties are really here to gamble?”

Du Jiao Jiao shook her head, “People like them, even if they want to gamble, they won’t come all the way here.”

Bai Kai Xin added, “Then, could it be that they are here to create trouble for this compulsive gambler?”

Du Jiao Jiao replied with a quiet voice, “Right now I can’t see through their intentions as well, anyway just wait and see, this ‘Compulsive Gambler’ will certainly not have a good day today.”

By this time that skinny lad seemed to have suddenly woken up from his dream in shock, his dark face seemed to gleam red, while Xuanyuan San Guang kept kneading and rubbing his fists, and said, “Good, taken, must be taken, how satisfying.”

His hands that was as large as a fan suddenly seized the broken bowl and shouted, “Open!” Both dice are red, one is one point, the other is four points.

Sighs immediately erupted through the crowd, “Five points, odd, the banker wins.” That lady in purple did not even blink her eyes, as if she has lost only five coins, and she actually waved her hands lightly again and said nonchalantly, “Fifty thousand, still even.”

Xuanyuan San Guang laughed loudly, “Right, there’s no loss in gambling, again.” The dice were clanking in the bowl, then there was a ‘ba’ sound, and Xuanyuan San Guang opened the broken bowl with all his might again.

Both dice were black, one is three points, the other is six points. Odd again.

The lady in purple actually bet on ‘even’ for six times continuously. The dice opened ‘odd’ for six times continuously! Of the two large chests, one is already empty, and everyone in the gambling den were sweating. But there was no change in the lady in purple’s expression.

The two persons next to her, were actually smiling slightly, neither speaking,

nor even furrowing their brows. They did not even shift in their seats.

The huge man said, “There’s still two hundred thousand.”

The lady in purple said calmly, “Bet all of it this time!” The lady in purple quietly said one word through her lips, “Even!”

She is still betting on even! Those in the crowd can’t help but exclaim, but once the sound of the dice was heard, all other sounds ceased immediately, and not even the sound of breathing was heard.

Xuanyuan San Guang banged the broken bowl onto the table again, his two huge hands holding on to it tightly, his eyes staring at the young lady in purple and said, “Do you really want to bet on even this time? Fine, good, even your father* take my hat off you.”

(your father = a crude way of saying ‘I’)

He finally said the words ‘your father’, obviously even this ‘Compulsive Gambler’ is beginning to feel anxious. That dark skinny man’s eyes seemed to be twice as large, and stared unblinkingly at Xuanyuan San Guang’s pair of hands, his forehead sweating.

There was a loud shout, “Open!”

The dice was revealed and it was odd again. This time, even Xuanyuan San Guang was stunned, he really could not imagine that he would have such luck, that the dice would open up to be odd seven times in a row. The crowd exclaimed in surprise and sighed as well.

But there was still no change in the expression on the three young ladies’ faces, even the pearl hairpiece on their hair was not moving. The three of them only took a glance at the two dice, stood up, and without a word, turned around quietly, walked out quietly.

Xuanyuan San Guang suddenly called out, “Misses please hold. Gamblers like

Misses, although there may be more than one, but it's still a rarity. If a gambler were to meet an opponent like misses and to let you off lightly, then this gambler should be banished to the eighteenth level of hell. Don't Misses want to recoup your losses?"

The young lady in purple laughed, "A pity that we have lost everything today, another two more days perhaps."

Xuanyuan San Guang replied, "Losses are always to be paid instantly in gambling dens, no credit is allowed, but for gamblers like Misses, exceptions can be made."

He slapped the table and laughed, "Misses can place your bets freely, no matter how much is the bet, I'll just take your word for it."

The lady in purple glanced at her sisters standing next to her from the corner of her eyes, then smiled calmly, "You trust us?"

Xuanyuan San Guang laughed loudly, "As long as Misses are willing to gamble, would I be afraid that Misses would give me a cent less!"

The young lady in purple hesitated, the three of them exchanged looks again and finally turned around in unison, walking slowly back to the gambling table. Du Jiao Jiao smiled slightly and said softly, "I have long known that this Compulsive Gambler would not let them go."

End of Chapter 111

Chapter 101

Chapter 112

Xuanyuan San Guang was glowing and he rubbed his hands in glee, “How much are Misses betting this time?” The young lady in purple said with a smile, “You may trust us, but we do not wish to break the rules of your gambling den. Besides, there’s not much fun in betting verbally. We may have lost our money, but we have not lost our people.”

Xuanyuan San Guang was stunned, “People!”

The young lady in purple smiled, “People, can sometimes be used as bets as well. If a gambler were to get a good set of cards, he would even want to lie on the betting table and use himself as a bet. You have gambled for fifty years, don’t you understand even this?”

“Excellent, excellent, I have gambled across the world, and only today have I finally found my match. How does Miss want to bet, just speak freely, I will surely oblige.”

The young lady in purple said, “Our bet is very simple as well, betting one for one.” Xuanyuan San Guang took a look at the three of them and laughed loudly, “But for someone like Misses, I really cannot afford the loss.”

The lady in purple said, “If we win, either one of you will just have to leave with us.”

Xuanyuan San Guang’s eyes grew bigger, “What if Misses were to lose?”

The lady in purple smiled slightly, “If we lose, naturally one of us sisters will

have to leave with you.”

Once these words were spoken, a commotion erupted in the gambling den again. Everyone felt that with a bet like that, Xuanyuan San Guang will be having the upperhand. If they can win such a dainty beauty, naturally they will get to enjoy her beauty, even if they lost, to leave with three people like that, is akin to walking into a bevy of beauties.

Bai Kai Xin stared and asked, “Have these three taken a liking to this Compulsive Gambler? Or else why would they want such a bet?”

Du Jiao Jiao furrowed her brows and said, “Now even I am getting more and more confused, I really cannot figure out what they are here for.”

Xuanyuan San Guang laughed aloud without stopping, “Of course, of course, it is but of course…” The lady in purple waited for him to finish laughing before asking calmly, “So this means that, you have agreed to our bet?”

Xuanyuan San Guang replied with a laugh, “What is there for me not to agree?”

The lady in purple asked, “What about your partner then? Does he agree?” Although she was asking Xuanyuan San Guang, but her eyes have flitted over to that quiet, unpredictable and mysterious skinny, tanned man. Only when the dice was being revealed, his face would show some excitement, his eyes will give heated looks, but at other times, he will always sit there in a daze, expressionless, like he is detached not only from the people in this noisy gambling den, but totally detached from this world.

Xuanyuan San Guang laughed, “This brother of mine has the same problem as me, he doesn’t like anything else but gambling, as long as gambling is involved, he will agree to anything.”

The young lady in purple rolled her eyes and said, “But I still want to hear it from himself.”

Xuanyuan San Guang tapped him on the shoulder and said, “All right, you tell them yourself. If we lose, are you willing to go with them?”

The skinny dark man replied without a thought, “Fine.”

The young lady in purple immediately pressed her question, “No matter where, you are willing to go?”

The dark skinny man heaved a long sigh and replied, “It doesn’t matter where, to me, everywhere is the same.”

Xuanyuan San Guang laughed, “Don’t think that this brother of mine looks a little stupid, actually he’s a true man, as long as he has said it, he will never go back on his words!”

The lady in purple beamed, “I definitely believe that.”

Xuanyuan San Guang laughed loudly, “Since that is the case, Misses please place your bet.” He swept up the broken bowl, stared at the lady in purple and asked, “Are you betting on odd or even this time?”

The young lady in purple replied, “Even!” She is still betting on even, as if she is not afraid of losing.

The crowd can’t help but sigh, everyone seems to have decided that this time she will definitely lose again.

There was a ‘bang’, and Xuanyuan San Guang has put the bowl down, but his large hands is still covering the bowl, not opening it yet.

When he was shaking the dice, he was not anxious at all, because once a gambler hears the crisp sound of the dice moving, he will immediately forget everything. But now, the dice have stopped moving, he can’t help but feel a little nervous, no matter how he sees it, this bet is really big.

But these three beautiful young ladies looked calm, with a hint of a smile, as if they do not care about the outcome of this bet. Even Xuanyuan San Guang can't help but feel a little admiration for them. Others were all holding their breath, the whole gambling den was so quiet that one can hear a pin drop.

Suddenly there was a loud shout, "Open!"

The dice that was revealed, were all red again, it's a pair of four, the young ladies finally won this time!

Some people in the crowd can't help but cheer. Gamblers are humans after all, and humans will always pity the weak, and gamblers will mostly pity the losers, as long as the winners are not themselves. Xuanyuan San Guang stopped being nervous instead, and laughed instead. If he can't afford to lose, how can he still be considered a gambler!

He laughed loudly and said, "Good, good, good, the God of Gamblers is now accepting disciples, so he must let you win once. If you keep losing, you will never have fun gambling in future."

The young lady in purple smiled. "So it seems that we have won this round, then the banker should pay!"

Her finger is already pointing at that skinny dark man, and continued with a smile, "Would you please come with us then."

The dark skinny man was silent for a moment, and suddenly stood up and took a huge step forward.

Xuanyuan San Guang grabbed him and asked, "You… you're really leaving? The money here, half of them is yours."

The skinny dark man replied, "You can have it all." He does not even care about his own life, much less material goods!

Xuanyuan San Guang sighed, the skinny dark man walked around the gambling table and stood straight in front of the young ladies. The young lady in purple smiled, “Don’t worry, you will not be disadvantaged if you follow us.” The skinny dark man seemed to be already in a daze, unable to hear anything at all.

Xuanyuan San Guang kept staring at them, and suddenly called out, “Please hold!” As he shouted, his huge body was already flying up, like a large bird. He flew to the door and blocked the path of the three young ladies.

Xuanyuan San Guang smiled coldly, “Only now did I realize that you three are here because of my Brother Hei, what do you want with him? Where are you bringing him?”

The young lady in purple smiled icily as well, “This, is none of your business. You said so yourself that one ‘can gamble shrewdly, gamble slyly but not cheat’, now that you have lost, are you trying to cheat your way out?”

Compulsive Gambler’s face seemed to have turned a little red, and suddenly asked, “If you lost, would you really have come with me?”

The young lady in purple said nonchalantly, “If we sisters were to lose, naturally someone will follow you, anyway we have lots of sisters at home…”

Xuanyuan San Guang’s eyes suddenly formed into a straight line and looked up and down this young lady a few times, asking, “You really have a lot of sisters? Are there nine?”

The young lady in purple was silent for a moment before replying slowly, “No more, no less, exactly nine.”

Once these words were spoken, Xuanyuan San Guang’s eyes shot open suddenly, and his stare was as large as copper bells. That zombie looking skinny dark man’s body shook, his face suddenly turned red, as if all the blood in his body had rushed up to his head. He also stared at the young lady and said, “You.. you are Murong…” The young lady in purple smiled and said, “I am Qi Niang (7th Lady), this is my 6th sister… this is 8th sister.”

The two young ladies next to her smiled as well, and the slightly older one said, “You may not have met us, but we have known about you long ago.” The skinny dark man’s face suddenly paled, and took a few steps back.

Murong Qi Niang smiled and said, “We also know that you are a man of your words, and will never renege, since you have lost, you will certainly follow us.”

Xuanyuan San Guang suddenly lifted his head and laughed heartily, “Rumors in the martial arts realm says that not only did the nine Murong sisters find the best husbands, but the nine sisters all have some skills. Those in the martial arts realm also know that the best in martial arts among the Murong sisters is the 2nd sister Murong Shuang, the most capable is Qi Niang, but the smartest and prettiest is the youngest sister Murong Jiu.”

Once he heard the name ‘Murong Jiu’, the skinny dark man’s face flushed red suddenly again.

Xuanyuan San Guang continued, “I also know that this Miss Jiu is not as lucky as her eight sisters, one year she suddenly disappeared, and although her eight brothers-in-law are descendents of famous families, and have friends all over the world, but they still can’t find her after searching for a few years. But this Brother Hei of mine found her, and like a fool escorted her back. Who would have expected that others were not grateful to him at all, and instead thought that he was the one who kidnapped Murong Jiu, and interrogated him like a thief for two, three days, stopping short at slapping his butt or using torture.”

Miss Murong Qi replied, “2nd and 3rd Sisters were not interrogating him, they harbor no ill intentions towards him, but just want to find out what has happened to 9th Sister these past few years.”

Miss Murong Ba (Ba = 8) added, “That’s why when he left, they insisted on thanking him generously.”

Xuanyuan San Guang replied, “That’s right, when he left, they insisted on giving him five thousand taels of gold. This is really no small sum, if it was given to beggars, it can be given to at least ten or twenty thousand of them.” His face has turned green, and now he suddenly jumped up and yelled, “But Brother Hei

is not a beggar. Because of your 9th Sister, he almost lost his life a few times, and who knows what other suffering did he go through, and did he do these for those few rotten metal of yours? You sisters are smart, do you really not understand his intention?”

Murong Qi Niang sighed and said with a bitter smile, “It’s not that we do not know, but…”

Xuanyuan San Guang laughed icily, “But the Murong Sisters all married rich men, Brother Hei is neither rich or powerful, nor is he the descendent of some famous respectable family, so naturally you can’t let Murong Jiu marry him.” As he spoke, he jumped up again and roared angrily, “But in what way is Brother Hei not worthy of her? He may not be rich, but he is a true man. If your sister can marry a husband like that, it’s because your ancestors made some merit!”

He was pointing and thrashing, screaming and yelling, his pointing finger almost touching Murong Qi Niang’s nose, but Murong Qi Niang was not upset at all.

Instead she sighed and said, “We know he is a good man as well, and will not be a disgrace to Sister Jiu…” Xuanyuan San Guang replied with a cold laugh, “From what I know, when Brother Hei sent her back, there was already some improvement in her condition, you must have thought that she will certainly recover from her illness, that’s why you can’t bear to let her marry him.”

Murong Qi Niang sighed, “At that time we really thought that she will recover, because at that time she seemed to have recognized Eldest Sister, but who would have expected that after this Hei… Brother Hei left, her condition took a turn for the worse suddenly, and not only does she not recognize Eldest Sister anymore, but she stopped speaking a single word for the whole day.”

Murong Liu Niang (Liu Niang = 6th Lady) sighed as well, “Once she opens her mouth, she will certainly ask, ‘Is he gone?’, but later she stopped asking even this question, and just sits there crying everyday.”

That skinny dark man naturally is the proud and reclusive Black Spider. He stood there like a log, and once he heard all these, his wooden expression

suddenly twisted, as if someone had pierced his heart with a needle.

However Xuanyuan San Guang laughed loudly, “So it turns out that Miss Jiu is also a sentimental person, Brother Hei have not treated her well in vain.” Murong Qi Niang sighed, “Only now do we realize her feelings, and naturally we know that everything in this world can be forced, but only the word ‘feelings’ cannot be forced.”

Xuanyuan San Guang agreed, “So you’re not that muddle headed after all.”

Murong Liu Niang sighed, “Sister Jiu is already so seriously ill and yet she can feel his love, obviously he must be very much in love with Sister Jiu. We are all soft hearted, at a time like this, no matter who the other person is, we will not disapprove of him.”

Murong Ba Niang added, “That’s why we came out to look for him. But we also know that he has always been elusive, and were just worrying how we can find him. Luckily at that time our Fifth Brother-in-law happened to pass by Wu Han, and happened to see you gambling with him.”

Murong Qi Niang smiled and said, “Our Fifth Brother-in-law is ‘Godly Eyes Scholar’ Luo Ming Dao, and has seen you once many years ago. As long as he has seen a person once, he will never forget that person. Fifth Brother-in-law did not recognize him at first, but to find him, Third Sister has drawn many portraits of him. Once Fifth Brother-in-law saw the painting, he immediately remembered where he had seen this person.”

Murong Ba Niang continued, “Once we heard what Fifth Brother-in-law said, we immediately rushed to Wu Han, and luckily your gambling has gained fame around this area, that’s how we found you so quickly.”

Xuanyuan San Guang stared at them, “But don’t you make a mistake, this Brother Hei of mine is different from me. He’s not a compulsive gambler, it’s just that he gambled because he is in low spirits.”

Murong Qi Niang smiled, “We understand his feelings very well, and we also know that he is a proud person. If we were to come looking for him, he will

certainly not leave with us, that's why we thought of gambling."

Xuanyuan San Guang can't help but ask, "But what if you lost, what will happen then?"

Murong Qi Niang said, "If we lose, one of us sisters will have to leave with you, right? So if we lose, we'll get Sister Jiu to leave with you. We know that you will never treat her badly, as long as she is happy, does it matter who leaves with who?"

Xuanyuan San Guang laughed loudly, "As long as I can witness the wedding between Brother Hei and that Miss Jiu, can drink his wedding toast, I won't mind even if I have to stop gambling for three months."

He suddenly stopped laughing, and shook his head, "No, no, I'm afraid I cannot attend this wedding. The wedding of the young lady of the Murong family, the guest list must be full of respectable and famous people. If I, Compulsive Gambler were to suddenly barge in, won't it spoil everything."

Murong Qi Niang smiled, "Don't you worry, you will certainly be invited. Even if we do not invite anyone else, we will certainly have to invite you."

Xuanyuan San Guang clapped his hands and chortled, "All right, if I do not attend, then I am the son of a turtle." He suddenly waved his hands and said, "Take it away, take all those silver away, don't leave even a tael behind."

Murong Qi Niang asked, "This… why is this so?"

Xuanyuan San Guang laughed, "To attend a wedding, naturally gifts will have to be sent. If you do not accept it, then you're looking down on me, then you do not intend to invite me to the wedding."

Murong Qi Niang beamed, "Since that is the case, you should at least keep a little to use as your stake."

Xuanyuan San Guang replied, "Please don't leave any. My character is that I

won’t stop until I have lost everything, so ever since I became wealthy, I have not had a good sleep. The more I want to lose everything, the more I am unable to, now that I have the opportunity to send it away, and if you don’t take everything, I’ll have to suffer again.”

Black Spider finally smiled, and suddenly said quietly, “Xiao Yu’er must be in the mountains, if you see him, please don’t forget to tell him…” Xuanyuan San Guang laughed, “Don’t worry, if I see him, I will certainly tell him to attend your wedding.” It turns out that they became good friends not because of gambling, but because of Xiao Yu’er, because they have always thought of Xiao Yu’er as a good friend.

Xuanyuan San Guang sent him to the door and suddenly smiled, “Miss Qi, if your hands start to itch in future, please don’t forget to come and look for me. I really have not seen much gamblers like you in my life.”

End of Chapter 112

Chapter 102

Chapter 113

Once the silver were taken away, the people in the gambling den dispersed as well. Xuanyuan San Guang looked at the brightening sky, stretched his back and mumbled, “Old Man Ge, damn that I really have to wait until darkness is gone, the people are gone and the money is gone, anyway until everything is gone before I can sleep.” He suddenly realized that not everyone in the gambling den has left, there are still four people there, two lying on the floor, as if asleep.

The other two are looking at him and grinning.

Xuanyuan San Guang stared and said, “Why are you two son of turtles not gone yet, you still want to bet with me?” The taller of the two interrupted, “There’s only one and a half son of turtles here, and half is the daughter of turtles.”

Xuanyuan San Guang’s eyes became even larger, and stared at the shorter person. Du Jiao Jiao giggled, “There’s only one son of turtles here, I am your great grandmother.”

She did not know that Xuanyuan San Guang had recognized her, and did not expect that without waiting for her to finish her words, Xuanyuan San Guang had ran out the door like a cat whose tail has been stepped on.

By the time Du Jiao Jiao gave chase, Xuanyuan San Guang had disappeared, but those people on the street were all turning their heads and looking towards the left.

Obviously Xuanyuan San Guang had escaped towards the left.

Du Jiao Jiao smiled, “Don’t worry, that compulsive gambler’s Lightness Skill has never been very good, we’ll certainly be able to catch up.”

She had just finished her words when Xuanyuan San Guang suddenly retreated from the street on the left side, and his retreat is even much faster than when he was escaping.

Once he retreated to this street, he turned around and ran back towards this side, his face filled with panic and dashed back into the gambling den. Naturally Du Jiao Jiao followed him back in.

Bai Kai Xin laughed, “What are you doing? Have you seen a ghost?”

Xuanyuan San Guang placed his eyes at the gap in the door and peeked outside, mumbling, “Really met a big headed ghost.”

He looked even more nervous, his face turning a little pale. Du Jiao Jiao and Bai Kai Xin exchanged looks and can’t help but looked out through the door gap as well, and really saw two men walking out from the street on the left.

The person walking in front was very tall with broad shoulders, but as think as a stick, and wearing a short blue robe, looking exactly like a giant made of paper. Once the wind blows, he will be blown up the roof. Not only does he look weird, his face is very strange as well, because although his face is full of wrinkles, but there’s no beard on him at all, or even eyebrows.

His eyes are so thin it has sunken in, so it looked especially large. His face may be sallow and thin, like a sick man, but once matched with that pair of eyes, he looked powerful, not someone to be trifled with.

Bai Kai Xin said, “This lad looks really weird. I’ve actually never seen or heard that there’s such a strange person in the martial arts realm, apparently I have been too lazy for the past few years.”

Du Jiao Jiao can’t help but furrow her brows and asked, “Compulsive Gambler,

do you recognize this person?”

Xuanyuan San Guang replied, “No.” His eyes were staring at the person behind this strange man.

The man walking behind the strange man, does not look strange at all, but looked very handsome instead. He is past middle age, but his face is very well maintained. The colors he wore were very well coordinated, very distinguished, it’s just that he is trying his best to fake a smile, but he still looked dejected and worried.

This person is surprisingly Jiang Bie He.

Du Jiao Jiao was even more surprised, and furrowed her brows, “Why isn’t Jiang Bie He following Wei Wu Ya? But came with this weird guy instead?”

At this point in time, a horse suddenly rushed out from the street corner on the right. The horse is red in color, like a ball of fire, flying into this street, and looked almost like it’s going to knock down a noodle stall at the side of the street. But the horse rider’s skill is not too bad, and right in the critical instant, stopped the horse, and not even a single bowl was broken.

Only now did everyone manage to take a proper look at this rider, who like the horse, was clad in red, the hand holding on a fiery red horsewhip. As the noble horse was quietly panting, she has come down from the saddle. And so everyone realized that her looks is even more outstanding that her horse riding skills, her mischievous and lively large eyes were so beautiful that it takes one’s breath away.

Everyone’s eyes were looking at her, but she treated those people as if they were dead, not taking even a single look at them, but just stamped her foot and called out, “Hey, come quickly, is yours a three-legged horse?” At this time another horse came running from the end of the street, and the person on the horse replied, “It’s not me who is slow, it’s you who riding too fast.” As he spoke, this person came down the horse as well, his moves agile, and he is a refined, gentle young man, the material his clothes were made of very expensive as well.

The young girl in red pouted and stared, “Who dares to say that I ride too fast, have I ever knocked anyone down?” That young man realized that many were looking at her, and he seemed to be blushing as he stammered, “You… you’re not fast. It’s… it’s me who is too slow.”

Only now did the young girl in red smile, “Now that’s a good boy, Big Sister here will treat you to supper.”

The youth’s face blushed even redder, and dare not even lift his head up. Everyone felt that this young man is too gentle, too shy, like a big girl, but this girl is too difficult, too fiery, that makes one difficult to swallow.

Even that weird man took notice of this young couple, and only Jiang Bie He, on seeing these two, immediately lowered his head. Because only Jiang Bie He knows who these two are. The young girl in red is Little Fairy Zhang Qing; this very gentle, very shy young man, naturally is the young master of the Godly Fist family, Gu Ren Yu.

Little Fairy beamed and said, “Today can be considered Miss Jiu’s good day, I’m very happy as well, so I must have a good meal, and a few good drinks.” Gu Ren Yu can’t help but sigh quietly.

Little Fairy stared at him immediately and asked, “Why are you sighing? Now that Miss Jiu has someone else, are you feeling very bad?”

Gu Ren Yu hurriedly smiled and replied, “Why would I feel bad, I… I…” Not only was his face red, his neck reddened as well.

Little Fairy guffawed and said, “It’s best that you don’t feel bad. Look, they actually have steamed meat, and pearl meatballs here, I have not eaten such snacks for a few years, because besides Hu Bei, those made by other places are all not as nice.” She chattered, talked and laughed, and just as she dragged Gu Ren Yu to the stall and sat down, she suddenly stood up again, and staring at Jiang Bie He standing on the opposite side, said, “Look, who is that?”

Gu Ren Yu followed her gaze and looked over, the expression on his face changed as well and asked quietly, “Why is he here as well.”

Little Fairy laughed icily, “That’s right, the awe inspiring Hero of Jiang Nan, why would he hide at a small town like this, or could he be ashamed to see others. No wonder those in the martial arts realm says that Hero Jiang has disappeared.”

The volume of voice, even the deaf would have heard her, and there are some on the streets who knows about the Hero of Jiang Nan, and can’t help but turn and look at Jiang Bie He. Only Jiang Bie He seemed not to have heard anything, and walked ahead with his head lowered, as if he was wishing that he could walk to the end of the street with just one step.

But Little Fairy walked to his front with just one step, and said with an icy smile, “Jiang Bie He, Hero Jiang, why aren’t you talking? Weren’t you very good in talking in the past? And I still remember how remarkable you were.”

Not only did Jiang Bie He not reply, he did not even lift his head.

Little Fairy said fiercely, “Jiang Bie He, you need not pretend, there’s no use in pretending, there’s a lot of people looking for you to settle some old scores, so you better come with me.”

Jiang Bie He stood there, not even moving, without a single expression on his face. The mighty Hero Jiang, is now like a dead man. The weird guy standing next to him suddenly exclaimed, “He cannot leave with you!” This person’s voice is deep and hoarse, as if he has torn his voice box, and the sound he emitted were squeezed out word by word from the tears in the voice box.

Little Fairy suddenly saw this person, and heard his voice, and can’t help but blurt out in surprise, “Why can’t he leave with me?”

The weird guy replied, “Because he has to come with me.”

Little Fairy exclaimed angrily, “Leave with you, who do you think you are!” As she shouted, the whip in her hand flew out as well. This whip, once in her hands, seems to have become a living, poisonous snake, or a moving flame, curling towards that weird man’s face.

But that weird man's reaction was a little retarded, as if he did not know that it'll be painful if the whip is lashed at his face, and just stared at the whip in a daze.

Just as this whip was about to leave a blood stain on his face, who would have expected that once the end of the whip was in his hand, the long whip suddenly broke into ten over pieces, each piece dropping to the floor. Little Fairy stood unsteadily and retreated a few steps, finally falling into Gu Ren Yu's arms.

Others only saw the whip break, Little Fairy fall, and as to how did that weird man strike, how was his strength executed, no one saw.

Even Little Fairy can't figure out what happened, she only felt a strange power traveling through the long whip and her body immediately felt as if it's been stuck by lightning. If it was someone else, to have suddenly experienced such frightening martial arts, would either be half scared to death, or would never dare to strike again. Ever since Little Fairy roamed the realm, she has never taken such a beating.

On seeing this weird person's martial arts, Gu Ren Yu had wanted to quietly persuade her to bear with it, but who would have expected that she would jump up, and drew out two short swords.

The reflection from the swords shone like lightning, and right at that instant, Little Fairy had struck seven times at that weird man, every attack aiming to cut through him.

The weird man lightly scolded, and without even taking a good look at how he moved, Little Fairy's two swords suddenly flew out from her hands! Like two green rays of sparks, it flickered in the darkened sky before disappearing to who knows where.

Taking another look at Little Fairy, she has fallen into Gu Ren Yu's arms again, but no matter how much strength she used this time, she can forget about standing back up again.

The weird man asked solemnly, "Whose disciple are you? How dare you strike

so heavily without any reason? Are the juniors in the martial arts realm becoming more and more ignorant about the rules?”

Little Fairy scolded, “You are the junior! You don’t know the rules, do you know…” Her voice suddenly stopped, because Gu Ren Yu can’t take it anymore and covered her mouth.

Little Fairy used all the remaining strength in her body and elbowed him in the stomach. Although Gu Ren Yu released his hold in pain, but her body slid down to the floor as well and she actually sat on the floor. She might as well remain on the floor and pointing her finger at Gu Ren Yu’s nose, she said, “I have been bullied thus, and not only are you not helping me, but you’re refusing to let me speak, what kind of a man are you! No wonder others are calling you Sister Gu.”

Gu Ren Yu’s face blushed red and he stammered, “I… I… I really…”

“I really was mistaken about you. I had thought that you were a man, who would have expected that you’re… you’re softer than tofu, you really sadden me.” As she finished her sentence, tears were already flowing down her face.

Gu Ren Yu suddenly gritted his teeth and took a large step towards that weird man and shouted, “Your martial arts is indeed marvelous, but I would still like to exchange some pointers with you.” The weird man had a solemn look, but did not speak.

Gu Ren Yu exclaimed, “Take note, I am going to strike!” He may be a little wishy-washy as a person, but when he fought he’s actually quite swift, and also stable, vicious, accurate and fast.

The punch landed right on the weird man’s body, but strangely, that weird man did not try to avoid this punch at all.

Little Fairy’s tears stopped flowing, her eyes shone as well, because she has known long ago the potency of the Gu family’s Godly Fist, and also knows very well how strong Gu Ren Yu is.

Gu Ren Yu's martial arts may not be showy, but it's very pure, if his punch were to land solidly, even a cow would have been flattened by him, much less a man.

Little Fairy almost wanted to clap, but she immediately realized that the weird man was not flattened at all, and even his expression has not changed. Gu Ren Yu's inherited Godly Fist, when struck on him, seems to be massaging his back instead. Instead, it was Gu Ren Yu who stood unsteadily, almost falling.

Only now was Little Fairy truly shocked, and that weird man stared at Gu Ren Yu and asked, "Who are you to Gu Lao Si (Lao Si = number four)?"

Cold sweat appeared on Gu Ren Yu's forehead and he asked, "Could it be that Elder… Elder is acquainted with my father?"

That weird man 'humphed' and said, "I heard that Gu Lao Si have always been very strict with his family, how can he possibly let a disciple like you flaunt about in the martial arts realm? It must be known that for those who knows martial arts, the more they should learn self control. If one fight just because of some disagreement, then that is the behavior of thieves and robbers, haven't your Father taught you this before?"

Gu Ren Yu dared not even lift up his head as he was reprimanded, much less speak, but Little Fairy can't help but shout, "Who are you really? What gives you the right to lecture us?"

Jiang Bie He stood by the side like a log, and was not surprised at all, as if he has long known that once this weird man strike, he will surely be able to defeat Little Fairy and Gu Ren Yu.

Now he suddenly laughed, "Don't you even know who this esteemed one is? He is Hero Yan Nan Tian!"

Yan Nan Tian!

Once these three words were spoken, Little Fairy dare not be insolent any further. Her eyes were staring, her mouth agape, unable to close at all. Gu Ren

Yu had already flipped himself over and bowed down. Even the ruffians who were coming out from the gambling den, those who have heard of the name ‘Yan Nan Tian’, were so scared that they dare not even breath too loudly.

Yan Nan Tian said solemnly, “Jiang Bie He will never be able to cheat and or do any evil, so you need not settle any more scores with him, because someone else will be settling scores with him first, and it’s a debt that was made twenty years ago.”

Gu Ren Yu sweated profusely and stammered, “Yes… yes…” Yan Nan Tian continued, “I hope that you will not bully others with your martial arts in future, or kill rashly?”

Gu Ren Yu lowered his head, “Yes.”

Yan Nan Tian waved his hand and said, “You may leave.”

Bai Kai Xin and Du Jiao Jiao, who were hiding behind the door, were so frightened that their legs have gone soft, the clothes on their back soaked with sweat. Although Xuanyuan San Guang was also a little guilt ridden and frightened on seeing Yan Nan Tian, but he was not as scared as them. Looking at their reaction, Xuanyuan San Guang can’t help but laugh and said calmly, “Why are you son of turtles no longer shouting? I heard that you people trapped Yan Nan Tian in the Valley of Evil for twenty years. I did not believe it at first, but now it seems that this is true after all.”

Bai Kai Xin interrupted, “She, Da Zui and the rest did it, it’s none of my business.”

Xuanyuan San Guang laughed, “Since it’s none of your business, then why are you son of turtle so afraid?”

Bai Kai Xin asked, “Aren’t you afraid of seeing him as well?”

Xuanyuan San Guang replied, “I have not done as much evil as you, so I need not be as frightened as you son of turtle.”

Bai Kai Xin suddenly beamed and said, “As the saying goes, there’s only those who force themselves on others, but no one who forces others to gamble, so forcing others to gamble is even worse that forcing oneself on others. The most evil thing I have done is forcing myself on others, but you… heh heh, just you wait and see, if Yan Nan Tian knows that you’re Compulsive Gambler, it’ll be strange if he doesn’t beat your brains out.”

Xuanyuan San Guang wiped his sweat off, speechless. The three of them wished that Yan Nan Tian would quickly take Jiang Bie He far, far away, but who would have expected Yan Nan Tian to order a flask of wine, took a seat at the stall and started drinking.

Jiang Bie He stood at the side with his hands slumped, not daring to walk, not daring to sit. Others were so frightened that they can’t sit properly as well, and even hands of the boss of the stall were shaking. But Yan Nan Tian behaved as if no one else was there, and kept on drinking cup by cup, heaving a long sigh with every cup he drank, as if he is troubled.

Xuanyuan San Guang furrowed his brows and mumbled, “Why would Jiang Bie He that son of turtle be together with Yan Nan Tian? This is really strange.”

He thought that no one would answer his question, but Du Jiao Jiao suddenly sighed and said, “Now I remember Jiang Bie He’s background.”

“What is his background?”

“He must be Jiang Qin?”

“Who is Jiang Qin?”

“When Yan Nan Tian went to the Valley of Evil, he said he wanted to find Jiang Qin to seek revenge, because Jiang Qin caused the death of his sworn brother Jiang Feng.”

Xuanyuan San Guang was stunned and asked, “Since he wants to look for Jiang

Qin to take revenge, why don't he just kill him now instead of running around the streets with him?"

"Because he wants to find Xiao Yu'er first, and have Xiao Yu'er take revenge with his own hands."

"That's right, this could be the reason, but what if he cannot find Xiao Yu'er?"

Bai Kai Xin suddenly grinned again, "I'm afraid he will never find that little imp in this life time."

Xuanyuan San Guang asked in surprise, "Why not?"

Bai Kai Xin opened his mouth, but only smiled and did not speak, because Du Jiao Jiao had quietly grabbed hold of his hand.

Right at this time, they suddenly saw someone holding a flask of wine walking towards the small stall that Yan Nan Tian was sitting at, and sat next to Yan Nan Tian. A lantern was hanging on the noodle stall, and the light shone on this person's face. He looked young and refined, but his face was frighteningly pale.

Xuanyuan San Guang was again surprised and said, "Isn't this son of turtle Jiang Bie He's son, Jiang Yu Lang?"

Bai Kai Xin replied, "That's right."

Jiang Yu Lang did not seemed to have noticed his father, and Jiang Bie He behaved as if he doesn't know him as well. Father and son, none took a look at the other.

Xuanyuan San Guang furrowed his brows, "What is this father and son pair up to?"

Du Jiao Jiao replied, "It seems that he must be here to save his old man."

Xuanyuan San Guang laughed coldly, “Just that little bastard, I’m afraid he’s not that capable.”

Du Jiao Jiao suddenly smiled, “He may not be very capable, but he is full of tricks. Even Xiao Yu’er will sometimes be tricked by him.”

Xuanyuan San Guang stared and laughed frostily, “I know he is full of tricks, but compared to Xiao Yu’er, he’s still a long way off.”

Du Jiao Jiao rolled her eyes, not talking further. She already found out that this Compulsive Gambler is on good terms with Xiao Yu’er, or he’ll not have spoken up for him.

By now Jiang Yu Lang is already offering a toast to Yan Nan Tian, and laughing as he chatted. Obviously Yan Nan Tian does not know that he is Jiang Bie He’s son, so he did not make things difficult for him. After saying a few words, Yan Nan Tian suddenly stood up and exclaimed loudly, “You really know Jiang Xiao Yu?”

Jiang Yu Lang stood up as well and smiled condescendingly, “Not only do I know him, but it can be considered that we’ve gone through thick and thin together.”

Yan Nan Tian grabbed his shoulders and asked, “You.. have you seen him recently?”

“He was still drinking with me two days ago…” Without waiting for him to finish his words, Yan Nan Tian interrupted, “Do you know where he is now?”

Jiang Yu Lang sighed and replied, “He’s always roaming around, but I may be able to find him.”

Yan Nan Tuan asked, “Really?”

Jiang Yu Lang replied with a bow, “No matter how bold I am, I dare not lie to Elder.”

Tan Nan Tian replied, “Good, good, good…” He’s really overjoyed, and actually uttered the word ‘good’ more than ten times, forgetting to loosen the hands that were grabbing Jiang Yu Lang’s shoulders tightly as well.

Although Jiang Yu Lang’s bones were almost breaking from his strength, but his face revealed a smile.

Jiang Bie He’s eyes shimmered, and suddenly exclaimed loudly, “This lad is of dubious background, how can Hero Yan believe him so easily.”

Yan Nan Tian roared angrily, “Shut up, there’s no place for you to talk when I’m around.” He hurriedly threw some copper coins on the table and dragged Jiang Yu Lang away. Jiang Be He can only follow dejectedly with his head lowered, but the corners of his mouth curved up secretly into a smile.

End of Chapter 113

Chapter 103

Chapter 114

Du Jiao Jiao, who was hiding behind the door, smiled when she saw Yan Nan Tian being tricked by Jiang Yu Lang and mumbled, “I knew long ago that Yan Nan Tian will surely be tricked, my guess is correct after all.”

Bai Kai Xin giggled, “This little imp is really quite capable, he put on a damn good act, Yan Nan Tian actually left with him, he’s really been hoodwinked.”

Du Jiao Jiao added with a smile, “Now not only can Yan Nan Tian forget about every finding Xiao Yu’er, I’m afraid he may even lose his life to that father and son.”

Xuanyuan San Guang was in a daze for a moment, and he suddenly pushed the door open, thinking of rushing out. But who would have expected that Du Jiao Jiao would already be waiting behind him. He had just pushed the door open when Du Jiao Jiao sealed five or six of his acupoints with lightning speed, carried him up her shoulder and flew out through the window behind.

Xuanyuan San Guang was shocked and furious, but he can’t even talk. Du Jiao Jiao made her way out of the small town from the back of the house, and although the sky is very bright now, there is no one on the path leading into the mountains. She seemed to be using all her strength and ran up the mountain, and who knows how long she has gone, when suddenly sounds of metal being knocked can be heard in the distance.

Li Da Zui, Ha Ha’er and Du Sha were splitting the mountain. They suddenly saw Du Jiao Jiao and Bai Kai Xin rushing back, as if they were chased by ghosts. The weirdest thing is, Du Jiao Jiao is carrying someone on her back. Li Da Zui and the rest stopped immediately and walked over.

Ha Ha'er looked around and chortled, "I thought who it could be, so it's Compulsive Gambler who has arrived, haha, well met, well met."

Li Da Zui laughed, "Compulsive Gambler, we have not met for years, but why is it that you've climbed onto Du Jiao Jiao's back? Don't tell me Compulsive Gambler has now become Compulsive Lecher?"

Du Sha furrowed his brows and asked, "What is this all about?"

Du Jiao Jiao did not reply first, but threw Xuanyuan San Guang down heavily on the ground, and with this throw, all his acupoints were unsealed. He did not even stand up but has already started laughing loudly, "So you son of turtles are all here. Turtle Hill now has so many sons of turtles here, how apt is the name."

Bai Kai Xin laughed, "Du Jiao Jiao sealed seven or eight of your acupoints without any reason, and threw you onto the floor like a dog, not only are you not fighting with her, but you're laughing instead, heh heh, seems that you're very easy to bully."

Xuanyuan San Guang is a naturally straightforward person, and to suddenly see so many old friends, he forgot about everything else. But now with Bai Kai Xin's instigations, he immediately flared up again, jumped up and pointed at Du Jiao Jiao's nose, "Let me ask you, why did you neither man nor woman son of turtle seal my acupoints, do you really think I can be easily bullied?"

Du Jiao Jiao replied, "Let me ask you, were you thinking of giving a warning just now when you rushed out, telling Yan Nan Tian not to be tricked by Jiang Bie He and his son."

Once the three words 'Yan Nan Tian' was spoken, Li Da Zui, Ha Ha'er and Du Sha paled, and they could not even seem to stand properly.

Du Sha asked hoarsely, "Yan Nan Tian?"

Li Da Zui added, "Could it be that he… he has recovered?"

Du Jiao Jiao replied, “Not only has he recovered, but his martial arts seems to be even better than before. When I saw him, I did not recognize him at first, but once he revealed his martial arts, I knew for certain he is Yan Nan Tian, because besides Yan Nan Tian, no one else in the world has such formidable martial arts.”

Ha Ha’er’s teeth were chattering, not only is he unable to laugh now, he can’t even talk as well.

Bai Kai Xin interrupted, “He has been tricked away by Jiang Bie He and his son, but Compulsive Gambler wanted to get him back.”

Before he could finish his words, Li Da Zui, Du Sha and Ha Ha’er have surrounded Xuanyuan San Guang, the three of them gritting their teeth, their expressions furious. Du Sha stared at him and uttered each word clearly, “What is the meaning of this?”

Xuanyuan San Guang may not be afraid of anyone else, but he is a little fearful of Du Sha. Now that he saw his murderous intent, as if he will kill as soon as he stretch out his arm, Xuanyuan San Guang can’t help but feel his hair rising, so he forced out a smile, “I only want him to kill Jiang Bie He and his son, I have no other intentions. I can’t possibly have wanted Yan Nan Tian to create trouble for you?”

Bai Kai Xin asked, “Let me ask you, if you have not done anything guilty, why did you run upon seeing us?”

Xuanyuan San Guang’s expression changed and said, “This… this…” Bai Kai Xin clapped his hands, “Say it! Why don’t you say it? If this is not guilt, then what is?”

Xuanyuan San Guang jumped up and roared, “I did not dig up your ancestor’s grave, why are you son of turtle always finding trouble for me?”

Bai Kai Xin knew that his goal has been reached, so no matter how much Xuanyuan San Guang scolded him, he refused to talk. Li Da Zui, Ha Ha’er were really furious, and Du Sha looked all the more colder, and asked fiercely, “Did you

run away upon seeing them earlier."

Xuanyuan San Guang replied, "I, Old Man Ge, that's right, I did run away." Xuanyuan San Guang puffed up his chest and said loudly, "But because I have lost all your money!" He had just spoke these words and everyone was startled.

Ha Ha'er interrupted, "Our money? What money?"

Xuanyuan San Guang explained, "All of you know me as Compulsive Gambler, but you do not know that although I like to win, I like to lose as well, because losing is even better than winning, especially if I lose to those poor small-time gamblers. Looking at their ecstatic expression after winning, the joy in that, you son of turtles will never imagine." He took a breath and continued, "A few months ago I helped a friend send a sum of money to this wealthy man called Duan He Fei in Jiang Nan, and although I enraged Jiang Bie He and his son, but I betted with Duan He Fei on crickets for half a month and won a few hundred thousand from him. With these money, I thought of giving out some."

Li Da Zui laughed icily, "I did not expect that Compulsive Gambler would become a hero that robs the rich to give to the poor."

Xuanyuan San Guang continued, "But the more I want to lose, the more the money went against me, and I can't lose it. One day I happened to be having tea at a teahouse, someone beside me suddenly started playing with dice. I saw it was to my liking, and gambled with those son of turtles."

Li Da Zui asked, "You won again?"

Xuanyuan San Guang laughed, "Those son of turtles were really lucky, my lady luck happened to walk away. If the other party opened a four points, I still won't be able to win him, and I actually lost continuously for a few days and nights."

Bai Kai Xin suddenly interrupted, "Well lost."

Xuanyuan San Guang continued, "That teahouse was at a small alley, after I lost for three days, the old and young in that alley all won quite a lot from me,

except for an old man. Although he goes to the teahouse everyday for tea, saw me losing everyday, but he was never tempted, never willing to gamble as well."

He smiled and added, "The more he refuses to gamble, the more I want him to gamble. Others said that not only does this old man not gamble, he doesn't smoke nor drink as well, truly a log of wood indeed. Everyone calls him Li Lao Shi (Lao Shi = honest), and even said that if I can make this Li Lao Shi gamble with me, they will each kow tow to me once."

Du Jiao Jiao glanced at Li Da Zui and laughed, "I did not expect that there would be such a good person in the Li family, how rare."

Xuanyuan San Guang continued, "In that alley there's also a Widow Du, and it seems that the magistrate is almost going to erect a Chastity Memorial Arch for her. Although she has a small stall at the mouth of the alley, but for the past ten years, no one has ever seen her smile, and there's no one else in her house but for a dog who guards her door."

Li Da Zui laughed, "I did not expect that there would actually be someone from the Du family who is willing to remain a widow, how rare, what a pity she's still missing a dog… haha, the best thing about a dog is that it cannot speak."

Xuanyuan San Guang said, "On the fourth day, I still had thirty thousand taels of silver left, so I pushed all the silver towards Li Laoshi and said, I only have to say one word, and I can let that Widow Du smile, and speak another word, and make her give me a slap. I asked Li Lao Shi if he believes me."

Ha Ha'er can't help but ask, "Did he believe you?" Xuanyuan San Guang replied, "Widow Du never smiles, and a man and a woman should keep a respectable distance, so it's impossible that Widow Du will slap a man. Naturally Li Lao Shi does not believe me, so I made a bet with him. If I lost, I will give him the rest of the silver, but if I win, he only have to gamble with me ten rounds of dice. He looked at the silver in front of him, and stared for more than an hour, but finally betted with me. He may be honest, but if an honest man were to see silver being offered to him, he won't bear to decline it, because everyone were so sure that I will definitely lose this bet, and there's not even a chance that I might win."

Ha Ha’er said, “But you won.”

Xuanyuan San Guang replied, “As long as I can have a good gamble with him, naturally I must win at all costs.”

Once he heard this, Du Sha can’t help but feel curious, and asked. “How did you win?”

Du Jiao Jiao said, “Just one word that can make a widow smile, and another word to make her angry and slap someone… even I am baffled.”

Li Da Zui and Bai Kai Xin looked at each other and really could not figure out what is the word Xuanyuan San Guang said and why would it have such a huge effect.

Xuanyuan San Guang said nonchalantly, “At noon, that widow opened her fried pancake stall, and the dog is never far away from her, so naturally it’s with her as well. So I walked over, respectfully kow-towed to the dog and said ‘Father’. The widow was stunned and although she wanted to frown, but she can’t help but laugh in the end.”

On hearing this, Li Da Zui and the rest laughed as well.

Xuanyuan San Guang added, “Others saw that with just a word I said, that widow really laughed, and although they were awed and laughing, they still could not imagine how I can make her angry and hit me.”

Du Jiao Jiao laughingly replied, “To tell the truth, even I cannot think of how you can do it.”

Xuanyuan San Guang continued, “I only knelt in front of her and called her ‘Mother’, and her face turned red immediately, even her neck thickened, and she gave me a hard slap before turning around and leaving.” Before he could finish his words, Li Da Zui and the rest were already bending over with laughter.

Xuanyuan San Guang said, “So Li Lao Shi had to play dice with me, but who

would have expected that my luck suddenly changed, and I won ten games in a row. His bets were small initially, but later, he became nervous with all the losses, that he used his chamber pots and blankets as bets. After losing for ten games, he has lost everything. I asked him, you don't even have anything to bet with, how can you continue to gamble? He was stunned for a while, but suddenly gritted his teeth and took me to his house. His house is now empty, but there's a small building, and in it were a few large chests."

Du Jiao Jiao asked hoarsely, "Large chests? What kind of large chests?"

Xuanyuan San Guang replied, "Large black chests, full of dust gathered at the top. Li Lao Shi said that someone else asked him to look after them, and he has never touched them, but now, he couldn't care less."

He continued with a laugh, "Once a person becomes anxious from losing, he would even use his wife and son as bets. This Li Lao Shi may be very honest and reliable all his life, but an old house on fire will burn even faster."

Du Jiao Jiao asked, "He… he really lost all those chests to you?"

Xuanyuan San Guang replied, "That's right, but I did not expect that those chests would actually be filled with gold and silver, and all the more did not expect that those chests belonged to all of you. If not for the mark you made on the chests, I will never think that you will actually hand the chests to an old man for safekeeping, haha, this plan is really marvelous."

He continued with a loud laugh, "Because the money seemed to have dropped into my lap from the sky, and I got a few hundred thousand for nothing, I started gambling in full force. By the time I came here, I've lost almost all of it, and the rest I have given it away as wedding gift. Now my pockets are empty, so if you want me to pay up, I don't have a single cent, but I still have my life!"

Bai Kai Xin, Ha Ha'er, Du Sha, Li Da Zui and Du Jiao Jiao were all stunned, their face ashen, as if someone had just died.

Ha Ha'er said, "So… so Ouyang Ding and Ouyang Dang did not hide the chests at Turtle Hill, but kept it in Li Lao Shi's house, we were still tricked by them."

Ha Ha’er suddenly threw away the shovels and hammers that were on the ground, and laughed loudly, “Actually we really should thank this gambler.”

Bai Kai Xin asked, “Thank him?”

Ha Ha’er explained, “If he did not tell us, we’ll still be slaving here, digging holes. Now we can take a rest instead.”

Du Sha said slowly, “Actually what he has said is correct, if not for Xuanyuan San Guang, we will never know where the chests really are, and will end up doing more work, feeling more anxious instead.”

Bai Kai Xin exclaimed, “So this means that, you’re not planning to ask him to pay up?”

Li Da Zui laughed, “He’s already said that he has no money, and he only has his life…”

Bai Kai Xin replied, “But the flesh on his body is not bad, don’t you want to have a taste of it?”

Li Da Zui laughed, “If I eat this gambler up, won’t it be worse? If he starts betting with my intestines and gastric, I’ll suffer from indigestion.”

He stared at Xuanyuan San Guang and continued, “You lost all the money, but did you lose the chests as well?” Xuanyuan San Guang replied, “No.”

Li Da Zui’s eyes shone and asked ecstatically, “Where are the chests!”

Xuanyuan San Guang replied, “I found the chests too heavy, so I threw all of them into the River Yangzi.”

Li Da Zui and Du Jiao Jiao looked at each other, speechless.

Xuanyuan Sanguang sighed heavily, “Old Man Ge, you son of a turtle likes to eat human flesh, but human flesh is not something that can be bought with money, now that you’ve lost only some money, why are you so upset!”

Li Da Zui sighed, “This you do not understand, the older one gets, the more greedy for wealth he becomes. Although I know that thing can’t be eaten, worn, or carried into my coffin, but I’m still liking it more and more.”

Ha Ha’er added, “That’s right, even if I don’t do anything everyday, as long as I can close my door and count my money, I’ll be very happy.”

Xuanyuan San Guang replied, “I think you son of turtles are really going into your coffins. If a person likes nothing else but money, then he is already half dead.”

He sighed again, and continued, “But since you like money so much, why don’t you go and steal or rob again, anyway you son of turtles stole and rob those money as well.”

Li Da Zui replied with a straight face, “This you do not know, an evil person also has a reputation to maintain, evil people with a status like us, if we go and kill and plunder again, others will be laughing their heads off.”

Xuanyuan San Guang was stunned for a moment and he suddenly laughed loudly, “I did not expect that you sons of turtles are not even become robbers now, what other use do you have? I think you’d better go drown in your own pee.”

Du Jiao Jiao chided, “What fart! Who dares to say that the ‘Ten Evils’ are useless?”

Xuanyuan San Guang smiled icily, “Twenty years ago, maybe all of you can be considered the ‘Ten Evils’, but after hiding in that turtle hole for twenty years, you can only be considered the ‘Fifty Scaredy Turtles’

Du Jiao Jiao fumed, “Who do you think you are, even twenty years ago, you are

not qualified to be part of the ‘Ten Evils’, others only added you in to make up the number.”

Xuanyuan San Guang said, “Since we’re all not really considered ‘evil’, why don’t we do some good deed instead!”

Li Da Zui asked, “What good deed!”

Xuanyuan San Guang pointed at Hua Wu Que who was on the ground and Tie Xin Lan who was in the cage and said, “Why don’t we let these three pitiful things go, so that they can be grateful to us for life.”

Li Da Zui quietly replied, “That’s right, we’ve been hated by others all our life, and to have someone be grateful to us sometimes, is not a bad thing.”

Xuanyuan San Guang asked, “Big Brother Du, what do you think?”

Du Sha said icily, “Anyway these three are not far from death’s door, it won’t be interesting for me to kill them.”

Bai Kai Xin rolled his eyes and said suddenly, “Since you want to become good guys, then you might as well do good all the way.”

Ha Ha’er laughed loudly, “Haha, can ‘Harming others without benefit to oneself’ do good deeds as well?”

Bai Kai Xin replied, “I have been doing bad things all my life, now I would like a taste of what doing good deeds is like as well, or else I’ll have a hard time accounting to the King of Hell after I’m dead.”

Xuanyuan San Guang replied, “What tricks are you son of turtle up to?” With his back towards Hua Wu Que and Tie Xin Lan, Bai Kai Xin grinned, “The two of them has always been ‘I love you, you love me’ for so many years, it’s just that there’s Xiao Yu’er in the middle. Now that Xiao Yu’er has kicked the bucket, why don’t we just let this two become husband and wife, haha, and let lovers finally unite, isn’t that the best good deed.”

Ha Ha'er clapped and laughed, "Not bad, we have been hiding for so many years, now we can have a wedding for them and liven things up, it's a joyous matter as well."

Li Da Zui laughed, "I have not attended a wedding for more than twenty years, this must be really interesting."

Du Jiao Jiao pointed at Bai Kai Xin and laughed, "I knew you were up to no good, you're really doing things that harm others without benefit to yourself."

Bai Kai Xin replied, "Being a matchmaker, is the greatest good deed. If the King of Hell were to find out, he'll have to increase my lifespan, so why do you say it's not a good thing?" Du Jiao Jiao laughed, "You obviously know that the two of them are very sad now, but you want them to marry now, isn't it even worse than killing them."

Bai Kai Xin blinked, "Even if they are very sad now, but after having a taste of that marvelous sensation after marriage, I guarantee that they will never be sad again."

Li Da Zui replied, "Good words really cannot come out of a dog's mouth."

Du Jiao Jiao laughed, "This is called 'a dog can't change it's habits of eating shit', a bad egg will never become a good man."

Ha Ha'er said, "I don't care what you say, anyway these two will have to get married, haha, and I want to personally help them change into their red wedding robes, and personally pour their conjugal wine for them."

Li Da Zui took a glance at Madam Bai and suddenly laughed, "Since there is a female worm here, we might as well find her a husband too."

Ha Ha'er took a look at Madam Bai, and took another look at Bai Kai Xin, and chortled, "Not bad, not bad, these two are a match made in heaven."

Du Jiao Jiao giggled, “It seems that this lady is in luck, and she’s really fated with those surnamed Bai, no matter who she marries, it’s still the Bai family name, she doesn’t even have to change her name.”

Bai Kai Xin is already shouting, “You… you…” As he spoke, he was already trying to slip away.

But Du Jiao Jiao, Li Da Zui have already sandwiched him between them.

Du Jiao Jiao smiled, “This is a very joyous matter, why are you thinking of fleeing?”

Li Da Zui added, “You can’t flee even if you want to.”

Ever since Xuanyuan San Guang heard the words ‘Xiao Yu’er has kicked the bucket’, he remained silent. Now he rolled his eyes as well, and suddenly said, “I know of two other people who are getting married, since it’s a joyous occasion, why don’t everyone do it together, it’s save money, and there’ll be a crowd.”

Du Jiao Jiao asked, “You’re referring to that little lass Murong Jiu and your tanned friend?” Xuanyuan San Guang replied, “That’s right.”

Li Da Zui chortled, “Why would the Murong family have a wedding celebration done together with us, this gambler is crazy.”

Xuanyuan San Guang replied, “Why do we need to discuss with them. On that day, we’ll just squeeze into the wedding hall, place the three couples together and enjoy their wedding feast. Can they possibly make a scene with us on their big day?”

Ha Ha’er clapped and laughed, “Excellent idea, excellent idea, haha, we’ll just force our way in.”

Li Da Zui said, “I really hope that one of the dishes at the feast will be made from human flesh, then you can have your delicacies, and I can have my human flesh, that will truly be happiness for all.”

Bai Kai Xin suddenly said icily, “I only hope that Yan Nan Tian will go to the wedding on that day as well.”

Once he said those words, everyone can’t seem to laugh anymore.

Xuanyuan San Guang said, “Yan Nan Tian will never go there for the wedding.”

Bai Kai Xin asked coldly, “How do you know? You’re not a worm in his stomach.”

Xuanyuan San Guang ignored him and continued, “Yan Nan Tian is intent on looking for Xiao Yu’er now, he won’t have the time to attend weddings.”

Bai Kai Xin replied, “Don’t you forget, one will go to somewhere with a lot of people when looking for a person, and a wedding is the most crowded. If I am Yan Nan Tian, I’ll join in the festivities as well.”

Xuanyuan San Guang rebutted, “Don’t you son of turtle forget as well, who is the one leading the way for Yan Nan Tian now.”

Bai Kai Xin was stunned, and did not speak.

Du Jiao Jiao laughed, “Now that Jiang Yu Lang is leading Yan Nan Tian around, not only will Jiang Yu Lang never take Yan Nan Tian to the Murong family, he will not take Yan Nan Tian to any crowded places, because he’s afraid that others will spoil his ploy.”

Bai Kai Xin replied, “So this means that, the more crowded a place is, the safer it is.”

Xuanyuan San Guang replied, “The safest place, will be where those ladies from the Murong family stays.” Du Jiao Jiao smiled and commented, “That’s right, I did not expect that this gambler would become so smart now.”

Ha Ha’er jumped up, “Since that is the case, what are we waiting for, let’s go quickly. Haha, I’ve always loved a crowd, the more people the better.”

End of Chapter 114

Chapter 104

Chapter 115

Li Da Zui suddenly clapped his hands and exclaimed. “We forgot about one thing. The Murong Family will certainly do things ostentatiously, so why would they hold a wedding at such a remote and poor town? We should go and find out if they have left, and where do they plan to hold the wedding.”

Du Jiao Jiao replied, “Then let that gambler go, he’s acquainted with them.”

Suddenly someone from outside the window laughed eerily, “The living ghost has already gone there, so the gambler need not go.”

Xuanyuan San Guang chortled, “Old Man Ge, so you half man, half ghost son of a turtle has not yet been banished to the 18th level of hell?”

Yin Jiu You revealed his ghastly face at the window and grinned, “There’re enough ghosts in the world, there’s the gambling ghost, lecherous ghost, and on top of it poor ghost, drunken ghost, creditor ghost, petty ghost… there’s so many ghosts in the world, how can I bear to go somewhere else.”

Du Sha asked solemnly, “You mean to say you’ve already found out the news about the Murong family?”

Yin Jiu You replied, “That’s right, they had intended to have the wedding after they’ve gone home, but later changed their minds.”

Du Sha asked, “Why did they change their minds?”

Yin Jiu You shook his head, “They did not say, and no one dared to ask them.”

Li Da Zui laughed loudly, “Once a woman decides on a matter, it will be a strange thing if she does not change her mind later.”

Ha Ha’er said, “Why did they change their mind, maybe Du Jiao Jiao will know, haha, at least she is half a woman.”

Du Jiao Jiao replied, “That’s right, I do know.”

Ha Ha’er was instead startled, and said, “You really do know? How did you know?”

Du Jiao Jiao replied, “If you were to spend some thoughts on it, you would be able to guess as well, but a pity your thoughts have been blinded by lard.”

Du Sha asked, “Why do you think they suddenly changed their minds?”

Du Jiao Jiao smiled, “Think about it, if they were to really hold a proper wedding, all the famous and reputable people in the martial arts realm will certainly come, and all will want to know what kind of a smart and talented man is this ninth son-in-law of the Murong family, and all will want to know what kind of an impressive husband she has gotten for herself after much choosing.”

She giggled and continued, “But who would have expected that this Miss Murong Jiu would have become a crazy nitwit, and the husband she chose is an ugly, crazy man. If their friends and relatives were to see such a couple, won’t it be a total loss of face for the Murong family?”

Li Da Zui laughed, “That’s right, the friends and relatives they have, are all men or ladies from wealthy families. This kind of people will make fun of others or wait to see them become a laughingstock, and some may have been jealous of them a long time ago, so if they lose their face now, how can they ever lift their heads up in future, so they might as well spare themselves the trouble.”

Du Jiao Jiao replied, “So they might as well hold the ceremony for this

embarrassing couple at this small place, and later send this couple somewhere else and let them lead a quiet life. If others were to ask about it in future, they can always say they want to make it a small affair, the new groom's character is a little eccentric, and they will have a make up wedding feast in future…"

Li Da Zui clasped his hands and exclaimed, "Excellent, excellent, in that way, even if others were to have any doubts about this in future, they won't have any proof."

Du Jiao Jiao commented, "That may be the case, but people like that will maintain their reputation even if they have to die for it, so they won't do a slip shod job. They will certainly want an elaborate wedding, invite some guests, to show that they are not trying to save money on the wedding. It's just that those they invited are all unrelated, and no one would dare to laugh at them."

Yin Jiu You grinned, "Damn if Du Jiao Jiao is not considered a female Zhuge (referring to Zhuge Liang, the famed strategist), what she's said is absolutely correct."

Du Sha asked, "Where are they holding the feast?"

Yin Jiu You replied, "They have erected a kilometer long tent at the riverbank for the feast, and anyone can go there for a meal. Even beggars are given two catties of meat and a flask of wine."

Du Sha asked, "When will it be held?"

Yin Jiu You replied, "Today."

Although the sky is not yet dark, but red lanterns are already lighted up inside and outside the tent, and pasted on it were the word 'Double Happiness' cut out from gold paper, and it truly looked like a joyous occasion.

There are more people in the tent than a fly's egg. That there's a bride to be seen, all those villagers are squeezing their way in, not to mention that there's free wine, fish and meat here. But not all are here for a free meal, some even

used red paper, red cloth or red satin to make some wedding curtains and couplets, and wrote on them the words ‘Match Made in Heaven’, ‘Happily Ever After’ or similar congratulatory words. Some even gave money, and from people with common names like Zhang Ah Da, Li Hong Fa *etc.* The Murong family actually hung up those curtains, and with a glance, there were red paper hung from the bamboo everywhere, making swishing noises when blown by the wind from the river.

Moored to the riverbank were three huge boats freshly painted, and often there will be servant maids who were beautifully dressed walking in and out of the cabins.

Those drinking in the tents will stretch their heads out once in a while to and look at these boats.

Someone commented. “This family is really strange, they invited so many people for the wedding feast for no reason, but the hosts are hiding in the cabin and not revealing themselves, and the groom is not even coming out to offer us toasts.”

Someone else said, “Just make do with it, do you know the status of the family, why would they drink with people like us.”

That person replied, “Looking at their bearing, I really cannot guess what is it that they do.”

Another person said, “I heard that not only are they the wealthiest in the Jiangnan area, but they’re famous in the martial arts realm as well. They invited us so that we can join in the festivities, so we’d better drink more and talk less least we say something taboo and offended them. That would really be taking the hard way out.” Everyone were discussing and happily talking when they all stopped talking in unison and turned their heads around to look, as if they’ve seen some strange monster.

It turns out that a horse carriage has stopped outside the tent, and the style of this horse carriage is strange enough, but the person who came down from it is even stranger. The carriage driver is a very burly large man, wearing a new set of

clothes made from good materials but none of the buttons were buttoned up, revealing a whole chest of black hair! It would have been better if he did not smile, but once he did, his mouth seemed to have split from ear to ear, as if he can swallow two large buns at one go. Later, a few people walked down from the carriage, one is short and fat, one looked peculiar, and one even has a steel hook attached to the hand, the face so pale it looks green, making one fearful with just one look. These people's looks are so strange, that it's rare to find another one in the world, and who would have expected that they would be pushing and dragging three more people down.

These three people looked weak, their faces haggard, as if they're on the brink on death, but they were wearing red and green silk, dressed up like brides. The few hundred eyes in the tent were all staring at them, but they swaggered in as if nothing is happening, and suddenly swarmed into the tent.

One of the large burly man with a face full of beard shouted, "Old Man Ge, do you son of turtles know where the hosts are? I'm looking for them." Most of the people recognize that this is the strange man who operated the gambling den, and all had a taste of what he is capable of, so even though they were being called sons of turtles, no one dared to say anything.

But there were two who just came from the city, and were some runners from some armed escort agency, who thought highly of themselves, so how can they tolerate such attitude. And adding drunkenness into the equation, the both of them slapped the table and jumped up at the same time, roaring "Jerk, who are you referring to?" Once they said the word 'jerk', they were suddenly lifted up by their necks. The two of them thought that their martial arts were not too bad, but now they can't execute even a single stroke.

Every one looked on, stunned, when suddenly a weird man dressed in green laughed and said, "This two lads actually dared to say that Brother Xuanyuan is a jerk, they do have guts. If Brother Xuanyuan do not punish them, everyone will be able to call you jerk in future."

That bearded man is already quite furious, and with someone instigating him further, it was like adding oil to fire. He lifted both his arms and it seems that the brains of these two men are going to be smashed.

Luckily that round faced fatty grabbed his hands and laughed, “Haha, today is someone else’s big day, but you want to start killing others on arrival, won’t this be a lost of face for the hosts?”

The one with the very large mouth laughed as well, “Even if you want to kill someone, you shouldn’t smash their heads. Although I don’t eat human heads, but once a person’s brains is smashed, it’ll look gross. If an old chicken’s head has been smashed, you won’t have the appetite to eat it as well, right?”

That bearded man ‘humphed’, and with a swing of his arms, threw the two men away, each falling on a table, their head coincidentally dipping into a bowl of sweet and sour soup that has just been served. They screamed over the scalding, the bowls, plates, etc on the tables were smashed onto the floor into smithereens. There was an instant commotion in the tent, some young girls and old ladies were running away screaming, and some kids were so frightened they were wailing.

Suddenly a person can be heard saying, “Which friend is it that is creating trouble here, are you trying to give my brother a difficult time?” The voice of this person is not that loud, but everyone can hear clearly each and every word, and there’s authority in that voice, making one afraid to disobey. The cries, the screams, the shouts, were all suppressed by this voice.

A young man was seen standing at the head of the boat, his hands behind his back, looking very refined, like a scholar who has just enrolled in school. But his bearing was composed, standing there like a solidly build pavilion in the hills, anyone with a clear head will know that this person must be a highly skilled martial arts exponent with one look!

The people in the tent quickly made way for these weird people to walk over.

The fat man with a round face laughed, “Us villagers are clumsy, if we’ve been amiss, would little friend here forgive us.”

He may seem to be apologizing, but he addressed the other person as ‘little friend’. That person’s expression darkened, as if he’s about to erupt, but he seemed to have suddenly remembered something and a look of surprise flashed

on his face. His gaze swept over this group of people, and saw the strangely dressed Hua Wu Que.

Once he saw that he was even more startled, and asked hoarsely, “Can all of you be… be…” That fat man laughed, “Little friend, you better not say our names out loud, or else it might dirty your mouth.”

This person was silent for a moment, and he clasped his fists and said, “I am Qin Jian…” He had just uttered these four words when a few more people, some men and some women, walked out from the cabin. Naturally the women were dainty, gorgeous, and splendid, and of course the men were suave looking gentlemen. They obviously know who has arrived, but they still smiled. If they do not know the background of those who come, it is natural that they will welcome guests with a smile, but since they know the background of these people, and they can still smile, that is rare indeed. When those in the martial arts realm sees the ‘Ten Evils’, they would either fly into fury, grit their teeth, beat them up or turn and run away.

Ha Ha’er laughed first, and chortled, “Will you guys look, how refined and learned the sons-in-law of the Murong family are. They are still so courteous even when they saw it’s us.”

Du Jiao Jiao giggled, “This is called living up to their great reputations, why else would those pretty ladies marry them?”

Li Da Zui bowed and said, “I have heard that your family is celebrating a joyous occasion, so we came to offer our congratulations, but we wonder if Sirs will welcome crude people like us into your hall?”

Standing at the head of the boat, besides the Third Son-in-law Qin Jian He, there was also the Eldest Son-in-law ‘Jade Swordsman’ Chen Feng Chao and his wife, Second Son-in-law Nangong Liu and his wife, Fourth Son-in-law ‘Plum Blossom Master’ Mei Zhong Liang and his wife and Fifth Son-in-law ‘Divine Eyes Scholar’ Luo Ming Dao and his wife. It can be said that the best of Jiangnan’s martial arts exponents are mostly here.

They saw the strangely dressed Hua Wu Que, and although they could not hide

the look of surprise on their face, they still continued smiling and being polite.

They waited until Li Da Zui finished his words before ‘Jade Swordsman’ clasped his fists and smiled, “Since you are willing to grace us with your presence, you will be our esteemed guests…” Murong Shuang interrupted, “Besides, Mr Xuanyuan is a very close friend of the new groom. Everyone, please come up the boat.”

Li Da Zui clasped his fists as well and said, “Since that is the case, we shall obey.”

Only Qin Jian He and ‘Plum Blossom Master’ still has a look of caution on their faces and after Du Jiao Jiao walked past them, she suddenly turned around and smiled, “Don’t worry, we’re specially here today to attend the wedding, we won’t create trouble, nor try to steal, you don’t have to guard us like you’re guarding thieves.”

Xuanyuan San Guang said loudly, “That’s right, today is the joyous occasion of Brother Hei, if any sons of turtle dares to sprout nonsense, I’ll be the first one to settle scores with him.”

Bai Kai Xin smiled icily, “Just you, I’m afraid you’re not that up to it. If Li Da Zui suddenly has a craving for human flesh, are you going to use your head to stuff his mouth!” This group of people were talking, smiling, laughing and arguing their way to the boat, and in the tent, everyone was looking at them from the side of their eyes, wondering who those people really are? Why are the wealthy gentlemen treating them so politely? There was actually enough space to set a few tables in the cabin. The Sixth son-in-law ‘Little White Dragon’ and his wife, Seventh son-in-law ‘Scholar of Dong Ting’ Liu He Ren and his wife, Eighth son-in-law ‘Thousands Flower Sword’ Zuo Chun Sheng and his wife, ‘Godly Fist’ Gu Ren Yu and ‘Little Fairy’ Zhang Qing were all inside the cabin as well.

Once Little Fairy saw them walking into the cabin, she stared at them from the corner of her eyes, but the eyes of most of the others, were still fixed curiously on Hua Wu Que. They really cannot guess why the disciple of the ‘Floral Palace’ would end up like this?

But well brought up gentlemen like them will never ask about another's private affairs. If the other person doesn't talk, they can only pretend that they didn't see anything even though they're dying of curiosity.

The few of them happened to occupy one table, with Du Sha sitting at the head of the table, and seated at his sides were 'Jade Swordsman' Chen Feng Chao and Nangong Liu. The two of them are refined and courteous, and seated between the strange looking people at this table, it made them look even more outstanding and poised. If it was any other day, if they were to meet with Hua Wu Que, they'll be respecting each other's intelligence and will certainly befriend him, but now, it's inconvenient for them to even take another look at Hua Wu Que.

Hua Wu Que's eyes were looking down his nose, and his nose was pointing straight down at his chest, sitting there like a log, like he was sitting all alone in the wilderness, not caring if others were pitying him or laughing at him. After a few drinks, the newly weds still have not revealed themselves.

Li Da Zui suddenly said, "Since it's a wedding, why isn't there a ceremony?" Chen Feng Chao replied calmly with a smile, "Everything was in done in a rush, so preparations might be incomplete, we hope that you can understand."

Li Da Zui replied seriously, "Even so, the ceremony cannot be done away with, besides…" Du Jiao Jiao interrupted with a smile, "Besides we have another two couples here to join in your festivities, waiting for Ninth son-in-law and Miss Jiu to go through the ceremony together."

Chen Feng Chao exclaimed, "Oh?" Nangong Liu asked, "I wonder who the couples are…" Although they were serious and polite, but at this point in time they can't help but take a glance at Hua Wu Que, and saw that Hua Wu Que's expression was neither sad nor happy. A pretty young lady next to him however, revealed a mixture of emotions on her face, so complicated that no one can guess what this is really all about.

Ha Ha'er commented, "Haha, as the saying goes, good things come in pairs, but a pair cannot be compared to a trio. If the three couples were to go through the ceremony together, in future these three couples will certainly have the three fortunes: luck, longevity and many descendants."

Chen Feng Chao smiled slightly and said, “You’ve said so many auspicious words, and I really have nothing to refute your kind intentions, but a pity…”

Li Da Zui furrowed his brows and asked, “A pity what?”

Chen Feng Chao replied nonchalantly, “A pity that Sister Jiu has completed the ceremony, and is already on her way back now on the boat.”

Nangong Liu added, “I’m sure all of you are aware, Sister Jiu and her husband have been in misery for some time, so since they want to spend their special day quietly, it’s not for us to try and stop them.”

Du Jiao Jiao, Li Da Zui and the rest took a look at one another, not making any moves at all.

Ha Ha’er said, “Haha, if it was someone else who said that, we would certainly have thought that he’s looking down on us, but since it is the two of you who said it, things are of course not the same.”

Chen Feng Chao replied, “Thank you.”

Du Jiao Jiao giggled, “If it was any other day, when everyone here were to see us, you would at least want to do punish us on behalf Heaven, because all of you are very good men, and when the good meets the bad, they will certainly clash, isn’t that so?”

Chen Feng Chao just smiled and did not reply.

Du Jiao Jiao continued, “So, if it was any other day, we would not dare to come and pay you a visit, because the reputation of the ‘Murong’ family is so great that it’s scary, and we really cannot afford to antagonize you.”

Chen Feng Chao bowed slightly and said, “We wouldn’t dare.”

Du Jiao Jiao said, “But today is different, because we’re already deduced that you will not make things difficult for us today, that’s why we dared to come here…”

Ha Ha’er replied, “Haha, as the saying goes, just take things as they come, since we’ve came, we will have to be thick skinned and stay here. Luckily all of you are polite gentlemen, and it’s a joyous occasion today, so even if we misbehaved a little, you will never chase us away.”

Qin Jian who was seated at another table suddenly stood up and said solemnly, “What are your plans actually, why don’t…”

Li Da Zui interrupted with a smile, “We don’t really have any plans, just that we’d like to use your place here as a wedding hall and let this two couples get married.”

Qin Jian wanted to speak further but Chen Feng Chao stopped him, and said with a smile, “Since all of you are willing to honor us, and this is another joyous matter, we’ll be more than glad, it’s just that… the ceremony can’t proceed without music.”

Li Da Zui said calmly, “As the saying goes, if the sister-in-law is in need of help, the brother-in-law can lend a hand, flexibility can be applied if the nature is important, besides, the music is made for the ceremony, and there’s no need for us to listen to it, right?”

Chen Feng Chao smiled and replied, “With your reasoning, I really cannot argue.”

Li Da Zui clasped his hands and chortled, “Since that is the case, why worry if there’s no music?” He suddenly used two chopsticks and started tapping them on the bowl, and Ha Ha’er covered his mouth with his hands and started trumpeting.

Du Jiao Jiao laughed so hard that she bent over, saying, “Such music can only be heard in Heaven, how often can one hear it on earth? With such marvelous music, shouldn’t the ceremony proceed?”

She clasped Madam Bai and Tie Xin Lan on each side of her. Bai Kai Xin stared, but suddenly he grinned and clasped Hua Wu Que up as well.

Li Da Zui shouted as he tapped on the bowls, “The newly-weds will go though the ceremony, the first bow to Heaven…” The sisters of the Murong family may be extremely talented and intelligent ladies, the eight sons-in-law were also reputable heroes, but they’ve never seen something so ridiculous and absurd. They looked at one another, not one of them can think of a plan to handle the situation.

Right at this time, Yin Jiu You’s eerie voice suddenly shouted, “Who is that?”

A person laughed and said, “I am not human!” Once these words were heard, everyone can’t help but feel startled.

Although Li Da Zui and the rest knows that Yin Jiu You must be hovering somewhere nearby like a ghost, but who is the person that he met? The four words ‘I am not human’, were the words Yin Jiu You used most often.

Yin Jiu You was stunned as well, and he said with a strange laugh, “If you’re not human, are you a ghost then?”

That person replied, “Absolutely correct.”

Yin Jiu You smiled, “You’re a ghost? Do you know what I am then?”

That person said, “You’re only ‘half man half ghost’, but I’m a whole ghost. You’re still half a human, but I’m totally not human at all.”

Once he heard that, Bai Kai Xin can’t help but clap and laughed loudly, “Marvelous, marvelous, I didn’t expect that Yin Jiu You would actually see a ghost during the day.”

Although everyone was shocked, they can’t help but find this a little hilarious.

That person laughed, “Absolutely correct, you’re all seeing a ghost during the day, I am the day time ghost!” Amidst the laughter, a person flew in from outside the cabin like a gush of wind. It can be said that everyone in the cabin were top martial arts exponents, and Du Jiao Jiao, Bai Kai Xin, ‘Thousand Flowers Sword’ Zuo Chun Sheng, ‘Divine Eyes Scholar’ Luo Ming Dao, the Lightness skill of these few people are famous in the martial arts realm. But when they saw this person’s Lightness Skill, they can’t help but feel surprised.

Li Da Zui and the rest also knows that once ‘Half human half ghost’ Yin Jiu You clings on to someone, he’ll be like a maggot stuck to the bone and never let the other person escape. But this person was actually able to fly into the cabin easily while he was right next to Yin Jiu You, so obviously his Lightness Skill is so much better that Yin Jiu You, whose movement is already as quick as a ghost.

They really dare not imagine who this person can be! Because besides the Floral Princesses and Yan Nan Tian, there is not a lot of people with such excellent Lightness Skill.

But this person is not Yan Nan Tian, and naturally it cannot be the Floral Princesses. Under the light of the lamp, this person was less than three feet tall, and is actually a dwarf. Other dwarfs will surely look deformed and ugly, but this dwarf is different. His head, hands, legs and body were all proportionate, his face refined, long beard flowing from his chin, looking like an immortal or a Taoist priest.

But the clothes he wore, looks neither like a priest or a mundane man. He was wearing a light grey short robe, a sword hung across his back, and this sword is two inches shorter than other people’s dagger, which makes it look like a child’s toy. If a child was to see this person, he will surely pull his hands and make him play hide-and-seek. If it was a street performer who saw this person, he will surely think this is a rare commodity. If it was a highly ranked official who saw this person, he will surely bring him to the Emperor, to be a joker in the palace.

But once Du Jiao Jiao saw this person, she suddenly was unable to laugh. Du Sha and Li Da Zui, on seeing the change in her expression, also thought of someone suddenly.

By now Yin Jiu You has flown into the cabin as well, and was about to fight with

this person but Du Jiao Jiao and Li Da Zui hurriedly stopped him, and whispered some things into his ear. Yin Jiu You's expression changed as well, and the hand, which was extended to strike, was retracted immediately.

This person bowed around and said with a grin, "An uninvited guest, came to interrupt the feast, much apologies."

Chen Feng Chao, Nangong Liu and the rest naturally were secretly stunned, but they still replied politely. Only the Third Miss, Murong Shan Shan's eyes shimmered, and she suddenly said, "When Junior was younger, I've heard rumors that there's a strange hero in the martial arts realm, whose movements were like a mythical dragon, whose behaviour is unpredictable. I have long wanted to see for myself your impressiveness."

Murong Shuang's eyes gleamed and she interrupted, "The strange hero that Third Sister is referring to, is he the one people address as…. address as…" That person chortled, "Miss need not find it a taboo word, just call out the name 'Gui Tong Zi' (Little Ghost Boy), I'm long been used to the name and not only will I not be angry, in fact I find that this name is not bad at all."

Once the three words 'Gui Tong Zi' was spoken, the expressions on Chen Feng Chao, Nangong Liu and the rest suddenly changed. They had heard such rumours when they were young as well, that not only is this person's Lightness Skill extraordinary, he's also said to be the only disciple of Japan's Yi He Gu of the mysterious Ninja skill.

End of Chapter 115

Chapter 105

Chapter 116

It is said that ‘Gui Tong Zi’ is adept in the art of invisibility. If he wants to find out your secrets, you would not notice him even if he was hiding right under your chair. But this person was already famous fifty years ago and for the last thirty, forty years, no one has heard anything about him. It was said that he has left for Japan and to enjoy the exotic country. Others said that because most of the people in Japan are dwarfs, so he felt happier staying there. Now that this person appeared suddenly again, his intentions are unfathomable.

Chen Feng Chao bowed and said, “I have long admired Elder’s great name, and now that I can be witness to Elder’s grace, it’s a most joyous thing indeed,”

Gui Tong Zi laughed, “You may be saying that, but I’m afraid in your heart you really want to ask why an old weirdo like me came here?”

Chen Feng Chao replied, “I wouldn’t dare.”

Gui Tong Zi added, “Actually even if you don’t ask me, I will tell you.”

Chen Feng Chao replied, Yes,”

Gui Tong Zi continued, “I came today because of two matters. Firstly, I heard that this Miss Tie is getting married, so I specially engaged a group of musicians. I can guarantee that all of them are skilled musicians. If Miss Tie goes through the ceremony before the musicians arrive, won’t it be a loss of face for me, therefore, I’ll have to ask that Miss Tie must wait for a little longer.”

Chen Feng Chao and the rest seemed to have heaved a secret sigh of relief, “So

this old weirdo is not here for us."

But Li Da Zui and the rest were secretly startled, "How is this old weirdo related to Tie Xin Lan? Why is he concerning himself over her affairs?"

Gui Tong Zi grinned at them, "Actually I don't know this Miss Tie at all, it's just that I'm a born busybody."

Although Li Da Zui still felt a little suspicious, but he did not say it out. After being cooped in the Valley of Evil for twenty years, and although the things that they did after their re-emergence into the martial arts realm bordered on the nonsensical, but they are after all the 'Ten Evils'. And the name 'Ten Evils' is not something that is given to them so easily, when something major really happens, all of them will be capable of handling the situation.

"There's another thing which is even more interesting." Gui Tong Zi said, "This time I unexpectedly saved someone, and this person is rumored to be a scoundrel. But I am born with a strange character, I love making friends with scoundrels, because if everyone else won't be friends with a scoundrel, and I am like everyone else, won't the scoundrel be very pitiful? If a person is pitiful, then how can he be called a scoundrel?" This person really has a warped logic, and the Murong sisters were secretly laughing when they heard this.

Bai Kai Xin laughed as well, "If Elder likes to make friends with scoundrels, that is too marvelous. Because the number of scoundrels here is ten times more then the number of scoundrels added up everywhere else." If he doesn't say a few words to instigate something or to show sarcasm, not only will his throat feel itchy, but his whole body will feel uncomfortable, just like a dog who has seen poop, it's difficult to make it not want to eat it.

Gui Tong Zi looked at him and grinned, "It seems that this will be 'Harming others without benefit to oneself' Bai Kai Xin, you really live up to your name. I came up to this boat today, is to look for you."

Bai Kai Xin was stunned and stammered, "Look… look for me? Wh… why? I don't eat humans, neither do I gamble, amongst these people here, there's none who is more honest than me."

Gui Tong Zi replied, “Actually it’s not really me who is looking for you, it’s just that the scoundrel friend of mine has some issues to settle with you, so he would like to have a good talk with you.”

He suddenly raised his voice, “Come quickly, you toothless tiger, or is it true that you really dare not let others see you anymore!” Once these words were out, Bai Kai Xin wanted to slip away, because he has already guessed who the person is. Madam Bai was still pretending to be shy but once she heard these words, her expression changed as well.

But even if Bai Kai Xin has applied oil on the soles of his feet, there’s no way he can slip away by now. Once he leapt up, he saw Gui Tong Zi’s face blocking right in front of him.

Right at this time, there was a bang on the deck, and a person walked in with large strides, and who else can it be but Bai Shan Jun, the one whose wife is about to be snatched away.

Bai Kai Xin sighed and mumbled, “This messy affair, how can it ever be settled?”

Li Da Zui grinned from ear to ear and said, “Take your time to settle it, anyway you’re brothers with the same ancestor, you can always talk things over.”

Bai Kai Xin stared at him angrily, wishing that he can fight it out with him, but by now Bai Shan Jun has walked to him and he hurriedly smiled condescendingly, “Our family name is both Bai, and a single pen cannot write the word Bai twice at the same time, you must not listen to others trying to sow discord between our own family.”

Li Da Zui said icily, “A single pen cannot write the word Bai twice at the same time, and how can a pair of pants be worn on two pairs of legs?”

Bai Kai Xin jumped up, as if he wanted to leap over.

However Bai Shan Jun stopped him, and actually smiled, “What this brother said is quite true, I…” Bai Kai Xin exclaimed, “True? He is totally bull-shitting, your wife and me, there’s nothing… nothing, and I have no wish to marry her as well. You came at the right time.”

Bai Shan Jun replied, “Outrageous, since my lowly wife is now married to Brother, then naturally she is now Brother’s wife. Younger Brother here may be stupid, but I do know that one must not hanker after a friend’s wife, so how dare I flirt with my sister-in-law.” That he would actually say something like that, everyone was stunned.

Bai Kai Xin stammered, “You… what do you mean by that? Don’t you want your own wife back?”

Bai Shan Jun laughed, “I’ve never had that intention. The reason I came today, is just to make arrangements for the transfer, and once the arrangements are complete, no one is to argue about it in future.”

Bai Kai Xin exclaimed, “I snatched your wife away, don’t you want to fight it out with me!”

Bai Shan Jun replied, “Not only do I have no intention of fighting with you, I am instead extremely grateful to you…”

Bai Kai Xin’s nose looked as if it’s twisted, and he asked hoarsely, “You… you… you’re grateful?…”

Bai Shan Jun laughed heartily, “I have enjoyed her for twenty years, it’s time to let Brother enjoy a taste of her. She may be bad tempered, easily jealous, and although she knows how to cook, she doesn’t know how to take care of a household. But sometimes she will cook an egg for Brother to eat, it’s just that she may put a little too much salt in it.”

Bai Kai Xin was stunned on hearing all these, unable to express his grief at all.

But Madam Bai jumped up and screamed, “You… you moron, how dare you

say anything bad about me…" Bai Shan Jun grinned, "Sister-in-law please don't find the wrong person, I am now no longer your husband, you must remember this point now."

Madam Bai was stunned as well, unable to say another word.

Bai Shan Jun bowed and said with a laugh, "I wish that the two of you will be happy for a hundred years to come, to be together until old age, and I beg the two of you, to let me have a way out, and in future I will certainly erect a longevity tablet for the two of you so that I will never forget your good grace." He looked heavenward and laughed loudly before turning around and left.

Everyone looked at one another, all not knowing whether to laugh or cry, not a single one of them would imagine that there would actually be someone like that, or such a thing happening in the world.

After a moment, Madam Bai was heard mumbling, "He doesn't want me, he actually don't want me, is this real…"

Bai Kai Xin sighed, "If only it's not real, but a pity he seemed to be perfectly serious."

Madam Bai shouted, "This must not be true, he does not really feel that way, I know… I know he must be feeling very miserable now, I must not let him leave like that." As she shouted, she ran out. After being starved for three, four days, Bai Kai Xin and the rest only gave her half a bun and a small cup of water, and now she used all of these remaining strength, as if she's afraid that someone will pull her legs from behind. Actually, no one has the intention of stopping her at all, especially Bai Kai Xin.

Bai Kai Xin originally thought that this woman is quite interesting, and the most interesting part is precisely because she is someone else's wife. Most men will find that someone else's wife is more interesting, and all the more 'Harming others without benefit to oneself' Bai Kai Xin. That's why when the others forced him to marry this woman, he wasn't exactly against it. He only hoped that when Bai Shan Jun finds out about this matter, he would be roaring and crying with anger, and come to settle scores with him. But who would have expected that

Bai Shan Jun would actually give her to him, as if she's just a pile of trash, quite afraid that he won't be able to give her away. Now Bai Kai Xin is really disappointed. He suddenly realized as well that this woman is not that much more interesting than a pile of trash.

That is the problem with most men. Even if it's a pig, if there are two men fighting for her at the same time, then every inch of this pig will become beautiful, but if one of the men were to suddenly give up, the other man will suddenly wake up from his dream, "So she's a pig, it's just a pig."

Now Bai Kai Xin can't wait for this woman to run out quickly, the faster the better, and if she slips and falls into the river, that's even better. But who would have expected that Madam Bai had just reached Gui Tong Zi when he reached out his hand, grabbed her by her neck and lifted her up. He may be very much shorter than her, but strangely, he was able to lift her up from the ground, and made it look very easy as well.

He carried her all the way back to Bai Kai Xin before putting her down. Madam Bai stared straight ahead, as if she's so shocked that she doesn't even know how the little short person can carry her up.

She grumbled, "Can't I go and find my husband?" Gui Tong Zi replied with a straight face, "Your husband is right here, where are you going to look for him?"

Madam Bai said, "But… I have no wish to marry him, I was forced by others."

Gui Tong Zi asked, "If you do not wish to marry him, then why did you pretend to be shy like a bride earlier?"

Madam Bai rubbed her eyes hard, thinking of rubbing some tears out, but her tears are not a lot, and they are disobedient, refusing to come out when they're supposed to.

Gui Tong Zi laughed, and suddenly tapped Hua Wu Que's shoulder, He had to stand on tiptoes before he could tap his shoulder.

He grinned and said, “Young lad, it’s really your good fortune to be able to marry the daughter of our Old Tie.”

Although Hua Wu Que was standing, but besides being able to stand, he does not have the strength to do anything else. Maybe he can still talk, but, at a time like this, what else can he say? Gui Tong Zi looked at the expression on his face and asked with a furrowed brow, “No matter what, you’ve finally gotten her as your wife, why are you still unhappy?”

Tie Xin Lan suddenly spoke up, “Elder, I… I….” Du Jiao Jiao and the rest did not seal her mute acupoint at all, because they’re not afraid of her talking. Even if she said something she’s not supposed to, they can stop her anytime.

But now, with Gui Tong Zi right in front of her, they have no choice but to let her continue talking, because no one wished to be carried up by the neck.

Even if Gui Tong Zi has no other skills but this, it’s already enough, because they saw earlier when he lifted Madam Bai, and if he just stretches out his hand, no one can guarantee that they will be able to avoid him. When he stretched his hand, it’s as if his hand was originally growing right out of Madam Bai’s neck. Luckily Tie Xin Lan only spoke three words, and she was unable to continue.

However Gui Tong Zi smiled and said, “I know you have a lot to say to me, but there’s no hurry now. Very soon, you will understand everything.”

The sisters of the Murong family were already secretly exchanging looks with one another, as if they’re discussing how to receive this strange person. The Murong family will never show any lack of courtesy towards their guests.

But before they could speak, Gui Tong Zi has already said with a laugh, “You need not invite me for a drink of wine, I never drink, because I’m too small sized, I will never win others in drinking. That’s why I might as well not drink.”

Chen Feng Chao smiled, “Since that is the case, why don’t Elder…”

Gui Tong Zi interrupted, “Are you going to ask me what I like? Fine, I’ll tell you,

I only like to see women take off their clothes and turn somersaults. If you want to receive me, then just turn some somersaults for me."

The expressions on the faces of the Murong sisters changed. Qin Jian, Mei Zhong Liang, Zuo Chun Sheng have already stood up, but Du Jiao Jiao's eyes gleamed, hoping that they'll start fighting sooner. Who would have expected that right at this time, the sound of music suddenly drifted in from the shore, and in this breezy night, it sounded so melodious, so charming and full of joy. No matter who, once he hears such music, he will not fight.

Once the music started, all the surrounding noises died down immediately, as if anyone with ears is totally mesmerized by this music.

Even the eyes of 'Bloody Hands' Du Sha is slowly becoming more gentle. The music can actually make everyone remember the happiest time in their lives, the happiest thing. Amidst the music, young married couples have started leaning close to each other unconsciously, their gaze interlocked, filled with gentleness and bliss.

Hua Wu Que's gaze unconsciously looked towards Tie Xin Lan as well. Tie Xin Lan is also looking at him. They both thought of the times that they spent together. During those days, they may sometimes be in shock, sometimes be in fear, sometimes be in pain, sometimes be in sadness, but now, all they can remember is only those sweet memories.

Gui Tong Zi looked at them and mumbled with a smile, "Now all of you should believe that this group of musicians that I've engaged is not only the best in the world, but also the one and only. Even the Tang Emperor has not the good fortune to listen to them."

The music is getting nearer and nearer, and they saw a small boat floating towards them on the river like a cloud. The boat was brightly lit, with more than ten lamps hanging high in the air, the light reflected on the river and there were another ten odd lamps in the river, looking like a seven treasures lighted pagoda coming down from amongst the clouds.

On the boat there were seven to eight people, some playing the flute, some

carrying the qin, some playing the pipa, some tapping on bamboo, and one of them was actually beating the drums. The low sound of the drum may be monotonous and without change, but each beat seems to be hitting everyone's heart. Making everyone's soul intoxicated.

Under the light, it can be seen that although there are men and women in the group, but all of them has white hair, and some are even bent over and hunched back, like toothless old people. But when they stepped up the boat, everyone realized that they're actually ten times older than when seen from afar. Those who have never seen them can never imagine that a person can live to such an old age, and even those who saw them cannot imagine this. That there were so many old men and old women playing music on a very small boat, this is something that is absolutely unimaginable.

And the most unimaginable is that such exuberant, youthful, uplifting music, actually came from this group of muddleheaded looking old people. If this is not seen with one's own eyes, he will never believe it. But now everyone saw for themselves, it's just that no one could see clearly how they got up their boat, because the small boat is too swift.

By the time the Murong sisters thought to go out and receive them, these old people are already on the boat suddenly, and the music did not even stop for an instant. The old man who was beating the drum has hair so white that it looks like snow, but his skin so dark it looks like charcoal, and he's so skinny that there's only skin and bones left. He used his thighs to hold a very large drum, and this drum looks even older than him, and very heavy as well. But he used his thigh to clasp it and flew up the boat lightly with the drum, as if they're made from paper and a small breeze would blow him away.

Chen Feng Chao came forward first and said with a bow, "Elders are all skilled beyond this world, I wonder why today…" Before he could finish his words, the old man who was beating the drum suddenly stared at him and said, "Is your family name Cao?"

Chen Feng Chao was stunned, and replied, "Junior's name is Chen Feng Chao."

He had just uttered the word 'Chen', when that old man who was beating the drum suddenly exclaim in fury, "Those with the family name Chen is nothing

good as well.” Amidst his roar, his shriveled body has lept up to fly away.

Gui Tong Zi furrowed his brows and pulled him, “Even if you detest those with the family name Cao, what has it got to do with those whose family name is Chen?”

The old man who was beating the drum fumed, “Who said there’s no relation, If not for Chen Gong* who let Cao Cao off, how could my ancestors have died in the hands of Cao Cao?”

(From Wikipedia: At the county of Zhongmou, where Chen Gong was the magistrate, Cao Cao was captured. When Chen Gong interrogated the fugitive, he was so impressed with Cao Cao's loyalty to the emperor that he decided to abandon his official post and join Cao Cao.)

With the commotion he’s making, the music stopped. No one knows what nonsense he was blabbering about, and only Murong Shan Shan suddenly laughed, “So it seems that, can Elder be the descendent of the martyr of Nan Hai, Mi Heng?”

(http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mi_Heng)

The old man replied, “That’s right, ever since the Three Kingdoms, I’m the 18th generation that this has been passed down, that’s why my name is Mi Shi Ba (Shi Ba = 18)

Only now did Chen Feng Chao understand what’s happening. So this old man is the descendant of Mi Heng, and Mi Heng played ‘Triple Tolling of Yu Yang’ on the drums and insulted Cao Cao. Cao Cao used the hands of others to kill him, and now this Mi Shi Ba wants to place this blame on Chen Feng Chao, making him at a loss as to whether to laugh or cry about it.

But Murong Shan Shan replied with a straight face, “Since that is the case, then Elder should not forget that Chen Gong died in the hands of the traitorous Cao Cao, so Elder and those with the family name Chen should fight their common enemy. If you were to fight amongst yourselves, won’t those with the family name Cao look upon it as a joke.”

Mi Shi Ba was stunned for a moment before he nodded his head, “That’s right, if not for your reminder, I would have forgotten. You’re quite an interesting young lady.”

Suddenly someone shouted, “Is there anyone with the family name Zhong here?”

This person is tall and thin with a long neck, and holding on to a qin. Bai Kai Xin thought that he has something against those with the family name Zhong, so he immediately pointed towards Li Da Zui and said, “This person’s family name is Zhong.”

He thought that Li Da Zui will certainly be in trouble now, because the ladies of the Murong family will certainly not speak up for Li Da Zui, but who would have expected that this old man with the qin dropped down to the floor in front of Li Da Zui and said, “Old man Yu Zi Ya, when I was a young man, your grandfather Mr Zi Qi was the only one who appreciated my music, and he spread the words of my music, making it famous. Now that we have met each other, if you do not mind, please allow me to play a tune for you.”

When Li Da Zui was younger he did have the reputation of a scholar, or Tie Wu Shuang would not have let him marry his daughter, so he naturally knows about the story between Mr Zi Ya and Zhong Zi Qi. That’s why when Bai Kai Xin said that his family name is Zhong, he did not object, and now he bowed and said, “If Elder has the mood for it, I will gladly listen.”

Yu Zi Ya sat down straight, his fingers plucking the strings of the qin, and once the music started, it makes one feel light, as if they’re in heaven.

Li Da Zui put on an act and closed his eyes, listening for a long time before saying loudly, “As majestic as Mount Tai! Excellent, marvelous.”

Yu Zi Ya’s music suddenly changed, becoming more gentle and melodious.

Li Da Zui clasped his palms and said, “Soothing like the River Jiang, excellent, marvelous.”

Yu Zi Ya drew his hand across the qin and stopped gracefully. He heaved a long sigh and said, “I did not expect that after so many years, the Zhongs will still appreciate the music. This tune of mine, will never be played for anyone else in future.”

Du Jiao Jiao have already seen that these old people are not highly skilled martial arts exponents, but she did not expect them to be so easily tricked.

She can’t help but secretly laugh to herself, “The older one gets, the more muddleheaded, seems that this saying is not wrong at all. These people here are really old and muddleheaded.”

Yu Zi Ya took hold of Li Da Zui’s hand and introduced the old men and old ladies to him one by one. The one playing the flute has the family name Xiao (Xiao = flute), and naturally he’s the descendant of Xiao Nong Yu. The person who played the zhu has the family name Gao, and he is most likely somewhat related to Gao Jian Li (http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Gao_Jian_Li), and whose descendent would be the one who plays the flute? It turns out that he’s the descendant of Han Xiang Zi, so naturally he’s related to the pioneer of essayist Han Yu as well.

The Murong sisters almost wanted to burst out laughing upon hearing all these from the side. They are slowly coming to the conclusion that these people are all mad, and very hilariously mad as well.

The most amazing thing is, the person who plays the yu claimed that he is the descendent of Mr Nanguo, and called himself Nanguo Sheng. Murong Shan Shan can’t take it any longer and said with a smile, “King Xuan of Qi loves the sound of the yu, and he will order 300 yu players to play at the same time, but 299 of them will certainly play better than Mr Nanguo*. Elder plays the yu so beautifully, so how can you be the descendant of Mr Nanguo?”

(*Story of Nanguo -

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Yu_%28wind_instrument%29)

This Mr Nanguo is short and fat, and looked very friendly, that's why Murong Shan Shan dared to joke with him. As expected he was not angry, and said with a grin, "Miss only knows that my ancestor was making up the numbers, and became a laughing stock for centuries to come, but you only know one aspect of the story and not the other."

Murong Shan Shan replied, "Junior is willing to be enlightened."

Nanguo Sheng replied, "After the death of King Xuan, King Min took over the throne and ordered the 300 yu players to play a solo piece. When my ancestor heard of the news, he escaped in the night. Everyone is familiar with this part of the story, but they do not know that after my ancestor escaped, he vowed to work hard from then on. Before his death, he is already the best yu player during that era, and he strictly instructed his descendents that all future generations must learn to play the yu, with the hope of erasing the joke about 'Nanguo playing the yu'.

He laughed and continued, "If Miss were to take a look, who else in the world plays the yu better than those with the family name Nanguo."

Murong Shan Shan immediately put on a serious look and thanked him, "Junior was ignorant, if I have offended Elder, I hope you will forgive me."

Actually everyone can see that Mr Nanguo's family name is not Nanguo at all, Mi Shi Ba's family name is not Mi, and the old man with the family name Han cannot possibly be the descendant of Han Xiang Zi.

Because Han Xiang Zi has never married, so how could he have a son, and without a son, he can't possibly have a grandson.

But these old people insist on saying that, so everyone has no choice but to believe them. Although they can all see that these old people must be famous heroes of the martial arts realm fifty to sixty, or maybe even sixty to seventy years ago, but no one could guess their original names. All the more Tie Xin Lan could not guess why these old people would rush here to perform for her. Every

one of these people are old enough to be her great-grandfather, so how could they be in any way related to her?

The eldest Murong sister is gentle and well mannered, a capable wife and excellent mother who does not speak out of place. She has a slight smile all along, sitting there quietly, but now she suddenly pulled her husband's sleeve quietly and said gently, "It's getting late now, everyone is tired now…" Chen Feng Chao tapped her hand and smiled, "I understand what you mean."

Of course he can tell from the beginning that the situation today is getting more and more complicated, and he has no wish to drag this further with these weird unorthodox people, so he clasped his fists and said with a smile, "Now that the music is ready, we better finish up the ceremony for these two couples, so that everyone can have a hearty drink after that."

Du Jiao Jiao clapped her hands and laughed, "You're absolutely right."

Ha Ha'er said, "Haha, as the saying goes, a single moment of the night is worth thousands of gold, we're so busy talking that we forgot that the newly weds are anxious to go into the nuptials room."

They can also tell that these old people's background are dubious, and wish they can get out of this situation soon. Who would have expected that Gui Tong Zi suddenly exclaimed loudly, "No, not yet, wait a little longer."

Du Jiao Jiao smiled, "Could it be that Elders have invited guests here for the ceremony as well?"

Gui Tong Zi replied, "Not a guest, but a host."

Du Jiao Jiao can't help but feel stunned, "Host? Aren't all the hosts here?"

Gui Tong Zi ignored her, but spoke with Mi Shi Ba, "Didn't Lao Yao (Lao Yao = youngest in the family/ group) come with all of you?"

Mi Shi Ba rolled his eyes and replied, "Who else can he come with if not with

us?”

Gui Tong Zi asked, “Where is he?”

Mi Shi Ba replied, “Where is he, why don’t you ask him yourself?”

“If I know where he is, do I still need to ask?”

Mi Shi Ba stared at him, “If you don’t know, how would I know? I’m not his father.”

Gui Tong Zi chided him with a laugh, “You have the same irritable temper as your ancestor.”

Guo Nan Sheng laughed, “You obvious know that he has a bad temper, why do you still ask him, why don’t you ask me.”

Li Da Zui was secretly laughing at the side upon hearing all these. These people are getting more childish as they age, and when they argue, they’re as good as him.

Chen Feng Chao was afraid that they’ll argue further, luckily Nan Guo Sheng continued talking, “Lao Yao came with us initially on the boat, but he complained that the boat was moving too slowly, so he jumped ashore and came here on his own first.”

Yu Zi Ya said, “This is called more haste, less speed.”

Gui Tong Zi laughed, “I’m afraid his impatient character can’t be changed even when he’s dead.”

The lady flutist interrupted with a laugh, “With his speed recently, even if he took the longer route, he should be here long ago. I’m just afraid that he got into his bad habit again and is now fighting with someone again while on the way.”

Han Di Zi laughed, “If he is really fighting, then I’m afraid he won’t make it even if we wait another three days and nights for him.”

Du Jiao Jiao rolled her eyes and suddenly spoke up, “This friend of Elders, once he start fighting there’ll never be an end?”

Gui Tong Zi sighed, “If he does not fight until the other party kowtow and beg for mercy, he will not give up even if it means death.”

Du Jiao Jiao took a glance and Li Da Zui and asked, “Could it be him?”

Li Da Zui thought of someone as well, and suddenly exclaimed hoarsely, “Could this friend of Elders be….” Before he could finish his words, someone at the shore can be heard roaring suddenly, “Li Da Zui, Compulsive Gambler, where are you grand-bastards, scram out now!”

Xuanyuan San Guang clasped his palms and laughed loudly, “With the arrival of this son of turtle, it’s going to get even more interesting.”

Once that lion sounding roar was heard, Tie Xin Lan started shaking uncontrollably, either from surprise or from joy. The Murong sisters were secretly perplexed, the brother of these old weirdoes, how can he be an old friend of the ‘Ten Evils’? They really cannot understand.

Li Da Zui and Xuanyuan San Guang jumped to the head of the boat and laughed loudly, “You crazy old man, you’re still not dead?”

The person on shore laughed as well, “You grand-bastards are not yet dead, so how can I bear to die?” Amidst the laughter, a person jumped up the boat. A boat as large as this, even shook when he landed, and the wine in the cups spilled out, so one can imagine how heavy this person is.

But it cannot be said that his Lightness Skill is not up to par, because from his leap from the shore to the boat, the distance is at least forty to fifty feet! Plum Blossom Master, Divine Eye Scholar, their Lightness Skill can be considered one of the best in the martial arts realm, but when they think about it, they may not

necessarily be able to leap forty feet. Since this person's Lightness Skill is not weak at all, but he deliberately shook the boat when he landed, no wonder Li Da Zui and the rest called him 'crazy old man'."

Without even looking, everyone knows that the person who came must be a weird person and upon taking a look, they can't help but suck in a breath of cold air. This person is not very tall, about six to seven feet at the most, and he looked square, like a huge rock. His head is even strangely bigger, if the head was chopped down and weighed, it'll be at least thirty to fifty catties. The hair on his head was in a huge mess, like a chicken's nest, the hair joining the beard, the beard joining the face, no one can differentiate which is the beard, and which is the hair. Even his nose and mouth can't even be found. Looking from afar, he looks like a lion squatting on a huge rock, or like a lion that has been squashed out of shape.

Once this person jumped up the boat, he started laughing and chatting with Li Da Zui and Xuanyuan San Guang. The ages of those three added up is almost 200 years old, but they still do not behave seriously. On seeing this, Chen Feng Chao can only give a forced smile, not knowing if he should come forward to welcome him or not. That strange man suddenly pushed Li Da Zui aside and roared, "I forgot to take a look what kind of a husband you grand-bastards found for my daughter. If he's not to my liking, see if I don't give all of you a sound beating."

He jumped up with a roar, and Du Jiao Jiao approached him with a smile, "This son-in-law we found for you, a crazy man like you will never find someone like him even if you went looking, you're sure to be satisfied."

On seeing this weird man, Tie Xin Lan's tears have burst out uncontrollably, and she struggled to rush forward, crying out, "Father…"

With the suffering she felt, the bitterness she felt, she only managed to call his name before her throat got stuck, unable to say another word.

Hua Wu Que has also realized by now that 'Mad Lion' Tie Zhan has arrived. Looking at Tie Xin Lan, he will never imagine that her father would actually look like that.

Tie Zhan patted his daughter's head and chuckled, "Good daughter, don't cry. Your old man is not dead yet, you should be happy, why are you crying?" Before he even finished his words, he has already jumped in front of Hua Wu Que and looked at him from head to toe, and from toe to head again, scrutinizing Hua Wu Que for a few rounds. Hua Wu Que was so numb from hunger that he did not even move.

Tie Zhan nodded his head, "Seems that this lad looks quite human, but… why can't he stand properly, or have you found me a sickly man?"

Gui Tong Zi laughed, "It's not a serious illness, he only needs freshly steamed buns for his illness and he will be able to stand properly."

Tie Zhan was taken aback, and asked, "Could he be suffering from hunger?"

Gui Tong Zi smiled, "That's right."

Tie Zhan jumped up and roared, "Who starved my son-in-law into such condition?"

Gui Tong Zi replied, "Who else but your old friends."

Tie Zhan suddenly somersaulted, extended his hands and grabbed Ha Ha'er and Du Jiao Jiao by their collars, and forcefully lifted the two of them up. His martial arts is not exactly the best among the Ten Evils, it's just that when he fights, he does it without a care to his own life. If real skills are compared, he may not be able to win Du Jiao Jiao. But now he has just extended his hands, and he managed to lift Du Jiao Jiao and Ha Ha'er, and not only are they unable to resist, they're unable to avoid him as well.

Li Da Zui and the rest can't help but feel stunned, no one would have imagined the great improvement in his martial arts. Mi Shi Ba, Yu Zi Ya and the rest have an expression of glee on their faces, and without a need to ask, these old freaks must have taught his martial arts. Ha Ha'er felt his neck about to break, and wanted to laugh but he couldn't even get his breath out, and stammered, "Old… old friend, we can talk things over, why must you fight!"

Tie Zhan fumed, “What’s there to talk about, you ate yourself into a fatty, why did you starve my son-in-law thus.”

Du Jiao Jiao smiled condescendingly, “There’s something that Brother Tie does not know. If we don’t starve him, he would have run away long ago.”

Tie Zhan asked, “Run? Why would he run?”

Du Jiao Jiao replied, “Why don’t Brother Tie ask him yourself.”

Tie Zhan really loosened his hold, but grabbed Hua Wu Que’s collar and roared, “Let me ask you, why do you want to run away? Isn’t my daughter good enough for a sickly man like you?”

Tie Xin Lan grabbed her father’s arm, “Father, let him go quickly, this has got nothing to do with him.” The confusion and pain she feels in her heart, how can she reveal them in front of so many people.

Tie Zhan paused and asked, “What is this all about? … I don’t care about other things, I’ll only ask you, are you willing to marry this lad!”

Tie Xin Lan lowered her head, “I…I…”

Tie Zhan fumed, “Why have you turned wishy-washy now as well, what is so difficult to say it out, yes means yes, no means no. You only need to nod your head and this lad will be your husband, if you shake your head, I’ll chase this lad away for you.”

But Tie Xin Lan’s head could not move at all. She can’t nod her head, neither can she shake her head. Remembering the love Hua Wu Que has for her, how can she shake her head. She knows that once she shakes her head, she may never see Hua Wu Que again. But she thought of that hateful yet lovable Xiao Yu’er… and how can she nod her head then.

Her feelings now, even the most understanding person would not be able to understand, much less this ‘Mad Lion’ Tie Zhan who never understood anything

about matters of the heart. He was almost crazy with impatience, and stamped his foot, “I don’t need you to talk, but can’t you even move your head now?”

Tie Xin Lan still refused to move her head.

Everyone looked at one another, all stunned. The Murong sisters may be astute, but they really cannot guess what she is thinking of right now. The only person who understands her now is Hua Wu Que. But his heart is in pain as well. He knows that Tie Xin Lan refuses to shake her head because she can’t bear to hurt him, but even if Tie Xin Lan nodded her head, won’t he feel sad as well?

He can’t help but utter quietly, “I…”

But who would have expected that he only managed to say one word before Tie Zhan jumped up and roared, “Shut up, who told you to speak. As long as my daughter is willing, you will have to marry her, if my daughter does not agree, you will have to scram!”

Once he said these words, even the Murong sisters were at a loss whether to laugh or cry. They only felt that such an unreasonable father-in-law, is really a rare thing in the world. But they do not know that if ‘Mad Lion’ Tie Zhan is a reasonable man, he won’t be listed as one of the Ten Evils.

The lady flutist suddenly smiled, “If a girl is not willing to nod or shake her head, that means she is agreeable.”

Her hair may have turned white, her face full of wrinkles, so ancient that she’s lost all her teeth, but the look in her eyes is still sultry, and one can imagine that she must have been very experienced in love when she was young.

Tie Zhan slapped his thighs, clapped his hands and said, “That’s right, only Sister Xiao knows how a girl thinks…”

End of Chapter 116

Chapter 106

Chapter 117

Who would have expected that Tie Xin Lan would speak up immediately, “I… I don’t mean that.”

Tie Zhan was so impatient that he grabbed his hair and asked, “What do you really mean then? Speak.” Tie Xin Lan lowered her head, becoming a mute again.

Such a situation, not to mention that Tie Zhan is almost crazy with impatience, even the rest of the people are getting impatient as well.

Tie Zhan stamped his foot, “Don’t a single one of you here knows what she means?”

Xuanyuan San Guang smiled and said, “We know there is someone who knows what she means. Du Jiao Jiao.”

Before he said the last word ‘Jiao’, Tie Zhan has lifted Du Jiao Jiao up and roared, “Since you know, why didn’t you say anything, but let me be anxious.”

Du Jiao Jiao smiled condescendingly, “If you don’t know what your daughter thinks, how would I know. Compulsive Gambler must have hated me for offending earlier, so now he’s taking revenge.”

Tie Zhan roared, “Bullshit, Compulsive Gambler has never lied in his entire life. I’ll count to ‘three’ and if you still won’t tell, I’ll kill you immediately.”

Before he could even say ‘one’, Du Jiao Jiao had already replied with a helpless

smile, “All right, I’ll speak, but I’m afraid you’ll be at a loss even more after I speak.” She knows that ‘Mad Lion’ Tie Zhan will surely keep to his word, and now that her life is at stake she has no choice but to reveal everything.

Tie Zhan replied, “As long as you can say it, I’ll have a solution.”

Gui Tong Zi replied, “Even if he has no solution, we can help him find a solution.”

Du Jiao Jiao continued, “Your daughter was very willing to marry this Master Hua at first, but… but… she has another whom she loves. She wants to marry Master Hua, but she also wants to marry that person.”

The lady flutist asked, “These two, who is the better one?” Du Jiao Jiao laughed, “They’re about the same, each with his own good points. If I were her, I wouldn’t know who to marry either.”

Once she heard all these, Tie Xin Lan felt ashamed and pained, and hoped that she can die right away. But she thought that since they mentioned ‘Xiao Yu’er’, maybe there’s a chance of Xiao Yu’er living, so she can only grit her teeth and swallow back her tears.

The lady flutiest sighed, “No matter how strong a woman, she’ll be at a loss in such a situation, so no wonder Mis Tie is in so much pain. If I were her, I’ll…”

Bai Kai Xin interrupted, “Since she likes both of them, then tell her to marry them both at the same time. One on each side, that’s the most marvelous.” He never has anything good to say out of his mouth, and others thought that ‘Mad Lion’ Tie Zhan will certainly smash his nose up, or crack his head open.

Who would have expected that Tie Zhan would jump up and laugh while clapping his hands, “Excellent idea, excellent idea indeed. If a man can have two wives, why can’t a woman marry two husbands?”

The lady flutist sighed and mumbled, “I am a woman, but you’re a lunatic.”

Tie Zhan chortled, “So what if I’m a lunatic, for my daughter’s sake, there’s no harm in being a lunatic.”

He held his daughter’s hand with a laugh and added, “Who is this other person? Just say it out, it’s all right, Father here will decide for you.” Tie Xin Lan’s face had turned from red to pale, and was wishing that she had died three years ago, so how can she say anything now. Even the Murong sisters were secretly sighing for her, thinking that this girl is indeed pitiful, to have such a precocious father.

Xuanyuan San Guang rolled his eyes, and suddenly laughed, “Old Man Ge, how can a young girl say such things out loud? Let me tell you, that lad’s family name is Jiang, and his name Xiao Yu’er.”

Once the three words ‘Xiao Yu’er’ was spoken, the expressions on all the Murong sisters’ face changed, and Little Fairy was so furious that her face reddened immediately. Du Jiao Jiao and the rest were lightly furrowing their brows and only Hua Wu Que’s eyes brightened for an instant, because he finally understood Xuanyuan San Guang’s intention.

“Xiao Yu’er, Xiao Yu’er, Xiao Yu’er…” Tie Zhan repeated this name a few times, and he asked with a furrowed brow, “Why does this lad have such a weird name.”

Bai Kai Xin grinned, “Because he is a weird person, no matter who sees him, that person will be unlucky for at least three years.”

Tie Zhan beamed, “You’d better not try to sow discord. As long as my daughter likes him, it doesn’t matter even if he’s called little bastard.”

Xuanyuan San Guang suddenly sighed, “A pity that even I do not know where this Xiao Yu’er is right now.” Tie Zhan replied, “That doesn’t matter, as long as there’s such a person, I will be able to find him.”

He gave Gui Tong Zi a hard slap on the shoulder and laughed loudly, “Even if I can’t find him, you’ll be able to, right?”

Xuanyuan San Guang replied, “Wrong. It may be easy for him to find other people, but to find this Xiao Yu’er, it’s extremely difficult, extremely difficult.”

Tie Zhan stared and asked, “Why?”

Xuanyuan San Guang took a glance at Du Jiao Jiao and the rest and answered, “Because they have hidden Xiao Yu’er.”

Tie Zhan jumped up and stared at Du Jiao Jiao, asking, “Why are you hiding him, or could it be you’ve taken a liking for him as well?”

He looked as if he’s going to rush forward and lift Du Jiao Jiao up again, so Du Jiao Jiao hurriedly smiled and said, “This Compulsive Gambler has gotten the bad habit of Bai Kai Xin, don’t you listen to him.”

Xuanyuan San Guang grinned, “Even if you have not hidden him, at least you’ll know where he is, right?”

Du Jiao Jiao sighed and said, “If you must look for him, I will take you there, but I’m afraid it’s too late now.”

Tie Zhan did not even listen to the last part of her sentence, but has already jumped up, “If we’re going, then go now, the faster the better.”

Chen Feng Chao suddenly stood up, “That’s right, it doesn’t matter if this nuptial drink is drunk later. We have long heard the great name of ‘Xiao Yu’er’, and have wanted to meet him for some time.”

Tie Zhan clapped his hands and laughed loudly, “So it seems that my potential son-in-law is quite a popular person.”

Little Fairy gritted her teeth and said with hatred, “He is indeed popular. From what I know, at least eight hundred people want to eat him up.”

Luckily at this time everyone is rushing to go out, so no one took note of what

she said, and only Gu Ren Yu was looking at her from the side in a daze. Until everyone has left, Gu Ren Yu heaved a long sigh and said, “You’d better hurry along as well.”

Little Fairy asked, “You’re not going?”

Gu Ren Yu lowered his head and said, “I… I think I’d better return home.”

Little Fairy stared at him for a moment before she smiled icily, “He spoiled the good thing between you and Sister Jiu, so you still hate him?”

Gu Ren Yu gave a slight smile and said, “Even if there’s no him, Sister Jiu would not marry me, I don’t mean that.”

Little Fairy asked, “What do you mean then?”

Gu Ren Yu lowered his head further and stammered, “I only… only thought that you… you’re also…” Not only has his face turned red, even his neck seemed to have thickened.

Little Fairy stared at him for a moment and suddenly laughed, “You silly, did you think that I liked him!”

Gu Ren Yu stammered, “I heard Third Sister said two days ago that only when a woman likes a person, will she hate him. You hated him so much, doesn’t it mean… it mean…”

Little Fairy suddenly her hand and gently covered his mouth, and asked gently, “You silly, don’t you know my heart by now?”

Gu Ren Yu was startled and ecstatic, and totally stunned.

Little Fairy said, “If you think that I like him, then I’ll marry you now, you should be assured then.”

She suddenly clapped and laughed, “That’s right, we’ll get married right now. We won’t need the ceremonial music or the matchmaker. By the time they come back and hear about this, the expressions on their faces will surely be very interesting.” She got even more happy as she spoke when suddenly there was a ‘plonk’, and Gu Ren Yu has fallen onto the floor together with the chair he was on.

Little Fairy exclaimed in alarm, “You… how are you?” She was just about to squat down and help him up when Gu Ren Yu suddenly jumped up from the floor shouted, “I’m too happy, too happy… is there anyone who is happier than me in the world?”

Little Fairy was surprised, and giggled, “I didn’t expect that Sister Gu would become a lunatic.”

Gu Ren Ju exclaim with joy, “Only now did I realize that Xiao Yu’er is the best man in the world.”

Little Fairy furrowed her brows, “You actually said that he’s a good man, I’m afraid you’re really crazy.”

Gu Ren Yu replied, “Think about it, if not for him, where can two good couples like Sister Jiu and us come from.”

Little Fairy blushed, guffawed, and pretended to put on a straight face and said, “Who said we’ll be a good couple. For all you know I’ll be fiercer than a tigress in future, and scold and hit you everyday, and I’ll even starve you.”

Gu Ren Yu summoned his courage and held her hands, saying gently, “As long as I can be with you, it doesn’t matter if I don’t eat. As the Cantonese always said, ‘Lovers can survive on plain water’. But they do not know that I can make do without water as well.”

Little Fairy said coquettishly, “And I thought you were very decent, but you’re equally dishonest as well.”

The two of them looked each other in the eyes, their heart filled with gentleness and sweetness. The breeze blew in through the window, bringing with it a window filled with stars, and Little Fairy can't help but lean into Gu Ren Yu's arms…

Looking at the group of people walking in front, Xuanyuan San Guang was feeling secretly pleased with himself. No matter what, at least he has done something for Xiao Yu'er.

Li Da Zui turned back to look at him, and slowed his steps as well to walk next to him, saying, "So you and Xiao Yu'er are good friends." Xuanyuan San Guang replied, "Do you think I can only have friends like you sons of turtles who can't afford to be seen?"

Li Da Zui said with a laugh, "I didn't expect you to have learnt such tactics, even the few of us were conned by you."

Xuanyuan San Guang stared and said, "You sons of turtles actually cannot be considered as humans. Xiao Yu'er grew up with you, yet you want him to be trapped to death."

Li Da Zui was silent for a moment and finally heaved a long sigh, "Honestly, I wanted to save him as well, but… once I heard that Yan Nan Tian is already here, I was so frightened that I lost my mind."

Xuanyuan San Guang replied, "You think that Xiao Yu'er will help Yan Nan Tian deal with you."

Li Da Zui said, "Even if he wants to do that, we can't blame him. Although Jiang Feng and his wife did not die in our hands, but Yan Nan Tian… hai!"

Xuanyuan San Guang smiled coldly, "Let me tell you, you've all misunderstood Xiao Yu'er. He's not one who is heartless, if he's alive, he will surely speak on your behalf to Yan Nan Tian. If he's really dead, then you son of turtles will really be in bad luck."

Li Da Zui was stunned for a moment, and continued with a sigh, “Let’s hope he’s still alive then.”

Xuanyuan San Guang tugged on his clothes and asked in shock, “Is he already dead?”

Li Da Zui smiled bitterly, “I don’t know if he’s dead or alive now either, I only know that he has been trapped in the belly of the mountain for seven, eight days with no food or water…” Xuanyuan San Guang turned pale, “No water for seven, eight days, even an iron man will not be able to sustain.”

Li Da Zui replied, “Maybe someone else would have died long ago, but Xiao Yu’er… he may have a plan. You’ll never guess how capable he can really be.”

He was afraid Xuanyuan San Guang would create trouble for him, so he quickly added, “That Gui Tong Zi is really capable as well, I really cannot guess how he would know our movements, and can actually bring crazy Tie here.”

He had just finished his words when someone suddenly laughed behind him, “If you manage to guess, can I still be considered Gui Tong Zi then?” Amidst the laughter there was a flash, and he was already in front of them.

Li Da Zui was stunned and smiled condescendingly, “Elder really comes and goes without a trace, I am extremely awed.”

Gui Tong Zi replied with a laugh, “Your flattery is making me feel very good, so I might as well just tell you what happened from the beginning.”

He hurriedly added, “Everyone in the martial arts realm thought that Tie Zhan found a treasure map, but actually, he has no interest in treasures at all. His biggest interest, is on Nameless Island.”

Li Da Zui asked, “Since it’s called Nameless Island, how would Tie Zhan know about it?”

Gui Tong Zi explained, “Because there was a busybody who recorded the

coordinates of Nameless Island, and he also said that as long as one finds this Nameless Island, he'll be able to learn martial arts from the people on the island and on his return to central plains, will become invincible."

He continued with a laugh, "Tie Zhan has loved fighting all his life, so after seeing this secret document, naturally he was very tempted. That's why he told his daughter to lure others away with another treasure map, while he secretly make his way to Nameless Island."

Li Da Zui's eyes gleamed and he tried to fish around by saying, "Who are those who were living on Nameless Island?"

Gui Tong Zi replied, "Those living on the island are all old people who are tired of mundane affairs. Once they reach the island, they don't even want their old names anymore, that's why the island is called Nameless Island."

Li Da Zui smiled, "I'm sure Elder is also a nameless hero of this island."

Gui Tong Zi replied, "What nameless heroes, it's just a group of old cronies. Besides, even if I want to forget my own name, once others sees me, they will immediately recognize me, not like those old people, they just randomly give themselves a name and others won't even know."

Actually Li Da Zui had guessed long ago that the names Mi Shi Ba, Yu Zi Ya etc were all fake, and now that it has been confirmed, he didn't want to expose them as well. He only sighed and said, "Tie Zhan is really lucky…"

Gui Tong Zi replied, "He stayed for about three to four years on the island, and he did indeed learnt quite a few types of martial arts. If it was you who had gone, I'm afraid we'd have thrown you into the sea long ago to feed the fishes."

Li Da Zui forced out a smile and said, "I may not be a good person, but Tie Zhan is not that much better, so why have Elders taken a liking to him?"

Gui Tong Zi replied with a straight face, "Let me ask you, when you fight, will you go all out without care to your own life like him."

Li Da Zui replied, “This… I’m afraid I’m a little behind.”

Gui Tong Zi explained, “It is precisely this trait of his that we like, and thought that he can be taught.”

Li Da Zui has no choice but to stop talking, but in his heart he was secretly scolding them, “The crazies meeting the crazy, of course you’ll take an instant liking to one another.”

Xuanyuan San Guang was initially still thinking about Xiao Yu’er’s well being, but after hearing these words, he became curious as well and can’t help but ask, “Since Elders have retired, then why have you returned?”

Gui Tong Zi replied, “Because after Tie Zhan learnt martial arts from us for three years, one day he suddenly stopped learning. We asked him why? He actually said that our martial arts, even after adding them together, still cannot be compared to Yan Nan Tian and the Floral Princesses. There’s no use for him to continue learning, so he might as well save the effort.”

Li Da Zui’s eyes gleamed and he asked, “So this means that Elders came this time with the intention of dueling with Yan Nan Tian and the Floral Princesses.”

Gui Tong Zi sighed and said, “This is called the body is old but the heart is young, when one reaches the peak of calmness, one will start to move again.”

Li Da Zui was secretly overjoyed but he deliberately sighed, “In my opinion, it’s better that Elders go back quickly.”

Gui Tong Zi stared and asked, “Why?”

Li Da Zui explained, “I don’t know about others, but that Yan Nan Tian’s martial arts is really unparalleled since the beginning of time, and never will there be anyone like him. I’m afraid Elders will also be…”

Gui Tong Zi really leapt up and said furiously, “I don’t believe that nonsense, I

must find him and have a duel with him now."

Li Da Zui knows that his point has been made and he'd better not press the issue, so he changed the topic, "I wonder how did Elder know about Tie Xin Lan's wedding?"

Gui Tong Zi remained upset for a while before he said, "After we arrived in central plains, we traveled via the rivers and that few old fagots were suddenly enamored with a young lady at Wusheng City, insisting that her skills for playing the pipa is second to none in the world and refused to leave that place. There was no use with me remaining angry, so I walked around on my own. When I reached here, I didn't meet anyone else but that Bai Lao Hu."

Li Da Zui laughed, "Seems that his luck is not too bad."

Gui Tong Zi added, "But at that time he was almost dying, so I sent him to the foot of the mountain to treat his injuries. He has not recovered from his injuries yet, but you guys have already arrived."

Li Da Zui laughed bitterly, "So Elder was there as well, why didn't I see you at all?"

Gui Tong Zi replied icily, "I was right behind you earlier, did you see me?"

Li Da Zui sighed and said, "Elder secretly overheard our plan, so you informed Tie Zhan immediately and asked them to come here immediately, that's why they stopped listening to the heavenly pipa music."

Gui Tong Zi laughed, "You're not too stupid, you finally understand."

Suddenly Tie Zhan can be heard exclaiming loudly, "You say that Xiao Yu'er is here? Could it be that he's like Sun Wu Kong, who has been buried under the mountain by the Buddha Ru Lai?"

Once Xuanyuan San Guang heard this, he couldn't care less about anything else and hurried forward immediately. He saw Tie Zhan lift up Du Jiao Jiao again

and roared, “You got him in so now you have to get him out.”

Du Jiao Jiao smiled bitterly, “Would I have such capability.”

Tie Zhan asked, “Who is it if not you?” Xuanyuan San Guang exclaimed, “Old Man Ge, why are you still asking these now? Xiao Yu’er has been starving inside for seven to eight days already.”

Tie Zhan asked hoarsely, “Seven to eight days, this Hua lad was only starved for two to three days and he has already lost his strength. If he’s been starved for seven to eight days, would he still be alive?”

End of Chapter 117

Chapter 107

Chapter 118

‘Compulsive Gambler’ Xuanyuan San Guang was concerned about Xiao Yu’er’s life and death, and he was worried that all the talk would delay opening the mountain, so he hurriedly told ‘Mad Lion’ Tie Zhan, “Luckily there’s a lot of people here, more hands make lighter work, maybe we’ll still be in time.”

Li Da Zui also chipped in, “There are tools here for opening the mountain, those who want to save Xiao Yu’er, better start working quickly.” He was the one who hid the shovels and axes, so naturally he found them quickly.

Everyone was rushing to grab an axe to chop the mountain, and even those young ladies who were in highly respected positions chipped in to help. On seeing that the axes and shovels are all taken, they used their own priceless daggers and short swords. In a while, deafening sounds of the rocks being chipped resonated throughout the mountains.

Du Jiao Jiao sighed and said with a bitter smile, “And I thought everyone wanted Xiao Yu’er dead, I did not expect that they all wanted him to live. Xiao Yu’er oh Xiao Yu’er, it seems that even if you’re dead, it’ll be worth it.”

Bai Kai Xin sighed as well and said, “That’s right, if it was me who was trapped in here, I’m afraid even wild dogs wouldn’t have come to save me.”

Li Da Zui laughed, “I didn’t expect that you’ll actually know it as well.”

Bai Kai Xin laughed coldly, “Stop being so smug. Even if these people can work continuously, they would need at least half a day to reach the belly of the mountain. By then I’m afraid Xiao Yu’er would have become salted fish.”

Hua Wu Que and Tie Xin Lan can't help but feel hot tears in their eyes. On seeing such a scene, of course they felt happy, but they also know that hope is slim. Suddenly they saw Madam Bai quietly walking over, in her hands she carried an oily looking bag, and she said with her head lowered, "There's fried chicken and glutinous rice balls in the bag, I secretly wrapped them up earlier. Eat it quickly, only when you're full will you have the strength to save Xiao Yu'er."

Tie Xin Lan suddenly felt her throat choking, and she stammered, "You… want to save him as well?" Madam Bai rubbed her eyes and forced out a smile, "I may not know what kind of a person he is, but I think… if he can live in this world, maybe everyone will be a lot happier."

If not seen with one's own eyes, no one in the martial arts realm would believe such a thing. The most famous wealthy and respected gentlemen would actually be rolling up their sleeves and moving rocks together with the disreputable 'Ten Evils'. And the Murong sisters who would not have lifted a hand to work in the past, would actually use the dainty fingers they use for playing music to dig the soil. And all these, is because of a twenty odd year old lad, and this lad actually grew up in the Valley of Evil.

Suddenly they hear a sudden rumble, like loud thunder drumming through the sky, like a thousand horses and soldiers galloping here from afar. Everyone felt even more energized, and the broken stones flew up like rain. They have indeed created a miracle, in less than half a day, they managed to break through ten solid rock walls and entered the belly of the mountain. Hua Wu Que and Xuanyuan San Guang dashed in first, and although they are excited, they can't help but feel worried as well, and afraid… that what they will find is Xiao Yu'er's corpse!

Hua Wu Que wanted to call out, but his heart seemed to be stuck in his throat, and he can't make a single sound. He saw that on the stone chair which was split into half, was a wine bottle, and on the floor there were some torn clothes and thread. Hua Wu Que recognized that these were torn from the clothes that Xiao Yu'er and the Floral Princesses were wearing. His expression immediately changed, and his hand shook so much that he can't even pick up a piece of cloth.

Xuanyuan San Guang can’t help but ask, “This… this is their clothes?”

Hua Wu Que nodded his head absently, “Hmm.”

Xuanyuan San Guang’s heart sank as well. People like Xiao Yu’er and the rest, if not for some dire circumstances, they would not have tore the clothes on their body! They dare not step in further to look, they no longer have the courage to face that cruel truth.

Murong Shan Shan suddenly asked, “Is that wine in the bottle?”

Xuanyuan San Guang lifted up the bottle and sniffed at it, “Yes.”

Murong Shan Shan’s eyes gleamed and said with joy, “If it’s wine in the bottle, then there’s hope.”

Xuanyuan San Guang asked, “Wh…why?”

Murong Shan Shan replied, “Wine can be used to keep off hunger. If they have wine to drink, they’ll be able to last a few more days.”

Xuanyuan San Guang jumped at least two feet in the air and roared with joy, “Xiao Yu’er, Xiao Yu’er, where are you, your friends are all here to save you!” He dashed inside with joy.

The empty cave resonated with Xuanyuan San Guang’s echo, but there was no sound of anyone replying. Where is Xiao Yu’er? Is he so hungry that he can’t even talk anymore? The entrance to the underground tunnel was not sealed and they saw Wei Wu Ya’s corpse, and saw countless empty wine bottles, and also saw that stinking, marvelous ‘toilet’.

But they searched through the whole place and could not find a single living person. Where is Xiao Yu’er and the rest? Could their bones have dissolved and flown away, forever disappearing from this world!

Everyone looked at one another, and can only stand there in a daze. After a long while, Xuanyuan San Guang laughed, “Old Man Ge, I knew there’s no place in this world which can trap Xiao Yu’er, and there we were worrying about him but he has long gone.”

Li Da Zui replied, “He has not left.”

Xuanyuan San Guang exclaimed angrily, “You son of turtle just wished that he’ll be trapped to death, right?”

Li Da Zui sighed and said, “I hope that he has escaped as well, but I have searched through this place closely earlier, there’s no other exit.”

Xuanyuan San Guang replied, “I know there’s no exit as well, but there must be a way.”

Li Da Zui said, “What way would he have? Even if he can break through the wall and leave, there would at least be some traces of escape, unless he knows the seventy two changes of Sun Wu Kong and can turn into a fly and fly out of the air vent.”

Actually Xuanyuan San Guang knows that what he said was correct. The walls on all four sides were intact, with no trace of being tunneled through at all, and there is no way Xiao Yu’er could have gotten out. But if he can’t get out, then he should still be in this cave.

Xuanyuan San Guang said, “You son of turtle said they can’t get out, then where are they now? Why can’t we find even a single strand of their hair.”

Li Da Zui was silent for a moment and before he could speak, Bai Kai Xin suddenly exclaimed loudly, “Bone Dissolving Pill!” Once these three words were out, Xuanyuan San Guang and Hua Wu Que both felt a cold shiver run down their spines, and Tie Xin Lan was almost mad with worry.

Li Da Zui stared at Bai Kai Xin and said, “Do you mean to say that after Wei Wu Ya killed them, he used the bone dissolving pill to get rid of their bodies.” Bai Kai

Xin grinned and said, “I didn’t say that, you did.”

Since it’s impossible for Xiao Yu’er to go out, and they are not in here, naturally it’s because their bodies have been destroyed. This is the only logical explanation.

Even Tie Zhan can’t help but shake his head and sigh, mumbling “And I had wanted to see what kind of a person he really is, to make my daughter like him so much/ Who would have expected that this lad did not even leave behind a bone.”

He patted Tie Xin Lan’s head and said, “Since this lad is not lucky enough to marry you, you need not be sad anymore. If you think that one husband is not enough, I’ll find another one for you in a few day’s time.” It would have been better if he did not say anything, because once he said these words, Tie Xin Lan’s heart broke. She did not even manage to cry out and fainted immediately.

Gui Tong Zi suddenly asked, “Were they trapped here by Wei Wu Ya?”

Li Da Zui sighed, “I’m afraid so.”

Gui Tong Zi asked, “Then, why is Wei Wu Ya dead in here as well?”

Du Jiao Jiao replied, “Maybe Wei Wu Ya wants to see them die with his own eyes, or else he won’t feel the kick.”

Gui Tong Zi replied, “That’s right, this is very reasonable. But if Wei Wu Ya can kill all of them, and destroy their bodies, then Wei Wu Ya won’t be dead. Or could it be that their spirits can come back for revenge and kill Wei Wu Ya?”

Du Jiao Jiao said, “Wei Wu Ya poisoned himself, can’t Elder tell?”

Gui Tong Zi asked, “Since he has killed everyone else, why does he need to take poison!”

Du Jiao Jiao was stunned for a moment and said, “This…” Gui Tong Zi smiled and said slowly, “Wei Wu Ya calculated that no one would dare to kill him, that’s why he dared to stay here to watch the fun.”

Li Da Zui replied, “That’s right, if Xiao Yu’er and the rest want to go out, they cannot kill him, because he’s the only one who knows the secrets here, but isn’t he afraid that they will force him to reveal the secret?”

Gui Tong Qi said, “He thought that he had kept himself well hidden, and thought that others will not be able to find him, but who would have expected that Xiao Yu’er and the rest were very much more capable then he had imagined and they managed to get him out. When he could not take the questioning any longer, he can only take the poison and commit suicide, because he knows that once he is dead, the rest will have to be trapped to death here, and it will be akin to taking revenge for himself.”

His guess is actually not that far off from the truth, but because Xuanyuan San Guang, Hua Wu Que, Li Da Zui and the rest were more or less worried for Xiao Yu’er, so they were unable to maintain a calm state of mind. But Gui Tong Zi and the rest do not know Xiao Yu’er at all, so as bystanders, naturally they could see a clearer picture.

Xuanyuan San Guang can’t help but reveal a look of joy on his face, “So this means that, Wei Wu Ya must have died earlier than Xiao Yu’er and the rest.”

Gui Tong Zi smiled and said, “No matter how capable Wei Wu Ya is, he’s unable to kill the Floral Princesses and Xiao Yu’er all at the same time, don’t you think so?”

Xuanyuan San Guang clasped his palms and chortled, “Don’t talk about one Wei Wu Ya, even a hundred Wei Wu Ya won’t be able to do it.”

Bai Kai Xin added, “As the saying goes, drinking poison to relieve thirst. When a person is extremely thirsty, he’ll drink the wine even if he knows it’s poisoned, don’t you think so?”

Du Jiao Jiao replied, “No.”

Bai Kai Xin stared at her, “What fart would you know.”

Du Jiao Jiao ignored him, and slowly continued, “There is definitely no poison in the wine, I’ve taken a sniff at all the bottles.”

Xuanyuan San Guang laughed loudly, “Having known you for decades, you’ve finally said something that sounds human, and did something good.”

Bai Kai Xin said slowly, “Since he can’t have possibly escaped, and he can’t have died here, then let me ask you people, where is he then?”

Once this question was asked, everyone was stunned. This matter is really unbelievable, no one would be able to guess.

Who in the world would know where Xiao Yu’er is right now? Who would know whether he’s alive? Or dead? Or even his corpse is gone? Or is he still alive and well? Everyone were full of questions, and wanted to ask them, but none of them know who they should ask. So they could only stand there in a daze. Yu Zi Ya, Mi Shi Ba, Xiao Nu Shi and the rest may not be concerned about matters of the world, but at this time they can’t help but furiously think of an answer. Because this matter is really too mysterious, they were curious as well.

Xuanyuan San Guang was the most anxious, Tie Xin Lan the most broken hearted, Bai Kai Xin kept smiling icily, but Ha Ha’er can’t even laugh. Only Du Sha still looked the same, and no one knows what he could be thinking. Suddenly Hua Wu Que exclaimed loudly, “The soles on everyone’s feet are wet, is that so!”

Everyone had problems on their mind, who would notice the soles of their feet? Whether the soles are wet or dry, is totally unrelated at all, but Hua Wu Que’s voice was filled with excitement, as if he’s found out something very important. No one knew why would he be so concerned over such a small matter, but they still unconsciously lifted their feet up for a look. At least half of the people’s soles are indeed wet.

Xuanyuan San Guang’s straw sandals were totally wet and he can’t help but ask, “Old Man Ge, is it such a big thing that the soles of the shoes are wet?”

Bai Kai Xin grinned, “I did not expect that there would actually be someone who would place more importance on a pair of shoes rather than his old friend’s life and death. Marvelous, marvelous.”

Hua Wu Que ignored him, and still with a look of joy on his face, said “Since there’s no water here, why would the shoes be wet? If Wei Wu Ya wants them to die of hunger and thirst, why would there be water on the ground?” Once these words were spoken, everyone realized that this is indeed very mysterious.

Xuanyuan San Guang said, “But how is this matter related to where Xiao Yu’er has gone?”

Hua Wu Que replied, “It is related. If my guess is correct, I can find where Xiao Yu’er is.”

Xuanyuan San Guang was ecstatic, “Speak quickly, where is he?”

Hua Wu Que did not have time to answer him, but has already ran towards the underground tunnel. In the dark and damp cave, the smell of the ‘toilet’ really makes one not want to come close, and the sight of Wei Wu Ya’s corpse makes one nauseous as well. If it was any other time, the Murong sisters would definitely not want to go down again. But when Hua Wu Que left, everyone fought to follow. As long as they can find out the whereabouts of Xiao Yu’er, or the truth to all these secrets, even if there’s a cesspool in the tunnel, they would still follow their way in.

There really was water in the tunnel, and it was getting deeper, and now it’s almost ankle deep. Obviously there is a place where water is continuously leaking. The force of the water may not be large, but it’s not too small either.

Xuanyuan San Guang said, “Old Man Ge, that’s so damn strange, water would actually be leaking from the cave. Could it be that there’s a small river in the belly of the mountain?”

No one could imagine where the water could have come from. Hua Wu Que stooped down and closely inspected the source of the water, and slowly walked

into Wei Wu Ya's secret room. This secret room is unbelievably stinking. When everyone saw that there's no one alive in here earlier, they all hurriedly retreated, no one was willing to stay inside.

But now, everyone realized that the answer to the secret is right in this secret room, they can't be bothered about the stink and all squeezed in. Hua Wu Que exclaimed hoarsely, "Indeed correct, it's right here?" He stood in front of the two coffins that Xiao Yu'er used as a toilet, his face filled with a look of joy, but not a single living person can still be seen.

Bai Kai Xin sniggered, "You say that Xiao Yu'er is here? Could he be that he drowned in his own pee?" Before he could finish his words, Du Sha angrily roared, "What's with all the nonsensical talk, get lost."

As he roared, he hit Bai Kai Xin, who flew up and over everyone's head and fell on the tunnel outside with a 'bang', and he started groaning.

But no one noticed this at all, because they all realized that the water is coming out from a hole on the ground next to the stone coffins. There was a stone slab on the ground originally but now the slab has been pried open. Because there was a messy pile of loose stones around the area, no one noticed it earlier.

Xuanyuan San Guang revealed a look of surprise and said, "Could it be, that Xiao Yu'er and the rest escaped from this hole?"

Hua Wu Que beamed, "Exactly. We were only taking note of the walls in the cave, that's why we thought they can't possibly have escaped, but we did not think that they'll escape from the ground."

Xuanyuan San Guang clapped, "That's right. The walls of the mountain may be almost indestructible, but the ground is all soil, so naturally they're a lot softer than stones."

Suddenly he furrowed his brows and said, "But if they were thinking of digging a tunnel out of here, it won't be easy as well."

Hua Wu Que replied, “Of course that’s not easy, it’s just that they did not dig the tunnel themselves.”

Xuanyuan San Guang asked, “If they did not dig it, who did?”

Hua Wu Que replied, “From what I know, although most rivers are above land, but there are some rivers underground as well. Because of the movement and changes of the land, some of these rivers became buried underground. If they can find such a river, with their martial arts, it won’t be difficult to find a way out.”

Everyone can’t help but revealed looks of joy on their faces once they heard this. Xuanyuan San Guang jumped up and laughed, “Old Man Ge, you really know a damn lot of things.”

Hua Wu Que smiled and said, “Now I can also imagine why their clothes would be torn.”

Xuanyuan San Guang slapped his shoulder and said, “Say it quickly, what is that all about?”

Hua Wu Que replied, “Xiao Yu’er did not know that there would be a hidden river under the ground, and all the more he will not know where it’s located. Man may be the king of beasts, but we lack the mysterious ability of animals. For example, a dog can use its nose to track something thousands of miles away but a human can never do that. Maybe it’s not man that does not have such ability, but just that the ability has gradually eroded, because man no longer need such ability to survive.”

Xuanyuan San Guang said loudly, “Logical, logical!” He seems to be totally in awe of Hua Wu Que now, so no matter what Hua Wu Que said, he felt that it’s logical, but he may not necessarily understand the logic.

Hua Wu Que continued, “The natural ability of animals, are not all the same. For example, a dog’s nose is especially sharp, bats are especially sensitive to sound, birds are the first to know about changes in the weather, and some beasts with no defenses will be mysteriously tuned to signs of danger.”

Maybe a lot of people will know this logic now, but at that time it seems even more deeply profound than any internal energy manual.

Everyone was totally concentrating on his words.

Hua Wu Que suddenly smiled, “Do you know who is the best digger in the world?” Murong Shan Shan smiled as well and replied, “Rats.”

Hua Wu Que replied, “That’s right, it’s rats. No matter where you lock up a rat, it will have a way to dig a hole out and escape.”

Xuanyuan San Guang exclaimed hoarsely, “The turtle Wei Wu Ya is a huge rat himself, there must be a lot of rats here.”

Hua Wu Que continued, “Xiao Yu’er must have found a few live rats and he wants the rats to lead the way for him but yet he’s afraid they will run away. That’s why he tore his clothes and plaited them into ropes to tie to the rat’s tail before letting it out. Therefore the rat must have discovered the underground river. At that time Xiao Yu’er may not know why the rats would want to tunnel down, but by then they were at their wits end and had to try it no matter what.”

Xuanyuan San Guang laughed loudly, “I know Xiao Yu’er is the smartest person in the world, I didn’t expect that you’re just as good as him. It seems that the two of you should really become sworn brothers.”

Hua Wu Que can’t help but reveal a look of pain on his face, because Xuanyuan San Guang’s words have accidentally touched a raw nerve. Now, since Xiao Yu’er has escaped and still in the control of the Floral Princesses, then he cannot avoid the life and death duel between him and Xiao Yu’er. Their sad fate can never be changed.

Xuanyuan San Guang did not say anything else after that, and was thinking of wriggling himself through that hole.

Li Da Zui asked, “What are you doing”

Xuanyuan San Guang stared at him and said, “What am I doing? Of course it’s to look for Xiao Yu’er!”

Li Da Zui laughed, “They had no way out that’s why they had to go through the hole, but you don’t have to go through that hole with them!”

Xuanyuan San Guang exclaimed, “If I don’t go into the hole, how would I know where he has gone?”

Before Li Da Zui could answer, suddenly someone was heard yelling from the top, “Third Sister, Third Sister, where’s everyone?”

Murong Shan Shan furrowed her brows and said with a smile, “It’s Zhang Qing, why has this little imp arrive only at this time.”

She called out, and as she was calling out, Little Fairy has already rushed in, her face flushed and full of excitement. She dashed in and grabbed Murong Shan Shan’s hands and panted as she smiled and said, “I saw a person… I saw a person…” Murong Shan Shan smiled and said, “You need not be so excited upon seeing a person. I see tens and hundreds of people everyday.”

“But this person… this person…” She suddenly smiled mysteriously and rolled her eyes, “You will never guess who this person is.”

Murong Shan Shan can’t help but ask, “Who is it?” She had just finished asking the question, when her heart suddenly lurched and she was excited as well and asked, “Could it be that you’ve seen Xiao Yu’er!” Once these words were out, everyone became excited and all of them stared at Little Fairy.

Little Fairy smiled and said, “That’s right, it’s Xiao Yu’er. All of you came here to look for him, but he is already on our boat.”

Xuanyuan San Guang jumped up again and asked hoarsely, “Really.”

Little Fairy turned her eyes at him and continued, “The feast has never ended,

because we were waiting for all of you to come back and eat. Who would have expected that by noon, you still have not returned but a few people suddenly emerged from under the water and jumped up the boat. Without saying anything at all, they started eating and drinking, and one of them didn't even bother using chopsticks, and that is Xiao Yu'er."

Xuanyuan San Guang laughed loudly, "Old Man Ge, I'm afraid he's crazed with hunger."

Hua Wu Que can't help but ask, "Besides him, who else was there!"

Little Fairy smiled and said, "Naturally there's the Floral Princesses, I really did not expect them to look so young? The material their clothes are made of are really strange as well. They jumped out from the water but it was not wet at all. Xiao Yu'er looked totally disheveled but the two of them still looked so regal, like fairies."

Murong Shan Shan smiled and said, "So it seems that, your nickname should be given to them instead."

Little Fairy blinked her eyes, and continued, "Together with them, was another girl, with a large head, not pretty at all but very close to Xiao Yu'er."

Once these words were spoken, everyone can't help but feel perplexed, and their eyes unconsciously drifted towards Tie Xin Lan. Tie Xin Lan chewed on her lips, not daring to lift her head at all.

However Tie Zhan fumed, "This lad has the audacity to be close with another woman, is my daughter not comparable to that large brained ugly woman?"

Little Fairy laughed, "At first I was secretly sniggering as well, after all that choosing, how did Xiao Yu'er end up with a person like that. But the more I see the girl, the more magical she seems to be, every look and every smile, every movement of hers, there's no flaw in them at all and even my heart was fluttering."

Tie Zhan was even more hopping mad and was shouting and screaming. Murong Shan Shan looked at Little Fairy, feeling a little perplexed. Only a woman will understand a woman, so Little Fairy's feelings towards Xiao Yu'er, Murong Shan Shan totally understood.

She thought that when Little Fairy sees Xiao Yu'er being close to another woman, she will certainly feel uncomfortable, and will certainly say that woman is ugly.

But who would have expected that Little Fairy would actually describe that lady so well that she's like a rarity. Murong Shan Shan looked at her, perplexed as to why she has suddenly changed.

She did not know that Little Fairy is now in love, it's the sweetest, luckiest time for her now, and she is filled with warmth for everyone else, and doesn't think of anyone as being hateful anymore.

The Eldest Murong Sister rolled her eyes, and looking at her husband, she said gently, "Since we have esteemed guests at our boat, we better return quickly?" She sought her husband's approval for everything she does, because she knows that he will never object.

Tie Zhan jumped up as well and said, "That's right, we'll go now, we want to see how bold that lad is."

Xiao Nu Shi said nonchalantly as well, "It is said that the Floral Princesses maintain their youth very well, we want to take a look as well."

Mi Shi Ba added, "I don't believe that their martial arts is unparalleled in the world."

Xuanyuan San Guang smiled and wondered, "It's been so long, I wonder if Xiao Yu'er is looking older now."

Some of them wanted to see the Floral Princesses, some wanted to see Xiao Yu'er, and there are also some who wanted to take a look at that 'big headed

beauty' and how she managed to mesmerize Xiao Yu'er. They may all have different reasons, but they're all anxious to return to the boat.

Only Hua Wu Que, although he is even more anxious than the rest to see the Floral Princesses and Xiao Yu'er, but once he thought of the fact that when he sees Xiao Yu'er he will unavoidably have to fight, he wish again that he will never see Xiao Yu'er again.

Suddenly Little Fairy said, "I have not finished my words , don't be in a hurry to go yet."

Murong Shan Shan laughed, "Stop trying to be secretive, just tell us quickly."

Little Fairy's eyes gleamed and she said, "Besides the Floral Princesses, there's another esteemed guest on our boat. This esteemed guest's reputation is not below that of the Floral Princesses, do you know who he is?"

Before she could finish her words, everyone had already guessed who it is, because in the whole world, only one other person can have the same standing as the Floral Princesses. Everyone can't help but cry out unanimously, "Yan Nan Tian! Hero Yan Nan Tian!"

End of Chapter 118

Chapter 108

Chapter 119

Once the name ‘Yan Nan Tian’ was heard, Du Jiao Jiao, Li Da Zui and the rest immediately wished that wings would sprout out of their backs and quickly fly thousands of miles away. Even the Murong sisters’ expressions changed.

Mi Shi Ba and Xu Zi Ya exchanged a look and Mi Shi Ba spoke up, “I did not expect the Floral Princesses and Yan Nan Tian would all be there.”

Xu Zi Ya added, “We’ve spent so much effort looking for them, and there they are right in front of us.”

Gui Tong Zi said, “I wonder what the scene was like when the Floral Princesses and Yan Nan Tian meet, I think it must have been interesting.”

Once everyone thought of the meeting between the two greatest martial artist of the era, they can’t help but feel excited and at the same time upset that they can’t witness it.

Xiao Nu Shi can’t help but ask, “Does the Floral Princesses recognize Yan Nan Tian?”

Little Fairy replied, “I don’t think they recognize him, but once Yan Nan Tian went up the boat, everyone seems to already know who he is, because the air that he exudes, no one would be able to imitate that.”

Gui Tong Zi said icily, “Others may not want to imitate him anyway.”

Little Fairy smiled and said, “The strange thing is, it seems that Xiao Yu’er has not seen Yan Nan Tian before as well, but once Yan Nan Tian went up the boat, he stared unwaveringly at him.”

Xuanyuan San Guang asked, “What about Xiao Yu’er?”

Little Fairy replied, “Xiao Yu’er was staring at him as well, and unconsciously stood up. He walked over step by step, and kept mumbling ‘very good, very good, very good…’.” Murong Shan Shan guffawed and smiled, “The two words very good, you only have to say it once.”

Little Fairy continued, “But Hero Yan said it more than a dozen times, his eyes filled with tears that was almost spilling out. Xiao Yu’er did not say anything as well but just knelt down. Yan Nan Tian took his hands and said, I know almost everything that you have done, you have not shamed your father.”

As she said these, her eyes were teary as well, obviously she was extremely touched by all these. Everyone was gathered around her, and followed her as she walked outside, unconsciously enraptured by what she said, and unknowingly walked out of that cave as well.

Little Fairy continued, “The Floral Princesses were at the side looking at them icily. After a long time, the elder Princess said coldly, very good, we finally meet.”

Little Fairy said, “After a long moment, Hero Yan turned around to look at her and said, we should have met twenty years ago. The elder Princess said with a cold laugh, are you complaining it’s too late? Hero Yan then looked heavenward and heaved a long sigh.” As she said these, she heaved a long sigh as well.

Murong Shan Shan can’t help but ask, “What did Hero Yan say?”

Little Fairy sighed, “It was as if he wanted to sigh out all the suffering and depression for the last twenty years all in one breath. Later he said, since I am not yet dead, it’s still not too late.”

Xuanyuan San Guang and seven, eight more others can’t help but asked at the

same time, “What happened then?”

Little Fairy said, “By then they have already brandished their swords, as if they are getting ready to strike any time. But because of their status, they cannot just fight like that. I was feeling anxious, not knowing what it will be like when these two highly skilled pugilists start fighting. However, Ren Yu dragged me to a corner and told me to hurry here and inform all of you to go back quickly.”

Once she mentioned Gu Ren Yu, her gaze unconsciously revealed a gentle smile, and she added, “He said, if you miss this once in a life time duel, you will surely regret it for the rest of your life.”

Gui Tong Zi exclaimed, “More that regret for the rest of my life, I think I will never be able to sleep again in future.”

Xuanyuan San Guang said, “I just hope that they won’t really fight.”

Little Fairy asked, “Why?”

Xuanyuan San Guang sighed, “When two tigers fight, one will surely be injured, or even both might be injured. The consequences of this duel is unimaginable, we’d rather not see this duel.”

Hua Wu Que gave him a look of gratitude. He knows once this duel start, there will not be an end if one party is not dead, then no matter who wins or loses, the enmity between him and Xiao Yu’er will certainly deepen, and unfortunately may only end with one of their deaths, never to be resolved.

After a while, Xu Zi Ya also sighed and said, “If the both of them really end up severely injured, that would really be a pity.”

Xiao Nu Shi said with a smile, “You wish that they will wait to have a duel with you, right?” Xu Zi Ya said nonchalantly, “Don’t you wish to try that new move ‘Eighteen Changes of Nüwa’ of yours?”

Xiao Nu Shi gave a light sigh and said, “A pity that from the way they say it, the

enmity seems to be very deep. Since Yan Nan Tian has waited twenty years, and now that they've met, he won't give up."

Xu Zi Ya sighed as well, "Once these two people start fighting, I'm afraid no one in the world will be able to separate them."

By the time they returned to the riverbank, the tables and chairs in the tents have already been removed, leaving only the paper decorations and couplets, swaying lightly with the river breeze. Compared to the feast the night before, the scene looked even more desolate. There is no never-ending feast in the world, if one knows such desolation will happen now, then why be so anxious to find out the outcome then? Under the empty tent, there is now a large group of people making a circle, looking on at some interesting thing. Could it be that Yan Nan Tian and the Floral Princess is now fighting within the circle? Xuanyuan San Guang was the first to rush over, thinking of separating the crowd and squeezing himself in but once these people saw them coming back, they were so frightened that they scattered. The Floral Princesses were not in there at all, neither could Yan Nan Tian or Xiao Yu'er be seen.

Where are they? Could it just be a joke made by Little Fairy? But Little Fairy was the first to cry out, "Hey, where are they? Xiao Man, where have they gone? Where is Master Gu?"

Xiao Man was originally Murong Shan Shan's personal maid, but when Little Fairy arrived, she served Little Fairy. She was bright and witty, and can talk very eloquently. But Little Fairy's questions are really too quick, and too many.

Xian Man exhaled first before she rolled her eyes and said, "After Miss left, that Yan… Hero Yan went over to sit with that Master Xiao Yu'er for a drink. The two of them drank continuously and talked continuously. I only saw that as they talked, they would suddenly laugh loudly, and as they talk, they would suddenly sigh continuously. That lady with the family name Su was pouring the wine for them with a smile, but every time she turned her head away, she would quietly wipe the tears from her eyes.

Naturally Little Fairy knows that they were reminiscing about the happiness and sadness, joining and partings that had happened, the things they encountered but she still can't help but ask, "What were they talking about?"

Xiao Man replied, “They were not speaking very loudly, there were some words which I could not hear at all, and there were some words which I heard but I do not understand at all.”

Little Fairy chided her laughingly, “You, look how much capability you have, it’s not even a lot.”

Xiao Man lowered her head and said, “Although I could not hear what they said, but by just looking at them, I don’t know why but I felt a sourness in my heart, and felt like weeping.”

Once Xuanyuan San Guang thought of how Xiao Yu’er and Yan Nan Tian met, he can’t help but feel a pain in his heart, and shouted, “That’s right. Old Man Ge, although I did not hear what they said as well, I wanted to weep too.”

Little Fairy stared at him, and continued asking Xiao Man, “When they were talking, what about the Floral Princesses?”

Xiao Man replied, “The Floral Princesses were sitting at another table, not looking at them, not impatient either. They seem to know that once Hero Yan finish his words, he will look for them.”

Everyone exchanged glances, in their heart secretly exclaiming, because they can already tell that Yan Nan Tian is adamant on having a death duel with the Floral Princesses, that’s why he’s giving his last instructions to Xiao Yu’er.

Xiao Man said, “They seemed to have endless things to talk about, especially that Master Xiao Yu’er, he was talking continuously. I’ve never seen such talkative men before, they’re really like old grannies.”

Xuanyuan San Guang sighed, “Little girl, you do not know, this is because he has seen through Yan Nan Tian’s intention, that’s why he deliberately talked a lot to delay the time…”

Xiao Man replied, “So this means that, Hero Yan surely can see through his

intention.”

Xuanyuan San Guang agreed.

Xiao Man said, “Because Hero Yan suddenly stood up, slapped Xiao Yu’er’s shoulder and said with a loud laugh, ‘Your Uncle Yan has always won every single battle, you need not worry.”

Xu Zi Ya laughed coldly, “Won every single battle, what a big boast.”

Xuanyuan San Guang laughed icily as well, “If it was others who said it, I will certainly think that he’s boasting, but the words said by Yan Nan Tian, no one will object.”

Xu Zi Ya did not continue talking, but only ‘humphed’.

Xiao Man continued, “Master Xiao Yu’er looked at Hero Yan, as if he wanted to say something, but by then the Floral Princesses have already stood up and walked out. Hero Yan immediately followed them out. Although they did not say a single word, but I don’t know why my heart felt so anxious that it’s almost jumping out of my throat.”

She was already very eloquent, with a crisp, clear voice and now that she knows that many people are listening to her, she put in even more effort in her narration. Everyone was concentrating on her words, and can’t help feeling anxious as well, as if they are witnessing for themselves the two greatest martial artists of the era, standing erect at the banks of the river, preparing for a death duel! The river breeze was blowing, the earth seems to be filled with a murderous intent.

Xiao Man shivered, and shrunk her head before continuing, “But after they walked out, the did not start fighting immediately. The two of them only stood far away facing each other, you looking at me and I looking at you.”

Xu Zi Ya asked, “Yan Nan Tian has no weapons?”

Xiao Man replied, “No, neither of them has any.”

Xu Zi Ya furrowed his brow and mumbled, “I’ve long heard that Yan Nan Tian’s sword skill is unparalleled in the world, so why didn’t he use something he has an advantage over? Why didn’t he use a sword to fight? Or could it be that after all these years he has learnt a set of fist styles that he is confident of winning Floral Palace’s palm styles?”

It must be known that the Floral Palace’s palm styles and internal energy rules the world, so he does not say that Yan Nan Tian has also mastered a ‘palm style’ but used the words ‘fist styles’ instead.”

Because he thinks that there can’t possibly be another palm style that can be comparable to the Floral Palace’s, and also his area of expertise is not in palm styles.

Xiao Man continued, “Although they were fighting with their bare hands, but it seemed even more dangerous than any other weapon used, as if they only need to make one wrong move and they will immediately be able to tell who will live or die.”

Xiao Nu Shi took a look at Xu Zi Ya and said with a smile, “This little lady does know her stuff.”

Xiao Man chewed her lips and smiled at her, before continuing, “I was so nervous looking at them, and I thought of begging Master Gu to go over and ask them to stop fighting. But Master Gu said that although they have not really started fighting then, but their energy and concentration were all focused. Others can forget about asking them to stop, because once they walk over, they will be felled by the energy being emitted by them.”

Xiao Nu Shi took a glance at Little Fairy, either unwittingly or purposely, and smiled, “This Master Gu is also someone who knows his stuff.”

Xiao Man said, “Master Gu was whispering to me, but I don’t know how that Master Xiao Yu’er heard as well, and suddenly walked over and told Master Gu, ‘do you really think that no one can separate them?”

Little Fairy furrowed her brows, “What is that little imp up to again?”

Xiao Man continued, “Master Gu, on seeing him, is already feeling lost, and kept on nodding his head, so that Master Xiao Yu’er said, ‘Do you dare to have a bet with me?”

Little Fairy said anxiously, “He’s an imp, but Master Gu is an honest man, how can he bet with him?”

Xiao Man replied, “Master Gu did not want to bet initially, but Master Xiao Yu’er said… said…” Little Fairy asked, “Said what?”

Xiao Man lowered her head, “He said, ‘I’ve long known that Sister Gu would not dare to bet with me, forget it then!”

Xuanyuan San Guang chortled, “Excellent, excellent. I didn’t expect Xiao Yu’er to have learnt how a gambler can lure others to gamble, with such provocation, that Sister Gu will have to bet even if he didn’t want to.”

Little Fairy stared hardly at him again, and Xiao Man said with a sigh, “That’s right, Master Gu really gambled with him.”

Little Fairy’s face blushed with anxiety and she stamped her feet, “How can he not hold his temper, what were they betting on?”

Xiao Man replied, “That Xiao Yu’er said, ‘I only have to say one thing, and I can make the Floral Princess stop. Naturally Uncle Yan won’t be able to fight alone.’ Naturally Master Gu did not believe him.”

Xiao Nu Shi replied, “Not to mention Master Gu not believing, even I do not believe it. I will bet on this as well.”

Xiao Man sighed again and said, “Then you would have lost as well.”

Others were only anxious to find out what it is that Xiao Yu'er said that could make the Floral Princess stop, but Little Fairy was only anxious about what is the thing that Gu Ren Yu lost. Since Xiao Man can become the personal maid of a lady from a wealthy family, naturally she has learnt since young how to look out for her mistress's moods and how to flatter them.

Therefore she did not say anything else, but first told her, "That Master Xiao Yu'er said, if he lost, Master Gu can do anything to him, but if Master Gu loses, he wants Master Gu to do one thing for him."

Little Fairy stammered, "Do… do what thing?"

Xiao Man smiled condescendingly, "He did not say at that time, but when he said it later, I did not hear it."

Little Fairy stamped her foot, "I said you were useless, and you indeed were, you don't know anything at all."

Xiao Nu Shi smiled and said, "Actually she already know quite a lot of things."

Xuanyuan San Guang said, "That's right, tell us quickly what that Master Xiao Yu'er said. After that Floral Princess heard his words, did she really stop immediately?"

Xiao Man replied, "Xiao Yu'er only spoke loudly to the other Floral Princess, 'A pity, oh a pity. When I duel with Hua Wu Que, I'm afraid your sister won't have the chance to see it."

Xiao Nu Shi asked, "After he said these words, the Floral Princess really stopped?"

Xiao Man replied, "She stopped immediately. I was feeling perplexed as well, and does not know what's going on."

Xiao Nu Shi exclaimed in surprise, "Why must she witness the duel between Xiao Yu'er and Hua Wu Que? Could it be that this duel will be even more exciting

than the duel between her and Yan Nan Tian?”

Xu Zi Ya however furrowed his brows and said, “What amazing skills have that Yan Nan Tian learnt? That can make the Floral Princess hold her hand?”

Xiao Man clarified, “It’s not Hero Yan who made her stop, it was that Master Xiao Yu’er.”

Murong Shan Shan chided, “Silly lass, don’t talk so much.”

However, Xiao Nu Shi smiled and said, “If the Floral Princess is confident of winning, after her duel, she can still witness the duel between Xiao Yu’er and Hua Wu Que, and so she won’t have stopped, right?”

Xiao Man thought about it for a while, and finally lowered her head with a smile, “That’s right, I really am a silly lass.”

It must be known that the Floral Princess stopped, naturally it’s because when she and Yan Nan Tian was at a standoff, she has already realized that Yan Nan Tian’s power is deeply profound, and she really can’t be sure of winning.

But Xuanyuan San Guang was only concerned about Xiao Yu’er, and can’t be bothered about anything else, so he shouted then, “Where is Master Xiao Yu’er now!”

Xiao Man replied, “Hero Yan and the Floral Princess made a deal, every day at dawn, they will meet at the peak of the mountain, until the Floral Princess finds that Hua… Master Hua. After that Hero Yan left with Master Xiao Yu’er.”

Xuanyuan San Guang asked, “What about the Floral Princess then?”

Xiao Man replied, “Naturally they went to look for that Master Hua. For all you know they will be back soon, because Master Gu has already told them that Master Hua has left with everyone else.”

However, Little Fairy was only concerned about Gu Ren Yu, so she interrupted, “Then where has Master Gu gone?”

Xiao Man replied, “Master Gu lost the bet, and has left to attend to Master Xiao Yu’er’s matter.”

Little Fairy stamped her feet, “What good things can that mischief ask him to do? Why did he have to go?” She was so anxious that her tears are almost falling.

Murong Shan Shan looked at her, suddenly smiled and said gently, “Sister, congratulations.”

Little Fairy pouted, “I’m almost crazy with worry, what are you congratulating about?”

Murong Shan Shan said with a laugh, “Sister Gu is not anyone to you, why must you be so anxious on his behalf?” Little Fairy pouted even harder and said, “It’s not that he does not have a name, why must you people always call him Sister Gu?”

Murong Shan Shan giggled, “The name Sister Gu was given to him by you, and now you’re not letting others address him as such, why is that so? We’ve not met for only a day, have the status of your relationship changed?”

Little Fairy lowered her head, her face blushing, “We… we…” Murong Shan Shan gently pinched her face and chided with a laugh, “You mischievous lass, still trying to hide from us, do you think you can run away from giving this wedding feast?”

Murong Shuang suddenly commented, “Since they were not fighting, then what were all of you looking at in a circle earlier? Could it be that a flower suddenly sprung up from the ground?”

Xiao Man laughed and said, “If it was a flower springing up from the ground it won’t be so strange, the strange thing is that a bun suddenly sprung up.”

Even Murong Shuang was surprised and exclaimed, “Bun?”

And she saw on the flat ground, there really was a little mound of soil, looking just like a bun.

Murong Shan Shan laughed, “Silly lass, what’s so nice to look about this?”

Xiao man replied, “Madam, you do not know, this is not only strange, but is extremely strange.”

She suddenly run over and stood on the mound, saying “The Floral Princess was standing here earlier. When she was standing here, it was originally a flat piece of ground, but shortly after she stood on it, the ground under her feet slowly rose. This piece of land is like yeast, once she stood on it, it expanded like a bun.”

Everyone thought the way she described it was hilarious, but at the same time can’t help feeling startled. Yu Zi Ya, Mi Shi Ba and the rest were even more excited, and they suddenly rushed forward at the same time, bent down to look at that soil bun. They kept looking and looking, as if a flower was really growing out of the soil.

Xiao Man smiled at Murong Shan Shan, as if she’s saying, “You say that I’m a silly lass, but those old men and old women, weren’t they showing an interest in it as well?”

The expression on Yu Zi Ya and the others’ faces became more and more surprised, and they all muttered, “It’s really true… but how is it possible?… Never expected that there would be someone who can master it.”

The rest of the people can’t help but squeeze forward all together, and realized that on the mound there was a pair of footprints, but the footprints are not sunken in, instead, it was protruding by about an inch or more. When highly skilled pugilists are fighting, all the energy in their body is concentrated, and usually there will be an indent of the print on the ground so this is nothing strange. But the footprint is not indented, but protruding instead, now this is a

rarely seen thing.

Murong Shan Shan's eyes gleamed, and she asked, "Could it be that the Floral Princess have mastered a kind of strange skill?"

Yu Zi Ya sighed, "That's right, although this martial arts she has mastered is not unprecedented, but it's enough to rule this era. Can everyone see the two footprints on top here?"

He also knows that everyone will surely be able to see it, so he continued on his own, "This is because when she was gathering her energy, not only did she release it out, but she sucked it into herself, so no matter what touches her, it will be sucked towards her like a magnet."

Murong Shan Shan's expression changed and she asked, "So this means that, she will never use up her energy, but will only increase it, won't she be using up a lot?" Yu Zi Ya replied, "That's exactly the case. When she is fighting with someone, the more energy she uses, the other party's energy will gradually be depleted. Therefore even if a person who is on par with her duels with her, in the end that person will still lose without a doubt."

Xiao Nu Shi interrupted, "There's a kind of 'Clear Jade Skill', when one masters the ninth level of the skill, this will happen, because the energy in her body can now become like a whirlwind. No matter what touches her, it will be swept in by this whirlwind, just like drowning person seeing a whirlpool in the water.

Murong Shan Shan said, "In that case, once one masters this skill, won't he become unrivalled in the world?"

Xiao Nu Shi, Mi Shi Ba, Yu Zi Ya and the rest exchanged glances, the looks on their faces despondent. Yu Zi Ya said with a long sigh, "That's right. She is already unrivalled in the world, we have all come in vain."

Murong Shan Shan said, "Since she is now unrivalled in the world, naturally Yan Nan Tian would not be her match, so why is she worried about Yan Nan Tian? Or could it be that Yan Nan Tian has mastered this skill as well?"

Xiao Nu Shi replied, “It can’t be. The person who masters this skill, his internal energy will certainly become a whirlwind, once the energy become a whirlwind, there will definitely be a suction force.”

Yu Zi Ya explained, “This is the most marvelous aspect of this skill, but most people in the martial arts world do not understand this reasoning. Precisely because they do not know where this suction force comes from, therefore everyone thought it’s a demonic trick. But they do not know that it is in fact the epitome of orthodox internal teachings.”

Murong Shan Shan asked, “But… since it is impossible that she loses, then why did she stop the duel suddenly?”

The expressions on Yu Zi Ya and the rest were somber, and Xiao Nu Shi said, “There is only one explanation, which will be Yan Nan Tian has also mastered a kind of mysterious skill, which can be comparable to her ‘Clear Jade Skill’.”

Murong Shan Shan asked, “Could there be another martial arts in the world which can go against ‘Clear Jade Skill’?”

Xiao Nu Shi replied, “Wedding Robe Skill. This skill is named after with the meaning of ‘making wedding robes for others’.”

Murong Shan Shan said, “Since it’s wedding robes for others, then there won’t be any use of it for himself?”

Xiao Nu Shi explained, “That’s right, because after this skill is mastered, the internal energy will be heated like a furnace. Not only can one not use it, but he must be tortured by it day and night. That kind of pain is not something an ordinary person can endure, so he can only pass on the internal energy to others.” She sighed, and continued, “But in order to master this Wedding Robe Skill, one would need at least twenty years of hard practice, and who would be able to bear to give away to others internal energy that they have cultivated with much difficulty?”

Yu Zi Ya said, “That’s why there was a saying in the martial arts realm in the past, if you want to harm a person, then you’ll give him the teachings of

Wedding Robe Skill, and let him suffer for the rest of his life."

Murong Shan Shan said, "So this means that if Hero Yan mastered Wedding Robe Skill, then not only is he unable to fight with the Floral Princess, but it's likely that he would have died of suffering as well."

Yu Zi Ya explained, "After the Wedding Robe Skill has been passed to a second person, naturally he will be at his end, but the second person will benefit greatly from it."

Murong Shan Shan said, "Could Elder mean that, someone mastered the Wedding Robe Skill and transferred it to Hero Yan."

Yu Zi Ya replied, "Or else, Wedding Robe Skill, after it has been transferred, will lose a lot of its prowess as well, and it then cannot be on par with Clear Jade Skill."

The more Murong Shan Shan thought about it, the more she could not understand, and took a glance at everyone. However, the rest of them were waiting for her to continue asking, because not only is she eloquent, but her reflexes are quick, the questions she ask are all straight to the main point. The rest do not have a chance to interrupt at all, so they might as well let her be the only one asking.

Luckily at this time Yu Zi Ya have already continued, "It must be know that only the must intelligent person can create a unique martial arts skill. The person who created this Wedding Robe Skill, is even more of a genius, unparalleled in the world. If this kind of martial arts can only benefit others, then why did he spend so much effort creating it?"

No one knew the real meaning behind his words, so they waited for him to continue.

Yu Zi Ya continued, "Those in the world only knows that they must not learn the Wedding Robe Skill, but they do not know that it actually can be learnt. It's just that when one is learning this skill, there is a secret tactic to doing it."

Murong Shan Shan finally found the chance to ask her question, and immediately asked, “What secret tactic?”

End of Chapter 119

Chapter 109

Chapter 120

Yu Zi Ya explained the way to master the Wedding Robe Skill to everyone, “Because this skill is too extreme, so when one has mastered about sixty to seventy percent, he will have to destroy all the energy he has gathered, and start again from scratch.”

Xiao Nu Shi laughed and said, “It’s just like a person eating walnuts, who actually swallowed the walnut whole with the shell and choked to death. Someone next to him saw and said that walnuts are inedible, but he does not know that not only are walnuts edible, but its also very delicious. It’s just that when he’s eating walnuts, he sould have removed the hard outer shell.”

Mi Shi Ba added, “This is called, to use what is beneficial, one must first remove its obstacles.”

Yu Zi Ya replied, “After such a setback with the Wedding Robe Skill, and once it has been re-mastered, the sharp edges of the energy will be worn away, but the force of the energy will not reduce at all. The person who learns it has learnt this skill twice, and will naturally be very familiar with the workings of this energy, so not only can he execute this with the greatest force, but he can release and retrieve the energy at will. But to master sixty to seventy percent of the Wedding Robe Skill will need many years of hard work as well, and who would be able to bear to destroy so many years of hard work?”

Xiao Nu Shi added, “That’s why unless the person has extremely courageous and persevering, he will never master this skill.”

Only now did Gui Tong Zi sigh and say, “Obviously this Yan Nan Tian is a rare talent. Luckily we did not try and duel with him, or else we might meet with

misfortune again.”

Actually they only know part of the truth. When Yan Nan Tian was learning this martial arts, he did not have the intention of destroying his skills and learning it again. His character is strong-willed and stubborn, and thinks that things that others cannot do, he will surely be able to do. Therefore he was intent on using his own strength to overcome the Wedding Robe Skill, but who would have expected that he has not yet mastered the skill but met with misfortune at the Valley of Evil, and all his martial arts were crippled.

Heaven helps those who are kind. Du Jiao Jiao, Li Da Zui and the rest had wanted to kill him, but instead they helped him greatly.

They used the strength of seven to eight people to destroy Yan Nan Tian’s internal energy, and akin to using a whip to train a dog, after the Wedding Robe Skill was destroyed by them, it lost all its sharp edges. But this skill was meant to be destroyed, and re-learnt again, so after it was destroyed, the roots of the skill remained so that when the person practice it again, he will improve by leaps and bounds.

It’s like seven to eight people chopping off a tree with their combined strength, and they even saw off the roots of this tress, but they do not know there are still roots under the soil. If this was not so, even if Yan Nan Tian did not die, he would be not much different from a handicapped person, so how could he have recovered all his energy and in fact became even better than before.

Murong Shan Shan thought about it for a while and can’t help but ask again, “But how do all of you know that Hero Yan has already mastered the Wedding Robe Skill?”

Yu Zi Ya explained, “When you’re dueling, all the energy in your body will be concentrated, and your footprints will be likely left on the ground, but where Yan Nan Tian has stood, there was not even half a footprint there. Can it be said then that his energy is not as good as yours!”

Murong Shan Shan laughed, “If Hero Yan’s energy is not as good as mine, the Floral Princess would have killed him long ago.”

Yu Zi Ya replied, “Exactly, because Yan Nan Tian can now control his energy at will, so when it’s not time to be used, not a single trace will be leaked, that’s why there’s no mark on the area he stood on.”

Xiao Nu Shi said, “And also because his energy is now joined into one with his body, no external force will be able to shake it. So although the Floral Princess has mastered the Clear Jade Skill, she is unable to use it on him.”

Murong Shan Shan sighed and said, “After hearing what Elders have said, we’ve suddenly found new understanding.”

Suddenly Xiao Man was heard shouting, “Master Gu, Master Gu, come in quickly, someone is going crazy thinking about you.”

Everyone lifted their heads and looked over, and saw that Gu Ren Yu is really walking over.

Little Fairy stared fiercely at Xiao Man, but she can’t help but burst into laughter. If it was someone else, that person might feel shy, but she couldn’t care less, and actually stepped forward, stamped her feet and said, “Where have you been, why didn’t you leave a message.”

Gu Ren Yu blushed again, and stammered, “I… I went to do something for Xiao Yu’er.”

Little Fairy said, “What is it that he needs others to do, I’m afraid you have been tricked by him again.”

Gu Ren Yu sighed, “It’s only now that I understand that we’ve all misunderstood him, he’s really not a bad person.”

Little Fairy blinked, “How did he make you change your mind? That little imp is quite capable.”

Gu Ren Yu replied, “Jiang Bie He and his son were thinking of tricking Hero Yan,

and the deliberately pretended not to know each other so that Jiang Yu Lang can find a chance to save his father, and then find a way to kill Hero Yan."

Little Fairy said with hatred, "I've long known that father and son were nothing good."

Gu Ren Yu continued, "But after what Hero Yan has encountered in the Valley of Evil, he is no longer the same person he was before. Very quickly he saw through their ploy so he heavy handedly destroyed their martial arts first before trapping them in a cave so that Xiao Yu'er can personally avenge his parents."

Little Fairy clapped and laughed, "I did not expect that father and son would have a day like this. This news really makes one overjoyed."

Gu Ren Yu sighed, "But if it's not for Xiao Yu'er, who would have known that this father and son pair are such unscrupulous villains?"

Little Fairy replied, "That's right, in all his life, at least he did something good. But what is it that he wanted you to do then?"

Gu Ren Yu replied, "He wants me to release them."

Little Fairy exclaimed in surprise, "Release them?"

Gu Ren Yu replied, "That's right, not only does he want me to release them, but he wants me to find them a place where they can settle down. Because they are now crippled, they no longer have the will to live." He sucked in his breath and continued, "Besides, for people who roam the martial arts realm, they will surely have made enemies. If they know that they have lost their martial arts, they will certainly come to seek revenge, so naturally there's no way they can go back. That's why Xiao Yu'er wants me to arrange for them to work as gardeners at the Gu's family mansion, at least they will freeze or die of hunger, and need not fear people looking for them for revenge."

Little Fairy was stunned, "Jiang Bie He caused the death of his parents, not only is he not taking revenge personally, but he is afraid that others will seek

revenge on them. What is that little imp up to again?”

Gu Ren Yu explained, “Although Jiang Bie He has let his parents down, but he thinks that such a punishment is enough. He feels that ‘seeking revenge, an eye for an eye’, is not a very smart thinking. Those in the martial arts world have been led controlled by such a thinking, and have done so many silly things, so he’s determined not to follow in their steps.”

Little Fairy said, “A father’s revenge is comparable to heaven. He’s not going to avenge his father, can he still consider himself his son?”

Gu Ren Yu said, “He thinks that it’s not necessary to kill someone to consider that a revenge has been taken, and he has no wish to kill two useless, handicapped people. Maybe others will think that his thinking is wrong, but he feels that as long as he can answer to his conscience, he does not care what others think about him.”

Little Fairy asked, “You think…” Gu Ren Yu answered seriously, “I think that what he did was correct as well. The word ‘revenge’ has caused harm to countless people. Who knows how many people are dying everyday in the pugilistic world because of revenge. If everyone thinks the same way as Xiao Yu’er, I believe that everyone’s life will be a lot more peaceful.” He looked deep into Little Fairy’s eyes and said gently, “Heaven created men, not for the purpose of men killing one another, right?”

Little Fairy asked, “Then, why didn’t he release them himself?”

Gu Ren Yu replied, “He’s afraid that Hero Yan will not agree with his thinking, so he does not want Hero Yan to find out for the time being.”

Little Fairy said, “So he’s still up to his tricks, still lying to others.”

Gu Ren Yu replied, “That’s right, it’s true that he frequently tricks and lies to others, but his intent has always been kind. I think anyone who is wise will not think that his tricks are used wrongly.”

Little Fairy was stunned for a moment and said with a bitter smile, “He really is a strange person, and no one can figure out if he’s really a good man, or a bad one.”

Yu Zi Ya suddenly laughed, “Although I do not know him, and I do not know if he is good or bad, I know that if those in the pugilistic world are all like him, we need not run away to a far away deserted island.”

Xuanyuan San Guang clapped his hands and exclaimed, “Old Man Ge, that’s right, if there’s a few more bad people like him, I’d rather not touch any dice from now on.”

Murong Shan Shan suddenly smiled as well, “How can you do that, my sisters and I still want to look for you and have a good bet in future.”

Xuanyuan San Guang said, “I only said I won’t touch dice, but I didn’t say I won’t touch cards.”

Everyone can’t help but burst out laughing, after the tension of the past two nights, they are finally feeling a little relaxed now! Only Hua Wu Que, whose heart felt even heavier.

More and more, he could not bear to hurt Xiao Yu’er, he’d rather that he be killed by Xiao Yu’er. But he does not know, even if he doesn’t mind dying, Xiao Yu’er’s life would be even more miserable being alive. No one will be able to, after killing his own brother, and still be able to live peacefully. It is fated that they will have a miserable outcome.

It seems that no one will be able to change this outcome.

In the midst of chaos, no one noticed that Li Da Zui, Ha Ha’er, Du Sha, Du Jiao Jiao, Yin Jiu You, Bai Kai Xin have already escaped halfway.

Knowing that Yan Nan Tian has appeared, even with a knife pointed to their necks, they would never dare to go forward with the rest of the group.

Of course that Madam Bai is never an inch further away from Bai Kai Xin.

Bai Kai Xin was slapped earlier by Du Sha, and now half his face is swollen, his mouth squeezed to one side, fresh blood trickling out from the corner of his mouth.

Madam Bai suddenly spoke to Bai Kai Xin quietly, “Do you know why you’re always being bullied?”

“Because I met a bane like you.”

Madam Bai was not upset at all, but smiled instead and said, “It’s because they all have helpers, but you’re all alone. It’s difficult to fight four hands with two fists, and since you know this, why don’t you find a helper!”

Bai Kai Xin’s eyes shone, and immediately pulled Madam Bai aside. By now they have walked into the wilderness of the mountain, and Bai Kai Xin pulled her and hid at a niche in the mountain, whispering, “Your words have awaken me. After what you’ve said, I did think of a good helper.”

Madam Bai smiled, “Will you still call me a bane now?”

Bai Kai Xin replied, “No, no, look at your nose, I knew that you will bring luck to your husband.”

Madam Bai chided him with a laugh, “Stop flattering, tell me first who is that helper that you’re thinking of.”

Bai Kai Xin replied, “Amongst these people, Li Da Zui and I have long been loggerheads. Now Big Brother Du seems to be on his side as well. Both their martial arts is not bad, especially Big Brother Du. I could have asked Ha Ha’er to deal with them, but this fatty is even more slippery than a loach. If I find him, he may betray me once his head is turned.”

Madam Bai asked, “What about Du Jiao Jiao?”

Bai Kai Xin replied, “That neither man nor woman can’t do as well. She may look as if she’s on good terms with me, but she’s always been afraid of Big Brother Du. To ask her to go against Big Brother, she’d rather die than do it.”

Madam Bai laughed, “Maybe she has a secret relationship with Big Brother Du.”

Bai Kai Xin giggled, “That is damn right, so no matter how I see it, I can only persuade Yin Jiu You to partner me, and with you, we have three people. It’s enough to deal with the group of them.”

Madam Bai blinked her eyes and asked, “Do you have a way to persuade him?” Bai Kai Xin replied, “I didn’t initially, but now I do.” Bai Kai Xin continued with a smile, “This person has always liked to sneak around furtively looking into other people’s privacy in the dark, especially other couples ‘doing things’. Because he can no longer do it, so he can only get his kick by looking at others.”

Madam Bai rolled her eyes and laughed, “Could it be that you want to ‘do things’ with me here?”

Bai Kai Xin hugged her and laughed, “You’re damn right again. Once we start, he’ll be here soon after.”

Madam Bai giggled, “With someone looking at the side, I can’t do it.”

Bai Kai Xin chided her with a laugh, “You ****, do you think I do not understand, with someone peeping at the side, you get even more excited!”

He pushed her hard and said, “Move!”

Madam Bai bit his ears and panted, “Harder, good man, push harder…harder still… harder still…the harder the better.”

After a while, Bai Kai Xin suddenly laughed, “Yin Lao Jiu, if you want to look, you might as well come out and have a good look?”

Yin Jiu You was really behind a rock, laughing, “Good lad, you’ve married a correct wife, she really is something.”

Madam Bai panted as she laughed, “Do you want to come and have a go?”

Yin Jiu You laughed loudly, “No need no need, as long as you let me watch to my heart’s content, I will be grateful.”

Bai Kai Xin said, “That’s right, you better make yourself happy while you still can, if Yan Nan Tian finds you, it’ll be too late.”

Once the name ‘Yan Nan Tian’ was mentioned, Yin Jiu You’s expression changed, and he said icily, “So it’s that why you’re so intent on making yourself so happy now?”

Bai Kai Xin replied, “It’s all right with us, I have never harmed Yan Nan Tian, so I need not fear him, but you…” He laughed, and deliberately stopped talking.

Yin Jiu You’s face turned green and he was stunned for a moment, before he suddenly laughed, “You think that I’m afraid? I’m afraid Yan Nan Tian has already died in the hands of the Floral Princess, what need I fear?”

Bai Kai Xin chortled, “That’s right, that’s right. You really have nothing to fear, Yan Nan Tian’s martial arts is not worth even a damn cent, once he fights with the Floral Princess his head will have to move house.”

Yin Jiu You replied, “Yan Nan Tian’s martial arts may not be bad, but the Floral Princess…” Bai Kai Xin interrupted, “You only know that Yan Nan Tian has not practiced martial arts for many years, but you forget that he could have mastered an extremely formidable skill in these few years, or else why would he dare to come and look for the Floral Princess? Do you think he’s sick of living?” Yin Jiu You was stunned, the expression on his face even more horrible.

Bai Kai Xin added, “Besides, the Floral Princess have been starving in that cave for a few days. If man is iron, rice is steel, no matter how capable they are, they will not be able to stand it. Even if they have eaten something now, but their

martial arts will certainly be discounted by at least twenty to thirty percent. If they were to fight with Yan Nan Tian now… from what I see I'm afraid they will likely lose."

Yin Jiu You was stunned for a moment, and said, "So what if he does not die. If I can't fight him, can I not hide from him then?"

Bai Kai Xin said, "When Yan Nan Tian wants to create trouble for a person, I've never heard that the person will be able to run away. Besides, for a person to live until fifty, sixty years old but still in fear of his own life the whole day, hiding here and there, isn't that such a pitiful life."

Yin Jiu You gritted his teeth and asked with hatred, "What is the meaning of telling me all these!"

Bai Kai Xin replied nonchalantly, "I don't have any other meaning, but I just want to help you, so that Yan Nan Tian will not look for you anymore."

Yin Jiu You was moved and asked, "You have a plan?"

Bai Kai Xin closed his eyes and concentrated for a moment, before replying languidly, "From what I know, the person who struck against Yan Nan Tian was not you."

Yin Jiu You immediately said, "That's right, it's Li Da Zui who came up with that idea, to let Du Jiao Jiao masquerade as a corpse…" Bai Kai Xin clapped and exclaimed, "That it correct, only the two of them are the real culprits. Once Yan Nan Tian sees that the two of them are dead, his anger will be diminished by more than half, and he won't be so intent on going after other people to settle scores."

Yin Jiu You's eyes gleamed and asked, "You mean to tell me to kill them?"

Bai Kai Xin said, "Of course you can't do it alone, but with the help of my wife and me, and an ingenious plan, need we fear that they will not obediently offer their heads to us?"

Yin Jiu You replied icily in a low voice, “I think you’re doing this to avenge yourselves.”

Bai Kai Xin replied, “That’s not wrong at all, if I’m not doing this to avenge myself, why would I help you? I’m not even your father.”

Yin Jiu You laughed instead and mumbled, “I think these two have lived long enough as well, it’s not a bad thing if we send them on their way earlier.”

Bai Kai Xin exclaimed with joy, “Damn, you finally understand. I have not found the wrong person.”

Yin Jiu You smiled as well, “Damn, you’re not blind after all.”

Bai Kai Xin turned serious again and sighed, “But, if we strike now, Ha Ha’er will certainly watch from the side, but Big Brother Du will surely not agree and insist he helps out, then we’ll be in trouble.”

Yin Jiu You’s eyes shone and asked, “Can it be that you want to do Big Brother Du in as well!”

Bai Kai Xin smiled and said, “This is called, going all the way.”

Yin Jiu You smiled frostily, “But with the three of us thinking of pitting ourselves against the three of them, is akin to a fat pig knocking on the door, waiting for others to cart it out and slaughter it.”

Bai Kai Xin sighed, “You really are not knowledgeable at all, you don’t even know a little use of military strategies.”

Yin Jiu You was silent for a moment, then his eyes shone, and said “Do you mean…” Bai Kai Xin replied, “Attack their weak points while they are unprepared, and after that go in for the kill.”

Yin Jiu You asked, “But… what weakness does Big Brother Du have?” Bai Kai Xin replied, “His weakness is that he thinks he’s extraordinary, loves to be a hero, so it’s best that we use a woman to deal with him, because he keeps thinking that women are weaker.”

Madam Bai suddenly smiled, “Men who thinks that women are weaker, will surely meet with misfortune.”

Ha Ha’er, Du Jiao Jiao, Du Sha and Li Da Zui had also stopped in front. They felt that this area is secluded, so they can rest here for a while first. They know that from today onwards, they have to start being on the run endlessly again, and they also know that to be on the run in the long term, they would need a plan. But now they have no idea what to plan for at all.

Du Jiao Jiao suddenly said, “Do you think that Yan Nan Tian will definitely die in the hands of the Floral Princesses?”

Li Da Zui replied, “I think he’s more likely dead by now.”

Du Sha said icily, “I don’t think so. I’m well aware of Yan Nan Tian’s martial arts.”

He looked at his broken hand, his gaze reflecting a look of desolation.

Du Jiao Jiao added, “If Yan Nan Tian does not die, he will certainly not let us off. Where can we run? Are we returning to the Valley of Evil again?” They all know that they may be able to hide from others in the Valley of Evil, but they cannot hide from Yan Nan Tian there. But besides the Valley of Evil, they have nowhere else to go. For a moment, even the most talkative people like them were at a loss for words.

Without knowing how much time has passed, Li Da Zui furrowed his brows and asked, “Where has that harming others without benefit to oneself gone to? Is he up to something to harm others again?”

Du Sha said frostily, “I’m afraid he doesn’t have the guts for it!”

Du Jiao Jiao was about to say something when suddenly Madam Bai ran over in a stumble, her face streaked with tears. She looked around in a panic, ran towards Du Sha, knelt down and wailed, “Big Brother Du, I beg you… I beg that you save me!”

Du Sha furrowed his brows, “Save you? What’s the matter?”

Madam Bai wept as she replied, “I’ve just been married to him for less than a day, and he’s already thinking of abandoning me, and even wants to kill me. I am all alone, with no one to turn to, so I can only beg that Big Brother Du decide for me. I know that Big Brother Du will certainly be a fair judge.”

Du Sha indeed exclaimed furiously, “Since he has married you, how can he do such things.”

Li Da Zui immediately added, “That’s right. Even if he doesn’t like you, he can just divorce you, how can he kill you? I knew long ago that this lad has no conscience at all.”

Du Sha suddenly stood up and said angrily, “Where is that fellow, you come with me, and let’s see if he dares to touch even a finger of yours.”

Madam Bai smiled through her tears and said, “I’ve long known that Big Brother Du is a hero, he will never see a weak woman being bullied.”

She struggled to stand up from the ground, as if she can’t even stand steadily.

Du Sha furrowed his brows, “Are you already injured?” Madam Bai sighed and said quietly, “My whole body is already wounded because of his beatings, Big Brother Du, look.” She suddenly loosened her clothes, revealing her naked body.

Du Sha immediately closed his eyes and said, “There’s no need to look, wear your clothes quickly and follow me…” He has not finished his words when he suddenly felt a coldness in his chest. A sharp dagger is already stabbed into his chest.

Du Sha roared and the iron hook on his handicapped wrist flew out.

Once Madam Bai achieved her target, she rolled on the ground three to four feet away. She only felt the cool metal hook brushing the sensitive spot on her chest, and her face was shocked pale.

This change is too sudden. Li Da Zui, Du Jiao Jiao and Ha Ha'er never imagined that this woman would be so bold as to have the guts to attack Du Sha. Du Sha pulled out the dagger on his chest, fresh blood spurted out like an arrows. He wanted to leap forward but his strength is ebbing away, together with the flow of blood.

His hands which has killed so many is now stained with fresh blood, his own blood! Li Da Zui and Du Jiao Jiao both rushed over, thinking of holding him up but Du Sha shook their hands off, looked heavenward and heaved a long sigh, "I have been a hero all my life, but I did not expect that I'll die in the hands of this shameless s.lut."

Du Jiao Jiao gritted her teeth and said, "Big Brother Du, don't you worry, she will not live either!"

Du Sha replied, "Good, very good…" He suddenly smiled sadly and added, "If I have known this would happen, we might as well die in Yan Nan Tian's hands, at least he is a hero…" Once he said the word 'hero', this man who thought of himself as a hero collapsed. It seems that only at this point did Madam Bai remember about escape, and she rolled over on the ground and flipped herself up.

Li Da Zui shouted fiercely, "You're thinking of escaping?"

As he spoke, Yin Jiu You suddenly flew out from a rock behind like a spirit, and blocked Madam Bai's path! Without speaking a word, Madam Bai struck with three palm attacks.

But Yin Jiu You only extended his hand and he caught hold of her wrists, and chuckled, "If we let you run away today, can we still call ourselves 'Ten Evils'?"

Madam Bai gritted her teeth, “I’ve had enough of your bullying, just kill me. Anyway I have already avenged myself.”

Yin Jiu You laughed coldly, “Kill you, it’s not going to be that easy!”

He turned around and smiled at Li Da Zui, “I hear that human flesh must be cut from a living human to be really tasty, I’ll offer you this delectable dish then.”

Li Da Zui grinned fiendishly, “If I don’t cut her up into a thousand and eight hundred pieces, then my surname is not Li.”

Madam Bai laughed hysterically, “And I thought you really wanted to avenge Big Brother Du, but it turns out that you only want to eat my flesh. Come then, good son, come and eat your mother’s chest then. If I even furrow my brows, then consider it that you raised me.”

Du Jiao Jiao said icily, “This woman would not have the guts to strike on her own, it must be Bai Kai Xin who secretly ordered her.”

Madam Bai laughed loudly, “Do I need others to order me? To tell you the truth, that dastard Bai Kai Xin has died in my hands long ago, and is waiting for you to collect his corpse.”

Du Jiao Jiao’s eyes glimmered, and said “Don’t kill her so fast, let me go and take a look first.”

Li Da Zui smiled sinisterly, “Don’t worry, I guarantee that she won’t die even after three days and nights.” He picked up the dagger that was still stained with Du Sha’s fresh blood and walked towards Madam Bai step by step.

Ha Ha’er looked at him, and looked at Du Jiao Jiao who is now more than a hundred feet away, and said with a grin, “I wonder what Bai Kai Xin’s face will look like when he’s dead, I’d better go over and take a look at him.”

Before Li Da Zui could reach Madam Bai, she had already started shouting,

“Yin Jiu You, if you’re still human, then kill me. Don’t let this inhumane thing torture me, and I’ll be grateful to you even after I’ve become a ghost.”

Yin Jiu You chuckled, “Me human? Who said I’m human? I’m not human at all!”

Li Da Zui laughed loudly, “So you know how to be afraid as well. On the account that you killed Bai Kai Xin, I will cut you a hundred times less, but it won’t be anything less than a thousand and seven hundred cuts.”

Madam Bai wailed, “You beast, you…” Li Da Zui stood in front of her with one step and smiled sinisterly, “Actually I did not know where I should start my first cut from, but now I do. I’m going to cut your tongue first, so that a tongue wagging woman like you will now have a shorter tongue.”

The dagger in his hand is slicing over.

Who would have expected that right at this time, Yin Jiu You would suddenly release Madam Bai, and the two of them, one on either side sandwiching him. Before Li Da Zui can comprehend what is happening, he has received a palm blow under his left armpit from Madam Bai and a punch from Yin Jiu You under his right armpit and threw up fresh blood before collapsing onto the ground.

But Li Da Zui was not dead yet, and groaned, “You… where are you taking me? Why don’t you just kill me?”

Madam Bai said gently, “You want to cut me into one thousand and seven hundred pieces, so how can I bear to kill you now?” She lowered her body, her lips seems to be moving, and who knows what she whispered into Li Da Zui’s ears but his eyes suddenly shone.

Suddenly, Madam Bai threw up Li Da Zui’s body with both her hands, and Li Da Zui flew up thirty feet and actually grabbed Yin Jiu You’s hair and pressed him down at the bottom. Never in his dreams did Yin Jiu You would expect this to happen and in his shock, was about to punch Li Da Zui but Madam Bai’s Tiger Tail Silver Needle has already pierced his Xuehai acupoint. His body became numb immediately, unable to move at all.

Li Da Zui panted as he laughed sinisterly, “Since you know that the most poisonous thing in the world is a woman’s heart, then why did you believe a woman’s word. What good did you think it will benefit you if you’ve killed me?”

Yin Jiu You gurgled, and before he can say another word, his neck was broken by Li Da Zui. Therefore the remaining half of his ‘humanity’ became a ‘ghost’ as well, and a headless ghost at that. Li Da Zui looked at his bloody hands and suddenly started to laugh hysterically.

Madam Bai asked, “Master Li, I’ve allowed you to avenge yourself, how are you going to thank me?” Li Da Zui’s laughter stopped gradually, and he panted as he asked, “What do you really want?”

Madam Bai said gently, “It doesn’t matter if you’re grateful to me or not, but I’m going to help you with one more thing.”

Li Da Zui replied, “I beg of you, don’t help me with anything, I can’t take it any longer.”

Madam Bai laughed, “I must offer this help. The ‘Ten Evils’ have treated me so well, how can I not show you my gratitude properly?” She smiled and suddenly flew up with a kick, and knocked Li Da Zui unconscious.

End of Chapter 120

Chapter 110

Chapter 121

Bai Kai Xin is really dead.

He didn't look good when he was alive and now that he's dead he looks even more awful, like a dried up weasel, hung up high on a tree.

Du Jiao Jiao sighed and mumbled, "I've long known that this person won't come to a good end, but I didn't expect him to die so horribly. We helped him snatch Bai Lao Hu's woman and this has helped Bai Lai Hu greatly instead." As she talked, she has already walked to the bottom of the tree.

Suddenly Ha Ha'er shouted from behind, "Be careful, for all you know that fellow is faking it."

It might have been better if he had not said this, but once he uttered the sentence, Du Jiao Jiao naturally turned her head back to look at him. As soon as she was distracted, Bai Kai Xin's hands were already around her neck. Ha Ha'er shivered, and stood there numbly, as if he cannot take another step further.

Bai Kai Xin laughed icily, "Du Jiao Jiao, actually I have nothing against you and I had no intention to kill you, but this is Yin Lao Jiu's idea. After you've become a ghost, you'd better look for him, don't come and look for me."

Du Jiao Jiao's eyes rolled up, showing the whites, and not only is she unable to speak, she is unable to hear as well. With a somersault, Bai Kai Xin flipped down from the tree and looked at Ha Ha'er, saying with a laugh, "See, my ability to pretend to be dead is not any worse than Du Jiao Jiao. She only knows how to fake death to harm others all her life, but I'm afraid she'd never imagine that she

will die in the hands of a ‘faking dead man’.”

Ha Ha’er heaved a sigh and mumbled, “The world turns, it seems that this is really retribution. When I reincarnate, I will never dare to harm others in my next life again.”

Bai Kai Xin laughed loudly, “Ha Ha’er, are you turning over a new leaf as well? I’m afraid there’s only three to four people left in the Ten Evils, and we need you to bolster our strength, because one of you is enough to make up two to three people.”

Ha Ha’er looked pleasantly surprised, and asked, “You’re willing to let me off?”

Bai Kai Xin looked up, turned his palms up and said, “Maybe, but I’ll need to consider.”

Ha Ha’er said with a bitter smile on his face, “Please, don’t consider, as long as you’ll let me off, you’ll be like my parent. From today onwards if you want me to go east, I would not dare to go west, if you want me to crawl, I would not dare to walk.”

Bai Kai Xin grinned, “Since that is the case, then crawl one round for me.”

Without saying a single word, Ha Ha’er really started crawling on the ground.

Bai Kai Xin clapped his hands and chortled, “Everyone come and see, there’s a fat turtle here.”

As he crawled, Ha Ha’er beamed, “Fat turtle, climbing on the ground, Master Bai clapped and laughed on seeing it, Grandma Bai rushed over from the side, and laughed like a flower…” Madam Bai was really here, and she was really laughing like a flower.

Bai Kai Xin winked at her and asked, “Is everything settled?”

Madam Bai smiled coquettishly, “To think that they’re as conniving as ghosts, but they still ended up having to drink the water for washing my feet.”

Bai Kai Xin asked, “What about Yin Lao Jiu?”

Madam Bai replied, “Of course we can’t keep him, or else the next time we… we want to enjoy ourselves, he will certainly peep from the side, I can’t tolerate it.”

Bai Kai Xin laughed loudly, “You’re damn right. Since all the rabbits are dead, why should we bother keeping the dog?”

Madam Bai threw Li Da Zui hard onto the ground, and said, “Only this big mouthed wolf, I know that you can’t bear to kill him so fast.”

Bai Kai Xin jumped over and hugged her by her neck, laughing “You’re really my little treasure, the worm in my stomach.”

Madam Bai giggled and asked, “What about this fat turtle?”

Bai Kai Xin replied, “We can kill this fat turtle anytime we want, so what’s the hurry in killing him. Keep him, and I can still have fun with him, won’t that be even happier.”

Madam Bai rolled her eyes and asked, “What about this big mouthed wolf? How are you going to deal with him?”

Bai Kai Xin blinked and asked, “Could it be that you have a good plan?”

Madam Bai laughed, “He has eaten all kinds of human flesh, and even his wife and son was eaten by him. But there’s a type of person whose flesh he has never eaten before, so won’t it be a great pity if he died. Therefore I must offer him this help.”

Bai Kai Xin asked, “What type of person has he never tasted the flesh of?”

Madam Bai replied, “Those who eat human flesh.”

Bai Kai Xin’s eyes shone, “Could it be that you want him to eat his own flesh?” Madam Bai smiled sinisterly, “Do you think this is a good idea?”

Bai Kai Xin hugged her again and laughed loudly, “You’re really a treasure, how can I ever bear to leave you from now on.”

Amidst the laughter, there is suddenly a ‘crack’ sound.

Madam Bai suddenly screamed and her body slid down like a pile of mud, her neck hanging limply on one side, her eyes staring at Bai Kai Xin like copper bells. The gaze in her eyes were full of fear and hatred, and she uttered, “You…” For a person with a broken neck, how can she still speak. Although she very much wanted to curse and swear, but she can only let out a bone chilling ‘hissing’ sound, like the sound made by a snake before it died. Even in death, she could not believe that Bai Kai Xin would actually kill her, just like how Du Sha and Yin Jiu You would not believe that she will kill them.

Bai Kai Xin grinned, “Don’t look like that, actually you should have known long ago, since the rabbits are all dead, why do I still need a b.itch like you?” Madam Bai stared at him, her eyeballs almost popping out. No matter who is the person, on seeing her stare at himself like that, will never be able to fall asleep at night again.

But Bai Kai Xin is not bothered at all, and continued nonchalantly, “Besides, if I don’t kill you, sooner or later I’ll be killed by you. I know that you’ve hated us to the core for some time, that’s why you first made use of me to kill them, then you’ll think of a way to kill me. If I do not strike first, then I’ll be in trouble later.”

The vein on Madam Bai’s neck kept twitching, she was unable to take a breath.

Suddenly Li Da Zui can be heard sighing, “Bai Kai Xin oh Bai Kai Xin, I’ve always thought you’re an idiot, but who would have expected that you’re smarter than I imagined.”

Bai Kai Xin smiled evilly, “You’re still not dead? Are you waiting to eat your own flesh?”

Li Da Zui forced out a smile, “You’re absolutely right. I’ve long wanted to taste what my flesh is like, now that I have the chance, how can I miss it.”

Bai Kai Xin was stunned instead, “Really?”

Li Da Zui sighed, “When one is about to die, even his words will be kinder, why would I still need to lie to you now?”

Bai Kai Xin blinked, and suddenly laughed loudly, “Did you think I’ll believe your words? That I’ll deliberately not let you eat?”

Li Da Zui replied, “It’s best that you don’t believe me, take the knife here quickly but do not cut my arm. The flesh there is the toughest.”

Bai Kai Xin stared at him for a long while, and suddenly turned towards Ha Ha’er, “Do you believe his words?”

Ha Ha’er stayed on the ground obediently all these while, and now he hurriedly smiled condescendingly and said, “A leopard will never change its spots. This big mouthed wolf has no one else’s flesh to eat, so it’s good if he can eat his own flesh. Why should Big Brother Bai let him enjoy himself before he die?”

Bai Kai Xin clasped his hands, “That’s right, that’s right. I must make him die of impatience. Although his flesh is on his body, but I want him to just be able to see and be impatient.”

Li Da Zui panted and asked, “I know Yin Lao Jiu wanted to kill us to let Yan Nan Tian think that once we’re dead, he won’t come after us. But what good is it for you to kill us?”

Bai Kai Xin grinned, “Have you forgotten my name?” Li Da Zui was stunned for a moment before mumbling with a bitter laugh, “Harming others without benefit to oneself… harming others without benefit to oneself…” He seems unable to

breath as well, so he closed his eyes and stopped talking.

Ha Ha'er smiled condescendingly, "Big Brother Bai, do you still want to see a fat turtle like me crawl?"

Bai Kai Xin waved his hand and laughed, "Get up, I've seen enough for today."

Ha Ha'er asked, "You… you're really letting me off?"

Bai Kai Xin replied, "Don't you worry, as long as you're obedient, I will not harm you. Amongst all the brothers there's only the two of us left now, how can I bear to kill you. If you're dead, who else in the world would be my friend?"

Ha Ha'er bowed and said, "Thank you Big Brother Bai, thank you Big Brother Bai."

Bai Kai Xin laughed heartily, so happy that he felt as if he's now the emperor. But he was happy in vain.

When Ha Ha'er bowed for the third time, three black and short arrows suddenly shot out from his back and with a 'swish', pierced Bai Kai Xin's chest. Bai Kai Xin exclaimed, flipped over and fell, his eyes staring at Ha Ha'er, the expression exactly the same as Madam Bai's when she was staring at him.

Ha Ha'er looked heavenward and laughed loudly, "Bai Kai Xin oh Bai Kai Xin, you've been smart all your life, but careless for only a moment. Why would I fear you so much, can't you even tell that I'm faking it?"

Bai Kai Xin's hands grasped the arrows stuck in his chest tightly, and groaned, "If I can tell I won't be tricked by you fat turtle."

Ha Ha'er asked, "Ha ha, but why did you think that I will fear you?"

Bai Kai Xin replied, "I thought all fatties fear death, and will never dare to strike against me. And I thought that fatties were useless, I'm not afraid even if you

strike, but I forgot… forgot…" His face turned pale, his lips turned black, and his eyes started getting blurry.

Ha Ha'er said, "Ha ha, could you have forgotten my 'Dagger within laughter's three secret weapons'? Do you know how many people in the martial arts realm have died in this marvelous ploy of mine?"

Bai Kai Xin panted, "But why do you want to kill me? Won't the two of us working together be better than working alone."

Ha Ha'er is no longer looking at him, but walked towards Du Jiao Jiao instead and said gently, "Jiao Jiao, can you still see? I've avenged you!"

Bai Kai Xin exclaimed in surprise, "So you were actually taking revenge for her? Could it be that you're her…" Ha Ha'er's cheeks were slightly shaking, as if he is in great pain. Bai Kai Xin need not ask further, he already knows who is he to Du Jiao Jiao.

He heard Ha Ha'er say quietly, "For so many years, you have been quite good to me. Now that you're dead, I really do feel very bad…" Bai Kai Xin laughed bitterly, "Du Jiao Jiao was in the Valley of Evil for twenty years, I've long known that she will not be able to tolerate and will find a lover, but I've always thought that her lover is Big Brother Du."

He suddenly laughed loudly, "Actually I should have known long ago that her lover is you. An old woman like her who is neither man nor woman, besides a fat turtle like you, who else can she entice?"

Ha Ha'er roared angrily and with a lift of his leg, gave him a flying kick. He finally was unable to say any more words that will harm others without benefit to himself.

Ha Ha'er gritted his teeth and panted heavily for a moment. Suddenly he saw Du Jiao Jiao's eyes open by a slit. Ha Ha'er was surprised and overjoyed, and immediately knelt down to ask, "Can you still talk?"

Du Jiao Jiao nodded her head, her lips moved, as if she said something.

But her voice is really too weak, Ha Ha'er can't hear even a single word, so he put his ear next to Du Jiao Jiao's mouth and said gently, "What other concerns do you have, just tell me, I'll certainly do it for you."

Du Jiao Jiao moaned, "We're lovebirds who'll share the same fate, right?"

Ha Ha'er kept nodding his head and agreed, "Right, right, we're lovebirds who share the same fate, as well as loving husband and wife."

The corners of Du Jiao Jiao's mouth curved up to reveal a trace of her last smile and said, "So if I'm dead, you cannot live either."

Ha Ha'er was extremely surprised and thought of jumping away but it was too late. Du Jiao Jiao's arms were like snakes entangling him and she bit him on the throat. Ha Ha'er tried to struggle with his might, but finally he stopped struggling. His face slowly turned pale, the blood in his body flowing into Du Jiao Jiao's stomach. Suddenly he used all the strength left in his body and collapsed onto Du Jiao Jiao. There was a chain of cracking sounds, all the bones in Du Jiao Jiao's body was broken. Ha Ha'er struggled to stand up, looked heaven ward and laughed three times, 'Haha, haha, haha' before he collapsed onto the ground, finally unable to laugh again.

Li Da Zui was looking on all this while, and was staring hard. Only now did he heave a long sigh and mumble, Very good, very good. The Ten Evils are finally all dead. I've already known thirty years ago that these people will kill themselves. Heaven made the ten of us with the intention of letting us pit against one another, kill one another, or else he only have to create one of us, why would he need to make ten." He struggled to stand up but he fell again. So he struggled to climb up the mountain, as if he wants to stay far, far away from these corpses.

When the mountain breeze blew past, it seems to bring with it the howls of wild beasts from afar. Amongst the wood behind the mountain, there seems to be a very deep cave, and on top of the cave there were strange rocks towering over it. From afar it looks like a ancient beast, and the cave is like the mouth of this weird beast. Li Da Zui struggled to crawl in.

The cave was eerie and damp, and with a stench so bad that it makes one nauseous. But Li Da Zui looked as if he has never been to such a comfortable place. He heaved a long sigh and laid on the ground. The ground was muddy with loose stones, but Li Da Zui looked as if he's lying on a young girl's soft bed, and talked to himself, "Li Da Zui oh Li Da Zui, that Heaven can give you a place like this, and let you die quietly, is already being very kind to you. What can you complain about?"

But Heaven did not let him wait for death quietly. Without knowing how long has passed, footsteps could be heard suddenly outside the cave. Li Da Zui wanted to jump up immediately, but now he could not even crawl. At a time like this, one can only leave his fate to Heaven.

He might as well just lay there unmoving, and secretly thought, "I've eaten humans for my whole life, even if Heaven wants to feed me to the dogs, it's right."

He heard someone say, "This is the place, it can't be wrong, I recognize that rock in at the mouth of the cave." The words spoken by this person is very ordinary, but the tone of voice is very imposing and serious. Although Li Da Zui can't tell who this voice belongs to, but without knowing why his heart started thumping very quickly.

After a while, someone else said, "Uncle, I've hidden something from you, will you forgive me?"

Once he heard this voice, Li Da Zui was really shocked. This person is actually Xiao Yu'er, and the other person must naturally be Yan Nan Tian. Li Da Zui never imagined that no matter how hard he tried to hide, he still could not hide from them.

He was so shocked that he dare not even breath.

Since he is not far from death, what else is there to fear! But once a person does something bad, he can't help but feel afraid.

He heard Yan Nan Tian say, “What have you hidden from me?” Xiao Yu’er replied, “I… I have told someone to release Jiang Bie He and his son without telling you.”

It seems that Yan Nan Tian was stunned as well, and asked fiercely, “Why did you do that? Have you forgotten that blood debt?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “I did not forget, but I feel that it’s not necessary to kill them to consider it a revenge. I really do not like to kill people. Others killed my family, because they were unscrupulous and evil, if I kill them , won’t I become the same as them? So I want them to be alive and regret for the evil they have done. I feel that this is more meaningful than killing them.” He was speaking confidently in front of Yan Nan Tian, without any trace of fear at all.

Yan Nan Tian was silent for a long moment before he heaved a long sigh, “Good child, good child, to have a son like you, Jiang Feng will be resting in peace. Uncle Yan have lived in vain for decades, and cannot compare to your insight.”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “Then, my duel with Hua Wu Que can be called off as well?”

Yan Nan Tian’s voice immediately became strict again, “That will never do.”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “Why not? I have no enmity with Hua Wu Que, why must I fight with him!”

Yan Nan Tian replied fiercely, “This battle is not for revenge, but for honor. A true man can die, but must never do anything shameful. At a time like this, if you’re still thinking of escape, won’t you be letting your dead parents down, letting me down?”

Xiao Yu’er sighed, speechless.

Yan Nan Tian continued, “Not only must you duel with Hua Wu Que, I must also duel with the Floral Princess, because a person who has done something wrong must be punished. There are things a man must not do, and a man must

do. Even if we know we'll die in battle, we must not run away, do you understand this logic?"

Xiao Yu'er replied quietly, "I understand."

Yan Nan Tian heaved a long sigh and said gently, "I know that you and Hua Wu Que have developed a friendship, so you do not wish to fight with him, but when one is living in the world, sometimes we must do some things that we're unwilling to. How fate toys with us, how our destiny is decided, no matter how great a hero one is, there's nothing he can do about it."

Xiao Yu'er heaved a long sigh as well, and suddenly said, "Uncle, I only want to ask you of one thing."

"Speak."

Xiao Yu'er continued, "I only ask that when you see Du Sha, Li Da Zui and the rest, do not kill them."

Yan Nan Tian asked angrily, "These people deserve to die long ago, why are you pleading on their behalf?"

Xiao Yu'er said, "When a person has done something wrong, of course he must be punished, but they have been punished enough. After suffering in the Valley of Evil for twenty years, they're almost like a bunch of pitiful worms, living in fear everyday, hiding themselves, like a pack of wild dogs who have lost their home. How would they dare to harm others in future?"

Once he heard this, Li Da Zui can't help but secretly sigh, "Well reprimanded, really well reprimanded, but your reprimand is too light, we're really worse than wild dogs."

Yan Nan Tian replied, "A leopard can never change it's spots, how do you know that they won't harm others in future."

Xiao Yu'er explained, "Before they entered the valley, they've kept a lot of

jewelry but because of these jewelry, they almost lost their lives. Think about it, Uncle, if they still have the guts to harm others, why can't they go and snatch more jewelry? Why must they find these jewelry?" He sighed and continued, "It can be seen from this that they have long lost their bravado, and are now just a bunch of greedy old men, the airs of the 'Ten Evils' are all gone. Being alive is no different from being dead for them, so why must Uncle go after their lives, why not let them live their sad lives for another few years?"

Once he heard this, hot tears streamed down Li Da Zui's face, and he can't help but heave a long sigh and say, "Xiao Yu'er, we've really misunderstood you. If we can think that you will plead on our behalf, we would not have ended up thus."

Before he could finish his words, Yan Nan Tian and Xiao Yu'er has dashed over.

Xiao Yu'er exclaimed hoarsely, "Uncle Li, it's you! How did you end up like this?"

Li Da Zui gave a piteous smile and said, "I'm afraid this is called retribution."

Xiao Yu'er asked, "Where are the others?"

Li Da Zui sighed, "Dead, all dead."

Xiao Yu'er exclaimed in surprise, "Who killed them?"

Li Da Zui smiled bitterly, "Besides themselves, who else can kill them?"

He heaved a long sigh and said, "Hero Yan, we've really let you down, kill me quickly."

When Yan Nan Tian saw him, he was initially furious, but now his face showed pity and he only shook his head, and sighed.

Li Da Zui laughed bitterly, "I know a person like me is not worth Hero Yan

striking. When a person lives to a time that even his enemy thinks that he is not worth killing, what then is the meaning of him living?”

He suddenly laughed again, “Luckily I won’t be able to live much longer, and this is my good luck, or else I might have to pee and drown myself in my own urine.”

Yan Nan Tian sighed and said, “Let’s go.”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “I can’t go now.”

Yan Nan Tian furrowed his brows, “What else are you waiting for?”

Xiao Yu’er lowered his head and said, “When I was young, he treated me well. Now that he has ended up like this, how can I leave him behind to wait for death alone?”

Li Da Zui raised his voice, “You need not pity me, or try to repay me. I am of no benefit to you, and I raised you because I wanted you to grow up to harm others.”

Xiao Yu’er smiled, “It doesn’t matter why you did it, but at least you raised me. Since my life now is very meaningful, I cannot forget your kindness.”

End of Chapter 121

Chapter 111

Chapter 122

When Li Da Zui heard Xiao Yu'er's words, he heaved a long sigh and mumbled, "Kindness, Kindness… the child that the 'Ten Evils' raised actually remembered about kindness. It seems like the Ten Evils should have changed jobs and become nannies instead."

Suddenly he heard someone said with a laugh, "That's right, if we have a child in future, we'll definitely ask you to be our nanny."

It turns out that Su Ying was following right behind, but was silent all these while.

Li Da Zui stared at her and asked, "When you have a child, who is going to have a child with you."

Su Ying took a glance at Xiao Yu'er, lowered her head and covered her mouth with a smile, "There may be none now, but there will be in future."

Li Da Zui laughed, "Good lad, I did not imagine that this little fish would be hooked as well, it seems that your fishing skills is quite good."

Xiao Yu'er said icily, "Her ability to daydream is even better."

Su Ying replied calmly, "Just take it that I'm daydreaming, all right? No matter what you say, I will listen. Anyway if I have a child, you will be his father."

Xiao Yu'er sighed and said with a sullen face, "To meet someone like this, I

must have been down on my luck for eight lifetimes."

Li Da Zui clapped and chortled, "I did not expect Xiao Yu'er to finally meet his bane, good Miss, I must really take my hat off you, you're really more formidable then us Ten Evils added together." As he laughed, his face revealed a look of pain again, obviously he has affected an injured area.

Yan Nan Tian suddenly said, "A gratitude must be repaid, it is what a man must do, it's good that you stay here as well."

Xiao Yu'er asked, "Then what about you?"

Yan Nan Tian replied, "I'll wait for you at the top of the mountain. They would have found Hua Wu Que by now, you'd better hurry there as well."

Xiao Yu'er said with a bitter smile, "Since I've already promised you, I'll even crawl my way there if I have to."

Yan Nan Tian replied, "Very good!" As soon as he said these two words, he walked out with large strides.

Li Da Zui looked at his broad back disappearing into the darkness and can't help but heave a long sigh, "This person is really straight to the point, he really lives up to the name of a true man."

Su Ying smiled and said, "I think you're a true man as well."

Li Da Zui was stunned and asked, "Me?" Su Ying replied, "Amongst the Ten Evils, only you can be considered a true man, but a pity that your taste is different from others, or else you could have been great friends with Hero Yan."

Li Da Zui laughed loudly, "Good, good, good, there's actually such a beautiful woman who would say that I'm a true man, my death would not have been in vain then. It's a pity that I won't be able to see your Little Xiao Yu'er."

Xiao Yu’er smiled bitterly, “I did not expect that Uncle Li cannot be praised as well. Someone only need to flatter him a little and immediately he’s standing on that person’s side against me.”

Li Da Zui stared at him, “Against you? Let me tell you, to be able to get a woman like her, is your greatest luck. If not for the fact that I’m half dead, I would have fought with you for her.”

Xiao Yu’er grinned, “Maybe my taste will change to be the same as Uncle Li in future, and eat her up in the middle of the night.”

Li Da Zui’s eyes revealed a look of pain again, as if he does not wish to hear anyone else bring up this matter.

Xiao Yu’er is a very smart person, he observed his expression and immediately changed the topic, “Su Ying, if you really want Uncle Li to be your son’s nanny, then you should treat Uncle Li’s injuries quickly.”

Li Da Zui was stunned, “You want her to treat me?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “Don’t Uncle Li know? Besides day dreaming, this lass is quite good in healing others.”

Li Da Zui suddenly chortled, “And I thought you’re a smart person, but you’re actually an idiot.”

Xiao Yu’er said, “You… you do not wish to let her…” Li Da Zui interrupted him, “Let me ask you, have you ever seen me trying to act as a hero? Pretend to be a good man?” He shook his head, and continued, “No, never, I’ve always been someone who is afraid to die. If my injury can still be treated, I would have knelt down and begged her long ago.”

Su Ying asked gently, “At least let me have a look.” Li Da Zui stared at her, “Look at what? Don’t I know how serious my own injuries are? Do you think I’m an idiot as well?”

Xiao Yu’er and Su Ying looked at each other, and they knew that he has no intention of living anymore. The two of them exchanged looks, and knew what they want to do.

Li Da Zui suddenly smiled and said, “If you really think that you must repay my kindness to you, there is a way to do it.”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “What way?”

Li Da Zui said with a laugh, “I’m so hungry that I’m feeling faint now, think of a way to give me a good meal. I heard that there’s not even a restaurant on the road to hell, if I have to go and meet the King of Hell on an empty stomach, that’s not going to be a very nice feeling.”

Xiao Yu’er was stunned for a moment, and scratched his head with a smile, “It’s really not going to be easy to find human flesh around here. I think I can only ask Uncle Li to make do, and take a chunk of my thigh as snack then.”

Li Da Zui glared at him and said, “Human flesh? Who said anything about asking you to give me human flesh?”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “You… you’re not eating human flesh?” Li Da Zui replied, “Even if human flesh is the world’s greatest cuisine, I’ve eaten it for decades, and have long been sick of it.”

He spat on the ground and added, “To tell you the truth, I feel nauseous once I think of human flesh now.”

Only now was Xiao Yu’er truly stunned.

Li Da Zui laughed, “Did you really think I like eating human flesh? To tell you the truth, I ate human flesh just to scare people.”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “Scare people?”

Li Da Zui replied, “Do you know why Du Jiao Jiao, Ha Ha’er and the rest have always been a little afraid of me? There’s no other reason, but because I eat humans! A person who eats humans will always instill fear in others.”

Xiao Yu’er scratched his head, not knowing whether to cry or to laugh.

Li Da Zui suddenly sighed and said, “ A person living in this world, is it for evil? Or for good? That boundary is really strange and as to why I became one of the Ten Evils, it’s also because of a random thought.”

He asked with a laugh, “Can you guess how I became one of the Ten Evils?”

Xiao Yu’er shook his head, “I can’t guess why.”

Li Da Zui’s eyes stared into the darkness and said slowly, “I’ve been greedy since young, even those things that the Cantonese does not dare to eat, I’ll eat them. But no one has ever eaten human flesh, and I kept wondering what human flesh would taste like.”

He laughed, and added, “It would have been better if I did not think about this, but the more I thought about it the more curious I became. One day, after I killed someone, I finally can’t help but cook his flesh. I found that the taste is just so-so, although it’s a little more tender than horse flesh, but it’s more sour than horse flesh, and it’s a must to add more spring onions and ginger as marinate.”

Xiao Yu’er can’t help but ask, “Since human flesh doesn’t taste that great, why do you still want to eat it?”

Li Da Zui replied, “When I was eating human flesh, someone suddenly saw me. This person was originally my rival, and his martial arts is a little better than mine, but once he saw me eating a human, his face immediately turned ashen and he turned around and left. When he saw me in future, he would immediately run away in fright, and dare not even look me up for a fight.”

He laughed again and continued, “Only then did I realize that eating human flesh can instill fear in others, and after I found out this reason, I suddenly took a

liking to eating humans.”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “Could it be that you… you like others to fear you?”

Li Da Zui explained, There are many types of people in the world. Some are especially likable, some are especially hateful and since I can’t be likable and I do not wish to be hated, so I can only make others fear me.”

He added with a laugh, “To be able to instill fear in others, is not a bad thing either, so I no longer find the taste of human flesh sour.”

Xiao Yu’er was stunned with what he heard, and he can only smile bitterly, and sigh.

He wanted to ask, “Why do you want to eat the flesh of your own wife then?” But he did not, because he has no wish to upset Li Da Zui again.

Li Da Zui continued, “Over the years, I’ve been secretly cooking pork alone to stave my hunger, but I dare not let others see it. It’s like a monk eating meat secretly, the more secretive it is, the more delicious it feels.”

He added with a chortle, “But now I do not have to eat it secretly. You better give me a good treat of braised pig’s trotters, meaty with a thick skin, with oil oozing out from the mouth with one bite.”

There are no delicacies in a small town, but there will always be braised pig’s trotters. Pig’s trotters which are three kilos heavy, Li Da Zui actually ate two in one sitting. Luckily they booked a room in the inn and had their meal in there, or else other people would have thought that they are hungry ghosts reincarnated.

Halfway through the meal, Xiao Yu’er found an excuse to pull Su Ying aside and asked quietly, “When you helped him in earlier, did you check out his injuries?”

Su Ying sighed, “His injuries are really quite serious. He broke at least ten of his ribs, and there are five other injured areas on his body. If not for his robust physique, he would have been dead long ago.”

Xiao Yu’er said, “I’m only asking you if there’s still a way to save him?”

Su Ying replied, “If he is willing to listen to me and take care of himself properly, I guarantee that I will be able to save him, but I’m afraid…” She heaved a long sigh and added, “If he does not have the will to live, then no one can save him”

Xiao Yu’er chewed his lips and said, “I really do not understand. He’s always been someone who can take things lightly, why would he suddenly wish to die?”

Su Ying said calmly, “When a person is about to die, he will remember all that he’s done in his life. There’s not a lot of people in the world who can still have a clear conscience at a time like this.”

Xiao Yu’er sighed, “That’s right, he must have regretted the things he has done in his life, so he wants death as an escape, wants death as a way to show his repentance.”

Su Ying said quietly, “At a time like this, it’s very rare if a person can take matters of life and death lightly, that’s why I said he is indeed a true man.”

Right at this time, they suddenly saw someone behaving surreptitiously behind the wall outside the courtyard looking at them. Xiao Yu’er rolled his eyes and said calmly, “Uncle Li has been good to me, and now that he ended up like this, naturally I will be in a bad temper and want to find someone to vent my anger on. Now I finally found one.” As he spoke, he suddenly flew over. The person hiding behind the wall obviously got a shock, but he had no intention of running away. Instead he bowed and smiled, “I’ve long known that Brother Yu is a lucky man, no matter what calamity befalls him, he will surely be able to turn his luck. Now that I see that you have really escaped from danger, I am really overjoyed.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “Since when have a rabbit like you become such a good talker.” It turns out that this person is Herbalist Hu. Xiao Yu’er wanted to find someone to vent his anger, but once he heard him flattering him so well, he can’t seem to find his anger anymore.

Herbalist Hu replied, “Since that day when you spared my life, I’ve been wanting to find you to express my gratitude, and today I’ve finally gotten my wish.”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Since that is the case, why didn’t you come over when you saw us? What are you doing hiding here furtively instead!” He suddenly paused and asked, “Where is that Miss Tie Ping Gu?” Herbalist Hu seemed stunned, and muttered, “I… I’m not very sure.”

Xiao Yu’er furrowed his brows, “The two of you escaped together, if you’re not sure then who is!”

Herbalist Hu lowered his head, and stammered with a condescending smile, “She… she seems to be in the vicinity, but… but…”

Xiao Yi’er grabbed his collar and said furiously, “What are you up to? Tell me honestly quickly, if you’re trying to play tricks in front of me, is akin to selling the Hundred Surname Book in front of Confucius’s door.” The expression on Herbalist Hu’s face changed, and he was so nervous he couldn’t say a word.

Su Ying said gently, “We can talk things over nicely, why must you be so fierce towards him!”

Xiao Yu’er exclaimed, “You say that I’m fierce, if this lad didn’t do anything bad, why would he be so afraid. I think he may very well have sold that lady.”

Herbalist Hu said with a bitter look, “She… she only asked me to delay the two of you for a while, but what is it about, I do not know as well.”

Xiao Yu’er glared and exclaimed, “She asked you to delay us!”

Herbalist Hu replied, “That’s right.”

Xiao Yu’er exclaimed angrily again, “What fart, I don’t believe you. You and Tie Ping Gu have never been on the same side, why would you listen to her.”

Su Ying blinked and said, “How do you know they’re not on the same side, for all you know they may…” Xiao Yu’er suddenly raised his voice, “Then, why would she tell him to come and delay us? What is she trying to hide from us!”

Su Ying chewed on her lips and said calmly, “Do you think, that she has some relation with Uncle Li?”

Xiao Yu’er said, “What relation could they possibly have?”

Su Ying replied, “Wasn’t Uncle Li’s wife surnamed Tie as well?”

Xiao Yu’er’s heart lurched, and suddenly remembered that in the past whenever Tie Ping Gu hears ‘Valley of Evil’, or hears the name ‘Li Da Zui’, her expression would change immediately. He remembered as well that Tie Ping Gu once asked him the way to the Valley of Evil, as if she wanted to go to the Valley of Evil. Did she want to go there to find Li Da Zui? Once he thought of this, Xiao Yu’er did not say anything else, but jumped up and ran into the courtyard. Before he could reach the door, he could hear sobbing coming out from their room.

Once Xiao Yu’er heard it he knows it must be Tie Ping Gu’s cries. He dashed in immediately and saw Li Da Zui sitting woodenly on the chair, the expression on his face filled with pain and sadness. Tie Ping Gu is on the ground next to him sobbing, in her hands a sharp knife, but by now she has loosened her grip on the knife and it is almost falling out of her hand.

Xiao Yu’er was stunned, and asked hoarsely, “What is this all about? Tie Ping Gu, do you know Uncle Li!”

Tie Ping Gu was crying so hard she couldn’t talk, but Li Da Zui laughed bitterly, “When she knew me, I’m afraid you weren’t even born yet.” Xiao Yu’er was startled, “Oh? Could it be that she is… is…” He took a look at Li Da Zui, and took a look at Tie Ping Gu, and couldn’t continue with his sentence, because even he would not believe what he wants to say.

Li Da Zui heaved a long sigh and said quietly, “She is my daughter.”

Only now was Xiao Yu'er truly stunned.

He wanted to ask, "Didn't you eat your daughter and your wife?" But at a time and place like this, how can he ask such a question.

However Li Da Zui saw through his intention, and sighed, "The world all thinks that Li Da Zui has eaten his wife and daughter, and these twenty years I have never denied it, until today… Hai, I have no choice but to reveal the truth today, or else I'm afraid I would not rest in peace even after I've become a ghost."

There seem to be a trace of anger in his voice, as if he had been bearing with him a great disservice, tolerating great pain. Su Ying quietly closed the door and gave him a cup of tea.

Li Da Zui said, "Old Hero Tie loves talent as much as his life, and married his daughter to me, hoping that I will change for the better. I've always been very grateful for his kind intentions, but… but…" He gritted his teeth and continued, "But his daughter hated me to the core, and thinks that I'm an insult to her, so she actually had a dubious relationship with her Junior Brother secretly. When I found out about this, naturally I was angry and troubled, but on the account of Old Hero Tie's kindness to me, I had hoped that she will change. As long as they stop doing anything shameless secretly, I will not spread the news of their shameless acts."

The muscles at the side of his mouth kept twitching, he gritted his teeth and continued, "But who would have expected that not only did she not listen to my advice, she called me a living turtle, and told me not to interfere in her affairs. In my anger, I killed her and cooked her to vent the anger that I felt!"

Su Ying asked, "Since there are so many twists to this matter, why have you never spoken up about this?"

Li Da Zui replied, "Firstly it's because I was considering Old Hero Tie's reputation, and I can't bear to see him shamed and upset. Secondly it's also for my own reputation." He smiled sadly and continued, "Think about it, if those in the martial arts realm find out that Li Da Zui's wife has a lover, how can I stay on. I'd rather be hated than to be laughed at."

Su Ying lowered her head, naturally speechless, because she understands very well the feelings of people like Li Da Zui, and also felt sad with what he has encountered.

Li Da Zui continued, “After I killed her, I know as well that there’s no way I can stay on in the martial arts realm, Tie Wu Shuang would certainly want to rip me into pieces, so I have no choice but to run to the Valley of Evil by night, but…” He took a look at Tie Ping Gu and said quietly, “But I have no wish of letting my daughter grow up in a place like that, that’s why I gave her to someone else. My only wish is that she will grow up safely, and spend the rest of her life peacefully.”

Xiao Yu’er can’t help but ask, “Who did you give her to?” Li Da Zui replied with hatred, “I had thought that person is my friend, but who would have expected… hai, a person like me will never have friends!”

Tie Ping Gu suddenly blurted out in tears, “That couple tortured me day and night, saying that I’m Li Da Zui’s daughter, I’m a bad egg, so I escaped when I was very young.”

Li Da Zui said sadly, “That you’re able to go to Floral Palace, is also a silver lining.”

Tie Ping Gu said with tears streaming, “Later I hear others talk about Li… Li…” Su Ying asked gently, “You heard others talking about Li Da Zui’s story, and you thought that your mother and sisters have been eaten up by Uncle Li, and you suffered so much because of Uncle Li, that’s why you’ve always hated your father. You think that not only has he harmed your mother, but you as well.”

Tie Ping Gu is sobbing so much that she can’t say another word.

Li Da Zui said sadly, “That’s why, even if she wants to kill me today, I won’t blame her, because she… she…” As he spoke he can’t help but weep as well.

Xiao Yu’er suddenly raised his voice and said, “Today is the day you and your daughter is reunited, and the misunderstanding is cleared, we should all be

happily celebrating, why is everyone crying instead?”

Li Da Zui suddenly banged the table and shouted as well, “What Xiao Yu’er said is right. We should all be happy today, no one is allowed to cry anymore.”

Herbalist Hu made his way over, as if he’s thinking of wiping her tears.

Who would have expected that Tie Ping Gu would immediately look stern and said, “Who asked you to come over, stand further away!” Herbalist Hu’s face reddened, and he really scurried to stand at a side.

Xiao Yu;er and Su Ying exchanged a look and smiled, and Su Ying said, “It seems that there’s more cause for celebrations today, we’re going to have double happiness today.”

Li Da Zui took a look at Herbalist Hu, took another look at his daughter and said, “This is…” Herbalist Hu blushed and lowered his head, “Junior’s family name is Hu, I’m Herbalist Hu.”

Li Da Zui mumbled, “Herbalist Hu, is it possible that you’re the Herbalist in the Twelve Zodiacs?” Herbalist Hu replied, “It is Junior.”

Li Da Zui lifted his head and laughed, “I did not expect that the Twelve Zodiacs have now become my Junior, it seems that it’s not a bad thing to have a pretty daughter.”

Although Tie Ping Gu blushed and lowered her head, but she was not upset. But Herbalist Hu only dared to stand far away and look at her secretly.

Su Ying whispered, “Be more bold, it’s all right, I’ll be here to help you.”

Xiao Yu’er clapped and laughed, “It seems that those terms of endearment you said were really useful, but why have you forgotten your skills of flattery now, aren’t you going to kneel down and pay respects to your Father-in-law.”

Herbalist Hu blushed and was really about to kneel down but Tie Ping Gu's expression became stern and he immediately stood up in fright, his face pale from the fright.

When Xiao Yu'er thought of the sufferings that Tie Ping Gu had endured, the heartlessness that Jiang Yu Lang showed her, he can't help but secretly feel happy for her now.

Herbalist Hu may be a little old, but after all the suffering that Tie Ping Gu has gone through, what she really need now is an older man to care for her gently. Older men who marry younger women will usually fear their partner out of love, and will never look down on Tie Ping Gu because of what had happened to her.

Xiao Yu'er mumbled, "It seems that Heaven has arranged the marriages of everyone, and it's been arranged so appropriately that others need not worry too much over it."

Su Ying smiled quietly, "That's right, since he has arranged for me to meet you, there's no way you can run even if you want to."

Xiao Yu'er was about to stare at her when Li Da Zui chortled, "I'm really very happy today. Never in my life have I felt such peace like today, or such happiness. If I can die right here, right now, then my life would not have been in vain…" His voice slowly became weaker, and he really passed away with a smile.

End of Chapter 122

Chapter 112

Chapter 123

Tie Ping Gu and Herbalist Hu have left with Li Da Zui's body. Before they left, it seems that Tie Ping Gu wanted to tell Xiao Yu'er something, but stopped herself just as she was about to speak a few times. In the end she did not say anything at all. But Xiao Yu'er knows that she wanted to ask about Jiang Yu Lang's whereabouts, but in the end she still did not ask him. Obviously her heart no longer feels for Jiang Yu Lang.

This is really one of the happiest thing that has happened to Xiao Yu'er in recent months.

Before they left, it seems that Herbalist Hu wanted to tell Xiao Yu'er something as well, but like Tie Ping Gu, he stopped himself just as he was about to speak. Xiao Yu'er also knows that he wanted to ask about Madam Bai's whereabouts, but he did not ask him. Obviously he has shifted his feelings to Tie Ping Gu.

This also made Xiao Yu'er very happy. A loving couple can finally be together, this is the happiest thing that can happen in life.

Xiao Yu'er mumbled with a smile, "No matter what, I still can't figure out how these two came together, this is really strange."

Su Ying said gently, "It's not strange at all. They met one another while in dire straits, and people's feelings grow most easily when faced with danger. Besides, they've both been hurt, and in similar situation, thus feelings will grow most easily." She smiled, lowered her head and added, "You and me, didn't we became closer when faced with danger?"

Xiao Yu’er wrinkled his nose at her and said, “You are close to me, but whether I’m close to you, that’s not for sure yet.”

Su Ying smiled, “Don’t you forget, this is Heaven’s arrangement!”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “Don’t be too smug, don’t forget your love rival has not appeared yet, for all you know…” He had wanted to make fun of Su Ying, but once he mentioned Tie Xin Lan, he thought of Hua Wu Que, and his heart seems to shiver, and he can’t be bothered to talk any further.

Su Ying’s expression became serious as well, and after a whole, she sighed and said, “It seems like the battle between you and Hua Wu Que, is something that cannot be avoided.”

Xiao Yu’er sighed as well, and agreed.

Su Ying asked, “Are you thinking of ways to delay it again.”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Umm.”

He suddenly lifted his head and stared at Su Ying, “How do you know what I’m thinking?” Su Ying replied nonchalantly, “This is called connection of the heart.” Her sweet smile was on her face for only a second, and she furrowed her brows again, “Have you thought of a plan?”

Xiao Yu’er sat down lazily and said, “Don’t worry, I always have a plan.”

Su Ying said gently, “I know as well that you’ll certainly have a plan, but even if you can think of an ever better plan than what you thought of in the past, what is the use?”

Xiao Yu’er stared at her, “Who said it’s of no use?”

Su Ying sighed, “Even if you can delay it, but you need to settle the matter sooner or later. The Floral Princesses will never let you off. Look, when they were

in the cave, they seemed to be slowly warming up to you, but once we left that cave, their attitude changed immediately."

Xiao Yu'er replied with hatred, "Actually I've known long ago that they will surely make use of me then."

Su Ying replied, "Therefore you will have to duel with Hua Wu Que sooner or later, unless…" Su Ying looked at him with gentle eyes, and said slowly, "Unless we go far, far away now, find a nice, scenic place and live in solitude, never seeing anyone, never be bothered with anyone again."

Xiao Yu'er was silent for a moment, and he replied loudly, "No, I can never run away. If you want me to live in hiding all my life, I might as well die. Besides, there is Uncle Yan… I've made a promise to him!"

Su Ying sighed sadly, "I know as well that you'll refuse to do this, but once you and Hua Wu Que duel, then one of you must die! Isn't that so?"

Xiao Yu'er's gaze focused in the distance, and mumbled, "That's right, once we duel, then one of us must die…" He suddenly smiled at Su Ying and said, "But if one of us were to die, then the problem would be solved, right?"

Su Ying suddenly felt a shiver, and she stammered, "You… can you bear to kill him?"

Xiao Yu'er closed his eyes, not speaking.

Su Ying said quietly, "I know that the outcome of your duel has nothing much to do with your level of martial arts. The question is the one who can be more hard hearted, will win…" She suddenly grabbed Xiao Yu'er's hands tightly and said, "I only beg one thing of you."

Xiao Yu'er laughed, "You're begging me to marry you?"

Su Ying chewed on her lips and said, "I only beg that you promise me, don't let Hua Wu Que kill you. You must not die no matter what!"

Xiao Yu’er replied, “What if I must die?”

Su Ying shivered, and said, “Then… then I can only die with you…” Two rows of tears flowed slowly down her eyes, and she looked at Xiao Yu’er in a daze and said, “But I do not wish to die, I want to live on together with you, live a hundred years, a thousand years. I think we will definitely live very, very happily together.”

Xiao Yu’er looked at her, his gaze revealing gentleness as well! Su Ying added, “As long as you can live, it doesn’t matter what I have to do.”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “What if you’re asked to die?”

Su Ying replied, “If my death can save you, then I’ll die immediately…” Her words were so determined, spoken without any thought at all. Xiao Yu’er pulled her over and said gently, “Don’t you worry, we won’t die, we will certainly carry on living…” He looked out the window at the sky and suddenly laughed, “We can at least live happily for another day, why must we think of death?”

A day may be a short time, but to people in love, the sweetness of one day is enough to let them forget countless pain…

Night.

The surrounding silence, everyone seems to have fallen asleep. At a temple embraced by the mountains, most people would be able to appreciate the joy of silence. But to Hua Wu Que, this silence does not feel good at all.

Almost everyone is here, Tie Zhan and his friends, the Murong sisters and their husbands, the Floral Princesses… Hua Wu Que only felt perplexed why he could not hear their voices. Maybe they have no wish to disturb hi, to let him have a good rest so that he can face the great battle tomorrow. But why aren’t they talking? Now the only thing he wish for is someone to talk with, but who can he look for to talk? Who can he share his concerns with? The wind blew against the paper window, as if the wind is crying as well.

Hua Wu Que sat there quietly, what is he thinking about? Thinking of Tie Xin Lan? Or thinking of Xiao Yu'er? No matter who Hua Wu Que is thinking of, it will only be filled with pain.

The lamp in the room is not lighted, on the table there's still the bottle of wine that he did not finish. He sighed quietly, and was about to take a wine cup when the door was suddenly pushed open gently. A weak looking person, looking like a spirit walked in. It's Tie Xin Lan! In the darkness, her face looked so pale but her eyes were so frighteningly bright, like a flame burning in her heart. Her hands were shaking, it seems that she's extremely nervous. Why is this so? Could it be that she has made a decision to do a terrible thing! Hua Wu Que looked at her in shock, unable to speak for a long time. Tie Xin Lan gently closed the door, and looked at him quietly. Why are her eyes so bright, so frighteningly bright.

After a long, long while, Hua Wu Que sighed and said, "You… is anything the matter?" Tie Xin Lan shook her head.

Hua Wu Que replied, "Then you… you should not have come." Tie Xin Lan nodded her head.

Hua Wu Que seemed to have been shocked by the fire in her eyes, and for a moment does not know what to say either. He just picked up the wine flask but put it down again, picked up the wine cup for a drink, but he forgot that there's no wine in the cup.

Suddenly Tie Xin Lan said, "I've always wanted to treat you as my elder brother, but now I know I'm wrong. Because the feelings I have for you, are no longer the feelings between siblings, so why must we continue to lie to ourselves?" It seems that she has said these words countless times, and now that she is determined to say it out loud, she said it all at one go, without a moment of hesitation.

But once Hua Wu Que heard her words, he can't even hold on to his wine cup properly. He never imagined that Tie Xin Lan would say these words to him, although the feelings he has for Tie Xin Lan, and the feelings Tie Xin Lan has for him, they're both very clear on that. But they think that this is their deepest secret, which will never be said out loud. They think that until they die, this secret will stay with them in the deepest corner of their hearts.

Tie Xin Lan stared at him, her gaze never leaving, and continued calmly, “I know your feelings for me, is definitely not that of a brotherly nature, right?” Her eyes is bright, so bright that it can shine into his heart. There is no way Hua Wu Que can hide, and he can only lower his head, “But I… I…”

Tie Xin Lan asked, “You’re not? Or you do not dare to say it?”

Hua Wu Que heaved a long sigh and said dejectedly, “Maybe it’s because I can’t say it.”

Tie Xin Lan asked, “Why can’t you? You have to say it sooner or later, so why not say it sooner and spare us both the pain.” She chewed so hard on her trembling lips, that a faint trace of blood can be seen.

Hua Wu Que replied, “Some words may be better left unsaid.”

Tie Xin Lan smiled sadly, “That’s right, I did not want to say it either, but now I have no choice but to say it, because if I don’t say it now, I’ll never have the chance to say it again.”

Hua Wu Que’s heart tightened, he reprimanded himself, why didn’t he have Tie Xin Lan’s courage? He should be the one who say these words.

Tie Xin Lan replied, “I know you’re doing this because of Xiao Yu’er. I had thought that if we did this, we’re letting him down, but now I understand, such things cannot be forced. Besides, I don’t owe him anything at all.”

Hua Wu Que nodded his head quietly, then said, “It’s not your fault…” Tie Xin Lan replied, “It’s not your fault either, Heaven did not dictate who must fall in love with who.” Hua Wu Que suddenly lifted his head and looked at her. He realized that her irises were darker than the sea, his body started shaking, and slowly he is losing control of himself.

Tie Xin Lan replied, “Tomorrow, you will be in a life and death duel with him, I’ve thought about it for a long, long time and am determined to tell you what I

feel. As long as you know my feelings, everything else doesn't matter."

Hua Wu Que can't help but hold her hands and stammered, "I… I… I'm very grateful to you, you did not have to treat me so nicely."

Tie Xin Lan suddenly beamed, and said "I should be treating you nicely. Don't you forget, we're already married, I'm already your wife."

Hua Wu Que looked at her in a daze, her hands have moved silently up to his face, gently caressing his cheeks which has been getting thinner day by day… a drop of tear landed on her hand, like a clear pearl.

And then, the drop of pearl shattered… The wind was still blowing against the window paper, but it does not sound like weeping anymore.

Hua Wu Que and Tie Xin Lan leaned against each other quietly. This cast darkness and silence, isn't it a gift from Heaven to lovers?

Love is a strange flower. It does not need sunlight, or rain. In the darkness, it blooms even more prettily instead.

But the paper window slowly became white, the long night is finally going to be over.

Hua Wu Que looked at the rising sun outside the window, and did not speak. He knows that the only happiness he has experienced in his life, is slowly ending with the coming of dawn. Light, may bring to others endless hope, but the only thing that it brings to him now, is pain.

Hua Wu Que said with a sad smile, "Tomorrow morning, the sun will still rise, nothing else will change."

Tie Xin lan asked, "But what about us?" She suddenly hugged Hua Wu Que tightly and said gently, "No matter what, we're still together now. Compared to him, we're still fortunate. To be able to live until now, we have nothing to complain about, isn't that so?"

Hua Wu Que felt a stab of pain in his heart and heaved a long sigh, “That’s right, we’re really a lot more fortunate than him, he…”

Tie Xin Lan continued, “He really is a pitiful person. In his whole life, he has never really experienced any happiness. He has no parents, no relatives, always treated coldly by others, laughed and scolded at by others. I’m afraid not a lot of people will cry for him, because everyone knows that he is a bad person…” Her words gradually became chocked, and she almost could not continue talking.

Hua Wu Que lowered his head and looked at Tie Xin Lan. In Xiao Yu’er’s life, Tie Xin Lan could at least have been the one who loves him wholeheartedly, but now Tie Xin Lan lowered her head as well and said, “I… I only wish to beg you of one thing, I wonder if you will agree?”

Hua Wu Que forced out a smile, “Why would I not agree?”

Tie Xin Lan’s gaze focused hazily into the distance, “I think that if he were to die now, he would not die in peace, so…” She suddenly reverted her eyes and stared at Hua Wu Que, saying each word clearly, “I only beg that you do not kill him, no matter what, you cannot kill him?”

In that instant, all the blood in Hua Wu Que’s body seemed to have suddenly froze! He wanted to scream, “You’re begging me not to kill him, don’t you know that if I do not kill him, he will kill me! For him to live, you’re willing to let me die? Did you come here tonight just to beg this of me?”

But Hua Wu Que will never say words like these, he’d rather that he is the one hurt, then to hurt others, and all the more he has no wish to hurt the one that he loves.

He only gave a bitter smile and said, “Even if you did not plead with me, I will not kill him.”

Tie Xin Lan stared at him, her gaze full of gentleness, but also full of pity and pain, and even with a trace of respect that the felt from the bottom of her heart. But she did not say anything else, only a quiet, “Thank you.”

The sun has not yet fully risen, the cream colored morning light permeated the land and mountain, the morning breeze brought with it the exciting fragrance of wood and grass.

Xiao Yu'er took a deep breath, lowered his head and mumbled, "Today seems to be a good day. Who would want to die with such weather?"

Su Ying leaned against him and on seeing his dejected look, can't help but reveal a trace of pity in her gaze. She gently caressed his hair, thinking of words that she can say to comfort him.

Suddenly a person can be heard saying solemnly, "When highly skilled people duel, the one with a troubled heart will surely lose. Since you understand this, then you should calm your heart down. You must know that this battle is extremely important, you can only win and not lose."

Without seeing who it is, Xiao Yu'er already knew that it is Yan Nan Tian who has arrived, and he can only lower his head and answer, "Yes."

Yan Nan Tian's stout figure looked like the god of the mountains descending from Heaven in the hazy fog. His burning eyes stared at Xiao Yu'er, "Have you settled all your affairs?"

Xiao Yu'er replied, "Yes." He suddenly lifted his head again and said, "But there is still one person whose gratitude I have not repaid."

Yan Nan Tian asked, "Who?"

"It's Wan Chun Liu, Uncle Wan." Yan Nan Tian's stern gaze revealed a trace of warmth, and said, "That you have such a thought, is already enough to repay his kindness towards you. But rain nurtures all creatures, not because it expect the creatures to repay him, as long as the creatures grow and live abundantly, he is already satisfied."

Xiao Yu'er replied, "I only want to know where he is now? Is he healthy?"

“You want to see him!”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Yes.”

Yan Nan Tian gave a slight smile and said, “Very good, he’s also waiting to see you…” Xiao Yu’er asked joyously, “Is he nearby?”

Yan Nan Tian replied, “He just arrived yesterday.”

“Su Ying had long wanted to meet this kind and skilled miracle healer as well.”

A priest wearing a long yellow robe stood under an ancient pine tree, his clothes billowing in the wind, looking grand and out of this world, his expression inexplicably calm and serene. Xiao Yu’er was shocked and overjoyed, and had already leapt over. He had a lot of things he wanted to say, but at that instant he felt as if something is stuck in his throat and he could not utter even one sentence.

Wan Chun Liu’s calm expression also revealed a look of excitement. They have been separated for so many years and now that they can still reunite at this place, they really feel a sense of sadness and joy.

Yan Nan Tian can’t help but weep over this as well, and suddenly said, “It’s almost dawn, I have to go.”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “I…” Yan Nan Tian answered, “You can stay here for the time being.”

He continued with a solemn expression, “Because you’re still not in a calm state of mind, it’s not a suitable time for you to fight now.”

Wan Chun Liu pointed out, “But it’s not good to wait too long as well, a long wait will cause confusion too.”

Yan Nan Tian replied, “Then I shall make an appointment with them at the third watch after noon!” As soon as he said the last word, he has disappeared amongst the white fog and cloud.

Wan Chun Liu looked at Xiao Yu’er, and looked at Su Ying, and said with a smile, “Actually I should have gone as well, but the two of you will still have a long time to talk in future, but I…”

Xiao Yu’er furrowed his brows, “What about you?”

Wan Chun Liu sighed and said, “Besides wanting to take a look at you, there’s nothing left in this world that I will miss.”

Xiao Yu’er was silent for a moment, then suddenly turned towards Su Ying with a stern expression and said, “Two men are talking together, must you stay by the side and look?”

Su Ying rolled her eyes and replied, “Then I’ll just take a walk outside.”

Wan Chun Liu looked as she walked further away, and said with a smile, “It seems that the wild horse is finally going to be tamed.”

Xiao Yu’er pouted, “She can forget about trying to rule me in this lifetime, only I will rule her. If not for the fact that she’s so obedient, I would have kicked her away long ago.”

Wan Chun Liu laughed, “Xiao Yu’er is after all still Xiao Yu’er, even though your heart as softened, but your mouth will refuse to be soft.”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Who said that my heart has softened?”

Wan Chun Liu replied, “If she’s not confident about you, why would she be so willing to listen to you. If she does not know that in future you will certainly listen to her, why would she want to be obedient to you now?” He continued with a smile, “In this aspect, women are far more smarter than men, they will definitely not be at a disadvantage.”

Xiao Yu'er said with a laugh, "I'm not asking you for help on teaching 'women'."

Wan Chun Liu replied, "I've also long seen that you must have something very secretive that you want to seek my help, what is the matter then? Speak quickly, there's no way I will be able to refuse you anyway." His gaze was full of smiles, and he looked at Xiao Yu'er and said, "Do you still remember the last time you asked me for stinking herbs, and made those people giddy from the stench, so who are you trying to trick this time?"

When Xiao Yu'er thought of that incident, he can't help but laugh as well. But he immediately became serious again and he lowered his voice, saying with a straight face, "This time I'm not asking you to help me play a prank, but it's a great matter involving a life."

Wan Chun Liu has never seen him speak so seriously before, and can't help but ask, "What is it that is so important?"

Xiao Yu'er sighed, "I only wish…"

Within the last two months, Su Ying has grown to understand Xiao Yu'er very well. When a woman wants to understand the man that she loves, it's not too difficult to accomplish. Usually whatever Xiao Yu'er is thinking or planning to do, Su Ying would be able to make a very good guess! Only this time, she really cannot figure out what secret would Xiao Yu'er want to tell Wan Chun Liu.

She did not want to walk too far away initially, but as she continued thinking, her eyes suddenly shone, as if she's suddenly made a big decision. Therefore the immediately walked up the mountain hurriedly. Every inch of this mountain, she is extremely familiar with.

She was thinking in her mind, "The Floral Princesses and Hua Wu Que have already waiting in the mountains for two days, where would they be staying at? …"

Just as she was thinking about it, her eyes have told her the answer. Hidden

behind the woods in front, she saw a corner of a red wall, and she knew that it is the ‘Xuan Wu Temple’ who used to be quite popular in the past, but has now become deserted. Now, it happened that there are a few people walking out from there.

These few people are very old, but they walked lightly and looked energetic. Obviously they are highly skilled martial artists, and one of them even carried a very large, weirdly shaped yet exquisite drum on his back. There is an old granny whose teeth have all dropped, but her eyes were alert, smiley, and even a little coquettish when she spoke. It can be imagined that she must have been quite flirtatious when she was young.

Su Ying did not know these people at all, and cannot recall who in the martial arts realm in the past always carried such a large drum. She only recognized one of them. That is Tie Xin Lan.

She realized that Tie Xin Lan does not look as haggard as she did a few days ago. Instead she seemed to have a strange glow on her face. Of course she will never find out what is it that caused the change in Tie Xin Lan.

She did not wish to be seen by Tie Xin Lan, and was thinking of finding a place to hide. But Tie Xin Lan’s head was lowered, as if she is feeling troubled, and did not see her at all.

These people were talking and walking up at the same time.

Su Ying could not hear what Tie Xin Lan’s group were saying, except for an old man with a face full of beard, and looked very imposing whose voice was especially loud. This old man said, “Xiao Lan, why are you still undecided, I’ll advise you to just follow Hua Wu Que wholeheartedly and forget about the rest. This lad may be a little sissy, but he can be a match to you if one’s not too particular.” Tie Xin Lan lowered her head, but who knows if she’s made any replied or not.

That old man patted her shoulder and laughed, “Little imp, why are you still pretending in front of me. Where have you been last night, did you really think that your father is old and muddle headed?” Tie Xin Lan still did not speak, but

her face blushed a fiery red.

The old granny said with a laugh, “I’ve never seen a father who would tease his own daughter, I think you are really old and muddleheaded.” That bearded old man looked heavenward and chortled, as if he found this very entertaining.

Su Ying was surprised and ecstatic, so happy that she almost jumped. Listening to their conversation, Tie Xin Lan and Hua Wu Que has obviously gotten closer, and even Tie Xin Lan’s father is encouraging her to marry Hua Wu Que. This is really the happiest thing that Su Ying has heard.

Actually all the parents in the world are the same, they all hope that their daughters can marry a reliable person. If she has a daughter in future, she’d rather that her daughter marry the heir to the ‘Floral Princesses’ and not wish for her daughter to marry a kid that grew up in the ‘Valley of Evil’.

That old man laughed and said, “Since you have decided to follow Hua Wu Que, why are you still looking so troubled. Once this duel is over, I’ll marry the both of you, and you need not worry about any more changes.”

That old granny laughed as well, “Her future husband is about to fight with someone else, how can she not be worried? If it was me, I’m afraid I would be thinking of a way long ago to… to kill that little fish.”

That old man chortled, “So it seems that, whoever marries you, would have gotten himself a good helper.”

The old granny replied, “That’s right, a pity that you people don’t have such good luck.”

Another tall and skinny old man said, “From what I see, that lad Hua Wu Que is quite refined, both his internal and external skills are commendable. Obviously he is born with good genes, and later received proper teachings from a famed teacher. If that Jiang Xiao Yu is about the same age as him, his martial arts will definitely not reach the same stage. There’s no way he will lose in this battle, all of you do not have to worry for him.”

But Su Ying began to worry. She had thought that the key point in winning or losing this battle is not in the strength or weakness of martial arts. But now, the more she thought about it, the more she feels that such a thinking is not totally correct. If Xiao Yu'er's martial arts cannot be compared to Hua Wu Que's at all, then even if he can harden his heart, it'll be of no use. The main point would still depend on whether Hua Wu Que can harden his heart and attack Xiao Yu'er. If the two were having a battle of wits, Xiao Yu'er will certainly win but if the two of them are fighting on brute strength, then there's no chance at all for Xiao Yu'er. If she wants Xiao Yu'er to win this battle, not only must she tell Xiao Yu'er to harden his heart, but she must also tell Hua Wu Que not to harden his heart. But if Xiao Yu'er can harden his heart to kill Hua Wu Que, why can't Hua Wu Que harden his heart to kill Xiao Yu'er as well. Even an ant will struggle to survive, much less a man?

"Hua Wu Que is living well, why would I think that he will seek his own death? There's no reason for him to sacrifice himself so that someone else can live." Su Ying sighed, suddenly realizing that she only saw the matter from one point of view, and never put herself in Hua Wu Que's shoes to think about it.

In her eyes, Xiao Yu'er's life is naturally more important than Hua Wu Que's. But what about in other people's eyes? What about in Hua Wu Que's own eyes?

She thought about it over and over, and the more she thought the more confused she became. She felt that she has never been this confused in her whole life. Actually no matter what she's thinking, there is only one thing that she can think of. If she wants Xiao Yu'er to live, then she must think of a way to make Hua Wu Que die! A dead person can't kill! Su Ying waited a long time behind a tree, and saw the few sisters of the Murong family and their husbands walking out from Xuan Wu Temple.

Their eyes were a little red, they appeared a little listless, obviously they have not slept well for the past two days. Those in the martial arts realm would basically 'treat the four seas as homes, and rest wherever they are'. But these young masters and ladies who lived in luxury can no longer be considered those in the 'martial arts realm'. They would not be able to sleep even if their bed has been changed, much less sleeping in an isolated temple.

But they were still neatly dressed, their hair perfectly coiffed, and even their

clothes were pencil straight, not even a crease to be seen. They were in a energetic discussion, and without even listening, Su Ying already knew that they must be talking about the duel between Xiao Yu'er and Hua Wu Que. This duel is not only earth shattering, but will also definitely go down in history. That's why they'd rather suffer here than to leave.

After this group of people walked towards the back of the mountain, Su Ying waited a long time again. But no one came out of Xuan Wu Temple, and there was no movement in there at all. Is Hua Wu Que still in Xuan Wu Temple? Are the Floral Princesses still with him? Su Ying gritted her teeth, and decided to take the risk.

She thought, before the great battle, these people came out, so maybe they want to let Hua Wu Que have a quiet rest, therefore they went up the mountain to wait. Now that Yan Nan Tian has reached the peak of the mountain, the Floral Princesses would unlikely stay here. They should at least let Hua Wu Que think of how to prepare for this battle quietly!

Although Xuan Wu Temple is almost deserted these past few years, like some big families which have fallen on hard times, they may be poor but the air of greatness will still be there. The pillars of courtyard inside the temple's door is so tall that it seems to be reaching into the heavens, and although the sun is already up, it's still dark and eerie inside the courtyard, the rays unable to permeate in.

Su Ying walked past the quiet courtyard, along the long corridor. The smell of incense permeated the great hall, and the gold paint on 'Lord Xuan Wu's' body has long peeled away. It seems that the two generals beneath him have not enjoyed food for a long time, so they looked listless as well. As for the banner in the hall, it has turned so dusty and yellowed that no one can tell what was it's original color. Ten odd priests sat cross legged there, their expressions slack, their mouths mumbling, and who knows if they're chanting scriptures or scolding people.

Su Ying walked past them but they didn't seem to have noticed her at all. Su Ying had wanted to find out some news from them, but on seeing them like this, she held herself back. Besides those with whose mind are a little abnormal, not many young girls in the world would want to befriend priests and monks.

The two rows of rooms at the back courtyard were quiet, and not even a person can be seen. Could it be that Hua Wu Que has left as well? Su Ying was still hesitating when she suddenly realized that at the bamboo woods behind the door, there were still a few houses, and these must be the abbot's rooms.

Although the ladies of the Murong family were used to living in luxury, but in this 'show', Hua Wu Que is the 'lead', and the lead will of course have special treatment. Even though they would have liked to stay in the abbot's room, they would still give in somewhat to Hua Wu Que.

Su Ying walked out immediately, and saw that the door to the abbot's room was not totally closed, and is now swinging with the wind. A spider was weaving its web under the beam, a cricket at the corner of the house was calling, the leaves on the tree dropped down one by one, falling on the papered window, making 'popping' sounds.

But inside the house it was quiet with no sounds of human activity at all. Su Ying called out quietly, "Master Hua."

No one replied. Could it be that Hua Wu Que has gone? And he forgot to close the door when he left.

But since Su Ying has come all the way here, she has to go in and take a look no matter what. She pushed open the door quietly, and saw that the abbot's room was very simply decorated., and now there were two flasks of wine and a few dishes on the wooden table. It seems that the dishes have not been touched at all, but the wine has been drunk quite a lot.

At the corner of the house there was a bed, and the blanket on the bed was thrown messily about, as if a few people has slept on the bed, and had a fitful night's sleep. Hua Wu Que has not left, he's still in the house.

But his mind seems to be ten thousand miles away. He stood in front of the window in a daze, in a world of his own. For a person like him with sensitive hearing, he is actually unaware that Su Ying has walked in. The sun's ray came in through the window's paper, shining on his face. His face was even whiter than

the paper on the window, but his eyes were filled with tiny red veins, his expression even more weary than everybody else.

Before the great duel, why didn't the Floral Princesses think of a way to help him rest well? Could it be that they're so sure that he will be able to defeat Xiao Yu'er no matter the circumstances? Or could it be that they simply do not care who wins or loses? Their aim is only to let Xiao Yu'er and Hua Wu Que fight, and can't be bothered about anything else. Su Ying thought that it's very strange, but she did not want to know the reason behind it, because she knows that no one will tell her.

Suddenly she heard Hua Wu Que heave a long sigh, and this sigh encompassed countless sadness and pain that he cannot confide in anyone else.

Why is he so sad, could it be because of Xiao Yu'er? Su Ying walked over slowly, and called out next to him, "Master Hua…" This time Hua Wu Que finally heard her. He turned his head around slowly and looked at Su Ying. Although he's looking at Su Ying, but his gaze seems to be focused on a far away place, so far that he can't even see it.

Su Ying remembered that like Xiao Yu'er, he had a pair of equally bright, equally moving eyes, but these eyes now looked as if they belong to a dead person, no light in it at all, and not even moving. To be stared at by such a pair of eyes is indeed uncomfortable.

Su Ying almost felt cold sweat breaking out from his stare, so she forced out a smile and said, "Could it be that Master Hua cannot recognize me now?"

Hua Wu Que nodded his head, and suddenly said, "Have you come to beg me not to kill Xiao Yu'er?"

Su Ying was stunned, and before she could speak, Hua Wu Que started laughing loudly.

His laughter is so strange, so maniacal that Su Ying would never imagine that a person like him will emit such chilling laughter. A normal person will never laugh like that, and Su Ying almost wanted to run away.

Hua Wu Que laughed and said, “Everyone is coming to beg me not to kill Xiao Yu’er, but why aren’t there anyone asking Xiao Yu’er not to kill me? Is it because I deserve to die?”

Su Ying replied, “This… this may be because everyone knows that Xiao Yu’er will definitely not kill you!”

Hua Wu Que suddenly stopped his laughter, “What about himself? Does he know himself?”

“If he knows, he would not have let me come, because I’m not here to beg you.”

Hua Wu Que asked, “No?”

Su Ying replied, “No.” She is also staring at Hua Wu Que, and said each word clearly, “I am here to kill you!”

This time even Hua Wu Que was stunned. He stared at Su Ying for a while before suddenly bursting out into laughter, “What makes you think that you can kill me? If you’ve really come to kill me, then you should not have said it out. If you did not say it, you might have a chance.”

Su Ying replied, “Do I not have a chance once I say it out?”

Hua Wu Que replied, “I’m afraid your chance will be very slim.”

Su Ying laughed, “My chance will at least be a lot higher that Xiao Yu’er, or else I would not have come.”

She suddenly turned around and poured out two cups of wine, saying “If I fight with you, naturally I won’t stand even a chance. But we’re humans, not beasts. Beasts only know how to settle all problems with brute strength, but humans do not.”

Hua Wu Que asked, “What do humans use then?”

Su Ying replied, “The plans of humans are at least more refined than a beast’s.”

She turned back again, and pointing at the two cups of wine on the table and said, “I’ve just poured these two cups of wine.”

Hua Wu Que replied, “I saw that.”

Su Ying continued, “You only need to choose one to drink, and our problem will be solved.”

Hua Wu Que asked, “Why?”

Su Ying replied, “Because I have poisoned one of the cups. If you choose the poisoned cup, you will die. If you did not choose the poisoned cup, I will die.” She smiled slightly and added, “Isn’t this plan more refined, and very fair as well?”

Hua Wu Que looked at the two cups of wine on the table, the muscles at the corner of his eye starting twitching involuntarily.

Su Ying asked, “You do not have the guts?” Hua Wu Que asked hoarsely, “Why must I choose one cup?”

Su Ying replied nonchalantly, “Because I want to decide once and for all our lives and deaths, isn’t this reason enough?”

Hua Wu Que asked, “Why must I fight it out with you?”

Su Ying replied, “Why must you fight it out with Xiao Yu’er? If you can fight him, why can’t I fight you?”

Hua Wu Que was stunned again.

Su Ying said coldly, “Are you thinking that there’s no confidence of winning by doing this? Will you only agree to fight with others when you’re sure that you will win?” She continued with an icy laugh, “But you obviously know that when you’re very confident of winning when dueling with someone, that is not called a duel, it’s called murder!”

Hua Wu Que’s expression turned ashen, cold sweat breaking out from his face.

Su Ying laughed coldly, “If you really do not have the guts, there is no way I can force you, but…”

Hua Wu Que gritted his teeth, and finally picked up a cup.

Su Ying stared at him and said each word slowly, “Whether this cup of wine is poisoned or not, you made the choice, so you should believe that it’s a fair duel. It’s a lot fairer than most of the duels in the world.”

Hua Wu Que suddenly smiled as well, “That’s right, this is indeed very fair, I…” Suddenly someone shouted, “This is not fair at all, you must not drink that cup of wine!”

With a ‘bang’ the door was knocked open and someone rushed in. It is Xiao Yu’er.

Su Ying asked hoarsely, “Why are you here as well?”

Xiao Yu’er smiled icily, “Why can’t I be here?”

He has already grabbed the wine cup from Hua Wu Que’s hand as he spoke, and said loudly, “Not only must I come, but I must drink this cup of wine.”

Su Ying’s expression changed, “You can’t drink this wine.”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “Why can’t it be drunk?”

Su Ying replied, “This… this cup is poisoned.”

Xiao Yu’er laughed coldly, “So you already know that this cup is poisoned.”

Su Ying replied, “It’s my wine, I put the poison in, why wouldn’t I know?”

Xiao Yu’er roared in anger, “Since you know it, why do you want him to drink it?”

Su Ying replied, “This is supposed to be a duel to the death, there must be someone who has to drink this cup of wine. It’s his bad luck to choose this cup, how can I be blamed?”

She stared at Hua Wu Que and added, “I did not ask you to choose this cup, right?” Hua Wu Que only nodded. He may not be afraid of death, but once he thought that he almost made a trip to the gates of hell earlier, his palms just broke out in cold sweat.

Xiao Yu’er looked at the wine in the cup and said with a frosty smile, “I know you did not ask him to choose this cup, but it’s all the same no matter which cup he chooses.”

Su Ying asked, “Why?”

Xiao Yu’er roared, “Because both the cups are poisoned. You can trick others with such tactics, but you can never trick me. It doesn’t matter which cup he chooses, he will die once he drinks it, so there’s no need for you to drink the other cup at all.”

Su Ying looked at him, tears almost falling from her eyes.

Xiao Yu’er shook his head and said, “Hua Wu Que oh Hua Wu Que, the problem with you is that you trust women too much!…”

Su Ying sighed sadly and mumbled, “Xiao Yu’er oh Xiao Yu’er, the problem with you is that you distrust women too much.” She suddenly picked up the other cup of wine from the table and drank it in one gulp.

The expression on Hua Wu Que’s face changed, and he stammered, “You… you’ve wronged her, I should still drink this cup of poisoned wine.”

Xiao Yu’er asked, “Why!”

Hua Wu Que shouted back, “Since this is a fair duel, and since I have lost, I will die with no complaints!”

Su Ying sighed, “You’re really a gentleman, I only hate myself for…” Xiao Yu’er suddenly laughed loudly, “That’s right, he is a gentleman, but I’m not, that’s why I know your tricks.”

Hua Wu Que said angrily, “How can you say that about her, she has already drunk the other cup of wine!”

Xiao Yu’er said with a laugh, “Of course she can drink it, because she is the one who poisoned it, and she has long taken the antidote. Don’t you understand such a simple trick?”

Hua Wu Que looked at her, unable to say anything else. Su Ying looked at him as well, and after a long, long time, she muttered, “You’re really a smart person, really too smart!” She smiled sadly and added, “But no matter what, I did it for you, you really should not have treated me this way.”

Xiao Yu’er roared again, “How do you want me to treat you? Did you think that once you’ve killed Hua Wu Que, I’ll be grateful to you?”

Su Ying replied, “Naturally I know that you will not be grateful to me, because you are all heroes, and heroes will not use unorthodox methods on others. When heroes want to kill someone, they’ll do it themselves!” As she spoke, tears fell from her eyes. But she immediately dried her tears and continued, “Let me ask

you, even if I am one who uses unorthodox methods to kill, what's the difference between me and you people?"

Xiao Yu'er roared, "Of course it's different, at least we're more aboveboard than you!"

Su Ying laughed coldly, "Aboveboard? You obviously know that your opponent is not your match and yet you want to duel with him, is that fair? Is that aboveboard? Could it be that only using weapons to kill is considered fair, considered aboveboard. Then why don't you learn from dogs and use your mouths to bite? Isn't that even more aboveboard?"

She pointed at Xiao Yu'er and said, "Besides, at least I have a purpose in killing others, I'm doing it for you. No matter what a woman does for the person she loves, it will never be considered shameless, but what about you people?" She continued fiercely, "You're going to fight to the death soon, it's either you kill him, or he'll kill you, and who are you doing this for? For what? You're just dog biting dog, and two mad dogs at that."

Xiao Yu'er was stunned by the reprimand, and unable to say even a single word. This is the first time in his life that he was speechless after getting a scolding. Hua Wu Que stood there, cold sweat dripping down from his head.

Su Ying cried hoarsely, "I am a conniving, vicious woman, you're a great hero. From now on, I no longer wish to think so highly of myself that I can be a match to you. Who lives or dies, is no business of mine…" Her words slowly became chocked, and she finally can't help but wail loudly, and ran out with her face covered.

She did not turn back. Once a person's heart is shattered, he will never turn back.

The leaves on the tree, dropped down on the paper window one by one, the cricket at the corner of the wall is still making noises, but the spider's web under the beam has been torn apart by the wind. The web is broken, but it will be mended very quickly. The spider will never give up, but once the web of feelings is broken, can it be mended very quickly as well? Do humans have the same

never say die spirit as the spider?

Xiao Yu’er and Hua Wu Que faced each other, not speaking for a long time. After a long moment, Hua Wu Que sighed, “Why did you have to treat her like that?”

Xiao Yu’er was quiet for a long time before mumbling, “It seems that there’s a lot of differences between you and me.”

Hua Wu Que replied, “No one is totally alike.”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “Because of me she’s going to kill but I gave her a tongue lashing. She wants to kill you, but you’re speaking up for her. This is the biggest difference between us.”

He continued with a bitter smile, “That’s why you’re forever the gentle man, but I’m forever the…”

Hua Wu Que interrupted him, “Why must you always belittle yourself. Actually you’re the real gentleman, or else why would you have hurt her because of me?”

He sighed and continued, “Besides you, I cannot think of anyone else who will hurt his own lover because of his enemy.”

Xiao Yu’er suddenly smiled and said, “I did it not for you, but for myself.”

Hua Wu Que asked, “For yourself?”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “That’s right, for myself…” He slowly repeated this sentence again, an unfathomable look flashed in his eyes, making him suddenly look like a very profound person. Every time Hua Wu Que sees this look in his eyes, he knows that very soon someone is going to be in trouble, but who will be his target this time?

Xiao Yu’er continued calmly, “Because if I let you die in the hands of another

now, not only will I regret it for the rest of my life, but I'm afraid I may be in pain for eternity as well."

Hua Wu Que's expression changed and he asked, "Why?" Xiao Yu'er replied, "Because…" But before he can say anything else, someone suddenly commented, "Because he wants to kill you with his own hands!" This is Princess Yao Yue's voice, but it's even colder than usual.

Her looks changed as well. Although it's still as pale and cold, but there is also now a clear, soft glow. If her face is akin to ice in the past, then it is now akin to jade.

Xiao Yu'er looked at her and heaved a long sigh, "It's only been two, three days since we last met, but you actually look a lot younger now. I guess all the beauties in the world should practice that 'Clear Jade Skill' of yours." Princess Yao Yue only stared at him coldly, not speaking at all.

Xiao Yu'er sighed again, "Ever since I saved you, you have been ignoring me. Sometimes I really wish that we'll forever be trapped in that rat's hole. At that time you were so obedient towards me, so courteous towards me."

Princess Yao Yue's expression changed, and said, "Have you finished talking?"

Xiao Yu'er laughed, "Yes, but I just want to remind you that if not for me, no matter how much younger you become, you'll still be dead after a few days of being trapped in that rat's hole."

Looking down from the peak of the mountain, the clouds floated by and the rivers were winding like ribbons. Yan Nan Tian stood alone at the tallest point of the peak, and looked so lonely. But he has since learned to tolerate loneliness long ago. Since ancient times, anyone who wants to stand at the highest point, must first learn how to tolerate loneliness. He's not the only person on the mountain, but it seems that everyone is very far away from him. The breeze fluttered his clothing, a white cloud floated past his eyes.

Murong Shan Shan suddenly heaved a long sigh and said sadly, "Never has there been someone like him in the past, and never will there be someone like

him in future… although Hero Yan is the ultimate hero, but how many times have he really experienced happiness in his life?”

Murong Shan Shan sighed again and continued, “It seems that it’s better to be an ordinary person.”

Murong Shuang sighed as well and said slowly, “I want to go with the wind, but am afraid that the high towers would be too cold…”

Suddenly someone exclaimed, “They’re coming, coming.”

Murong Shuang asked, “Who is coming?” She turned around and saw Xiao Yu’er and Hua Wu Que appearing amongst the clouds.

The wind blew even stronger, the sky is slowly darkening.

Su Ying walked aimlessly, not knowing how long she has walked, or where she has walked to. She only wish that lightning will strike now and shatter her to pieces, and the pieces will be blown away by the wind, to the ends of the earth, the further the better. But she also wish that Xiao Yu’er will suddenly rush over, kneel beneath her feet and beg for her forgiveness, and swear that he will never leave her again.

But Xiao Yu’er did not come, the lightning did not strike as well. The bitter wine in her heart is still full, and she does not know when will she be able to finish drinking it.

From where Tie Xin Lan stood, she can see Xiao Yu’er, and she can see Hua Wu Que as well. She saw the pain in Hua Wu Que’s eyes, and her own heart broke as well.

But Xiao Yu’er was still smiling, as if he’s not concerned at all. Could it be that he’s certain that Hua Wu Que will kill him? Or is it because he’s confident of dealing with Hua Wu Que? Tie Xin Lan chewed on her lips until there was blood. The blood is salty, but her heart is bitter, and who would be able to understand the bitterness in her heart?

End of Chapter 123

Chapter 113

Chapter 124

A gust of wind blew past, heaven and earth seemed to be suddenly filled with a murderous air.

Xiao Yu'er shrunk his neck in and said, "What strong wind, how cold, I really should have worn a few more pieces of clothing."

Yan Nan Tian furrowed his brow and asked in a low voice, "You cannot stand it already?"

Xiao Yu'er replied, "Uncle need not worry, I am not that delicate."

Yan Nan Tian was silent for a moment before saying slowly, "When a person's internal energy is of a certain level, although he is still susceptible to cold and heat, but at least he won't be like an average person who is afraid of cold and heat."

Xiao Yu'er replied, "Yes."

Yan Nan Tian added, "The martial arts you learnt is the essence of all the hard work that various martial arts elders had put in, and all the moves can be considered one of the best in martial arts. Besides, since you were young your Uncle Wan has given you a good foundation, and you have not deviated in the practice of your martial arts. Because of all these conditions added together, I was not worried about letting you duel with Hua Wu Que, but I do not really know how good is your internal power. You're very clever, and very lucky. My only worry is that you're too flippant, and too impatient, so you have not cultivated the pure essence of your martial arts."

Xiao Yu’er lowered his head and laughed, “I may not concentrate fully when doing other things, but when it comes to martial arts I am quite serious.”

Yan Nan Tian nodded his head, “I hope so.” He suddenly asked again, “Since you have fought with Hua Wu Que before, do you know how is his martial arts?”

Xiao Yu’er thought for a moment and said, “For Floral Palace to enjoy such fame, naturally there is a special secret to their martial arts, especially that ‘Shifting Flower Grafting Jade’ skill, really gives others a headache.” He continued with a laugh, “Luckily I have more or less found out some of its secrets.”

Yan Nan Tian replied with a straight face, “Shifting Flower Grafting Jade is only one of the many martial arts skills of the Floral Palace. The changes in Floral Palace’s martial arts are complex, calm yet deeply profound. Besides, although I see that Hua Wu Que may not look as smart as you, but actually he’s definitely not dumber than you. Your martial arts are superficial yet messy, his martial arts is sharp yet deep. When you fight with him, don’t try to fight head on with him, it’s best to think of ways to make him use up some of his energy first.”

Xiao Yu’er replied, “I know this as well. His foundation is really better than mine. My chances of winning may not be high when dueling with him, but I have a very big advantage.”

Yan Nan Tian said fiercely, “In martial arts, there’s no way one can take advantage, when you’re thinking of taking someone’s advantage, then you would have lost first.”

Xiao Yu’er said seriously, “Yes, but… I already know how good his martial arts is, but he does not know the origins of my martial arts at all, because I have never revealed my true prowess in front of anyone.”

A trace of admiration passed through Yan Nan Tian’s eyes, and he said, “Very good, only when you know yourself and your opponent, will you be able to win every single battle.”

Xiao Yu’er suddenly laughed, “Uncle Yan, I’d like to ask you something as well.”

Yan Nan Tian replied, “Go ahead.”

Xiao Yu’er blinked and said, “If you were to really fight with Princess Yao Yue, how confident will you be of winning?”

Yan Nan Tian looked at a floating cloud in the distance, silent for a long moment, and the corners of his strong lips revealed a rare trace of a smile. He did not reply Xiao Yu’er’s question, but Xiao Yu’er no longer need his answer. Xiao Yu’er can’t help but reveal a smile that came straight from his heart as well.

Wan Chun Liu who had been standing by the side all this while without speaking suddenly said, “The time’s almost up, are you ready?”

Xiao Yu’er nodded his head but suddenly asked, “I have a question to ask Uncle Wan as well.”

Wan Chun Liu replied with a smile, “I may not be able to answer all your questions, I may not be as knowledgeable as you.”

Xiao Yu’er smiled as well, “But Uncle Wan will surely know this.”

He suddenly took out a wine cup very carefully and said, “There’s still a drop of wine in this cup. I keep suspecting that the wine is poisoned, and it’s a kind of poison that’s colorless and odorless, can Uncle Wan see if it’s really poisoned?”

Wan Chun Liu took over the wine cup and used his pinky to dab on the remaining wine in the cup, put it to his nose to sniff, used his tongue and lightly licked, and said, “This wine…”

Xiao Yu’er suddenly interrupted him, “Regardless of whether this wine is poisoned or not, Uncle Wan please do not tell me now.”

Wan Chun Liu asked, “Why is that so?”

Xiao Yu’er sighed and said, “Because if the wine is really poisoned, I’ll be very angry, but if the wine is not poisoned, I’ll feel very sad. Therefore Uncle Wan better wait until after my duel to tell me in case I get distracted.”

Although Wan Chun Liu found it strange, but he still replied with a smile, “All right, anyway no one can ever guess what you’re up to.”

But Xiao Yu’er forgot about one thing. If he were to lose, then won’t he forever not know the answer?

The Murong ladies and their husbands naturally can see what’s happening on both Xiao Yu’er and Hua Wu Que’s side, and were feeling perplexed.

Murong Shuang commented, “Did you see that? It seems that Xiao Yu’er and Hero Yan has endless things to talk about, but Hua Wu Que and the Floral Princesses only stood there staring.”

Murong Shan Shan replied, “That’s right, it seems that the Floral Princess is totally unconcerned whether Hua Wu Que will win or lose this battle. Don’t the master and disciple have any feelings between them at all?”

Nangong Liu sighed, “Maybe it’s because they feel confident that Hua Wu Que will win this battle.”

Murong Shan Shan pursed her lips, “I don’t think so. Hua Wu Que may be quite good with his wits and martial arts, but Xiao Yu’er cannot be too easily dismissed as well. If we talk about the ability to react while fighting, I think no one else can be compared to him.”

Murong Shuang agreed, “That’s right. I think that Hua Wu Que’s martial arts is a little better, but when highly skilled martial artists fight, brute strength alone is not of much use. The main point is to see who can react to circumstances better and gain an upper hand on the enemy first.”

Qin Jian said, “From what I know, Xiao Yu’er’s best martial arts seems to be a

collection of the best moves from various sects, he has at least a sixty percent chance of winning this duel.”

Murong Shan Shan replied, “I think it’s more than sixty percent.”

They don’t really like Hua Wu Que that much, that’s why they were rooting for Xiao Yu’er, but the people on ‘Mad Lion’ Tie Zhan’s side were different.

Xiao Nu Shi was telling Tie Zhan, “How confident do you think your son-in-law is of winning this battle?”

Tie Zhan replied, “One hundred percent.”

Xiao Nu Shi laughed, “Don’t you be so sure, I think that Xiao Yu’er is not so easy to deal with. Besides, he has Yan Nan Tian supporting him.”

Tie Zhan replied, “What fart’s use is that, Yan Nan Tian can’t fight on his behalf. No matter how smart he is, but a disciple taught by Li Da Zui, Du Jiao Jiao and the rest will be limited in his prowess.”

Xiao Nu Shi said, “Oh? And I thought he’s Yan Nan Tian’s disciple. If I’ve known that his martial arts were taught by those evil friends of yours, I won’t even be bothered to watch this duel.”

Suddenly Yan Nan Tian got up and said, “The time has arrived, go.”

Although his words were directed at Xiao Yu’er, but his voice was like a bell that resonated throughout the mountains.

Hua Wu Que stood up as well, bowed towards the Floral Princesses and asked, “Teacher, do you have any further instructions?”

Princess Yao Yue replied, “No, go ahead, I know you will definitely not disappoint me.” Her voice may sound calm, but her feelings were extremely excited.

The last moment is finally here. This time, she will not allow this duel to stop halfway again no matter what. This time, either Xiao Yu’er or Hua Wu Que must fall.

Whoever is thinking of describing her feelings of nervousness and excitement now, his efforts will be futile, because her feelings of nervousness and excitement now, no one else in the world will be able to imagine. The only one who can understand her feelings, naturally is Princess Lian Xing.

Her face looks even more pale than usual and when Hua Wu Que turned around to look at her, she actually avoided Hua Wu Que’s eyes, because she is afraid that she will blurt out this secret! She is not a person with excessive feelings, but on this rainy day, she realized that she has changed a little. Because in that cave, she has gone through a lot of things that she has never gone through before. Never did she imagine that all these things would actually happen to her.

Throughout her life she never knew how it felt like for someone to face death, and have never known fear. She has never relied on others, nor has she ever felt gratitude towards anyone. Naturally she has never been hungry, never been drunk, and all the more she’d never imagine that she will one day fall into the arms of a man. All these things that she’s never experienced in decades of her life, actually befell her all at once within a short span of two, three days. And each event is so fresh and etched, that she cannot forget about it no matter how hard she tried.

These few days, whenever she thought of Xiao Yu’er, she will feel a stab of pain in her heart. Xiao Yu’er has really treated her quite nicely, but how did she treat Xiao Yu’er? This venomous and cruel plan is all arranged by her. The wretched fate of Xiao Yu’er and Hua Wu Que, with just one word from her, can be changed totally. But she cannot, and she dare not say the word!

Xiao Yu’er bowed respectfully towards Yan Nan Tian and Wan Chun Liu and walked out. Hua Wu Que is already waiting for him, but it seems that he’s not in a hurry at all, and was greeting everyone.

And then he walked towards Hua Wu Que.

Hua Wu Que looked at him saying his farewells to everyone, and can't describe the feelings he had. Because only he knows that Xiao Yu'er will not die. He has promised Tie Xin Lan, and to keep his promise, he has decided to sacrifice himself. Death, is not an easy matter. When a person is about to die, only then will he know that life is worth pining for. But Tie Xin Lan's feelings will be forever etched in his heart, never be able to discard. When he cannot have both, he can only choose to give up life, and embrace love.

When he saw Xuanyuan San Guang, Little Fairy and the rest feeling pity towards Xiao Yu'er, Hua Wu Que felt even more difficulty describing how he felt. He is now determined to die, but there's not even a single person he can bid farewell to.

He asked himself, "After my death, who will feel sad for me, weep for me?" He almost wanted to run towards Tie Xin Lan, hug her and have a good cry, but he did not do that and he cannot do that. He can only stand there quietly waiting for Xiao Yu'er to come over….

The battle has begun! In the martial arts realm, every day, every hour, every instant, there'll be countless people having death duels but for a thousand, hundred years, there will never be another battle that will be sadder than this! Because in this duel, both parties have no wish to hurt the other, both parties would rather sacrifice himself, never has the martial arts realm witnessed such a situation. And the saddest thing is, the one who dies in this duel may be pitiful, but the fate of the one living will be even worse.

Even before the duel started, even as far as twenty years ago, it's already fated that the two of them will only face death. But these two have to be blood brothers. Those present, with the exception of the Floral Princesses, if they were to know about this matter, they will certainly feel depressed and weep. But what a pity that until they're dead, no one will know this secret!

Only Tie Xin Lan's feelings is different from everyone else's. Hua Wu Que and Xiao Yu'er did not speak at all before they started the fight! Maybe it's because they feel that they have said everything they want to say long ago, and there's nothing much to be said now. Hua Wu Que did not speak to Tie Xin Lan as well although Tie Xin Lan's fate is now intertwined with his, and undoubtedly she is

already the most important person in his life.

"Begin." Once Yan Nan Tian's voice called out, the two of them started fighting. But before Hua Wu Que struck, Tie Xin Lan realized that he took a look at her.

Although he only took one look at her, but this look is worth more than a million or a thousand words. Tie Xin Lan saw his eyes, and knows that he is bidding his farewell to her, he is making a promise to her, he is telling her that his love is stronger than the mountains and deeper than the sea. She already knows that he is telling her, "I will not let you down, Xiao Yu'er will definitely not die, don't worry."

But Tie Xin Lan's heart has shattered. Although she has gotten what she asked for, but is this really what she wanted? Does she really want Hua Wu Que dead. She looked at Hua Wu Que, tears flowing down her cheeks.

"I will not let you down as well, don't worry!" She retreated quietly, and left, because no matter what she cannot bear to watch Hua Wu Que die because of her, die in front of her. Because not only is Hua Wu Que her lover, her husband, but also her friend, her brother, her soul, her life…

End of Chapter 124

Chapter 114

Chapter 125

The white clouds floated by.

Su Ying collapsed under the tree, looking at the floating clouds in a daze, her tears dried up long ago. Because her life and soul, her lover and husband, is now among the clouds, fighting a duel to the death with someone else. But she does not even know the outcome of this duel. Did Xiao Yu'er win? Or lose? Alive? Or dead?…Su Ying rubbed her eyes and told herself, "Why should I be concerned about him? Who is he to me?"

She wanted to stand up, to pick herself up, but not only is her heart shattered, her whole body seems to be shattered as well, so how can she stand up.

Suddenly, heart-rending sobs can be heard from behind the tree, as if someone has collapsed at the other side of the tree. The tree is as wide as three people holding hands around it, so she did not realize that Su Ying is behind the tree.

But Su Ying could tell that she is Tie Xin Lan, and was thinking, "Why has Tie Xin Lan come here? Why is she so sad? Could it be that the duel is over, could it be that either Xiao Yu'er or Hua Wu Que is dead? But, who died?"

Su Ying struggled to get up and went around.

Tie Xin Lan was startled, and asked hoarsely, "You're here as well?"

Su Ying grabbed her arms tightly and asked, "He… he's dead?" Tie Xin Lan quietly nodded her head, and cried bitterly again. Su Ying only felt giddiness, and

her whole body almost collapsed. Before she even fell to the ground, she has started wailing.

Both of them sat under the tree facing each other, crying. After a long time spent crying, Tie Xin Lan suddenly asked, “Xiao Yu’er is not dead, why are you crying?”

Su Ying was stunned, and she wiped her tears, “Xiao Yu’er is not dead? Is Hua Wu Que the one who died?”

Tie Xin Lan replied, “Mmm.”

Su Ying was surprised and ecstatic, but suddenly raised her voice, “I don’t believe it, Xiao Yu’er will never kill Hua Wu Que.”

Tie Xin Lan replied, “It’s not him who killed Hua Wu Que, but Hua Wu Que killed himself.”

Su Ying asked, “He killed himself? Why?” Tie Xin Lan’s lips are already bloody from her chewing on it, and she stammered, “Because… because I begged him not to kill Xiao Yu’er. Since he promised me, he can only die himself…”

Su Ying opened her eyes wide in shock and stared, as if she has never seen someone like her. After a long moment, she said each word clearly, “You obviously know that Hua Wu Que will die, yet you’re still begging him not to kill Xiao Yu’er?”

Tie Xin Lan’s body seemed constricted, and she gritted her teeth in pain.

Su Ying continued, “Hua Wu Que obviously knows this, but he still promised you?”

Tie Xin Lan’s pained eyes revealed a trace of tenderness and said, “He is the greatest person on earth.”

Su Ying asked, “But for Xiao Yu’er, you’re willing to let such a great man die? I did not expect that your feelings for Xiao Yu’er would be so deep…”

Tie Xin Lan suddenly shouted, “But the one I truly love is not Xiao Yu’er.”

Su Ying asked, “It’s not Xiao Yu’er, then is it Hua Wu Que?”

Tie Xin Lan wept, “That’s right, I… I love him, totally love him. You’ll never understand how deeply I love him now, no one knows how deeply I love him.”

Su Ying exclaimed, “But you want him to die!”

Tie Xin Lan covered her face and sobbed, “That’s right, because I am determined to die with him.”

Su Ying looked at Tie Xin Lan, shocked as well. After a moment, she heaved a long sigh, “Why are you doing this?”

Tie Xin Lan replied with a cry, “Because I’ve fallen in love with Hua Wu Que, Hua Wu Que has also fallen in love with me. I feel that we cannot let Xiao Yu’er down, so we can only die… only with death can we repay him.”

Su Ying heaved a long sigh, “I still do not understand. Even though I am a woman as well, I still do not understand your intentions, no wonder men say that a woman’s heart is difficult to grasp…” Suddenly she saw Tie Xin Lan’s body convulsing and her whole body rolled into a ball.

Su Ying cried hoarsely, “What’s wrong with you?”

Tie Xin Lan shut her eyes tightly, her face full of pain, but the corners of her mouth curved up into a slight smile. This smile is actually filled with happiness and bliss. She said each word clearly, “Now that he is dead, I’m going to die too. We’ll be reunited immediately. All the ugly, cruel, painful things in the world, will never be able to hurt us again.”

Su Ying held her hands and said, “Nonsense, you won’t die.”

Tie Xin Lan said with a sad smile, “I’ve already taken the most venomous poison in the world, I will surely die.”

Now, Xiao Yu’er and Hua Wu Que have fought for more than 700 stances. Their martial arts are like the water flowing in the river that keeps on flowing, never ending. Strange and wonderful strokes kept on appearing, no one dared to blink an eye, it was extraordinary! But this battle is obviously coming to an end. It doesn’t mean that they have used up their internal energy, but because they have no wish to continue the fight.

They’re like a pair of peacocks, who have opened their beautiful tail feathers. Now, they can die with no regrets!

Xiao Nu Shi can’t help but shake her head and sighed, “A pity, oh pity! These two kids are geniuses who are rarely seen in the martial arts realm for a hundred years, it’s be a pity no matter which one died.”

Mi Shi Ba can’t help but sigh and nod, “This is called fate makes fun of men… fate makes fun of men…”

The others felt the same way as them too, even Yan Nan Tian can’t help but felt admiration and pity for Hua Wu Que. Of course he hopes that Xiao Yu’er will win, but he did not wish to see a youth like Hua Wu Que die so horribly. But he did not know that neither of them would be able to live.

Only Princess Lian Xing knows this secret. On her pale yet beautiful face, she can’t help but reveal an overwrought expression. She mumbled in her heart, “How can I let these two people die? Hua Wu Que is a child that I brought up, Xiao Yu’er not only saved my life, but my reputation, how can I watch these two people die in front of me!”

She suddenly dashed out. In that instant, she has totally forgotten the hatred she had for the last twenty years, and only felt hot blood coursing through her, unable to control herself.

She can't help but yelled, "Stop, I have something to say." But a pity her voice is hoarse, and everyone was captivated by this mind-shattering duel, and no one noticed what she was trying to say.

But Princess Yao Yue noticed her. As soon as she spoke, Princess Yao Yue has flown towards her, and fast as lightning, grabbed her arms and sealed her acupoints. She asked fiercely, "What do you have to say?"

Princess Lian Xing weeped, "Sister, it happened twenty years ago, it's been so long. Jiang Feng and his wife may have let you down, but… but now even their bodies have turned into ashes. Sister, you… why must you continue hating them?"

"You want to spare them?" Princess Yao Yue's face became so pale that it's transparent again, and said "Are you going to reveal their secret now?"

Princess Lian Xing said, "I only want to…" She suddenly noticed Princess Yao Yue's expression and can't help but shivered. Princess Yao Yue said each word clearly, "Ever since you were seven years old, you'd love to create mischief for me. No matter what I like, you would want to fight with me for it, no matter what I want to do, you would think of a way to create trouble!" Her face became more and more transparent, looking like ice that has been covered by winter's fog.

Princess Lian Xing's expression changed as well, and stammered, "You… don't you forget, I am still your sister." She quickly turned around, thinking of using the opportunity to shake off Princess Yao Yue's hand, but by now there is a horrible force of coldness coming out from Princess Yao Yue's palms, going right into her heart.

Princess Lian Xing asked in shock, "You're crazy, what are you trying to do?"

Princess Yao Yue said each word slowly, "I am not crazy, it's just that I've waited twenty years for today, I will not let anyone destroy it, not even you…"

With every word that she spoke, the coldness in Princess Lian Xing's body increased and by the time she finished her sentence, Princess Lian Xing's body is

almost hardened. She only felt as if she has been dunked in an icy lake naked, and the water surrounding her is slowly turning into ice. She wanted to struggle, but she has no more strength.

Princess Yao Yue is not looking at her at all, but staring at Xiao Yu'er and Hua Wu Que, the corners of her mouth slowly curling up into a sinister smile and said slowly, "Look, this battle is almost over. If Jiang Feng and Yue Nu were to know that their twin sons are now killing each other, they will surely regret what they have done."

Princess Lian Xing's lips trembled, and suddenly she used all her strength and shouted, "Don't fight anymore, do you hear? Because you are blood brothers!"

Princess Yao Yue smiled coldly and did not stop her at all, because although she has used all her strength to shout, but the others could only hear her teeth chattering, and can't tell what is she shouting about at all. Princess Lian Xing's eyes unconsciously teared. For decades, this may be the first time she cried, but the tears that came out became ice in a while as well.

She knows that there really is no way to change Xiao Yu'er and Hua Wu Que's fate now, because the only one in the world who knows this secret is now Princess Yao Yue. And Princess Yao Yue will never reveal this secret, unless Xiao Yu'er or Hua Wu Que were to fall, and by then everything will come to an end. This complicated, entangling hatred will only end then. This ending is too distressing, Princess Lian Xing has no wish to watch further. In reality, she is unable to watch further.

Tie Xin Lan collapsed into Su Ying's arms, panting, and struggled to say, "We… we can be considered sisters, now I want to beg you of one thing, I wonder if you will agree!"

Su Ying caressed her hair gently and said softly, "It doesn't matter what you want me to do, just say it."

Tie Xin Lan said, "After I die, I hope that you will bury Hua Wu Que and I together, and I hope you will tell Xiao Yu'er, although I cannot marry him, but I'll forever be his sister, his friend."

Su Ying rubbed her eyes and said, “I… I promise you.”

Tie Xin Lan stared at her and said slowly again, “I also hope that you will take good care of Xiao Yu’er. He may be a wild horse, but with you by his side, maybe he will become a little better.”

Su Ying sighed sadly and said, “Will he?”

Tie Xin Lan replied, “Yes, because I understand him very well. I know that the person he truly likes, is you, as for me… He has never liked me, it’s just that he always wanted to win, to be better…”

Su Ying trembled, “I know… I know everything, please don’t say anymore. No matter what you want me to do, I will promise you.”

Tie Xin Lan smiled weakly, and slowly closed her eyes. Her smile is so serene, because she is no longer troubled, no longer worried. Su Ying looked at her, and her tears unconsciously fell like rain…

Hua Wu Que’s hands gradually slowed. He knows that the time is up, there’s no reason to drag on further.

Everything will have to end sooner or later and at a time like this, he is feeling especially calm instead. Jealousy, hatred, winning, boasting… all these mundane feelings have reached a new level suddenly, and this new level is the highest sentiment for humans.

He only hopes that Xiao Yu’er will live well, Tie Xin Lan will live well, all his friends and enemies will live well, and live happily. He concentrated on Xiao Yu’er’s moves, waiting for a chance.

Waiting for a chance to die! He is preparing to let Xiao Yu’er ‘win’ magnificently, not wishing for anyone to see that he is sending himself to death’s door, and even more so not wishing for Xiao Yu’er to know. Therefore he cannot deliberately reveal any loopholes, not collide into Xiao Yu’er’s palms himself. He

is going to wait until Xiao Yu'er is using a very strange move, then he'll deliberately find himself 'unable to avoid it'!

Xiao Yu'er's body turned, his left palm slicing down diagonally, his right palm hidden behind his body. Hua Wu Que knows that his laft palm is meant to be a fake move, and the real fatal move will be the right palm that is going to follow. When the other party blocks his left palm, he will have to turn his body, and the right palm will naturally strike from the bottom. This move can be real or fake, and the area where it's striking is uncommon and strange, and it can be considered one of the rare fatal moves in the martial arts realm.

But it seems that Xiao Yu'er is getting confused from the fight, and he actually forgot that he has used this move once earlier, and although it was a close shave for Hua Wu Que when he was avoiding this move earlier, but now he would have been very familiar with this move.

This is exactly Hua Wu Que's 'chance'. His palm cut up from the bottom, aiming directly at Xiao Yu'er's armpit, because he knows that by the time his palm reaches that point, Xiao Yu'er's body would have turned over. When his palm attack meets only the air, he would have 'used up his moves' and when Xiao Yu'er's right palm rushes out, he will immediately die under Xiao Yu'er's palm. So his move may look like a very ingenious move, but it's actually a move that will send him to his death.

Who would have expected that this time Xiao Yu'er's body turned very much slower than previously, and by the time Hua Wu Que's palm reached his armpit, his body has not turned over. The soft bones under the armpit, is one of the fatal points in the body. Hua Wu Que was very confident, and deliberately used a lot of his strength in this attack, so by the time he realized something was wrong, it was too late to retract or change his move.

With a loud 'bang', Xiao Yu'er flew out from his blow.

Amongst all the gasps of shock, Yan Nan Tian has already leapt up seventy feet, and flew over like a huge bird. Xuanyuan San Guang and the rest also ran towards Xiao Yu'er in shock.

Xiao Yu'er's face was pale, his breathing shallow, as if he's on the brink of death. Checking his pulse, it seems that his veins have been broken or injured, and he's likely to be beyond hope. Anyone would be able to tell that he will definitely not live.

Yan Nan Tian was so anxious that he was unconsciously weeping. He stamped his feet and exclaimed, "You… you obviously could have avoided that move, you… you… you…"

Xiao Yu'er smiled sadly and struggled to speak, "I had wanted to use that move to deliberately bait him, but who would have known that he…" He suddenly coughed, blood trickling out from the corner of his mouth, and panted, "It's all because I… I'm too smart, and instead it backfired… backfired…" He repeated the word 'backfired' twice, his voice getting weaker and weaker, his eyes slowly closing, his breathing slowly quieting. It seems that he still wants to open his eyes, to take a last look at this world that he can't bear to leave behind, but it's no use no matter how hard he tries. His eyes will never open.

Hua Wu Que stood there woodenly, his mind in a complete mess, his eyes totally blank. He cannot think, cannot see at all.

Xiao Yu'er is dead! Xiao Yu'er is actually killed by him! He only wished that this is not true, it's just a dream, a nightmare! It seems that his tears have dried up.

Yan Nan Tian suddenly roared furiously, turned his body and struck at Hua Wu Que with his palm, and Hua Wu Que just stood there without moving.

Princess Yao Yue was checking Xiao Yu'er's pulse, and now she suddenly jumped a few dozen feet into the air and pulled Hua Wu Que out from under Yan Nan Tian's palm.

Princess Yao Yue said calmly, "I dragged Hua Wu Que away earlier, to save you! Because everyone else in the world can kill him, except for you, you must never kill him!"

Yan Nan Tian asked, "Why?"

A trace of a vicious smile flashed past Princess Yao Yue's eyes, and she asked, "Do you know who he is?"

Yan Nan Tian can't help but ask, "Who is he?"

Princess Yao Yue suddenly laughed madly, pointed at Hua Wu Que and said, "Let me tell you, he is also Jiang Feng's son, he is Xiao Yu'er's twin brother."

Once this sentence was spoken, there was an immediate commotion. However, Yan Nan Tian was stunned, and after being shocked for a moment, he roared angrily, "What fart!"

Princess Yao Yue laughed loudly and continued, "I've waited twenty years, just for today, waiting for the brothers to kill each other. I waited twenty years, and only revealed this secret now. I am really so happy, so ecstatic."

Yan Nan Tian roared madly, "No matter what you say, I won't believe a single word!"

Princess Yao Yue chuckled, "I know you will believe it, you surely will believe it. Just think about it carefully, and you'll realize so many similarities between the two of them. Take a look at their eyes again, their noses…" Yan Nan Tian clenched his fists, unconsciously sweating.

Princess Yao Yue continued with a laugh, "Do you know why I want to force them to fight? Do you know why I insist that Hua Wu Que kill Xiao Yu'er with his own hands?… You surely weren't able to figure out why, right? But now that you finally understand, it's too late, too late…"

This secret is too shocking, like a lightning that suddenly struck from a clear sky that strikes everyone into shock. They may be very emotional, but they were unable to make any sound at all. It seems that only Princess Yao Yue's maniacal laughter is left in the world.

Everyone thought of the various incidents involving Hua Wu Que and Xiao Yu'er, and even though they did not want to believe Princess Yao Yue's words,

but there is no way they can disbelieve it. Everyone can't tell if they felt shock, anger or pity… maybe they felt a little of each, but after all, they mostly felt sympathy and pity.

Hua Wu Que's face turned pale, staring at Xiao Yu'er's body on the ground, his body slowly started to shake, and shake very vigorously, until in the end he could not even stand properly, and his whole body curled up into a ball.

Yan Nan Tian looked at the two brothers, one alive and one dead, and it seems that his rock solid body is about to collapse as well. In that instant, he really became an old man. His heart was filled with pain and regret.

"Why must I force the two of them to fight as well? Why didn't I stop them?" He knows that all these is because of revenge! Now he knows that revenge will never bring any glory to anyone, revenge will only bring with it pain, and destruction! But now it's too late for him to realize that! He is so distraught that he has lost the energy to feel anger. Not only did he not try to fight with Princess Yao Yue, but he did not even take a look at her.

But Princess Yao Yue was looking at them. The smile in her eyes seems so cruel, so vicious, and she stared at Hua Wu Que and said icily, "You've killed your own brother, what do you have to say?"

Hua Wu Que covered his face with his hands, his whole body curled up on the floor.

Princess Yao Yue smiled sinisterly, "Don't you forget, you still have the 'Fine Blood Zhao Dan Qing' with you, now will you believe that this is a cursed sword, and whoever possesses it, will die!"

Hua Wu Que suddenly lifted his head, the 'Fine Blood Zhao Dan Qing' already in his hands! The jade green short sword, emitted an eerie reflection under the setting sun. Although everyone knows what he is going to do, no one can stop him. Whoever that reaches such a stage, can only die, and must die!

Princess Yao Yue said each word slowly, "Now that your time is up, what are you waiting for!"

With a turn of his hand, Hua Wu Que stabbed the sword towards his chest! Suddenly, a hand reached out and snatched the sword from Hua Wu Que's palm! It's not an easy task to snatch a sword from Hua Wu Que's grasp, but now Hua Wu Que is almost breaking down. He lifted his head, stared at this person for a long time before he asked, "Who are you? Why won't you let me die!"

End of Chapter 125

Chapter 115

Chapter 126 (Final Chapter)

The person who took the sword turned out to be Wan Chun Liu. He sighed and said slowly, “If a person wants to die, no one will be able to stop him.”

Princess Yao Yue exclaimed fiercely, “Since you know that, then why are you being a busybody here!”

Wan Chun Liu totally ignored her, but continued staring at Hua Wu Que and said gently, “I am not stopping you, but just advising you to wait for a moment longer, maybe less than an hour. After an hour, if you still want to die, I guarantee that no one will come and stop you.”

He looked at the sword in his hands and continued, “By that time, regardless of who wants to die, not only will I not stop him, but will hand this sword personally to their hands.”

Princess Yao Yue laughed loudly, “An hour? Would a ghost appear in an hour’s time? Child, I’d advise you not to wait. Wait a moment longer, won’t you suffer a moment longer as well?”

Mad Lion Tie Zhan suddenly bellowed, “So what if you have to suffer a moment longer? Don’t you even have a little courage for this?”

Princess Yao Yue asked angrily, “Who are you? How dare to talk so much in front of me?”

Tie Zhan replied furiously, “So what if I talk so much?”

His voice became louder, and Princess Yao Yue's face began to turn clear again, and she walked towards him and said, "Whoever talks too much, I'll want him dead!"

Xiao Nu Shi smiled coldly as well and stood next to Tie Zhan, "I don't like much in my life, except for being talkative."

Mi Shi Ba sighed and said, "I have the same character as her!"

Yu Zi Ya added, "Me too!"

In an instant, all these highly skilled pugilists who have been living far away from the world were all standing in a line, quietly looking at Princess Yao Yue. Each pair of eyes were clear like water, bright like stars.

Princess Yao Yue suddenly stopped walking. Looking at everyone's eyes, she can only stop walking. After a moment, she smiled slightly and said, "Since I have waited twenty years, why should I be bothered about another moment longer?"

Besides Wan Chun Liu, no one knows what will actually happen in this short hour. But Wan Chun Liu seems very confident, and sat cross legged next to Hua Wu Que, closed his eyes and rested. Yan Nan Tian was in a daze for a long moment, and slowly bent down and carried Xiao Yu'er's body.

But Wan Chun Liu suddenly exclaimed, "Put him down!"

Yan Nan Tian was stunned, "Put him down? Why?"

Wan Chun Liu replied, "You don't have to ask now, anyway you will soon find out."

Yan Nan Tian was silent for a moment. He had just put Xiao Yu'er's body back onto the ground, when he was suddenly stunned again, and held up Xiao Yu'er's hand again. His face turned from green to pale, from pale to red, and he suddenly exclaimed loudly, "Xiao Yu'er is not dead, not dead…"

Princess Yao Yue is stunned as well, but she immediately smiled icily and said, “I know he is dead, I checked it myself, what’s the use in you lying to me?”

Yan Nan Tian laughed loudly, “Why would I lie to you? Even if he’s dead earlier, but now he has come back to life!”

As soon as he spoke that sentence, there’s a commotion again. Although everyone hoped that Xiao Yu’er will come back to life, but not many actually believed Yan Nan Tian’s words.

Princess Yao Yue can’t help but laugh loudly, and she pointed at Yan Nan Tian, “This person is mad, how can a dead person come back to life?”

Yan Nan Tian looked heavenward and laughed, not bothering to argue with her at all. When the rest saw his expression, they can’t help but feel a sense of sadness and pity. The greatest hero of the times may really have gone crazy. How can the dead come back to life? But right at this time, someone suddenly said, “Who says that the dead cannot be revived? Haven’t I come back to life now?”

In that instant, no one knows if those words were really said by Xiao Yu’er, but Xiao Yu’er’s ‘corpse’ suddenly sat up from the ground! The dead is really brought back to life!

Everyone almost couldn’t believe their eyes, and after being stunned for a moment, they can’t help but scream in joy, and some of them finally understood what happened! It turned out that Xiao Yu’er was pretending to be dead earlier!

But Princess Yao Yue knows that he was really dead earlier. Because she has checked his pulse and knows that his breathing has stopped, his veins broken, even his heart stopped beating. How could he have come back to life? Could he really be a ghost?

Princess Yao Yue stared at xiao Yu’er, stepping backwards, her face filled with horror.

Xiao Yu’er looked at her and grinned, “What are you afraid of? You weren’t

afraid when I was alive, but you're afraid now after my death?"

Princess Yao Yue stammered, "You… what tricks are you up to?"

Xiao Yu'er laughed loudly, "If you can guess the tricks that Xiao Yu'er is up to, then you'll be the smartest person in the world." He turned towards Wan Chun Liu and asked, "She revealed everything?"

Wan Chun Liu pulled Hua Wu Que up and said with a smile, "She said everything. Actually this secret can be explained with just a sentence! You're actually blood brothers, and you're twin brothers!"

Xiao Yu'er shouted happily, jumped up and hugged Hua Wu Que and said with a laugh, "I've long known that we can't be born enemies, we should be born friends, be brothers."

Although he was laughing, he was unconsciously crying as well.

Hua Wu Que was weeping as well, and can't even talk. Yan Nan Tian extended his huge arms and hugged the two brothers tightly, and while looking up to heaven, said, "Second Brother, Second Brother, you… you…" His voice chocked, and could only cry as well.

But these are tears of sadness and happiness. Everyone looked at the three of them, and for a moment can't tell if they're feeling sadness or happiness, and their tears came rushing out unconsciously as well.

Murong Shuang can't help but leaned into Nangong Liu's arms, a mixture of happiness and sadness in her heart, but also filled with sweetness and gentleness. She looked at her sisters, and they're all in pairs, leaning into each other.

Xiao Nu Shi wiped her eyes and suddenly said, "No matter what you decide, but I'm not going back, This world is still an adorable place after all."

Princess Yao Yue stood there woodenly, no one could be bothered with her, no

one took a look at her. It seems that she has been abandoned by this world.

But Wan Chun Liu walked slowly towards her and said calmly, “Water can support the boat, but can also capsize it. Poison can be used to harm others, but can also be used to save others. There’s a lot of ways to use things, but how you use it depends on the heart.”

He smiled slightly and continued, “If a few poisonous herbs were mixed together, it can become a very powerful anesthetic, and can cause numbness in the whole body in an instant, stop the breathing, almost like the dead. If this anesthetic is used to harm others, naturally the person can do anything he wants when the other party is drugged. But when I was making this concoction, my intention is to save others, because not only can it be used to relieve pain, but it can trick others as well.”

Once he said these, the muscles on Princess Yao Yue’s face started twitching. But Wan Chun Liu continued talking, “Before Xiao Yu’er started the fight, he’d already asked me for the anesthetic. He’s been with me since he was young, and is very familiar with the use of these herbs, so he thought of using them to fake death. He knows that once he’s dead, you will surely reveal all the secrets.”

He smiled again, “This child is really smart, the tricks he think of are all unimaginable and unfathomable. It’s no wonder that even you were tricked by him.”

He handed the ‘Fine Blood Zhao Dan Qing’ to Princess Yao Yue personally and said calmly, “Since Hua Wu Que has no use of this sword now, I can only return it to you. You may have a use for it, right?”

He turned around with a smile, not even turning his head back for another look. If Princess Yao Yue were to wave her arms how, she can make him die immediately under this sword!

But Wan Chun Liu knows what Princess Yao Yue is feeling now, she will never kill another person now. Maybe the only person she will kill now is herself! ‘Fine Blood Zhao Dan Qing’ is really an unlucky evil sword!

Su Ying has been here for a long time. When she came, it was right at the time that Xiao Yu'er was 'resurrected'. But only now did she dry her tears and walk over.

Xiao Yu'er suddenly noticed her and was surprised and happy, "You're here as well, I knew you'd surely come back."

Su Ying's expression was cold and said, "I came back because I have promised someone to come here and settle a matter."

Xiao Yu'er asked, "Who have you promised? What are you here for?"

Su Ying replied, "I promised Tie Xin Lan, to come here…" Before she could finish her words, Tie Zhan and Hua Wu Que have both exclaimed hoarsely, "Where is she?"

Su Ying looked at Hua Wu Que and said, "She only wants to let you know that although she wanted you to die for her, but she was prepared to die with you long ago. She wanted me to bury the two of you together."

Hua Wu Que wept, "I… I know that she will never let me down, I've known long ago. She… where is she now?"

Su Ying replied, "She has taken poison long ago, and prepared to die…"

Tie Zhan roared madly and strangling Hua Wu Que's throat, roared, "It's you who have caused her death, I want your life in return!"

Hua Wu Que is already stunned. He did not struggle nor fight back, but just mumbled, "That's right, I've caused her death… I've caused her death…"

Everyone was just feeling happy for the brothers, but on seeing Hua Wu Que now, can't help but felt a heaviness in their hearts again. They felt that Heaven is really unfair, why is he always so cruel towards lovers. But who would have expected Xiao Yu'er to suddenly laugh loudly.

Tie Zhan roared angrily, “You beast! What are you laughing about?”

Xiao Yu’er said with a laugh, “Never mind that Tie Xin Lan only took a little poison, even if she consumed all the poison in the world, Miss Su would have a way to save her. Miss Su, am I right?”

Su Ying stared at him angrily, but she still nodded her head. She beamed at Hua Wu Que, “Actually I wanted to make you anxious, but on seeing you like this, I can’t bear to… You’d better hurry, she’s under the tree on that side, I’m afraid she’s about to wake up now.”

Hua Wu Que exclaimed happily, “Thank you…” He can’t even wait to finish saying his thank you, and has already flown away.

Tie Zhan wanted to go along with him, but Xiao Nu Shi held him back and laughed, “That place is very cramped, if you go over it’ll be too crowded.”

Tie Zhan was stunned for a moment, but finally he understood and laughed loudly, “That’s right, that’s right, very cramped, really very cramped…”

Xiao Yu’er grinned and was about to pull Su Ying’s hand but once Su Ying saw him, her expression turned somber. She turned around and walked away.

At this time Princess Yao Yue suddenly laughed manically, and as she laughed madly she carried her sister’s body, and as she laughed madly she dashed out, and in an instant was lost amongst the fog.

But by now Xiao Yu’er can’t be bothered with anyone else. He walked towards Su Ying with huge steps and smiled, “Are you still angry with me?”

Su Ying did not turn around at all, totally ignoring him.

Xiao Yu’er said, Even if I have wronged you, there’s no need for you to be so angry.” Su Ying still ignored him.

Xiao Yu’er added, “I’ve already apologized to you, aren’t you appeased yet?” It seems that Su Ying did not hear what he has said at all.

Xiao Yu’er sighed and mumbled, “And I was thinking of asking her to marry me. Since she is so angry, I might as well not say it and spare myself the rejection.”

Su Ying suddenly turned around and asked, “You… what did you say?”

Xiao Yu’er blinked, opened his arms wide and said, “What did I say? I didn’t say anything.”

Su Ying suddenly rushed forward, hugged his neck, bit his ears, hit his shoulders, stamped her feet and said with a coquettish smile, “You said it, I heard you say it, wou wanted me to marry you, are you trying to deny it.”

Xiao Yu’er felt the pain from the bite on his ear, but now he is filled with happiness, so what about a little pain? He carried Su Ying up and walked away with huge steps.

Su Ying exclaimed, “You… what are you trying to do?”

Xiao Yu’er whispered, “This place is too crowded, I’m going to find a quiet place to settle scores with you!”

Su Ying blushed, “You… the words you said earlier, will you deny them?”

Xiao Yu’er laughed, “How can a man deny words that he has said?”

Su Ying guffawed, hooked her arms around his neck tightly and whispered in his ear, “That’s right, this place is really too crowded. Take me away quickly, from now on, no matter where you go, I will follow.”

Murong Shuang leaned against Nangong Liu’s arms, her face blushing as well, and laughed, “Don’t you feel that this place is too crowded?”

Nangong Liu looked at her gently and whispered, “You want to go home as well?”

Murong Shuang lowered her head and smiled quietly, “Why go home, as long as it’s a place where there’s no one…”

Suddenly they heard Murong Shan Shan say with a coquettish smile, “All right, you’re already an old couple, and you’re still sending out goose pimples here, aren’t you ashamed at all?”

Murong Shuang blushed, stamped her feet and cried, “Irritating lass, who told you to eavesdrop on us?”

Murong Shan Shan laughed, “I don’t care how anxious you are, I will not let you go back today. Everyone has to stay here and wait for Hero Yan to have a drink with us.”

Murong Shuang asked, “But where can we find wine at this place?”

Murong Shan Shan chided with a laugh, “I think you’re really getting dizzy, didn’t you see Xuanyuan San Guang dragging Hero Tie off to buy wine earlier!”

Hero Yan laughed loudly, “That’s right, everyone must stay here for a drink, just take it as the wedding feast for Jiang Xiao Yu and Jiang Wu Que!”

He emphasized on the three words ‘Jiang Wu Que’, as if telling everyone specifically that from now on ‘Hua Wu Que’ will become ‘Jiang Wu Que’!

Xiao Nu Shi was sitting there in a daze, and now she sadly sighed, “Seeing these young people, I really feel a sense of regret.”

Mi Shi Ba asked, “What are you regretting about?”

Xiao Nu Shi replied, “Regretting why I couldn’t make up my mind in the past, neither marrying this one or that one, or else I won’t be so lonely like this now.”

Mi Shi Ba replied, “But it’s not too late for you to decide now.”

Xiao Nu Shi sighed, “Now? Who would want an old woman like me now?”

Mi Shi Ba pointed at his own nose and laughed, “Don’t you forget, I’m all alone and single now as well.”

Xiao Nu Shi’s face suddenly blushed a fiery red, as if she’s now a few decades younger, and with a ‘pak’, lightly slapped Mi Shi Ba and chided with a laugh, “Look at you, your teeth’s almost gone and yet you dare to have designs on me?”

Mi Shi Ba grinned and said, “This is what I call, old matching the old, young matching the young, turtle matching the tortoise, flea matching the worm…”

Xiao Nu Shi was about to give him another slap, but luckily Tie Zhan and Xuanyuan San Guang happened to come back and Mi Shi Ba hurriedly rushed up and said, “Where’s the wine you bought?”

Xuanyuan San Guang replied sadly, “Old Ma Ge, I’ve lost all my money long ago, and I didn’t expect this old crazy would be like me, a penniless man without a single cent in his pocket.”

A joyous occasion with no wine is like a dish without salt. Everyone felt a little disappointed, and suddenly they saw a group of dark chattering things climbing up the mountains. On closer look, it’s actually a group of monkeys. There are big and small monkeys, and making so much noise. But they were carrying something in their hands, and it’s actually tins and bottles, broken bowls and teapots.

Everyone felt perplexed and hilarious, clueless as to how these monkeys arrived, when their noses caught a whiff of the strong fragrance of alcohol.

Mi Shi Ba rushed up to take a look and these tins and bottles were filled with fine wine. He can’t help but laugh loudly, “The humans didn’t manage to buy

wine back, but the monkeys sent us wine instead. It seems like monkeys are better than us humans."

Xuanyuan San Guang sighed and mumbled with a bitter smile, "Monkeys are really smarter than humans sometimes, at least they don't gamble…"

At this time Xiao Yu'er was chuckling in a cave far away, "I bet, that even after ten thousand years, they will never be able to figure out where the wine came from and what wine is it."

Su Ying curled up in Xiao Yu'er's arms like a cat, her eyes in a slit, as if she's too lazy even to speak, and just asked languidly, "What wine is that?"

Xiao Yu'er replied, "That's called Monkey's wine, fermented by the monkeys themselves."

Su Ying asked, "Monkeys know how to ferment wine?"

Xiao Yu'er laughed, "The wine made by monkeys, can sometimes be much better than those made by humans. Regardless of how good a drinker that person is, if he drinks too much of monkey's wine, he will be drunk for at least three days."

Su Ying asked, "But how did you manage to get those monkeys to send the wine over? I don't understand this."

Xiao Yu'er blinked and laughed, "Of course you will never fully understand the miraculous plans of Jiang Xiao Yu. If you're as smart as me, I won't marry you,"

Su Ying can't help but bite him and laughed, "Xiao Yu'er oh Xiao Yu'er, you're really a bad thing."

Xiao Yu'er suddenly said with a straight face, "I'm already your husband, and very soon the father of your son, how can you still address me as 'Xiao Yu'er'?

Su Ying laughed, “Xiao Yu’er oh Xiao Yu’er, even when you’re eighty years old and become a father, I’ll still call you Xiao Yu’er, because the three words ‘Xiao Yu’er’ is really too famous.”

End of The Legendary Siblings